



# MARTIAL GOD ASURA

BOOK 02

*Kindhearted Bee*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Martial God Asura

(Xiuluo Wushen)

(修罗武神)

by

## Kindhearted Bee

(Shan Liang de Mi Feng)

(善良的蜜蜂)

# Synopsis

---

One night a mysterious and unexplained phenomenon occurs in the nine provinces. Five years later Chu Feng, a regular outer disciple of the Azure Dragon school, awakens one of the mysterious nine lightning beasts. And discovers an egg sealed inside him. From there we follow Chu Feng as he crosses the continent, beating up strongest senior brothers, raiding tombs, destroying sects and of course as he conquers beauties.

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Flowerbridgetoo, Yang Wen Li @ [Wuxia World](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Volume 2 - Sweeping Through the Nine Provinces

# Thousand Bone Graveyard

# Chapter 265: School Founder

---

The Spiritual Medicine Mountain was a forbidden land. Only inner court disciples were allowed in there when the Spiritual Medicine Hunt happened every year. This year's Spiritual Medicine Hunt just ended recently, and the Spiritual Medicine Mountain was at its strictest time so no one was allowed in.

However, that rule was completely useless in front of Chu Feng. Even if outsiders doubted Chu Feng's strength, there would be no one who dared to doubt him within the Azure Dragon School. After all, on that day, they did indeed personally witness how Chu Feng beheaded Gong Luyun.

In addition to Chu Feng's special status, who would even dare to block him? As long as Chu Feng said a few words, stating that he wanted to enter the Spiritual Medicine Mountain for a walk, the elder who guarded there would most likely immediately open the gates and allow Chu Feng in.

However, Chu Feng did not want to attract too much attention so he did not trouble the guarding elders. He used his Imperial Sky Technique, descended from the skies, and entered the Spiritual Medicine Mountain.

hmm hmm hmm

At that instant, strange light was being emitted from Chu Feng's chest. Being enveloped by that light, a complex Spirit Formation map appeared in front of Chu Feng's eyes. It was slowly moving



around, and it was quite magical. As he followed that map around, and bit by bit, Chu Feng searched for the location of the Thousand Bone Graveyard.

“Outstanding. This is too outstanding. The entrance to this Emperor Tomb must have been recreated by someone, or else its security wouldn’t be so tight. Luckily, when you first entered the Thousand Bone Graveyard, the old man bestowed this map to you. Or else without this map, it would be impossible for you to find the entrance with your current methods.”

As Chu Feng searched, Eggy praised. Chu Feng who was in the environment himself could truly feel the mysteriousness of the entrance. It could be said that the Thousand Bone Graveyard was the entrance to the Emperor Tomb. However, this entrance was different when compared to the entrance of the Vermilion Bird Mountain Range.

It was the same as the White Tiger Mountain Range’s entrance, as both entrances were changed by someone, and they changed them quite complicatedly. This entrance was always shifting around and it was hidden deep underground. If Chu Feng did not have the Spirit Formation Map, he would not have any hope in finding the entrance.

But luckily, he had the map, and in addition to him being a Grey-cloak World Spiritist, his comprehension in the Spirit Formation techniques was not comparable to his former days. So, after some complications, he finally found the entrance to the Emperor Tomb.

The entrance was very special. It was not an obvious tunnel.



After finding the entrance, Chu Feng himself had to lay a Spirit Formation, then he had to use the map as a medium to connect to the entrance below. He could only enter after creating a Spirit Formation tunnel.

When Chu Feng finished laying the Spirit Formation tunnel and after stepping into it, the tunnel immediately closed behind him and it did not leave any traces.

After Chu Feng went through the Spirit Formation tunnel and entered the so-called entrance, even he was stupefied by the scene in front of him.

That place was an extremely vast and huge palace. The thick pillars. The large area. The special materials. They made Chu Feng feel extremely powerful might, and in every single corner, there were extremely strong Spirit Formations laid there.

So strong that almost no one in the Profound realm was able to damage the palace in the slightest. From that, it could be seen how strong the person who created the palace was. That area was no longer a simple palace. It was an indestructible underground castle.

However, other than those, there were also the boundless bones that appeared under Chu Feng's feet. Countless remains. Innumerable. And from rough estimations, there were several tens of thousands of remains. They stacked up under his feet like an ocean, and that scene was exactly the same as the Thousand Bone Graveyard he saw a year ago. Therefore, Chu Feng was able to confirm that it was undoubtedly the Thousand Bone Graveyard.

“Waa, so many powerful remains, and their Source energies still remain! Although there isn’t anyone in the Heaven realm, they are still all experts in the peak of the Profound realm. With so many, I can certainly make breakthroughs! Chu Feng, quickly absorb them. After absorbing them, my cultivation can certainly rise greatly.”

In that instant, the most excited one was none other than Eggy, because to her, they were not simple bones. They were abundant meals. Treasures that could raise her cultivation.

“Don’t worry little girl, all of them are yours.”

Chu Feng lightly smiled, but he first spread his Spirit power out. After cautiously scanning around him and discovering that there were no abnormalities, he started to unrestrainedly consume the Source energy from the remains.

As he absorbed with such extreme power, Eggy’s cultivation which was stuck and didn’t move forward finally started to climb again. Very quickly, she rose from the 1st level of the Profound realm to the 2nd level of the Profound realm, and her cultivation was still rapidly rising.

Under that situation, both Chu Feng and Eggy were extremely excited. Eggy becoming stronger meant that Chu Feng was becoming stronger. He had another layer of defense for his life.

But at the same time that he was excited, Chu Feng was also

thinking. The several tens of thousands of experts were all in the Profound realm. What terrifying battle power that was. Not to mention the current Azure Province, perhaps not even a single province from the other eight provinces could gather such battle power.

Why did so many powerful people like them all die here? What took their lives away? Was it the guardian of the Emperor Tomb, or were there other reasons?

As he thought without result, Chu Feng used his strong Spirit Formation power in addition to Eggy's unique power to completely suck the several tens of thousands of Source energies from the bones dry.

At that instant, Eggy's cultivation was no longer in the 2nd level of the Profound realm. She went another step forward, and entered the 3rd level of the Profound realm. With that cultivation, in addition to Chu Feng's golden-coloured lightning, his cultivation could reach the 4th level of the Profound realm.

If he was in the 4th level of the Profound realm, with Chu Feng's methods, he did not need to be afraid of those in the 8th level of the Profound realm, and he could fight those in the 9th level of the Profound realm. Although he was not invincible within the Profound realm, he basically did not need to be afraid of anything anymore. That made Chu Feng and Eggy to be incomparably joyful.

“Little demon, I was indeed not mistaken. In this one year, your speed of growth was even quicker than I imagined!”

However, as the two of them were submerged within happiness, an aged voice suddenly rang out behind Chu Feng. He turned his head around to look, and he only saw an old man standing behind him. He wore an azure-coloured robe, held a strange but special fly-whisk, and faint light flickered around his body. He was smiling as he looked at Chu Feng, and that person was the old man who granted the map to Chu Feng.

The old man was as strong as usual. Even if Chu Feng was a cultivator in the 7th level of the Origin realm as well as Grey-cloak World Spiritist, when he stood in front of the old man, he still felt how weak and small he was.

“Senior, are you the creator of the Azure Dragon School, the Azure Dragon Founder?”

Chu Feng’s gaze was solemn, and he asked with an extremely respectful tone; because no matter if it was in terms of attire, or his aura, he seemed way too similar to the legendary Azure Dragon Founder.

“Haha, I never would have thought that you would be this smart! You should have already guessed who I am right?” The old man laughed, and despite not giving a real answer, he already implied an answer.

At that moment, Chu Feng was extremely happy. He quickly half-knelt on the floor and paid his respects to him. He reverentially said, “Chu Feng pays his respects to the school founder!!”

## Chapter 266: Essence Pool

---

“So you’re called Chu Feng. Not bad. Not a bad name.”

“Ah Chu Feng, no need to be too polite. Rise. Your talent is fine if you’re able to enter the 7th level of the Origin realm from the 4th level of the Spirit realm in one year, and giving you Spirit power and the map to this place was indeed not in vain.”

“Follow me. I have already prepared a great present for you, and it has just been waiting for you.” After the Azure Dragon Founder satisfiedly looked at Chu Feng for a while, he turned around and walked deeper into the main hall.

Chu Feng did not dare to be slow, so he also quickly followed. However, at the same time, in his heart, he felt even more respect towards the Azure dragon Founder, because from his words, he was sure that his Spirit power was opened up by him.

“This old guy has quite some skill. Although your Spirit power is indeed inborn and not bestowed by him, if he did not strengthen your Spirit power to break the binding seal, I’m afraid that your Spirit power wouldn’t have been discovered anytime soon. You would also not be able to meet me, and you would not have been able to have such big improvements in such a short period of time.” Eggy reminded.

“So that means Spirit power can really be granted by someone? As long as you have a certain amount of power, even people without Spirit power can be given Spirit power?” Chu Feng was

quite surprised. Since Eggy spoke like that, it also meant that the Azure Dragon Founder spoke the truth.

“Of course it’s possible. However, the people who accepts the Spirit power must have strong enough physique. On that day, the several people who chased after you were also given Spirit power, and because they could not endure the Spirit power, they died.”

“Also, the person who grants Spirit power must also be a World Spiritist. Only Spirit Formation methods can transfer Spirit power into another person’s body. Also, that World Spiritist must at least have the methods of a Blue-cloak World Spiritist.” Eggy explained.

“What? Blue-cloak World Spiritist? Is the school founder a Blue-cloak World Spiritist?” Chu Feng was stunned.

“What’s so surprising about that? From what I see, when he lived, he might not have only been a Blue-cloak. It’s very possible that he infinitely neared, or even actually reached the level of Purple-cloak World Spiritists.” Eggy said.

“That strong?” Chu Feng couldn’t help but inhale a breath of cool air. As he looked at the Azure Dragon Founder, his gaze couldn’t avoid but contain even more respect.

But after some more thinking, Chu Feng wasn’t as shocked as before. After all, the Azure Dragon Founder was the number one expert back then in the Nine Provinces. It wasn’t strange for a character like him to have methods of Purple-cloak World Spiritists.

“Chu Feng, the World Spirit in your body is quite impressive! Its appetite is quite huge as it is able to absorb so many Source energies in such a short period of time.” Suddenly, the Azure Dragon Founder spoke.

“Ancestor, you...” After hearing those words, Chu Feng was surprised. He never would have thought that the World Spirit in his body was seen through by him.

“No need to worry. It is not strange for a World Spirit to be willing to help a talented person like you. Besides, it is a very strong World Spirit, so it can be said to be a good thing. I am happy for you!” The Azure Dragon Founder cheerfully smiled.

Seeing that the ancestor did not pursue the matter any further, Chu Feng also relaxed. He quickly changed the topic and said, “Ancestor, where did these bones come from? What caused so many powerful people to die in this place?”

“Chu Feng, without hiding the truth, there is an Emperor Tomb in the Azure Province, and this is one of the entrances to the tomb. On that year, innumerable experts came here and they wanted to open the Emperor Tomb. But ultimately, all of them died here.”

“The ones outside here are only the ones who died first. Deeper into the Emperor Tomb, the corpses of Heaven realm experts can gather and even form mountains.” The Azure Dragon Founder narrated.



“This Emperor Tomb is that terrifying?” Chu Feng was shocked.

However, Eggy who was in Chu Feng’s body was madly happy. She said to Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, quick! Quickly ask this old guy where the remains for the Heaven realm experts are located at!”

But before even letting Chu Feng open his mouth to inquire, the Azure Dragon Founder spoke first, “Tell the World Spirit in your body not to think about those Source energies from those remains, because you wouldn’t even be able to enter that place. Even I cannot.”

After hearing those words, Chu Feng did not ask anymore because he discovered that the Azure Dragon Founder was simply too strong. It was as if he was a parasite in his belly. He could completely see through what he was thinking, and even what Eggy was thinking.

On the remaining road, the Azure Dragon Founder only asked a bit about Chu Feng’s journey in the past year. He did not ask about the state of the Azure Dragon School. It could be seen that the old man did not seem to care about the school he established himself.

After hurrying, the two of them finally arrived next to a pool. That pool was very special. It was not even two meters deep, yet the bottom could not be seen and it was emitting a fog-like gas.

The most important thing was that Chu Feng was able to feel endless streams of the world’s power from the water. Spiritual energy, Origin power, and even Profound power. He could feel all of it in the water.

“Ancestor, this water!!” Chu Feng felt even more astonished. He knew that the water was certainly a treasure. It was treasure that had great benefits towards one’s cultivation. Using him as an example. Even making a breakthrough past one level needed an enormous amount of resources. However, the Profound power and Origin power in the pool could certainly help him quickly break through.

“This is the present that I prepared for you. The Essence Pool!”

“The Essence Pool contains spiritual energy, Origin power, and Profound power. Although spiritual energy is the strongest here, with Origin power in the middle and Profound power being the weakest, it can still greatly assist a cultivator like you in this realm.”

“Cultivate in this pool. As long as your comprehension power is strong enough, several days later, you should be able to break through into the 8th level of the Origin realm.” The Azure Dragon Founder explained.

splash Just at that time, Chu Feng impatiently jumped in.

After Chu Feng entered the pool, the spiritual energy, Origin power, and Profound power in the Essence Pool started to form layers of vortexes and they insanely surged towards Chu Feng. They were currently being refined by Chu Feng.

“This boy’s comprehension power is a bit terrifying...Looking at

how it is, it seems that there is no need for several days. He should be able to break into the 8th level of the Origin realm after a day.”

As he looked at the swirling water in the pool, then looked at Chu Feng who was not afraid at all, the Azure Dragon Founder stroked his own snow-white beard and happily smiled.

hmm But just at that time, from the Essence Pool, a strand of strange undulation could be felt. Chu Feng’s aura was rapidly rising, and he reached the 8th level of the Origin realm.

“This...” At that moment, the Azure Dragon Founder’s originally unflustered expression instantly greatly changed. He was astounded in many ways and he could no longer remain calm.

## Chapter 267: Request

---

Chu Feng kept on using the Mysterious Technique while he was in the Essence Pool. His aura was still rapidly increasing as it merged with the energies from the pool. They kept on surging into his body and they were absorbed by him.

As he was being imbued by such boundless energy, soon after Chu Feng broke into the 8th level of the Origin realm, he was met with another opportunity to break through. He continued to make a breakthrough, and with a burst of energy, he successfully entered the 9th level of the Origin realm.

At that instant, Chu Feng was incomparably joyful because the Essence Pool was truly too impressive. If it continued, Chu Feng also felt that there was hope in breaking into the Profound realm.

But his hopes were in vain, as shortly after he stepped into the 9th level of the Origin realm, Chu Feng helplessly discovered that the boundless energy was diminishing, and at the end, he could not even feel a single trace of energy.

“Mm?” Chu Feng opened his eyes and spread his Spirit power out. He found out that the energy in the Essence Pool did not decrease and it was as strong as before. But then, why was the current him unable to absorb anything?

“Little boy, your body seems to be a bit special eh?” Just at that time, the Azure Dragon Founder who stood next to the pool spoke, and within his abstruse gaze, there was astonishment.

“Ancestor, what do you mean?”

At the same time that Chu Feng was astonished, he was also confused. He was astonished because the Azure Dragon Founder could see that his body was special. He was confused because clearly, there was still energy in the Essence Pool, yet he could not absorb any.

“This Essence Pool is extremely special. Although the energy it contains is thick, one can only absorb a limited amount of energy.”

“Normally, as long as a person’s comprehension power isn’t bad, the energy provided by the Essence Pool can allow that person to rise from the 1st level of the Spirit realm to the peak of the Profound realm.”

“Of course, that depends on everyone’s different talents, so the length of time required is different as well. If they were slow, dozens of years. If they were fast, a few years, or even shorter.”

“Boy, clearly, from what I have seen, you are the person who absorbed the energy in this Essence Pool the quickest. So quick that in an instant, you absorbed energy that others needed a few or even dozens of years to absorb.”

“Such terrifying absorbing method isn’t only talent. Even if you cultivated some demonic techniques, you cannot do that. So, that means that your body is very special. So special that it can automatically absorb the purest energy for you to use. I am not

mistaken right?” The Azure Dragon Founder smiled as he looked at Chu Feng and analyzed.

“Ancestor, you are correct. My body is indeed a bit special. As long as there are large amounts of resources for me to use, my cultivation can quickly increase. This is also why I can make breakthroughs past so many levels within a single year.”

“However, the higher cultivation I reach, the more terrifying amount of resources I will need. Just as you said. In an instant, I absorbed the energy that others needed dozens of years to absorb, and what I absorbed was the purest.”

“But when others can absorb enough energy to step into the peak of the Profound realm, I can only make breakthroughs from the 7th level of the Origin realm to the 9th level of the Origin realm here.” This time, Chu Feng did not hide anything anymore and he admitted the matter about his special body.

First of all, in front this Azure Dragon Founder, it was truly hard to hide anything because he had too much experience and it was very hard to fool his omniscient eye.

Also, since the Azure Dragon Founder was willing to help him raise his cultivation, Chu Feng hoped with the Azure Dragon Founder’s strong cultivation, he could bring some even more stronger cultivation resource for him to use in the Emperor Tomb. If he could, that would be the best.

“For anything, if there are benefits, there are deficits. In the road

of martial cultivation, the most serious taboo is to rush for short benefits. Although blindly taking Origin or Profound medicine, or other cultivation resources can raise one's cultivation greatly in a short period of time, it would be difficult for them to want to break through bottlenecks in the future.”

“However, you are not restricted by that and you can freely consume cultivation resources to raise your cultivation and you aren't affected at all. This is a benefit that others do not have.”

“However, if you want to raise your cultivation, you need to pay a more hefty price when compared to others. That is the deficit. As for whether such a special method is good or bad will depend all on yourself.” The Azure Dragon Founder smiled and said.

“I understand.” Chu Feng nodded because he could hear the implications behind his words.

He told Chu Feng that his special body could be a good thing, but it could also be a bad thing. As for whether it was good or bad would all depend on Chu Feng himself. It also meant that it all relied on Chu Feng's personal abilities. He was implying that he was not going to give out any more cultivation resources to help Chu Feng, and if he wanted to raise his cultivation, it had to all depend on himself.

“Chu Feng, as a World Spiritist, are you not curious why I am still alive after becoming a consciousness?” Suddenly, the Azure Dragon Founder smiled and asked.



“Ancestor, your abilities are powerful, so I’m sure that you must have some special method that allows you to live for so long and not be extinguished.” Chu Feng respectfully replied.

“Haha, live for so long and not be extinguished? You overestimate me too much. In the road of martial cultivation, after reaching a certain realm, indeed, one can extend their age by taking life away from the heavens.”

“However, that is a benefit that can only be gained after entering the Martial Lord realm. The age that can be obtained will vary depending on their talent.”

“Normally, a Martial Lord can live a hundred years longer than normal people. But regretfully, I was unable to step into that realm. Of course, even if I did step into that realm, two hundred years has already passed and I should have already disappeared like smoke.”

“However, Chu Feng, you are correct. I do indeed have special methods that allow me to not disappear after dying. All of this is relying on a treasure that I picked up from the Emperor Tomb.”

The Azure Dragon Founder lightly smiled, then continued walking deeper into the main hall. Seeing that, Chu Feng quickly followed and after walking for five thousand meters, there was a crystal coffin in front of them. Faint brilliance was lingering around the crystal coffin, and within it, there was a corpse.

The countenance of the corpse was exactly the same as the Azure

Dragon Founder who was next to Chu Feng. However, it was a real body, not a consciousness. After the time of a thousand years, the Azure Dragon Founder's remains were completely well and undamaged.

“Chu Feng, look! The pearl in his hand should be allowing his corpse to not rot and his consciousness to not extinguish.” Eggy reminded.

At that instant, Chu Feng also discovered that there was indeed a pearl as big as a chicken egg in the Azure Dragon Founder's hands. The brilliance that covered the crystal coffin came from that pearl.

“Although this treasure wasn't able to save my life in the Emperor Tomb, it can allow my corpse to not be ruined, and my consciousness to not fade away. It is truly a treasure.”

“But no matter how much more magical a treasure is, it cannot allow one to go against the heavens. So, after a hundred years, my consciousness will weaken and my corpse will rot as well. No matter what special methods I use to extend my death, I will still die soon.”

“So, Chu Feng. The reason why I led you to this place is because I have a request.” Suddenly, entreaty emerged into the Azure Dragon Founder's gaze as he looked at Chu Feng.

## Chapter 268: Revival

---

“Ancestor, don’t hesitate to order me anything. As long as I can do it, no matter if I climb up a mountain of blades or sink into an ocean of flames, I will not push it away.” Seeing that, Chu Feng sincerely vowed and promised.

It was exactly just how Eggy said it was. At first, if he didn’t get the Azure Dragon Founder’s help in the Thousand Bone Graveyard, it would not be possible for the current him to make a contract with Eggy.

If it wasn’t for Eggy’s help, it would not be possible for him to have his current achievements. Without Eggy’s protection, who knew how many times he would have died already? So, as he faced that ancestor, Chu Feng’s gratitude did come from his heart.

“Chu Feng, the thing I want you to do isn’t as serious as you say it is. Also, it is only a request, not an order.”

“As for what it is...I only hope that before my consciousness fades away and before my corpse rots away, you can help me merge my consciousness with my corpse.” The Azure Dragon Founder smiled and said.

“Merge your consciousness and corpse?” Chu Feng slightly frowned and he felt confused. Although he was a World Spiritist, he had never heard of merging a consciousness and a corpse.

“Ho...To be more clear, it’s resurrecting an old guy like me.

Revival!” The Azure Dragon Founder’s smile was even more dazzling.

“What? Resurrection? This...”

At that instant, Chu Feng could no longer remain calm. Technically speaking, the current Azure Dragon Founder was already a dead person. He was a dead person who was dead for a long time. If he wanted to revive with Chu Feng’s help, that truly put Chu Feng in a difficult situation, because he really did not know how to help him.

“No need to get agitated. The world is big, and there are all sorts of strange things. If the consciousness does not get extinguished, the remains should not get ruined as well. As long as one has strong enough methods in addition to treasures that prevent rotting, dead people can indeed be revived.”

“Right now, my remains has not be destroyed yet and even my consciousness is the same as how it started without a single trace of damage. That treasure pearl gives me the power to not decay for a thousand years, so naturally, it can help me revive after death.”

“In this moment, everything is prepared. The only thing that is lacking is a person who can resurrect me, and this person must be a World Spiritist.”

“But you also know World Spiritists’ thirst for Source energy and their intense demand for treasures. No matter if it’s my intact and undamaged corpse, or the treasure that prevents rotting, or even

this consciousness, they are all things that World Spiritists insanely yearn for.”

“So, I must guarantee that the World Spiritist would not take those things yet is also completely willing to resurrect me. Are you willing to help?” At that instant, the Azure Dragon Founder’s gaze became deep.

“I’m willing. Of course I’m willing to! Ancestor, if you are able to revive, then my Azure Dragon School can also rise in power. The disciples will have a person who can protect them, and they will not need to be afraid of any troubles from others that come without reparations.” Chu Feng nodded like a pellet drum, and the words he spoke came from his heart.

After joining the Azure Dragon School, regardless of how disciples treated him or how other elders treated him, many elders, including the current school head, treated him extremely well and saved his life many times. So, that caused Chu Feng to have quite deep feelings for the Azure Dragon School. Right now, if the school founder was able to revive, naturally, Chu Feng was willing to help him.

“Hahaha! Indeed, I was not mistaken. But Chu Feng, if you want to help me, you can’t only say that on the surface. You need work hard eh! If my guess is correct, you should be a Grey-cloak World Spiritist right now right?” The Azure Dragon Founder smiled and asked.

“Mm.” Chu Feng nodded.

“Not bad. To be able to become a Grey-cloak World Spiritist at this age means that your talent in that area is extremely strong. However, if you want to help me merge my consciousness and my corpse, you need to have the abilities of a Purple-cloak World Spiritist.” The Azure Dragon Founder smiled and said.

“Purple-cloak World Spiritist? That...that...that...” Chu Feng was dumbfounded and he was quite frightened. Purple-cloak World Spiritist? That was a legend that did not even exist in the entire continent of the Nine Provinces!

“No need to be afraid, it’s not like I want you to immediately become a Purple-cloak World Spiritist. I can hold on for at least a hundred more years, and I believe with your talent, as long as you have a certain amount of time, you can undoubtedly reach that stage.”

The Azure Dragon Founder patted Chu Feng’s shoulders, and after that, he grabbed towards the crystal coffin. A lump of light quickly flew out and landed within the Azure Dragon Founder’s palm. Then, he patted Chu Feng’s head.

At that instant, Chu Feng originally wanted to dodge, but he could do nothing as the speed was simply too quick. When Chu Feng reacted, the strange lump of light already entered Chu Feng’s brain.

“Ahh!”

The sudden sharp pain caused Chu Feng to hug his head with both of his hands and he couldn't help but cry out. But that sharp pain only lasted for an instant before it disappeared. When he came to his senses, Chu Feng discovered with astonishment that there was something extra in his brain. It was a cultivation method for a Mysterious Technique, and it was even a high-level Mysterious Technique.

To know that what Chu Feng was currently cultivating was a beginning-level Mysterious Technique. Middle-level Mysterious Techniques could only be found in the top-level first-rate schools, and as for high-level Mysterious Techniques, no one seemed to have any within the Azure Province, yet at that instant, he had one. How could Chu Feng not be excited by that? He simply so happy it was as though he was insane.

“If I pass a martial skill that is too strong down to you, it will only attract a killing disaster. However, Mysterious Techniques are different. Mysterious Techniques are hidden within one's body, and although it can increase your battle power, other people will only admire your talent, and very few people will suspect that you cultivated a high-level Mysterious Technique.”

“But don't worry. As long as you can help me merge my consciousness and my corpse to help me revive, not only will I pass a top-class martial skill down to you, I will even pass a peerless Secret Skill down to you.” The Azure Dragon Founder seriously said.

“Secret Skill?!” After hearing those words, Chu Feng's heart couldn't help but tighten. Just as he thought, the Azure Dragon



Founder did indeed gain a great benefit from that place, and he really did obtain a Secret Skill.

However, Chu Feng still had doubts. Secret Skills were hidden within one's body and the cultivation methods could not be spoken out loud. Of course, unless he was willing to abandon such a powerful method in order to pass it down to himself. But who would throw away such a strong method and give it to others? Would the Azure Dragon Founder really be willing to do that?

After that, Chu Feng conversed quite a bit with the Azure Dragon Founder, the creator of the Azure Dragon School. Hiddenly, he knew that the Azure Dragon Founder was an expert in the peak of the Heaven realm back then. He only needed a tiny bit more until he could enter the Martial Lord realm, and become a Martial Lord.

But it was useless, as even with such cultivation, he still died in the Emperor Tomb. From that, it could be seen how dangerous the Emperor Tomb was, and how scary it was. It could also be seen how outstanding the master of the Emperor Tomb was as well.

After some more chatting, Chu Feng did not want to disturb the Azure Dragon Founder's resting. So, he took his leave. When Chu Feng left, the Azure Dragon Founder reminded Chu Feng to not tell any other person about him still surviving as well as the Emperor Tomb.

Of course, Chu Feng quickly promised because unless forced with no choice, he would absolutely not tell any other person about something like that even if the Azure Dragon Founder did not remind him.

After a few small problems, Chu Feng finally successfully left the entrance of the Emperor Tomb and returned to the Spiritual Medicine Mountain's forest. At that instant, Chu Feng's mood was extremely good.

In a single day, not only did his cultivation increase greatly by entering the peak of the Origin realm in one go, he even got a high-level Mysterious Technique. Even Eggy's cultivation increased by two levels as she stepped into the 3rd level of the Profound realm. That harvest could not be said to be not abundant, and naturally, Chu Feng was incomparably joyful.

“Chu Feng, your school founder should not be trusted!” But just as Chu Feng was rejoicing, Eggy's abnormally worried voice suddenly rang out.

# Chapter 269: Might Of A Sudden Rise In Power

---

“Eggy, why so?” Eggy’s sudden words caused Chu Feng to be a bit taken aback. Clearly, the Azure Dragon Founder was kind and he was great help towards him. Why shouldn’t he be trusted?

“Ah you. You are still too young. Because you are grateful towards him and in addition he is your school’s founder, you completely trust him? If you look at this from his perspective, switch the thinking up a bit, and carefully reflect over it, are you worth his trust? On what basis should he trust you on?”

“He is the number one expert a thousand years ago who swept through the Nine Provinces. Other than having quite some ability, such a character’s brain is absolutely not simple. Since he discovered me as well as your special body, it can be seen from his observation power that he is an extremely powerful person.”

“If I’m not mistaken, back then, he was absolutely not the only person who looked for the Emperor Tomb. The tens of thousands of bones that you and I see can very possibly be the sacrifices that entered the Emperor Tomb along with him.”

“He also personally said it. Deeper within the Emperor Tomb, there are many Heaven realm remains. So from that, he must have gathered many experts from the Nine Provinces when he first explored the Emperor Tomb.”

“However, why did only he himself survive after so many experts

entered the Emperor Tomb? To know when facing a strong enemy with absolute strength, they could certainly kill with a single strike. Even one's consciousness would be scattered with a hit and they would not allow any chance of survival. Yet he survived, and he even got a treasure pearl."

"In addition, you also said that the reason why the Azure Dragon Founder is able to gain such cultivation is because he relied on the good benefits he got from the Emperor Tomb. Therefore, he must have understood the Emperor Tomb more than the others, so the death of those people..."

"Enough. I know what you are trying to say. You want to say that the people who died from exploring the Emperor Tomb were all used by my school's founder, right?" Before Eggy even finished speaking, she was cut off by Chu Feng.

"That's right. If those people truly entered the Emperor Tomb at the same time as him, they were certainly used by him. The very nature from a person like that has problems. Do you really think that trust is required?" Eggy firmly said.

"Putting aside that they are only your suspicions, even if the people who died were truly killed by him, it was possible that they were great enemies and they were the ones with ill-intent at first. Anyways, history has already passed, and the life or death of those people are unrelated to me. I don't want to investigate this."

"As for whether he is trustable or not...I'm not that stupid, so I will be careful. Besides, when I have the methods of a Purple-cloak world Spiritist, even if he wants to use me, he would have no way

of harming me.” Chu Feng confidently said.

“Okay, just take it as me suspecting too much. After all, it is extremely hard for an old fox like him to easily believe a person.” Seeing that Chu Feng was unafraid as he was confident, Eggy did not say much anymore.

After that, as he brought back a body of benefits from the Azure Dragon Founder, he returned to the Azure Dragon School’s core zone. First, Chu Feng went over to Su Mei’s residence.

After the short conversation on the day when he was preparing to go to the Spirit Province, the two of them didn’t really have a long talk. Chu Feng rather missed the little girl, and since he had the rare extra time today, naturally, Chu Feng wanted to go and have a cheerful talk with her.

On the road, all the disciples and elders would go up and pay their respects when they saw Chu Feng. He could even hear sharp cries when he passed the areas where female disciple gathered. If he looked to the side, he could discover that the females were staring at him with unshifting eyes, like wolves and tigers.

Chu Feng felt quite refreshed when he faced that situation. It was respect that was gained from strength. At least within the Azure Dragon School, he was no longer the little brat who was laughed at when seen. He was the number one disciple who everyone wanted to set up a relationship with.

However, his thoughts were in vain as Su Mei wasn’t in the

school. So, Chu Feng went over to Su Rou's residence, yet he never would have thought that even Su Rou wasn't there. At first, Chu Feng even felt a bit worried because he felt that it wasn't normal for the two girls to disappear at the same time.

But after knowing that their elder brother's birthday was coming up and they went back to celebrate, Chu Feng relaxed.

"Chu Feng, I've had quite some trouble trying to find you!" Suddenly, a familiar voice rang out behind Chu Feng.

"Lord school head." After turning his head to look, Chu Feng discovered that Li Zhangqing, the school head of the Azure Dragon School, was currently smiling and looking at him while standing behind himself.

"Lord school head, your aura..." But the thing that Chu Feng did not expect was that Li Zhangqing's aura changed when compared to before. He was no longer in the 7th level of the Profound realm. In the past short, few days, the old man broke into the 8th level of the Profound realm.

That cultivation was the same as Lin Ran before he used the Forbidden Medicine! He entered the realm of the peak of the Profound realm. That cultivation was truly quite outstanding.

"Haha, I originally planned to make a breakthrough into this 8th level before the life and death battle between you and Gong Luyun. But I couldn't do anything about the breakthrough as it was a few days late. A disaster almost happened to my Azure Dragon School."

“Luckily, you had connections with Lord Qi Fengyang, or else my Azure Dragon School’s thousand years of foundation was truly going to all be destroyed in this generation.” Li Zhangqing said with a humorous tone.

“Ho..Lord school head, if you say it like that, it truly makes me feel ashamed.” Chu Feng did feel quite bad, because if Qi Fengyang didn’t arrive, on that day, the Azure Dragon School was really going to be annihilated and such a calamity would have all been caused by him.

“Haha, you still know how to be ashamed huh? Come come come! Drink some tea with me. Incidentally, I have some things I want to discuss with you.” As he saw Chu Feng’s embarrassed expression, Qi Zhangqing happily and loudly laughed again.

After that, Chu Feng was called to a more tranquil pavilion by Qi Zhangqing. Then, with a wave of his big sleeve, several books were thrown in front of Chu Feng as he said, “Chu Feng, look at these.”

“These are!!” Without seeing, he truly would not know; but after seeing, he could jump up from fright. Chu Feng astonishedly discovered that there was a middle-level Mysterious Technique as well as rank 6 martial skills. All of them were the creations of the Azure Dragon Founder, and they were truly unique skills left behind by a top-level expert.

“My Azure Dragon School’s founder is the Azure Dragon Founder. How would it possible that we don’t have any middle-

level Mysterious Techniques or rank 6 martial skills? However, since we were in the decline earlier and I was afraid that other schools would set their eyes on it and come to rob them, I did not expose these to the public.”

“Without the ability to guard wealth, it is best not to reveal any wealth. Or else, unneeded trouble will be attracted, and even potentially killing.”

“But it’s different now. My Azure Dragon School is fated to rise in power, so it is time to take these things out as well or else others would mock us, as my Azure Dragon School rose to a first-rate school yet only has the framework of a second-rate school.” Li Zhangqing said.

“Lord school head, you truly carefully thought this out and thoroughly planned all this. This is all really admirable.” At that instant, Chu Feng couldn’t help but cup his hands towards Li Zhangqing in respect.

He discovered that the old man Li Zhangqing was truly not simple. Him hiding his name in the core zone for all these years and becoming a guard elder was not in vain. He hiddenly dug up many good seedlings, and right now, after resuming his position of the head of the school, the good seedlings could also get developed well.

Also, Li Zhangqing even set up entirely new school rules. It caused the Azure Dragon School to have a completely new look, and it really did give out the might of a sudden rise in power.



## Chapter 270: Marriage

---

“Ahh, what is there to be admirable about? As the head of the school, I let my Azure Dragon School decline to such a state. I truly shame my ancestor.” Li Zhangqing very powerlessly sighed.

“School head, the decline of the Azure Dragon School wasn’t created by you, so there is completely no need to blame yourself. Rather, right now, the Azure Dragon School is even rising by your hands. If he knew about this, he would certainly feel proud for you.”

At that instant, Chu Feng was imagining how Li Zhangqing would react if he told him about the survival and possibility of revival of the Azure Dragon Founder.

“Ho...If my ancestor is still here, that would be great.”

“Ah. No need to mention such unpleasant things. Chu Feng! Actually, today, the first thing I wanted to talk to you about is about your family.”

“I know that after experiencing the pain of your family’s extermination, you are afraid that your other family members would be harmed. So, that’s why you set up arrangements for them to be located in a hidden place.”

“I also know that even though the current Azure Dragon School has become a first-rate school, it does not have the power to guarantee your family’s complete safety.”

“However, your family members are still young, and they are currently in the prime age for martial cultivation. Do not waste such a precious time period.”

“So, these things are for you. Bring them back and give to them to your family for cultivation.” Li Zhangqing pushed the middle-level Mysterious Technique as well as the rank 6 martial skills over to Chu Feng.

“Lord school head, this...” Seeing that, Chu Feng was a bit overwhelmed by his kindness. Although he really did want those things, they were the Azure Dragon School’s school foundation treasures, so how could he so selfishly take it back to his family for cultivation?

“Don’t say ‘this’ or ‘that’. These will only be excessive in my Azure Dragon School. The future still needs you to lead it onto the path of rising power. Sooner or later, this Azure Dragon School will be yours, so naturally, these martial skills are yours.” Li Zhangqing forcibly stuffed the martial skills into Chu Feng’s hands.

“Chu Feng, this old guy has spent quite a bit on you to rope you in with him. Take them. After all, in the future, it is fated that you will work hard for this Azure Dragon School. A few insignificant martial skills can be said to be the compensation taken early.” Eggy curled her mouth and said.

“Thank you lord school head. But I guarantee that I will not let

this Mysterious Technique and these martial skills be passed down to outsiders.” Chu Feng still accepted the Mysterious Technique as well as the martial skills, and he put them in his Cosmos Sack.

“Haha, if I didn’t trust you, I wouldn’t have handed them over to you.” Seeing that Chu Feng accepted them, Li Zhangqing’s smile became more and more happy. Then, he said to Chu Feng, “Actually, I have a second thing that I want to tell you. This can very possibly be a rare chance for my Azure Dragon School to rise greatly.”

“What is it?” Chu Feng curiously and closely asked.

“Chu Feng, let me ask you first. Right now, what is the Azure Dragon School lacking the most?” Li Zhangqing answered with a question.

“The Azure Dragon School has the resources, so what is lacking is some foundation. Foundation needs to be accumulated gradually, so the most important thing right now are excellent disciples.” Chu Feng replied.

“That’s right. Currently, what my Azure Dragon School requires the most are excellent, talented disciples. However, in order to attract such disciples to enter my Azure Dragon School, the fame of my Azure Dragon School must be raised higher.”

“Although the battle between you and Gong Luyun raised quite a bit of commotion, people only half-believe and half-doubt. They do not believe that my Azure Dragon School is equipped with such

strength.”

“However, right now, there is a chance. A chance to prove my Azure Dragon School. A chance to prove you and me. A few days later, the annual Hundred School Gathering will begin.”

“This Hundred School Gathering is held by the Lingyun School. It is a grand occasion where all the first-rate schools in the Azure Province are gathered.”

“In this occasion, the various disciples and school heads will have a fight. The winner of the fights will enter the school rankings. Right now, where the Azure Dragon School will rank within first-rate schools will depend on this Hundred School Gathering.”

“If my Azure Dragon School is able to stand highly and enter the top ten within the first-rate school rankings at once, I believe that it will have quite a bit of helping force for the rise of my Azure Dragon School.” Li Zhangqing narrated.

“Indeed. This Hundred School Gathering is a rare chance. Lord school head, don’t worry. In the fights between the disciples from other schools, I, Chu Feng, will do my best and I won’t disappoint the school or you.” Chu Feng solemnly vowed and guaranteed.

“Haha, your words are already enough. I am clear what strength you have.”

“But today, the most important thing that I looked for you to

discuss is this last thing.” As Li Zhangqing spoke to that point, his smile became a bit strange.

“Lord school head, speak whatever is in your mind.” Chu Feng curiously asked.

“Oh Chu Feng, do not blame me for this matter.” Li Zhangqing suddenly put his smile away and his face became serious.

“Lord school head, what is it?” Chu Feng’s head was filled with fog because of him.

“I decided on my own and I set a marriage for you!” Li Zhangqing said.

“What?” After Li Zhangqing spoke, it frightened Chu Feng quite a bit. He couldn’t help but widen his eyes greatly, and he asked with incomparable astonishment, “Lord school head, I never asked you to find a wife for me, so why did you decide a marriage?”

“Chu Feng, don’t get too agitated for now. Slowly listen to what I have to say. The origin of this fiancée is not small. You have heard of the Jade Female School right?” Li Zhangqing asked in reply.

“Jade Female School?!” After hearing those three words, Chu Feng instantly smiled and he was interested. Perhaps Chu Feng didn’t know much about other schools, Chu Feng did know quite a bit about the Jade Female School because almost every single male in the Azure Province knew the Jade Female School.

The Jade Female School. It was a special school. It only took in females and not males because within the Jade Female School, no matter if it were Mysterious Techniques or martial skills, they were only suitable for females to cultivate.

Although it was only open to females, the requirement for disciples was still very strict. Not only did they need outstanding talent, they also needed a decent face.

Exactly because of that, the Jade Female School was simply the sacred land in which all males yearned for. The female disciples in the Jade Female School were the goddesses in countless males' hearts. Pride came from being able to marry a disciple from the Jade Female School, and they felt that it was something that gave a lot of face.

It was because the Jade Female School wasn't only a school for looks. Although there were very few number of people in the school, as there wasn't even ten thousand people in the entire school and they only had a few hundred core disciples, their strength were all very strong. It was a school that could be ranked in the top five within first-rate schools in the Azure Province.

That caused the disciples from the Jade Female School to naturally hang the label of being excellent. Of course, that made them extremely prideful, and the males who caught their eyes were rare within rare. It was difficult on top of difficult if one wanted to have them as a wife.

So, even though the disciples from the Jade Female School were not enough to insanely move Chu Feng's heart, they still caught Chu Feng curiosity.

“What, are you moved?” Seeing Chu Feng's wonderful expressions, Li Zhangqing smirked and said.

“Ehh~~ Even if it is a disciple from the Jade Female School, there are good ones, and there are bad ones. School head, don't beat around the bush. What kind of fiancée did you choose for me?” Chu Feng chuckled and asked.

“Heh. I guarantee that you will be satisfied. She is the number one disciple in the Jade Female School, one titled as the ‘girl from drawings’, [Yan Ruyu](#)!”

Yan -> face | Ru -> like | Yu -> Jade = A face like jade

# Hundred School Gathering



# Chapter 271: Meeting The Jade Female School

---

“Yan Ruyu?” Chu Feng’s eyes lit up and a smear of surprise couldn’t avoid emerging onto his face. He had heard of the Jade Female School, so naturally, he knew about Yan Ruyu.

Yan Ruyu was an absolute beauty. Her appearance was like a fairy from stories. When she was young, she already charmed countless males, and even females were moved by her beauty. From that, she gained the title of “girl from drawings”.

Also, Yan Ruyu was a martial cultivating genius. Although she wasn’t really a young girl anymore, she was not even nineteen years old. She already had the cultivation of the 5th level of the Profound realm, and she was one of the famous characters within the young generation of the Azure Province.

However, there was something Chu Feng was curious about. The disciples from the Jade Female School were proud and arrogant. As the number one disciple, no matter if it was in terms of appearances or cultivation, no one could be compared to Yan Ruyu in the Jade Female School. She could rise to the heavens from all the praises she got and she was an existence that was treated like a goddess.

How could such a female decide to marry him? Although the current Azure Dragon School was already a first-rate school, Chu Feng knew that the Azure Dragon School and the Jade Female School were simply incomparable to each other even in discussions. The weight of the title, number one disciple of the

Azure Dragon School, was really quite light, and it shouldn't even be put in Yan Ruyu's eyes.

“Ha, boy. You're not doubting my words are you?” Li Zhangqing smiled and said as he looked at Chu Feng's face which was full of suspicion.

“To be honest, I am indeed very curious how you did that.” Chu Feng chuckled and asked.

“Not hiding the truth, back when I was young, I was still a beautiful and elegant young man with extraordinary grandeur. The school head of the Jade Female School and me were actually fated for marriage.”

“However, because of various reasons, we could not go on the same road. But she was always thinking about me and she has not married even once up until now.” Hearing Chu Feng's question, Li Zhangqing waved his big sleeve, and unrestrainedly bragged about his outstanding past.

As he looked at Li Zhangqing's foul appearance, Chu Feng had quite some trouble imagining that he was a beautiful young man back when he was young. However, he still curiously asked, “School head, what happened after that?”

“After that, the news of my Azure Dragon School becoming a first-rate school was spread out so she sent a letter to me, hoping that we can set up an alliance by arranging a marriage between you and Yan Ruyu. Although the two of us cannot be together, she

hoped that her favourite disciple and my favourite disciple can become one.” Li Zhangqing said.

After hearing those words, Chu Feng couldn't help but take in a breath of cool air and he looked at Li Zhangqing once again. No matter what, he could not see why the head of the Jade Female School always thought of Li Zhangqing and never forgot about him. So, Chu Feng said with incomparable shock, “I never would have thought that you had such charm.”

“You damn brat, what you mean by that? You doubt my charm?” Seeing Chu Feng's surprised expression, Li Zhangqing was quite angered. He followed up and said, “Pack up. We will go today.”

“Go where?” Chu Feng was confused.

“I'll bring you to see the woman who was captivated by me, and whether she is as crazy about me as before. As we do that, I'll let you see your fiancée, Yan Ruyu.” Li Zhangqing replied.

“No need to pack up. Let's go right now.” As Chu Feng spoke, he whistled towards the air. Very quickly, the top-quality White-headed Eagle, Little White, appeared from the air and it flew down. Chu Feng leapt into the air and landed on it.

“This boy is quite impatient.” Seeing that, Li Zhangqing helplessly shook his head, and after that, he also leaped and brushed up onto the White-headed Eagle. The one old and one young from the Azure Dragon School hurried towards the Jade Female School.

The mountain range in which the Jade Female School was located at was very small. However, the scenery was abnormally pretty. Tall mountains, flowing waters, rainbows floating around and clouds lingering around the mountain peaks. It was beautifully tall and big, as if it was a land of fairies.

The Jade Female School was built on the peak of the mountain range. The path uphill was quite steep and normal people could not climb it. So, if one wanted to enter the Jade Female School, they needed a martial cultivation expert to lead them. So, the disciples from the Jade Female School were from noble families and they were innately beautiful.

Currently, the Hundred School Gathering was nearing, and as one of the top five schools, the Jade Female School naturally wanted to go further in this year's Hundred School Gathering. So, no matter if it was the disciples or elders, they were nervously preparing and picking the most elite disciples and elders to get ready to head towards the Hundred School Gathering.

Although there were only a few people who were going to stand out in the Hundred School Gathering, selecting a few good disciples to help with the grandeur would give more face at the end.

And on such a day, a White-headed Eagle streaked through the air and landed directly into the Jade Female School's core zone. That caused the Jade Female School to be on high alert. Countless disciples and elders aggressively surrounded them.

“Who are you? The Jade Female School forbids males from entering. What intentions do you two have by intruding without permission?”

As expected of the sacred land that all males in the Azure Province yearned for, the Jade Female School. Not to mention the young female disciples who were quite gorgeously dressed, even the elders didn't look like old grandmothers. Although the traces of age were left behind on their faces, it could still be seen that they were certainly beauties when they were young.

“Truly disappointing. I even thought that there would be quite a few beauties gathered in the Jade Female School which was titled as the gathering area of the Azure Province's beauties. It turns out that they are only ordinary. Not a single one can be comparable to my little Rou and my little Mei. Of course, it would be impossible for them to be compared to my Eggy.”

“Nonsense. Who's yours? If you dare to have any thoughts about me, I'll castrate you.”

However, such a big group of beautiful females could not enter Chu Feng's eye. But even so, Chu Feng's gaze still shot everywhere. He especially attacked the convexing areas of the females as well as the snow-white, beautiful legs under their dresses.

“What are you looking at? Little pervert, if you look anymore, I'll scoop your eyes out.” Chu Feng's unrestrained gaze caused the little faces of the Jade Female School's female crowds to redden as they pointed at Chu Feng and loudly reprimanded.

“Oh? You aren’t allowing me to look? If you don’t allow it, cover yourself more tightly! Why else would you reveal so much if it’s not for looking?” Chu Feng curled his mouth and stared even more ferociously.

“You...”

“I am the head of the Azure Dragon School, Li Zhangqing, and I received your school head’s invitation to come here.”

Seeing that, Li Zhangqing quickly stood out. At that instant, sweat beaded his forehead because he discovered that Chu Feng was really an imp who stirred up troubles. If he did not report where he came from, there was truly going to be a huge battle.

“Head of the Azure Dragon School? Which means that the little pervert is senior Yan’s...”

After speaking those words, everyone in the Jade Female School were stunned. Every single one widened their mouths, and they cast their gazes of disbelief at Chu Feng.

They already knew about the marriage between the Jade Female School and the Azure Dragon School. But they never would have thought that the person who was set to marry Yan Ruyu was a little lewd brat like him.

Despite feeling disbelief, after knowing Li Zhangqing’s and Chu

Feng's status, the elders from the Jade Female School did not dare to be disrespectful. They quickly welcomed them into the main hall of the Jade Female School, and before they even stepped into the main hall, a graceful middle-aged female led a group of beauties and walked out of the main hall to quickly greet them.

## Chapter 272: No Road To Retreat

---

That female had quite a good figure and quite good looks as well. Especially the noble grandeur that came from her body. It was incomparable to any females on scene.

The most important thing was that from her, Chu Feng felt strong aura that was not inferior to Li Zhangqing. That woman was an expert in the 8th level of the Profound realm.

After the woman appeared, all the elders and disciples from the Jade Female School quickly went up to pay their respects. From all that, Chu Feng knew that she was the head of the Jade Female School.

However, the most shocking thing to Chu Feng was that a middle-aged female who had both looks and strength, the grand head of the Jade Female School, was tightly staring at the old and ugly Li Zhangqing. Within her gaze, there was even a special emotion surging forth. After a while, she said with deep feelings, “Zhangqing, you are finally willing to see me.”

“Damn. This isn’t true is it? What is this? Was it really as how Li Zhangqing said it was, and he really captivated the soul of the head of the Jade Female School?”

At that instant, Chu Feng’s widely opened his mouth from shock, because it meant that Li Zhangqing did indeed speak the truth. He really captured the heart of the Jade Female School’s head to the point that she had never forgotten about him. But looking back at



the difference between the two persons' appearance, people still truly felt that it was inconceivable.

In reality, not only was Chu Feng shocked. Even the elders and disciples from the Jade Female School were so shocked that they could not care for themselves. However, they could only shock themselves for a bit. There was no one who dared to raise any questions because in the Jade Female School, no one dared to offend the school head.

After that, the head of the Jade Female School even specially set up a feast to treat Chu Feng and Li Zhangqing. Chu Feng sat next to Li Zhangqing, and as no one was paying attention, he secretly went over to Li Zhangqing's ear and said,

“Lord school head, you are quite awesome. You said that you had some fated marriage with the head of the Jade School Head? Does that mean that you captured her heart when she was young?”

Chu Feng's words were not said without reason, because the difference in age between the two was simply too big. Li Zhangqing was a standard little old guy, and even though the head of the Jade Female School was not that young, she did not pass the middle-ages. She was even the type who maintained herself well. It was very hard for Chu Feng to think how the two of them intertwined with love.

“You damn brat, what are you thinking about? Don't you know that the Mysterious Techniques the Jade Female School cultivate are very special? As long as they don't break their chastity, they can be forever young. So, although the head of the Jade Female

School seems so young, in actuality, she is only two years younger than me.” Li Zhangqing quietly replied.

“Damn. So awesome.”

Chu Feng was incomparably astonished. He never would have thought that there was such a Mysterious Technique in the world. He truly learnt something new. However, the most astonishing thing was that the head of the Jade Female School as well as the elders could guard their bodies for so many years. It was truly impressive. That required quite some perseverance!

When she saw the private conversation between Li Zhangqing and Chu Feng, the head of the Jade Female School even thought that Chu Feng was impatient and wanted to see his fiancée. So, she asked a female disciple, “Where’s Ruyu? Why isn’t she here to welcome the guests?”

“Reporting back. Senior Yan said she felt a bit sick, so she isn’t going to participate in today’s feast.” That disciple replied timidly.

“Oh?” The head of the Jade Female suspiciously blinked her eyes but didn’t ask anything more. She only apologetically said to Chu Feng,

“Chu Feng, I am really sorry. Ruyu’s health is preventing her from coming, so I’m afraid you cannot see her today. But it’s fine. Tomorrow, you will be going with us to the Hundred School Gathering, and at that time, I can arrange a chance for you two to meet together alone.”

“Heh, you are too polite. I, Chu Feng, came to this place to visit you and I have no other goal!” Chu Feng smiled embarrassedly.

“Chu Feng, if that Yan Ruyu is truly sick, then whatever. However, if she is faking sickness, that means she is dissatisfied with you right?” At the same time, Eggy’s voice rang out in Chu Feng’s body.

“Of course I know. But even if she is satisfied towards me, I still need to be satisfied towards her.” Chu Feng was quite displeased in his heart, and his favourable impressions towards Yan Ruyu went from zero to negative.

On that day, Chu Feng and Li Zhangqing was invited to stay for the night. On the next day, they followed the Jade Female School’s group and headed towards the Lingyun School together to participate in the Hundred School Gathering.

In order for better communication between Chu Feng and Yan Ruyu, the head of the Jade Female School specially arranged for the sedan chair Chu Feng was in to be next to the sedan chair Yan Ruyu was in. However, the efforts were in vain as Yan Ruyu was still unwilling to leave. Not to mention chatting, Chu Feng didn’t even know what she looked like, and naturally, Chu Feng would not be so low as to take the lead to beg to see Yan Ruyu.

On the other hand, Li Zhangqing and the head of the Jade Female School talked about what they liked. They chatted and laughed as though no one was around them, and it caused many people to be

speechless.

After a day of travelling, the Jade Female School's group even met another school, and it was the first-rate school who ranked as 4th, the Swordless School.

The Swordless School was also invited to the Hundred School Gathering, and the head of the Swordless School even shamelessly requested to walk along the Jade Female School. Because she did not want to fight faces, the head of the Jade Female School could only allow it.

But then, the number one disciple from the Swordless School, Nangong Xiao, was even more shameless as he came in front of Yan Ruyu's sedan chair and requested to meet her.

At that instant, Chu Feng who sat in the sedan chair which was next to Yan Ruyu's couldn't resist but to spread his Spirit power out. Because of that, he heard the following interactions.

"This Nangong Xiao is a shameless person. I don't want to meet him, so tell him to leave." An arrogant yet still gentle voice rang out, and it was undoubtedly Yan Ruyu.

"Senior, I suggest that you meet Nangong Xiao."

"Why?"

"Think about it. Right now, the school head arranged a marriage

with Chu Feng, and because of her face, it is not good for you to refuse. However, who is Chu Feng? He's like a toad! Because the school head is forcing this, he is truly going to benefit greatly from this!"

"Pretending to be sick isn't a method since it wouldn't be good if the school head gets angered. Nangong Xiao already loves you and he is also the number one disciple in the Swordless School. No matter if it is in terms of strength or status, he is far above Chu Feng. If he knows that you have a fiancée, he will certainly be displeased, and with his temper, it's likely that he will directly attack Chu Feng."

"Coincidentally, right now, Chu Feng is here. So, why not use Nangong Xiao to give Chu Feng a lesson? So, that can let Chu Feng know that he's in trouble and back away, and it can also let our school head see how useless Chu Feng is. Perhaps she will change her mind and cancel the marriage between you and Chu Feng."

"Is that fine? Wouldn't she be unhappy?"

"Why wouldn't it be fine? It is the best method right now. If you miss this chance, I'm afraid that the marriage between you and Chu Feng will be set."

"That's...that's fine."

"God damn. These two women. They dare to say that I'm a toad?" Chu Feng who heard everything was extremely furious.

“Heh, Chu Feng, your fiancée has quite some methods huh? What are you planning to do now?” Eggy giggled, and she simply added oil to the fire.

“Damn fiancée. Even if she gave me presents, I would not have wanted them; yet now, you want me to know that I’m in trouble and back away? Fine. Today, I’ll give her no road to retreat!”

# Chapter 273: Unqualified

---

A tall and big male with a pretty face stood outside of Yan Ruyu's sedan chair.

The male was standing there, and even the normally proud core disciples from the Jade Female School were deeply attracted by him. Within some of their gazes, there was a bit of love and admiration.

That person was the number one disciple from the 4th ranked school in the Azure Province, Nan Gongxiao of the Swordless School. He was a genius who entered the 5th level of the Profound realm at the age of twenty.

Nan Gongxiao did like the gazes of love and admiration from the Jade Female School's disciples. If it was any other time, he would have already went over and started a conversation. However, right now, he did not dare. He pretended to stare at Yan Ruyu's sedan chair with deep emotions.

whoosh Finally, the tightly closed door was opened, and female with a beautiful figure as well as a good appearance walked out.

After that female appeared, every female disciple from the Jade Female School was completely outshined because that female truly had a quite good appearance. A protruding front and a behind that stuck out. Those who wanted chests had the chests, and those who waited waists had the waists. Both her figure and face were of top-quality. Especially her white skin. It was as smooth as jade, and it

was extremely attracting.

“Junior Baixi, how is it? Is Junior Yan willing to see me?” After seeing the beautiful female, Nan Gongxiao quickly went up and asked.

Although that beauty was not Yan Ruyu, she was still the number two beauty in the Jade Female School. Like her name, she looked quite abnormally white. The most important thing was that she was Yan Ruyu’s closest sister. So, Nan Gongxiao did not dare to be disrespectful towards [Baixi](#).

Bai means white, and Xi is an exclamation character. So, her name means “white!”.

“Senior Nangong, I already said that Senior Yan does not feel well, and it is inconvenient for her to see anyone.”

“However, seeing that you have such sincerity, Senior Yan decided to meet you.” As Baixi spoke, she cast her gaze towards Yan Ruyu’s sedan chair.

At that moment, when the door on the sedan chair opened again, everyone couldn’t help but send their gazes over because at that very instant, an absolute beauty stepped out of the sedan chair and entered everyone’s line of sight.

That female had excellent figure, comparable to Su Rou; a sweet face, comparable Su Mei. It was as if she was the combination of



both Su Rou and Su Mei.

The most important thing was that her skin was even whiter than Baixi. It was simply like snow, yet there were dots of red. Truly, red permeated through white, and water could be pinched out. With a single glance, one's heartbeat would quicken, and then they were really tempted to go up and have a touch. It was a type of feeling where it was worth it to die today as long as you could touch that female once.

That person was the number one disciple of the Jade Female School, Yan Ruyu, and as expected of the number one beauty of the Jade Female School. After she appeared, even Baixi seemed quite a bit more ordinary. At that area, there was not a single person who could be compared to that female.

“Oh? Your fiancée is quite pretty huh?” At that instant, through the cracks of the sedan chair, Chu Feng was able to see Yan Ruyu's appearance, and Eggy gave a rare praise to that woman.

“How is she pretty? She is too far away from my Eggy.” Chu Feng curled his mouth and what he said came from his heart. Although Yan Ruyu was indeed very beautiful, from Chu Feng's perspective, she was only on the same level as Su Rou and Su Mei.

From all the females that Chu Feng had seen before, the most beautiful was Eggy. Her perfect figure. Her perfect face. Every expression. Every action. All of that emanated a special grandeur that no one else had.

When she was gentle, she was a pure sacred lady. When she was wild, she was still an alluring woman. She was simply incomparable to this world's females. Of course, originally, she didn't even come from this world. At least in terms of outer appearance, Eggy was near perfect in Chu Feng's heart.

Following that should be the purple-clothed young lady he met in the White Tiger Mountain Range. Chu Feng could not forget the clear eyes she had as well as her glamorous face. Her beauty could truly be said to destroy counties and cities, and was a rarity in the world.

Although the young lady's strength was abnormally terrifying as she had the legendary Divine Body, a ruthless heart, didn't care what methods she used, and was a truly dangerous character, Chu Feng had to admit that she was the only female who could be compared to Eggy. She was truly a beauty in the demonic level.

Also, within the Su sisters, one was like an alluring spirit, and one was as sweet as honey. Both had their special places, but they were both bewitching and beauties that could not be easily found.

As for Yan Ruyu, despite having a face that was comparable to Su Mei and a figure that was comparable to Su Rou, she only matched the strong points of the two, but did not exceed their strong points. So, if Chu Feng were to judge her prettiness, she could only be on the same level as Su Rou and Su Mei. Of course, being able to do that did not shame the name of beauty.

"That is, the female who is more beautiful than me hasn't been born yet eh." As her beauty was mentioned, Eggy proudly stuck

her chest out. Although the girl was slightly small, her pair of evil weapons were not small at all. If Chu Feng saw that scene, his nose would certainly be bleeding.

“Junior Yan, back in that year, after separating from the Hundred School Gathering, a year has passed. I, Nangong Xiao, have missed you!” After seeing Yan Ruyu, Nangong Xiao could not control his own emotions anymore. He excitedly opened up a happy smile and quickly walked forward. He wanted to get closer to Yan Ruyu and take some small advantages from her.

“Ahh, Senior Nangong. Males and females are different so it is best not to get too close to one another. Besides, currently, Senior Yan is already arranged to be married, so it is not too convenient for you to get too close.”

However, before letting Nangong Xiao go near, Baixi stood up and stopped Nangong Xiao. She said her words extremely loudly, and she even intentionally looked towards Chu Feng’s sedan chair as she wanted to Chu Feng hear about it.

“Junior Baixi, what are you talking about? Junior Yan has an arranged marriage? When was that? Who set the arranged marriage with Junior Yan?” Indeed, after knowing that matter, Nangong Xiao’s expression changed greatly. With fury, hatred, anxiousness, and annoyance, he asked.

“Ahh, on this topic, even Senior Yan cannot do anything about it because it is not her wish, but the school head’s wish.”

“As for Senior Yan’s fiancé, I’m sure you have heard of him as well. He’s the current number one disciple of the Azure Dragon School, Chu Feng.” Baixi helpless sighed and said.

“Chu Feng? He’s that little brat from the second-rate school? How is he even worthy for Senior Yan?” After hearing Chu Feng’s name, Nangong Xiao’s face even turned purple from anger. Although Chu Feng’s big name was abnormally famous in the past few days, he, Nangong Xiao, did not even put Chu Feng in his eyes because he felt that Chu Feng was trash with false might.

“Yeah. If Senior Yan marries Chu Feng, it will truly be sticking a fresh flower into cow crap.” With a face full of grievance, Baixi acted as though she was being forced to marry. On the other hand, Yan Ruyu stood on the side and didn’t say anything at all. She only looked at Chu Feng’s sedan chair, and complicated emotions were filled on her sweet face.

“Junior Yan, don’t worry. I will absolutely not let you marry that second-rate school trash. Right now, I’ll go and talk about this with your school head and get her to cancel the marriage between you and Chu Feng.” Nangong Xiao solemnly vowed, then after speaking, he turned around and walked.

“God damn, who do you think you are to be qualified to cancel other people’s marriage?” Just at that time, an explosive yell rang out and Chu Feng finally came out.

“Who are you?” After seeing Chu Feng, Nangong Xiao’s sword-like brows inverted and he coldly questioned.

“Senior Nangong, he’s Chu feng.” But before even letting Chu Feng reply, Baixi walked forward, pointed at Chu Feng and spoke.

“You’re Chu Feng?” Nangong Xiao was a bit surprised, but quickly after, eerie killing intent emerged into his gaze.

“That’s right. I’m your grandfather, Chu Feng.” Chu Feng stuck his chest out, raised his head, and he put both of his hands on his waist.

“Damn. Trash like you even dare to appear in front of me? Today, I will give you a lesson for Junior Yan. I’ll let you know that you are still unqualified to marry her.”

Nangong Xiao was even worried about having no excuse to take care of Chu Feng. He never would have thought that Chu Feng would insult him like that, so it incidentally gave him a reason to attack Chu Feng.

## Chapter 274: You Are Not Worthy

---

The boundless Profound power condensed in the air, and like a huge mountain, it crashed down onto Chu Feng. Although that strike could not kill Chu Feng, Nangong Xiao felt that with his cultivation, it would certainly put Chu Feng to the point of half-death. It was the best chance to perform in front of Yan Ruyu, and it was the best chance to display his manly grandeur.

After Nangong Xiao attacked, almost all of the disciples from the Jade Female School on scene looked forward to it. Cold smiles were hung on the corners of their mouths, because they really held Chu Feng in contempt. From the bottom of their hearts, they truly did not want Yan Ruyu to marry Chu Feng.

But they could not do anything about it or else they would not be giving the school head any face. No one dared to attack Chu Feng. So, Nangong Xiao attacking Chu Feng suited their intentions as well. It was the same as representing them to give Chu Feng a lesson.

At that instant, they even hoped that Nangong Xiao could pat Chu Feng to death with that one palm. After all, it would be even more fulfilling because they, who were always proud, felt that weak people were not even worthy enough to have any feelings towards them. If they did, they were looking to die.

However, Chu Feng was obviously going to disappoint them. Just as the Profound power was going to land on him, Chu Feng raised his hand and palmed. As the Origin power shot in all directions, the boundless Profound power exploded and scattered. Strong

energy ripples forced the surrounding disciples from the Jade Female School to keep on backing away. Immediately, cries of surprise rang out.

“That boy actually blocked Nangong Xiao’s attack!!”

At that instant, the flowery faces of all the disciples from the Jade Female School lost colour and changed greatly. On their charming little faces, the word “shock” was written on them.

They could feel that Chu Feng had the cultivation of the 9th level of the Origin realm. Although it was quite decent for Chu Feng to have that cultivation at that age, he shouldn’t have had any ways to fight against the Profound realm.

However, with the cultivation of the 9th level of the Origin realm, Chu Feng easily broken Nangong Xiao’s attack. The battle power which crossed an entire realm was simply unbelievable.

At that instant, everyone couldn’t help but have a thought. Was the rumour truly true, and Chu Feng, with the cultivation of the 7th level of the Origin realm, really did defeat an expert in the 4th level of the Profound realm?

“Brat. You do have some methods, but after taking that, I wonder if you can take this as well.”

As the first strike failed, Nangong Xiao felt that his face was nonexistent. So, this time, he did not restrain himself. He used an

extremely strong rank 6 martial skill.

When that martial skill was displayed, the entire sky seemed to dim down and lose colour. The overpowering Profound power formed into a boundless vortex in the air as it surged and rolled around. Finally, it became a huge sword that laid horizontally in the air.

The sword was a dozen meters or so long and it emitted frightening power, as though nothing could block a strike from it. At that instant, with terrifying power, it stabbed towards Chu Feng.

“Look! It’s the Swordless School’s foundation martial skill. Last year, in the Hundred School Gathering, Nangong Xiao used this skill to tie with Senior Yan.”

As they looked at the huge sword condensed by Profound power and emanated strong pressure, the people on scene couldn’t help but take in a breath of cool air as fear emerged onto their faces.

It was because Nangong Xiao’s attack was extremely powerful. Within the disciples from the Jade Female School on scene, other than Yan Ruyu, almost no one else could block it. Even if Yan Ruyu came out, she could only block it but not break it.

“Ahh, it seems like Chu Feng is dead.”

After that skill was displayed, almost everyone felt that the



outcome was set. Even if Chu Feng really had fearfully abnormal talent with so much battle power that it could rise to the skies as he was able to break a Profound realm attack with the cultivation of the Origin realm, they still felt that Chu Feng would absolutely not be able to block that attack.

“Hmph. Empty might.”

But as he looked at the huge sword which had oppressive pressure and contained terrifying power, Chu Feng did not dodge or avoid it. He clenched one of his fists, and threw a punch towards the air. However, the power that punch contained was several times stronger than before.

boom

After punching, even the sky trembled, and when the formless power of the fist struck that huge sword, the originally incomparably sharp huge sword split inch by inch, and at the end, it shattered and disappeared in the air.

“Heavens! Look! The Swordless School’s foundation martial skill got destroyed by Chu Feng with one punch!”

As they looked at that scene, almost everyone was dumbfounded because such a scene surpassed their imagination and it did not belong within reason anymore.

“This...How is this possible? This brat actually...”

At the same time, the face of the displayer of the martial skill, Nangong Xiao, turned ashen. The martial skill was his strongest one and it was even his trump card. He originally wanted to defeat Chu Feng in one strike, but he never would have thought it would be so easily dissolved. At that instant, he simply did not know what to do and he was deeply provoked.

“You want to give me a lesson with this bit of skill? You truly overestimate your capabilities.”

Just at that time, Chu Feng suddenly attacked. His body flashed, and like a ghost, he appeared in front of Nangong Xiao. He raised his leg and kicked Nangong Xiao onto the ground. As the crowd was staring, he swung his arms, and strongly slapped Nangong Xiao’s face.

bang bang bang bang bang

Chu Feng did not give any mercy and every slap after the other rang louder than previous one. When the multiple slaps were connected together, they were like firecrackers being set off. It was truly crackling, and Nangong Xiao’s brain in between Chu Feng’s palms was like a pellet drum. It went back and forth, back and forth.

Chu Feng’s ferocious slapping kept on ringing out and did not end. The observing crowd were all stupefied. Not to mention the other disciples from the Jade Female School, even the eyes of Baixi and Yan Ruyu were perfectly round from widening. Their mouths

were slightly opened, and they were completely subdued by the strength Chu Feng displayed.

In the world, the most shocking things were not things that were expected. They were the things that you did not believe. Things that you felt were impossible yet still forcefully happened in front of you, and things like those were the things that caused the most shock, because you did not believe that they were true before.

At that very instant, Chu Feng did that very thing. Before, even though the news of Chu Feng's fearful battle power was already spread out, no one believed that it was true. But at that moment, Chu Feng used facts to tell them that all of it was true.

“He is too scary. This Chu Feng actually has such horrifying battle power. Nangong Xiao, who is fairly equal to Senior Yan, can't even take a single blow from him.”

“So that means if Yan Ruyu exchanged blows with him, would she also not be able to defeat him? If Senior Yan can't defeat him, doesn't that mean the distance between us is huge?”

“This young man from the Azure Dragon School is unexpectedly so terrifying! Is this the reason why Yan Ruyu was chosen to be his fiancée?”

“Too outstanding. He is clearly so young, yet he has such strong strength. If he reaches our age, how frightening would he be?”

After being astonished, the gazes that everyone looked at Chu Feng with changed. It was no longer the contempt and disdain from earlier. It was a type of indescribable adoration and admiration.

Before, when they looked at the relationship between Yan Ruyu and Chu Feng, they had some sympathy for Yan Ruyu. They felt if she was married to Chu Feng, it would be like a fresh flower stuck on cow crap so they cried unfairness for Yan Ruyu.

However currently, when they looked at the relationship between Yan Ruyu and Chu Feng, they had incomparable admiration and even envy. They admired that Yan Ruyu had a marriage set with a young man like him.

If Chu Feng had such terrifying battle power at such an age, they could completely imagine how strong he would be after he developed for a bit more time.

How was the young man from the Azure Dragon School a lewd bumpkin? He was simply an incomparable dragon within men. A real cultivating genius. From their perspectives, in terms of talent, there would not be over three people who could be compared to Chu Feng in the entire Azure Province.

However, when everyone discovered Chu Feng's powerful strength and their opinions on Chu Feng changed as they felt that the school head giving Yan Ruyu over to Chu Feng was a correct thing, Chu Feng stood up and swept his gaze of disdain over to Yan Ruyu and coldly said,

“Don’t go everywhere and say that I’m your fiancé, because you are not even worthy enough for me!”

## Chapter 275: Hundred School Gathering

---

“Don’t go everywhere and say that I’m your fiancé, because you are not even worthy enough for me!”

After Chu Feng spoke those words, he urged his sedan chair forward and left. He left a crowd of dumbfounded and endlessly stunned beauties behind.

If Chu Feng said that others were not worthy, it was still reasonable as after all, he was a genius. He was qualified to say that. However, who was Yan Ruyu? She was the number one disciple of the Jade Female School!

In terms of cultivation, it could be said that Yan Ruyu was the strongest within the young generation of females in the Azure Province.

In terms of appearances, if Yan Ruyu said she was the number two beauty in the Azure Province, it was likely that no one would dare to stand out and say that they were number one. And in reality, within people’s hearts, Yan Ruyu was the number one beauty in the Azure Province.

Also, those who understood Yan Ruyu knew that she wasn’t as pretentious as other outstanding females, nor was she as arrogant as other females. It could be said that she was the most kind and amiable one in the entire Jade Female School. Even though others would not believe it when it was said, that was the truth.

Also, Yan Ruyu did not have any scandals with other males. She truly guarded her body, and she was as clean as jade and as clear as ice. That did cause almost all young geniuses from various schools throughout the entire Azure Province to be moved by Yan Ruyu and they wanted to marry that sacred lady

Even the number one person in the young generation of the Azure Province, Dugu Aoyun, indicated in the past that he admired Yan Ruyu quite a bit. Although he did not poke through that paper window, everyone knew that if Yan Ruyu was willing to, Dugu Auyun would also be willing to take her as his wife.

However, such an almost perfect female was said to be unworthy by Chu Feng. Naturally, it caused people to feel shocked. If even Yan Ruyu could not enter Chu Feng's eyes, what kind of female could capture Chu Feng's heart?

However, compared to the astonishment of others, Yan Ruyu did not feel any fury at all. Rather, within her eyes which were as beautiful as the river of stars, there was even a strand of apologetic intention revealed. As she looked at Chu Feng's departing back, she said quietly, "Sorry. I really did not mean to put you in a difficult situation, but..."

"School Head Situ, I wonder if you overestimated Nangong Xiao from your Swordless School, or if you underestimated Chu Feng from my Azure Dragon School. At the end, this result is quite surprising for you right?"

There were three silhouettes hidden within a forest. They were the school heads of the Azure Dragon School, the Swordless

School, and the Jade Female School.

It turned out that the commotion caused by the exchange of blows between Chu Feng and Nangong Xiao already alerted the three of them. However, when the head of the Jade Female School as well as when Li Zhangqing wanted to go up to stop them, they were blocked by the head of the Swordless School since he said that that he wanted to see the fight between the young generation.

No matter if it was Li Zhangqing or the head of the Jade Female School, they were clear that he wanted to use Nangong Xiao to give Chu Feng a lesson because not only would that show Nangong Xiao's strength, it would also show the Swordless School's strength.

However, at that moment, the result undoubtedly caused the head of the Swordless School to be stunned. Not only him, even the head of the Jade Female School felt surprise.

“School Head Li, I never would have thought that an exceptional genius like him appeared in your Azure Dragon School. It seems like the current rumours are true, and this time, your Azure Dragon School will truly display your abilities greatly in the Hundred School Gathering.” After being stunned, the head of the Jade Female School smiled and congratulated.

“Hmph. The Hundred School Gathering isn't only about the cultivation of the disciple. The most important are still the abilities of the school heads. School Head Li, this is the first time that you are participating in the Hundred School Gathering right? I'm sure that you don't know the strengths of the various school heads. I



will only give you a single sentence of advice. It is best to be careful.”

However, the head of the Swordless School who had no more face only coldly snorted, turned around, and left. After that, he who shamelessly requested to go along the Jade Female School led his Swordless School army and went ahead of them.

Li Zhangqing did not even put the actions of the Swordless School in his eyes. Even if the head of the Swordless School talked about cultivation, he was only in the 8th level of the Profound realm. Even if he had enmity in his heart and wanted to fight him in the Hundred School Gathering, Li Zhangqing was not afraid of him.

On the other hand, Chu Feng's cultivation made him feel happy surprise. After all, Chu Feng was only in the 7th level of the Origin realm a few days ago; yet now, he was in the 9th level of the Origin realm. It didn't really matter if Chu Feng raised his cultivation again or if he concealed his cultivation before.

But he knew that Chu Feng who was already outstanding in the 7th level of the Origin realm would be even more insane when he was in the 9th level of the Origin realm. So, he looked very forward to the Hundred School Gathering as well as the number one disciple from his own school displaying his skills. He would certainly bring back the lost glory of the Azure Dragon School.

After a few days of hurrying, Chu Feng and the others finally arrived at the number one school in the Azure Province, the Lingyun School.

The Lingyun School was not created on a mountain range. It was created within a plain. It was a vast city, and the creation of it gave out quite a grand atmosphere.

Today, the gates to the Lingyun School were opened to welcome guests coming from all directions. Almost all of the first-rate schools in the Azure Province arrived at that place to keep their appointment in the Hundred School Gathering hosted by the Lingyun School.

The various first-rate schools sent out their strongest elites. No matter if they were elders or disciples, their cultivation was extremely strong because the Hundred School gathering was a gathering for displaying one's own strength. There was not a single school who did not want to not give enough face out.

So, outside of the Lingyun School, there were White-headed Eagles in the air and all sorts of colourful banners on the ground. That scene was indeed a rare one and it was quite majestic.

However, there were always exceptions, and in this Hundred School Gathering, an outlier appeared. It was the Azure Dragon School who only sent the school head as well as a single disciple.

“Who are they? I don't seem to recall seeing them from last year.”

“It's the Azure Dragon School right? They got promoted to a first-rate school this year, and from what I heard, there is only one

Azure Dragon School, so I'm sure that it's them."

"They are too unpresentable aren't they? They only sent two people? A school like this is able to get an invitation to the Hundred School Gathering?"

"The most important thing is, why are they going with the Jade Female School? This is truly 'a toad eating swan meat'. Look at that old man. He isn't the head of the Azure Dragon School, Li Zhangqing, right? How can he be so ugly? He is even talking and laughing to the head of the Jade Female School! I can't watch this anymore..."

At that instant, Chu Feng and Li Zhangqing were riding on a horse. Along the head of the Jade Female School, they were at the very front of the group.

Li Zhangqing and Chu Feng's special treatment attracted the attention of people. In addition to the highly raised Azure Dragon Banner, it let the other schools know what their statuses were.

But no matter if it was the entrance of the Azure Dragon School or their past position in the Azure Province, they were being contemptibly snorted at. Other than the people from the Jade Female School, almost no one else had any respect for them.

However, Li Zhangqing and Chu Feng were quite at ease. Not only did they ignore the countless gazes of disdain, they even chatted happily and that infuriated many schools that wanted to set up a relationship with the Jade Female School yet could not.

They hiddenly decided if they met Li Zhangqing and Chu Feng in the Hundred School Gathering, they were certainly going to make things difficult for them.

rumble rumble rumble

Just as the big army of a hundred schools were going to surge into the Lingyun School, a group of people walked out of the Lingyun School. At that instant, almost everyone couldn't help but quiet down because some of the most powerful people in the Azure Province were gathered with that group.

## Chapter 276: Special Position

---

Although the strongest schools in the Azure Province were gathered in the Hundred School Gathering, after the people from the Lingyun School appeared, the might from the various schools were instantly suppressed.

The Lingyun School was indeed worthy of being the number one school in the Azure Province. No matter if it was the disciples' talent, or the strength of the elders, they surpassed the other schools. Immediately after the characters from the Lingyun School appeared, it caused everyone to feel more respect.

The person who led them was a tall and straight old man with hair as black as ink. That old man's eyes were like the eyes of an eagle and they were extremely lively. Whoever his gaze landed on would cause them to tremble even though it wasn't cold. That person was the head of the Lingyun School, Yan Yangtian.

There were even twelve old people next to Yan Yangtian. Those twelve old people had very strong auras, and they were all experts in the 9th level of the Profound realm.

If a single person in the 9th level of the Profound realm appeared in any other schools, it would already be extremely impressive. However, there were twelve people like them in the Lingyun School. From that, it could be seen how overpowering the strength of the Lingyun School was, and how great the distance was when compared to other schools. As for those twelve old people, they were the famous Twelve Protectors of the Lingyun School.

Other than the Twelve Protectors, the number one disciple of the Lingyun School, Dugu Aoyun, was also next to Yan Yangtian. The number one person in the young generation of the Azure Province still had the cultivation of the 8th level of the Profound realm, but his aura was quite a bit stronger than before.

The strength of the Lingyun School simply caused people to be tongue-tied. Not a single school dared to be disrespectful because the Lingyun School did have strength that they could not defeat. However, as many people were blindly praising the powerful strength of the Lingyun School, Chu Feng was observing the cultivation of the head of the Lingyun School.

“This unfathomable aura... Yan Yangtian is absolutely not only in the Profound realm. Has he already entered the Heaven realm?”

Chu Feng felt shocked because from Yan Yangtian's body, he felt a special feeling. Even with his Spirit power, it was hard to determine the depth of his strength. It wasn't because he used some special methods to conceal his strength. His strength already reached a stage in which Chu Feng could not detect it anymore.

The biggest possibility for this would be that Yan Yangtian already broke through the bindings of the Profound realm, entered a completely new realm of walking in the air, and grasped entirely new power. The realm of the Heaven power, the Heaven realm.

However, the Heaven realm already disappeared for several hundred years in the Azure Province. Even the Imperial Sky Sage was unable to step into that realm, yet Yan Yangtian could?

hmm

But just as Chu Feng felt astonished, he suddenly felt a strong Spirit power wave engulfing him and it was currently scanning his position. In response, Chu Feng quickly put his Spirit power away and he didn't dare to observe Yan Yangtian anymore.

He shockingly discovered that behind Yan Yangtian, there was an old man wearing a World Spirit Grey-cloak, and obviously, he was the Grey-cloak World Spiritist of the Lingyun School.

“What's wrong?” At the same time, Yan Yangtian couldn't help but slightly turn his head around to ask the Grey-cloak World Spiritist behind him.

“I felt a very strong Spirit power and it should be a Grey-cloak World Spiritist.” The World Spiritist replied.

“Oh? Did you find who it was?” Yan Yangtian lightly raised his eyebrows as he was aware that the person wasn't simple.

“I didn't. Their reaction was very sensitive, and I'm afraid their attainment in the Spirit Formation technique isn't inferior to me. It is very possible that he's the Mr. Grey-cloak who disappeared for quite a long time.” The World Spiritist said.

“It's fine. If Mr. Grey-cloak really did come here, it may not be a bad thing.” Suddenly, Yan Yangtian smiled as if it didn't matter,

then after that, he invited the various schools to enter the Lingyun School. A completely new and extremely big welcoming ceremony started right then.

There was a huge plaza in the Lingyun School The plaza was very vast and it was created just for the Hundred School Gathering.

At that instant, the many school heads, elders, and disciples gathered within that plaza as they listened to Yan Yantian's welcoming speech as well as to the rules of the Hundred School Gathering.

“The Hundred School Gathering gathers the strongest schools in the Azure Province. In order to allow the outstanding schools to get the treatment that they should get, there is a special position prepared in this year's Hundred School Gathering.”

“The school who gets this position can be exempted from all the competitions in the Hundred School Gathering. At the end of the Hundred School Gathering, the school head and the disciple can directly challenge the strongest school head and the strongest disciple.” Yan Yangtian announced with a loud voice.

“No need to participate in any competitions and they can challenge the strongest disciple and the strongest school head? How much strength would be needed for that?

“Yeah, every year, the position of the strongest disciple and the strongest school head gets monopolized by the Lingyun School. In the current Azure Province, which school has the strength to



challenge the Lingyun School?”

“Although it is said that no matter which school gets selected, they would have no way of defeating the Lingyun School, at least it means that the school who gets chosen can be said to have gained the approval of the Lingyun School, as it would be the strongest school in the Azure Province other than them.”

“That’s right. This position is a rare honor, and from what I see, the school who is able to get this position should be the one ranked as second from the last year’s Hundred School Gathering. The number two school in the Azure Province, the Three Emperor School.”

“That may not be so. In the Hundred School Gathering last year, the Three Emperor School only barely won. From what I see, the Spirit Mountain School and the Swordless School both have very high possibilities in winning.”

“All of you are wrong. Obviously, only beauties can receive such special treatment. I feel that the Jade Female School is the most likely one.” As they faced the special position that came suddenly, the various schools kept on guessing. But the targets of who they guessed were only limited within the few schools in the top five.

“As for which school the flower lands on for this special position, I welcome the special guest to this Hundred School Gathering, Lord Qi Fengyang, to announce it.” Yan Yangtian stood on the stage and declared in a loud voice.

At the same time, Qi Fengyang also stepped onto the stage and appeared within people's line of sight.

“It's the Qi clan's chief from the Qilin Prince's Mansion, Lord Qi Fengyang! I've heard that Lord Qi Fengyang already entered the 9th level of the Profound realm many years ago and currently, he is invincible within the Profound realm. He is a true expert!”

“No one from the Qilin Prince's Mansion came from the past Hundred School Gathering to congratulate, so this year, why did the Qilin Prince's Mansion send out such a high-level character here?”

“I even heard that Lord Qi Fengyang has a special relationship with the Azure Dragon School as he became sworn brothers with the number one disciple of the Azure Dragon School, Chu Feng. A few days ago, the Azure Dragon School's promotion was also personally hosted by him. I wonder if it is true or false.”

“Nonsense! You even believe such news? What virtue or ability does the Azure Dragon School have? How is it possible for them to be related to Lord Qi Fengyang?”

“With Lord Qi Fengyang's status, not to mention the formerly insignificant second-rate school, the Azure Dragon School, Lord Qi Fengyang would not even look straight at some first-rate schools.”

“Also, don't even mention being sworn brothers with Chu Feng who is in the Origin realm. That is undoubtedly a rumour that the Azure Dragon School intentionally spread after announcing that

they became a first-rate school.”

After Qi Fengyang appeared, it give birth to many more sighs of surprises from the various school. Because of the special status of the Qilin Prince’s Mansion, even if the other schools got even stronger, they did not dare to be disrespectful towards the Qilin Prince’s Mansion.

However, at the same time, Chu Feng from the Azure Dragon School was paid attention to because no one believed that such a huge character like Qi Fengyang would become sworn brothers with a little brat like Chu Feng. So, they hoped that Qi Fengyang could expose the truth and let the Azure Dragon School as well as Chu Feng to enter an embarrassed situation.

They hoped for that because other schools being shamed was always something that everyone enjoyed to see. Especially a school like the Azure Dragon School who they looked down upon from the bottom of their hearts.

## Chapter 277: Invitation From A Beauty

---

At that very instant, everyone was waiting for Qi Fengyang to announce the results. They wanted to know which school was going to get the special position.

As he was being stared by countless gazes, Qi Fengyang first lightly smiled, then cast his gaze towards the location where the Jade Female School was.

“So it is indeed the Jade Female School huh. It looks like that I was right. Only beauties can enjoy such special treatment.” At that instant, everyone felt that the answer was already revealed. However, when Qi Fengyang spoke the next sentence, they were instantly stupefied.

“The school that gets this special position is the Azure Dragon School!!” Qi Fengyang declared with a loud and clear yell.

“What? The Azure Dragon School? How did this happen? It’s the Azure Dragon School that just recently got promoted to a first-rate school!”

At that moment, no one could remain calm anymore because that result was completely unexpected. Even the people from the Lingyun School were bewildered.

“School head, this...” The Protectors from the Lingyun School cast their worried gazes towards Yan Yangtian.

Although the Lingyun School gave the decision to choose the special position over to Qi Fengyang, no one would have expected that he would so ridiculously chose a school that no one liked or approved of.

But even so, at that moment, Yan Yangtian could really do nothing about it and nothing more. Although his cultivation was quite outstanding and he was the grand head of the Lingyun School, it wasn't good for him to say much in front of a huge character like Qi Fengyang from the Qilin Prince's Mansion. At least in that situation, he could not sweep Qi Fengyang's face away. So, he could only secretly wave his hand towards his own subordinates, indicating them to not speak rashly.

“This...This doesn't seem to be too reasonable. How can such a special position be given to the Azure Dragon School? What virtue or ability do they have to be deserving of that?”

“Why? Why did this happen? Does Qi Fengyang truly have a special relationship with the Azure Dragon School? If that is true, doesn't it mean that he is using his position for private matters? This is too unfair!” With that, the ocean of people went into an uproar and some people even publicly protested.

They did that because Qi Fengyang chose a school that no one acknowledged or respected. It could be said that Qi Fengyang decision was not enough to cause the crowd to be satisfied. Even if his position was even more distinguished, it would still cause people to be displeased.

boom But just at that time, Qi Fengyang suddenly extended his hand and punched the air. After that punch was thrown out, it instantly exploded like thunder. Strong force caused the air and the land to sway, and the people from the various schools underneath were also affected by that punch.

After that, the originally incomparably noisy ocean of people instantly quieted down. Qi Fengyang then swept his strict gaze over the crowd and coldly said, “What is the meaning of all of this? Do you not approve of the decision done by me, Qi Fengyang?” Qi Fengyang’s voice was abnormally loud.

After he spoke, the already quiet crowd immediately became even quieter. Even if they did not approve in their hearts, at that very instant, no one dared to say the words “I don’t approve”.

“Lord Qi Fengyang’s sharp eyes knows the pearl, so I believe that the school he chose will certainly give us an unthinkable good surprise.” Just at that time, Yan Yangtian stood out and as he spoke, he clapped.

At the same, the elders from the Lingyun School who were on the tall stage also clapped one after the other. Following that, the sound of clapping came from the schools underneath as well and it became more and more loud. At the end, it rang throughout the entire Lingyun School. Although they did not approve, at that moment, they could only helplessly allow that result.

So, Li Zhangqing and Chu Feng, the outliers in innumerable people’s eyes, got the best treatment in this year’s Hundred School Gathering. Not only were they exempted from the various

competitions, Li Zhangqing and Chu Feng even got two extremely luxurious palaces which were the residences for them. In short, the two of them got the most excellent services.

But the one who was the most odd was still Qi Fengyang. He, who was already suspected to use his position for private benefits, had actually ignored the views of others and kept on running towards the residence in which Chu Feng lived in and chatted with him as they played chess. He only took his leave and left when he had something to do in the Qilin Prince's Mansion later on.

Qi Fengyang's actions cleared up a fact for everyone. How was the news of Qi Fengyang and Chu Feng being brothers a rumour? It was clearly true.

Many people felt that it was unbelievable as they faced that fact. But some people with careful thoughts started to contemplate whether Chu Feng really had areas that exceed others. Perhaps he truly had extremely strong battle power and was a rare cultivating genius who could skip many levels to defeat the strong as the weak.

But no matter what, at least within the Lingyun School, no one dared to cast any gazes of disdain towards Chu Feng anymore. Not for any other reason but because he had a Qi Fengyang behind his back. Just because of that, very little people dared to offend Chu Feng.

With a blink, the Hundred School Gathering officially started. Chu Feng did not go and look at the competitions between the schools, but he did hear an explosive news.

It was that the formation the Lingyun School sent out in the Hundred School Gathering this time was truly completely revolutionary. Not only did the school head, Yan Yangtian, not participate in the competition, even the elders did not. No matter if it was the competitions between the school heads or disciples, the Lingyun School sent disciples for both of them.

The number one disciple of the Lingyun School who was already famous throughout the Azure Province, Dugu Aoyun, represented the head of the Lingyun School and participated in the competition.

Many school heads were displeased when they saw what the Lingyun School did, because no matter how much more outstanding Dugu Aoyun was, after all, he was still of the young generation. He was still a disciple. Having Dugu Aoyun competing with the school head level characters like them meant that they were humiliating their status.

But because of the Lingyun School's strength and because the Hundred School Gathering was hosted by the Lingyun School, many people dared to be angry, but did not dare to speak. Ultimately, they silently accepted that.

“Junior Chu Feng, so you're here? It was quite a pain trying to find you, you know~”

On that day, Chu Feng was originally taking a nap at ease as he was next to a lake and bathing in sun. But suddenly, a gentle and



sweet voice rang out and woke Chu Feng up from his dream.

After raising his head to look, Chu Feng's curious expression instantly became icy cold because he recognized the one who called out. It was Baixi who hiddenly incited Yan Ruyu that day on how to use Nangong Xiao to give a lesson to himself.

“Junior Chu Feng, you wouldn't hate me because of the matter that day right?” Even after seeing Chu Feng's icy cold face, Baixi did not back away. She kept on swinging her little waist, and as it swayed left and right, she walked in front of Chu Feng, charmingly smiled, and sweetly asked.

“No need to speak such empty words. If you have anything, just say it.” Chu Feng coldly shot a glance at Baixi. It could be said that Chu Feng was really disgusted and hated that woman to the extreme.

“Junior Chu Feng, I do have something that I need you for. But it isn't me who needs you. Senior Yan wants to invite you over for a chat.” Baixi smiled and said.

“You can go back and tell Yan Ruyu that I am not interested in her.” Chu Feng threw himself up and he prepared to leave.

“Eei~ Junior Chu Feng, I know you are angry because Senior Yan wasn't willing to see you on that day. But I guarantee to you that she isn't a female who you think she is.” Seeing that, Baixi extended her jade-like hand and grabbed Chu Feng's palm.

## Chapter 278: Poison In The Tea

---

“Junior Chu Feng, there are really just some misunderstandings between you and Senior Yan. I hope that the two of you can openly speak to each other as that would be for the best.”

“Can you do that for the sake of the faces of my school head and your school head? After all, the two of them really hope that you and Senior Yan can be together.” Baixi tightly clamped over Chu Feng’s hand and one hand was even lightly rubbing Chu Feng’s palm.

“Lead the way. Let me see what kind of game you two are playing.”

Chu Feng flung Baixi’s hand away. He was not bewitched by Baixi’s beauty, nor was he moved by Yan Ruyu. However, Chu Feng was simply too bored. If he didn’t go, he would just be waiting around, so he might as well just go with Baixi.

“You are truly kind. You will know that your current decision is the right one.” Baixi sweetly smiled, then walked towards the residences for the Jade Female School. However, when she turned around, Chu Feng did not see how strange the smile Baixi had on the corners of her mouth.

As Baixi led the way, Chu Feng very quickly arrived where the beauties and elders from the Jade Female School lived at. When the pretty females from the Jade Female School saw Chu Feng, all of them sweetly smiled to express friendliness.

Chu Feng did not pay attention to the female disciples' change in attitude because on the road, many female disciples from the Jade Female School already did that as they wanted to be on better terms with Chu Feng.

On the other hand, Baixi's face turned cold and she endlessly sent threatening expressions towards the female disciples who showed kindness. She scared all of the disciples who wanted to go up to chat with Chu Feng away.

“Hey, isn't Chu Feng Senior Yan's fiancé? Why is he following Baixi over to her own residence?”

“Who knows what method that fox spirit used. But she is quite despicable by daring to so openly tempt Senior Yan's fiancé.”

“Yeah. It's quite a shame that Senior Yan is taking her as her own sister. This woman is truly shameless.” After Baixi and Chu Feng left, the female disciples gathered together and secretly murmured within themselves.

Since Chu Feng was not familiar to the residences of the Jade Female School's disciples, naturally, he did not know that Baixi brought him to her own residence.

However, Chu Feng who originally did not like Baixi in any way did not trust that woman. So, after Baixi left, he spread out his Spirit power. After discovering that the fruits and desserts on the table were without problem, he unrestrainedly picked up the food

and chewed in huge mouthfuls.

“Junior Chu Feng, thank you for giving me this chance to come and see me.” Suddenly, an extremely soft voice that could melt the bones gradually rang out.

Raising his head to look over, he saw Yan Ruyu walk out from the hall. The current Yan Ruyu did not wear the clothing for the core disciples of the Jade Female School. She wore a pink-coloured long dress.

That dress was extremely beautiful, but there was quite a bit materials saved when it was created. So, because of that, one could see Yan Ruyu’s two lumps of shining whiteness as well as the unseeable deep ravine in the middle.

Looking downwards, one could also see two snow-white beautiful legs. They were exquisite, soft, smooth, and was full of pink lustre. When he saw how she dressed as well as her jade-like, sweet, and beautiful face, Chu Feng was really burning from flames of desires, and even though he wished to stop he could not.

Speaking honestly, Yan Ruyu was indeed a beauty that could enter Chu Feng’s eyes. If Yan Ruyu was willing to marry Chu Feng from the start, perhaps Chu Feng really would have married the beauty. However, the present was different from the past. No matter what style the woman had, Chu Feng was absolutely not going to marry her.

“If you have anything you want to say, speak. My time is

limited.” Chu Feng did not want to be caught in Yan Ruyu’s [beauty trap](#). So, he quickly spun his gaze around. After ferociously shooting a glance at her, he turned his head to look in another area.

The “beauty trap” refers to one of the Thirty-six stratagems.

“Junior Chu Feng, the matter that day was indeed my fault. But please believe me. I, Yan Ruyu, isn’t the type of person you think I am.” Yan Ruyu sat across to Chu Feng and her bodily fragrance pounced towards his nose, causing Chu Feng’s heart to be shaken.

“What type? Do you know what type you belong in my heart?” Chu Feng curled his mouth and sneered.

“If I’ve guessed correctly, I’m sure that you feel that I, Yan Ruyu, am a person who likes admiration and idolization, intentionally avoided you at first after seeing your petty cultivation and wanted to refuse this marriage. Yet after seeing your talent, you think that I am deliberately fawning over you and want to marry you.” Yan Ruyu grovellingly said.

After hearing those words, Chu Feng still coldly smiled, curled his mouth, and said, “Is that not it?”

“Of course it isn’t. The reason why I avoided you was to intentionally make you angry so you could suggest to the school head a cancel in the marriage between you and me.”

“The reason why I asked you to come here is so I can apologize for the earlier matter. I don’t expect you to forgive me, nor do I want you to have any good feelings towards me, because even if it is right now, I still don’t want to be married to you.” The current Yan Ruyu had an apologetic face on.

“Damn. Are you sick? You called me to this place because you want to mock me? I’ll tell you that you are wrong. I never had any interest towards you. You don’t want to marry me, and I never even thought of marrying you.” At that instant, Chu Feng was a bit angry. He really could not take Yan Ruyu as she said those words with that expression.

“Junior Chu Feng, please don’t be angry. I don’t have any other intentions. I just want to let you know that the reason why I, Yan Ruyu, don’t want to marry you isn’t because I look down on you. It is just that I already decided not to marry anyone in my entire life.”

“Today, I called you out to this place is because I want to say sorry to you. I want to apologize to you.” As she spoke to that point, Yan Ruyu’s eyes actually reddened and two rows of hot tears flowed down.

“Damn, something must be wrong with you.” Chu Feng could really do absolutely nothing and he turned around and wanted to leave. With his extremely powerful Spirit power, he discovered with astonishment that Yan Ruyu’s actions did not seem to be acted out. She seemed to truly show her true emotions.

But why did she need to do that? Chu Feng really did not

understand. In short, Chu Feng could not take Yan Ruyu who was behaving like that, so he just wanted to leave and be done with it.

“Junior Chu Feng, don’t leave.” Just at that time, Baixi stood out and stopped Chu Feng.

“What are you doing?” Chu Feng’s face was not kind.

“Junior Chu Feng, since you don’t even want to marry Senior Yan, why be angry because she doesn’t want to marry you? She only feels ashamed because of her actions from the beginning. If you are not angry, just accept her apology okay? Only then can her heart be at ease.” Baixi urged.

“Junior Chu Feng!!” Just at that time, Yan Ruyu who was sobbing heavily pitifully walked over. There was a pot of fragrant tea on her hands. She brought it in front of Chu Feng and said, “Please accept my apology.”

“Okay okay, I forgive you. I just haven’t seen a sick woman like you before.” At that moment, Chu Feng only wanted to leave that place. He could not bear Yan Ruyu’s pitiful appearance at all. So, he held the pot of fragrant tea and drank it down.

“Crap!!” But in the instant the tea entered his stomach, Chu Feng’s face changed greatly and he discovered that there was poison in the tea.

## Chapter 279: Paying The Price

---

“There is poison in the tea!” Chu Feng hiddenly cursed because just as the tea entered his stomach, he felt a burst of strange energy spreading out within his body. Instantly, it sealed his dantian and his Origin power quickly shrunk, and very soon, he powerlessly fell onto the ground.

“Dammit.” The current Chu Feng could not speak anymore, but he was still furiously roaring in his heart.

At the same time that he roared, Chu Feng quickly revolved his Spirit power and connected to the Spirit Formation power from his World Spirit Space, then created a mini Spirit Formation within his body to seal the strange poison.

“Damn. It’s this poison again.”

Chu Feng was very speechless, because when he laid a Spirit Formation to seal the poison in his body, he discovered that there was a reaction under his stomach. A mighty huge thing was erected and from that, Chu Feng couldn’t help but think back to the situation in the Vermilion Bird City. Dammit. He was affected by the X poison again.

And the person who poisoned him this time was a woman again, and it was even a beauty. But the most important part was that the poison in the tea was several times stronger than the one before. If his cultivation did not increase greatly and if he wasn’t proficient in Spirit Formation techniques, he would have already been



engulfed by the poison and lost his rationality.

“Haha, you’re stupefied aren’t you? You’ve gotten poisoned by this again? You are shaming the name of World Spiritists! Ah ha ha, I could laugh to death from this. What a man you are, being poisoned two times by two sisters, and they even succeeded both times.”

“Whatever. Chu Feng, don’t resist and go along with it. These are two big beauties!” As Chu Feng was painstakingly sealing the power of the poison, Eggy took joy in his misfortune and laughed as he was in a disaster. She convulsed with laughter and banged the floor with her fist as she held her stomach.

“You damn girl, don’t mess me up. As a man, how can I be forced back and forth by this kind of thing?” Chu Feng did not give in and he continued sealing.

After a while of hard work, finally, with his own Grey-cloak World Spiritist methods, he thoroughly sealed the poison within his body. But when all his cultivation returned to normal, he was not in a hurry to get up.

His kept his eyes closed and continued to lay on the ground while pretending to be unconscious because he wanted to see what the two bastard women were doing.

“Junior Baixi, have we gone too far by doing this?” At that instant, as Yan Ruyu looked at Chu Feng who had a red face and red ears while laying on the ground, she felt both worried and

guilty. At the same time, she was a bit anxious.

On the other hand, Baixi was calmly staring at Chu Feng, then as though it didn't matter much, she said to Yan Ruyu, "Senior Yan, don't worry. Will he feel that he suffered if I, Baixi, slept with him?" As she spoke, Baixi confidently pushed her jet-black hair back. Faint fragrance was floated past and it was extremely attractive.

"But... After all, he was poisoned by you and it isn't his original intention. If we do this..." Yan Ruyu was still a bit worried.

"Okay my good senior, don't overthink this. You can't do the thing with males right? You can't, but I can. And after all, I'm doing this to help you."

"As long as I do the thing between a male and a female with Chu Feng, that also means that Chu Feng will be unable to face you. After the school head knows about it, she will undoubtedly cancel the marriage between you two. Rather, she would support me and Chu Feng."

"Coincidentally, I have also wanted to find a man who can be relied on and has potential. Although Chu Feng is still young, he has the requirements for my necessity."

"Not only is this helping you, this is also helping me!" As Baixi spoke, she pushed Yan Ruyu out. But Yan Ruyu was looking at Chu Feng with a full face of guilt, and she didn't know whether she should leave or not.

Chu Feng who heard everything was already as furious as thunder. After so much, he was truly tricked by the two bastards. Disastrous things would have happened if he did not have powerful methods right now to seal the poison. If he lost his body, that was small. However, his reputation would have been completely destroyed into nothingness. He would have also been forced to marry Baixi, the deceptive bastard.

He was deceived by that kind of person, so it truly caused Chu Feng to be endlessly furious. It was not possible for him to take that deception for nothing, and he had to pay those two bastards several times back.

As he thought to that point, with a ceng, Chu Feng stood up, pointed at squabbling Yan Ruyu and Baixi, and said, “You two damn bastards. I believe you two, yet you trick me like this. Today, you two will pay the price.”

“Chu Feng, you~~~” Yan Ruyu and Baixi were both frightened after they saw Chu Feng wake up.

“Chu Feng, come towards me if you have anything. This isn’t related to Baixi.” Yan Ruyu was the first to react. She first shot a glance at Baixi, then quickly stopped in front of Chu Feng to block him.

Baixi’s beautiful body leaped and she wanted to run out of the palace. No one knew if she wanted to escape or if she was going to look for reinforcements.

“Hmph. No need to fake anything. Today, neither one of you should even think of escaping.”

However, Chu Feng waved his big sleeve and a boundless Spirit Formation sealed the palace. No matter how Baixi attacked it, the Spirit Formation did not move in the slightest. Being helpless, she could only loudly yell. But the people outside could not hear anything.

“Scream. Scream as much as you want. Even if your throat breaks from screaming, no one will come to save you.”

Chu Feng disdainfully shot a gaze at Baixi, then grabbed onto Yan Ruyu’s small waist. Putting some strength into his arm, he put the beauty on his shoulder. Then, he leaped into the bedroom and fiercely threw Yan Ruyu onto the big bed.

“Ahh~~~ Chu Feng, what are you doing?” At that instant, Yan Ruyu originally wanted to get up to escape, but she could do nothing as the pressure that was emanating off of Chu Feng’s body was abnormally strong. It completely pressed her down. She could only roll around on the bed but she could not even get herself up.

“What am I doing? You’re asking what I am doing?”

“There were no grievances nor enmity between us, so why did you have to deceive me? If you want to guard your body like jade, then guard your body like jade. If you don’t want to marry, then you don’t have to marry. Why do you have to make things so

difficult for me again and again? Have I, Chu Feng, forced you to do anything?”

“I’ll tell you this. Today, everything was forced by you. You want guard your chastity? Then I, Chu Feng, will destroy your chastity. You can’t do the things between a male and a female? Then I will do the things between males and females.” Chu Feng’s fury consumed his heart, and as both of his eyes were blood-red, like a hungry wolf facing its food, he pressed himself on Yan Ruyu’s body.

“Ahh~~~ Chu Feng, let me go! I beg you, I can’t! I can’t do those things with a man! I really can’t, so I beg you, let me go!” Yan Ruyu struggled for her life and her face was flooded with tears.

However, her behavior only increased Chu Feng’s beastly nature. He grabbed on her dress and pulled. With some ripping sounds, Yan Ruyu’s pink-coloured dress was torn into two and at that very instant, Yan Ruyu’s snow-white and bewitching body was completely revealed in front of Chu Feng.

At that instant, Baixi ran over. Seeing that Chu Feng was going to go violent on Yan Ruyu, her face changed greatly and following that, she even took off her own skirt to reveal her alluring curves as she threw herself towards Chu Feng.

“Get out of the way.” However, Chu Feng waved his arm and a current of force pushed Baixi towards the corner of the wall, then he howled, “Trash like you wants to become my woman? You are not worthy!”

After speaking, Chu Feng pounced towards the beauty Yan Ruyu underneath him...

# Chapter 280: Forbidden Mysterious Technique

---

Within the room, Yan Ruyu was laying on the bed while being completely still. Her ripped pink-coloured dress was covering her most arousing forbidden region, but beyond the edges of the dress, every single inch of revealed snow-white skin was so enticing.

Even though that beautiful body was already drenched by sweat and engulfed by a certain person's lips, the perfect curves along with the sticky liquid made it appear even more erotically bewitching.

However, the current Yan Ruyu was like a dead fish. She laid there without moving, and only when breathed could one see her chest faintly rise up.

Tears were hung from her eyes and her face was like ash, as if the most important thing in her life was taken away by someone. She sank into an unprecedented depression as though her life reached the very end.

As for Baixi, even though she was also naked, she was unconscious while she was in the corner. Chu Feng did not touch her. Before, Chu Feng was being controlled by his anger and he wanted the two of them to be in opposite situations.

Baixi wanted to sleep with Chu Feng, so he did not allow it. Yan Ruyu didn't want to do the things between a male and a female, so Chu Feng insisted on doing it with her. That was the price they

paid for deceiving Chu Feng.

Chu Feng was wearing his own clothes as he had a bit of sweat on his forehead and a satisfied smile on his face. Although he pressed the big beauty Yan Ruyu under him because of anger and because of revenge, he had to admit that Yan Ruyu was extremely beautiful female. Her perfect body was not inferior to Su Rou, and it gave Chu Feng a wonderful journey.

The faint blood on the bed told Chu Feng that Yan Ruyu did not conceal anything or act. She truly guarded her body like jade, and at least she was still a virgin.

“Mm~” Suddenly, Yan Ruyu’s body quivered and following that, she shrunk into a ball. Both of her hands were tightly clenched into a fist and pain could be seen from her face, as though she was enduring some type of torture.

“Oi, what’s with you?” Chu Feng tightly furrowed his brows and he used his Spirit power to detect. He discovered that change was happening to Yan Ruyu’s body. A burst of strange energy was surging in her body, and it was spreading and engulfing every inch of her skin.

“Ahh~~~”

Just at that time, Yan Ruyu screeched and layers of blue-coloured gas overflowed out of her body. As they lingered around Yan Ruyu and swirled, her body gradually got lifted up and she floated into the air.



“This aura is very strange. Does she also have something special in her body as well?” Chu Feng was endlessly shocked as he looked at everything in front of his eyes while being dumbfounded.

He discovered with astonishment that at that very moment, Yan Ruyu’s aura was quickly increasing in strength. It wasn’t that her cultivation was increasing but her battle power. With a blink, it already increased to an extremely terrifying state.

But that wasn’t much. The thing that surprised Chu Feng the most was the change that happened to Yan Ruyu’s body. On her originally white skin that was as clean as snow, layers of blue-coloured objects emerged.

The objects were bright and shiny, like a small little pieces of armor. However, Chu Feng who had quite a bit of experience instantly could see that they weren’t armor. They were fish scales. On Yan Ruyu’s body, blue-coloured fish scales were growing, but like armor, they were surrounding her body.

“Chu Feng. If I do not die, I will take your life.”

Suddenly, Yan Ruyu turned her face over and at that instant, Chu Feng could see that her originally beautiful eyes which were like rivers of stars became two rows of red light and they were abnormally sinister. They were no longer the eyes of a human and they seemed more like those of a demon.

whoosh

After speaking, Yan Ruyu grabbed Baixi's skirt and put it on, then after that, she became a row of light and shot out. With a boom, her aura already escaped Chu Feng's range of detection.

"What happened? Her power has been increased to this state?" Chu Feng quickly went out of the room and chased, and he discovered that the Spirit Formation he laid in the palace was already shattered into pieces.

At that instant, although Chu Feng was very stunned, he did not hesitate. He leaped up and used the Imperial Sky Technique to rush in the direction in which Yan Ruyu escaped towards.

At first, with the strong power of the Imperial Sky Technique, Chu Feng was able to quickly chase after Yan Ruyu's steps. But for some unknown reason, Yan Ruyu's speed quickened more and more. After the two of them left the Lingyun School and entered a forest, Chu Feng was already shaken off by Yan Ruyu and he could not see any traces of her anymore.

"How is this possible? She clearly only had the aura of the 5th level of the Profound realm, so how is it possible that her speed completely surpasses mine?" At that instant, Chu Feng was floating in the air, and as he looked towards the Yan Ruyu's direction of disappearance, his gaze was filled with astonishment.

"Chu Feng, it seems like this time, you have made a huge enemy." Suddenly, Eggy who was silent for a long time spoke.

“Eggy, what do you mean? Is it possible that Yan Ruyu also has a special body? She also has a Divine Body?”

Chu Feng then suddenly came to a realization. The change that happened to Yan Ruyu just now surpassed reason. She had battle power which was comparable to him, and possibly even comparable to the purple-clothed female back on that day. Because of that, Chu Feng couldn't help but associate that with Divine Bodies which had special abilities and horrifying battle power.

“Nope. From the various things before, the change that just happened to her body, as well as the last sentence she said to you before she left, I determined that she doesn't have a Divine Body. Rather, she should have cultivated some Forbidden Mysterious Technique.”

“Forbidden Mysterious Technique?” It was the first time Chu Feng that had heard of such a phrase.

“That's right. Forbidden Mysterious Techniques are not the same as ordinary Demonic Techniques. They are terrifying Mysterious Techniques created by top-level experts.”

“These types of Mysterious Techniques can allow people with ordinary talent gain unordinary power. However, one must be careful when cultivating it. If there's a bit of carelessness, everything gets reverted and even their life can be involved.”

“Techniques like those should not exist in the first place as they are things that violate the rules of martial cultivation, and if rules

are broken, punishment will be given out. So, some certain changes will happen to people who cultivate Mysterious Techniques like those. That is also why they are called Forbidden Mysterious Techniques.”

“Accordingly, even if a Forbidden Mysterious Technique like that exists in the world, Yan Ruyu shouldn’t be able to cultivate it. However, after discovering that there’s an Emperor Tomb here as well as an Asura Ghost Tower, I am not too surprised to know that a Forbidden Mysterious Technique appeared in the continent of the Nine Provinces.”

“Although right now, the continent of the Nine Provinces is a gathering of garbage, many outstanding characters must have appeared back then and even possibly extremely powerful people. Currently, if the treasures that the big character left behind still remains, those who have great luck can find them.”

“Since you are able to discover the Emperor Tomb and get the Secret Skill, the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique, Yan Ruyu is able to find a treasure from her place and acquire the Forbidden Mysterious Technique.”

“However, the creators of Forbidden Mysterious Techniques aren’t any good people. They are usually bloodthirsty demon-level characters, so it seems that in the past, the continent of the Nine Provinces wasn’t a peaceful land.” Eggy narrated her perspective in detail but her gaze sank into contemplation, as though she was able to imagine the scene of the Nine Provinces back then.

## Chapter 281: Demon

---

“Eggy, are you sure that Yan Ruyu cultivated a Forbidden Mysterious Technique?” Although Chu Feng did not know what the Forbidden Mysterious Technique was, he could hear the impressiveness of it from Eggy’s words.

“Eight, nine, not far from ten. If one were to cultivate a Forbidden Mysterious Technique, they had to follow special rules. She guarded her body like jade, and it is certainly not just a coincidence that such changes happened to her body after you broke her chastity.”

“However, you don’t need to be too worried. Her current situation belongs to the ‘entering the evil path’. She will most likely be unable to continue living.” Eggy reminded.

“What? Does that mean she will die because of me?” After knowing that he himself caused Yan Ruyu to “enter the evil path”, and there was even a possibility of her dying because of him, Chu Feng instantly ceaselessly blamed himself. Even though he didn’t like Yan Ruyu that much, he did not want to have killed her because of that.

“What? Your heart can’t bear it? Chu Feng, you better pray. Pray that she dies because of entering the evil path, or else...”

“Or else, she will become a bloodthirsty female devil, and the first person she will kill will be you.”

At that instant, Chu Feng finally understood the seriousness of the matter. No matter what, he never would have thought that Yan Ruyu was such a dangerous character who cultivated a Forbidden Mysterious Technique. But it was useless to regret over things that had already happened. Since it happened, one must face it. After doing it, one must take responsibility.

So, after Chu Feng returned to the Lingyun School, he did not act as though nothing happened at all. He came to the residence of the Jade Maiden School's head to request for punishment.

After arriving to that place, Chu Feng discovered that taking the initiative to ask for punishment was correct because the bastard Baixi was also there. Clearly, she already told everything to the head of the Jade Maiden School. Of course, she did not know anything about the change that happened to Yan Ruyu's body because at that time, she was still unconscious.

"Baixi, you leave first. I have some things that I want to talk to Chu Feng about. Remember, do not mention anything about Ruyu's matter to anyone." The head of the Jade Maiden School sat on the chair and waved her hand at Baixi.

"As you order." Baixi did not dare to be slow, and after meaningfully looking at Chu Feng, she turned around and left.

After Baixi left, the head of the Jade Maiden School first calmly drank some tea, then looked at Chu Feng, smiled and said with relief,

“Chu Feng, being able to come to me in order to admit your wrongs on your own makes me quite pleased.”

“Can you tell me where Ruyu went? That girl has quite a fierce temper, so I’m afraid that she won’t think straight and does some stupid things.”

From her words, Chu Feng could tell that the head of the Jade Maiden School was really quite worried about Yan Ruyu, so he could truly not bear to hide anything, and he told her everything.

After knowing that Yan Ruyu and Chu Feng did the thing between a male and female, then her body changed and even Chu Feng had no way of catching up, the head of the Jade Maiden School could not remain calm anymore. She stood up, and as she tightly frowned, she walked back and forth in the hall.

After a good while, the head of the Jade Maiden School asked Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, what do you think the reason is for such changes to appear on Ruyu?”

“Please forgive me saying this directly, but I think that the changes don’t seem to be caused by the consumption of special medicines. They seem to have happened because of cultivation in a Demonic Technique.”

Chu Feng did not say that it was from a Forbidden Mysterious Technique because in this continent, there were more people who understood and recognized Demonic Techniques, but there weren’t many people who knew about Forbidden Mysterious

Techniques.

If Chu Feng went and explained what Forbidden Mysterious Techniques were to the school head who had lived for dozens of years, without a doubt, she would certainly suspect how Chu Feng came to know about those things, and she would suspect that Chu Feng had some secrets on him.

“Demonic Techniques huh...” After hearing Chu Feng’s words, the head of the Jade Maiden School thought deeply once again. After a while, she helplessly sighed, “No wonder. No wonder...”

“Senior, do you know something about it?” Chu Feng quickly asked.

Hearing Chu Feng’s question, the head of the Jade Maiden School first hesitated, but then following that, she still said to Chu Feng, “On that year, the reason why my school founder established the school on the mountain range was because a very profound Mysterious Technique was discovered on one of the mountain peaks of the mountain range.”

“The Mysterious Technique was engraved on the mountain peak. It could not be recorded, and it could not be moved. It could only be studied on the mountain peak. In order to avoid letting the Mysterious Technique be spread out, my founder created the school on the mountain range, and changed the mountain peak into a forbidden zone.”

“However, even though people knew that the Mysterious



Technique was very profound, no one could understand it. Even my founder only comprehended a section of it. She told her later generation that the outstanding disciples from the school must be allowed to study the Mysterious Technique.”

“However regrettably, after the time of several hundred years, not a single person was able to comprehend any bit of the Mysterious Technique. Gradually, no one believed that the Mysterious Technique could be cultivated anymore.”

“But after hearing you say that, I remember that after Ruyu saw the Mysterious Technique for the first time, she would quite frequently go there to study it. Especially two years ago. She even went there everyday. Is it possible that she truly comprehended the obscurity of the Mysterious Technique and succeeded in cultivating it?” There was also shock hung on the face of the head of the Jade Maiden School.

“Senior, can you let me see that Mysterious Technique?” After knowing about it, Chu Feng instantly became excited because even if he did not recognize that Forbidden Mysterious Technique, Eggy should. He really wanted to confirm whether Yan Ruyu cultivated a Forbidden Mysterious Technique or not. Perhaps he could even discover other secrets at that place.

“You can. After the Hundred School Gathering ends, follow me back to the Jade Maiden School. Also, Chu Feng, no need to blame yourself for this matter. Although you didn’t explain much, after hearing Baixi’s words, I am able to see that this matter cannot be completely blamed on you. Rather, it is very possible that you are a victim as well.”

“This Baixi girl does have a rather naughty nature, and sometimes she does things too extremely.”

“However, she is still a rare seeding. If something really does happen to Ruyu, in the future, my Jade Maiden School will need to be propped by her.” After knowing the truth of the matter, the head of the Jade Maiden School did not blame Chu Feng.

As for Chu Feng, after knowing that the head of the Jade Maiden School was preparing to develop Baixi after something happened to Yan Ruyu, he was also very shocked. He recalled what kind of person Baixi was and he even originally wanted to advise something, but after considering that it was their own business, he did not speak.

After all, from the head of the Jade Maiden School’s words, there was certainly a reason why she decided that, as the school head understood Baixi and Yan Ruyu better than anyone else.

After that, as Chu Feng swaggeringly entered, he swaggeringly left. When he came out, he even saw Baixi.

“What did you do to Senior Yan? You demon.” After seeing Chu Feng, Baixi’s face was filled with resentment.

When Chu Feng saw her, his face suddenly turned cold. His hand struck out with lightning speed and clamped onto Baixi’s chin. He then moved his mouth next to her ear and fiercely warned,

“You are correct. I am a demon. You better not anger me, or else I’ll destroy your cultivation and sell you to a brothel.” After speaking those words, Chu Feng flung Baixi away and left in huge strides.

On the other hand, Baixi was blankly standing there. At that instant, cold sweat was all over her face and fear filled her eyes because she could tell that Chu Feng absolutely did not seem to just be saying some words of jest.

## Chapter 282: Seizing Back Face

---

Whether it was because of Chu Feng's threat towards Baixi or because of the command by the head of the Jade Maiden School, at the end, no one else knew about the matter between Yan Ruyu and Chu Feng. Even Li Zhangqing did not know.

However, Yan Ruyu's disappearance was a reality, and there was no way to conceal that. So, very quickly, the news of Yan Ruyu disappearing from the Lingyun School quickly spread.

After that news was spread out, indeed, quite a big commotion was raised. Immediately, people were guessing why the number one disciple who represented the Jade Maiden School's participation in the Hundred School Gathering suddenly disappeared, and why even the head of the Jade Maiden School did not know.

That matter could only cause the heads of outsiders to be full of fog. But within the Jade Maiden School, they couldn't help but associate Chu Feng with Yan Ruyu.

Many people were guessing: Was it because Yan Ruyu was not willing to marry Chu Feng, and since she also didn't want to fight against the face of the school head, she just walked out and secretly escaped the marriage?

It wasn't good for Chu Feng to say anything about those guesses, because in reality, it was a lot more serious than what they had guessed. Currently, he could only pretend to know nothing

because if the truth was spread out, no matter to him, or to Yan Ruyu, or to Jade Maiden School, it would not be good.

At the same time, within those few days, the advancement through the Hundred School Gathering was extremely intense as well. Finally, on this day, it reached the end.

Chu Feng and Li Zhangqing who rested for a few days finally went onto the Hundred School Gathering's fighting floor for the first time. But when they went up, they unexpectedly discovered that the result of the Hundred School Gathering was quite surprising.

After the battle just now, the strongest school head and the strongest disciple in this year's Hundred School Gathering were already selected. As usual, those two spots were occupied by the Lingyun School.

The strongest disciple was the number two disciple from the Lingyun School, Fenghao, who had the cultivation of the 6th level of the Profound realm. The position of number one he got could be said to belong to him well.

Although he was only number two in the Lingyun School, other than Dugu Aoyun, there wasn't really any other disciple who could defeat him in the entire Azure Province.

But when compared to the strongest disciple, the strongest school head was a bit unexpected.

To know that the head of the Lingyun School did not even participate in this year's fight over the title of the strongest school head. Even elders did not participate in it, and the one who did was the number one disciple of the Lingyun School, Dugu Aoyun.

At that instant, seeing Dugu Aoyun who stood on the fighting floor for the strongest school head, Chu Feng and Li Zhangqing knew that Dugu Aoyun truly defeated the various school heads with the status of being from the young generation, and thus became this year's strongest school head.

Not only did that prove his strength, it also proved the strong power of the Lingyun School. So strong that they did not even need to send out the school head or elders. With a single disciple, they were able to sweep away all the other schools.

“Look, aren't those the two trash from the Azure Dragon School?”

“They really did dare to come out. I even thought that after disappearing for so many days, they already escaped without leaving anything behind.”

“Hmph. Today, they must challenge Dugu Aoyun and Fenghao. If they don't, they will receive some ferocious cursing.”

“That's right. They got the special position by relying on a good relationship with Qi Fengyang. But looking at it now, Qi Fengyang did not help them, but rather harmed them.”

After Chu Feng and Li Zhangqing appeared, countless gazes of scorn were attracted towards them. Almost everyone from all the schools were holding them with contempt, and waiting for them to become a joke.

Because if Chu Feng and Li Zhangqing gave up the chance to challenge them, it was equal to them being afraid of Dugu Aoyun and Fenghao and self-admitting that they were not qualified for the special position.

But if they chose to challenge, the result was certainly defeat. Putting aside the difference in strength between Chu Feng and the number two disciple of the Lingyun School, Fenghao as it would be impossible for him to win, even Li Zhangqing who was the same as Dugu Aoyun as he also had the cultivation of the 8th level of the Profound realm was not looked highly upon, because Dugu Aoyun being able to stand at the very end meant that not only did he defeat school heads in the 8th level of the Profound realm. It meant that he also defeated school heads in the 9th level of the Profound realm.

After personally witnessing how Dugu Aoyun defeated the various school heads with perfect posture and being already convinced by Dugu Aoyun's strong strength, they would naturally not believe that the insignificant Li Zhangqing would be able to defeat Dugu Aoyun.

“School Head Li. According to the rules of the Hundred School Gathering, you and Chu Feng respectively have the right to challenge Dugu Aoyun and Fenghao.”

“As long as you can defeat Dugu Aoyun, the title of the strongest school head will belong to you. Naturally, your Azure Dragon School’s name can spread throughout the Azure Province. But I wonder if you choose to challenge or to give up?” The head of the Lingyun School, Yan Yangtian, smiled and stared at Li Zhangqing.

“Ho.. Since School Head Yan has not participated in this year’s Hundred School Gathering, even if I get the title of the strongest school head, it is only an empty title.”

“But as an elder, I can’t get scared by a junior right? After all, I feel that the title of the strongest school head should be taken by a school head. It isn’t too good if a disciple gets it.”

“So I, Li Zhangqing, choose to challenge.”

whoosh

After speaking, Li Zhangqing leaped and jumped down from the main stage and landed onto the fighting floor in which Dugu Aoyun was on.

“This... Li Zhangqing is really going to accept the challenge?”

At that instant, the people who originally wanted to see Li Zhangqing become a joke all couldn’t help but be shocked. Especially the school heads who were defeated by Dugu Aoyun. their faces changed and they revealed complicated emotions.



For no other reason but because of the words Li Zhangqing just said. A school head should be participating in the competition for the strongest school head. Where did the propriety go if they allowed a disciple to do it? Lingyun School's actions were hitting the faces of all of the schools and school heads, and Li Zhangqing's current action was attempting to seize back some face for the school heads.

“School Head Li, fists and kicks have no eyes, so if I injure you, please forgive me!” Dugu Aoyun stood on the stage while standing with hands behind his back. With arrogance and pride, he smiled at Li Zhangqing but he did not act like a junior at all. It could be seen that he did not put Li Zhangqing within his eyes at all, let alone treating him like a senior.

“Fists and kicks do indeed have no eyes, so if I harm you, don't hold grudges.” Li Zhangqing first indifferently smiled, then quickly after, his face suddenly turned told. A wild gale surged under his feet and his entire body formed into a row of light as he dashed over. His speed was quick and there wasn't even a way to catch his original body. One could only see the blurs left behind by him.

It was a profound rank 6 bodily martial skill. Although the Azure Dragon School's disciples had not cultivated it yet, Li Zhangqing who looked after the martial skills already deeply grasped them and he understood them extremely clearly to the state of extremely purity.

whoosh whoosh whoosh Li Zhangqing's several bodies formed into a single row and they became a long human dragon as they

surrounded Dugu Aoyun as quickly spun around him. His might was truly quite terrifying.

“Li Zhangqing has actually grasped such a profound technique! Wasn’t the Azure Dragon School a second-rate school before? How is it possible that it had such a powerful martial skill?”

“Impressive! No wonder he is giving off such an atmosphere. It turns out that Li Zhangqing is a person who hid his abilities quite deeply.” The bodily martial skill that Li Zhangqing displayed successfully stunned everyone. Their eyes all lit up and they felt that they underestimated Li Zhangqing a bit.

However, compared to the surrounding observers, Dugu Aoyun stood where he was as if he was unrelated to all of it. He didn’t even look at Li Zhangqing, and a smile of disdain hung on the corner of his mouth.

## Chapter 283: Tearing Off Both Arms

---

“Senior Li, stop flashing around and quickly attack. If you can even touch me today, you win!” Dugu Aoyun smiled with disdain.

“What an arrogant brat. Today, I will let you experience the methods of my Azure Dragon School.” Li Zhangqing coldly snorted. Suddenly, he became a row of light with layers of illusory figures and he attacked Dugu Aoyun.

whoosh But just as Li Zhangqing was going to touch Dugu Aoyun, his body leaned slightly to the side and Li Zhangqing’s attack was easily dodged.

“Not fast enough. Come quicker!” After dodging the attack, Dugyu Aoyun smiled and said with mock.

As he was being taunted by Dugu Aoyun, Li Zhangqing’s speed did indeed become quicker and quicker. The positions he attacked towards also became more and more crafty. So much that all of the experts in the 8th level of the Profound realm lit up their eyes and kept on sighing with praises.

They never would have thought that Li Zhangqing who normally did not have any outstanding performances would stun everyone when he did display his abilities. With Li Zhangqing’s battle power than he had shown, perhaps even they would not be able to defeat him. The head of the Azure Dragon School truly shocked them.

“This won’t do! It’s not enough. Dugu Aoyun isn’t even using his

full strength.”

But the two school heads who had the strength of the 9th level of the Profound realm helplessly shook their heads because as they were just defeated by Dugu Aoyun, they deeply knew Dugu Aoyun had strength that was unfathomably deep. Even they had no way of defeating Dugu Aoyun, let alone Li Zhangqing.

Indeed, despite Li Zhangqing's attacks became more and more fierce, Dugu Aoyun still had his hands behind his back and he stood where he was. Every time Li Zhangqing attacked, he could easily dodge. Sometimes, he didn't even look at Li Zhangqing. He completely relied on his intuition and reactions.

“It's still not fast enough. Can you come even more quickly? You shouldn't even think of touching me in your life with this speed.” Dugu Aoyun sneered and said.

At that instant, Li Zhangqing suddenly stopped moving. His body finally appeared in front of everyone.

However, his current face was a bit pale and he was huffing in huge breaths with big droplets of sweat falling down. It could be seen that even though the bodily martial skill he used earlier was quite amazing, he still wasted a not small amount of power.

But even so, Li Zhangqing did not look like he was going to back away in the slightest. Rather, a streak of resolution and determination emerged into his gaze, and he said to Dugu Aoyun, “You think that I can't touch you? Right now, I will show you

whether I can touch you or not.”

Suddenly, Li Zhangqing spread both his arms wide and a burst of boundless Profound power exploded out from his body. It rose into the air, spread, and following that, the Profound power speedily condensed and very quickly, innumerable sharp swords with cold glares appeared.

There were more and more sharp swords and they slowly floated around Li Zhangqing. With some rough estimations, there were at least several tens of thousands of sharp swords that were condensed by Profound power. Every single one was like a wild beast which gathered its might and prepared to attack. They kept on trembling in the air, as though they could not endure their urges for blood.

“Ten Thousand Swords Return to Sect!”

Suddenly, Li Zhangqing extended both of his arms and his palms were like swords as they pointed towards Dugu Aoyun. The tens of thousands of sharp swords that hovered around him become several tens of thousands rows of light. Like a meteor shower, they flew towards Dugu Aoyun.

“Oh oh oh? You’re showing your true power now? But sadly, it is still useless.”

Dugu Aoyun lightly smiled, then after that, his body flashed and he became blurs as he started to quickly flash around within the tens of thousands of swords.

whoosh whoosh whoosh The swords followed the movement of Li Zhangqing's finger. If he pointed there with both of his fingers, the tens of thousands of swords would shoot towards there. As they followed his fingers, they became a circle of boundless Profound power that surrounded Dugu Aoyun.

But it was still useless. Dugu Aoyun's bodily methods were too strange. Not only was he able to survive from the tens of thousands of swords, not even a single sword was able to touch his body.

Under that situation, everyone sighed in admiration as they watched. They were deeply stunned by the scene in front of their eyes. The martial skill Li Zhangqing was using was a rank 6 one, and it was a top-quality martial skill within rank 6 martial skills. It was even used so perfectly by Li Zhangqing's and extremely terrifying power was displayed from that.

However, a martial skill like that was still unable to touch Dugu Aoyun. That showed the formidability of Dugu Aoyun. The young man who was the same as Li Zhangqing, having also the cultivation of the 8th level of the Profound realm, had even stronger battle power than Li Zhangqing.

whoosh Suddenly, a blur brushed out of the tens of thousands of swords, and like a light, it went straight towards Li Zhangqing.

“Crap!”

Seeing that, Chu Feng hiddenly cursed because he felt killing

intent within the blur. But before he could move to help him, immense pressure enveloped him and he could not move at all.

“Young man, when others are fighting, you should not interfere. This is the most basic rule. You should understand right?” Turning his head sideways to look, the head of the Lingyun School, Yan Yangtian, was currently smiling while looking at Chu Feng. The pressure that enveloped Chu Feng came from his body.

“This guy really did enter the Heaven realm.”

Chu Feng tightly furrowed his brows because he could not resist against that pressure. There was some unsurpassable power contained within it. It was power that exceeded Profound power, and Chu Feng knew that it was very possible that the mysterious and strong power was Heaven power, which also meant that Yan Yangtian really did enter the Heaven realm.

bang

At the same time, the blur already arrived in front of Li Zhangqing and became Dugu Aoyun. He reached out and tightly grabbed onto Li Zhangqing's arm, then coldly smiled and said, “Senior Li, this is the end!”

After speaking, Dugu Aoyun suddenly pulled down. After a ripping sound, both of Li Zhangqing's arms were forcibly torn off by Dugu Aoyun. A large amount of blood splattered onto the ground.

“School head!” Seeing that, Chu Feng’s face changed greatly. He angrily bellowed and he originally wanted to rush up, but he could do nothing about the boundless pressure as it was still enveloping him, causing him to be unable to move.

“Chu Feng, don’t act rashly. I won’t die.” After hearing Chu Feng’s howl, Li Zhangqing endured the pain of his arms being torn off and spoke to reassure him.

“Ah woops. Excuse me Senior Li. I never would have thought that your old bones were that weak. I only lightly pulled and that injured you.”

“But don’t worry. My Lingyun School has the best medicines and the best doctors. They will be able to heal your broken arms.” Dugu Aoyun held Li Zhangqing’s arms and sneered.

whoosh

Just at that time, the head of the Jade Maiden School rushed onto the fighting floor. She first snatched Li Zhangqing’s arms away from Dugu Aoyun, then she propped Li Zhangqing up and coldly yelled at Dugu Aoyun, “Move, or else I do not dare to be sure that I will not kill you!”

“Oh, it’s the head of the Jade Maiden School. I pay my respects.” After seeing the head of Jade Maiden School, Dugu Aoyun became quite a bit more polite and he paid her some fake respects.



The head of the Jade Maiden School did not pay attention to him, but as she passed by him, she said in a low voice, "I know you have your eyes on Ruyu. But today, I'll tell you this. You better give up on Yu-er because I already gave her to Chu Feng." After speaking those words, the head of the Jade Maiden School brushed past him, and while supporting Li Zhangqing, she left the fighting floor.

## Chapter 284: A Tooth For A Tooth

---

After hearing the words from the head of the Jade Maiden School, Dugu Aoyun's face instantly changed. The fists within his robe tightly clenched and a cold glare emerged into his eyes as he swept his gaze over Chu Feng who still on the tall stage.

At the same time, Chu Feng also tightly stared at Dugu Aoyun with an equally cold gaze, and within his gaze, strands of killing intent were surging as well.

“Chu Feng, it's your turn now. According to the rules, you have the chance to challenge Fenghao. Will you challenge him, or will you give this chance up?” At the same time, the head of the Lingyun School, Yan Yangtian, smiled as he looked towards Chu Feng.

At that instant, everyone cast their gazes towards Chu Feng. Li Zhangqing's defeat was already a lesson given in blood. Everyone could see that the Lingyun School was intentionally singling out Li Zhangqing and Chu Feng.

At this time, the best choice for Chu Feng was to give up. Or else, everyone did believe that Fenghao who had superior strength over Chu Feng was certainly going to act similarly to how Dugu Aoyun acted towards Li Zhangqing in order to make Chu Feng pay a painful price.

However, Chu Feng only sneered as he faced Yan Yangtian's question and said, “I will let you know what my choice is.”

whoosh

After speaking, Chu Feng leaped and he dashed onto the fighting stage that Fenghao was on. He even said to Fenghao, “It seems that your body has recovered quite well huh? I even thought that you became a cripple and I never would have expected that you could still participate in this Hundred School Gathering.”

“What do you mean?”

After hearing those words, the colour of Fenghao’s face changed greatly because he understood what Chu Feng meant by his words. Around half a year ago, within the Valley of Hundred Bends, during a fight over Profound medicines, Fenghao was crippled and he almost died because of a person who called himself as Asura.

Although his current body was already recovered due to the vast resources from the Lingyun School, the thing that happened that day was pain that would remain forever in his heart. It was a taint that could not be wiped away and the male called Asura left a shadow in his heart.

Chu Feng did not reply to Fenghao’s question. He only coldly smiled and said, “It’s not much. I just want to tell you that you better prepare yourself for getting crippled.”

“Nonsense. With your cultivation of the 9th level of the Origin realm, you want to cripple me? I can squish you to death with one hand.” Fenghao was completely enraged by Chu Feng. He extended

his big hand out, and he palmed towards Chu Feng.

That palm was not a martial skill, but it was an attack from the condensation of his cultivation of the 6th level of the Profound realm as well as the combination of his Mysterious Technique. Its power was extremely frightening.

“Chu Feng, be a bit careful. Fenghao can’t be compared to Gong Luyun. He is a truly genius so do not be careless since you are only using your own cultivation to fight against him.” At that instant, Eggy reminded solemnly.

“Hmph. At first when I borrowed you power, I could beat him like a dog. Right now, I can still do it as well.”

Chu Feng coldly snored. He did not dodge Fenghao’s palm. Rather, he turned his hand and threw out a punch, and with Origin power fighting against Profound power, he counter-attacked Fenghao.

“Is Chu Feng insane? He is actually going to fight against Fenghao who is in the 6th level of the Profound realm with the cultivation of the Origin realm?” That scene frightened everyone because Chu Feng was simply looking for a path of death.

On the other hand, Baixi and the others from the Jade Maiden School, the head of the Swordless School, as well as the number one disciple of the Swordless School, Nangong Xiao, stared at Chu Feng with complex gazes.

They who had seen Chu Feng's super strong battle power really wanted to know what stage Chu Feng's strength reached, and whether he was able to fight against the number two disciple of the Lingyun School.

Under the gazes of countless people, Chu Feng's Origin power displayed extremely strong battle power. Not only was it not destroyed, rather, as the crowd was staring, it dispelled Fenghao's might from his fist.

whoosh After dispelling Fenghao's attack, Chu Feng took the lead to attack. It flashed under his feet, and like an arrow leaving a bow, his entire body shot towards Fenghao.

“You are really looking to die.”

Seeing that, Fenghao did not restrain himself anymore. The Profound power from his body violently surged out and became innumerable huge Profound power hands. The huge hands extended, and started to claw and slam onto Chu Feng.

“You think you are able to stop me with this tiny little method?” Chu Feng's fury rose to the skies and he did not even have the slightest intention to retreat. He continued charging forward as usual, and as he operated the high-level Mysterious Technique, his body's battle power increased again and he already infinitely neared the 1st level of the Profound realm.

Following that, one of his hands clenched into a fist, and a golden-coloured big blade was condensed into his hand. He

chopped towards the incoming huge hand, and as the golden light flickered, the huge hands that unceasingly came towards him were all cut.

“Heavens. This Chu Feng can really fight around Fenghao who is in the 6th level of the Profound realm with the cultivation of the 9th level of the Origin realm.”

“This isn’t right. Not only that, but Chu Feng is clearly only using a rank 5 martial skill, but Fenghao is using the famous rank 6 martial skill from the Lingyun School, the Ten Thousand Spider Hands.”

“The difference in power between the two martial skills should be extremely huge. But Chu Feng, at this instant, is pressuring Fenghao’s rank 6 martial skill with his rank 5 martial skill. How can Chu Feng have such terrifying battle power?”

The strength that Chu Feng showed stunned everyone. Not to mention the people from the various schools, even the Twelve Protectors of the Lingyun School, including the number one disciple Dugu Aoyun as well as the school head Yan Yangtian lit up their eyes and they were dumbfounded by Chu Feng’s battle power.

However, compared to the observers, Fenghao who was facing Chu Feng who was approaching started to panic a bit because at that instant, he felt a familiar pressuring feeling from Chu Feng’s body.

He had felt that pressure roughly half a year ago. It was from the mysterious person who almost killed him in the Valley of Hundred Bends, Asura.

“You...You are?!!” At that instant, Fenghao finally reacted to it. He looked at Chu Feng while being astounded and his gaze was filled with fear.

“You have guessed correctly!” But Chu Feng who had already dashed in front of Fenghao did not give him the chance to finish speaking. The big blade in his hand became two golden blurs again, and after he brushed past Fenghao, two rows of blood splattered and both of Fenghao’s arms were cut off as they fell to the ground.

“Ahh~~~” With a short delay, Fenghao looked at his chopped off arms and he rolled around on the ground with deathly sorrow and he painfully howled.

“This...this Chu Feng has actually... actually cut off both of Fenghao’s arms!”

“This means that the rumours before were true, and Chu Feng really has battle power that can surpass multiple levels. With the cultivation of the 9th level of the Origin realm, he defeated Fenghao who is in the 6th level of the Profound realm, and he even defeated him so easily!”

Chu Feng’s methods were seen completely clearly by everyone and they were all dumbstruck by the battle power he displayed because that terrifying battle power was unseen before by them. It

caused them to feel disbelief at that very instant, and they even doubted whether everything was true or not.

But compared to the pure astonishment of the crowd, the people from the Lingyun School had anger that rose to the heavens and they pointed at Chu Feng and angrily rebuked,

“Chu Feng, this is outrageous! It is only a small fight, yet you do such poisonous attacks! You will pay the price for your actions.” As they spoke, the disciples and elders from the Lingyun School surged up together and surrounded the fighting stage that Chu Feng and Fenghao was on.

Seeing that the people from the Lingyun School were angered, the people who weren't from the Lingyun School were frightened, and they couldn't avoid adding some pity into the gazes that they looked at Chu Feng with.

Because within the Azure Province, other than the Qilin Prince's Mansion, the Lingyun School was the boss. When Chu Feng treated Fenghao in such a way, not only did he harm Fenghao, he also hit the face of the Lingyun School. Naturally, they wouldn't so easily let him go so everyone felt that Chu Feng had a disaster coming his way.

But compared to the worries of the observers, Chu Feng who was surrounded was not afraid in the slightest. He disdainfully said, “It is but a tooth for a tooth!”



## Chapter 285: Looking For The Path Of Death

---

“A tooth for a tooth, so that means that it was intentional?” After hearing Chu Feng’s words, the Lingyun School crowd was even more furious. Killing intent was revealed one after another, and they hated to be unable to rip Chu Feng into shreds.

“Hmph. How did Dugu Aoyun treat my school head at first? As the host of the Hundred School Gathering, why didn’t you stand out to talk that time?”

“The people from your Lingyun School are people, but other people aren’t people? I harm someone from your Lingyun School and you need me to pay the price, but where did you run off to when your Lingyun School injured my school head?”

“As the number one school in the Azure Province, where is your fairness?” Chu Feng was not afraid even as he faced danger, and he even strictly questioned back.

“You...” As they faced Chu Feng’s consistent questioning, the faces of the crowd from the Lingyun School turned ashen and indeed, they could not retort.

Accordingly, as long as Chu Feng did not kill Fenghao, they should not surround and attack Chu Feng. After all, Dugu Aoyun was the first to dislocate off Li Zhangqing’s arms.

bam bam bam... Suddenly, a burst of clear and loud clapping sounds rang out.

“Hahaha... Good good good.” Following that, abnormally strange laughter rang out as well. It was the head of the Lingyun School, Yan Yangtian.

At that instant, he was standing on top of the tall stage with the might of a lord descending down to the world. As he looked down, he clapped and smiled while looking at Chu Feng but his eyes were filled with oddness.

“It seems like quite an impressive disciple has appeared in the Azure Dragon School. Chu Feng, the title of the strongest disciple in this Hundred School Gathering belongs to you.” Yan Yangtian loudly declared after laughing.

“Hu~”

After Yan Yangtian spoke, even though the people from the Lingyun School were not willing to, they had no choice but to quickly retreat and they didn’t dare to attack Chu Feng anymore. Even the surrounding and observing schools were stunned.

Yan Yangtian did not attack, and that caused them to think of a lot of things. First, it was possible that Yan Yangtian cherished Chu Feng’s talent. After all, Chu Feng’s battle power defied common sense so much, and from a certain angle, Chu Feng was a genius who had not appeared in the Azure Province before. If that battle power continued to be developed, one day, he would surpass Dugu Aoyun and become a huge character.

However, after some more careful thinking, Yan Yangtian was not such a kindhearted person. The reason why his Lingyun School had grown to this current stage was because the methods of the Lingyun School had always been ruthless. Those who offended the Lingyun School would usually not end well.

However, in front of so many people, Chu Feng cut off Fenghao's arms. He slapped the Lingyun School's face. He slapped Yan Yangtian's face, so how was it possible that he so easily forgave him?

So, the only possibility why Yan Yangtian did not do anything was because of Qi Fengyang. In the Azure Province, the only thing that Yan Yangtian feared was the Qilin Prince's Mansion.

Who was Chu Feng's sworn elder brother? It was Qi Fengyang, the number two character in the Qilin Prince's Mansion. No matter how much stronger Yan Yangtian's strength was, no matter how much higher his position was, he still had to give some face to Qi Fengyang.

If it was at first, people would still suspect why Qi Fengyang had to become sworn brothers with a boy like Chu Feng. However, after seeing Chu Feng's super strong battle power, almost everyone understood Qi Fengyang's intentions.

That also meant that not only did Chu Feng have Qi Fengyang behind him, he also had the Qilin Prince's Mansion, and under those situations, even if Yan Yangtian wanted to take care of Chu Feng, he naturally had to think for a while first.

“Impressive. This Chu Feng has such talent and he also has the protection of the Qilin Prince’s Mansion behind him. How outstanding will his future achievements be like?”

“The Azure Dragon School will really rise in power. Since the Azure Dragon School has such a disciple, the rising will only be a matter of time.”

“Yeah, he gained the title of the strongest disciple in the Hundred School Gathering at this age. This is the first time it has happened in history, and Chu Feng is an unprecedented genius!”

At that instant, other than the people from the Lingyun School, almost everyone was praising Chu Feng’s strength. They were predicting Chu Feng’s future, as though they saw the birth of a great character who would rule over the Azure Province.

The various school heads felt envy towards the Azure Dragon School as such a disciple appeared, but at the same time, as they were also people from the Azure Province, they felt proud that such a genius appeared in the Azure Province.

Almost everyone put their previous prejudices away from Chu Feng as nothing else remained in their eyes other than shock. Chu Feng already used his strength to prove to everyone that he was not trash. He was a genius.

“No. the title of the strongest disciple is empty. I, Chu Feng, do not want it.” But just at that time, he pushed the title away because

of dislike as he spoke.

“What? Chu Feng doesn’t want the title of the strongest disciple?”

After speaking, it was as if a frightening thunder exploded next to their ears and it caused everyone on scene to be greatly shocked. The title of being the strongest disciple that were the wishes in countless disciples’ dreams was unwanted by Chu Feng. What was he doing?

“Chu Feng, what do you mean?” Yan Yangtian lightly furrowed his brows and he spoke to ask.

“Since the title is named as the strongest disciple, of course, it would be for the strongest disciple out of all the schools in the Azure Province.”

“However, Dugu Aoyun, as the number one disciple of your Lingyun School, has not fought against me. So, my title of the strongest disciple is hollow. It’s fine if I don’t take it.” Chu Feng looked at Dugu Aoyun who was currently standing next to Yan Yangtian.

“Haha, Chu Feng, you are challenging me?” Dugu Aoyun laughed loudly, and within his laughter was disdain and mock.

“I, Chu Feng, will challenge you, Dugyu Aoyun. Do you dare to come down to fight against me?” Chu Feng’s gaze was like a torch

as he pointed at Dugu Aoyun and loudly yelled.

“Heavens! Is Chu Feng insane? He is actually going to challenge Dugu Aoyun?”

After Chu Feng spoke, almost all the faces of the people on scene changed greatly and they were flabbergasted. What level of strength did Dugu Aoyun have? He was the character who defeated the various school heads from the Azure Province and gained the title of the strongest school head!

Even if Chu Feng had better talent, his cultivation still currently remained in the Origin realm. He might have been too insane since he challenged Dugu Aoyun because he was different than Fenghao. He was publicly recognized as the number one genius in the Azure Province

Even the various school heads could not defeat him and he was almost invincible within the Profound realm. Some people even suspected Dugu Aoyun was the strongest person in the Azure Province other than the head of the Lingyun School and the master of the Qilin Prince's Mansion.

Even the school heads were afraid of such a person, yet Chu Feng wanted to challenge him. Naturally, it caused people to be endlessly shocked and it was hard for them to accept it.

“Haha, truly shameless big words. Is it even possible that I, Dugu Aoyun, am afraid of you?” Dugu Aoyun coldly smiled, and after that, he flashed and became a blur. He shot towards the fighting

stage that Chu Feng was on and stood in front of Chu Feng.

“If we’re going to fight, why not make it a bit more interesting? Today, me and you will fight in front of all the school heads for the title of the strongest disciple in the Azure Province. The winner receives the glory, and the loser destroys their own cultivation. What do you think?” Chu Feng closely questioned.

“Heavens! He’s insane! He has gone completely insane!” At that instant, almost everyone couldn’t help but take in a breath of cool air and they were deeply agitated by Chu Feng’s words.

Not only was Chu Feng challenging Dugu Aoyun who had the cultivation of the 8th level of the Profound realm with his own cultivation of the 9th level of the Origin realm, he even set the rule so that the loser had to destroy their own cultivation. Wasn’t he just digging his own hole to fall back in it, and looking for a path to death?

## Chapter 286: Confrontation Of The Geniuses

---

“Destroy their own cultivation? You think you are worthy enough to speak to me like that? You think you are qualified to set such a wager with me?” Dugu Aoyun looked at Chu Feng with scorn, as though he was looking at an ant that could be squished to death at any time.

“If you don’t dare, just say it. There is no need to speak such rubbish.” Chu Feng spread both of his arms out and shrugged while the word “disdain” was written across his face.

“Don’t dare? You think I will be afraid of a brat like you? That’s fine. Destroy your own cultivation...Today, I will grant you that wish!” Dugu Aoyun coldly snorted, then the pressure of the 8th level of the Profound realm swept out and it instantly engulfed Chu Feng.

When the formless pressure engulfed him, Chu Feng immediately felt the huge power. The pressure that Dugu Aoyun emanated was not small, and it was simply as if a formless huge mountain was pressed on Chu Feng’s shoulders and it was difficult for Chu Feng to move even half a step.

“If you want to destroy your cultivation, I will grant you that wish. But no need to destroy it yourself. I’ll help you.” Dugu Aoyun kept on sneering, and at the same time, the emitted pressure engulfed him one layer after the other and it also became stronger and stronger.



“Dammit. This guy’s power is quite unexpectedly strong.” As he was continuously bombarded by the pressure, Chu Feng’s sweat fell like rain and both of his legs also started to gradually bend.

Being also at the 8th level of the Profound realm, Dugu Aoyun’s power was indeed far above Lin Ran, Li Zhangqing and the others. As he faced Dugu Aoyun who had that strength, Chu Feng really did not have any space to fight against Dugu Aoyun with his own cultivation of the 9th level of the Origin realm.

“Ahh, the difference is too big. Although this is a match between geniuses, there is the difference in realm as well as eight levels. This isn’t even a contest.”

“Chu Feng is too illogical. I do understand his feelings for wanting to avenge Li Zhangqing, but under situations in which he cannot win, he is simply looking to die by setting a bet like this with Dugu Aoyun!”

Chu Feng was being pressed by Dugu Aoyun’s pressure and everyone could see that. The difference in strength between the two people was too huge and Chu Feng did not even have any chance to return any attacks. That fight happened as imagined by the crowd. Before even exchanging blows, the outcome was set.

“It is finished. Right now, I’ll destroy your cultivation.” Dugyu Aoyun had a ticket of victory grasped in his hands and a streak of killing intent surged into his gaze. Following that, pressure that was several times vaster than before violently surged out from his body. Like a formless huge wave, it pressed its way towards Chu Feng.

That wave of pressure was truly too strong. If it struck Chu Feng, it could forcibly smash Chu Feng into a pool of blood. How was Dugu Aoyun destroying his cultivation? He was simply having an intention to murder, and he was planning to take Chu Feng's life away.

At that instant, many people were hiddenly sighing in their hearts. They felt pity for a rare genius like Chu Feng. They felt that he shouldn't have went along with his temper to challenge Dugu Aoyun which caused his grand future to be cut off as well as his life.

But as everyone was feeling that Chu Feng was, without a doubt, dead, a burst of even stronger aura suddenly exploded out from Chu Feng's body. That aura rose to the skies and engulfed the air, as though it was invincible. It then dispelled Dugu Aoyun's pressure inch by inch and swept it away.

At that moment, almost everyone's face couldn't help but greatly change. Shock was filled in the gazes that they looked at Chu Feng with because presently, what Chu Feng was emitting was no longer Origin power but Profound power. Chu Feng entered the Profound realm, and he even had the cultivation of the 3rd level of the Profound realm.

“What happened? Why did Chu Feng's cultivation suddenly rise to the 3rd level of the Profound realm from the 9th level of the Origin realm?”

“I know! No wonder Chu Feng dared to challenge Dugu Aoyun like this. He must have concealed his true strength at the beginning. The 9th level of the Origin realm was only his cover, and the 3rd level of the Profound realm is his true power.”

As they faced Chu Feng whose aura suddenly changed, those who did not know the truth even thought that Chu Feng hid his strength. Chu Feng having the cultivation of the 3rd level of the Profound realm when he was only 16 year old in addition to his battle power that defied common sense caused many people to be so astounded to the point that they could not take care of themselves.

“Eggy, it seems that I have to borrow your power again this time to fight against a great enemy.”

The current Chu Feng was standing on the fighting stage. Layers of Profound power lingered around him and his clothes were sounding from blows. His might was many, many times stronger than before. That was the difference between Profound realm and Origin realm.

“Chu Feng, do not be careless. Dugu Aoyun is not simple. Even if I lend my power to you, you may not certainly win.” Eggy seriously reminded.

“Don’t worry, I understand. There are many geniuses in the Lingyun School, and many have very strong methods.”

“Take Fenghao as an example. If he didn’t recall the near-death

situation caused by me with one strike back then and caused fear to be created in his heart, which in turn caused him to lose some fighting intentions, I'm afraid that I wouldn't have been able to defeat him with only the Imperial Sky Technique and the Bow of Hundred Transformations."

"As for Dugu Aoyun, no matter if it is his nature or his battle power, or even his methods, all of them are superior to Fenghao. He is a huge enemy and I will not be careless. But no matter what, I must defeat him today or else I cannot cleanse the humiliation that was dealt to my Azure Dragon School."

Chu Feng's observation skills were extremely powerful and from when Dugu Aoyun easily defeated Li Zhangqing, he already knew that Dugu Aoyun was a character who was very difficult to deal with.

As for the degree of difficulty, it was likely that other than the purple-clothed female, he was the most difficult to deal with within Chu Feng's generation because he still did not know what unknown methods Dugu Aoyun was equipped with or what life-saving trump cards he had.

"So you concealed your cultivation huh? No wonder you dared to speak to me in such an arrogant way. However, it is only the 3rd level of the Profound realm. You think you can defeat me with this cultivation? Aren't you a bit too overconfident?"

Dugu Aoyun's face was calm when compared to others. He was not shocked by the great rise in Chu Feng's cultivation. Rather, the battle intention in his eyes became even denser.

“The one who’s overconfident will be revealed immediately.”

Chu Feng leaped and became a row of light. Instantly, he rushed towards Dugu Aoyun and arrived in front of him. At the same time, two golden-coloured big blades were held within Chu Feng’s hands as they chopped down towards both of Dugu Aoyun’s arms.

“You really ought to die. I am being looked down upon by a brat like you? It seems like you need to experience some of my methods.”

Dugu Aoyun coldly snorted. Without dodging or avoiding, he turned his hand and threw a punch towards Chu Feng. That punch had extremely strong power and extremely quick speed. It could even burrow through a mountain peak.

whoosh

But a flash appeared under Chu Feng’s feet and his speed increased by several times. Instantly, his entire person disappeared. Not only did he dodge Dugu Aoyun’s attack, he even swept past Dugu Aoyun and arrived behind him. Simultaneously, the big blades in his hands became two golden glares and fell as they chopped towards Dugu Aoyun’s back.

“You are not the only one with bodily martial skills.”

Dugyu Aoyun’s body suddenly became a blur and then he himself

swept past Chu Feng and arrived behind him. Then, when his body reappeared, there was a bright blue pike grasped within his hands and he stabbed to kill towards Chu Feng.

## Chapter 287: Fatal Cold Air

---

“Now it’s interesting.” Chu Feng did not dodge. He changed the style of the two blades in his hands; one went up to block Dugu Aoyun’s pike, and one sliced towards his waist.

However, Dugu Aoyun was not a simple character. No matter if it was speed or reactions, he was pretty much not inferior to Chu Feng. He retracted his pike and trembled it downwards. The pike then instantly became coursing dragon as it flung Chu Feng’s big blade away, and after that, he abruptly went forward again and it became a blue-coloured long pike again as it ferociously attacked Chu Feng.

Two geniuses. One held two golden-coloured blades, another held a blue-coloured pike. With lightning speed, they fought into a lump with the methods from the Bow of Hundred Transformations and the battle was inseparable.

“Impressive! Chu Feng is actually evenly matched with Dugu Aoyun!”

“Many school heads couldn’t even do such a battle, and many school heads could not even force Dugu Aoyun to this state, yet Chu Feng can. This child has power that defies the heavens doesn’t he?”

As they looked at the battle that was in a mess, everyone’s gazes trembled and shock was hung on their faces. Even Yan Yangtian brows tightly locked and complicated expressions surged within

his gaze.

Chu Feng's battle power was too terrifying. At least in terms of battle power, he already completely surpassed Dugu Aoyun and the pillars of hatred were already set between the Lingyun School and the Azure Dragon School. If that grudge could not be dissolved, Chu Feng would certainly be the Lingyun School's strongest enemy in the future.

That forced Yan Yangtian to rethink his attitude towards Chu Feng. The best way was to kill Chu Feng before he developed, and at that moment, it was the best time to kill Chu Feng.

Thinking to that point, Yan Yangtian's gaze turned and his lips started to lightly close shut. Although his lips were closed shut and no one could hear him, Dugu Aoyun's ears twitched and after that, his face changed greatly and he nodded towards Yan Yangtian who was on the tall stage.

It was a mental message sent through the air. A method that belonged to only Heaven realm experts. They were able to say the words they wanted to say to only specified people. Other than that person, other people could not even hear half a word, and the words that Yan Yangtian said to Dugu Aoyun was actually an order. He allowed Dugu Aoyun kill Chu Feng, and the consequences would bore by him.

whoosh After getting the order, Dugu Aoyun did not hesitate. He quickly put the blue-coloured pike away from his hands. His body became a blur and he suddenly retreated, then at the same time, he stacked his hands on top of one another, extended them towards



Chu Feng, and loudly said, “Infinite Ocean!!”

boom

After speaking, violent huge waves emerged in front of Dugu Aoyun. They were real, huge waves. The bright blue ocean water, the ferocious sprays, and very single wave was ten meters tall and at that instant, they were sweeping out one wave after the other and slamming towards Chu Feng.

The waves were quite peculiar. They did not go wild in all directions but instead, they surged on Dugu Aoyun’s commands. So, at the same time that they slammed towards Chu Feng, waves that covered a vast area also surrounded the fighting stage while spiraling and flowing around.

They did not drip out of the fighting stage though, and they were always circulating around while remaining on the fighting stage. At the end, the waves surged together on the huge fighting stage and it was completely taken over by the bright-blue-coloured ocean water.

The current Chu Feng already lost his attacking chance. He could only rely on the strong bodily martial skill, the Imperial Sky Technique, to ride on the waves to maneuver around. But his actions were in vain as the waves were simply too strange. Occasionally, they became sharp blades. Occasionally, they became an axe as they kept on chopping towards Chu Feng.

At that moment, Chu Feng was not only simply fighting against

Dugu Aoyun within the huge waves. He was fighting on a mountain of blades and in an ocean of fire. Truly, danger was everywhere. If Chu Feng did not have extremely strong Spirit power to be able to detect the changes that happened to the waves, even with the ingenious bodily martial skill, the Imperial Sky Technique, it would be difficult for him to continue.

“What a strong martial skill. Is this one of the foundation martial skills of the Lingyun School, the rank 6 martial skill ‘Infinite Ocean’?”

“It is rumoured that this martial skill can change according to the strength of the user. It can change into blades, and it can even change into an ocean of fire. Clearly, Dugu Aoyun has understood the most obscure meaning of this martial skill and has displayed it.”

“Impressive. They are both very impressive. The martial skill that Dugu Aoyun is displaying has both might and power, but Chu Feng’s bodily methods and detection power are also very outstanding. It can truly be seen how impressive this child as he is able to move around within such a strong martial skill.”

The ring of battle between Chu Feng and Dugu Aoyun already surpassed the range of comprehension of normal people. Not only in terms of vision, but there was also a huge psychological blow dealt to them. Dugu Aoyun’s martial skill and Chu Feng’s bodily methods caused their eyes to light up and caused them to sigh to themselves because of their inferiority.

Even the various school heads admired the methods of the two

people, let alone the disciples. Coming from the same generation as Dugu Aoyun and Chu Feng, they truly felt that they were very inferior. Especially Chu Feng. He was even younger than them, yet he was so exceptional. They who thought themselves to be geniuses before felt very ashamed.

“This guy is actually extremely strong. I truly overestimated my powers when I provoked him that day. It seems that I am lucky to not have been killed by him.”

The number one disciple of the Swordless School, Nangong Xiao, currently had a nervous expression with lingering fear all across his face. He regretted provoking Chu Feng that day as he was deeply afraid that Chu Feng would still remember that matter in his heart and make things difficult for him in the future.

Presently, Chu Feng was able to fight equally against Dugu Aoyun, so that already meant that Chu Feng's battle power surpassed his Swordless School's head, and it even surpassed all of the other school heads, with the exception of the Lingyun School.

Since he had such powerful strength and he also Qi Fengyang as his elder brother behind his back, many people put a terrifying label on Chu Feng in their hearts.

So, Nangong Xiao deeply knew if Chu Feng wanted to harm him, no one would be able to protect him. There was only a single road remaining for him, and that would be the road to death.

In reality, other than Nangong Xiao, Baixi and the other disciples

and elders from the Jade Maiden School, as well as the various school heads, elders, and disciples, were all thinking similar things, and it was to absolutely not offend Chu Feng in the future.

They were thinking that because not only did Chu Feng display powerful strength, he even dared to cut both of Fenghao's arm off in the Lingyun School's own territory, and he also dared to challenge Dugu Aoyun. From those actions, it could be seen that he was a person who had to take revenge for any hatreds and he was a ruthless person. An enemy like that was too frightening, so it was best to avoid him when seen from afar and it would be wise to not anger him.

“Chilling Air Freezing Ground!”

But just at that time, Dugu Aoyun who was using the Unlimited Ocean then unexpectedly explosively yelled. As the Unlimited Ocean was being used, he employed a second martial skill.

huu huu huu huu

The Profound power that surged out of Dugu Aoyun's body all became formless hurricanes and blew over the ocean waves, causing the huge waves that rose to the skies to surge even more fiercely.

However, that was only the beginning. The formless hurricane suddenly and speedily changed and they started to emit extremely bone-piercing cold air. That cold air was very terrifying, and it was even more bone-piercing than the Cold Ice Atmosphere from the

Qilin Prince's Mansion.

The most important part was at the same time the cold air surged, the huge waves that rose to the skies underneath his feet also started to solidify into bits of ice sludges and it greatly increased the degree of coldness in the air.

So, it turned out that it was all a setup. The Infinite Ocean before was only used as a foundation for the Chilling Air Freezing Ground. At that very instant, the fatal cold air was the actual weapon Dugu Aoyun wanted to use against Chu Feng.

## Chapter 288: Meeting The Murderous 7-Injuring Fists Again

---

At that very instant, in that area, the cold air could solidify everything. Under those circumstances, even a layer of frost immediately covered Chu Feng's body. Chu Feng's body which was cold started to go rigid and his movements started to be drawn out.

At the end, Chu Feng's movements became slower and slower, and just like that, he became a person of ice. Finally, he could not move at all and he fell into the waves of the ocean.

After Chu Feng fell into the ocean, the waves immediately froze into ice and sealed Chu Feng within it. As for Dugu Aoyun, he elegantly floated down, stood on the ice, looked and smiled at everyone, then said, "The outcome of this battle has been set!"

"Huu~"

At that instant, cries of surprise rang out from the crowd. As they looked at the fierce and terrifying ice statue on the fighting stage, everyone was completely convinced by Dugu Aoyun's methods.

Although Chu Feng's battle power caused them to sigh in surprise, Dugu Aoyun's battle experience was the one that caused them to be convinced. Not only did Dugu Aoyun have stronger control, he also displayed two rank 6 martial skills at the same time.

He even gathered the special natures of the two martial skills and displayed power that surpassed rank 6 martial skills. When one discovered that something was wrong, it would be too late and they would have already been defeated by Dugu Aoyun.

“As expected of the number one person in the young generation of the Azure Province. Dugu Aoyun’s methods are truly admirable.”

“Ahh, but sadly, Chu Feng is too young. If a few more years was given to him, I believe that Dugu Aoyun would certainly be unable to defeat him.” At that instant, someone praised Dugu Aoyun’s strength, but many people also felt pity for Chu Feng. It was truly a heart-breaking thing when a super genius like him fell like that.

However, compared to the observers, the disciples from the Lingyun School had mad happiness all over their faces because not only did Dugu Aoyun’s victory avenge Fenghao, it even guarded the dignity of their Lingyun School and protected their position of being king in the Azure Province.

rumble rumble rumble

But just as people felt that the grand outcome was set, the fighting stage started to violently tremble. At the same time, rows of tiny cracks started to spread from the chilly ice statue.

The cracks swum around quicker and quicker, and the area it covered became larger and larger. From slender cracks, they became thick ones. Very soon, a burst of extremely frenzied energy

started to emanate from the ice statue. It swept out and engulfed the land.

boom

In a split moment, the huge ice statue started to shatter into pieces, and the shattering was quickly spreading. From the huge ice chunk, it became a rain of little ice. They scattered and fell until they were completely destroyed into pieces.

At the same time, in that land, a body reappeared within people's line of sight. It was Chu Feng. The current Chu Feng was standing on top of the fighting stage. The frost that covered his body became steam that constantly rose. Under that steam, everyone could see a pair of abnormally serious eyes.

Accompanying Chu Feng's appearance was a wave of horrifying pressure. The area that he was in twisted and deformed from the pressure, and as he was affected by the pressure, Dugu Aoyun no longer had his former arrogant attitude. Pain was all over his face as he was enduring the power of the pressure. Bit by bit, his waist was being bent and he was going into a posture of submission.

“What a strong martial skill! This feeling seems like it has surpassed rank 6 martial skills. Does that mean Chu Feng has grasped a rank 7 martial skill?”

“Impossible. Rank 7 martial skills do not even exist within the Azure Province. This must be a rank 6 martial skill. A top-quality martial skill within rank 6 martial skills. In addition to Chu Feng's



comprehension power towards martial skills as well as his unique talent, that is why he can bring out power that surpasses the original martial skill.”

“The unique comprehension power and talent of the martial skill’s user caused the power of the martial skill to be increased? So that means, in terms of using martial skills, hasn’t Chu Feng completely surpassed Dugu Aoyun?”

Chu Feng’s Blade of the Void Dragon’s Cry was too strong. Even though it wasn’t as beautiful as Dugu Aoyun’s Infinite Ocean and Chilling Sky Freezing Ground, the aura that had absolute pressure caused everyone to be astonished.

“Dugu Aoyun. Will you destroy your own cultivation or will I help you?” Seeing that his Blade of the Void Dragon’s Cry forced Dugu Aoyun to not even be able to straighten his waist and as he was going to kneel in front of him, Chu Feng coldly asked.

“Hmph. Do you really think you’ve won? This battle is not finished yet. Right now, I’ll let you experience the strongest martial skill of my Lingyun School.”

Dugu Aoyun suddenly laughed towards the sky and an extremely special aura surged out from his body. He who was originally pressured had actually resisted against Chu Feng’s Blade of the Void Dragon’s Cry. His aura was also rapidly strengthening. He was breaking through layers and layers, and layer by layer, he was becoming stronger.

“This feeling...It’s the Murderous 7-Injuring Fists.” As Chu Feng felt Dugu Aoyun’s quickly changing aura, Chu Feng’s face also slightly changed and his brows tightly locked together.

He recognized the martial skill that Dugu Aoyun displayed. It was one of the foundation martial skills of the Lingyun School, the Murderous 7-Injuring Fists.

The martial skill was a rank 5 martial skill to begin with, so accordingly, it shouldn’t be feared. But that martial skill was a very strange one. It was similar to Forbidden Medicines, as one could gain power that surpassed their own body with damaging their body as the price.

At first, when he was in the Vermilion Bird City, Chu Feng had experienced it before from the core disciple of the Lingyun School, “Ding Chou”. The Ding Chou at that time relied on that martial skill to increase his cultivation greatly, and even though Ding Chou only cultivated the Murderous 7-Injuring Fists to the 3rd layer, it was already enough for Chu Feng to feel extremely great pressure.

In front of his eyes, the Murderous 7-Injuring Fists that Dugu Aoyun was displaying already completely surpassed Ding Chou. Currently, he was displaying the 4th layer. As he used the 4th layer, Dugu Aoyun’s body was no longer affected by the pressure from Chu Feng’s Blade of the Void Dragon’s Cry in any way.

hmm

Just at that time, Dugu Aoyun broke through another layer of power and entered the 5th layer. At that moment, with Dugu Aoyun as the middle, layers of Profound power quickly swirled around and they started to pounce back towards Chu Feng, causing him to feel great pressure.

But that was not the end. Suddenly, another layer of terrifying formless vortex came from Dugu Aoyun's body and engulfed out, and with that, Chu Feng's Blade of the Void Dragon's Cry was thoroughly disintegrated into nothing.

At that instant, not only did Dugu Aoyun suddenly break into the 6th layer of the Murderous 7-Injuring Fists, even his cultivation violently surged up another level, and from the 8th level of the Profound realm, he stepped into the 9th level of the Profound realm.

ta

At that instant, as he was pressured by Dugu Aoyun, Chu Feng couldn't help but retreat one step. His face became ugly again. As he faced Dugu Aoyun whose cultivation increased greatly, Chu Feng also felt several times the pressure.

“Look, how did Dugu Aoyun's aura suddenly increase so sharply? This strange change..Is it..is it..The foundation martial skill of the Lingyun School, the Murderous 7-Injuring Fists?”

Dugu Aoyun's change caused many people to sigh in surprise because breaking into the 9th level of the Profound realm from the

8th level of the Profound realm was too horrifying. It caused them to think of the Murderous 7-Injuring Fists.

## Chapter 289: Grey-Cloak World Spiritist

---

“That’s right. It is my Lingyun School’s foundation martial skill, the Murderous 7-Injuring Fists.”

“Although this martial skill is rank 5, it is the hardest martial skill to cultivate in the Lingyun School. Those who can cultivate it to the 3rd layer are already geniuses, and those who can cultivate to the 4th layer are super geniuses. But Senior Dugu has already used this martial skill to the 6th layer.” A disciple from the Lingyun School introduced proudly.

“Heavens! He cultivated to the 6th layer? How strong is Dugu Aoyun’s comprehension power?” After hearing the astonishment from the Lingyun School disciple, the surrounding observers were dumbfounded and they endlessly praised.

Then, within the gazes that they looked back at Chu Feng with, they were filled with worry. At first, when Chu Feng and Dugu Aoyun were separated by four levels, the outcome wasn’t clear.

But now, they were separated by five levels. Clearly, Chu Feng was unable to continue and Dugu Aoyun already used the advantage of pressure to restrain Chu Feng. He did not even need to use any martial skills. With just his aura, he could defeat Chu Feng. That was the suppression of absolute strength.

bzz

But just at that time, change abruptly happened to Chu Feng’s

body. Layers of golden-coloured lightning surged out from within his body and as he was being enveloped by the golden-coloured lightning, Chu Feng's aura also violently rose as he entered the 4th level of the Profound realm from the 3rd level of the Profound realm.

“Look! Chu Feng's aura! He...he...he...he broke into the 4th level of the Profound realm!”

“What happened? Did Chu Feng also cultivate the Murderous 7-Injuring Fists or something? Why did his fine cultivation suddenly rise and broke into the next level?”

“Look clearly! There is some golden-coloured lightning outside of Chu Feng's body. His cultivation must have been increased because of that lightning! What a beautiful martial skill. What martial skill can it possibly be?”

Chu Feng activated the golden-coloured lightning in his blood. The ability that was unique to him was mistakenly recognized as a gorgeous and strong martial skill. As the golden and shining lightning caused them to sigh in surprise, they also endlessly admired.

They felt that it was a very amazing martial skill. A very strong martial skill. A martial that shouldn't exist, yet that that martial was grasped by Chu Feng.

“You know some stuff. It seems like some of the treasures that the Azure Dragon Founder left behind still remains in your Azure

Dragon School as you have revealed so many martial skills that I haven't even seen before."

"But do you really think you can fight against me after raising your cultivation by one level?" Dugu Aoyun stared at Chu Feng with an icy cold gaze.

"Do you think I cannot?" Chu Feng lightly smiled and asked disapprovingly.

"Hmph. Of course you cannot. Do you really think that my Murderous 7-Injuring Fists only raises my cultivation?"

"If you think like that, you underestimate it too much. There's no harm in telling you that even though the Murderous 7-Injuring Fists belongs to rank 5 martial skills, if one is proficient in it, it can be comparable to rank 7 martial skills." Dugu Aoyun's emotions were clearly a bit excited.

When he, who could easily defeat school head level characters who were in the 9th level of the Profound realm, was currently being pressured to this state by Chu Feng who was only in the 3rd level of the Profound realm, sweats of shame truly flowed down his face and he could not wait to kill Chu Feng to prove that he was the one who was the number one genius in the Azure Province.

"Sure! Let me see the so-called rank 7 martial skill." Chu Feng's complexion did not change and he provokingly smiled.

“I will!” Dugu Aoyun’s anger burned and he didn’t speak anymore useless words. He first stepped forward in a large stride and threw out several punches continuously.

Fists that contained layers of Profound power seemed to be completely ordinary and nothing seemed strange about them; but in reality, they had devastating power. The might was emanated out and even the sky and ground trembled, causing the faces of the surrounding observers to reveal fear as they were deeply shocked by the power within the fists.

“Then I will also show you how I, Chu Feng, will block your rank 7 martial skill!”

Chu Feng did not dodge or avoid and with a thought, the boundless Spirit Formation power surged out from his body and became a huge Spirit Formation barrier in front of him. Like a fortress, it blocked the attacks in front of Chu Feng.

boom boom boom

At the same time, Dugu Aoyun’s Profound power fists already collided and endlessly created terrifying ripples that spread throughout the land. Even the incomparably firm fighting stage had trouble resisting against the horrifying might. Layer by layer, it was being destroyed and crack after crack appeared. At the end, it even completely collapsed.

But such horrifying attacks could only stop in front of Chu Feng and they could not approach Chu Feng anymore. All of them were



stopped by the Spirit Formation Chu Feng laid.

“Heavens! Everyone look! Chu Feng has actually blocked Dugu Aoyun’s attack, and he actually blocked such a scary attack!”

At first, everyone was stunned by Dugu Aoyun’s attack. But when they saw that Chu Feng could not be harmed in the slightest despite the terrifying ripples that unceasingly exploded, their already stunned expressions instantly deepened to another layer.

“That is!!” At the same time, Yan Yangtian who stood on the tall stage also lit up his eyes and shock that was rarely found surged into his gaze.

“That’s right. It’s a grey-coloured Spirit Formation. This Chu Feng has grasped the power of Grey-cloak World Spiritists and his Spirit power is the same as the one I felt before. He should be the World Spiritist who was detecting your cultivation at the beginning of the Hundred School Gathering.” Just at that time, the Grey-cloak World Spiritist next to Yan Yangtian very astonishedly spoke.

“What? So this means that Chu Feng is a Grey-cloak World Spiritist?” After hearing those words, not to mention Yan Yangtian, everyone on the tall stage widened their mouths as they were astounded and their faces were full of inconceivableness.

“That’s a grey-coloured Spirit Formation, Chu Feng has condensed a grey-coloured Spirit Formation! He is a Grey-cloak World Spiritist!!”

At that instant, not only did the people from the Lingyun School discover Chu Feng's abnormality, the various other schools also found out that something was wrong, and with a glance, they recognized that Chu Feng displayed a Spirit Formation, and it was even a grey-coloured Spirit Formation. Chu Feng was actually a Grey-cloak World Spiritist.

“Chu Feng he...he...he...he is not only a martial cultivating genius, he is even a Grey-cloak World Spiritist!!”

After that news was spread out, almost everyone on scene greatly changed their expressions and they were completely stupefied by Chu Feng's abilities.

Grey-cloak World Spiritist. Only two of these huge characters existed in the entire Azure Province, yet at that moment, a third one appeared today. It was even such a young man, a martial cultivator with such terrifying talent. That truly caused everyone to be too shocked.

After being shocked, they also thought of another person. It was the mysterious character who shook the Azure Province roughly half a year ago, Mr. Grey-cloak. Was Chu Feng related to Mr. Grey-cloak in any way?

As everyone was constantly guessing, Chu Feng extended his palm and grabbed the air towards Dugu Aoyun. Layers of domineering Spirit Formations started to appear around Dugu Aoyun. At the end, after surrounding him within it, they started to

force their way towards him.

As he faced that situation, Dugu Aoyun started to use his Murderous 7-Injuring Fists and he wanted to break that Spirit Formation. However, it was useless as he could not even damage the Spirit Formation in the slightest. He who was usually arrogant and wild couldn't help but be scared.

## Chapter 290: Crushed Into A Meat Patty

---

Chu Feng's grey-coloured Spirit Formation wall was the strongest defense, but it could also simultaneously become the fiercest attack.

At that very instant, there were six Spirit Formation walls, and following Chu Feng's thoughts, from up, down, left, right, and everywhere, it imprisoned Dugu Aoyun within it and it was also speedily shrinking. If that continued and if Dugu Aoyun was still unable to break the Spirit Formation wall, he would be compressed into a pool of blood.

As he was in that situation, Dugu Aoyun's expression revealed fear. But suddenly, within his fearful eyes, a streak of resolution flashed past.

Closely following that, Dugu Aoyun's body started to change. His skin became blood-red and blue veins popped out. Both of his eyes became completely white and his appearance looked exactly like a wild beast walking like a human. It was horrifying and sinister. The most important thing was that as he changed, Dugu Aoyun's aura rose greatly again.

roar

Suddenly, Dugu Aoyun opened his mouth and suddenly howled towards the sky. The beast-like noise came out from his mouth and it shook the area to the point that it was quivering, and it caused many people to cover their ears.

How was that even a sound made by a human? It was simply a roar that could not even be made by wild beasts, Fierce Beasts, or even Monstrous Beasts.

Following the sounding of the roars, a tyrannical layer of ripple swept out from his body and it caused Chu Feng's grey-coloured Spirit Formation to collapse and crumble into pieces.

“This aura...Does this mean that Senior Dugu has...has cultivated the Murderous 7-Injuring Fists to the 7th layer?” At that instant, the complexions of disciples from the Lingyun School couldn't help but greatly change because Dugu Aoyun's change caused them to associate it to the highest layer of the Murderous 7-Injuring Fists.

“Aoyun has actually cultivated it to this stage? It is a layer that even I have not reached!” Seeing the quickly changing Dugu Aoyun, mad happiness was filled in Yan Yangtian's eyes.

Although the Murderous 7-Injuring Fists was only a rank 5 martial skill, its cultivation difficulty was extremely high. Even he only cultivated it to the 6th layer, yet Dugu Aoyun had cultivated it to the 7th layer. It meant that Dugu Aoyun's talent was far above his. When his Lingyun School had a successor such as him, how could he not be madly happy?

“With Aoyun's talent, he can certainly break into the Heaven realm within five years. At that time, my Lingyun School will not be restricted to the Azure Province and it can stand onto the vast

stage of the Nine Provinces.”

“Lord School Head, the rebound of the Murderous 7-Injuring Fists is extremely terrifying and since Aoyun is using it to the 7th layer, I’m afraid...” But compared to Yan Yangtian’s excitement, the Twelve Protectors of the Lingyun School worried more about Dugu Aoyun’s body.

“Don’t worry. With me here, I guarantee that nothing will happen to Aoyun. Right now, the most important thing is to not lose. No matter what price is paid, he cannot lose, because if he does, there will be nothing left.” The Grey-cloak World Spiritist said in a low voice.

“That’s right. This battle must be won. Since Chu Feng is so ruthless at this age by setting the destruction of their cultivation as the wager, I’m sure that this child must be Mr. Grey-cloak who exterminated the Shangguan family.”

“Since a person like him has been offended, it is extremely difficult for any reconciliation. Before he develops, he must be killed, and using Aoyun’s hands to kill him is the best way.”

Yan Yangtian stared at Chu Feng as his expression did not change at all and he revealed killing intent in his gaze because Chu Feng was truly too terrifying. Within the entire young generation that he had seen, he was the most terrifying. Not only in terms of martial cultivation talent. It was also because of his heartless nature and his courage to not be afraid when faced with danger. Those things should not exist in his age.

So, Yan Yangtian kept on reminding himself deep within his heart that Chu Feng could not be remained alive. No matter what price had to be paid, no matter what methods, he must be killed.

roar~~ Just at that time, Dugu Aoyun furiously howled again, and after that, he leaped and explosively shot towards Chu Feng. A burst of strong might was carried over as well, and the present him already infinitely neared the Heaven realm.

boom boom boom At that instant, even Chu Feng did not dare to meet force with force against Dugu Aoyun. As he condensed Spirit Formations, he attacked with martial skills.

However, the originally extremely sturdy Spirit Formation was currently unable to stop Dugu Aoyun's footsteps. With a casual strike, he could shatter the Spirit Formations that Chu Feng laid.

Also, Dugu Aoyun also did not dodge or avoid any of Chu Feng's attacks that were sent out. He went straight towards them and he quite unexpectedly used his own physical body to block one powerful attack after the other from Chu Feng. Even his footsteps were not slowed at all.

"It is useless. Aoyun's current state causes him to be almost invincible within the Profound realm. His body is the scariest weapon. It is indestructible and invincible."

"Even I need to waste quite a bit of effort if I want to harm Aoyun who is in his current state, let alone a brat like Chu Feng who is

only in the 4th level of the Profound realm.” Seeing that the attacks Chu Feng sent out had no effects, Yan Yangtian and the higher-ups of the Lingyun School all coldly smiled and felt that Chu Feng was doing useless actions.

“Ahhh!”

In actuality, the current Dugu Aoyun was indeed abnormally ferocious. How did he even look like a human? When he ran around, all four of his limbs landed on the ground, as if he was a ferocious human-shaped beast. With ear-piercing howls and terrifying bloodlust, he forced his way towards Chu Feng.

“I never would have thought that Dugu Aoyun strengthened his physical body to this state, so it seems like I can only use that.” Seeing that his own attacks were useless, Chu Feng didn’t bother dodging anymore. He stood where he was and silently awaited the arrival of Dugu Aoyun.

“Why isn’t Chu Feng’s moving? Has he given up?” But Chu Feng’s actions caused others to be greatly surprised. Even Yan Yangtian slightly frowned as he did not know why Chu Feng was causing that suspense.

Just as Dugu Aoyun leaped forward and was going to charge in front of Chu Feng, Chu Feng suddenly extended his palm and roared loudly, “White Tiger Slaughtering Technique!!”

boom



Immediately after the White Tiger appeared, it gave off might that could not be defended against. The tiger's claw condensed out by the gas grabbed Dugu Aoyun who was attacking him head first. Like a cat catching a mouse, it grasped Dugu Aoyun into the air. No matter how he struggled, he was unable to get rid of the White Tiger's huge claw.

“Look, what's that?”

The white-coloured tiger claw was vivid and lifelike. The black-coloured stripes. The white-coloured fur. It was simply a real, huge, claw of a White Tiger! The most important thing was that it was actually able to grab such a powerful Dugu Aoyun within its palm, causing him to be unable to escape. That really caused people to be incomparable shocked. They could not imagine what martial skill that was which had such terrifying power.

“It is useless. Even if his martial skill was stronger, it will not be able to harm Senior Dugu in the slightest. What Senior Dugu is using right now is the 7th layer of the Murderous 7-Injuring Fists! The current Senior Dugu is invincible! Nothing can harm him and only he can harm others! Chu Feng, you don't need to struggle anymore because today, you will undoubtedly be defeated!!” Just at that time, the disciples from the Lingyun School started to confidently yell.

After hearing their words, Chu Feng only sneered and suddenly waved his big arm. The white-coloured huge claw that held Dugu Aoyun abruptly went downwards. At the end, with a boom, it slammed Dugu Aoyun down into the ground.

The strong power caused a huge pit to appear in the earth. Countless deep cracks spread out for over a thousand meters and it even extended to the observers' location, causing some of their seats to collapse down.

When Chu Feng gradually retracted his palm, when the dust that rushed to the heavens gradually dispelled, people were flabbergasted as they discovered that Dugu Aoyun who was said to be indestructible and invincible by the Lingyun School's disciples was already forcibly crushed into a meat patty.

# Chapter 291: Come At Me

---

It was a blurry and bloody mess in the deep ditch. There were no more signs of life from the number one genius of the Lingyun School, Dugu Aoyun. There was not even a corpse or any bones remaining and he was crushed into a meat patty by Chu Feng's palm.

At that instant, everyone was completely silent in the school. Not only the people from the Lingyun School. Even the outsiders were frightened by that scene as they started at Dugu Aoyun who was in the deep ditch blankly and within their gazes, expressions of shock and fear surged.

At that instant, Yan Yangtian was standing on the tall stage as he looked at his Lingyun School's future hope become a pool of blood. His body was quivering, and a burst of indescribable fury started to surge in his boy.

“Chu Feng, I will kill you!!”

Suddenly, someone loudly yelled, and following that, all sorts of enraged curses and killing threats exploded out. The elders and disciples from the Lingyun School rushed forward all at once and surrounded Chu Feng to attack him. The atmosphere that they were giving off showed that they wanted to take Chu Feng's life.

“You want to kill me? Are you qualified?”

As he looked at the crowd who had bloodlust that filled their

faces, Chu Feng was not afraid in the slightest. He waved his big sleeve, and a layer of domineering Profound power spread out with him as the center and it swept in all directions.

“Ahh~~~~”

As they faced that ripple, the thousand of disciples and elders from the Lingyun School could not resist at all. All of them were like scarecrows as they were blown away. They were not even able to take one of Chu Feng’s strikes.

“Arrogant brat. Today, you must pay the price for your actions.”

Just at that time, twelve figures darted down from the tall stage. The twelve people stood in twelve different directions and they surrounded Chu Feng in a circle. Those twelve people were the Twelve Protectors of the Lingyun School. The twelve peak experts in the 9th level of the Profound realm.

hmm

At the same time, a layer of grey-coloured Spirit Formation was also condensed out and it wrapped around Chu Feng as well as the Twelve Protectors. It was the Grey-cloak World Spiritist from the Lingyun School.

“Chu Feng, stopping when appropriate was how it was agreed. Why did you need to kill?” Yan Yangtian spoke.

At that moment, both of his eyes were blood-red and even his speaking voice was trembling a bit. Everyone could see that the head of the Lingyun School was truly furious. He was forcibly enduring his fury. Forcibly enduring his urges to kill Chu Feng.

“Actually, I did not want to kill. I did want to stop when appropriate.”

“But I could do nothing about the loud yells from your Lingyun School. Something about Dugu Aoyun being unparalleled, indestructible, invincible.”

“So, I tensed up and I used a bit more power. But who would have thought that he could not even take one of my strikes, and with a palm, he was slammed to death.”

“Ahh, School Head Yan, you can truly not blame this matter on me. Actually, people in your Lingyun School are responsible for Dugu Aoyun’s death. If they didn’t yell so wildly, I wouldn’t mistakenly thought that Dugu Aoyun was really strong and I wouldn’t have accidentally killed him!” As he faced Yan Yangtian’s questioning, Chu Feng shrugged his shoulders and innocence was written all over his face.

“Damn Chu Feng. You kill someone from my Lingyun School yet you put the guilt onto the head of my Lingyun School? Today, I do not care who you have behind you as support. I will take your life!”

Finally, Yan Yangtian could no longer control the fury in his heart and looked towards the sky and roared. At that instant, his

aura of the Heaven realm was emanated out and the unique power engulfed the land. The entire plaza was violently trembling while mad and ferocious gales blew everyone to the point that they were rolling and climbing on the floor as it was difficult for them to prop themselves up.

“It is too terrifying. This is the power of the Heaven realm! Yan Yangtian truly stepped into the Heaven realm!!”

“He’s dead. Chu Feng’s dead. No one can save him. Even if he has battle power that defies common sense, even if he is already invincible within the Profound realm, as he faces a Heaven realm expert, he cannot escape no matter how much stronger he gets.” At that instant, people endlessly yelled in surprise and they were frightened by Yan Yangtian’s displayed might.

In reality, even Chu Feng tightly frowned and murmured to himself, “So this is the power of the Heaven realm. Indeed, it is very strong. This and the Profound realm are completely different.”

“Of course the Heaven realm is strong. You are able to defeat those in the Profound realm while being in the Origin realm, but I cannot see you being able to defeat the Heaven realm while being in the Profound realm. Unless you are in the 9th level of the Profound realm, even if your battle power rises to the skies, it would be very difficult for you to fight against the Heaven realm, as that is the realm that is closest to the Martial Lord realm. They are people who grasps the power of the Heaven.” At the same time, Eggy also gravely reminded.

“Everyone back away. I will personally kill Chu Feng and avenge Aoyun.”

Yan Yangtian’s clothes fluttered and his long hair madly shook. The bloodlust that rose to the heavens was emitted out from his own body. It ruled that land and in front of his power, Chu Feng almost had no way of escaping.

After Yan Yangtian spoke, the Grey-cloak World Spiritist quickly dissolved his Spirit Formation and the Twelve Protectors also quickly retreated back to the tall stage because they knew that Yan Yangtian was truly furious.

Under those circumstances, they had to stay far away from Chu Feng and they were deeply afraid of being dragged in. Since they saw Yan Yangtian’s Heaven realm power before, they clearly knew what terrifying power of destruction a casual strike from a Heaven realm expert would be like.

“I would quite like to see who dares to try and touch Chu Feng today.”

But just at that time, another explosive yell resounded out. That voice was extremely loud and clear, as if the thunder was exploding in the sky. It caused many martial cultivation experts’ faces to change and their ears buzzed. People with weaker cultivation directly spat out blood from the shock caused by that angry bellow and they fainted away.

At the same time, a wave of boundless pressure descended from

the sky, as if an invisible mountain range was pressing down. As that horrifying pressure came down, an aged figure also appeared in the sky.

He wore a body of golden-coloured armor and he looked exactly like a battle god. He slowly descended from the sky and at the end, as innumerable gazes were locked onto him, he landed next to Chu Feng. That person was Chu Feng's elder brother, the chief of the Qi clan in the Qilin Prince's Mansion, Qi Fengyang.

“Heavens, it's Qi Fengyang! What's with his aura? How did he descend from the sky? Does this mean that he has also stepped into the Heaven realm, and he is also a Heaven realm expert?”

Qi Fengyang's appearance surpassed everyone's expectations. The strength he displayed even shocked everyone. It was a pressing feeling that was not inferior to Yan Yangtian, which meant that the old man had cultivation that was not inferior to Yan Yangtian.

“Qi Fengyang, you...you also entered the Heaven realm?” In reality, not only the bystanders, even Yan Yangtian was stunned by Qi Fengyang's strength.

From what he knew, within the borders of the current Azure Province, there was only one Heaven realm expert: The master of the Qilin Prince's Mansion. Yan Yangtian broke through a year ago, so it could be said that he was the second Heaven realm expert in the Azure Province.



Yet presently, a third Heaven realm expert appeared. It meant that it destroyed the balance in the Azure Province, and it forced him to seriously treat it.

As for Qi Fengyang, he did not pay attention to Yan Yangtian at all. He only put his hand on Chu Feng's shoulder and asked, "My brother, you're fine right?"

"Big bro, I'm fine.. I finally know why you sent me a mental message and told me to kill Dugu Aoyun. So you're also in the Heaven realm!" Compared to the observers, after Chu Feng saw Qi Fengyang's cultivation, he was quite unexpectedly happy and he was extremely excited.

"Heh, the reason why I left for a few days was none other than to break into this huge realm. But I have to say, this feeling is quite nice."

Qi Fengyang chuckled, then after that, he cast his gaze towards Yan Yangtian and loudly yelled, "School Head Yan. I allowed Chu Feng to kill Dugu Aoyun. If you have anything, you come at me!"

## Chapter 292: Healing Li Zhangqing

---

After Qi Fengyang spoke, it was a thunder in a clear sky and it frightened everyone. As for Yan Yangtian, he was even so angry that his fury could not be extinguished. His entire body was trembling from rage as he pointed at Qi Fengyang and bellowed,

“Qi Fengyang, why did you encourage Chu Feng to kill my school’s disciple? As a person from the Qilin Prince’s Mansion, you think you can look down upon the laws of the dynasty and trample over human life?”

“Hmph. Yan Yangtian, your Lingyun School’s Dugu Aoyun did not have any respect for his seniors in his gaze, and he was even so out of control. He had actually pulled Li Zhangqing’s arms off in front of so many school heads, and he humiliated a senior.”

“Even if a disciple like him has a bit of talent, when he grows up in the future, he will certainly not do any kindness. Rather, he would only perform evils and since leaving him alive is detrimental, why not remove him right?”

“I told Chu Feng to do that for the good of your Lingyun School. Or else if your Lingyun School got managed by him in the future, it would have certainly be brought down a road of no return and it would become a demonic school.”

“Yan Yangtian, no need to thank me. As a chief of the Qilin Prince’s Mansion, helping the citizens remove harm is my responsibility. Let us meet another day!!”

Qi Fengyang first contentedly pointed and reprimanded Yan Yangtian while his spit flew straight across the air, then with a laugh, he grabbed onto Chu Feng's shoulders, leaped, and walked on air. He disappeared from the crowd's line of sight just like that.

They only left a group of dumbfounded school heads, elders, disciples, as well as Yan Yangtian who had an enraged face yet could do absolutely nothing.

Qi Fengyang walked in the air and his speed was extremely fast. With a blink, he and Chu Feng left the range of the Lingyun School. That caused Chu Feng's tongue to be tied in a knot because that speed was not reachable with the Imperial Sky Technique that he grasped.

It also meant that even if Chu Feng had the Imperial Sky Technique and even if he could resist the air to walk, if he faced real Heaven realm experts, his present speed was still inferior and he did not even have the chance to escape.

After Qi Fengyang brought Chu Feng away from the Lingyun School, he stopped at a village on a mountain. There was a simple farmer's residence. A rough crude houses with a courtyard surrounded by fences. Within the courtyard, there was a group of chickens and geese and they were currently wildly squealing. Outside of the courtyard, there were dozens of citizens who were raising their heads to look.

They broadened their eyes, widened their mouth, and had faces

full of astonishment, because at that instant, they were seeing two figures descending from the sky. That completely terrified the mountain village citizens who had never even touched martial cultivation before.

Some people even thought that Gods were descending from the heavens and one after the other, they knelt to the ground and started to pray towards the sky. The two people who came down from the sky were naturally Qi Fengyang and Chu Feng.

After landing, Qi Fengyang did not pay attention to the citizens. He brought Chu Feng directly into the crude house, and within that crude house, Chu Feng saw two familiar figures.

One of them was Li Zhangqing. The present him had a deathly pale face and lips that were going purple. He was laying on the wooden bed while in a coma.

Next to the bed that Li Zhangqing was laying on, the head of the Jade Maiden School was busying back and forth with a head full of sweat. She was sewing Li Zhangqing's torn arms back with medicinal grasses.

“Lord Qi, you're back. That Dugu Aoyun was too despicable. When he tore Zhangqing's arms, he used his Profound power to prick and destroy his meridians and muscles. With the current medical techniques that I grasp, I have no way of healing Zhangqing's arms.” After seeing Qi Fengyang, the head of the Jade Maiden School quickly darted out.

“No fear! We have a World Spiritist here!” Qi Fengyang unhurriedly and lightly smiled, then cast his gaze towards Chu Feng next to him. Chu Feng also did not delay as he quickly went up to examine the current situation of Li Zhangqing’s two arms.

Seeing Chu Feng who was fiddling around with Li Zhangqing arms as if he knew what he was doing, the head of the Jade Maiden School slightly tightly frowned, worriedly looked at Qi Fengyang, then asked in a low voice,

“Lord Qi. School Head Li’s muscles and meridians on both arms have been destroyed. They are no longer complete arms anymore but a pair of unrecoverable arms. Although the methods of World Spiritists are special, I’m afraid that they can still not be healed and we still need to find a person with more outstanding medical techniques so that they can think of some methods.”

As he faced the head of the Jade Maiden School’s doubts, Qi Fengyang only faintly smiled and said, “Our World Spiritist is not an ordinary one.”

hmm

At the same time, dazzling radiance blossomed from Chu Feng and Li Zhangqing’s direction. That scene caused the head of the Jade Maiden School to be shocked as she hurriedly cast her gaze over. Although she did not expect much when she looked over, even she, who had quite a bit of experience, was frightened.

Because at that very instant, on both of Li Zhangqing’s arms, a

mini formation appeared. The formation was flowing and turning with symbols while emitting faint grey-coloured light. As the light was enveloping them, the symbols kept on entering and leaving both of Li Zhangqing's arm as they gave off their unique power.

As the symbols wiggled, Li Zhangqing's torn muscles and meridians were recovering. At the same time that they were recovering, they already reconnected to the original meridians.

"This feeling... Is it possible that Chu Feng is a Grey-cloak World Spiritist?" At that instant, the head of the Jade Maiden School shockingly opened her mouth.

"Mr. Grey-cloak. Have you heard of him?" Qi Fengyang smiled.

"What? Does that mean that Mr. Grey-cloak is Chu Feng?" After hearing Qi Fengyang say that, another circle was widened on the already widened mouth of the head of the Jade Maiden School.

"Hehe." Qi Fengyang only chuckled at the head of the Jade Maiden School's question and he did not reply.

"Okay, as long as the school head can peacefully rest for a few days, he should completely recover."

Just at that time, Chu Feng stood up and looked at Li Zhangqing. His torn arms were already completely undamaged, and Chu Feng also sew back the ripped long robe's sleeve with Spirit Formation techniques. He even removed the bloodstains.

“Waa! Chu Feng, you are too amazing!”

At that instant, the head of the Jade Maiden School was incomparably ecstatic. On her face that was already beautiful, she was currently smiling like a little flower. It could be seen that she truly had some strong and special feelings towards Li Zhangqing.

“That’s amazing? There is something else that is even more amazing.” Qi Fengyang strangely smiled.

“What other thing?” The head of the Jade Maiden School widened her eyes round as she curiously and closely asked.

“No rush. You will know very soon. Not only will you know, the people in the entire Azure Province will know.” Qi Fengyang chuckled and he had actually raised some suspense.

After hearing those words, the head of the Jade Maiden School who was already curious became even more curious. But because of Qi Fengyang’s status and strength, it was not good for her to ask anything more. She could only look forward for the quick arrival of the news.

That village was “bought” by Qi Fengyang. For the single reason that Li Zhangqing was recovering there, every single villager in the poor and depressed mountain village got an unimaginable huge sum.

Also, as a sign of gratitude, after clearly knowing that Qi Fengyang already rewarded the villagers, Chu Feng still gave them a lot of gold because to Chu Feng, things like money were only worldly materials. Only Profound medicines were useful to him.

As they faced the sudden explosive wealth, the villagers who already originally thought that Chu Feng and the others were Gods took out all the good things from the village to treat Chu Feng and the others respectfully.

Chicken, duck, goose, pig, horse, goat... The things that were edible were all made deliciously with all sorts of methods. After Chu Feng and the others who got used to eating delicacies ate that perfect feast in the mountain village, it had to be said that it was quite a special style and it was quite interesting.

After dinner, Chu Feng and Qi Fengyang strolled in the air. This time, Qi Fengyang did not walk on the air while holding Chu Feng. Chu Feng used the Imperial Sky Technique and walked towards the purple-clouded horizon.



# Emperor Tomb

## Chapter 293: Shocking The Azure Province

---

“This Imperial Sky Technique... The Imperial Sky Sage did indeed invent quite an outstanding thing.” As he looked at Chu Feng who walked on air as if he was walking on flat ground, Qi Fengyang nodded his head in admiration.

The technique to resist the air to walk. Even he who stepped into the Heaven realm had no way of creating it, yet the Imperial Sky Sage, with the cultivation of the Profound realm, created a bodily martial skill like that. It was truly a type of miracle.

“Big bro, although Dugu Aoyun is really hateable since he tore my school head’s arms off, I seem to have gone too far by killing him right?” Suddenly, Chu Feng said with a bit of worry.

“Damn. Boy, are you even ashamed by speaking those words?” Qi Fengyang curled his mouth and fiercely stared at Chu Feng.

As he faced Qi Fengyang who was like that, Chu Feng was indeed a bit embarrassed and he scratched his head slightly with a bit of shame and he did not refute.

It was because Qi Fengyang was correct. With how Chu Feng usually did things, killing Dugu Aoyun was really not much. Rather, it was by speaking those words did he seem stranger. Of course, the reason why Chu Feng asked that was naturally because he had his own thoughts.

“I know what you are worried about. Yan Yangtian is a Heaven

realm expert, and even though your battle power can rise to the sky and you are an abnormality, when facing a Heaven realm expert, it would be quite appropriate to say that you are a weak ant.”

“Before, I have not stepped into this realm so I truly thought that the rumours about this realm were only legends. However, after stepping into this realm, only then did I deeply understand the impressiveness of this realm.” Qi Fengyang first sighed, then continued to speak,

“You don’t know Yan Yangtian well. He is a person who is extremely ambitious. Especially after he entered the Heaven realm, his nerves could cover the sky and he would not be afraid of anything.”

“He would not allow any school that would threaten his Lingyun School to appear within the borders of the Azure Province.”

“However, the might of your Azure Dragon School rising greatly has already appeared and your battle power that defied common sense has already been revealed. No matter if you killed Dugu Aoyun or not, he, Yan Yangtian, would not let you and your Azure Dragon School go. He would also not let the people around you go.”

“So, if you kill Dugu Aoyun, he, Yan Yangtian, would not let you go. If you don’t kill, he, Yan Yangtian, would still not let you go. Since he wouldn’t let you go no matter what, why not kill his favourite disciple right?” Qi Fengyang explained to Chu Feng.

“Big bro, you completely make sense!” Chu Feng nodded in agreement and for some things, Qi Fengyang did indeed see them more thoroughly than him.

“But don’t worry. Right now, I am also in the Heaven realm. In addition, I have the Qilin Prince’s Mansion behind me, and the Qilin Prince’s Mansion has the Jiang Dynasty behind it. So, as long as I, your big bro, am here, no matter how much more nerves Yan Yangtian has, he will absolutely not dare to attack you.” Qi Fengyang patted his chest and guaranteed.

“Big bro, you also have an otherworldly expert behind you right?” Chu Feng chuckled and asked.

“Who are you talking about?” Qi Fengyang was a bit confused.

“The Blue-cloak World Spiritist living in seclusion in the Valley of Hundred Bends!” Chu Feng responded.

“Oh!” After hearing those words, Qi Fengyang suddenly understood and after that, he smiled at Chu Feng, “You are correct. He is indeed a very strong expert, but he is not living in seclusion. He understands everything in the Azure Province better than anyone else.”

“The reason why he remains in the Valley of Hundred Bends is because he wants to observe everything that happens in the Azure Province because he searching for a person.”

“A person? What person?” Chu Feng curiously and closely asked.

“Haha, a very outstanding person. But I cannot tell you. It is a secret. Even if it is you, I cannot say.”

Qi Fengyang stroke his beard then smiled again before speaking to Chu Feng, “That person is the hope of the continent of the Nine Provinces, and you are the hope of the Azure Province.”

Chu Feng did not completely understand Qi Fengyang’s words, but he could tell that the identity of the Blue-cloak World Spiritist was not simple, and the person he was searching for was even less simple.

Although Chu Feng was very curious as to who that Blue-cloak World Spiritist was, and who that not simple person was, since Qi Fengyang was unwilling to speak, Chu Feng did not ask anymore.

Because he owned favours to Li Zhangqing, Chu Feng and Qi Fengyang did not leave the village for the past few days. From start to finish, they kept on observing Li Zhangqing’s conditions. Only after Li Zhangqing reawakened and after there weren’t many problems with his arm, they restarted their journey.

And with the time of the past few days, the news of Chu Feng making a ruckus in the Lingyun School, in the Hundred School Gathering, by first cutting off Fenghao’s arms and also crushing Dugu Aoyun into a meat patty spread throughout the Azure Province.

Since the news this time was spread out by various first-rate schools in the Azure Province, being from both the lower ranks, the core disciples, and the higher ranks, the elders and school heads, it caused no one to doubt Chu Feng's abilities anymore, and no one doubted the truth of that matter. Rather, they deeply believed it and did not doubt at all.

In the Azure Province, a genius appeared. A monster appeared. A terrifying demon appeared. Those were the discussions that everyone was talking about.

Chu Feng was a genius because of his martial cultivation talent. Chu Feng was a monster because of his power battle that defied the heavens. Chu Feng was a demon because of his methods of doing things.

The famous name "Chu Feng" became an existence that people both idolized and were afraid of. Many people wanted to personally witness Chu Feng's grandeur. Yet, they were very terrified. With a single careless word, with a single wrong action, if it offended the demon, their entire family would get exterminated.

In short, not only did Chu Feng's strength get recognized, it even got demonized. But no matter what, Chu Feng was indeed publicly recognized as the number one genius in the current Azure Province.

However, compared to others, the people in the Vermilion Bird City were tangling around with another news...

“Chu Feng is Mr. Grey-cloak. Mr. Grey-cloak is Chu Feng. This... this is really a heavenly big and great news!”

Within a main hall in the Vermilion Bird City, Su Hen was excitedly walking back and forth. His face was filled with colours of euphoria because he would not forget the warning that Mr. Grey-cloak gave himself, which stated his daughters could not be married to any other person other to him.

Originally, Su Hen was struggling. Chu Feng was a genius, he had Qi Fengyang supporting his back, and he did have feelings towards his daughters. He really wanted to marry his daughters over to Chu Feng. However, Mr. Grey-cloak who was heartless threatened him before. That caused him to be quite frightened and he was at a loss.

But now, the two of them were very possibly the same person. That caused all his struggles to disappear, and what remained was only endless happiness.

“Father, putting aside that this news isn’t confirmed yet, even if Chu Feng is Mr. Grey-cloak, what are you so happy about?” Su Mei blinked her beautiful big eyes and confusedly stared at her own father.

“Father is sick, ignore him.” Su Rou pulled Su Mei’s sleeve, leaned towards her ear, and hiddenly said.

“Haha, little Rou, little Mei, there is something that I have

concealed from you two for a long time, but I feel like today is the time to tell you two about it.”

“On that day, after Mr. Grey-cloak exterminated the Shangguan family, he left a letter with me. The contents of that letter was for him to marry you two sisters.” Su Hen walked towards Su Rou and Su Mei, patted both of his hands onto his two daughters’ shoulders and his face was filled with joy and excitement.

“What? Mr. Grey-cloak wants to marry us?!” After hearing those words, Su Mei sweet little face instantly changed greatly and both of her eyes were full of fear. They were even more fearful than the time that the Shangguan family came to marry.

Because she clearly remembered that Mr. Grey-cloak was an old man and he was ruthless. He was several times scarier than the Shangguan family. She truly did not know what to do if such a character wanted to marry her.

“Haha, little Mei, no need to be afraid. Right now, the identity of Mr. Grey-cloak has already been revealed, and he is Chu Feng.”

“That means that on the surface, Mr. Grey-cloak wants to marry you two sisters, but in reality, it’s Chu Feng!” Su Hen explained with smiles.

“Father, don’t speak nonsense. There is no evidence for this news and Chu Feng had never personally said that he was Mr. Grey-cloak.” But at that instant, Su Rou angrily bellowed. She also pushed Su Hen’s arm away, pointed at him, and said,



“You are no longer the father that I respected in my heart because you have never treated us as your daughters. We two sisters are only your sacrifices for benefit of the family.” After speaking, Su Rou furiously pushed the hall door open and ran out.

## Chapter 294: The Sisters' Real Feelings

---

Su Rou was sitting on the peak of a tall tower in the Vermilion Bird City. She sat on the edge of the tall tower and her slender, long, white, and beautiful legs were hanging in mid-air. Both of her hands were placed on the eaves of the tower as she looked towards the distance.

A light wind brushed past and blew her jet-black long hair. It blew her pretty skirt, but it could not blow her enchanting face as well as her current depressed expression.

“Sister.” Suddenly, a beautiful voice rang out and Su Mei appeared behind Su Rou.

“Little Mei, why have you come?” After seeing Su Mei, Su Rou appeared quite surprised and happy, but at the same time, there was also panic that could not easily be detected.

“Heh.” Su Mei sweetly smiled but did not answer Su Rou’s question. With a poof, she sat next to Su Rou. As she cutely adjusted her pair of beautiful legs, she tightened her little nose, smiled at Su Rou, and said, “Sister, do you hope that Chu Feng is that Mr. Grey-cloak?”

“Why ask that?” Within Su Rou’s beautiful eyes, puzzledness surged, but her panic became a bit stronger.

“Heh, I do hope so. I hope that Chu Feng is Mr. Grey-cloak because I want to marry him.” Su Mei looked towards the Azure

Dragon School as a charming smile was hung on her beautiful face.

“Stupid girl, your wish will happen because he likes you very much as well. Sooner or later, he will marry you.” Su Rou dotingly rubbed Su Mei’s hair since she truly loved her younger sister very much.

“I know. I know that he likes me, but what about you?” Su Mei suddenly asked.

“What?” Being asked by Su Mei like that, Su Rou’s expression instantly froze and she didn’t know how to respond.

“Sister, do you want to marry Chu Feng?” Su Mei’s smile did not change as she continued to ask.

“I...” Su Rou’s entire face was complicated and her alluring lips slightly opened, but she could not speak any words.

Just at that time, Su Mei suddenly leaped into Su Rou’s embrace and tightly hugged Su Rou. Her charming face stuck onto Su Rou’s body as she cutely said,

“I hope that you can marry Chu Feng. I really, really hope that you can marry Chu Feng. Chu Feng is the person who I love the most, but you are also the person who I love the most. The two of you are most familial, closest, and most-loved to me. I truly hope that the three of us can be together forever.”

Su Mei's words were sweet, spirited, and very pleasant. The most important part was that her words were very sincere. The words that she spoke came from her heart.

After her little sister's words, Su Rou was first taken aback as her eyes reddened slightly and after unspeakable emotion filled her face, she then opened her arms and tightly hugged her precious younger sister and stuck her face to Su Mei's hair.

She did not speak, but her face brought smiles. Smiles of pure joy...

After Li Zhangqing's injuries recovered, Chu Feng, Li Zhangqing, and Qi Fengyang left together, but they did not go towards the same places.

Li Zhangqing returned to the Azure Dragon School. Currently, Chu Feng stirred up such a huge matter in the Hundred School Gathering and rumours were filled outside. As the school head, naturally, he had to return in order to control the situation.

As for Qi Fengyang, he received a summon from the master of the Qilin Prince's Mansion and he was called back to the Qilin Prince's Mansion. The news of him stepping into the Heaven realm was already spread out. To the Azure Province, it was a grand matter, and to the Qilin Prince's Mansion, it was even a grander matter. Naturally, the master of the mansion had to verify the truth.

As for Chu Feng, he went towards the Black Tortoise City. After meeting the Azure Dragon Founder in the Thousand Bone

Graveyard, Chu Feng already decided to leave the Azure Province to quickly raise his abilities as a World Spiritist.

If he wanted to raise his abilities as a World Spiritist, he had to follow the instructions of the mysterious and strong Monstrous Beast who was located in the Asura Ghost Tower and to find the treasures that he left behind.

However, before leaving the Azure Province, Chu Feng had one thing he had to do, and it was to go towards the Black Tortoise City. He wanted to go there and take a look to see if he could find another entrance to the Emperor Tomb and whether he could gain anything from within it or not.

“That is?”

The present Chu Feng was sitting on his White-headed Eagle and speedily flying towards the Black Tortoise City. But suddenly, he lightly furrowed his brows, and following that, he quickly changed directions. As he rode on the White-headed Eagle, he flew towards another direction.

“Run! Run! If we get caught, we’re dead!”

“Ahh~~! I don’t want to be eaten by that thing! It must hurt!”

Within a forest outside of the Black Tortoise City’s border, two boys were rapidly running. Behind the two of them was a fierce forest leopard.

The two boys were terrified and they even lost their shoes as they ran. It could be seen how much strength they spent into running, but it was in vain as the speed of the forest leopard was too fast. Like an arrow that just left a bow, it quickly neared. It was currently opening its bloody big mouth and preparing to eat a delicious meal.

“Waa~~~”

But just at that time, an ear-piercing cry rang out from the sky. Not only did the cry attract the attention of the two boys, even the forest leopard stopped its chasing steps, raised its head, and looked towards the sky.

huu

At that moment, a burst of wild wind was raised and it caused rock pieces to blow. After that, a huge White-headed Eagle descended from the sky, and with a swish, Chu Feng jumped down from the White-headed Eagle and arrived in front of the two boys.

After seeing Chu Feng, the two boys were as though they saw their only hope and they quickly leapt into Chu Feng's embrace. They frightenedly looked at the forest leopard behind them, as if they were telling Chu Feng that the big cat wanted to eat them.

At that instant, the forest leopard hesitated a bit. It hesitated on whether to leave or to continue forward. At the end, as it faced its tender and pleasant meal, it still stepped forward and it still

wanted to attack.

“Shoo!” But precisely then, Chu Feng abruptly explosively yelled. It seemed like a normal voice, yet it was like invisible sharp swords as they stabbed into the forest leopard.

“Waa~~” The forest leopard painfully wailed out and it was thrown dozens of meters away. Quickly after, it turned around, insanely ran towards the forest as it stumbled, and without even turning its head, it bore into the forest.

“Okay, don’t be afraid, there’s nothing here now.” Chu Feng smiled as he stroked the two boys who were in his embrace. He could feel the trembling bodies of the boys, and he could feel the fear in their hearts.

poof

But just then, the two boys suddenly knelt down onto the ground and kowtowed to Chu Feng. As they kowtowed, they spoke to Chu Feng, “Great God, we beg you, please take us as disciples. Great God, we beg you, please take us as disciples.”

“Come, get up to speak. As a man, what behavior is this to kneel down immediately after seeing someone?” As he faced the actions of the two boys, Chu Feng helplessly smiled, then he went over to prop them up.

At that instant, Chu Feng could clearly see that the appearances

of the two boys did not surpass the age of 7 or 8. To be more strict, their bones had not developed yet and they hadn't reached the age of martial cultivation.

Also, from their clothing, he could tell that they were some village dolls who were locally born and grown. Their clothing were very tattered, but their hairstyles were quite special.

One was a standard bowl cut, one was a standard crew cut. Their faces were very strong and firm and it was completely genuine.

However, at that very instant, snot and tears filled their young faces. It could be seen that they were truly terrified.

As he faced two such cute children, Chu Feng could ultimately not bear it. He could not bear leaving them here and not caring after all. After all, they were two pure children. Two fresh lives. So, Chu Feng asked,

“What is your name?”

“[Huzi](#).”

“You?”

“[Niuzi](#).”

“Good names!!”



Hu + Zi = Tiger cub, Niu + Zi = Calf.

## Chapter 295: Perverted World Spiritist

---

The one with the bowl cut was Niuzi, and the one with the crew cut was Huzi. They were two naive and pure children. They seriously answered Chu Feng's questions, but they could not understand why Chu Feng was madly laughing and could not stop after hearing Niuzi's name.

But that couldn't be blamed on Chu Feng. Niuzi's hair style truly looked like a calf's head and it suited his name. Even if Chu Feng did not want to laugh, he could not stop because that shape was truly a bit similar.

But laughs were laughs, and Chu Feng quickly suppressed his own emotions. He then gravely asked, "Huzi, Niuzi, you two first answer me. Why have you two come to a place such as this wild forest, which is so deep into the mountain?"

"Great God, we are here to save our younger sister!" The two children simultaneously replied despite having different mouths.

"Younger sister?" Chu Feng was thinking; if these two dolls were so young, how old would their younger sister be?

"Yeah, our younger sister has been taken away by a bad guy. We need to save her and get her back. Great God, we beg you, please take us in as your disciple and teach us the divine methods!" As they emotionally spoke, Huzi and Niuzi knelt down with a poof again.

“I can teach some abilities to your two, but before that, you need to tell me. Where has your younger sister been taken away to? Who was she taken away by?” Chu Feng solemnly inquired.

After some understanding, Chu Feng finally knew that Niuzi and Huzi were brothers. Niuzi was the eldest, being 9 years old this year; Huzi was the second oldest, being 7 years old this year; and they also had a younger sister, being 5 years old this year, and she was called [Niuniu](#).

Niu = girl.

The three siblings all lived within a mountain village inside of the Black Tortoise City's borders. Their village was extremely poor and they were simply isolated from the outside world. So, the children did not even know what martial cultivation was and their superstitions were in a complete mess. As they saw Chu Feng descend from the sky, they even thought that Chu Feng was a saint and that he used divine methods.

As for why Niuzi and Huzi kept on saying that they wanted to save Niuniu was because this morning, Niuniu was taken away by a group of people who wore golden armor. From what they said, she was taken into the Black Tortoise City. Not only was Niuniu herself brought away, all the little girls in the village were brought away.

“They must be the people from the Qilin Prince's Mansion. The Gong family has already been exterminated, so why are there people from the Qilin Prince's Mansion remaining in the Black Tortoise City? Is it possible that they did not choose a new clan to

manage the Black Tortoise City and they are personally managing it?”

“But why did the people from the Qilin Prince’s Mansion need to take a group of little girls who grew up from the village away?” At that instant, Chu Feng’s brows were tightly locked, yet he could not think of a reason. So, at the end, he decided to investigate it.

But before departing, he passed the cultivation methods down to Huzi and Niuzi and he also left some gold with them. He told them to return to their home to wait, and that he would very quickly send their younger sister back to them.

“Great God, thank you for passing down the divine methods to us. We will certainly dedicatedly cultivate them and we will not waste your expectations.” The two children knelt down to the ground once again, and with a full face of gratitude, they kowtowed to Chu Feng.

“Ho... These aren’t any divine methods. These are cultivation methods. As long as these methods can be grasped, the two of you can step onto the path of martial cultivation and become a martial cultivator.”

“Also, I am not any Great God. There are no Gods in this world, and even if there is a God, that God would undoubtedly only be some person who’s extremely strong.”

Chu Feng smiled and rubbed Niuzi’s and Huzi’s head, then carried them onto the White-headed Eagle. After sending them

back to the village, he changed his direction and hurried towards the Black Tortoise City.

After arriving in the Black Tortoise City, Chu Feng discovered that the area was actually how he thought it was. It was already occupied by the people from the Qilin Prince's Mansion.

A large number of the Qilin Prince's Mansion's troops already set up camp there and many powerful people from the Prince's Mansion were sent out as well. There were even several hundred people in the Profound realm. The place they set up camp was the most important part: The former residence of the Gong family.

“Is it possible that they discovered something?” Chu Feng wore the clothing of the Qilin Prince's Mansion and sneaked into the place where they set up camp.

After some looking around, Chu Feng discovered with excitement that the people from the Qilin Prince's Mansion truly did discover something in the Black Tortoise City. The thing that they discovered was the thing that Chu Feng wanted to find. The entrance to the Emperor Tomb in the Black Tortoise Mountain Range.

Before, when Chu Feng arrived at the Black Tortoise City, he did try to search around for the entrance to the Emperor Tomb. However, it was in vain as even with his abilities, he was completely helpless. He could not find anything, as if the entrance did not exist at all.

But he never would have thought that the entrance to the Emperor tomb was within the residence of the Gong family. Only after the Qilin Prince's Mansion annihilated the Gong family and destroyed their residences did they discover that there was a Spirit Formation entrance hidden underneath.

Although the Qilin Prince's Mansion did not know that it was an entrance to the Emperor Tomb, they still knew that it was a location of treasure. So, they sent a large number of people to occupy that location, and they even sent their Grey-cloak World Spiritist over. They wanted to open the entrance and take the treasure away.

As the Grey-cloak World Spiritist was mentioned, Chu Feng also found the reason why Niuniu and the other girls were taken here. They were sent to the location where the Grey-cloak World Spiritist lived at.

At that instant, red clouds lingered around the west horizon and night was going to descend at any time. The work that the Qilin Prince's Mansion did to open the Spirit Formation entrance also stopped.

Chu Feng, with the identity as a guard of the Qilin Prince's Mansion, searched for the residence of the Grey-cloak World Spiritist. With his sharp detection power, from quite afar, Chu Feng was able to hear the following voices of discussion from a tent where the heads of guards were in.

“This old thing. Every day, he orders us around like dogs, but after so many days, he can't even open a Spirit Formation

entrance.”

“Every day, this old pervert wants us to find some cute girls from the village outside of the Black Tortoise City for him to defile. I truly feel sinful after seeing so many little girls die because of that!”

“Shh, all of you quiet down. He’s a Grey-cloak World Spiritist and he has extremely strong detection power! If your words were heard by him, you would all be dead.” Several guard heads secretly murmured amongst themselves as they drank beer in a tent.

“Damn! The reason why they grabbed so many girls was for this reason?!” At that instant, Chu Feng who knew the truth clenched his fists from anger and blue vines kept on popping out.

Every day, he defiled a few little girls to death. If that wasn’t perverted, what was? Any person who had a bit of human nature would absolutely not be able to do that; yet the Qilin Prince’s Mansion, the ruler of the Azure Province had actually even helped someone do such wicked matters. There were simply no differences between that and demonic teachings! That caused Chu Feng to be endlessly furious and he was even more disappointed in the Qilin Prince’s Mansion.

Thinking to that point, Chu Feng couldn’t help quickening his sneaking speed. After a while of hurrying, he finally arrived at the residence of the Grey-cloak World Spiritist.

Since the Gong family’s residences already became rubble, their

residences were all tents. However, the tent that the Grey-cloak World Spiritist lived in was extremely big. Perhaps because he was going to do perverted things, he sent all the guards away.

Chu Feng carefully approached and he discovered that there was a hidden Spirit Formation laid outside of the tent. The methods could indeed only be done by Grey-cloak World Spiritists, but it was not difficult for Chu Feng.

Chu Feng very easily opened the Spirit Formation that the World Spiritist laid. Immediately after he opened the Spirit formation, Chu Feng's face instantly greatly changed and his flames of anger that he was forcibly holding down leaped out with a whoosh.

He was able to hear the sounds of several little girls within the tent. However, those were not innocent laughter containing no evils. They were miserable screams and helpless wailings.



# Chapter 296: Opening The Emperor Tomb

---

With a heart full of anger, Chu Feng dashed into the tent.

At that instant, he could clearly see that there were nine little girls inside the tent. They were not even ten years old, and most of them were even five or six years old.

Presently, some of those girls' clothes were taken off. As they wailed, they ran randomly in the tent and behind them, there was an old man who did not have a single thread on him, and he was currently ferociously and terrifyingly chasing after them.

The old man's appearance was called vulgar, and his smile was called lewd. As he chased after the little girls, he even yelled, "My little precious, don't run! I'll give you something good to eat!"

"God damn, are you even a person?"

Chu Feng was endlessly furious. He dashed forward and kicked the old man down to the ground. After that, he threw a huge fist towards his vulgar face.

"Ahh!" Chu Feng's punch was abnormally powerful and that old man kept on crying out in pain as he was hit. He no longer had his precious vulgar smile as he roared at Chu Feng, "Who are you? You dare to hit me? Ouch ouch oi! Stop hitting! Stop!!"

"Who am I? I am the person who will kill you." The more Chu

Feng heard him yell, the angrier he got. So, the following punches got stronger and stronger. He first indented the old man's nose, dislocated his chin, shattered his teeth, and at the end, forcibly split open his skull.

To avoid leaving any bigger shadows in the little girls' hearts, Chu Feng did not use any methods that were too bloody. After his anger was almost dispelled, he used Eggy's power to consume the old man while he was still alive.

After taking care of the Grey-cloak World Spiritist, Chu Feng turned his head to look towards the group of little girls. He discovered that at that instant, they were all standing where they were and using their watery big eyes to stare at himself. The fear from before still lingered around on their faces.

However, the gazes that they looked at Chu Feng with did not contain any fear, as if they knew that Chu Feng would not harm them and was helping them.

"All of you came from the village near the mountain?" Chu Feng opened his mouth to ask.

"Mm." The little girls nodded their heads at the same time and they were clearly very cute.

"Who is Niuniu?" Chu Feng swept towards the gazes of the little girls and he was full of expectation. He hoped that the girl called Niuniu survived, so at least he could give Niuzi and Huzi an explanation.

“I’m Niuniu.” Suddenly, a young, soft, and light voice rang out as a little girl stepped forward.

That girl had very simple clothing. Her roughly made cloth-clothing was full of patches, and from her pair of little shoes, one revealed two toes, and the other just simply revealed half a foot. But even so, the little girl was still unwilling to throw them out.

Even though the little girl wore quite tattered clothing, it was unable to affect her cuteness. Her innocent big eyes were like two shiny astrolabes without being tainted by a speck of dust. Especially the two tied little ponytails on her head. It pushed the girl’s cuteness to the extreme.

“You’re Niuniu?” Chu Feng went up and asked. His tense heart finally relaxed.

“Mm. Big brother, do you know me?” Niuniu replied with her pleasant to hear voice.

“I do. Now I know you don’t I? I was entrusted by your two elder brothers to come to pick you up.” Chu Feng smiled as he rubbed Niuniu’s little head. He discovered that the little girl was really quite likeable.

After that, with special methods, Chu Feng secretly brought the group of little girls out of the Black Tortoise City. Only then did he call the White-headed Eagle down and helped the group of little girls up.

“Little White, bring them back to the village that we went today.”

Chu Feng spoke to the White-headed Eagle. After hearing Chu Feng’s words, Little White also very intelligently nodded.

After seeing Little White’s performance, Chu Feng was very satisfied. That was why he liked Little White. Although he already grasped the Imperial Sky Technique, Chu Feng still liked to use Little White as his transportation tool. Not only did it save energy, Little White was also a competent assistant.

“Big brother, you aren’t coming along with us?” Suddenly, Niuniu’s voice rang out.

Turning his head back to look, Chu Feng discovered that all of the other little girls who sat on the White-headed Eagle were so scared that they didn’t even dare to raise their heads. They were laying on top of the White-headed Eagle and tightly grabbing onto the feathers on its back. They didn’t even dare to move.

But Niuniu was different. At that moment, she was courageously sitting on the neck location of the White-headed Eagle. She straightened her little waist and used her innocent big eyes to stare at Chu Feng.

“I have something to do so I can’t go along with all of you.” Chu Feng smiled, and then he also took out some gold from his Cosmos Sack. He stole them from the Black Tortoise City.

After handing the gold to Niuniu, Chu Feng also instructed her to give the gold to her parents to bring them quickly away from the village. He also instructed her to martial cultivate along with her elder brothers when she grew up.

Niuniu quite intelligently nodded and answered as she remembered all of Chu Feng's words in her heart. When Chu Feng prepared to send them away, she also asked, "Big brother, what is your name?"

After hearing that, Chu Feng hesitated a bit. He did not know if it was a good thing or bad thing to tell Niuniu his name, but after seeing her thirst for the answer in her eyes, Chu Feng still smiled and replied, "Chu Feng."

"Big Brother Chu Feng, I will always remember you." Niuniu sweetly smiled and said.

After sending Niuniu and the others off, Chu Feng hidden sneaked back into the residence of the perverted World Spiritist. He wore his World Spirit Cloak, and with the World Spiritist's name, while it was deep into the night, he gathered the army of the Qilin Prince's Mansion.

Chu Feng wanted to open the entrance of the Emperor Tomb to search for the treasures within, but he also knew that it was extremely dangerous inside of the Emperor Tomb. With the strength of a single person, the difficulty was immense. So, since there were so many people from the Qilin Prince's Mansion,

naturally, he would not use them for nothing. He prepared to use them to open the Emperor Tomb. Even if there was danger, he would let them go first to be sacrificed first.

Even if the people here all died, Chu Feng would not mind it in the slightest in his heart because the people from the Qilin Prince's Mansion who were sent over this time were all from the Lin clan. Chu Feng had never had a single good impression towards the Lin clan, so he was itching for all of them to die.

However, since Chu Feng suddenly gathered the army of the Qilin Prince's Mansion together when it was deep into the night to open the Spirit Formation entrance, that caused many people to be displeased.

As Chu Feng was laying a formation, some people started to whisper to one another as they hiddenly complained.

“What insanity is this old pervert doing again to call us out at such a late time...”

“Who knows? Perhaps he defiled a few little girls to death, and since he's bored, he has come to torture us.”

“Damn. He is truly a pervert. Why is our Qilin Prince's Mansion supporting such a monster?”

“Shh, be a bit quieter. Our Lin clan needs to rely on him to stabilize our position in the Prince's Mansion. We must treat him

carefully.”

Chu Feng did not care about the people’s discussions because even if the people were cursing, they were not cursing him but the old pervert.

After diligently laying, Chu Feng’s super strong deciphering formation was finally completed under Eggy’s instructions, and at that instant, it already started to revolve around.

The big formation opened, and the light turned and flowed like tomorrow’s sun. It lit up the entire land. Especially the strange symbols. They were as though they had life and they kept on searching for the sealed Spirit Formation entrance.

“Look, the old pervert’s Spirit Formation that he laid this time seems to be different. It is quite unexpectedly pretty.” Currently, many people sighed in admiration.

“Tch. It is only false show. From what I see, he is not even able to open this Spirit Formation entrance. If he could, why didn’t he open it sooner? What would his reason be to wait so long?” But some people also felt that the Spirit Formation entrance could not be opened.

hmm

But just at that time, the light from the Spirit Formation suddenly shrunk and following that, like spring water that flowed

backwards, it surged into the entrance of the Spirit Formation. The originally shut Spirit Formation, at that moment, became a huge black hole.

At that instant, every single person was dumbfounded as they said with incomparable shock, “It actually opened!!”



## Chapter 297: Illusion Formation

---

The entrance to the Emperor Tomb had already been opened. Not to mention the others, even Chu Feng was incomparably excited.

It was because no one knew what danger was within it. However, they looked very forward to what treasures and opportunities were within it.

At that instant, everyone cast their gazes towards Chu Feng and awaited the commander's orders to allow them to enter and to find the long-awaited treasures.

whoosh Seeing that, Chu Feng did not speak since he did not want to learn the vulgar voice of the perverted World Spiritist. So, he slightly raised his arm, then suddenly dropped it down.

“Enter!!!”

After Chu Feng's orders, the army of the Qilin Prince's Mansion all rushed into the entrance of the Emperor Tomb at once.

It had to be said that the army of the Qilin Prince's Mansion was truly well trained. They used all sorts of tools to their best, and the originally dark entrance was lit up by their torches.

Under such organized entry method, the elite group of several thousands of people very quickly entered the Emperor Tomb. In

front of them was a vast and deep cave.

After entering that place, everyone became careful. Not a single person moved by themselves, and they completely followed Chu Feng's forwarding orders.

“Chu Feng, this Emperor Tomb entrance is completely undamaged so it is very possible that we are the first people to enter this place. You must be several times more cautious because the mechanisms here are completely undamaged as well. If they get activated, they will certainly go towards all of you.” Eggy gravely reminded after going forward for a while.

Chu Feng also discovered that the area was different. It was overly big. After walking forward for several hours, they still did not reach the end. The more they walked, the wider the place got. At the end, it was as if they walked into an underground world which had no ends or borders. Chu Feng could only rely on the World Spirit Compass to determine which way to go. However, Chu Feng did not know that it was merely the beginning.

As Chu Feng and the others walked like that, it was as though they walked into an unfathomable world. They were very alert and they moved as if they were going to set up camp after every step. They continued forward in the humongous world. Time passed bit by bit, and slowly, even the well-trained army of the Qilin Prince's Mansion could not avoid feeling some despair. They were thinking, Will this underground world never end?

However, luckily, change appeared on the tenth day that they entered that place. In the vast cave world, light appeared in front

of them. It was a huge city.

White-coloured rock walls, exquisite palaces, tall and big city walls, broad big gates. A city like that appeared in the underground world at that moment.

At that instant, everyone was abnormally excited. Who created such a city in the vast underground world? What kind of person lived in there? Or were there treasures hidden?

Thinking to that point, everyone could no longer control their excited emotions. Striding forward, they charged towards the city because after ten days of endless hurrying, the city was like sunlight from the rising sun, and it allowed people to see hope.

But when the thousands of people surged into the city, Chu Feng was tightly frowning. He kept on feeling that the city was very strange, yet he could not say which part was off. As he saw so many people stepping into the city yet nothing happening to them, at the end, Chu Feng also decided to enter the city to take a look.

However, immediately after he stepped into the city, Chu Feng felt that something was off. He found out as he was astounded that fog filled the city and he could not even see the path forward.

It was even scarily silent. The people who surged into the castle city all disappeared. Not even a single shadow remained, yet he could clearly hear their footsteps. The most important thing was that after Chu Feng turned his head around to look, he discovered that there was no road back. Surrounding him in all directions was

fog.

“Dammit, this is a Spirit Formation.”

Chu Feng hiddenly cursed because the Spirit Formation was too strong. With Chu Feng’s Spirit power, he had actually not been able to detect that it was a formation and its detection thought that this was truly only a city.

“Ahh~~~~~”

“Help~~~~~”

“Ahh~~~~~””

“No! Don’t come close to me! Ahh~~~~~”

At that moment, in front of Chu Feng, all sorts of heart-tearing and lung-splitting miserable cries endlessly rang out. Without even thinking, Chu Feng knew that certainly, something bad happened to the guards of the Prince’s Mansion.

The painful cries of misery rang out for a long time. Chu Feng listened in detail, and after the never-ending cries stopped, Chu Feng got a frightening result.

The number of miserable cries that rang out just now was exactly the same as the number of guards. Which also meant that all the

people who came here, other than him, very possibly met a situation that they did not expect.

“Eggy, what should I do? In this Spirit Formation, I can’t feel anything. I can’t even find the road back.” The current Chu Feng was able to feel the bursts of bone-piercing chilliness. It was not simple chilliness. It was the aura of death. The aura of death was currently approaching and consuming his body. That caused him to feel some panic as he hurriedly asked Eggy for help.

“Don’t worry. If I haven’t guessed incorrectly, this isn’t a simple Spirit Formation. It seems more like an Illusion Formation.” Eggy said.

“Illusion Formation? What does that mean?” Chu Feng quickly asked.

“It means that if you want to pass through this formation, the Spirit Formation techniques that you currently grasp cannot decipher it.”

“In this formation, you will create illusions. Those illusions will oppress your mind. If you can resist that oppression, you will be able see through everything in front of your eyes, escape the fog that is surrounding you, and leave this place.”

“However, if you cannot fight against the mind oppression, you will become the same as the people before, and you will die here.” Eggy explained.

“Then what should I do? Why haven’t I created any illusions yet?” Chu Feng felt confused.

“Feng-er.” But just at that time, suddenly, a call rang out from the fog.

After hearing that voice, Chu Feng’s body couldn’t help but tremble because that voice was so familiar. When he cast his gaze towards the origin of the voice, even he could not avoid being shocked.

At that place, dozens of figures were gradually nearing and they were all familiar faces. They were the people from the Chu family. They were the dead Chu family members, and the one who led them was Chu Feng’s father.

“Father! Why are all of you here!” As he saw his own father, Chu Feng was so emotional that hot tears filled his eye socket. Without thinking about anything, he rushed towards him.

“Chu Feng, don’t go! It’s an illusion.” But just at that time, Eggy’s voice rang out in Chu Feng’s brain.

“Illusion?” Chu Feng was suddenly alarmed. When he looked back at this father, he astonishedly discovered that his father and the other Chu family members were holding sharp blades in their hands and oppressed their way towards Chu Feng. Their speed and strength belonged to the peak of the Profound realm.

whoosh whoosh whoosh As he faced his former family's attacks, Chu Feng really did not know what to do. With Eggy's power, as he dodged, he asked, "Father, is that you? Stop! I'm Chu Feng!"

"You idiot. I already told you that it's an illusion! You are still asking? Don't hesitate and quickly kill them, or else with their power, they will become stronger along with your muddy consciousness!" Eggy strictly warned.

# Chapter 298: Black Tortoise Armor Technique

---

“No, I can’t do it.” It was as if Chu Feng sank into a strange loop. Even though Eggy was constantly reminding him, even though he knew it himself that the sight in front of his eyes was only an illusion, when he needed to personally kill his family, he could not cold his heart, and he could not attack.

“Idiot! It is an illusion and it is not your family. If you don’t kill them, they will kill you. Are you going to die here? Are you going to be like those people and be trapped to death in this formation? Are you aware of this?!” Eggy anxiously howled because she felt that Chu Feng’s mind was confused by the Illusion Formation.

“I...” After hearing Eggy’s howl, Chu Feng first hesitated a bit, but ultimately, he came to his senses. He grinded his teeth, then loudly yelled, “No! I cannot die here. You damned illusions, go die!”

After speaking, Chu Feng stopped his steps of escape and he closed his eyes. He used the Blade of the Void Dragon’s Cry and the strong pressure descended from the sky. The dozens of illusions were suppressed and they could not even move as they were almost going to be forcefully crushed.

“Feng-er, don’t! Quickly stop. I’m your father!”

“Feng-er, I’m your grandfather! Don’t do this!” But at that instant, the illusions that were previously aggressive had actually



started to call Chu Feng's name.

However, not only did Chu Feng who had already set his resolution no longer pay attention to them, he even increased the strength of the Blade of the Void Dragon's Cry. Finally, the dozens of illusions were forcibly crushed to death alive.

“Success?” After feeling that it had calmed down, Chu Feng slowly opened his eyes. But when he scanned his gaze around, his expression couldn't help but be petrified and his eyes instantly changed greatly.

He horrifyingly discovered that the illusions did not disappear. Around him, there were dozens of corpses. The corpses belonged to his father and the other Chu family members.

Their death were very wretched as they were all crushed to death. For the lighter deaths, he could still determine who was who. But for the more serious deaths, they already became pools of blood and their faces could not even be differentiated.

poof

At that instant, Chu Feng was stupefied as he powerlessly knelt onto the ground. He already used his Spirit power to detect it, and he discovered that the corpses were real. There were even the auras of his family remaining on the bodies. He had actually, personally, murdered his own family.

“I did this? I personally killed my father, killed my grandfather, killed my first uncle, killed my second uncle...” Chu Feng grabbed his head with both of his hands and his eyes were flickering. At that instant, he went just slightly mad. His mind neared collapse and his expression of wishing to die from the pain of sorrow hung on his face.

“Chu Feng, what are you doing? These are only illusions. Illusions!” Seeing that, Eggy quickly tried to remind Chu Feng.

“No. They are not illusions. That’s my father. My family! I can feel their auras and they were not originally dead, but I just personally killed all of them!”

“You are foolish! That is what an illusion is. Because you can’t fight against the power of the formation, that is why you can’t determine whether they are real or fake. Your Spirit power already stopped working here.”

“Chu Feng, be strong. This is like a demon in your heart. It is a burden you cannot let go. This illusion grabbed exactly onto your weakness, so that is why it created their appearances.”

“You must persevere and believe in yourself. Believe that you are correct. They are illusions, and everything is fake. As long as you can preserve, you can dispel that demon. You can clear your conscience and carry no more burdens.” Eggy’s voice kept on ringing in Chu Feng’s ears and it was like a lamp that gave directions. It led Chu Feng down to the path of survival.

As Eggy kept on reminding, Chu Feng's mind finally started to slowly clear up. He started to believe in Eggy's words and started to believe in himself. He no longer escaped, and he looked straight at the corpses. He looked straight at his father's corpse.

hmm As Chu Feng looked at it directly, the corpses started to turn illusory. The blood disappeared, the corpse disappeared, and at the end, the illusion completely disappeared.

At that very instant, Chu Feng was finally able to look squarely at everything around him. He discovered that he was still in the fog, but the feeling when compared to before was completely different because he already knew the method to conquer the Illusion Formation.

“Eggy, thank you. If you weren't here, I'm afraid that I wouldn't have passed this challenging stage.” Chu Feng wiped the cold sweat on his forehead while feeling some lingering fear.

“What are you thanking for? There's no need for that, after all, it cannot be blamed on you. It can only be said that the Illusion Formation is too strong and too real. It was able to trick one's soul and no one would have been able to determine that it was fake at the start.”

“It attacks one's heart with emotions, because no matter if it is familial feeling or love, it allows people to ignore their own safety, and it can also let people lose their reason.”

“But I believe that even without me, you would have certainly

been able to overcome that obstacle and dispel your heart's demon and let it go." Eggy sweetly smiled and her spirited voice was extremely pleasant to listen to. The most important part was that as Chu Feng listened, his heart became warm

"Not bad. Not bad talent." But suddenly, a deep and aged voice rang out. It suddenly rang out behind Chu Feng.

After the voice rang out, Chu Feng's body couldn't help but quiver because at the same time, he felt an extremely strong oppression feeling behind his back.

When he turned his head to look, Chu Feng shockingly discovered that there were two pairs of blood-red eyes behind him. Within the four blood-like eyes, two of them were as big as a lantern, and the other two were even as big as two lanterns.

Although the blood-red eyes did not emanate any killing intent, Chu Feng was still unceasingly frightened as he looked at that. His Spirit power did not work in that location, so he had no way of detecting what the owner of the pairs of blood-red eyes was. But he knew that it was certainly a very strong existence.

"Child, what is your name?" The deep voice rang out again, and it was as loud and clear as a copper bell.

"I am Chu Feng. Senior, I wonder what your grand name is?" Chu Feng respectfully replied.

“I am the Black Tortoise Armor Technique. Boy, your luck is quite nice. Not only were you able to find this place, you were also able to fight against the Illusion Formation. At least you have some potential.”

“As long as you can help me one thing, I will consider passing my ability down to you. But I only wonder if you are willing to help or not?”

After hearing those words, Chu Feng’s heart was instantly in endless mad joy. The Black Tortoise Armor Technique also called itself as “[Ben Zun](#)”. The similar tone and the similar name already allowed Chu Feng to guess what it was. It was very possible that it was another Secret Skill hidden within the Emperor Tomb.

“Ben Zun” replaces “I” and it is a way to name oneself when they are of some higher being.

Thinking to that point, how could Chu Feng dare to hesitate? He quickly replied, “Senior, please give me your orders. As long as I can do it, I will do my best.”

“Haha, you smart little child. It seems that you know what I am. I feel a familiar aura within your body...I never would have thought that the White Tiger, that proud guy, would actually serve you!”

# Chapter 299: Ancient Castle Exploration

---

After hearing those words, Chu Feng couldn't help but be taken aback. He never would have thought that it was able to feel the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique that was in his body.

“Haha, you don't need to worry. I won't be as proud as that guy. I don't mind recognize the same master, but if you want to receive my ability, I still need to test your courage.” The Black Tortoise Armor Technique said.

“Test in what way?” Chu Feng quickly asked.

“Follow this place and go straight forward. There is an ancient stone castle there. Deep within the stone castle, there is a box that is sealed. Bring that box to me, then I'll pass my ability down to you.”

“Of course, it won't be that easy if you want to take that box. You have a ten hours limit. If you can't do it, that can only mean that you and I aren't fated for one another. Hahaha...”

Suddenly, the Black Tortoise Armor Technique strangely laughed loudly, and as he laughed, the fog that surrounded Chu Feng also backed away. When the fog completely disappeared, Chu Feng also returned to the vast cave world. However, the Black Tortoise Armor Technique already disappeared and could not be seen.

“Senior, is there something protecting it? Or does that mean that there is some mechanism?” Chu Feng quickly and loudly asked,

but it was useless as after the Black Tortoise Armor Technique left, it did not return. It was as if it completely disappeared and it did not leave a single trace.

At that instant, Chu Feng couldn't help but cast his gaze towards the direction that the Black Tortoise Armor Technique said to go towards. There was a tunnel made out of the cave rocks. It was quite similar to the tunnels at the Emperor Tomb entrance underneath the Vermilion Bird City.

Chu Feng did not hesitate as he took out the World Spirit Compass again and walked forward. He was truly powerless towards the attraction of a Secret Skill.

“Chu Feng, I feel like that Secret Skill is tricking you.” But just at that time Eggy solemnly reminded.

“Eggy, what do you mean?” Chu Feng asked.

“I feel like that Secret Skill is cunning. It would not pass its ability down to you in such a simple manner. Putting aside that the thing it told you to get is very difficult to obtain, even if you got it, it would not necessarily recognize you as its master. Perhaps it would even consume you.” Eggy reminded.

“Really? What benefits does it gain from using me like that?” Chu Feng was a bit confused.

“That's simple. The reason why it is staying here is very likely

because it is stuck here. The thing that it wants you to take can possibly be the thing that can recover its freedom.”

“You need to know that Secret Skills are very prideful. Unless it is an extremely powerful person, they would not be willing to submit. So, that causes some Secret Skills to not choose another master after it left its first master.”

“So, with a body of freedom, it wanders around the world. Unless it meets a super strong expert who forces them into submission, they will not serve any other person.”

“The Secret Skill just now said it was different than the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique. It intentionally said that it was not proud, but that causes it to be more suspicious in concealing its pride. All in all, I feel that it will not easily serve you, and rather, it seems to be using you.” Eggy explained.

“Indeed, the good things that is in range of touching will always cause people to doubt. However, right now, I don’t even have another choice. Besides, what I’m currently afraid of is that the box it wants me to take won’t be so easily taken.” Chu Feng already walked into the huge cave tunnel. In front of him, densely packed huge symbols also appeared.

“These are Anti-Demon Symbols! Is it possible that there is also an Evil Spirit here guarding?” At that instant, even Eggy could not remain calm. Anti-Demon Symbols were used to restrict Evil Spirits, and those who were able to become Evil Spirits required at least the cultivation of the Heaven realm. It was not something that Chu Feng could fight against.



“It seems like the Black Tortoise Armor Technique has really given me a difficult task.” Chu Feng bitterly chuckled and he couldn’t avoid becoming more careful. However, he did not stop his steps forward as he did not want to waste the time of ten hours.

After two hours of hurrying, the cave tunnel also started to become huge and the Anti-Demon Symbols also gathered more closely. Which also meant that Chu Feng was getting closer and closer to that Evil Spirit.

Finally, after two more hours of walking, the Anti-Demon Symbols disappeared and a huge old castle appeared in front of Chu Feng. The old castle’s shape was like a human skull. It was sinister and scary, and it gave people an extremely eerie feeling.

In order to not attract attention, Chu Feng had no choice but to put away the World Spirit Compass and to conceal his aura. Carefully, he went into the entrance that was like a mouth.

“Chu Feng, listen to me. With your current strength, if you meet an Evil Spirit, you will, without a doubt, die. Evil Spirits grasp the power of Spirit Formations, and despite having no Spirit power, if it locks onto you, escape is pretty much impossible.”

“So, if you meet an Evil Spirit, you must let me control your body or else both you and I will die by the Evil Spirit’s mouth. If consumed by it, not only you, even I will certainly die. We will be absorbed and refined like Source energy and we will disappear completely and thoroughly.” Eggy gravely reminded.

“Mm.”

Chu Feng nodded his head. He had seen an Evil Spirit before and he knew the scariness of things like them. It was exactly as how Eggy said it was. They were not something that he could fight against. These were not times to fake strength, so when the time came, he would do what he needed to do.

He would allow Eggy to control his body. Even if Eggy would receive a huge burden, as long as they could survive, at least he had methods to help Eggy recover. But if they were dead, it meant that they had nothing.

After the decision, Chu Feng continued deeper into the ancient castle. The deeper he went, the more Chu Feng felt disturbed. He astonishedly discovered that there was only a single tunnel in the ancient castle. To avoid being discovered by the Evil Spirit, Chu Feng did not dare to use his Spirit power for detection.

Chu Feng was forced into being passive under those situations. But he had no choice. He could only continue straight forward, and finally, Chu Feng reached the end. At the end, a vast main hall appeared in front of Chu Feng's face.

The style of the main hall could be described with one word: Strange. Uneasiness seeped everywhere as if a terrifying Evil Spirit could appear in front of Chu Feng at any time.

But Chu Feng did not have time to think about those things

because his current gaze was already attracted to a huge chair at the end since there was an odd box on the chair.

The box was very big and its shape was very strange. It seemed quite like a coffin, but that coffin had thousands of holes and it was ten times the size of normal coffins.

“Dammit. There’s a Spirit Formation on this chair.” Seeing that the Evil Spirit was not inside of the ancient castle, Chu Feng quickly arrived in front of the huge chair. But he discovered that outside of the chair, there was a very impressive layer of protective Spirit Formation laid.

“Don’t panic. With the Spirit Formation techniques that you currently grasp, you should be able to decipher it. But no one knows when the Evil Spirit will return so you need to be quick.” Eggy reminded.

“Mm, I can only do that.” Chu Feng gnashed his teeth. To gain the Secret Skill, Chu Feng could only risk the danger of being caught by the Evil Spirit at any time to decipher the Spirit Formation on the huge chair.

However, the more he deciphered, the more Chu Feng felt troubled. He felt that there was a pair of eyes staring behind his back, yet when he turned around to look, there was clearly nothing there.

# Chapter 300: Evil Spirit Recognizing Its Master

---

Within the eerie ancient castle, while embracing uneasy emotions, Chu Feng was nervously deciphering the chair's Spirit Formation. Finally, after a full four hours of deciphering, Chu Feng finally opened the Spirit Formation.

At that instant, Chu Feng was drenched with sweat and even his clothes were soaked. He was truly nervous to the extreme. The four hours were certainly the hardest times for him to bear because he did not know when the scary Evil Spirit would appear and seal him within the main hall.

But luckily, he finally succeeded. When he successfully opened the Spirit Formation, the coffin-like strange box could be touched by Chu Feng.

But Chu Feng did not lose his rationality because of excitement. He first used his Spirit power to carefully observe the strange box, and after he discovered that they were no abnormalities, he extended his hand to grab it and he wanted to carry the box away.

hmm

But before even letting Chu Feng approach it, dazzling light was emitted from the box. At the same time, an extremely terrifying aura was seeping out of the box.

“Chu Feng, run! There’s an Evil Spirit inside this box!” Suddenly, Eggy tensely yelled.

“What? Evil Spirit? How is there an Evil Spirit here?” Chu Feng was first taken aback, then after that, he suddenly realized something and he cursed greatly in his heart, “Damn! I’ve been tricked!!”

Chu Feng had already reacted to the situation. He knew that there was always an Evil Spirit in the ancient castle. However, the Evil Spirit was imprisoned in the coffin-like box, and just now, he spent a full four hours for nothing else but thinking of ways to release the Evil Spirit that he was most worried and terrified about.

The thing that Chu Feng was most helpless towards was that he had actually succeeded. He succeeded in releasing the sealed Evil Spirit. Obviously, he was played around by the damned Black Tortoise Armor Technique.

But being angry was being angry and Chu Feng’s steps could not hesitate. He already used the Imperial Sky Technique to the extreme and he went in large strides as he escaped towards the outside of the ancient castle for his life.

“Haha, I’m released! Finally, I’m free! I never would have thought that there would be such a delicious human for me to enjoy just as I get out. The Gods treat me quite well! Hahaha~~~”

As Chu Feng was running away, abnormally sinister laughter also

rang out from behind Chu Feng. Simultaneously, a wave of extremely huge aura oppressed towards Chu Feng with unimaginable speed.

“Chu Feng, quick! Hand your body over to me and let me bring you away from this place!” Eggy restlessly yelled.

But it was too late. Before Chu Feng was able to react to that, he was pressed to the ground by a wave of even stronger aura. When he put all he had into raising his head, he discovered that a frightening monster was standing in front of him and staring at him.

It was a human-shaped monster. However, it was like a giant. It was fifteen meters tall, with a pair of eyes even bigger than Chu Feng. Its face was abnormally sinister as well. The empty pair of eyes, sharp teeth, and red-coloured gas that circulated around his body all told Chu Feng that it was not a person, but an Evil Spirit.

“Dammit. So this is the power of an Evil Spirit? Even my Spirit power has been sealed and my connection with Eggy seems like it has been cut and I can’t give my body to Eggy anymore.” Chu Feng tightly frowned. In his entire life up until now, it was the first time that he faced such a terrifying opponent.

With purely unique pressure, it sealed everything that Chu Feng had. Cultivation. Spirit power. He was even unable to communicate with Eggy. That caused Chu Feng to experience a certain type of feeling. The feeling of despair.

“Heh. You’ve become a Grey-cloak World Spiritist at such a young age huh? You do have quite some methods.”

“Boy, don’t be afraid. When I eat you, I won’t let you feel any pain.” The voice of the Evil Spirit was extremely horrifying. It was truly like a devil. Just by listening to its voice, it caused chills to go down Chu Feng’s spine.

“You want to eat him? You are not qualified!” But just at that time, a deep and ancient voice suddenly rang out. After that voice rang out, even the huge ancient castle trembled.

“Who?” Following the sounding out of the voice, even the Evil Spirit’s expression changed greatly. It couldn’t help casting its fierce gaze towards the direction of the entrance.

At that instant, Chu Feng could clearly feel the earth shaking underneath him. Once. Twice. Thrice. Four times. Those were sounds of footsteps, but what power could cause the land to shake like that with every step?

Under that situation, even the Evil Spirit became uneasy. It hurriedly grabbed with its big hand and squeezed Chu Feng into its palm. It actually wanted to take Chu Feng as an arrow-blocking shield.

At the same time, the heavy steps came nearer and nearer and Chu Feng was able to see four blood-red eyes appear in the direction of the entrance.

“It is possible that it’s it?” Chu Feng felt surprise because he already recognized the four blood-red eyes.

Following the appearance of the blood-red eyes was a large area of fog. It caused Chu Feng to be unable to see its original body, but he had to admit that the aura it emanated was even more terrifying than the Evil Spirit who was holding Chu Feng in its hand.

“Who are you? Why have you intruded into my territory?” Seeing that, even the Evil Spirit became timid. As it spoke, it backed away and shrunk.

Just at that time, the fog finally retreated and a ginormous thing appeared in front of Chu Feng and the Evil Spirit.

However, the ginormous thing had a very strange appearance. It was like a huge turtle, and sharp thorns filled the top of the turtle shell. But the most important thing was that on top of the huge turtle, there was even an abnormally scary big snake coiled around.

The big snake and the turtle shared a single body. Two pairs of blood-red eyes were staring at Chu Feng and the Evil Spirit. The special monster was clearly, without a doubt, the Black Tortoise Armor Technique.

“You don’t even recognize me?” The Black Tortoise Armor Technique disdainfully looked at the Evil Spirit.



“It’s...It’s..It’s you! You’re from that time!!” At that instant, the Evil Spirit had a full face of terror. Even though it had a very sinister face, its expression of fear could still be seen.

poof Suddenly, the Evil Spirit had actually knelt onto the ground and started to beg towards the Black Tortoise Armor Technique. It even said with a tone of plead, “Milord, I did not know that you have come here. I offended much before. Please forgive me!”

“Do you want to live or do you want to die?” The Black Tortoise Armor Technique asked.

“Live. Of course I want to live.” The Evil Spirit replied pettily.

“If you want to live, that’s simple. Open your eyes, you dog, and look carefully. From now on, he is your master. When you guard here, you do not allow any other person to pass through this place other than him. As for him, not only do you need to let him pass, you also need to listen to his commands.” The Black Tortoise Armor Technique pointed at Chu Feng and said.

Seeing that, the Evil Spirit did not dare to have a single trace of disrespect. It hurriedly put Chu Feng who was in its hand back to the ground then spoke to Chu Feng with a respectful tone, “Your subordinate pays its respects to master!”

# Chapter 301: Untouchable

---

“Mm. At least you understand something.”

“However, I hope that you can do what you have said. Or else, you will know what the consequences are.”

“Obediently guard here. Wait for the time when your master needs you, then just do your duty.”

The Black Tortoise Armor Technique coldly looked at the Evil Spirit, then a large amount of fog surged out of its body, engulfed Chu Feng, and then, the two of them disappeared.

Only the Evil Spirit was left as it stared at where the Black Tortoise Armor Technique stood before with a panicked expression. After a while, it slowly closed its eyes. At that instant, its thoughts floated towards its distant memories.

Time had passed for too long, and it did not remember how many years or months the thing happened for. It only remembered that under the command of several evil World Spiritists, the army made out of Evil Spirits caused chaos in a certain land and plundered resources everywhere.

Mountain ranges were stamped flat. Rivers were evaporated dry. Flames of battle were everywhere. Their army had always done what they wished to and there was no one who could have stopped them. Not an inch of grass grew from the places that they had passed by. All life that they saw were slaughtered.

However, they, who caused people to be fearful just by hearing their name, who caused the colour of people's faces to change when mentioned, who almost completely destroyed an extremely powerful continent, was defeated by a male.

Because the distance was too far, it did not see the appearance of the male clearly. It only remembered that with a single strike, he completely crushed their army. With a glance, it killed the evil World Spiritists who commanded them.

That male was so strong that it was indescribable. In the created world, he no longer seemed like a person. He seemed more like a God.

Also, beside the male, there were also four ruthless and strong monsters. The Black Tortoise Armor Technique was one of them.

“Huu~” Suddenly, then Evil Spirit sighed and gave up the thought of recovering its own freedom. It obediently returned deep into the ancient castle because it did not dare to not follow the orders of the Black Tortoise Armor Technique.

At the same time, Chu Feng only felt that his body was floating in mid-air, seeming to be quickly shifting. When both of his feet landed on the ground and as the fog dissipated, he astonishedly discovered that he returned to the area where the Illusion Formation was earlier and the Black Tortoise Armor Technique was also currently staring at him. The journey that required four hours for him was finished by the Black Tortoise Armor Technique

in an instant.

“Senior, you...” At that instant, Chu Feng had a stomach full of questions, yet he did not know where to start asking.

“You must be very curious as for why I let you release the Evil Spirit right?” The Black Tortoise Armor Technique smiled and said.

“Mm.” Chu Feng fiercely nodded his head.

“Ho...That’s just a small question. Compared to that, I’m guessing that you must be more curious what treasures are hidden in this place.”

“Senior, is it possible that you know what is hidden here?” Seeing that, Chu Feng hurriedly and closely asked.

“Haha, of course! Everything here was left behind by my former master. Everything here was personally created and laid by him.”

“But sadly, I will not tell you because we promised him to not tell anyone about the secrets buried here.” The Black Tortoise Armor Technique smirked and said.

That caused Chu Feng to be extremely speechless and he felt some insulting urges. He thought in his heart, If you’re not going to tell me, why did you still ask whether I want to know it or not? Isn’t that the same as playing around with someone?

Seeming to see Chu Feng's helplessness, the Black Tortoise Armor Technique smiled and added, "However, I can tell you that the treasure hidden here is an extremely strong treasure. It is a treasure that can cause a person to go mad, it can cause disputes in a family, it can cause lovers to kill one another, it can cause rains of blood and winds of stench, and it can even devastate this land here."

"As for you, the current you, don't have the qualifications to go even near the treasure. So, even if I tell you what it is, it would be useless."

"But you're very lucky. Lucky that you met me because more or less, I will help you out. For example, the Evil Spirit just now. Although it is only a watchdog that is located in the outermost circle, if it can be used by you, in the future, when you step into this place again, it will at least help you a bit."

"But sadly, after leaving my master's body, my strength has already decreased greatly. Right now, I exist only in name. I can scare some little minion like the one just now, but the guardians deeper in will not listen to my command. So, if you want to get the deepest treasure, you will still need to rely on yourself."

After hearing the Black Tortoise Armor Technique's words, Chu Feng was shocked in his heart. If such a powerful Black Tortoise Armor Technique could not even command the guardians, how powerful would they be?

If the Evil Spirit, who was able to pressure him to the point of suffocation and able to even cut off the connection between him and Eggy, was only a little minion, how terrifying would the existence of not a little minion be?

At that instant, Chu Feng was completely stunned. He realized for the first time that he was so weak. Even if he was a character who could shake the earth in the Azure Province and even if he was a monster in people's eyes, when facing a real powerful person, he was not even a single ant. At most, he was only an insignificant speck of dust.

At that moment, Chu Feng was truly curious. Who was the master of this place? What realm did he step into in order to be so powerful? Was it truly the Martial Emperor realm that Eggy said it was?

However, for he who did not even step into the Profound realm, how much time did he need to enter the Martial Emperor realm which was like a legend?

At that instant, Chu Feng self-deprecatingly discovered that his talent which he was so proud of, the god-like speed of improvement and breaking through, the battle power that surpassed levels, really wasn't much.

Because if he only relied on those, perhaps in his entire life, he would not be able to touch the Martial Emperor realm. He was a monster in other people's eyes, but if he was looked at by real geniuses, he was only a mediocre person. For example, the purple-clothed female who was even younger than him.

The world was so big and the continent of the Nine Provinces was merely a corner of an iceberg. It was quite difficult for Chu Feng to imagine how many geniuses were growing in the boundless and borderless world. And as for him, he did not truly step onto the wide stage. So, he had to become stronger. He had to become stronger and stronger.

“Although whether you gain the treasure in this place will still depend on yourself, I will still do what I can to help you. Right now, the biggest help that I can give you is to pass my ability down to you.” The Black Tortoise Armor Technique’s expression suddenly turned serious.

Following that, its body had started to become illusionary like how the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique looked like as he became a body of fog-like illusion in the White Tiger Mountain Range. It actually and truly wanted to be attached to Chu Feng’s body in order to hand its power over for Chu Feng to use.

“But senior, you are not related to me in any way, so why are you helping me like this?” That was the biggest question mark in Chu Feng’s heart.

“I have my reasons for helping you, like why the White Tiger chose you. Our reason is the same, and as for what this reason is, in the future, you will naturally unveil it.”

Suddenly, the illusionary Black Tortoise Armor Technique pounced towards Chu Feng and it was entering Chu Feng’s body.

At the same time, a large amount of information was also starting to gather in Chu Feng's brain.



## Chapter 302: Indescribable Uneasiness

---

Along with bursts of pricking pain, the cloud-like gas was rolling and surging around and like waves, it drilled into Chu Feng's body. Large amounts of information also started to appear in Chu Feng's brain. That let Chu Feng understand the impressiveness of the Black Tortoise Armor Technique.

If it was said that the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique was the strongest attacking method, the Black Tortoise Armor Technique would be the strongest defense method. Its defense method was not only indestructible armor.

If Chu Feng could completely grasp it, he could even create mist that would be able to meddle around with one's mind and from that, cause his opponent to die. Even if he could not kill the opponent, he could still disturb them in battle and greatly reduce their battle power. That was the wonderful area of the Black Tortoise Armor Technique.

At the same time, the deep and ancient voice of the Black Tortoise Armor Technique also kept on sounding out next to Chu Feng's ear,

“Chu Feng, listen up. Normal people cannot get the treasure in this place. So, no need to be afraid of spreading the secret here because the people who can get the treasure are less within less. The guardians here and the obstructions here can separate people away from the treasure.”

“Thus, do not aim for some quick achievements or short benefits. Before having a certain strength, don’t rashly enter this place. If you want to know why the White Tiger and I chose you, go find our two other old friends and make them be willing to serve you. At that time, the secret about us will naturally be revealed...I hope that we have not chosen the wrong person...”

The voice of the Black Tortoise Armor Technique became quieter and quieter. At the end, along with the disappearance of its voice, the fog lingering in front of Chu Feng’s body also disappeared. Also, he left a mystery that Chu Feng had to unravel himself.

“So it turns out that there is some special reason why the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique and the Black Tortoise Armor Technique chose me huh? Their two old friends should be the two other Secret Skills right? So indeed, there’s a Secret Skill at every single entrance?” Chu Feng stood where he was and his thoughts were unstable.

“What other reason can there be? Clearly, they saw your potential or else the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique and the Secret Skill hidden in the Azure Dragon Mountain Range wouldn’t have chosen you rather than another master.”

“If it is insisting that it’s a secret, it is very possible that some unimaginable thing would happen when the four of them gathers in one body right?” Just at that time, Eggy’s sweet and beautiful voice suddenly rang out.

“Eggy, nothing happened to you? This is great!” At that instant, Chu Feng was greatly happy because he discovered that the

originally cut off connection between him and Eggy was restored and he could feel Eggy's existence once again.

“What can even happen to me? The connection was only temporarily cut because of the Evil Spirit from the Ghost Spirit World. However, it has to be said that the Evil Spirit does have some ability. I'm afraid that normal people in the Heaven realm would not be able to defeat it.” Eggy said while curling her mouth.

“So that Evil Spirit came from the Ghost Spirit World? No wonder it looked like a ghost and was so terrifying.” Chu Feng had an expression of enlightenment.

“Don't stare blankly and leave. You can no longer probe around this place. You must at least reach the Heaven realm or don't come back to this place.” Eggy reminded.

“Mm.”

In short, he already knew that the Emperor Tomb was deep and unfathomable. At least, he was quite some time away from being able to search it. Not only him, even the Jiang Dynasty might not have that qualification.

hmm

But after Chu Feng walked out for a short distance, he astonishedly discovered that a city appeared behind him. Focusing his eyes to look, it was the Illusion Formation that Chu Feng and

the others stepped into earlier.

Chu Feng was a bit shocked. Although he already experienced the trial of the Illusion Formation, when he saw the formation currently, chills still went down his spine because the formation was truly too horrifying.

“The Illusion Formation was originally invisible, so go. With the Illusion Formation, I believe that many people will not be able to pass through. Even if they can pass through here, they can’t pass through the checkpoint later on. In this continent, there is truly no one who can go near that treasure.” Eggy said with contempt.

Chu Feng also felt that Eggy spoke quite reasonably because the Illusion Formation was only the outermost circle. The Evil Spirit that was described as a little minion by the Black Tortoise Armor Technique was already so strong, so he truly did not dare to imagine what the existence the guardian deeper in would be. Perhaps it was a monster that could completely destroy everything in this continent right?

However, as long as he thought of a monster that could destroy the continent of the Nine Provinces, Chu Feng couldn’t help but think that there also seemed to be a monster that was sealed in his Spiritual World, and from Eggy’s description, that monster was an existence that could cause chaos on the continent of the Nine Provinces.

Also, Eggy said that the sealed monster wasn’t much in her eyes. From her tone, Chu Feng could feel that she didn’t seem to be falsely boasting. She seemed to truly have had strength that

allowed her to look down upon everything.

However, such a powerful Eggy and the monster who could devastate the continent of the Nine Provinces were sealed in his Spiritual World. That made Chu Feng imagine how strong the person who did all that was. Was it his parents? Or his relatives? Or who?

“Father, mother, are you two still in this world?” That question echoed in Chu Feng heart. How much did he hope that his own parents were still in the world? It was the truth that he wanted to know the most.

Since he had already explored, when he was returning, Chu Feng could hurry back without a single trace of fear. His speed greatly increased, and only after a few days, he arrived back at the entrance.

However, on the road back, Chu Feng discovered quite a few corpses from the people of the Qilin Prince’s Mansion who miserably died by the mechanisms in the cave world.

It could be seen that after he successfully opened the entrance, the Qilin Prince’s Mansion also sent quite a few experts over to search in this place. But sadly, no matter how much stronger their cultivation was, they who did not know Spirit Formation techniques were unable to dodge even the most simplest mechanisms.

But the thing that Chu Feng did not understand the most was

that after the news spread out, the ruler of the Qilin Prince's Mansion, the master of the mansion had not showed himself.

Accordingly, after opening the entrance to a treasure trove that very possibly hid endless treasures, even if it was that mansion master, he would be incomparably moved and he should have immediately came to personally handle this matter. So, as he had not appeared yet, it obviously did not make sense.

But Chu Feng was too lazy to think about those things. As the guards were caught off guard, he hiddenly left that place. Chu Feng already prepared to leave the Azure Province. So, before he departed, he wanted to say his farewells to some people, and the first people he wanted to say his farewells to would be his relatives.

After a short period of hurrying, Chu Feng finally returned to the city that Chu Guyu and the others were hiddenly living in. When he was entering the city, Chu Feng was still thinking. After taking out the rank 6 martial skills that Li Zhangqing gave him, he wondered how happy Chu Guyu and the others would be, and perhaps they would even have trouble falling asleep.

“Chu Feng, you’ve finally appeared. We were so worried about you!”

However, just as Chu Feng entered the residence, Chu Yue ran out with a full face of panic. She hugged Chu Feng, and he could even feel that her body was trembling with some weeping noises coming from her mouth.

Simultaneously, all the other Chu family members behind Chu Yue were both joyed and worried, and with lingering fear all over their faces, they looked at Chu Feng as if he came back from the gates of hell.

“Chu Yue, what are all of you doing? I’m perfectly fine and nothing has happened to me!” Chu Feng really didn’t know what to do because of Chu Yue and the others, and at the same time, he also felt indescribable uneasiness.

# Betrayal



# Chapter 303: Heaven Shocking Change

---

“Chu Feng, don’t worry. We will forever be by your side.”

“Chu Feng, you are forever part of our Chu family. We won’t leave you.”

“Yeah, Chu Feng. No matter when, you still have us, your family. No matter what you do, we will support you and never leave you.”

Just at that time, Chu Wei, Chu Cheng, Chu Zhen, and the others came out of the residence. Even Chu Guyu came out, and everyone was very emotional when they saw Chu Feng.

At that instant, Chu Feng was finally aware that something was wrong. He felt that something must have happened. So, he asked, “In these past few days, has something that I don’t know about happened?”

“Brother, do you really still not know?” Chu Guyu thought of a possibility when he saw Chu Feng’s blank face.

“Since the end of the Hundred School Gathering, I had always been cultivating in a hidden place. After coming out, I directly came here to find all of you. I don’t know what has happened in the past few days.” Chu Feng explained.

“Brother, follow me.” Seeing that, Chu Guyu first cautiously scanned his surroundings, then prepared to walk deeper into the

residence.

hmm But just at that time, Chu Feng waved his big sleeve and a boundless soundproof Spirit Formation appeared. It shrouded the area that they were in, then he said, “Brother, just speak here.” Chu Feng’s expression changed into extreme uneasiness. He also really wanted to know what had actually happened.

“Brother, the things that happened in the Hundred School Gathering were real right? You killed the number one disciple of the Lingyun School, Dugu Aoyun, and you even crippled the number two disciple of the Lingyun School, Fenghao.” Chu Dugyu seriously asked.

“That’s right. Is the Lingyun School looking for trouble?” Chu Feng asked.

“Mm. Not only the Lingyun School. Even the Qilin Prince’s Mansion is looking for you.” Chu Guyu said.

“The Qilin Prince’s Mansion?”

After hearing those words, Chu Feng was greatly stunned. Although he also knew that the Lingyun School and the Qilin Prince’s Mansion had quite a good relationship, within the Qilin Prince’s Mansion, he had Qi Fengyang overseeing everything!

Qi Fengyang was currently a Heaven realm expert. His position should be even higher in the Qilin Prince’s Mansion, and his

authority of words should be more important than the Lingyun School. So, why did the present Qilin Prince's Mansion point the spear head towards him?

“Brother, after the conclusion of the Hundred School Gathering, you haven't met Qi Fengyang again, and you haven't went to the Qilin Prince's Mansion with him right?” Chu Guyu continued asking.

“I haven't.” Chu Feng shook his head.

“Ahh...” Chu Guyu first helplessly sighed, then followed up and said, “Right now, the rumours outside are saying that you've joined up with Qi Fengyang and the both of you want to kill the master of the Qilin Prince's Mansion in order to help Qi Fengyang scheme for power and to usurp the position.”

“However, the head of the Lingyun School, Yan Yangtian, arrived just in time, and only because of that, the two of you couldn't get away with it. Right now, Qi Fengyang has been caught and ten days later, he will be beheaded in public.”

“As for you, you escaped in the chaos and right now, the Qilin Prince's Mansion is going everywhere as they try to catch you. They even ordered everyone related to you to stand out and publicly announce to the world that they cut off their relationship with you. Only then could they feel shame for becoming friends with an evil person like you, or else...”

“Or else what?” Chu Feng closely asked.

“Or else after they behead Qi Fengyang in public, they will behead and exterminate the families of all the people who have close relationships with you or those who have not declared to the world that their relationship is cut off with you.”

“There is something like this?!!” At that instant, Chu Feng tightly frowned. He never would have thought that such a huge change would happen in the short dozen of days or so.

Qi Fengyang was caught and he was even going to be beheaded in the public. What was that for? He didn't go hiddenly assassinate the master of the Qilin Prince's Mansion, and when Qi Fengyang talked about the mansion master, Chu Feng could tell that he was extremely loyal and it was impossible that he revolted.

Within all of that, there must have been some hidden matters that were unknown, but as for what was actually happening, at that instant, Chu Feng didn't have time to think about it. He only knew that Qi Fengyang, his brother who helped him many times, was going to be beheaded by the Qilin Prince's Mansion who he was loyal towards.

“Chu Feng, the Qilin Prince's Mansion and the Lingyun School have clearly united. Not only do they want to take care of Qi Fengyang, they are also forcing you to appear.”

“Ten days later, if you don't appear on your own, they will flip through the entire Azure Province. If they can still not find you, they will kill everyone who is related to you.”

“Right now, you must get the people around you who are important settled into an extremely safe location. Only after that can you be able to think how to save Qi Fengyang, or else not only will you die, even everyone next to you won’t live.”

“Don’t think that the Qilin Prince’s Mansion and the Lingyun School will really forgive them even if they stand out to say that they have cut off their relationship with you. If they want to kill the people next to you, they have countless reasons and countless methods.”

“That is because this place was their territory to start with and no one would dare to defy anything they do.” Egggy gravely reminded as she seemed to know what things Chu Feng was going to do.

“Egggy, where do you think is the safest place I should get them settled into right now?” Chu Feng scanned over the current Chu family members standing around him because he really did not want them to be affected because of himself.

“Right now, the best place to go is the Thousand Bone Graveyard. Not only is the Azure Dragon Founder there to protect them, there is also the Essence Pool that can increase their cultivation.” Egggy said.

“Thousand Bone Graveyard? How is that possible? The founder clearly told me to keep the news of him surviving in his world a secret, so how would it be possible for him to allow me to bring

people close to me into the Thousand Bone Graveyard to live and to even let him protect the safety of my family?” Chu Feng felt that it was too insane. Something like that would not be possible to be achieved.

“Idiot. If it was before, perhaps it wouldn’t be possible. But it is different right now. The Azure Dragon Founder has a request for you, so he wouldn’t refuse your own request.”

“Besides, sending people close to you into the Thousand Bone Graveyard is equivalent to increasing the cards he has in his hands.”

“Increasing the cards he has in his hands? What do you mean by that?” Chu Feng did not understand.

“Think about it. The Azure Dragon Founder has requests for you and he wants you to develop in order to revive him. But with his nature, he will absolutely not trust you completely.”

“But if you send the people closest to you into the Thousand Bone Graveyard, if he opposes you, he can use your family as a bargaining chip to coerce you. At least, he can threaten you so that you must help him without playing any tricks.”

“This is equal to handing your family over to the Azure Dragon Founder for him to threaten you. Since the Azure Dragon Founder is such a smart old guy, he should be able to clearly understand this debt. So, he will certainly agree. No matter how many people you stuff into the Thousand Bone Graveyard, he will agree.” Eggy said.

“This...” At that instant, Chu Feng hesitated a bit. Originally, he didn’t feel much and he was only worried whether the Azure Dragon Founder would agree or not, but after hearing Eggy’s analysis, he also felt if the Azure Dragon Founder really wanted to use him, sending his family into the Thousand Bone Graveyard was truly sending sheep into a tiger’s mouth.

“Chu Feng. Extreme times calls for extreme methods. You can only guarantee their temporary safety if you send your family away from the Azure Province right now.”

“However, you can only do this to guarantee their temporary safety. Can you guarantee that they will be truly safe when they leave the Azure Province?”

“With your temper, even if you leave the Azure Province, it would be hard to avoid making huge enemies. Perhaps a greater enemy than the Qilin Prince’s mansion and the Lingyun School. You can escape, but can they escape? So, you must get your family settled in properly so you won’t have any worries about troubles that come from the back.”

“Although it is very possible that the Azure Dragon Founder is using you, right now, you need to use him. He doesn’t care about which methods he use, so you don’t care even more which methods you use.”

# Chapter 304: Cool And Warmth Of Human Emotions

---

“You need to understand clearly that before you can help him revive, he will absolutely not harm any of your relatives. During this period of time, your family will be absolutely safe.”

“As for your talent, when you become a Purple-cloak World Spiritist, do you feel that you will be afraid of the Azure Dragon Founder?”

“At that time, if he truly wants you to help and if he has no malicious intentions towards you, then it’s fine. But if he wants to use you and tear down the bridge after using you, you could also kill him instead.” Eggy continued.

At that instant, Chu Feng sank into deep thought. He felt that the words Eggy said made quite a bit of sense, but this related to the people close to him, so he still felt that it was too big of a risk.

“This time, I’ll listen to you.” Finally, after a while of serious consideration, Chu Feng still felt that Eggy’s method was fine.

So, on that day, Chu Feng escorted the Chu family members towards the Azure Dragon School, and because today was a special situation, even if Chu Feng was a disciple of the Azure Dragon School, he had to wear a conical hat to conceal his identity.

Before even entering the Azure Dragon School, on the road as he



climbed the mountain, Chu Feng saw large batches of disciples from the Azure Dragon School currently carrying bags on their backs while hurrying down the mountain. At the same time, he was able to hear their whispers.

“Ahh, at first, I thought that the Azure Dragon School was going to rise greatly and that I would have a great future by entering this school. Who would have known that just after entering, I had to leave.”

“Yeah, because of a single Chu Feng, we and others need to transfer to other schools. That Chu Feng really ought to die.”

“It’s that Li Zhangqing who’s too stubborn. Clearly, as long as he stood out and announced that the Azure Dragon School was clear of any relationships with Chu Feng, it would be fine. But who would have thought that he stood out and at the end, said that the Azure Dragon School and Chu Feng was going to live together, and die together?! Damn. Isn’t he just ruining all of us?”

“Who would say he isn’t? The Qilin Prince’s Mansion and the Lingyun School already both stated that those who don’t clear up their relationship with Chu Feng would be met with the catastrophe of family extermination. By doing this, it is equal in letting the Azure Dragon School meet the fate of school extermination. If we don’t quickly clear this relationship up, we will be dragged down by it as well.”

“I really hope that Chu Feng gets quickly arrested by the people from the Qilin Prince’s Mansion and dies. He truly brings death along with him.”

“Ahh, let’s not talk about this and let’s quickly leave this zone of disaster.”

After hearing the words of those people, both of Chu Feng’s fists couldn’t help but tightly clench. However, after that, they gradually relaxed and opened, but his face was still quite ugly.

When he was in his times of glory, all those people were zealously trying to set up a relationship with him to increase their flaunting capabilities.

But when Chu Feng was in his times of hardships, they were the first to escape with their tails between their legs. They didn’t even think about Chu Feng’s safety; rather, they blamed Chu Feng for cutting off their future.

“Chu Feng, after some thinking, there’s one thing that I should tell you.” Suddenly, Chu Yue who was next to Chu Feng spoke.

“Chu Yue, what is it?” Chu Feng asked.

“I heard that in the period of time before, Su Rou and Su Mei, the two sisters, announced that they cleared up their relationship with you and recognized a person like you as a disgrace. However...”

“However what?”

“However, they did not personally say those words. Their father, Su Hen, said those words for them.” Chu Yue spoke.

“Mm. I understand.” Chu Feng lightly smiled and nodded his head. Although on the surface, his emotions did not have too big of a chance, a raging lump of anger was lit up in his heart.

“Chu Feng, that old useless lamp called Su Hen really needs some taking care of. I suggest that you suck him dry to kill him.” Eggy felt unfairness for Chu Feng.

“I have my plans.” Chu Feng did not reply about that because what he was thinking of was not how to take care of Su Hen. What he was thinking of was what situation the sisters Su Rou and Su Mei were in, and whether they were in danger or not.

After that, with special methods, Chu Feng successfully brought the Chu family members to the area where the Thousand Bone Graveyard was. But on the road, Chu Feng saw what was true “Hotness and coldness of the world’s attitude”, and “Cool and warmth of human emotions”. Pretty much all the disciples and elders from the Azure Dragon School left that area to clear their relationship with Chu Feng and the Azure Dragon School.

After coming to the Thousand Bone Graveyard, Chu Feng did not go down with the Chu family members. He first opened the tunnel to enter the Thousand Bone Graveyard before them because he had to get permission from the Azure Dragon Founder.

At first, after hearing Chu Feng’s words, the face of the Azure

Dragon Founder changed greatly and he was even a bit angry. Although he did not speak, Chu Feng already felt his intentions to decline.

However, after stating the importance of those people to Chu Feng, the Azure Dragon Founder was shaken. At the end, not only did he grant Chu Feng's request, he even promised that he would guarantee the safety of the Chu family members in the Thousand Bone Graveyard.

To he hit the iron while it was hot, Chu Feng also took the chance and requested to also allow Li Zhangqing and the other people from the Azure Dragon School to enter this place for shelter. This time, without even hesitating, the Azure Dragon Founder permitted it.

So, after getting his family settled nicely in the Thousand Bone Graveyard, Chu Feng left and went forward to look for Li Zhangqing - The old man who was willing to give up the entire Azure Dragon School for himself.

At that instant, Li Zhangqing was standing on the peak of a palace while observing downwards from above towards the disciples and elders who were slowly leaving the school. Zhuge Liuyun and the Six Protectors were also next to him.

As they looked at the large batches of human currents surging down from the mountain, complicated expressions were hung on the old people's faces. It was the so-called "The human heart is difficult to predict, and one's true feelings are shown when disaster strikes". But the truth always made one's heart ache.

The people who always followed behind you, who bootlicked you, and who swore loyalty, left without a single care of righteousness when you met a calamity. Who had experienced such a feeling?!

“If they leave, they leave. It’s better for them to leave. With disciples and elders like these, the Azure Dragon School will have no way of truly becoming powerful.” Zhuge Liuyun was afraid that Li Zhangqing would have burdens so he went up to console.

“Ho...No need to look down on me like that right? Why would I feel sorrow because disciples likes them left? Actually, I’m very happy because I know that my judgement isn’t bad. Look at all the disciples that I had good impressions towards from the start. Aren’t they remaining behind?”

Li Zhangqing turned his head around to look behind him. Nearby, there were fifty-nine young core disciple standing there and thirty-eight elders with quite good cultivation. Those were the good seedlings that Li Zhangqing hiddenly chose.

Not only did those people have quite good martial cultivation talent, the most important thing was that they also had a loyal heart. They had the heart to share the hardships of the Azure Dragon School and the heart to die for the Azure Dragon School. With facts, it proved that Li Zhangqing did not pick the wrong people. At the times when the Azure Dragon School was going to face life and death, the disciples stayed behind.

“What time are we leaving here? You wouldn’t truly want them to just stay here doing nothing while waiting for death right?” Zhuge Liuyun asked.

“Of course not. We wait until not a single person remain, then we start our journey. We must guarantee the survival of the outstanding people from my Azure Dragon School. Only they can revive my Azure Dragon School.” Li Zhangqing replied.

“Ahh, I wonder where that boy Chu Feng went. I hope that nothing happened to him.” Zhuge Liuyun looked towards the distance and a streak of worry surged into his eyes. After hearing Chu Feng’s name, almost everyone’s faces couldn’t help but turn emotional.

“Oh? You old people are here looking at the scenery eh?” But just at that time, a familiar voice suddenly rang out behind Li Zhangqing and the others.

After hearing that voice, the faces of Li Zhangqing and the others rejoiced and they quickly turned their bodies around. After seeing the person clearly, their originally already happy faces became incomparably ecstatic.

# Chapter 305: Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens

---

“Chu Feng! Nothing happened to you? This is great!” After seeing Chu Feng, Li Zhangqing and the others were endlessly emotional. They quickly walked over and they started to look up and down, carefully and with detail at Chu Feng as if they were deeply afraid that Chu Feng suffered injuries.

“Heh, am I not fine right now?” Chu Feng chuckled and following that, he looked at the elders and disciples behind them and said to Li Zhangqing, “School Head, these are the good seedlings that you said earlier? Not bad.”

“Of course! No matter what time it is, my eyes will not be bad. However, this time, you seemed to have caused quite a trouble. It looks like all of us will need to go along with you on some days of difficulty and homelessness.”

Li Zhangqing smiled as he patted Chu Feng shoulder. Although he said those words on the surface, he did not have even the slightest intentions of blaming Chu Feng.

“I’m afraid that none of you will be in any difficult and homeless days now.” Chu Feng chuckled and said.

“Chu Feng you boy, what are you talking about?” After hearing those words, Li Zhangqing and the others couldn’t help but be taken aback.

“Just follow me.” As Chu Feng spoke, he wanted to leave, but then he stopped his steps, turned around towards the good seedlings that Li Zhangqing picked, and said, “Call them as well.”

The crowd did not know what Chu Feng was doing, so even after Chu Feng brought them to that forest, they were still lost and confused. Only until Chu Feng started to lay a Spirit Formation to condense a Spirit Formation entrance out did Zhuge Liuyun react.

With an astounding face, he pointed at the Spirit Formation entrance that Chu Feng laid with disbelief and said, “Chu Feng, you..you..you..you wouldn’t have solved the mystery of the Thousand Bone Graveyard and found its entrance right?”

“Chu Feng, is that true? You opened the Thousand Bone Graveyard?” Seeing that, Li Zhangqing and the others also quickly went up to closely ask. As for the others, their faces changed greatly and astonishment filled them.

What kind of place was the Thousand Bone Graveyard? It was a legend of the Azure Dragon School! There was not a single person in the Azure Dragon School who did not know about the Thousand Bone Graveyard, but no one could find it.

The people who did see the Thousand Bone Graveyard mostly died. It was said that only a small number of people did not die, but they became idiots who went insane.

If Chu Feng really opened the Thousand Bone Graveyard today,



that was equal to solving the near thousand year old unsolved mystery of the Azure Dragon School. That naturally caused people to look forward to it, but they also felt that it was inconceivable and hard to believe.

As he faced the crowd's expressions of yearning, Chu Feng finally lightly smiled and nodded his head, then said, "I did indeed find the Thousand Bone Graveyard, but I have not solved the mystery in there. However, I have good news to tell everyone here."

"Everyone can survive underneath this place. Because of the special structure at that area, it is absolutely fine even if everyone lives there for dozens of years. By hiding underneath, the people from the Qilin Prince's Mansion and the Lingyun School will certainly not be able to find you, let alone harm you."

"Also, at that place, there is also something that can help everyone quickly make breakthroughs. The benefits that that thing brings cannot be compared to Origin medicines or Profound medicines."

"However, the most important thing is that underneath, everyone will also see a person. A person that you undoubtedly will not expect."

"Chu Feng, who is it?"

"Yeah Chu Feng, who else can be in here? Don't stir up any suspense." The people whose blood started to boil by Chu Feng's words were extremely eager to know what person was actually

under there to be able to let Chu Feng cause such huge suspense.

“The school founder of my Azure Dragon School, the Azure Dragon Founder.” Chu Feng calmly said.

“What? Chu Feng, what did you just say? Say it again?” After hearing those words, almost everyone’s pupils suddenly shrunk and they did not dare to believe the words that they just heard.

“Right now, the Azure Dragon School’s founder is underneath here.” Chu Feng reiterated it with emphasis.

“Chu Feng, what joke is this? A thousand years has already passed since the creation of the Azure Dragon School. How is it possible that the ancestor is still surviving?” An elder did not believe the words that Chu Feng spoke.

“That’s right. Chu Feng, there are some words that you cannot speak randomly.” In reality, many people did not believe it as well.

“If you don’t believe, follow me and come. Look, then you’ll know.” Chu Feng lightly smiled and he didn’t explain. He stepped into the Spirit Formation entrance first.

After seeing Chu Feng disappear, Li Zhangqing and the others became even more nervous. They first looked at each other for a while, then following that, they tidied up their clothing, and when they felt that they were extremely orderly, they followed Chu Feng’s steps and went down.

After passing through the Spirit Formation, they discovered that Chu Feng was standing in front of them while smiling and looking at them. Beside Chu Feng, there was another person standing there. An old man who also had a smile on his face.

That old man wore an azure robe, had a fly whisk in his hand, his entire body emitted faint radiance, and he also emanated extremely strong aura, like a saint.

“Disciple Li Zhangqing, the twenty-second Azure Dragon School head, pays his respects to the school founder.” At that instant, Li Zhangqing’s excited body was trembling and he hurriedly knelt onto the ground and paid his great respects to the Azure Dragon Founder.

As for the Six Protectors, and the other elders and disciples, they were even so shocked that they could not take care of themselves. It was as though they were arriving into a realm of dreams as they blankly stared at the Azure Dragon Founder. They even thought that everything in front of their eyes wasn’t true, and only after a long while did they slowly come to their senses and quickly knelt and paid their great respects to the Azure Dragon Founder.

“Everyone, rise. Be at ease.” As for the Azure Dragon Founder, he did not have the slightest bit of arrogance as he pulled Li Zhangqing and the others back up.

After that, the Azure Dragon Founder introduced the benefits of the Essence Pool to Li Zhangqing and the others and he told them

how to cultivate within the Essence Pool. After knowing the abstruse effects of the Essence Pool, everyone was extremely excited because that could allow their cultivation to increase greatly. Especially Li Zhangqing. He even had hopes to charge towards the unreachable Heaven realm.

However, no one dared to ask about why the Azure Dragon Founder was still living, where the Thousand Bone Graveyard led to, or where the several tens of thousands of bones came from because they, who incomparably respected the school founder, did not dare to ask about those things in situations when the Azure Dragon Founder would not speak about it.

After understanding everything, Li Zhangqing and the others started to move the important goods of the Azure Dragon School into the Thousand Bone Graveyard. They even accumulated a large amount of foods and resources because they did not know how long they were going to live in there for.

As Li Zhangqing and the others were busy with all that, the Azure Dragon Founder called Chu Feng out to a more quiet corner and said to him,

“Chu Feng, because of my special body, I have no way of leaving the Thousand Bone Graveyard so I’m afraid that I cannot help you regarding the predicament that you are facing this time.”

“However, I have a present for you. Perhaps in critical times of danger, it can protect your life.” As he spoke, the Azure Dragon Founder pointed his finger towards Chu Feng’s forehead. At that instant, Chu Feng’s face instantly changed greatly and insane

happiness surged into both of his eyes.

Because, the Azure Dragon Founder was currently imbuing a martial skill to him. It was a very profound bodily martial skill. Although the rank of the martial skill was not labeled, although Chu Feng had not cultivated it yet, just by knowing the cultivation methods of this martial skill, Chu Feng knew that it was a much more profound bodily martial skill than the Imperial Sky Technique.

“Within the many martial skills that I have created in my life, this is the one I am most pleased with, but it is also the one that is the hardest to cultivate.”

“It is a bodily martial skill that can resist the air to walk, but is different than the conventional bodily martial skills. It does not move according to one’s own physical abilities. It relies on the martial skill itself to travel forward.”

“I have not determined the ranking of this martial skill because it has infinitely neared rank 9 martial skills, but in reality, it is still lingering between that and rank 8 martial skills.”

“This isn’t the only rank 8 martial skill on this continent, but it is the strongest martial skill I can create. So, I was not satisfied with that and I didn’t set a rank for it, nor did I pass it down to anyone.”

“However, if you can grasp it, it will certainly become your best life-saving ability. As long as you can proficiently grasp it, I believe that very little people can catch up to you.” The Azure Dragon

Founder seriously said.

“Ancestor, is there a name for this martial skill?” Chu Feng already generally understood the mysteriousness of the martial skill. It was exactly as how he said it was. It was an unordinary martial skill. It was incomparable to typical bodily martial skills such as the Imperial Sky Technique.

As he faced Chu Feng’s question, the Azure Dragon Founder only lightly smiled and said, “Dragon Travelling through Nine Heavens!”

## Chapter 306: Black-Hearted Father

---

After helping his family, Li Zhangqing, and the others settle in, Chu Feng left the Azure Dragon School and went forward to the Vermilion Bird City because currently, within the Azure Province, there were still two more people who Chu Feng could not let go. They were Su Rou and Su Mei, the two beautiful sisters.

Relying on his sharp Spirit power, when Chu Feng arrived outside of the Vermilion Bird City, he discovered that there were actually layers of detection Spirit Formations laid by a Grey-cloak World Spiritist, and within the Vermilion Bird City, he felt that there were many people who did not belong to the Vermilion Bird City hidden within.

All of that told Chu Feng that the current Vermilion Bird City was very possibly a trap, yet he had to jump into the trap or else he could not save the two sisters Su Rou and Su Mei.

Chu Feng sneaked into the Vermilion Bird City and he first went to both Su Rou's and Su Mei's residences, but he discovered that the two of them weren't there. Because of that, Chu Feng couldn't help but start to worry and at the end, he sneaked into Su Hen residence and he wanted to find some clues from him.

Indeed, "The heavens do not disappoint those who persevere", and not long after Chu Feng sneaked into Su Hen's palace, Su Hen hurried back from outside and he even brought three guests along. It was a Grey-cloak World Spiritist from the Lingyun School.

As for the other two people, they were both old people. One had black-hair as black as ink, and the other had white-hair as white as snow. They were the peak experts of the Lingyun School, and they were two of the Twelve Protectors.

“They are indeed the people from the Lingyun School. Let’s see what tricks all of you are playing with.” Chu Feng did not immediately go out to question Su Hen. He concealed his aura, hid in a corner, and silently observed every single movement and action of the three people.

“Heh. Milords, please sit.”

After entering the hall, Su Hen was like a submissive servant and he nodded and bowed towards the three people from the Lingyun School as he poured tea for them. For the first time, Chu Feng discovered that the lord of the Vermilion Bird City had such top-level bootlicking skills!

“City Lord Su Hen, it seems what you said wasn’t too true! You said that Chu Feng loves your two daughters so much that he could go between life and death for them. So, after knowing that your two daughters cut off their relationship with him, he should certainly come here to ask why. But why, after so many days have passed, are there no news about Chu Feng?” The white-haired Protector asked.

“Eh...This...”

“Perhaps Chu Feng has weak love and little righteousness, or



perhaps Chu Feng already escaped the Azure Province and left my two daughters behind!” Su Hen chuckled and explained.

“Then that means that your two daughters have really loved the wrong person. But even if Chu Feng comes, he would only be sending himself to his death.”

“City Lord Su Hen, your two daughters are two rare beauties, but sadly they have been contaminated by Chu Feng and they are still not willing to cut off their relationship with Chu Feng even up until now. I’m afraid that this will affect the future development of your Su family! After all, this time, it is the master of the Qilin Prince’s Mansion speaking, and he wants to completely kill every single person who is related to Chu Feng.” The black-haired Protector spoke.

“Ehh...Milords, this...” After hearing those words, Su Hen was not lightly frightened. He wanted to explain, yet he did not know how to explain and he started to stutter.

“Hey, City Lord Su Hen, you don’t need to be afraid. Actually, right now, I have a method that can save both you and your two daughters.” The black-haired old man smiled and said.

“Milords, please.”

Su Hen quickly asked. Although the three people in front of them were people from the Lingyun School, because their strength were overbearing and had a close relationship with the Qilin Prince’s Mansion, Su Hen truly did not dare to offend them. Rather, he was

very afraid of them.

As he looked at Su Hen's face full of fear, the black-haired old man said, "The ones who harmed you were your two daughters, and the ones who can save you are still your two daughters."

"Without hiding the truth, Lord World Spiritist of my Lingyun School has not married yet even to this date. However, it was love at first sight towards your two daughters. If you marry your two daughters over to him, who would dare to even touch your Su family?" The black-haired Protector spoke.

"That's right. I received a secret news, and it was that the Grey-cloak World Spiritist from the Qilin Prince's Mansion suddenly disappeared. Right now, there is absolutely no information on him and it is very possible that he has met with misfortune. So, within the current borders of the Azure Province, our Lord World Spiritist is the only Grey-cloak World Spiritist."

"Even the Qilin Prince's Mansion treats him respectfully and well. Su Hen. If you marry your daughter off to Lord World Spiritist, in the future, your Su family will certainly rise greatly." Just at that time, the white-haired Protector spoke to urge as well.

"Ehh...Lord World Spiritist, you...truly want to marry my two daughters?" Su hen was also quite shocked as he faced the sudden news.

"Heh. That's right. City Lord Su Hen, if you are willing to marry Su Rou and Su Mei over to me, I will certainly not treat you bad."

But perhaps he was too excited and happy, the Grey-cloak World Spiritist took his hood off which was covering his face, and revealed his incomparably ugly appearance.

It had to be said that the old guy's looks were truly, extremely ugly. Shrimp-nose, triangular-eyes, pumpkin-head, pockmarked face, and he was even bald.

“Huu...”

After seeing the appearance of the Grey-cloak World Spiritist, Su Hen instantly took in a breath of cool air. Most likely, it was also his first time that he had seen such an ugly old man.

But after remembering his special identity, powerful strength, and strong background, he forcefully suppressed his shocked expression and said while smiling,

“Not only will it be my honor to betroth my daughters over to you, Lord World Spiritist, it will also be the honor of my Su family's ancestors.” As he spoke, Su Hen walked out.

Shortly after Su Hen walked out, the white-haired Protector spoke to the Grey-cloak World Spiritist, “Milord, are you really going to marry those sisters? Right now, the school head and the mansion master have given a death order, and as long as the person had a close relationship with Chu Feng, no matter if they announced that they cut off their relationship off from him or not, they were still to be beheaded.”

“Ahh, you really don’t understand me well, but will I not understand the character of Lord School Head?”

“However, Su Rou and Su Mei are rare beauties. Within all the girls that I have seen, these two girls are absolutely the most beautiful. The only person who can be compared to those two is only Yan Ruyu from the Jade Maiden School.”

“It would truly be a shame if such beauties were killed off. But wouldn’t it be a bigger shame to not experience how they taste?”

“In a while when Su Hen calls them over, I will take that chance and bring the two of them into my room. You two also come as well to nicely enjoy these two rare beauties.” The Grey-cloak World Spiritist smiled and said lecherously.

“Haha, thank you Lord World Spiritist.” After hearing the World Spiritist’s words, the two old Protectors were also endlessly joyful and they revealed lustful smiles as well. There were even some reactions from the lower body. It could be seen that the two of them already had malicious intents towards the sisters Su Rou and Su Mei.

“Damn. These three lewd old guys has plans with my Su Rou and Su Mei? Later on, I will certainly make all of you pay the price.” Chu Feng who was hiding in a corner and saw every single thing was already consumed by anger and cracking noises sounded from the clenching of his fists.

“There’s also that Su Hen. He’s the most worthless one. Chu

Feng, you must finish Su Hen off or else who knows how he will deceive your Su Rou and Su Mei again.” Eggy’s little face also reddened from anger as she ground her teeth. She truly could not accept it. Su Hen, as a father, was selling his own daughters in such a way.

“Don’t worry. Not a single one should even think of escaping.” In reality, even if Eggy did not remind him, Chu Feng was already determined.

It had to be said that Su Hen’s efficiency in doing work was rather fast, and with a split moment, the closed door was reopened. With a full face of solicitousness, Su Hen walked in and there were even two beauties with absolute prettiness and extremely good figures following behind him. They were Su Rou and Su Mei.

## Chapter 307: Nerves That Can Cover The Sky

---

After Su Rou and Su Mei appeared, the expressions of the three old things from the Lingyun School instantly changed greatly. Every single one of them smiled as if a flower blossomed in their hearts and all anger was released. Their lewd eyes started to spin around randomly as they restlessly swept over Su Rou's and Su Mei's faces of absolute beauty as well as their figures worthy of pride.

“Beautiful. Too beautiful. City Lord Su Hen, you truly gave birth to a pair of good daughters!” The Grey-cloak World Spiritist no longer had the manner of a big character. He rubbed his hands, licked his lips, and walked towards Su Rou and Su Mei.

“My Lord Father, where's Chu Feng? Where did Chu Feng go?” However, Su Rou and Su Mei did not even pay attention to the three old men and with excited expressions, they were searching for another person's figure within the room.

“Chu Feng? Chu Feng isn't here. Even if he dares to appear in this place, he will only be an icy cold corpse.”

After hearing the two words “Chu Feng”, the face of the Grey-cloak World Spiritist became a bit ugly because he knew that the sisters Su Rou and Su Mei already gave their hearts for Chu Feng. So, from jealousy and envy, he truly hated Chu Feng straight to the bones.

“Su Hen, you have tricked us again? What reason do you have by

deceiving us to this place?” At that instant, Su Rou was the first to react. She pointed at Su Hen and questioned. She no longer called Su Hen as “father” because she really felt that the male in front of her eyes was not worthy of being their father.

“Reason? Su Hen, have you not told them yet?” The Grey-cloak World Spiritist first looked at Su hen, then smiled and Su Rou and Su Mei and said, “My two precious, your father has already agreed to give you two to me. From now on, the two of you are mine. Heh...”

“What? Su Hen, is this true?” After hearing those words, Su Rou became, without a doubt, terrified.

“Father, how can you treat us like this? Do you even take us as your daughters?”

At the same time, the little face of the usually cute Su Mei paled from anger. Even her eyes ruddied slightly because in these past few days, the sisters truly received quite a few wrongs.

“Ahh, little Rou, little Mei, I as your father am doing this for the sake of you.”

“Chu Feng he committed crimes and treason. He had actually joined up with Qi Fengyang to assassinate Lord Mansion Master. There is no place for him to say within the continent of the Nine Provinces. Sooner or later, he will be caught and executed.”

“As for you two, your relationship with Chu Feng before was too close. If the relationship doesn’t get completely cut off, you will only be dragged down by him. However, right now, Lord World Spiritist has had his eyes on you two and he is willing to take you two as his wife. Not only is this good luck for you, it is also good luck for our Su family.” Su Hen explained.

“Rubbish! You aren’t even a person. You are not worthy being our father!” Su Rou pointed at Su Hen and furiously insulted.

“Father, I never would have thought that you were this kind of person. I truly feel ashamed by having you as my father.” Su Mei also had a face full of grievance.

“Okay Su Hen, your two daughters are too stubborn. I need to fix them up, or else if they speak nonsense in the future, even I can’t protect them.”

At that instant, the Grey-cloak World Spiritist was a bit impatient. With a thought, a layer of Spirit Formation surrounded Su Rou and Su Mei within. No matter how much they struggled, they had no power to escape.

At the same time, the black-haired Protector and the white-haired Protector also threw Su Rou and Su Mei who were binded by Spirit Formations onto their shoulders. As they spoke, the three old things started to walk out of the palace.

“Milords, this...” Seeing the three old men’s attitude, Su Hen, who had quite a bit of life’s experiences, instantly understood what



the three old men were going to do. He quickly walked forward, and he was deeply afraid that the three old guys would taint his own daughters just like that.

“Su Hen, what are you doing? Do you want your Su family to be like the Gong family from the Black Tortoise City, to have your entire family exterminated?” Seeing that Su Hen had actually dared to obstruct, the Grey-cloak World Spiritist’s face instantly sank.

“I...I don’t dare.” That terrified Su Hen and he quickly went out of the way and denied. He even apologized at once. But after seeing Su Rou’s and Su Mei’s gaze full of hatred and their reddening eyes, Su Hen still bit down his teeth and said, “However, my two daughters are still young...”

“If you don’t dare, then scram. If you disturb my interest, I’ll annihilate your Su family.” The Grey-cloak World Spiritist coldly snorted, then passed the door and exited.

hmm

But just at that time, a boundless Spirit Formation suddenly shrouded the main hall and blocked the path of the three old guys from the Lingyun School. When they faced such a change, it caused the white-haired Protector and the black-haired Protector to be stupefied a bit as they turned around and said to the Grey-cloak World Spiritist, “Milord, what are you doing?”

“This...This wasn’t laid by me.” The Grey-cloak World Spiritist

had shock across his face because not only was the Spirit Formation which enveloped the main hall a grey-coloured Spirit Formation, the quality of the Spirit Formation was even quite a bit better than his.

“You three old things truly have nerves that can cover the sky. You dare to even touch my people?” Just at that time, a loud and clear voice suddenly resounded out from the main hall.

After hearing that voice ring out, the faces of pretty much everyone on scene changed greatly, and after they looked towards the direction of the voice, they were even more stunned, “Chu Feng, it’s you?”

As they looked at the young man standing in the corner of the main hall, the three old men from the Lingyun School were incomparably surprised. They never would have thought that Chu Feng, who they were so painstakingly searching for, would actually appear in front of them by himself.

When Su Rou and Su Mei saw Chu Feng, their faces were full of joy, but after joy, the sisters’ faces were full of concern.

It was because the three old monsters from the Lingyun School were truly too strong. Even though they knew that the current Chu Feng had so much battle power that it could rise to the sky, they were still worried whether Chu Feng would be able to defeat the three old guys or not.

However, compared to them, Su Hen had a face full of terror and

fear filled his eyes. Even his body was trembling because he was really too afraid of Chu Feng. Especially when he remembered Chu Feng's identity of Mr. Grey-cloak, and after he remembered the warning that he gave him, he was even more frightened.

“Hmph. Truly, ‘Cannot be found even after searching to the ends of the world, yet no effort is required to obtain it’.”

“Chu Feng, we were searching so hard for you, but now you actually send yourself straight to the door? On that day, Qi Fengyang saved you. Today, let's see who will save you this time.”

The white-haired Protector was incomparably mad with fury, and the scene of Chu Feng crushing Dugu Aoyun to death that day was still clear in his mind. As long as he thought of that, the anger within his body started to surge everywhere.

After Chu Feng appeared, he was already unable to control his own emotions. He attacked first. Before that, he threw Su Rou who was on his shoulder over to Su Hen, then emanated his aura of the 9th level of the Profound realm, and with a leap, he pounced towards Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, today, this will be called ‘returning a debt of blood with blood’.”

At the same time, the black-haired Protector also threw Su Mei who was on his shoulder over to Su Hen. He displayed a profound bodily martial skill, and in addition to a savage attacking martial skill, he oppressed towards Chu Feng.

Those two, as expected as part of the famous Twelve Protectors of the Lingyun School. They were truly in the peak of the Profound realm, and immediately after the might of the attacks came out, the entire palace trembled as if it would split at any second. If it wasn't for the Spirit Formation Chu Feng laid, the entire palace would have been destroyed.

“Chu Feng!!” After feeling the horrifying might from the two people, Su Rou's and Su Mei's little faces were deathly-white from fright. They couldn't avoid screaming and they were deeply afraid that Chu Feng would be unable to block the attacks of the two.

boom

But just at that time, Chu Feng's body moved and the ground underneath their feet couldn't help but tremble. Following that, a burst of boundless pressure came along with it.

Chu Feng's hands changed into an eagle's claw and it suddenly stretched out and locked onto both Protectors' throats. Then his arm waved and with a bang, the two of the ferociously crashed onto the ground. The strong power slammed them to the point that blood sprayed out of their mouths and the bones in their entire body shattered.

After the two old men landed on the ground while being half-dead, Chu Feng spat with contempt and coldly said, “What you should be thinking of is whether there is anyone who can save you.”

# Chapter 308: Oppressive Killing Intent

---

“Chu Feng, you...”

Seeing the two Protectors in the peak of the Profound realm being defeated by Chu Feng with one strike, the Grey-cloak World Spiritist showed his teeth and his expression was called “wonderful”.

But it was quite understandable after some careful thinking. After all, no matter how much stronger the two Protectors were, they were absolutely not stronger than Dugu Aoyun. If Dugu Aoyun couldn’t even defeat Chu Feng, how could the two of them be able to?

whoosh Thinking to that point, the Grey-cloak World Spiritist did not attack Chu Feng and instead, he used an extremely strong martial skill to attack the Spirit Formation that Chu Feng laid. He actually wanted to escape.

But as he faced the Grey-cloak World Spiritist’s miserable appearance, Chu Feng did not do anything to him. He only stood where he was and silently stared at him, as if he was looking at an amusing clown.

boom boom boom

“Dammit, dammit!!”

Despite one powerful attack after the other was thrown out, despite one layer of ripple after the other was spread out, despite the Grey-cloak World Spiritist using up everything he had and using up all sorts of methods, he had no way of breaking the Spirit Formation that Chu Feng laid. It caused him to feel a bit of panic and anger.

whoosh

Suddenly, the Grey-cloak World Spiritist turned and became a gust of wind. He dashed towards Su Rou and Su Mei. Since he had no results from escaping, he planned to use Su Rou and Su Mei as hostages.

“Hmph.”

But how could Chu Feng give him that chance? With a flash of light under his feet, in a blink, he arrived in front of Su Rou and Su Mei. Following that, he threw a punch towards the incoming Grey-cloak World Spiritist and it directly landed onto his chest.

“Ahh!!”

Strong power forced the Grey-cloak World Spiritist back. Crackling noises came from his chest, and even his internal organs were currently being crushed and crumbled. That pain was truly heart-tearing and lung-splitting.

However, that was merely the beginning. How would Chu Feng

so easily let anyone who had any ideas with Chu Feng's women? Before the Grey-cloak World Spiritist even landed, with lightning speed, he darted behind him again. He grabbed his robe and fiercely threw him onto the ground.

After he fell onto the ground. Chu Feng first stuck his left foot out, and with cracking noises, he snapped his left leg. Then his right leg also suddenly dropped down, and with more cracking noises, he snapped his right leg.

After that, Chu Feng grabbed his crotch area. He tightly held the vulgar thing within his hand.

“Ah!”

“Chu Feng, what are you going to do?!” With that, the Grey-cloak World Spiritist panicked. It didn't matter if it were the other body parts, as he could heal them; but if that place was destroyed, there was no way of recovering it. The genitals are the genitals, they were [the root of life](#). Those things could not be joked around with.

The characters that represent “genitals” here are “命根”, which directly translates to “life root”.

“Do what? This is the result of touching my women. You will be a eunuch when alive, and hard to be a ghost when you're dead.” As Chu Feng spoke with a full face of fierceness, his hand suddenly clenched. With a “pu”, a large amount of blood sprayed and shot out from his hand. That thing was squeezed into blood.

“Ahh~~~~~”

The pain under his groin caused the Grey-cloak World Spiritist to endlessly shriek and to never-endingly miserably wail because that was not only physical pain. It was also the pain in his soul. He knew that his life was finished, and even if he could continue living, he was fated to become a crippled person.

So, he loudly yelled at Chu Feng, “Kill me! Kill me! Even if I become a ghost, I will not forgive you!!”

“Don’t worry. Even if you don’t plead, I will still kill you.”

Chu Feng chillily smiled, formed a fist with one hand, and threw it towards the old man’s head. With a bang, his skull exploded like a watermelon and it exploded into pieces.

hmm

Just that time, suddenly, a strand of light that was quite difficult to detect drilled out from the exploded head. Chu Feng was already prepared for that situation. He raised his hand, grabbed, and the light was grasped within his hand.

“Damn Chu Feng! Let me go, let me go!!”

At that instant, within Chu Feng’s palm, the voice of the Grey-cloak World Spiritist sounded out again. But this time, within his voice, he no longer had the heart to wish to die. Rather, it contained incomparable fear.



It was the consciousness that he condensed before dying. As long as the consciousness was there, he would be able to survive. But if this consciousness was destroyed, he would certainly completely die.

“Hmph. I remember telling you that you wouldn’t even be able to be a ghost.” Chu Feng coldly smiled and his hand suddenly squeezed.

“Ahh~~~~~” This time, the Grey-cloak World Spiritist made his last miserable cry and forever left the world.

After killing the Grey-cloak World Spiritist, Chu Feng walked towards the two other Protectors who still survived with some breaths left. He arrived in front of them and asked, “Where is Qi Fengyang right now?”

“I don’t know!!” The black-haired Protector ferociously howled and he had a full face of resolution.

puchi But before he even finished speaking, Chu Feng raised his feet and completely crushed his head.

“How about you? Do you know where Qi Fengyang is right now?” Chu Feng looked towards the white-haired Protector.

“Don’t...don’t kill me. I’ll tell you everything that I know...I’ll tell you everything that I know!”

“Speak now!!”

“Qi Fengyang entered the Heaven realm and that caused the master of the Qilin Prince’s Mansion to be extremely nervous. He was nervous that Qi Fengyang would threaten his position, so he joined hands with my school head, Yan Yangtian, and captured Qi Fengyang.”

“Then, with Qi Fengyang committing treason as the reason, they locked him up. In a few more days, he will be executed. Right now, Qi Fengyang is imprisoned within the Qilin Prince’s Mansion.”

puhi However, Chu Feng abruptly kicked and like the black-haired Protector, he died the same way.

After killing the three of them, Chu Feng took their Cosmos Sacks from their waists, then absorbed and refined their Source energy. Only then did he cast his gaze towards Su Hen and slowly walked towards him.

Currently, both of Su Hen’s feet were trembling. This entire body was trembling. After he, who was originally already afraid of Chu Feng, personally saw him kill the three experts in the peak of the Profound realm with ruthless methods, he could truly imagine how miserable his death would be.

poof Suddenly, the city lord of the Vermilion Bird City knelt to the ground and endlessly kowtowed to Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, please spare me, please spare me. I was truly forced and had no

other choice! I had no intentions of harming you.”

“For the sake of little Rou and little Mei, please spare my life and give me a chance to change and start over.”

“It’s fine no matter what you do to me, Chu Feng. However, you ignored your daughters’ happiness many times in order to continue living in this world. You truly aren’t qualified to be a father.” Chu Feng slowly walked over with oppressing killing intent.

“Little Rou, little Mei, quickly plead for me! I know that I have wronged and I won’t force you two do anything else in the future. I will listen to you two no matter what I do!!” Seeing that it was useless begging to Chu Feng, Su Hen climbed towards Su Rou and Su Mei, hugged his two daughters’ legs and started to wail.

“Chu Feng, don’t kill my father. No matter how many thousands or tens of thousands of wrongs he did, he is still our father. He’s the only close family member we have in this world.” Su Mei was the first to go soft-hearted as she cried and begged for Su Hen.

“Chu Feng, spare his life. No matter what, he is still our father. If he wasn’t here, we wouldn’t be here. No matter what he did wrong, we can only choose to forgive.” Su Rou also spoke.

At that instant, Chu Feng stopped his steps. After that, he opened both of his arms and a wave of strong attraction power surged out and sucked the sisters Su Rou and Su Mei into his embrace, leaving only Su Hen where he was.

## Chapter 309: Believe in Him

---

“Chu Feng, I beg you. Don’t kill my father.” As Su Mei who was hiding in Chu Feng’s embrace hugged Chu Feng, she raised her sweet and beautiful little face to look at Chu Feng with her already tearful eyes. Her gentleness and softness was currently used to the limit.

“Chu Feng, spare him. After him, he’s our father.” Su Rou also begged. The eyes of her, who was usually strong, also started to turn red. It could be seen that deep in her heart, she also had very strong feelings towards Su Hen. The so-called “[blood is thicker than water](#)”, and it was indeed like so.

Blood (family relationships) is thicker (stronger) than water (relationships with other people).

As he faced the pleading of the two of the people whom he loved, the anger in Chu Feng’s heart also started to gradually disappear. The killing intent that he emanated out was also gradually retracted. He said to Su Rou and Su Mei, “Even if I let him go, the people from the Qilin Prince’s Mansion and Lingyun School will not let him go.”

“Chu Feng, you must have a way right? Bring my father along. I believe that he will change and start anew.” Su Mei begged and said.

“Chu Feng, bring my father with us and let’s leave together. Together, we will give him a chance.” Su Rou was also begging.

At that instant, Chu Feng was in a slightly difficult situation because he truly did not want to bring a person who he did not trust over to that place. But after seeing the two beauties in front of him, he still bit down and said to Su Hen, “You should be happy that you have two good daughters.”

Finally, Chu Feng let Su Hen go. Not only did he not kill Su Hen, instead, he prepared to bring Su Hen along with the sisters Su Rou and Su Mei back to the Azure Dragon School and he planned to get all of them settled in the Azure Dragon School. Before leaving, Chu Feng gave Su Hen some time to let his Su family disperse.

Although by doing this, the Su family would disappear and the Su family members would be homeless, their lives would be kept. Seeing that his Su family which ran the Vermilion Bird City for many years scatter like that, Su Hen’s face was all complicated. He who almost died seemed to no longer be greedy like before and it was as if he came to a realization about something.

After that, since Su Rou and Su Mei pleaded, he picked up their elder brother Su Long from his place as well and with their family of four, they hurried towards the Azure Dragon School.

“Chu Feng, thank you for leaving me with my life. I...” On top of the White-headed Eagle, Su Hen was sitting next to Chu Feng and he seemed to want to say something, but at the end, he could not.

“No need to thank me or anything. I left you with your life only because of your two daughters. I, Chu Feng, know what the feeling is to have no father, so I don’t want them to have a taste of that feeling as well.”

“I know that even up until now, you can’t let the Su family go, you can’t let so many Su family members go, but you need to know that to you, the most important people should be your two daughters and your son because when you are close to death, they are the only people who will be willing to stand out to protect you.” Chu Feng seriously reminded.

“Mm. You’re correct. I was too confused before. In the future, I will certainly do my best to compensate for them.” Su Hen had regret across his face.

“Also, I need to remind you this. To people, the most important thing is dignity. If you live life like you just did without any dignity, you will never, ever, have anyone truly look at you with good eyes or good impressions. For forever, you will only be called here and there like a dog by others. When needed, they would use you. When unneeded, they would kill you at any time.” Chu Feng added.

“Heh...Perhaps you are correct, but when a person doesn’t have enough strength yet need to protect a family of old and young, they are truly powerlessly.” Su Hen smiled very helplessly.

Chu Feng’s heart was suddenly shaken when he saw Su Hen like that. Although he was indeed greedy for life and scared of death, in reality, he wasn’t as horrible as imagined. He was only using his own methods to protect him and his family, to protect his clan. However, it was only that his method was too weak and it was not approved by Chu Feng.

But when a person didn't have sufficient strength nor a powerful background, what could they do if they wanted to protect themselves and their family? Perhaps most people would be like Su Hen as well. Being forced to yield in order to maintain safety, and ignoring the long-term damages for the short-term benefits. Because, if they wanted to live, they truly had no choice.

With some careful thinking, Chu Feng felt that he truly could not completely blame Su Hen because in this world, there were no small number of people who sold their sons and daughters in order to live. Although having not enough strength was part of the reason, the most important part was that this world was too real, and reality was too cruel.

After a while of hurrying, Chu Feng successfully sent Su Rou, Su Mei, Su Long, and Su Hen to the Thousand Bone Graveyard. At that instant, Chu Feng's tense heart finally relaxed.

No matter if he was going to live or die after his journey, at least currently, there was a safety guarantee for the people who were most important to him. After nicely settling them in, Chu Feng was going to leave, but no matter what, Su Rou wanted to go out to send Chu Feng off.

"Chu Feng, do you truly need to go? I know that Senior Qi Fengyang gave you kindness as heavy as a mountain, but you clearly know that in this journey, you won't have much luck. Yet you still want to go. This isn't a smart action, and I believe if Senior Qi Fengyang knew, he would also not be willing to let you do this."

Within the mountain forest over the Thousand Bone Graveyard, Su Rou was tightly gripping Chu Feng's hand. Both of her eyes reddened, and two rows of tears flowed down her charming face. She knew what Chu Feng was going to do, and she truly did not want Chu Feng sending himself to death.

“Just stay here, guard, and look after little Mei and my family. In this place, you can gain even stronger power, and I entrust all of them with you.” Chu Feng pulled Su Rou's hand away.

“Must you really do this?” However, Su Rou grabbed Chu Feng's hand again and she held on even tighter.

At that instant, Chu Feng did not overly explain. He only lightly smiled and said, “If I don't do this, I won't be Chu Feng. You understand me.”

After hearing Chu Feng's words, Su Rou was a bit moved. She did indeed understand Chu Feng. It wasn't that he wasn't rational enough, but he would choose to put down his rationality many times to ignore anything, to ignore the consequences in order to do the things that he felt were right. That was how he did things. That was Chu Feng.

“We will be here and wait for you to come back.” Su Rou finally let go of his hand and her cuteness caused one's heart to ache.

“Good, I will return quickly.” Chu Feng gently wiped the tears away from Su Rou's face, then lightly kissed her forehead.



Su Rou also no longer bothered him and she turned around and entered the Thousand Bone Graveyard's Spirit Formation entrance. After Chu Feng left the Thousand Bone Graveyard, he rose into the air.

He stepped in the sky and stood on the horizon. Reminiscently, he looked at the grand Azure Dragon School, the place that taught him about martial cultivation. He did that because he did not know whether the Azure Dragon School would still be remaining the next time he returned here.

whoosh

Suddenly, Chu Feng leaped and became a row of light as he flew towards the distant horizon. He did not ride on the White-headed Eagle because currently, he was quite low on time. Under situations like that, obviously, his Imperial Sky Technique would be quicker than the White-headed Eagle.

At the same time that Chu Feng left the Azure Dragon School, Su Rou returned to the Thousand Bone Graveyard. When she entered the Thousand Bone Graveyard and her vision returned to normal, she discovered that everyone in the Thousand Bone Graveyard already stood in a row while looking at herself with complex faces. Some people who were younger couldn't hold the sorrow in their hearts and started to silently sob.

“Sister!”

Suddenly, Su Mei leaped into Su Rou's embrace and loudly cried.

Her cry was abnormally sad and from that, almost everyone on scene couldn't help reddening their eyes.

At that instant, Su Rou's eyes also reddened as well but she forcefully held it back and did not cry. She stroked Su Mei's black and shiny hair and said, "We need to believe in him!"

## Chapter 310: Shh, Quiet

---

Actually, after some counting, the day to the execution of Qi Fengyang in the Qilin Prince's Mansion hadn't arrived yet so even if Chu Feng rode Little White to the Qilin Prince's Mansion, he would still make it.

The reason why Chu Feng was so hurried was because his current target was not the Qilin Prince's Mansion, but the Valley of Hundred Bends. Chu Feng had to save Qi Fengyang, but he was absolutely not going to blindly send himself to death.

In a situation such as that, the first thing that Chu Feng thought of was actually not to charge into the dragon's pool and tiger's cave with a single pike and horse. He first requested for help from Qi Fengyang's old friend, the mysterious expert hiddenly living within the Valley of Hundred Bends.

"This is Chu Feng. Senior, something has happened, and I wish to pay you a visit. Senior, I hope that you can meet with me once!"

"Senior? Senior? Senior, are you here? I have something that I want to discuss with you!!" Chu Feng arrived at the peak of the mountain but he did not directly break into the Spirit Formation to enter. He stood over the vast white clouds and extremely politely paid his respects to the hall.

After the matters that happened last time and from Qi Fengyang as well, he understood a bit more of the situation. Chu Feng felt that the mysterious expert who was hiddenly living in seclusion

was very possibly a strange person. Facing a person like that, he had to follow etiquette. With some slight incautiousness, it could very possibly cause that person to be furious.

However, after having no results from yelling for so long, Chu Feng had no choice but to forcefully intrude. He first bowed, then said, “Senior, I truly do have a request for something. Please forgive me for my impoliteness.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he broke past the Spirit Formation and arrived outside of the hall within the clouds. At first, Chu Feng yelled a bit more, but after still having no results, he spread his Spirit power out.

However, he astonishedly discovered that on the surface of the palace, there was an extremely powerful Spirit Formation. That Spirit Formation was too strong. Not only was it difficult to break through, it could even cut off Spirit power.

“Senior, I do not know whether you are here or not, but right now, Senior Qi Fengyang is in huge trouble. Two days later, he will be executed in the Qilin Prince’s Mansion. I hope that for the sake of the relationship between you two, you can save his life!” As he was in a situation in which he had no way of stepping into the hall, Chu Feng could only loudly yell, but he received no reply.

“Chu Feng, just leave it. Don’t beg him anymore. Didn’t Qi Fengyang say it? This person understands the things in the Azure Province better than anyone else. I believe that even without you informing him, he already knew about what happened to Qi Fengyang.”

“But no matter if he is in here right now or not, he must already know about Qi Fengyang’s matter. He chose to remain silent, so that means that he is a person who cares very little about relationships, and he wouldn’t reveal his identity for the sake of Qi Fengyang’s life.” Eggy advised with hidden anger.

At that instant, Chu Feng was in a really difficult situation. It wasn’t that he did not understand that reason, but he still wanted to fight for it because right now, the mysterious expert was his only hope in saving Qi Fengyang.

However, with some calculations of time, Chu Feng was forced to leave that place. Before leaving, Chu Feng who was unwilling to admit defeat still left a letter at the entrance. Similarly, it was begging for the expert to go forward to save Qi Fengyang’s life.

At the end, Chu Feng left with no results and his journey over there was wasted. As he brought that disappointment, that helplessness, Chu Feng resolutely advanced to the Qilin Prince’s Mansion. He vowed to save his sworn elder brother, Qi Fengyang.

Time passed, and with a blink of an eye, the day of Qi Fengyang’s execution arrived. On that day, in the sentencing ground outside of the Qilin Prince’s mansion, big characters from cities, powers, and schools from all directions gathered here.

Almost everyone in the Azure Province who had a head and face came. They did not want to miss out the moment of execution of such a shockingly big character in the Azure Province, Qi

Fengyang.

Outside of the vast sentencing ground, people formed mountains and oceans. Qi Fengyang was binded by special chains all over his body and even his mouth was sealed tight. Injuries were over his entire body, his aura was extremely feeble, and he was laying down on top of the fourteen meter tall sentencing stage. Above his body was a big and sharp guillotine. Qi Fengyang was going to be split into two by the guillotine.

“Ahh, such a good character dying like this is truly a pity.”

“Yeah. Another Heaven realm expert so difficulty appeared in my Azure Province, but he will now actually die in such a way.”

“There’s nothing worthy of pity here. He cannot escape from the crimes that he had committed. If he successfully killed Lord Mansion Master, wouldn’t that be even bigger pity? No matter how much stronger Qi Fengyang is, he wouldn’t be stronger than the Mansion Lord right?”

At that instant, some people felt pity for Qi Fengyang, but some people also felt that Qi Fengyang deserved it. But as everyone was hurrying towards the sentencing stage, Chu Feng hiddenly sneaked into the inner sections of the Qilin Prince’s Mansion.

The lord of the Qilin Prince’s Mansion was a member of the Lin clan. He was called Lin Moli, and most likely exactly because of that special reason, he could not tolerate Qi Fengyang who also entered the Heaven realm because that did indeed threaten the

position of him being the mansion lord.

But to Chu Feng, that was not the important part. The important part was that Lin Moli had a son. It was his only son, and Lin Moli doted on him extremely.

But regrettably, his son was trash. Not only was his martial cultivating talent extremely horrible, he was also addicted to woman. He was the trashiest existence in the young generation of the Qilin Prince's Mansion.

“Baby, you’re too beautiful. You’re the most beautiful woman I’ve ever seen! Be obedient and don’t move wildly. I will take you as my wife and grant you wealth and money. I will grant you endless resources and let you become a martial cultivation expert.”

“No! Milord, please let me go please let me go. I don’t want wealth and money, I don’t want endless resources, and I don’t want to become a martial cultivation expert. I only want to go home!”

Within a luxurious palace, on top of a big bed, there was a female who was young and beautiful. She was curled up in a corner while trembling and sobbing.

On the other side of the bed, there was a fatty who had incomplete clothing and he was currently staring at that woman with tiger-like eyes. It was as if a wolf was staring at a sheep. Like looking at his own prey, he already drooled from lecherousness. That was the son of Lin Moli, Lin Chong.

“Damn woman. You don’t give face and you don’t want face? If you don’t obey me, do you believe that I will kill your entire family, then throw you into the army camp and let my guards of the Qilin Prince’s Mansion take turns with you until death?” Seeing that the soft way didn’t work, Lin Chong’s face changed and he went for the hard way.

“No! Don’t harm my family!” Indeed, after hearing Lin Chong speak like that, the woman knelt onto the ground and begged in fright.

“Hmph. Then be obedient and don’t move. You must cooperate. The women I dislike the most are those who don’t cooperate. The women who didn’t go along with me all got fed to my pet.”

As he spoke, Lin Chong pointed towards a corner in the room. There was a Fierce Beast with a sinister appearance and blood-red eyes. The Fierce Beast was currently eating something. Looking at it more closely, it was a person.

Lin Chong did speak the truth. The women who did not cooperate with him were indeed all fed to that Fierce Beast. However, he did not tell the young woman that even those who did cooperate with him were also fed to the Fierce Beast.

“I’ll listen to you, I’ll listen to everything.” The young woman was terrified. As she sobbed, she nodded and started to take her clothing off and prepared to comply with Lin Chong’s actions.



“Waa!”

But just as Lin Chong was preparing to enjoy the beauty in front of his eyes, his cherished Fierce Beast suddenly made a miserable cry.

Turning his head around to look, Lin Chong’s face couldn’t help but greatly change because his cherished pet already presently became a pile of muddled flesh. There was even a young man standing next to the pile of muddled flesh with an evil smile.

“Insolence! Who are you? You dare to harm my pet?” At that instant, Lin Chong was furious. He stood up and prepared to yell for someone.

whoosh But just at that time, like a ghost, Chu Feng appeared in front of Lin Chong. He used his hand to cover Lin Chong’s mouth and fiercely pressed himself to the bed and strangely smiled and said, “Shh, be quiet. I’ll bring you to play something more exciting.”

# Chapter 311: Chu Feng Enters The Stage

---

Within the sentencing grounds outside of the Qilin Prince's Mansion, there were more and more people gathering. At the same time that they were staring at Qi Fengyang on the sentencing stage, they would also look at the two people who were standing in front of the sentencing stage.

One of those two people wore a robe, and the other wore golden armor. Both of them gave off unordinary atmosphere and they had the cultivation of the Heaven realm.

Respectively, they were the head of the Lingyun School, Yan Yangtian, and the lord of the Qilin Prince's Mansion, Lin Moli.

Those two were the strongest characters in the Azure Province. Them being at the same place was such a rare scene so naturally, many people would feel excited because of that. But sadly, those people could not hear the whispers of those two.

“From what I see, we should quickly kill Qi Fengyang first. If this gets dragged out for too long, it will only increase hidden troubles.” Lin Moli looked at Qi Fengyang and his eyes were full of worry.

“Mansion Lord, you don't know how monstrous that Chu Feng is. This child must be removed. Or else, with the methods that he grasps, he will be able to surpass us two in less than three years. At that time, the ones who will be in a bad situation will be us.” Yan Yangtian explained.

“Even if there is a bad situation, the one who will be in that will be you. Chu Feng and your Lingyun School has grudges, but he doesn’t have any grudges with my Qilin Prince’s Mansion.”

Lin Moli coldly snorted. Even though the person he was facing was Yan Yangtian, he was still very prideful. After all, putting aside strength, in terms of status, he was the true ruler of the Azure Province.

“Ho...Mansion Lord, don’t say it in such a way! If it was before, Chu Feng and your Qilin Prince’s Mansion did indeed have no grudges. Rather, there were some friendly relationships.”

“But the present is different from the past. You are going to kill Chu Feng’s sworn elder brother. With his nature, if he takes revenge, your Qilin Prince’s Mansion will certainly be in a more miserable state than my Lingyun School.” Yan Yangtian sneered and said.

“You! No wonder you did whatever you could to urge me to get rid of Qi Fengyang. So you were intentionally pulling me down with you.” At that instant, Lin Moli felt a bit angry.

“Ahh, Mansion Lord, don’t say it like that. Am I not doing this for you? Qi Fengyang is the chief of the Qi clan, and you are a Lin clan member. Are you not worried that in the future, he will usurp your position?” Yan Yangtian smiled and defended himself.

“Then do you dare to be sure that Chu Feng will certainly come

and save Qi Fengyang? Will he truly be idiotic to this state and come forward to his death?” Lin Moli had some doubts.

“From my understanding after investigating Chu Feng, he is a person like that. But do not say that he is idiotic because he is a little demon who has quite some methods. Even if you and I guard here, we cannot be careless.” Yan Yangtian smiled and said.

“Milord, this is bad!!” Just at that time, a Prince’s Mansion guard ran over with a panicked face.

“What is it?” Seeing that, Lin Moli’s eyebrows lightly furrowed.

“Lord Lin Chong has disappeared and the Fierce Beast he raised has been killed by someone.” The guard nervously replied.

“You group of trash! If you can’t even look after a person, what’s the point of having you here?” After hearing those words, Lin Moli’s face instantly changed greatly and as he spoke, he was going to leave.

“Where are you going?” Seeing that, Yan Yangtian quickly blocked his path.

“Of course it is to find Chong’er. He is my only son and I cannot let any incidents happen to him.” Lin Moli replied.

“You cannot do that right now. How can you leave at this time? Perhaps this is Chu Feng’s plan to lure the tiger away from the

mountain.” Yan Yangtian said.

After hearing those words, Lin Moli was even more worried. So, he angrily said, “Then I need to look for him even more! If anything happens to my Chong’er, will you carry that responsibility?”

“If Qi Fengyang gets saved by Chu Feng and when the two of them come back after many years, the people who die will not only be your Chong’er. It will be your entire Qilin Prince’s Mansion and my entire Lingyun School.”

“Besides, your Chong’er might not have been taken away by Chu Feng. Mansion Lord, I ask you to clearly understand the current situation.” Yan Yangtian’s expression was grave, and he reminded Lin Moli with every single word and sentence.

At that instant, Lin Moli was a bit shaken. Being the ruler of the Azure Province, he could naturally determine which one was more significant. At the end, he endured the anxiousness in his heart and stayed behind, silently waiting for the arrival of noon. Silently waiting for the appearance of Chu Feng.

However, time passed by bit by bit, and Chu Feng, from start to finish, had never appeared. That caused Lin Moli and Yan Yangtian to be uneasy because what they were afraid of the most was Chu Feng not appearing. If he appeared, they were 90% confident that they could kill Chu Feng and they could remove the hidden disease.

But if Chu Feng did not appear, then from this day forth, they would live through every day, every hour, in uneasiness because they would not know which day the genius who broke common scene, the horrifying god of killing, would slaughter his way back and kill all of them with ruthless methods without leaving anything behind.

“It is noon!” Finally, a loud yell rang out and at that instant, everyone’s hearts were raised to their throats because the time of Qi Fengyang’s execution had arrived. The Heaven realm expert was going to be killed.

At that instant, Yan Yangtian and Lin Moli were extremely uneasy because Chu Feng did not appear. It meant that Chu Feng gave up on saving Qi Fengyang, and in the future, their days and nights would be lived in anxiousness.

As for Qi Fengyang, he only gradually closed his eyes. He already confirmed the result. This result was actually the one he looked forward to the most. At least he would not affect anyone else.

However, as for the crowd who did not know about the inner matters, they had complicated emotions as they tightly stared at the huge guillotine. They awaited for the descent of the guillotine and the scene of Qi Fengyang being cut into two.

“Mansion Lord.” At that instant, the person responsible for the beheading cast his gaze towards Lin Moli.

As for Lin Moli, he first looked at Qi Fengyang, then he said with

a full face of helpless, “Kill!”

whoosh But immediately after Lin Moli spoke, a cold light flew over. The speed was fast, and the power was strong. It directly shot through the guard’s head and the person responsible for the execution died on scene!

“Who?”

At that instant, everyone was shocked. They couldn’t help casting their gaze towards the direction in which the cold light flew from, and at that instant, they could clearly see the figure of a young man with his feet in the air while standing and floating.

That young man was exactly Chu Feng. The current Chu Feng was hung in mid-air. The Azure Dragon School’s long robe on his body fluttered along with the wind, and on his shoulder, there was even a huge gunnysack. With an evil smile on his face, he swept over the crowd and said, “Excuse me everyone. I, Chu Feng, have come late!”

“Chu Feng! It is actually Chu Feng!!”

“How does he dare to come to this place? How is he able to walk in the air?”

“Heavens! Could it be that Chu Feng also entered the Heaven realm? No, that’s not right. His aura is still clearly in the 3rd level of the Profound realm and it is the same as when he fought with

Dugu Aoyun.”

Chu Feng appearance caused yells of surprise from everyone. No matter if they recognized Chu Feng or not, at that instant, they were dumbfounded and disbelief filled their eyes.

“Chu Feng, you’ve got quite the nerve to come here. You actually dare to appear in front of me!”

But compared to others, Yan Yangtian was greatly joyful and without saying anything more, he flew up and arrived behind Chu Feng to block his escape.

“Let my brother Qi Fengyang go and I’ll temporarily not chase after today’s matter.” Chu Feng calmly said without being the slightest bit afraid.

“Hmph. Chu Feng, quite big words you have there. What capabilities do you have to speak to me like that?” Lin Moli arrogantly smiled widely. After seeing Chu Feng, his tense heart was finally eased.

“With what? With him!” Chu Feng only coldly smiled and suddenly threw the gunnysack on his shoulder away. Then, a body appeared in front of everyone’s faces.

That person was a big fatty. He was completely naked and he did not wear a single thing. On his waist, there was a big sign, and the sign just happened to obstruct the view of his groin.



The most important thing was that on the sign, with fresh, red blood, there were four big words written on it: “I am a pervert!” Then when one looked at his face, they would see that it was Lin Moli’s son, Lin Chong!

## Chapter 312: You Forced It

---

The current Lin Chong was tormented a bit miserably. His hair was made quite similar to a chicken's nest, and he was beaten up to the point that his nose turned blue and his face swelled up. He was being held in the air by Chu Feng grabbing his neck and he was painfully struggling, yet he was powerless to escape.

“Chong'er!” After seeing Lin Chong, the face who changed the greatest was none other than Lin Moli. He pointed at Chu Feng and fiercely said, “Chu Feng, quickly let my Chong'er go or else I'll cut your corpse into ten thousand pieces!!”

“Oh? I say, Mansion Lord, who are you scaring right now? If I don't let him go, you will cut my corpse into ten thousand pieces; but then if I let him go, won't you split my corpse with five horses?”

“Damn. I haven't even seen you before, yet you let word out and said that I tried to assassinate you. You gave an order to kill me, not even letting people who are related to me go. At the end, I appear in front of you right now, and god damn, you still let out such nonsense?”

“I'll say this to you. Speak less rubbish, and let my brother Qi Fengyang go or else I'll skin your trash son alive.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he took out a dagger from his waist. The dagger flashed with cold glare and it was extremely sharp. Chu Feng took it from Lin Chong's bedroom when he passed by it. For

scaring people, this thing was more useful than the Bow of Hundred Transformations that Chu Feng could condense out at any moment.

“You dare?!” Seeing that, the face of Lin Moli who doted extremely on Lin Chong instantly changed greatly from fright and he threatened with an angry bellow.

“Hmph. I don’t dare? Look clearly. See whether I dare or not!”

But Chu Feng only coldly snorted and following that, his arm suddenly dropped down. The dagger in his hand turned into a row of white light and it streaked past Lin Chong’s hand.

“Ahh~~~”

After streaking past, Lin Chong instantly made a miserable cry which was like a ghost crying and a wolf howling because three of his fingers were already cut off by Chu Feng. The agony caused his head to be full of sweat, and his tears and snot also flowed out because he who stood high on top had never felt such pain.

“Chu Feng, I will kill you!” That scene did not anger Lin Moli lightly. His old face turned purple from fury, and his face wished it could eat Chu Feng alive.

“What did you say? I couldn’t hear it clearly!” Chu Feng coldly smiled and his blade cut down again. This time, he cut off two of Lin Chong’s remaining fingers.

“Ahh~~~~~” At that instant, Lin Chong was even louder and with sobs, he yelled towards Lin Moli, “Father, quickly release Senior Qi or else your son, I, will be tortured to death by him!!”

“Release him! Release Qi Fengyang!” Seeing his precious son in such a miserable and painful state, Lin Moli’s heart ached even more and he quickly ordered the release.

“No, he cannot be released!” In response, Yan Yangtian quickly yelled.

“What I say here goes! I said release him! Quickly release him!!” Lin Moli was also angered. To him, there was nothing else more important than his son.

Naturally, the guards of the Qilin Prince’s Mansion would not dare to go against Lin Moli’s intentions. They hurriedly untied Qi Fengyang’s ropes and dragged him down away from below the guillotine.

“Stay away from the sentencing stage!” Chu Feng furiously howled.

Lin Moli who was deeply afraid that his son was going to be harmed did not dare to be slow. He quickly ordered everyone on the sentencing stage to leave and he himself also quickly left the sentencing stage.

Only after everyone was far away from the sentencing stage and himself did Chu Feng hold Lin Chong with one hand and arrive onto the sentencing stage. At that instant, Chu Feng could truly feel how weak Qi Fengyang was. It could be seen that in these days, he did not suffer any small amount of torment. At least, the current Qi Fengyang did not have the slightest bit of battle power remaining.

“Brother, your younger brother, I, has come late!” Chu Feng supported Qi Fengyang up and guilt filled his face.

“Ho...You damn boy, I knew you would come, but now’s not the time to put up an act like that. Since you have come, you need to bring me out alive or else even if I become a ghost, I won’t forgive you.”

Qi Fengyang was very weak, but he was very happy because that at least meant that he did not help Chu Feng for nothing before. That he, Qi Fengyang, did not choose the wrong person.

“Don’t worry. Even if you become a ghost, you have me, your younger brother, who will come with you.”

Chu Feng calmly smiled, then his gaze became abnormally strict. He first scanned around the crowd, then his gaze landed on Yan Yangtian who was standing in mid-air and he loudly said, “Move!”

“Today, don’t even thinking of leaving here alive!” But Yan Yangtian did not move at all. He guarded his position and killing intent filled his gaze.

“I told you to move!” Seeing that, Chu Feng did not have mercy. He raised his hand, grabbed Lin Chong’s arm, then twisted back. With a snap, Lin Chong’s arm was forced into a “V” shape.

“Ahh~~ Damn Yan Yangtian, quickly scram!” Lin Chong grimaced from the pain and he angrily and loudly cursed.

“Yan Yangtian, move! This is an order!” At the same time, Lin Moli who loved his son and was extremely anxious also roared at Yan Yangtian.

Facing Lin Moli’s forceful attitude, Yan Yangtian was tightly frowning and he was stuck in a difficult situation. But at the end, he still cooperated and not only did he retract his sealing pressure, he also obediently backed away to the side.

Seeing that, Chu Feng propped Qi Fengyang with one hand, and grabbed tightly onto Lin Chong with the other. After that, light flashed under his feet and with a swish, he explosively shot out like a meteorite. He madly ran towards the horizon in the distance, and the direction he was escaping towards was the Valley of Hundred Bends.

“Want to leave? It won’t be that easy!” At the same time, Lin Moli and Yan Yangtian almost moved at the same time and their speed were even quicker than Chu Feng as they chased after him.

“Heavens! Chu Feng has actually saved Qi Fengyang with his own power!”

“This boy has so much nerves that it can cover the sky. But on that topic, he is able to walk on air with his cultivation, so is it possible that he got the inheritance of the Imperial Sky Sage?”

After Chu Feng and the others left, the originally completely silent sentencing ground instantly went into an uproar and everyone was stupefied by the scene that happened just now.

Chu Feng, a young man being only sixteen years old, courageously intruded into the sentencing grounds of the Qilin Prince's Mansion, and with his own power, he took Qi Fengyang away from the hands of the two Heaven realm experts, the lord of the Qilin Prince's Mansion, Lin Moli, and the head of the Lingyun School, Yan Yangtian. That just simply sounded like a legend.

Although Chu Feng did rely on special methods to do all that, but purely that resourcefulness, that bravery, that strength could not be found on many people.

So, that caused a large number of people at that moment to not feel that Chu Feng was doing any unrighteousness. Rather, many people displayed admiration. Especially the younger generation. Some even idolized him because Chu Feng's current actions were something that they dreamt of doing, yet did not dare and could not do.

As people felt shock for the various things that Chu Feng was doing, he was running in the air for his life. As he ran, he howled towards Yan Yangtian who was getting nearer and nearer, “If you

continue following me, do you believe that I will kill Lin Chong?”

“Kill! Go ahead and kill!” Not only was Yan Yangtian not afraid, he even mocked him with cold words.

“Lin Moli, tell him to back away or else I’ll kill your son right here.” Chu Feng knew that Yan Yangtian did not care about the life and death of Lin Chong, so he cast his gaze towards Lin Moli who was behind Yan Yangtian.

“Mansion Lord, do not be threatened by this boy. Today, he must not be able to escape or else the future troubles will never end. At that time, it wouldn’t be as simple as just your son dying, but an entire clan!”

Seeing that, Yan Yangtian also quickly urged, and as he spoke, he continued approaching near Chu Feng. Simultaneously, the pressure of the horrifying Heaven realm also started to hiddenly envelop Chu Feng.

After hearing Yan Yangtian’s advises, even Lin Moli started to hesitate. Although his precious son was important to him, if he were to compare his son to the entire Qilin Prince’s Mansion, that decision was actually not hard to make.

Seeing that Lin Moli was already shaken and Yan Yangtian was pursuing relentlessly, Chu Feng’s brows tightly furrowed and he was aware that the situation wasn’t good. So, his face couldn’t help turning sinister and a streak of decision flashed into his gaze.



He grabbed Lin Chong with one hand and raised him highly up. After that, layers of Profound power unceasingly surged from his palm and he ferociously said to Yan Yangtian and Lin Moli,

“You two have forced me on this. Today, you better not let me escape or else even if you hide to the ends of the skies or the corners of the oceans, in the future, I will still kill both of you.”

As he spoke, Chu Feng suddenly tightened his palm and the terrifying Profound power surged into Lin Chong’s body. He swelled up bigger and bigger, and at the end, with a huge explosion, Lin Chong became a mist of blood that floated in the air.

# Chapter 313: Demonic Wings

---

The fresh, red mist of blood floated around in the air and the perverted Lin Chong already completely died. Chu Feng did not give him a single chance to survive.

At that instant, Lin Moli and Yan Yangtian were both taken aback and they were flabbergasted by Chu Feng's action.

Yan Yangtian never would have expected that. He never would have expected that Chu Feng really dared to kill Lin Chong because after all, Lin Chong was currently Chu Feng's only tool of protection.

As for Lin Moli, saying that he had the greatest reaction was the closest description. The son he doted on so much, the son whom he treated like a treasure was killed by someone at that moment. He was even killed in such a way that there wasn't even a corpse or any remains. How could he possibly be able to remain calm?

“Chu Feng, I will cut your corpse into ten thousand pieces!!”

Suddenly, Lin Moli howled towards the sky and his furious bellow was like thunder yet also like the sound of the king of beasts. Even the air trembled slightly from the shaking as if it was going to collapse at any time. The birds and beasts within dozens of miles ran and flew in random directions.

At the same time, two waves of horrifying Heaven realm pressure covered the sky and earth as it surged out. It was pressure from the

gathering of Heaven power. That special power surged in the air and one could clearly see that even the air was slightly quivering, as though it was afraid of the wave of savage power.

“Dammit. The pressure of the Heaven realm is truly too strong.”

Before the pressure had actually even arrived, Chu Feng was able to feel the huge power. Even his blood was boiling and his organs were twisting. The bones in his entire body were creaking and making sounds as if his entire body was going to shatter.

Although the current Chu Feng borrowed Eggy’s power and he was an expert in the 3rd level of the Profound realm, when facing powerful people in the Heaven realm, he was able to truly feel how weak he was, to the point that he could not even take a single strike from them.

Chu Feng had not the slightest bit of doubt that if the two waves of pressure were to approach, without them even using any other methods and with purely the pressure, it could crush him to death alive. It could crush him so that his bones would turn into powder and he would become a mist of blood.

But Chu Feng was not an idiot. Almost at the same time that he killed Lin Chong, he already linked with Eggy and gave his body over to Eggy to control. So, when Chu Feng’s pupils shrunk, his body was already completely taken over by Eggy.

“Mansion Lord, don’t kill him and leave him with his life. This Chu Feng has too many secrets on his body, and not only does he

have the bodily martial skill to walk on air, I'm afraid that he also grasped Secret Skills from the legends. Let's first find out what secrets he has on him before slowly torturing him to death."

At that instant, Yan Yangtian was even secretly sending a mental message to Lin Moli and he felt that Chu Feng's little life was already completely grasped within his hand. His greedy heart caused his goal to land on the Secret Skills on Chu Feng's body.

"Mm."

After hearing those words, Lin Moli who was originally filled with the flames of fury recovered a bit of reason. Naturally, he was going to let Chu Feng pay the price, but at the same time, he wanted to get the special methods from Chu Feng's body. It would have great benefits for both his Qilin Prince's Mansion and for him.

\*huuuwuuu~~~~~"

But just at that time, black-coloured gas suddenly surged out from Chu Feng's body. The appearance of the gas was like a black cloud that covered the sky. At the same time, it brought along sounds that were like ghosts crying and wolves howling, as well as bone-piercing chilliness.

That chilliness was not icy cold, but it indescribably strange. The most important part was that after the black-coloured gas appeared, Chu Feng's aura rapidly rose and it was over several times stronger than before.

“This feeling...is very strange. It is as if all the dark energy in the world is gathering here. Could it be that there is a demon in Chu Feng’s body?” As they faced such a change, even Yan Yangtian and Lin Moli’s expressions changed greatly and they were frightened.

It was because at that instant, the aura Chu Feng emitted was too strange. It was not something that humans should have. Even the cruel Fierce Beasts or Monstrous Beasts did not have such frightening aura.

\*swish\*

In the instant that Lin Moli and Yan Yangtian were being shocked, Chu Feng’s body abruptly leaped forward and he became a strand of light. With the black-coloured gas, he explosively shot towards the distant horizon. The speed was fast, and it simply caused one’s tongue to be tied. It was more than several times quicker than the Chu Feng before who was using the Imperial Sky Technique.

“Quickly chase and he cannot be able to escape! Kill him! Kill him now! He cannot be left alive!”

At that instant, Yan Yangtian and Lin Moli were terrified because within the black-coloured gas, they felt unprecedented horror. That threatening feeling simply made one’s hair stand up and one’s bones to chill as they couldn’t help but break out in cold sweat.

When such odd gas came from Chu Feng's body, naturally, it caused them to be endlessly nervous. They set their determination to kill Chu Feng right now. They could absolutely not give any chances for breathing or for turning the situation around because they truly did not know what kinds of methods that could defy the heavens remained in the young man's body.

hmm But the time was too late and the black-coloured gas already started to condense and it became a pair of huge black-coloured wings that extended from Chu Feng's back.

The black-coloured wings were several times larger than Chu Feng's body. A single one was dozens of meters long and black-coloured feathers filled them. Other than the feathers, black-coloured gas surrounded them and it was like the ignition of flames.

The most important part was after the black-coloured wings appeared, with every flap, it would create a violent hurricane. Not only did the strange hurricane increase Chu Feng's forwarding speed, it even obstructed Lin Moli and Yan Yangtian.

“Dammit! Is it possible that this boy isn't a person? How can he have such strange power? Are these even methods that a human has?”

Yan Yangtian who was even chatting happily before was currently putting all he had in his old life to chase. He no longer had his earlier calmness and he did not dare to have a single strand of restraint.

Because even if it was him, he already currently used all the methods he had but he was still pressured if he wanted to catch up to Chu Feng. At that moment, he was being left behind bit by bit by Chu Feng, and the speed in which he was doing so became quicker and quicker.

“Bastard! Stand still! Today, I will skin you alive!”

Compared to Yan Yangtian, Lin Moli already entered an enraged state. The fury that was suppressed filled his body once again and it filled his heart.

It was because he could not tolerate that. He could not tolerate that his son was killed in front of his face yet he could only watch as the killer left in such an arrogant way while he was completely powerless. He had to kill Chu Feng.

“So strong! So this is Eggy’s power. Eggy, aren’t you a bit too strong?!”

At the same time, Chu Feng was also stunned by Eggy’s methods because at that instant, the method she displayed was absolutely several times more exceptional than his Imperial Sky Technique, and it was simply not even discussable together.

Although his body was being controlled by Eggy, Chu Feng could still feel that the two Heaven realm experts were currently being left behind by Eggy from far away. The distance between them even got further and further. At least in terms of speed, they

clearly could not match her.

“Ahh!”

pu But just at that time, Chu Feng who was being controlled by Eggy suddenly opened his mouth and spat out a large mouthful of blood. The black-coloured gas that lingered around Chu Feng's body also instantly diminished quite a bit.

“Eggy, are you okay?” Seeing that, Chu Feng instantly tensed up because he knew that something happened to Eggy.

“Dammit. I can't maintain this state for too long and your body can't bear my Demonic Wings as well.” Eggy bitterly said.

“Then quickly stop! Let me control my body again.” Chu Feng was aware that the situation was bad so he started to loudly yell. He wanted to regain control over his body and he didn't want to let Eggy risk her life in order to continue struggling.



## Chapter 314: Lending A Hand As An Exception

---

“No. If I hand your body back to you, will you be able to escape from their hands?”

“If you get caught by them, both you and I will die. Since death is at either left or right, why not let me stake it all against them?” However, Eggy did not even give Chu Feng the chance to seize his body back again.

She unyieldingly wiped the blood on the corner of her mouth and a streak of resolution flashed into her eyes. After that, with the grinding of teeth, she continued to control Chu Feng’s body and did all she could to urge the black-coloured wings at her back to do its best to fly forward.

“Eggy, you...”

At that instant, Chu Feng’s heart really ached. He could feel that Eggy was putting her life on the line. She was doing it for him. However, the feeling of hiding behind a woman while being completely helpless was not fun.

In a situation like that, Eggy’s power became weaker and weaker. The black-coloured gas that coiled around her turned fainter and fainter. Her absolute advantage in speed also started to diminish, and at the end, completely disappeared.

Not only were they unable to throw the two people behind them away, instead, the distance that was uneasily pulled apart was shrinking bit by bit.

“That brat’s speed has become slow. Quick, grab onto this chance and eliminate him with one strike! We cannot give him the tiniest chance to breath.”

Yan Yangtian who was incomparably panicked at first instantly rejoiced when he saw that not only did Chu Feng lose his previous horrifying speed, he even started to sway in the air, seeming that he was going to fall at any time. As he madly yelled, he used the Heaven power in his entire body and used all the power in his body to chase Chu Feng.

“This time, do not give him any chances to escape. I will first split him into eight pieces, then cut his corpse into ten thousand pieces, then tear him into shreds, then crush him into blood and foam!”

The current Lin Moli had violent fury surging in his eyes and his entire body was emitting bone-piercing killing intent. Also, without holding anything back, he staked everything to chase after Chu Feng.

“Ahh!”

Suddenly, another mouthful of blood was spat out from Chu Feng’s body. At the same time, the black-coloured wings behind Chu Feng’s body also immediately disappeared and his body

started to fall, straight into the mountain forest below.

“Will I truly lose to two such weak humans? Heh...this is too funny...”

At that instant, Chu Feng was still unable to control his own body, but next to his ear, he could hear Eggy’s voice that contained extreme bitterness and weakness.

“Dammit...Dammit...”

However, he could not do anything because Eggy’s awareness was already hazy and the control over Chu Feng’s body could not be given back to him. So, Chu Feng could only feel but not do anything while he and Qi Fengyang on his shoulder rapidly dropped.

boom

Finally, Chu Feng and Qi Fengyang landed within the mountain forest and the strong force caused a huge pit to be created in the ground. It gave rise to a burst of strong fumes and within the forest, the wild birds scattered and the wild beasts escaped in random directions.

“Haha! Damn brat, so even you have your times of exhaustion! Let’s see where you escape this time!”

At the same time, Yan Yangtian quickly followed. As he looked at

the rolling thick smoke below, he was endlessly ecstatic but he no longer dared to have the slightest trace of carelessness. He first used his own pressure to envelop everything below, and only after guaranteeing that Chu Feng's only escape was sealed, he gradually descended.

whoosh

Just at that time, Lin Moli also caught up. As he was filled with fury, he jumped straight into the thick smoke and angrily bellowed, "Chu Feng, hand your life over!!"

Lin Moli waved his big sleeve and blew the vast smoke away. However, after everything was able to enter their eyes, no matter if it was Lin Moli or Yan Yangtian, both of their expressions changed greatly. They grimaced and their appearances were abnormally wonderful.

It was because they discovered with astonishment that despite a huge pit was there, Chu Feng's figure wasn't there. Chu Feng was actually not there, and he disappeared without any explanation!

"Where's the person? Where's the person?! Where did he run off to? Come out!!" Lin Moli grabbed a bit onto insanity as he started to madly howl.

"Look, there are words over there!" Just at that time, Yan Yangtian jumped over and pointed his fingers towards the deep pit.

Following the direction of Yan Yangtian's fingers to look, even Lin Moli was shocked. Within the deep pit, there were indeed eight big words. The eight big words were written with powerful strokes while containing the airs of completion. The content of the eight words were, "Azure Dragon Mountain Range, life and death battle!!"

"This~~~" After seeing those eight big words, Yan Yangtian and Lin Moli first took in a breath of cool air, then following that, they looked at each other and discovered that in both of their gazes, blankness, uneasiness, and fear surged similarly.

"What do we do? Is it possible that someone saved Chu Feng?" Lin Moli was frightened by such a sudden scene and he instantly recovered his rationality and he was no longer as mad as before.

"That isn't it. If there was truly a more capable person who helped, there would be no need for Chu Feng to around in such a big circle. Chu Feng certainly used some special methods to conceal both of our eyes and escaped. After all, that brat does originally grasp many inconceivable methods." Yan Yangtian explained.

"Then what should we do now?" Lin Moli, the grand lord of the Qilin Prince's Mansion, had actually lost a sense of what to do.

"What else can we do? There is only one path that can be walked, and that is towards the Azure Dragon School!!" Yan Yangtian cast his gaze towards the Azure Dragon School.

Two days later, within the Valley of Hundred Bends, within the

halls in the clouds, Qi Fengyang confusedly opened his eyes. His memory still remained on the scene in which Chu Feng was carrying him on his back while escaping and falling into the mountain forest. He had not the slightest bit of recollection regarding the scenes that came later.

“You’re awake!” Suddenly, a familiar voice rang out.

Raising his head to look, it was his old friend. The master of this hall, the mysterious expert, the Blue-cloak World Spiritist.

“How about Chu Feng? Where is he? You should have saved him right?” Qi Fengyang stood up with a “ceng” and at that instant, his body already completely recovered and he was anxiously searching for traces of Chu Feng.

“Don’t worry, I already saved him.” The mysterious expert calmly smiled and said.

“Heh. Brother Hengyuan, I knew that you wouldn’t have just left me to die.” Only after hearing those words did a smile appear on Qi Fengyang’s face. He asked, “Where’s Chu Feng? Where did you take him to?”

“I sent him to a place that he should have went to.” The mysterious expert calmly sat on the rocking chair made of bamboo. He held a broken fan and started to fan himself.

“A place that he should have went to?” Qi Fengyang had

confusion across his face.

“I, Jiang Hengyuan, once swore that I wouldn’t interfere with the matters of the Azure Province and that I wouldn’t participate in the affairs of the Azure Province. I only aim to search for the Divine Body.”

“I broke the rules that I set this time in order to save you and Chu Feng. The reason why I saved his life wasn’t for your sake. It was for the sake of him being a good seedling.”

“He already has such talent at such an age. As long as he can continue to develop, his future achievements will not be any worse than the young generations of other provinces.”

“I’m afraid that one day, he will even catch up to the little monsters in my dynasty because within this boy’s body, there seems to be some type of special power. As for what it is, even I can’t say for sure.”

“However, what I had my eyes on wasn’t that. It was that he was willing to risk his own life in order to save you. Not many people have such spirit so he was worth my help.” Jiang Hengyuan explained like that.

At that instant, Qi Fengyang only faintly smiled and he no longer asked about Chu Feng. He started to chat with Jiang Hengyuan about some normal familial matters.

He understood Jiang Hengyuan. His help this time was indeed an exception, and for Chu Feng to have such evaluations from Jiang Hengyuan stated that Chu Feng was currently, without a doubt, in a safe zone.

“Mm~~~”

Simultaneously, in a place which was very distant from the Valley of Hundred Bends, Chu Feng opened his eyes in a daze and rubbed his swollen and aching brain while scanning his surroundings.

But after clearly seeing everything in front of his eyes, his complexion couldn't help changing greatly and his eyes instantly grew round. Unbelievable shock surged within his eyes and he said with incomparable astonishment, “Where is this place?”



# Calamity

# Chapter 315: Resource Treasury

---

High-quality Profound medicine, medium-quality Profound medicine, low-quality Profound medicine.

Top-quality Origin medicine, high-quality Origin medicine, medium-quality Origin medicine, low-quality Origin medicine.

Top-quality spiritual medicine, high-quality spiritual medicine, medium-quality spiritual medicine, low-quality spiritual medicine.

Apart from those cultivation resources, there were also all types of healing remedies, nurturing tonics, including special armor, and weapons created with special materials.

At that very instant surrounding Chu Feng, those treasures were organized tidily and the present Chu Feng was unexpectedly within a ginormous treasury.

“What is this place? There is such a large amount of resources! I’m rich! I am truly rich!” Chu Feng’s mouth was opened widely from shock because he truly fell into a mountain of gold!

“Waa, Chu Feng, you’ve become rich! There are so many Profound medicines!” Just at that time, Eggy’s voice also sounded out in Chu Feng’s brain and the state of her voice was called “a vigorous dragon and lively tiger”. Not only did she not seem injured at all, rather, she seemed even healthier than before.

“Eggy? You’re awake! Nothing happened to you! This is truly great!”

After hearing Eggy’s voice, Chu Feng was also incomparably joyful because within his memories, Eggy used forbidden methods in order to save him, but at the end, fell into the mountain forest because of the lack of strength.

“Yeah. I...I am actually fine, and nothing happened to me. This is very strange. Chu Feng, wasn’t it you who saved me?” Similarly, Eggy also had a full face of confusion and her pair of shiny eyes blinked a few times while emanating puzzledness.

“I don’t know what had actually happened. According to the situation that time, we should have already been undoubtedly dead. Why has nothing happened to either you or me right now? We even arrived inside a treasury like this! That’s right, where did my elder brother Qi Fengyang go? Why isn’t he here anymore?”

Chu Feng remembered about Qi Fengyang only after thinking back to the scene before. He quickly stood up and searched everywhere, but he could not find any traces of Qi Fengyang. From that, Chu Feng couldn’t avoid being a bit worried.

“This is?!” At that instant, Chu Feng suddenly discovered that there was a paper slip in the area where he was laying before. He picked it up to look, and there were only a few rows of simple words written on it. However, it instantly caused Chu Feng’s tense heart to ease.

“Qi Fengyang is already safe so there is no need to keep having him in your mind. As for where this place is, you will know after you go out. But I advise you that before going out, you better loot every single thing in here or else you will regret it!”

“Who left this paper slip behind?” Chu Feng was a bit shocked as he confirmed that he was saved by someone.

“No need to think about it Chu Feng. If I’m not mistaken, it should be that mysterious expert in the Valley of Hundred Bends who saved you. Qi Fengyang has already been taken away by him and I’m sure that he was the one who brought you to this place.” Eggy calmly analyzed.

“It was him?” Chu Feng had no way of confirming, but after some detailed thinking, within the people who he knew, other than that person, there was truly no one else who could save him.

“Whatever. Put the things in here away first or else you would be disappointing that person’s meticulous efforts right?”

Chu Feng was not any righteous gentleman and he only lived for himself and the people around him. So naturally, when such fat meat came to the side of his mouth, he would not let it go. He stood up and first walked towards one of the walls because on that wall, the things that were densely hung on it were all Cosmos Sacks.

If Chu Feng wanted to collect so many treasures, Cosmos Sacks were something that could not be omitted, and obviously, the Cosmos Sacks over there were all prepared for Chu Feng.

No sooner said than done, Chu Feng did not move the slightest bit slow and he started to collect the treasures like how the great winds swept away the clouds. With one wave, he gathered the things he could use, and with the other, he gathered the things he could not use. At the end, he separated them into two big bags and threw them over his shoulder.

Although there were only two bags, within them were all little delicate Cosmos Sacks. Treasures filled every Cosmos Sack and from that, it could be imagined how many good things there were collected within Chu Feng's two big bags.

But even so, Chu Feng did not take all the treasures away from the treasury. Of course, the things he left behind were only things that he didn't really take notice of, such as things like spiritual medicines and spiritual beads. They were not of great help towards Chu Feng, so it was fine even if they were not taken.

“Heh. This time, quite a bit of profit has been made. With so many profound medicines, perhaps even I can break into the Profound realm.”

The current Chu Feng was extremely excited. The smile on his little face was even more dazzling than the sun. It was simply the first time in his life that he had seen so many profound medicines.

Chu Feng successively broke through two levels of cultivation within the Essence Pool and he was presently in the 9th level of the Origin realm. He was only one step away from the Profound realm,

but Chu Feng knew that with the nature of the several Divine Lightning within his dantian, he needed to pay quite a big price in order to successfully enter the Profound realm.

Before, Chu Feng was in quite a difficult position because if he used Profound medicines to break into that realm, he truly required an extremely enormous amount. But with his current amount, that problem seemed to be solved.

Chu Feng felt that even if he could not break into the Profound realm after refining all of the Profound medicines, it would absolutely not be too far off. Making a breakthrough would only be a matter of time.

“Heh. Let’s see who provided such a grand amount of resources for me.”

Chu Feng prepared to leave after looting everything. He was already sure that it was a certain power’s treasury, but he did not know which power it was which had such abundant resources.

Although the Spirit Formation there was very strong, with Chu Feng’s methods, it was quite easy to open as he went towards the outside from the inside.

After sneaking out of the treasury, Chu Feng saw four familiar figures who stood in front of him with faces full of panic.

They were four old people and every single one of them had grey-

white hair with vigorous spirits. They were part of the Twelve Protectors of the Lingyun School.

“It’s you?!”

The four Protectors hurriedly ran over to investigate the situation because they heard the opening sounds of the big doors to the treasury. After seeing Chu Feng, they immediately revealed faces that were even more stunned than Chu Feng’s.

At that instant, Chu Feng also finally reacted to what had happened. No wonder that person left the paper slip and said that Chu Feng would regret it if he didn’t loot everything. He did indeed make sense. After all, this was the treasury of Chu Feng’s archenemy, the Lingyun School.

“You damn little brat! As you lured the tiger away from the mountain, you took the chance to rob my Lingyun School’s treasury? Today, we will kill you!” The bodies of the four old people trembled from anger and immediately, they rushed over to start throwing fatal attacks towards Chu Feng.

“Hmph.” However, Chu Feng only coldly snorted as he was not afraid in the slightest. With Eggy’s power that surged throughout his body, Chu Feng already entered the 3rd level of the Profound realm, and with a thought, the Blade of the Void Dragon’s Cry was used.

boom Visible pressure descended from the sky and not only did it completely disintegrate the attacks from the four old people, even

their bodies were instantly crushed. They already died and did not have any chances to condense their surviving consciousness.

“Even old garbage like you four want to kill me?” Chu Feng disdainfully shot a glance towards the four old people, then he walked outside.

As he walked, Chu Feng also saw some Lingyun School elders, but since even the Four Protectors couldn’t defeat Chu Feng, how could they stop him? At the end, they received the same ending as they were all killed by Chu Feng.

After some little troubles, Chu Feng finally walked out of the resource treasury. At that instant, what appeared in front of his eyes was indeed the hosting grounds of the Hundred School Gathering back in the day, the Lingyun School.



## Chapter 316: Returning A Present

---

After coming out of the treasury, he did not rush to leave that area. Instead, he carefully strolled around the Lingyun School because from the words “luring the tiger to leave the mountain”, he got some information out of them.

He wanted to confirm to see whether the old guy Yan Yangtian returned to the Lingyun School or not. If he didn't, then he could cause huge chaos in the Lingyun School because other than Yan Yangtian, there was no one who could threaten, or even stop, the current Chu Feng within the Lingyun School.

“Ahh, I wonder if Lord School Head and the others arrived at the Azure Dragon School now or not and how the battle situation is.”

“This time, pretty much all the experts of my Lingyun School were sent and all of them rode away on top-quality White-headed Eagles. Looking at the time, they should have arrived at the Azure Dragon School by now. I'm sure that the Azure Dragon School has already been stamped flat by my Lingyun School right?”

“Hmph. They deserved it. They are simply looking to die by daring to oppose my Lingyun School.” Immediately when Chu Feng walked out, he heard two core disciples proudly discussing about their own school in a manner as if they were venting their anger out.

“Yan Yangtian went to my Azure Dragon School?” At that instant, Chu Feng's expression changed and his eyebrows tightly

furrowed. He thought of a possibility. A possibility that was within expectations yet unwished to happen.

So, he no longer hid around. He suddenly flew out from the corner, pointed at the two core disciples in front of him and loudly said, “You two, stand still!”

“Who is making all this damn noise?” Every single one of the disciples of the Lingyun School were the masters of arrogance. They did not lower their heads as they walked, they wished they could raise their faces straight up into the sky. Especially the core disciples. They had no ends to their pride, so how could they tolerate anyone loudly yelling at them like that?

So, with hearts full of fury, the two disciples suddenly spun their bodies around. Their fierce face could really scare a group of children to death. But when they faced Chu Feng who had an evil smile on his face, they were instantly stupefied.

Their eyes were widened so roundly and they no longer had their previous bloodlust. Replacing it was never-ending fear, and as they trembled while backing away, they pointed at Chu Feng and said, “You...you...you...” They were so scared that they could no longer speak.

The current Qilin Prince’s Mansion allied with Lingyun School to apprehend Chu Feng, so his portraits already were already posted throughout the Lingyun School. Thus, no matter if one already saw Chu Feng before or not, everyone knew Chu Feng’s appearance.

In addition to the various deeds that Chu Feng did before, he already left a terrifying shadow within the young generation's hearts in the Azure Province. How was it possible that they weren't afraid? They almost wet themselves.

Seeing that they two of them were going to yell loudly, Chu Feng hurriedly leaped forward and arrived in front of the two in a blink. He used his hand to cover both of their mouths and evilly smiled and said, "That's right, I'm Chu Feng. But I have a question I want to ask you two. Where did you just say Yan Yangtian went?"

As the number one school of the Azure Province, no matter it if was in terms of the numbers or strength of the elders or disciples, the Lingyun School was far from being comparable by the other schools. The Lingyun School was the true overlord within so many schools. Even if the other schools worked together, they would still be unable to shake the position of the Lingyun School. That was how powerful they were.

At that instant, in the core zone of the Lingyun School, within a luxurious and spacious main hall, the strongest elders from the Lingyun School's core zone and even inner court gathered along with the most excellent core disciples in the Lingyun School. With some early estimations, there were several tens of thousands of people.

The leader was one of the Twelve Protectors. He stood on top of the tall stage which was in the middle of the main hall and towered above to look at his surroundings. He loudly said,

“Chu Feng, the disciple from the Azure Dragon School, killed a disciple from my Lingyun School and also attempted to assassinate the lord of the Qilin Prince’s Mansion. His nerves could cover the skies and his crimes cannot be forgiven!”

“Right now, the head of my Lingyun School is leading the elite army of my Lingyun School while working together with the Qilin Prince’s Mansion. They are advancing towards the Azure Dragon School to kill Chu Feng and to eliminate his accomplices. They are the evils of the Azure Province.”

“As for us, we are the core power within the current Lingyun School and we have obligation to protect the peace of my Lingyun School. So, before Lord School Head returns, I hope that everyone here can increase alertness to prevent anyone from entering to harm my school’s disciples while the school is empty.”

“Lord Protector, don’t worry. Even if the school head isn’t here, my Lingyun School is still the overlord of the Azure Province and no one would dare to come here to make a mess.”

“That’s right. Even if there is someone who comes forward to cause a mess, we will kill them to the point that they’ll be crapping and wetting themselves. We will let them know our strength, and we’ll let them know that the dignity of my Lingyun School does not allow any blaspheming.” At that instant, no matter if it was the Lingyun School’s elders or disciples, they self-confidently loudly yelled.

bang

But just at that time, the shut big doors to the main hall was suddenly shattered and opened. Simultaneously, a figure also rushed into the main hall like a ghost and arrived onto the tall stage. With one foot, it kicked the Protector down to the ground and he was stepped under that foot.

That person was exactly Chu Feng. With the wave of his arm, boundless Spirit Formations sealed all the exits of the main hall, and after that, he swept his strict gaze over all the Lingyun School's elders and disciples. He evilly smiled and said, "The overlord of the Azure Province, have you been well since last time?"

"Chu Feng?!"

The sudden change caused many people to be astonished, but when they saw who the person who came in was and the Protector who was being stepped under his foot, they instantly became incomparably panicked. Every single one was dumbfounded from fright, and their previous confidence, their previous wild arrogance was, at that instant, no more.

"Run!!"

Finally, someone yelled out loudly, and the current elites of the Lingyun School were like birds frightened by the sound of a bow. They started to do all they could to madly run towards the exits of the main hall.

But it was useless. The exits were already sealed by Chu Feng. The Spirit Formation that Chu Feng laid was an impassable copper and iron wall and every single person in that place was locked in.

“Chu Feng, what are you planning to do?” At that instant, the Protector who was being stepped under Chu Feng’s foot was incomparably alarmed as he loudly yelled.

Although the people in that place weren’t the strongest people in the Lingyun School, they were still the future hope of the Lingyun School. Especially the core disciples. They were the important targets of protection of the Lingyun School because whether the school could rise greatly in power in the future depended on them.

At that moment, those people were all stuck in that place so how could that Protector not be worried? After all, Chu Feng and the Lingyun School were currently like water and fire and they did not mix. Even idiots could imagine what Chu Feng was going to do when he appeared at that place.

“What I am planning to do?” As he faced the Protector’s questioning, Chu Feng first lightly smiled, then he suddenly stamped down and shattered the Protector’s head. Fresh blood sprayed and shot out over the tall stage.

Following that, Chu Feng raised his head and he swept his gaze of killing intent towards the densely packed figures in the main hall and coldly said,

“Yan Yangtian is currently leading the army of the Lingyun

School to destroy my Azure Dragon School's thousand years of foundation. However, what I only want to do in this period of time is to return a present to him!"

# Chapter 317: Widespread Slaughtering

---

boom boom boom~~~

The Azure Dragon Mountain Range, within the Azure Dragon School. The flames of battle never-ended and booms rang out everywhere.

Within the circumference of a hundred miles, both birds and beasts were frightened. Outside of the Azure Dragon Mountain Range, one could also clearly see the rolling thick smoke that rose to the sky and they could feel the slight trembling of the earth under their feet, as if there was an earthquake.

That situation shocked the powers and citizens around the Azure Dragon School. No matter if it were cultivators or commoners, as they looked at the distant ancient mountain range that was enveloped by fumes, they kept on sighing.

“Ahh, the school that has been erected for a thousand years gets destroyed in such a way. In the future, it seems like my children and grandchildren will need to rely on other schools for cultivation.”

“This is a matter that couldn’t be helped. Who told the Azure Dragon School to offend the Lingyun School right? They must pay for their crimes, so we can only hope that the flames of this battle will not also affect us innocent people.”

At that instant, people’s faces hung different emotions. Some felt



pity, some felt regret, some felt worried that the battle would also affect themselves, but the thing that had to be admitted was that in the future, there would no longer be a Azure Dragon School in the Azure Dragon Mountain Range.

If the young people in that piece of land wanted to do martial cultivation, they could only walk a longer road to go towards other schools. To them, it was truly a huge loss.

At that instant, within the Azure Dragon School, the people from the Lingyun School and Qilin Prince's Mansion were destroying everything in the Azure Dragon School as they wished because almost everyone in the Azure Dragon School left. The ones who remained were only people who did dishonest activities, so the Azure Dragon School was like an empty city.

Where were there any intentions of a battle of life and death? He was simply playing around with them, and they were tricked. So, no matter if it was the people from the Lingyun School or the people from the Qilin Prince's Mansion, they were extremely furious. Only wild destruction could vent the anger out in their current hearts.

Especially Lin Moli whose son got killed by Chu Feng. It was as if he went into a rage, and with the strength of the Heaven realm, he went around the Azure Dragon School's core zone and caused chaos by himself. The gorgeous structures were no longer the same after he threw attacks at them, but he was still ravaging.

“We were tricked. We were tricked by that brat Chu Feng. At the start, he never planned to fight against us with his life, yet we

believed him. Heh...” Yan Yangtian stood in the air while looking at the people who were devastating with everything they had. However, a bitter smile was hung on the corners of his mouth and his face was abnormally gloomy.

He wasn't so gloomy because he was tricked. It was because today, a huge root of disaster was buried, a hidden disease that was impossible to heal. That was why he was so gloomy. He knew that Chu Feng was still going to return, but when Chu Feng reappeared in front of his face, the one who would die would certainly be himself.

“Ahh~~~~~”

Suddenly, Yan Yangtian insanely howled. The ear-piercing sound shook the air until it was trembling, and even the Lingyun School disciples and the Qilin Prince's Mansion guards found it hard to endure it. They couldn't help but cover their ears and painfully rolled on the ground.

Only after a long while did he stop howling. However, the current him was like Lin Moli. His face was filled with fury, then his entire person was like an arrow which left the bow as he shot into the Azure Dragon School and started to unrestrainedly destroy everything in the Azure Dragon School to calm his uneasy emotions.

At the same time, within the main hall of the Lingyun School, corpses stacked up to form mountains and the blood flowed to form rivers. Chu Feng was still sitting on top of tall stage. Not a single drop of blood stained his robe and as he sat on top of the

Protector's body, he smiled while looking at everything below.

Chu Feng personally killed several tens of thousands of people. Some were old, some were middle-aged, and some were people who were around the same generation as Chu Feng. All of them had extreme good martial cultivating talent and they were the elites who had very strong potential.

But currently, they all died by Chu Feng's hands, but Chu Feng's face did not change in the slightest because of their death.

This was a matter of position. It had no relation to morality, only grudges. On the battlefield, a soldier that had mercy towards the enemy was not a good soldier.

Chu Feng wasn't a soldier, but in this place, it was his battlefield. The people from the Lingyun School were Chu Feng's enemy, so Chu Feng would not have mercy towards his enemies. He would not have the tiniest bit of self-blame by killing them, because in Chu Feng's heart, his enemies deserved to die.

hmm Suddenly, with a thought from Chu Feng, large amounts of Spirit Formation power started to surge out of his body.

Following Chu Feng's command, more large amounts of strange symbols were condensed out. With special patterns, they started to wander around in the ocean of corpses. It was a huge Spirit Formation.

With lightning fast methods and after laying another Spirit Formation, Chu Feng removed the Spirit Formation that sealed the main hall, leaped down from the tall stage, gradually walked towards the outside of the hall, and lightly said, “Even though we were enemies, this time, I’ll give all of you a dignified funeral.”

huu~~~

Just as Chu Feng walked out of the main hall, the Spirit Formation started to activate. Flames that rose to the skies surged out from the formation and it quickly lit the corpses up and ignited the entire palace.

“Look! The main hall is on fire! What happened?”

“This isn’t good! Quickly go fight the fire!!” Seeing that the most sacred palace was being burnt by raging flames, many elders and disciples of the Lingyun School instantly panicked. They hurriedly ran towards the main hall, and they even rang the big bell as they wanted to fight the fire.

However, they did not know that a demon with thick bloodlust was grasping a formless death god’s sickle as he awaited for their approach. This time, Chu Feng truly prepared for a widespread slaughtering.

The Lingyun School was extremely big, and the abilities of Chu Feng himself were limited. So, Chu Feng set his target all onto the Lingyun School’s core disciples and core elders. The ones he wanted to kill were the elites of the Lingyun School, but even so,

Chu Feng could not completely kill them all.

Since he could not kill them all, Chu Feng chose destruction. He started to destroy the most sacred, most important place in the Lingyun School. He wrecked the luxurious and dazzling palaces, burnt Mysterious Techniques and martial skills, and after the time of a full day and night, he turned the Lingyun School upside down, then he swaggeringly left whenever he felt like it.

Then after two more days, several hundred huge White-headed Eagles from the east of the Lingyun School appeared. They were the elites of the Lingyun School, and after they were led by Yan Yangtian and flattened the Azure Dragon School, they were returning back victoriously.

At that instant, Yan Yangtian was not flying. By himself, he sat on the White-headed Eagle in the front. He did not speak anything while he had his eyes close for resting. No one knew what he was thinking about.

On the other hand, the elders and disciples all had pleased faces and they started to announce their achievements.

“But it has to be said that this Azure Dragon School is rather large. One would really not think that it was a second-rate school before.”

“Hmph. So what if it’s big? Was it still not flattened by us without leaving a single strand of fur behind?”

“That’s right. Those who offend my Lingyun School in the Azure Province will only end up like this. That Chu Feng so impudent, but this time, didn’t he just run away with his tail between his legs? I couldn’t even see his shadow.” Several young core disciples were proudly bragging.

As for the elders, although they weren’t as open as the disciples, after hearing them talk about that, their faces also brimmed with smiles of pride.

It was because after that matter were to spread out, at least it would stabilize the Lingyun School’s position of being the overlord of the Azure Province and it would let everyone know what result one would get if they were to oppose the Lingyun School.

“Look, what’s that?!” But just at that time, a disciple with sharp eyes suddenly stood up. He pointed at the direction of the Lingyun School and extremely anxiously yelled.

“What are you making such a big fuss of...Heavens! This...” When others saw it as well and reacted to it, their faces similarly changed greatly and they were incomparably shocked as they appeared abnormally terrified.

After Yan Yangtian opened his eyes, even his pupils abruptly shrunk. On his originally calm demeanor, uneasiness surged. Without saying anything, he rose into the air and after leaving the White-headed Eagle, he quickly flew towards the Lingyun School.

At the same time, other people steered the White-headed Eagle

underneath them with all they had and hurried towards the Lingyun School with their fastest speed.

At that very instant, their hearts were filled with uneasiness. Although they had not seen everything clearly yet, they already knew that the Lingyun School they were so proud of was attacked by someone!

# Chapter 318: Road Of Extinction

---

“Heavens! This...this...this...Why did this happen?”

“Who did this?”

When Yan Yangtian and the strongest elites of the Lingyun School returned and saw the current state of the Lingyun School, their faces turned pale-white one after the other and fury and sorrow was within their eyes.

Although the current Lingyun School was not flattened, but saying that it could no longer be recognized was reasonable. Especially the core zone. The place that was the most luxurious and was the most invested towards already got destroyed into a complete mess.

The corpse of core disciples and core elders scattered everywhere and every single person was in such a wretched state that one could not bear looking at them. Martial Skills Building, Cultivation Building...all of them were ravaged. All of the martial skills were burnt into nothing and cultivation resources were destroyed.

Despite there were very few people who died or were injured within the inner court disciples and elders, they were still not lightly frightened. Many people escaped the Lingyun School and they were deeply afraid of being dragged down by it. The ones who remained were currently urgently saving and healing as they were led by the elders.



“Quick, go rescue, go rescue!” After being at a loss for quite a while, Yan Yangtian slowly came to his senses and loudly yelled.

And from then on, the elites on top of the White-headed Eagles quickly rushed down and started to help the people that hadn’t died yet.

However, when he was ordering others to rescue, Yan Yangtian gradually descended from the sky. He went over an area of ruined land. He did not say a single thing and he sank into silence.

“Lord School Head, this isn’t good! Over half of my school’s elite disciples and elders have died, and even the Resource Treasury has been looted completely with nothing left behind.” Several Protectors ran over with faces full of panic, and even they could not remain calm.

Because this time, the Lingyun School’s losses were really too big. The outstanding disciples and elders that had been developed for many years were almost completely slaughtered. Even the Resource Treasury that had been accumulating for many years was looted completely, and the excellent quality martial skills were burnt as well.

The Lingyun School, the grand, number one school of the Azure Province was made into that state by someone. Putting aside that today’s losses were heavy, causing their vitality to be greatly harmed, if this matter were to be spread out, the Lingyun School would become the laughing stock of the Azure Province.

“Who was it? Whose deed was this?! I must strip his skin and extract his tendons!” Yan Yangtian suddenly furiously howled. His voice spread past a hundred miles and everyone could feel his anger.

“Lord School head, Lord School Head, I know who did it! I know who did it!” Suddenly, several core disciples ran over with panic across their faces. They were even propping a person up. It was a rather well known elder in the core zone.

But currently, that elder had heavy injuries all over his body, cultivation that could not be kept, and he was also on the border of life and death. However, he was still conscious.

“Elder Liu, who was the one that actually did this?” At that instant, before letting Yan Yangtian speak, the several Protectors could not wait any longer as they went up to closely ask.

“It was...Chu...Chu...Chu Feng!” Elder Liu spoke Chu Feng’s name with an extremely feeble tone.

“What? Chu Feng, it was actually him?” After hearing that name, not a single person’s complexion on scene did not change greatly. Following that, another Protector quickly asked again, “Other than Chu Feng, who else? Was it Qi Fengyang? Was Qi Fengyang also there?”

“No, there was no one else. Only Chu Feng. All of you, run! He is simply the devil, the most terrifying person that I had ever seen!”

“He will still return, and at that time, no...one...will...be...able...to...run.” After speaking those words, Elder Liu’s head tilted to the side, and his body fell onto the ground. Thoroughly, he no longer breathed and he was already dead.

tatata...

At that instant, the people on scene all took several steps back and they were so shocked that they could no longer stand stably. The legs of two of the Protectors went soft, and with a poof, they sat limply on the ground. On their faces, indescribable colours of terror surged as they were appalled.

Only after a while did those people recover from such shocking news. Everyone cast their gazes towards Yan Yangtian, the head of the Lingyun School. The backbone in their hearts.

“Heh. Without removing a great enemy, there will be endless future troubles. I, Yan Yangtian, have committed a grave mistake, and it would be that I shouldn’t have offended Chu Feng...”

“My Lingyun School is destroyed, destroyed by my hands. I, Yan Yangtian, am finished. I personally sent this life’s future to the grave.”

However, just at that moment, Yan Yangtian had a ash-like face as he muttered to himself with a bitter smile, and he started to slowly walk towards the outside of the Lingyun School.

“School head, school head, what are you doing?”

Seeing that, everyone was frightened because they could see that the present Yan Yangtian’s mental state was slightly unstable. But he was the head of the Lingyun School! Their backbone! If something were to happen to him at this time, who else could take control of the situation? What should they do? Who was going to fix their current broken circumstances?

But Yan Yangtian did not even care about the increasing number of elders and disciples following behind him. He only kept on walking west. Only after walking out of the Lingyun School did he suddenly stop his steps to speak to the people behind him,

“Everyone, leave. Cut off your relationship with the Lingyun School, or else he will still come back. At that time, no one will be able to stop him. No one will be able to return alive. The Lingyun School will also completely go extinct, and even your family will be affected by it.”

After saying those words, Yan Yangtian leaped, rose into the sky, and flew towards the western horizon. No matter how the Protectors, elders, and disciples of the Lingyun School yelled, he did not even turn his head around.

Today’s matter very quickly spread throughout the Azure Province and became the most shocking news of the province.

The Lingyun School was destroyed. Destroyed by a young man. That young man was the person who killed Dugu Aoyun and

gained the title of being the strongest school head in the Hundred School Gathering. He was also the person who saved Qi Fengyang by himself from the sentencing grounds of the Qilin Prince's Mansion. Chu Feng.

Relying on his own power, Chu Feng destroyed the number one school in the Azure Province, killed countless elite disciples and elders, and shook the foundation of several hundred years. News regarding the head of the Lingyun School, Yan Yangtian, was even all lost at that time.

The number one school of the Azure Province was immediately like a group of dragons without a leader and they went into complete chaos. Many disciples and elders started to leave the Lingyun School to rely on other schools. They even said to outsiders that they were instructions left by the school head, Yan Yangtian, before he departed. If they didn't cut off their relationship with the Lingyun School, sooner or later, they would be met with the disaster of school extermination.

That matter was too shocking. However, to other schools, it was undoubtedly a good thing. The overlord-level school's foundation was destroyed, and the Heaven realm school head abandoned his own school and escaped. It gave other first-rate schools a rare chance.

Even though there were some people who chose to remain behind in the Lingyun School, after all, there were quite a large number of people who left and since their cultivation resources were destroyed, it was absolutely impossible for the Lingyun School to rise again from the east mountains. To the many Azure

Province's schools, it meant that they were welcoming a new era. An era to fight over the position of being the number one school.

But no one would forget that the person who created this era was a young man called Chu Feng, and the person who also destroyed the Lingyun School was also a young man called Chu Feng.

Only because it offended the young man called Chu Feng, the Lingyun School, the number one school in the Azure Province that had been erected for several hundred years, walked towards the path of extinction with extremely quick speed.

# Chapter 319: Cultivating With A Calm Heart

---

The so-called “For the matters of the world, if there are people who are happy, there are people who are sad.”

The news of Chu Feng destroying the Lingyun School caused all other schools to be incomparably joyful, but as the real overlord of the Azure Province, the Qilin Prince’s Mansion who also offended Chu Feng, sank into unprecedented terror.

“Mansion Lord, what should we do? Yan Yangtian has already escaped, and look at us...”

In the broadest hall within the Qilin Prince’s Mansion, Lin Moli sat on the head seat and all the experts who had fame, strength within the Prince’s Mansion were all in there.

However, the current them no longer had their arrogance of being high up on top. Every single one revealed fearful faces and they were extremely uneasy.

They were all terrified by the matter of the Lingyun School. They were terrified by Chu Feng’s actions. They were deeply afraid that after the Lingyun School, their Qilin Prince’s Mansion would come next, that they were included within the next wave of people being slaughtered.

“What is there to be afraid of? Don’t forget, we are the Qilin Prince’s Mansion, and we have the Jiang Dynasty behind us. No matter how much nerves Chu Feng has, he will not dare to do

anything against my Qilin Prince's Mansion unless he doesn't want to continue in the continent of the Nine Provinces.”

Lin Moli suddenly stood up and his powerful palm abruptly dropped. He shattered the chair underneath his body as he angrily roared, causing the entire hall to tremble.

It still had to be said that after hearing his roar, everyone in the hall quieted down and their panicked expressions also calmed a bit. After that, Lin Moli spoke a lot more to the crowd.

Such as already reporting Chu Feng's matter to the Jiang Dynasty, that they would prepare to help the Qilin Prince's Mansion catch Chu Feng, that Chu Feng could no longer protect himself, that it would be impossible for him to rise from the east mountains, that he would sooner or later get killed, etc.

Those words successfully comforted the shaken hearts of the Qilin Prince's Mansion experts, but the experts did not see Lin Moli's full face of terror and extreme uneasiness in the instant he turned around.

As Chu Feng's achievements were being noisily spread and as the outside world was being flipped upside down, underneath the Azure Dragon Mountain Range, there was this section of untainted land.

Li Zhangqing and the Azure Dragon Elites, Chu Yue and the Chu family, as well as Su Rou, Su Mei, and the two others, were living quite well within the Thousand Bone Graveyard. After Chu Feng



told everyone about the matter of him taking Qi Fengyang away and destroying the Lingyun School with the assistance of a mysterious expert, everyone in that place was extremely happy.

“Chu Feng, you boy, you are too outstanding! You have actually brought back so many treasures, but it’s just that these things are too precious and I would feel quite bad if I were to take them.” Li Zhangqing looked at the rare treasures in front of his eyes and he had smiles all over his face from excitement. His old wrinkles pleated together and he looked just like a meat-filled steamed bun.

It was because there were many good things placed in front of his face. Large amounts of Origin medicine, special weapons, and also protective equipment. All of them were taken from the Lingyun School’s Resource Treasury, and currently, he gave them all to Li Zhangqing for free.

“School head. Since I, Chu Feng, caused the Azure Dragon School to be flattened and a thousand years of foundation to be destroyed in a single moment, I truly feel endless shame in my heart, so if you take these, I will feel a bit better.” Chu Feng said with an apologetic face.

“Ahh, you idiot boy. What they destroyed was only an empty frame. My Azure Dragon School’s foundation has all been moved to this place. These are the roots for reestablishing my Azure Dragon School.”

Li Zhangqing cast his gaze towards a nearby place. There was a simple shelf over there, but all sorts of martial skills and Mysterious Techniques were neatly placed on that shelf. There was

also the Azure Dragon School's resource register. These things were truly what a school needed to establish itself.

“But...” Chu Feng still felt rather bad.

“There are no ‘buts’. These are just worldly materials and they are just the foundations for the rise of my Azure Dragon School. The ones over there are the true necessities for the rise of my Azure Dragon School.”

Li Zhangqing then looked towards the direction of the Essence Pool. Ever since entering this place, all the young generation disciples of the Azure Dragon School as well as the elders started to cultivate as they were in the pool, gaining great benefits.

After that, Li Zhangqing patted Chu Feng's shoulders and said, “And you are the hope who will lead them and strengthen my Azure Dragon School!”

“Mm. Lord School Head, don't worry. From today on, I, Chu Feng, will build an even grander Azure Dragon School on the Azure Dragon Mountain Range. At that time, not only will my Azure Dragon School be the overlord of the Azure Province, it will also have its part in the continent of the Nine Provinces.” After hearing Li Zhangqing's words, Chu Feng's knot in his heart was undone and he solemnly vowed to guarantee.

The reason why Chu Feng did not directly leave but rather returned to this place again after destroying the Lingyun School was...

First, to let everyone who worried about him know that he, Chu Feng, was fine and also that the Lingyun School received a rare heavy blow and paid the price that should have paid.

Second, after experiencing the pursuit by Yan Yangtian and Lin Moli, Chu Feng was deeply aware that how weak he was in front of the Heaven realm.

So, Chu Feng wanted to learn the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens that the Azure Dragon Founder passed down to him. That martial skill was very profound, and if Chu Feng were to completely grasp it, even if he could not reach the powerful speed of Eggy's Demonic Wings of that day, in front of Heaven realm experts, he could at least have some chances to escape.

After all, where Chu Feng was heading towards was a completely unknown land. Chu Feng could not hope that kind-hearted people would help him if he met danger. So, Chu Feng could only rely on himself. He had to guarantee that he had a certain life-saving method before departing.

Using an entire day, Chu Feng refined all the Profound medicines that he got from the Lingyun School. It caused change to happen from Chu Feng's dantian which was silent for a long time, but at the end, Chu Feng was still unable to break into the Profound realm.

But Chu Feng was not discouraged. It was not far from what he had predicted, and although he was unable to break through, Chu

Feng could still feel that it was not far off. If he got a few more high-quality Profound medicine, he should be able to make a breakthrough.

At that instant, Chu Feng was in a place deeper in than the Essence Pool. That place was quieter and it was the best place for him to cultivate. He closed his eyes and from that, used his mind to control the Origin power within his body.

hmm

A layer of azure-coloured gas visible by the naked eye was currently lingering around Chu Feng. They surged out from Chu Feng's body, then interweave and fused together. More and more gathered, and gradually, it formed fog that was azure-coloured. The fog surged underneath Chu Feng's feet and slowly lifted him up from the ground. He floated in mid-air, and he continued floating higher.

But the thing that was most mysterious was that as the azure-coloured fog carried Chu Feng and floated up, it was actually changing and becoming a snake-like dragon-like form. One could even feel the aura of life from it.

whoosh But suddenly, the fog disappeared like smoke and clouds, and Chu Feng also fell down from mid-air.

“Dammit. This Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens is rather hard.” Chu Feng's face was very ugly, because the difficulty of control over the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens

surpassed his imagination. Even if it was him, he could not quickly grasp it. Right now, he did not even reach the simplest first stage.

clap clap But just that time, bursts of loud and clear applause rang out behind Chu Feng.

# Chapter 320: The Fusion Of Ice And Fire

---

“Ancestor.” Turning his head around to look, Chu Feng discovered that it was the Azure Dragon Founder. As he clapped, he walked towards him and there was even a smile of admiration hung on his face.

Radiance shot in all directions from the Azure Dragon Founder’s body and he was completely different than normal consciousnesses. It was as if he was still truly living with extremely horrifying power hidden within his body.

“Impressive! My Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens was originally a martial skill with Heaven power based as the root, so accordingly, only people in the Heaven realm should be able to learn it.”

“Although I hypothesized that if one’s Spirit power was extremely strong, they could specially concentrate, control, and even use their Profound power. But I never would have thought that you would be to reach that stage while only being in the Origin realm with only Origin power pregnant in your body.” The Azure Dragon School’s face was filled with praise.

“Ancestor. Does the current me really have no way of cultivating this Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens? I am able to feel that this is an extremely strong bodily martial skill and I really want to grasp it.” Chu Feng said.

“Ho...Of course it’s a very strong bodily martial skill. It’s a

martial skill that I gave fruit to from a Secret Skill! Its original form is a Secret Skill!”

The Azure Dragon Founder lightly smiled, and following that, his body quickly floated up. Underneath his illusionary feet, boundless azure-coloured gas had actually been condensed out. The gas surged more and more, and at the end, it was condensed into the appearance of a huge dragon.

That huge dragon was a dozen meters or so long. Although it was shaped by the condensation of gas so its eyes were empty without light, its body emanated a type of strong vitality as if it originally had a spirit. A single claw could cut open a mountain peak, and a roar could shake ten thousand creatures.

But that wasn't really much. He then saw the Azure Dragon Founder stand on the head of the huge dragon with both of his hands behind his back. His robe fluttered as though he was the master of the huge dragon and suddenly, he pointed towards the distance and loudly yelled, “Go!”

roar The huge dragon instantly angrily howled and following that, its huge claws slashed through the air. The might of the dragon swayed to cause wind, then it became a row of light and it had actually disappeared with a blink.

“Heavens, what a fast speed!” At that instant, even Chu Feng was stupefied.

Because at that moment, he could not feel the slightest bit of the

Azure Dragon Founder's aura, but deep in the Emperor Tomb, Chu Feng could still hear the roar of the huge dragon. It meant that the speed of the Azure Dragon Founder was already fast to the extreme and even Chu Feng's naked eye could not pick it up.

“Waa!”

Another angrily roar caused a wave of wild wind to be lifted. That wind was strong and even Chu Feng found it difficult to stand still as he was blown by it and he couldn't help but back away. And at that moment, the huge dragon reappeared in front of Chu Feng's face while the Azure Dragon Founder was still standing on the head of the huge dragon as he smiled and looked at Chu Feng.

hmm

The Azure Dragon Founder waved his sleeve and the huge dragon turned into a lump of gas and it was absorbed into the Azure Dragon Founder's body. But he slightly helplessly shook his head, sighed, and said, “Ahh, without my original body, it is impossible for me to display the power of this martial skill. It is only one-tenth of how it was when I was alive!”

“What? Such strong might is actually only one-tenth from when he was alive? Then when the ancestor was living, how strong was he?”

Chu Feng widened his mouth from shock, and following that, he fiercely gulped. He was truly stunned by the strong methods of the Azure Dragon Founder. That was a real expert. Worthy of being



the number one person in the continent of the Nine Provinces back then.

“Chu Feng, I just showed the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens to you. How was the feeling?” The Azure Dragon Founder smiled and asked.

“Impressive. It is really impressive. It is the most profound martial skill that I had ever seen.” Chu Feng had admiration across his face. He admired the Azure Dragon Founder’s strength, and he also admired how he used the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens so naturally.

“Ho...I said it before, but this is only a copy of a Secret Skill. If I was still living, I would have displayed that Secret Skill for you to see, and then, you would have known what true impressiveness would be.”

“But regretfully, the Secret Skill is in my corpse and it has been sealed. Only after you revive me can I pass it down to you. Before that, it is best for you to train well with this copy.” The Azure Dragon Founder said.

“But you said that this Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens requires at least Heaven power in order to use it. What should I do?” Chu Feng asked while requesting for a solution.

“Of course there’s a way. Like I just said. Your Spirit power is extremely strong, and the quality of the Origin power in your body is high as well. The two combine into one, and it can cause your

Origin power to become strong, perhaps even stronger than the Profound power of normal Profound realm cultivators. That is also why your battle power is so exceptional.”

“Right now, I have a training method that trains you on how to concentrate to gain more control over your Origin power. As long as you can completely grasp your Origin power, it won’t be any problem for you to grasp the early step of the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens.” The Azure Dragon Founder said.

“Then what should I do?” After hearing his words, Chu Feng started to get impatient because he truly wanted to grasp the profound Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens.

“Follow me.” The Azure Dragon Founder indifferently smiled, turned around, and walked deeper into the Emperor Tomb.

Seeing that, Chu Feng also followed. Actually, he was very excited at that moment because within the Emperor Tomb, the Azure Dragon Founder made a boundary for their range of movement. He did not permit them to step out of the boundary

And Chu Feng who always had his mind on the treasures of the Emperor Tomb was naturally very curious as for what things were outside of the boundary. Currently, the Azure Dragon Founder was actually personally leading Chu Feng to pass that boundary, so obviously, Chu Feng was very excited because it meant that there was certainly something outside of the boundary.

“Chu Feng, the reason why they call this the Thousand Bone

Graveyard is because they don't know anything. But I'm sure that more or less you understand, and you should have already been aware that this is a huge tomb. It is the grave of an absolute expert, and where we are right now is only the entrance to the tomb."

"Tombs are based on ranks according to the size of the system as well as the danger factors within. Based on my personal experience, this tomb is of an Emperor Tomb level." The Azure Dragon Founder said.

"Emperor Tomb?!" Despite already knowing that it was an Emperor Tomb before, after the Azure Dragon Founder gave his confirmation, Chu Feng still felt a bit shocked. If even the Azure Dragon Founder who was strong got forced to his current state, it could be seen how terrifying the Emperor Tomb was.

"To be honest, there were truly a lot of people who entered this place back in that year. Pretty much all the peak experts on the continent of that era were gathered, but sadly, no one returned alive. If I didn't get that magical pearl, in reality, even if I became a broken spirit, I would have already been dissipated, not to mention being able to keep my current strength."

"But Chu Feng, actually, we discovered three magical pearls that year." Suddenly, the Azure Dragon Founder smiled and spoke.

"Three? Where are the other two?"

Chu Feng felt shocked. If one pearl was already so magical, how would the other two be? But he was more curious as for why there

were two, yet such a capable person such as the Azure Dragon Founder did not take them. Was it possible that he could not have taken them? Or were there other reasons? At that instant, Chu Feng was truly curious to the extreme.

As for the Azure Dragon Founder, he also stirred up some suspense this time. He chuckled, then said to Chu Feng, “No need to rush. You will see the two other pearls very soon.”

Chu Feng did not ask anymore after hearing that. He only followed the steps of the Azure Dragon Founder and walked deeper in. At the end, in front of Chu Feng, a huge cave world appeared. It was so vast that one could not see the borders, and it was even vaster than the cave world underneath the Black Tortoise Mountain Range.

But at that very instant, the thing that attracted Chu Feng’s eyeballs the most was not the vast underground world. It was the huge and bizarre lake within the underground world.

The reason why the lake was said to be bizarre was because on one half, it was ice. The ice was thick, as though it froze straight to the deepest parts of the lake and it emitted extremely bone-piercing chilliness.

As for the other half of the lake, flames rose to the sky. A large area of fire snakes rolled and raged while making ear-piercing and fierce howls. It created a sharp contrast with the ice from the other side. Truly, ice and fire existed together, and the fusion of ice and fire was happening right in front of his eyes.

# Chapter 321: Causing A Disaster

---

Half of the vast lake was ice, half were flames. Such a strange scene was shown in front of Chu Feng's face at that instant.

“Why is there a lake like this here?” Chu Feng was dumbfounded from shock because that scene did not make sense at all.

“This scene is being caused by the two horrifying pearls. On that year, the two pearls killed no few of us. Even I was heavily injured by them and at the end, I became my current state.” The Azure Dragon Founder explained.

“It was actually that strong?” Chu Feng couldn't help but take in a breath of cool air. If even the Azure Dragon Founder died because of the two pearls, then how fierce would the two pearls be?

“Of course they were strong. At first, when we saw the three pearls after we charged through layers of obstructions and killed several Evil Spirits, we even thought that we got the treasures, but we never would have thought that it was a calamity of slaughtering.”

“However, luckily the Ice Pearl and the Fire Pearl seemed to have a link with the pearl that was in my hand, so even though their power was very strong, after a short while, they still lost their terrifying power and fell into the lake, transforming and causing the current appearance.”

“To be more precise, the two pearls have already died but their

remains are still here. They also have a certain level of threat as they also have special powers.”

“And the place that I want you to cultivate in is here. Although they have already died, some of their special power still survives. In this place, both cold air and hot air exist together and they will disturb your Spirit power.”

“However, it is beneficial towards strengthening your ability to control Spirit power. As long as you can control your Spirit power on command on this ice and fire lake, there shouldn’t be any problems for you to use the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens.”

“Okay, start the training.” As the Azure Dragon Founder spoke, he turned and left, He did not seem to plan to personally give pointers to Chu Feng, but after walking for a short distance, he said to Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, this is the final boundary. Do not go deeper. In that place, there exists some things that even I cannot defeat right now.”

After saying those words, the Azure Dragon Founder floated away and left, and Chu Feng who had extremely strong curiosity intentionally circled around the ice and fire lake after the Azure Dragon Founder left to check out what was behind the lake. Then, he finally knew why Chu Feng was not permitted to continue going forward.

Because behind the ice and fire lake, Anti-Demon Symbols already started to appear. The area of the symbols was extremely vast and one could not see the end as they looked. That more or

less meant that deeper in, there was a very strong Evil Spirit or many Evil Spirits.

“Ahh, the Emperor Tomb is truly too far out of my reach. Right now, I should still focus on cultivating my Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens.” In front of the Emperor Tomb, Chu Feng always felt that he was especially tiny.

Even more so after hearing the words of the Black Tortoise Armor Technique, meeting with the Azure Dragon Founder, and personally seeing the transformed bizarre lake caused by the two pearls in the Emperor Tomb. He more and more understood how weak and small he was, and how petty his own power was.

However, Chu Feng was not discouraged. After all, he was still currently too young. As long as he was willing to work hard and willing to create chances, becoming strong was only a matter of time. So, Chu Feng started to go towards the strange ice and fire lake.

“This thing is truly odd.”

Before even getting near, Chu Feng felt two waves of strange aura pouncing towards him. One was bone-piercing chilliness, one was scorching hot heat. The two gases that should not be existing together was actually oddly blending into one.

But luckily, Chu Feng was able to resist against that strange gas. Finally, Chu Feng arrived on top of the lake. Although Chu Feng's physical body was able to hold the strange gases away, his Spirit

power was disturbed by the gases and it became difficult to control.

It was like how the Azure Dragon Founder said. Chu Feng was truly affected by the strange energy there, and as a Grey-cloak World Spiritist, he who originally had extremely strong Spirit power was actually unable concentrate on his Spirit power.

But that was the training that the Azure Dragon Founder wanted Chu Feng to do: To be able to control his Spirit power on top of the ice and fire lake. If he succeeded, Chu Feng's control over his Spirit power would be increased to another stage and he would also have a chance to use the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens.

Like that, from that day forth, Chu Feng would come on top of the ice and fire lake everyday for training, and that training lasted for a month. It could also be said that it was the martial skill Chu Feng spent the most time on for cultivation.

But luckily, Chu Feng did not waste that time of one month. From the beginning, he was unable to condense his Spirit power, but gradually, he was able to easily control it. Currently, Chu Feng could freely control his own Spirit power as he was on top of the ice and fire lake.

“Succeeded! I’ve finally succeeded! Now I can finally control my Spirit power in whatever way I wish it to.”

The present Chu Feng was standing in the middle area of the ice and fire lake. One side was bone-piercing cold, one side were



raging flames. Chu Feng surrounded himself with Origin power and formed an invisible shield to prevent his body from corroding from the cold and flames.

hmm Suddenly, with a thought, Chu Feng's Spirit power was like the tide as it spread out from his brain and probed towards the ice and fire lake underneath him.

After successfully grasping his control over his Spirit power, he did not rush to cultivate the profound martial skill, the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens. He wanted to detailedly feel the ice and fire lake transformed by the two horrifying pearls.

Chu Feng's Spirit power penetrated through the flames, penetrated through the ice layer, and it went straight into the deep areas. The deeper he went, Chu Feng could more strongly feel that the bone-piercing chilliness and the horrifying heat was becoming more and more powerful.

“Crap.” Suddenly, Chu Feng's eyes suddenly widened and his entire body couldn't help but tremble once. Within his eyes, unprecedented terror and uneasiness surged.

When his Spirit power reached the deepest part of the lake, he felt two forms of life. Those lives seemed to be deeply sleeping for a thousand years, but because of his Spirit power, they suddenly awakened.

boom Just at that time, a huge explosion rang out from under Chu Feng's feet. At the same time, a wave of strong power rose into

the sky.

The strong power brought Chu Feng straight into the air, and simultaneously, around Chu Feng, there lingered chunks of ice that filled the air as well as surging flames. The ice and fire lake that had been sealed for a thousand years was revived.

“Dammit! I seemed to have done something that cannot be reversed!”

At that instant, without thinking much, Chu Feng already knew what happened. Obviously, the two horrifying pearls from that year did not die. They only slept at the bottom of the lake, and without any intentions of doing so, Chu Feng awoke them.

Thinking that so many experts died by the two pearls and even the Azure Dragon Founder was killed by them, Chu Feng did not need to think much. He quickly adjusted his body in mid-air and used the Imperial Sky Technique as he quickly ran towards the direction of the Azure Dragon Founder.

boom

But before flying away for not too long, another explosion rang out behind him. At the same time, a wave of extreme cold and a wave of scathing heat, the two auras, also flew out from the lake together.

Turning his head to look, Chu Feng’s pupils abruptly shrunk and

fear surged on his face because he could clearly see that a blue-coloured pearl and a red-coloured pearl were like the eyes of two devils as they flew towards him with unbelievable speed.

## Chapter 322: Die Together

---

“Chu Feng, quick! Let me control your body or else with your current speed, it will be impossible to escape their pursuit!” Eggy started to yell as she saw that the situation was not going well.

“No, it’s too late.”

But Chu Feng’s face was like ash because he could clearly see that the two horrifying pearls, almost with a blink, appeared in front of him. Even if it was Eggy, there was no way to get rid of them with speed like that.

“Ahh!”

boom

Just at that time, the two pearls already collided against Chu Feng’s body. The strong power directly threw Chu Feng straight to the ground from mid-air and caused a deep pit to be created on the ground that was even made of special materials.

“Dammit! These two things actually want to enter my body! Ahh~~~~~”

The two pearls truly had life. Clearly, the round-shaped pearls that were only as big as a chicken egg were currently like sharp blades as they pierced through Chu Feng’s Origin power shield and entered Chu Feng’s physical body. At that instant, they were flying

towards Chu Feng's dantian.

At that moment, Chu Feng could distinctly feel two bursts of power wanting to occupy his body and take away his awareness.

It wasn't like Eggy's, and it was obviously from the two horrifying pearls. The two pearls did not simply want to kill Chu Feng. They wanted to control Chu Feng.

The two pearls were too horrifying. One contained chilliness that could freeze everything, the other contained flames that could burn everything. And they even had life. However, it was unclear as for what they were. They were like two monsters who were abnormally strong yet had unknown identities.

In front of them, Chu Feng was extremely minuscule. He didn't even have any chance to fight back and he could do nothing as they invaded his own dantian, the sacred land that condensed his cultivation.

“Waa!” But suddenly, within Chu Feng's dantian, the unmoving eight huge lightning beasts that occupied that place were as though they reawakened. They emanated terrifying aura that did not belong to this land and they started to powerfully envelop them within his dantian.

jijiji

After the aura started enveloping, the two pearls that almost

invaded Chu Feng's dantian acted as if they were frightened as they quickly ran out from his dantian. However, despite leaving the dantian, they did not leave Chu Feng's body. The chilliness and heat interweaved and engulfed every single part of Chu Feng's body.

At that instant, Chu Feng felt that the blood in his entire body was boiling, as if the golden-coloured lightning in his blood was also resisting against the power of the two pearls.

However, as the two waves of power were being resisted against, Chu Feng was going through huge agony. The pain that Chu Feng felt was like a heart-tearing or lungs-splitting as he rolled around on the floor. He kept on throwing his own body against the ground, causing huge pits to be formed as he was loudly howling.

“Chu Feng, what is happening to you?”

Just at that time, two beautiful figures ran over from afar. It was the sisters Su Rou and Su Mei. The flower-like sisters held a dish of food in their hands.

Ever since Chu Feng started to cultivate in this location, the pair of sisters would come here everyday to give delicious dishes to Chu Feng. However, at that very instant, when they saw Chu Feng who was like that, their faces paled from fright as they threw the dishes in their hands onto the ground and started to, without any care of their own safety, run towards Chu Feng.

“Little Rou, little Mei, don't come over! Run!”

Seeing that, Chu Feng quickly yelled at the two people. Although he did not know why the two pearls wanted to take over his body, he knew that the two pearls must have their own reasons.

Currently, seeing that they failed in taking over his body, the pearls would certainly want to take over another person's body. This time, as Su Rou and Su Mei approached, they were simply like searching for their own path of death.

whoosh whoosh

Indeed, after hearing Su Rou and Su Mei's voice, the two ice and fire pearls had actually flew out of Chu Feng's body and rushed towards Su Rou and Su Mei. Their speed was quick and with two streaks of red and blue through the air, Su Rou and Su Mei fell to the ground following the sounds.

"Little Rou, little Mei!" Seeing Su Rou and Su Mei fall onto the ground and started to painfully shriek, Chu Feng did not pay attention to his own injuries as he quickly stood up and ran forward.

"Little Rou, little Mei!"

After Chu Feng came near and saw the current Su Rou and Su Mei, his originally tense expression became even more incomparably panicked. Even his nose started to stuff up and his eyes started to flicker with tears.

Because presently, Su Rou's originally snow-white skin became blue-coloured, and on top of her blue-coloured skin, a layer of thick frost was condensed. The frost started to spread and it reached Su Rou's long skirt and froze her entire body.

As for Su Mei, extremely great change happened to her as well. Her skin that was as clean as snow already became the colour of red flames, and from her body, there were even layers of heat emitted. The faces of the two were filled with agony.

Seeing that the two girls he loved was enduring such torment yet he himself was useless and powerless, how could Chu Feng's heart not ache? He loudly yelled inside, "Eggy, Eggy! Quickly think of a way! How can they be saved? Quickly help me!!"

But compared to Chu Feng's complete panic, Eggy seemed abnormally calm. The calmness was simply not normal, and she urged with a tone of extreme bitterness to Chu Feng,

"There are no methods. These two things are too strong, and with your cultivation, you cannot suppress them. They want to take over Su Rou's and Su Mei's physical body and to borrow their body as a vessel to survive."

"Chu Feng, quick run. Right now, their awarenesses are already muddled and very quickly, they will collapse soon. When their physical bodies get thoroughly taken over, they will completely die. At that time, the two things that took over their physical body will certainly kill you."



“No! I can’t leave. How can I abandon them and not care about them?” However, not only did Chu Feng not escape, he even opened his arms and brought Su Rou and Su Mei from the ground tightly into his embrace.

At that instant, bone-piercing chilliness was on one side, and scorching heat was on the other. Neither one of them was good to endure, and either one could harm Chu Feng’s body. Yet Chu Feng hugged more and more tightly because his body’s pain was far from his heart’s pain: As he faced the ones he loved being taken over bit by bit, yet he was useless by being powerless.

“Chu Feng...” Just at that time, Su Rou actually spoke. Her lips were covered with frost, and as she spoke, she had an extremely vicissitudinous voice, but she still urged Chu Feng as she said, “Quickly run! I can feel that my body is going to be taken over by some terrifying thing. I...I’m afraid that it will harm you.”

“Chu Feng, I feel very hot, like being burned by flames. A lump of fire entered my dantian and it’s engulfing my body right now. Chu Feng, quickly let me go. Stay farther away from me or else I will injure you.” At the same time, Su Mei also made a very feeble voice.

“No! I won’t leave. Even if death comes, we will die together.”

Chu Feng was very resolute, despite the clothes on his left was being burnt to ashes and his skin was being scalded bit by bit; despite the chilliness on his right entered his body and even frost

condensed in his bones, he hugged the two beauties tighter and tighter without a single trace of regret.

# Chapter 323: Sealed For Two Years

---

“Chu Feng you bastard! I won’t stop you if you want to die, but don’t drag me down with you!” Eggy started to insanely howl when she saw Chu Feng was determined to die.

Chu Feng was in quite a predicament as he heard Eggy’s yell. He could not bear leaving Su Rou and Su Mei, but he also didn’t want Eggy to be harmed because of his own actions.

“Dammit. These two pearls have actually survived. I was truly careless.”

Suddenly, an aged voice rang out, and when Chu Feng raised his head to look, he couldn’t help but rejoice. It was the Azure Dragon Founder.

The current Azure Dragon Founder was standing on an azure dragon while the robe on his body fluttered without wind. After seeing Su Rou and Su Mei’s conditions, although he was very shocked, he did not panic too much, and he had many manners of a peak expert.

“Chu Feng, move!” The Azure Dragon Founder loudly yelled. Chu Feng did not dare to be slow as he hurriedly let Su Rou and Su Mei who was in his embrace go.

hmm Just at that time, with the wave of the Azure Dragon Founder’s big sleeve, a blue-coloured Spirit Formation was condensed out. With strange and special patterns, it enveloped

both Su Rou and Su Mei.

whoosh whoosh whoosh Quickly following that, the Azure Dragon Founder wrote two “seal” characters in the air continuously. The character “seal” was condensed and created by symbols and it stood in the air, as if it had life. Then, the Azure Dragon Founder pointed at Su Rou and Su Mei and lightly yelled, “Seal.”

The two characters “seal” landed respectively on Su Rou’s and Su Mei’s Spirit Formation. At that instant, Su Rou’s and Su Mei’s expression had actually seemed less painful, as though the horrifying pearls in their bodies were controlled.

“Not bad. Chu Feng, your school founder’s Spirit Formation methods are pretty decent. I’m guessing if he was still alive, he would absolutely not be a simple Blue-cloak World Spiritist. He should have infinitely neared the level of a Purple-cloak World Spiritist.” Eggy said while giving a rare praise.

As for Chu Feng, he was stunned by the Azure Dragon Founder’s methods. Being also a World Spiritist, what Chu Feng’s chose to do when faced with Su Rou’s and Su Mei’s situation was to die together with them, because other than that, he really did not know what else to do. He was very powerless.

But the Azure Dragon Founder, who did not even have a physical body right now; the Azure Dragon Founder who was only a consciousness relied on his own World Spiritist techniques and temporarily suppressed the two pearls in their bodies. It had to be said that this was the huge difference in strength.

“Fortunately, even though the two pearls have not died yet, they aren’t as strong as back then. But even so, they are still not something that I can suppress. If I want to control them, I will need to rely on that pearl.”

As the Azure Dragon Founder spoke, he waved his big sleeve again. A gust of wind rose up from Chu Feng’s feet and blew him, Su Rou, and Su Mei into the air, then they landed on top of the huge azure dragon.

roar

With the roar of the huge dragon, Chu Feng felt that the scene around him became blurry. But after an instant, he returned to where everyone was resting at. He arrived in front of the crystal coffin that stored the Azure Dragon Founder’s remains.

bang At that instant, the Azure Dragon Founder raised his hand and palmed, and he actually shattered the crystal coffin that preserved his own remains. At the same time, the pearl on top of the Azure Dragon Founder’s remains also gave out extremely dazzling brilliance.

“Ancestor, this is?” Seeing that the Azure Dragon Founder destroyed his own coffin immediately, Chu Feng’s face was filled with doubt.

But later on, he finally knew what the Azure Dragon Founder wanted to do. After shattering his own crystal coffin, with

practiced methods, the Azure Dragon Founder started to lay a Spirit Formation. It wasn't a simple Spirit Formation, but a sealing Spirit Formation.

It was a very high-level sealing formation, so high-level that Chu Feng could only tell what type it was but he could not even touch that sealing formation. Even if he knew the method of laying the formation, it would be impossible for him to actually lay the formation.

After laying the sealing formation, the Azure Dragon Founder individually put Su Rou and Su Mei on both sides of his remains. After urging the sealing formation, the pearl emitted dazzling brilliance and it materialized. It became a huge crystal casing that shrouded Su Rou, Su Mei, as well as the remains of the Azure Dragon Founder.

“Chu Feng. Although the power of the two pearls aren't as strong as before, with the current me, I have no way of completely suppressing them, let alone extracting them from Su Rou's and Su Mei's bodies.”

“Sealing them right now is the only method to save them right now. But with my power, although I can temporarily lock their life force in their bodies, I can only guarantee that they will survive for two more years in the sealing formation.”

“That also means that if I open the sealing formation right now, it is very possible that they will immediately die. But if I completely seal this sealing formation, two years later, they will die as well. Right now, give me a forthright answer. Do you choose

to let them die right now, or to give them two more years?” The Azure Dragon Founder seriously asked.

“No. I don’t want them to die!” Chu Feng was frightened by the words that came from the Azure Dragon Founder.

“I am letting you choose. Right now, or two years later. Quickly speak. If you don’t, I will undo the sealing formation right now and destroy them along with the two pearls.” The Azure Dragon Founder’s attitude became forceful.

“No! Don’t! Seal them, protect their lives for now!” Seeing that, Chu Feng completely panicked and he quickly begged.

“Mm. That’s right.” Only then did the Azure Dragon Founder nod his head in satisfaction. Following that, he opened his arms, then immediately overlaid several thick chains that had surged out from his body.

The chains were not normal chains. They were transparent chains condensed by Spirit Formations. At that instant, with clanking noises, they coiled around the crystal casing. At the end, they twisted around it densely and almost the entire crystal casing was covered. One could only see Su Rou and Su Mei who were within through the cracks.

“Seal!” Finally, the Azure Dragon Founder drew a huge “seal” character and it landed on the enormous sealing formation. Finally, it completely locked the sealing formation.

At that instant, almost everyone already came over as they nervously looked at everything the Azure Dragon Founder was doing. Especially Su Hen and Su Long. Their faces were extremely ugly. Although everyone knew something must have happened, no one dared to go up to ask. They only silently watched.

“Chu Feng, you are still young! Remember, as a man, no matter what event you meet, you must not panic as you face danger.”

“In reality, I wasn’t even sure that I could destroy the two pearls, so even if you didn’t choose to seal, I would have sealed the two of them with the two pearls.”

“However, the reason why I asked you just now was because I wanted you to have such an experience that you cannot forget. An experience in which you had to choose the life and death of a person close to you so that next time, when you face a situation similar to this, you can be more at ease.”

The Azure Dragon Founder said to Chu Feng. To him, it was as if he was teaching Chu Feng in a classroom. He was not concerned about Su Rou and Su Mei lives.

“Ancestor, is there any way to save them?” But to Chu Feng, the thing he was most concerned about right now was whether he was able to save the sisters Su Rou and Su Mei.

“It is almost impossible. The pearl will always be sealed in there, but with my ability, I can only guarantee that they will survive for two more years as they don’t eat nor drink in that state. Two years



later, they will undoubtedly die, unless...”

# Chapter 324: Grand Dynasty Army

---

“Unless...” The Azure Dragon Founder hesitated for a bit.

“Unless what?” Chu Feng anxiously asked closely.

“Unless you can become a Purple-cloak world Spiritists within two years, because you can take the two pearls out of their bodies at that point. Or else, they will doubtlessly die.”

“But are you confident that you can become a Purple-cloak World Spiritist within two years? To be honest, no matter how much more talent you have, it is almost an impossible thing.” The words that the Azure Dragon Founder said more or less struck blows at Chu Feng.

“I...” At that instant, Chu Feng face was also filled was complications. He no longer spoke because he was indeed not confident that he could become Purple-cloak World Spiritist within two years.

“Chu Feng, don’t be discouraged. It is indeed very difficult to become a Purple-cloak World Spiritist within two years, but with your talent, there shouldn’t be much of a problem to become a Blue-cloak World Spiritist.”

“Do you still remember the Monstrous Beast locked in the Asura Ghost Tower in the Spirit Province? Don’t forget, it was a Purple-cloak World Spiritist, and it had a request for you!”

“As long as you become a Blue-cloak World Spiritist, perhaps you would be able to help it get free. At that time, wouldn’t it be fine to ask it to save Su Rou and Su Mei?” Just at that time, Eggy seriously reminded.

“That’s right. Eggy, you’re right! Little Rou and little Mei can still be saved! As long as I can get the thing that the Monstrous Beast left behind, perhaps I can very quickly become a Blue-cloak World Spiritist. At that time, it will work if I save it then ask it to save little Rou and little Mei!”

After hearing Eggy’s reminder, Chu Feng also came to the realization and his originally face that was like ash instantly surged with a smear of hope.

“Chu Feng, you wouldn’t truly feel you can become a Purple-cloak World Spiritist within two years right?” The Azure Dragon Founder lightly furrowed his brows when he saw a strand of hope surging within Chu Feng’s gaze

Because with his entire life’s worth of time, he could not step into the Purple-cloak realm. So, he deeply knew how difficult that realm was. He did not doubt that Chu Feng could become Purple-cloak World Spiritist, or else he wouldn’t have entrusted his rescue on Chu Feng, but to do that within two years was almost an impossible thing.

“Ancestor, indeed, I cannot become a Purple-cloak World Spiritist within two years of time, but I will do my best to think of

other methods to save Su Rou and Su Mei.”

“The two of them are too important to me and I must save them. So, in the period of time that I am not here, I hope that you can take care of the people close to me.” As Chu Feng spoke, he swept his gaze towards the surrounding people.

“Don’t worry. As long as I am here, no one will be able to harm them. Absolutely no problems will happen to the two sisters in these two years.”

“However, although I don’t know what method you have that can save them, I hope that you can remember before saving them, you must guarantee your own safety first or else all will be for naught.” The Azure Dragon Founder advised.

“Ancestor, don’t worry. I have my plans.”

After that, Chu Feng simply took care of his own injuries, then explained to the crowd what had actually happened. Only then did he say his farewells to everyone and left the Thousand Bone Graveyard. He officially left that place, and stepped onto a road that was filled with unknown dangers, yet was a road that had to be walked on. It was the road towards the Qin Province.

The continent of the Nine Provinces was split into the Azure Province, Tang Province, Song Province, Ming Province, Han Province, Sui Province, Spirit Province, Yuan Province, and Qin Province.

The Qin Province was rather far from the Azure Province. One required to go through the Spirit Province which was in between in order to reach it. As for why Chu Feng needed to go to the Qin Province, it was because the Monstrous Beast in the Asura Ghost Tower told Chu Feng that there was a treasure which could polish up Spirit power, and that treasure was in the Qin Province.

Chu Feng's goals of his current journey was very clear. To find that treasure, then to perfect his Spirit power so that he could more quickly become a Blue-cloak World Spiritist.

Then, return to the Asura Ghost Tower, coordinate with the imprisoned Monstrous Beast and after saving it, request help from the mysterious and unfathomable Monstrous Beast so it could save the sisters Su Rou and Su Mei from the hands of the pearls.

Although that plan seemed to be very simple, Chu Feng knew that within it, there were certainly thousands of difficulties and tens of thousands of risks because at first, the place that the treasure was hidden in was an unclear place called the Thousand Monster Mountain.

"I will leave here soon, and who knows when I will return back to this place." As Chu Feng sat on the White-headed Eagle, he looked at the familiar land and scenery underneath as his thoughts were extremely complicated.

This time was different from last time when he went to the Spirit Province. Last time, he was only there for the White-cloak World Spiritist qualification exam, but this time, he had a heavier mission, and the time he was leaving for was longer as well.

“Chu Feng, do you want to go to the World Spirit Guild and ask for assistance? Although they don’t have any Purple-cloak World Spiritists there, I’m sure they can help a bit.” Eggy said.

“No. I’m not too familiar with the World Spirit Guild, so I’m afraid that greed will rise from their hearts if they see the treasure left behind by the Monstrous Beast and that they will take it for themselves.” Chu Feng replied.

“Mm.” After hearing Chu Feng’s words, Eggy felt that it was extremely reasonable as well. After that, she giggled and said, “It looked like you’ve matured quite a bit huh? I have indeed not been mistaken. Boy, you will have quite a future.”

Eggy was even like a [pistachio](#). She who knew Chu Feng had heavy worries in his heart did not stop comforting and amusing Chu Feng on the road. That caused his pressure to be diminished quite a bit, and confidence in which he could save Su Rou and Su Mei also increased quite a bit.

“Pistachio” in Chinese can be directly translated as “Happy Fruit”.

“This aura.”

But just as Chu Feng was going to leave the border of the Azure Province, he suddenly tightly frowned and quickly steered Little White towards a lump of cloud in the distance and drilled in since Chu Feng could feel an extremely powerful aura approaching.

Indeed, after Chu Feng hid in the white clouds, huge bangs rang out from the nearby horizon. That sound seemed to be like thunder, but it seemed more like the sounds of ten thousand horses galloping. The sound of them galloping in the air.

“Heavens! That is?!”

Although Chu Feng was hidden in the white clouds, he was still able to see everything outside. At that instant, he astonishedly discovered that at the end of the horizon, a large group of people and horses appeared. People and horses that walked in the air.

The group of people neared ten thousand, and on the bodies of every single person, they wore a golden-coloured robe. That robe was not armor, but it was more gorgeous than armor and even harder than armor.

Underneath the near ten thousand people, every single one was riding an excellent horse. The horses were a lot bigger than normal ones, and they were also abnormally domineering, as if they were the kings within horses as they had unordinary auras. The most important thing was that the horses could stay in the air with extremely quick speed.

However, that wasn't even much. Other than the horses that could walk on air, there was even a huge golden-coloured chariot. The thing that pulled the chariot was not a horse. It was a huge beast. A huge beast that could walk on air, and if Chu Feng was not mistaken, it should be a Monstrous Beast that reached the Heaven realm.

A Heaven realm Monstrous Beast was tamed by someone and became a slave that pulled a chariot. That caused people to be rather shocked.

And when Chu Feng cast his gaze towards the army banner that was fluttering around, he finally knew the origin of the group of people, because on top of the golden-coloured army banners that had dragons and phoenixes carved and drawn on them, there were two big words. “Jiang Dynasty”!



# Chapter 325: Cold-Faced Jiang Han

---

“Jiang Dynasty?!”

After seeing the words on the army banner, Chu Feng's heart couldn't help but tighten because it was the first time he saw people from the Jiang Dynasty. The first time he saw the ruler of the continent of the Nine Provinces.

It had to be said that the army of the Jiang Dynasty, in terms of might, was completely incomparable to any power Chu Feng had ever seen before. Putting aside the powerful strength and excellent quality, people would feel fear purely from the unique atmosphere that they gave off.

Chu Feng had heard before that the people from the Jiang Dynasty were not ordinary people. They had special blood, battle power that surpassed others, talent that surpassed others, and they were far superior than normal people in all areas.

Even saying that everyone in the Jiang Dynasty was geniuses would be appropriate. That was the main reason why the Jiang Dynasty was able to rule over the continent of the Nine Provinces for so many years.

“Strange. Why have the Jiang Dynasty's army appeared in this place? Did they come to my Azure Province for something, or are they just coincidentally passing by?”

Chu Feng was deeply stunned by the Jiang Dynasty's might.

Although he did not feel fear like how normal people did after seeing the Jiang Dynasty's grand army, Chu Feng still had to admit that the Jiang Dynasty was truly not simple.

“Who cares. After all, you already prepared to leave the Azure Province and your family has been arranged well. Even if the people from the Jiang Dynasty are going to the Azure Province, it would be unrelated to you.” Eggy said.

“Mm.” Chu Feng nodded, but he had a thought in his heart. If the Jiang Dynasty was only passing by, then whatever. But if their target was truly the Azure Province, most likely, it would be for the Emperor Tomb.

After all, the Qilin Prince's Mansion had already discovered the Emperor Tomb. When they discovered that they did not have the ability to open it themselves, for assistance, they would certainly report that news to the Jiang Dynasty. By doing so, even if they could not get the treasures from the Emperor Tomb, at least the Jiang Dynasty would still give them some rewards.

But Chu Feng was not too worried because he who knew how scary the Emperor Tomb deeply understood that even if it was the army of the Jiang Dynasty, they would still be unable to enter deep into the Emperor Tomb. Only if they sent out their peak experts did they have a chance to get some benefits from the Emperor Tomb.

So, after the Jiang Dynasty army left, Chu Feng also rushed out of the white clouds and continued towards the Qin Province.

As for where the Jiang Dynasty army went, as predicted by Chu Feng, they came to the Qilin Prince's Mansion. However, the thing that was different from Chu Feng's guess was that this time, the Jiang Dynasty did not come by invitation.

“Quick! Quickly call for the Mansion Lord!!”

The army of the Jiang Dynasty grandly and mightily descended from the sky. They truly looked just like soldiers and generals from heaven that came down to the mortal world. It caused people to be endlessly afraid, and at that very instant, the overlord of the Azure Province, the Qilin Prince's Mansion, was already in chaos. The formerly prideful people from the Prince's Mansion were all terrified to the extreme.

“Milords, I am Lin Moli. I didn't know that you would honor your presences to this mansion so I didn't come out to greet you. Please forgive my mistakes!”

Lin Moli also panicked. If only one or two people from the Jiang Dynasty came, he could still bear with it. But currently, a genuine Jiang Dynasty army came to his Qilin Prince's Mansion. That caused him to not know what to do and he was extremely terrified. Uncontrollably, he felt uneasiness.

ta And just at this time, from the golden-coloured chariot that was pulled by a Monstrous Beast, a male wearing a golden-coloured robe gradually walked out.

It was a young man. Two meters tall, well-built body, golden dragon crown on his head, black hair that draped along his shoulders, and a face as white as snow yet gave people an abnormally icy-cold feeling. Especially his eyes. They emitted incomparable overbearingness and ferociousness, causing one to not dare to look straight into his eyes.

“Lor...Lord [Jiang Han](#)!!” After seeing that male, Lin Moli’s face instantly turned deathly-white like paper and there wasn’t any trace of the colour of blood anymore. Within his eyes, indescribably, fear surged. It could be seen how scared he was towards the young man in front of his eyes who was even so much younger than him.

Jiang = surname, Han = cold.

“Lin Moli, do you know your crimes?” The cold-faced male called Jiang Han asked with an equally cold tone.

“Milord, what....what do you mean? I...” Lin Moli was terrified. When he was asked by Jiang Han in such a way while he was already originally extremely uneasy, it caused him to be instantly scared to the point he did not know what to do, nor how to respond.

whoosh But before even letting Lin Moli finish speaking, Jiang Han suddenly raised his hand, formed an eagle’s claw with that hand, and endless absorption power emitted from his palm. Instantly, it plucked Lin Moli from the ground and into his palm.

At that very instant, Jiang Han used a single hand to tightly grab

onto Lin Moli's brain. No matter how the Heaven realm Lin Moli struggled, he could not escape his palm.

At that instant, Jiang Han cast his icy cold gaze towards the people from the Qilin Prince's Mansion who knelt on the ground with faces full of fear and said,

“The lord of the Qilin Prince's Mansion, Lin Moli, was assigned to rule over the Azure Province by the imperial court. However, when he discovered a mysterious tomb in the Azure Province, not only did he not immediately report it to the dynasty, he even privately opened the tomb, planning to keep the dynasty's treasure for himself. This is a crime of death, and he should be beheaded right now!”

“Milord, have mercy! Milord have mercy!” After hearing Jiang Han's words, Lin Moli's faced turned purple from fear as he started to loudly beg for his life.

However, Jiang Han did not even care about him. His palm suddenly grasped, and with a bang, in front of the many people from the Qilin Prince's Mansion, he crushed the head of Lin Moli, the lord of the Qilin Prince's Mansion, into pieces.

“Milord have mercy, milord have mercy!”

At that instant, everyone from the Qilin Prince's Mansion on scene started to kowtow for their lives and started to beg for their lives. They were deeply afraid that they would receive the same ending as Lin Moli.

Because in the continent of the Nine Provinces, the Jiang Dynasty was the only boss, and they were the only laws. No one dared to offend them, because as long as you offended them, there would only be one result. Death.

“Listen up everyone. From today on, the Azure Province will be directly managed by my Jiang Dynasty. All of you can still serve my dynasty, but if any of you have any trace of disloyalty, in the future, you will end the same as how Lin Moli ended today.” Jiang Han’s voice was like thunder and his tone was like ice as he loudly said to the crowd.

“We are willing to serve the dynasty! We do not dare to have half a bit of selfishness!” Seeing that, the Qilin Prince’s Mansion crowd acted as though a heavy burden had been lifted as they kowtowed with faces full of gratitude.

After that, the Jiang Dynasty’s army took over everything in the Qilin Prince’s Mansion. They truly planned to personally manage the Azure Province.

At that instant, within an extremely luxurious palace in the Qilin Prince’s Mansion, Jiang Han was all ready to go. He seemed to be planning to go somewhere, and behind him, there was an aged old man with white and grey hair.

That old man had very strong aura, clearly also a Heaven realm expert. But in front of Jiang Han, he seemed abnormally petty as he asked with a very respectful tone, “Milord, everything is

arranged. Do we go investigate that tomb?”

“No. The tomb is already under our control, so we can go at any time.”

“On the other hand, since I’ve arrived at the Azure Province right now, I must go pay someone a visit.” Jiang Han’s tone was icy cold as if there was not a single trace of emotion. Even if it was someone from his own clan, he acted the same.

“Do you need me to accompany you?” The old man seemed to know who Jiang Han was going to look for, so he pettily requested for instructions.

“No need, I myself am enough.” Jiang Han waved his hand, and after that, a wave of wind rose and his body disappeared completely. He did not even leave a single strand of aura, and he was already heading towards where he wanted to go.

# Illusionary Thunder School



## Chapter 326: Arriving At The Qin Province

---

Within the Azure Province's Valley of Hundred Bends, outside of the hall in the clouds, Jiang Han was quickly approaching. However, he did not enter the Spirit Formation outside of the hall without permission. With a face of respect, he stood on top of the clouds and said with a respectful tone, "Milord, I am Jiang Han, and I have come to pay you a visit."

"Enter." From within the temple hall, Jiang Hengyuan's voice rang out. It was not high nor low; not light nor heavy.

Only then did Jiang Han dare to go forward. As he walked, all the protective layers were open. Even the door to the hall was opened.

Within the hall, Jiang Hengyuan was playing chess with another person. As for who that person was, it was naturally Qi Fengyang who was saved by Jiang Hengyuan that day.

"Finished?" Jiang Hengyuan did not look directly at Jiang Han. As he played chess, he spoke to inquire.

"Milord, I have already followed your instructions and it has been finished. Lin Moli has been killed on scene by me." Jiang Han respectfully replied.

"Mm. Lay a good concealing Spirit Formation in the entrance to the tomb. Lead your army and personally guard there. Without my order, don't open it for now." Jiang Hengyuan said.

“Milord. Before sealing the entrance, should we go and look around it to determine the ranking of the tomb?” Jiang Han spoke.

“No need to determine it, it’s an Emperor Tomb.” Jiang Hengyuan calmly said.

“What? It is actually an Emperor Tomb?” After hearing those words, Jiang Han’s face changed greatly and he was stunned. He seemed to have already understood why Jiang Hengyuan told him to seal the entrance of the tomb to not permit him to lead his army to open it.

“Come. Let me introduce you to him. This is Qi Fengyang, the chief of the Qi clan in the Qilin Prince’s Mansion. After moving your army to the Black Tortoise Mountain Range, hand the Qilin Prince’s Mansion over to him for management.” Jiang Hengyuan cast his gaze towards Qi Fengyang

“I pay my respects to senior.” Jiang Han humbly paid his respects to Qi Fengyang. To people that Jiang Hengyuan introduced, even if his strength was inferior to his own, he did not dare to have a single strand of arrogance. Rather, he had to politely treat him.

“Since you’re here, might as well eat a meal before leaving right?” Jiang Hengyuan lightly smiled, then walked towards the kitchen. Jiang Han also smiled and nodded his head towards Qi Fengyang, then also followed.

“Milord. When I came here, the ancestor told me to pass word to

you. The Divine Body has not appeared in many years, and the abnormality that year was very possibly only an abnormality and that no Divine Body had descended.”

“So, he hoped you can quickly return to the dynasty after solving the matter of the tomb to help the emperor handle the matters within the clan.” Jiang Han said.

“For no cause or reason, why would an abnormality appear in the sky? Actually...I understand the ancestor’s painstaking efforts. He just doesn’t want me to continue suffering in this place, so that’s why he wants me to go back to the imperial court.”

“However, you see it as well. I am very well in this place. Free and at ease with no worries. Besides, if I didn’t insist on staying in this place, it would be impossible for the Emperor Tomb to be discovered in the Azure Province.” Jiang Hengyuan smiled and said.

Hearing that, Jiang Han really didn’t urge him anymore. He only curiously asked, “Milord, is the Divine Body really that important? Is it worth it for you to wait in such a desolate location, to hide your name to guard this location for many years, just to look for traces of that person?”

“Everyone in my Jiang imperial clan has emperor-level blood, and in the recent years, many geniuses have also appeared. If they were diligently developed, perhaps they would not be inferior to the so-called Divine Body?”

“Ho...” As he faced Jiang Han’s questioning, Jiang Hengyuan first lightly smiled, then followed up and said, “I can’t say for sure as for how powerful that Divine Body is. After all, I have not personally seen it. All sorts of records regarding Divine Bodies only exist in records.”

“However, that year, when the Divine Body just descended and when we prepared to head towards the Azure Province, the ancestor said a sentence to me. The Divine Body must be found, regardless of the cost.”

“If the Divine Body cannot be used by my dynasty, then what we face in the future can very possibly be the disaster of clan extermination.”

“They dare?! No matter if that person has a Divine Body or not, as long as they are born in the continent of the Nine Provinces, they are the people of my Jiang dynasty. Would they dare to commit treason and great crimes, while offending the superiors in a lower position? That person would simply be looking to die.” Jiang Han had a face full of unacceptance.

“Ho...Those with Divine Bodies have the airs of a king. They would absolutely not be willing to be underneath another person. If they receive kindness when they were young, even if that person cannot be used by the dynasty, they will still be grateful in their heart.”

“However, if my dynasty cannot give kindness to them, and rather, cause hatred and grudges to grow in their heart because of the unfair world, they would certainly have the thought to pacify

the chaotic world, and to rule the world. And if they want to rule the continent of the Nine Provinces, the Jiang imperial clan will obviously be that person's biggest obstacle. If you were the one with the Divine Body, would you get rid of that obstacle?" Jiang Hengyuan smiled and asked.

"This Divine Body is so troubling. Why not kill him before he develops?" Within Jiang Han's gaze, killing intent surged.

"It is indeed troubling, and at first, the ancestor had carefully thought of it as well. If the Divine Body was found, should he be killed, or should he be developed? However, ultimately, he chose to develop because if an exceptional genius appeared in front of you, who could bear killing off such a good seedling?"

Jiang Hengyuan indifferently smiled, then patted Jiang Han's shoulders and said, "Also, do not ever doubt the power of Divine Bodies. If you truly feel that the Divine Body is inferior to our emperor-level blood, why not recall the Nine-coloured Divine Lightning that year? Let me ask, within the imperial clan, who has that power?"

"This..." After hearing Jiang Hengyuan's words, even Jiang Han's face changed. His originally strict eyes started to uneasily flicker.

It was because he would never forget the heaven-shocking scene that night. The aura of destruction emanated by the Nine-coloured Divine Lightning engulfed the entire continent. That aura, even if he thought about it again currently, he would still feel fear.

That time, even he who had martial cultivation achievements worried whether the continent would be destroyed by the Nine-coloured Divine Lightning just like that or not.

So, later on, as per Jiang Hengyuan's instructions, Jiang Han moved the Jiang clan's dynasty army to the Black Tortoise City and he personally guarded the entrance to the Emperor Tomb.

As for Qi Fengyang, he returned to the Qilin Prince's Mansion and became the lord of the Qilin Prince's Mansion.

That news was undoubtedly explosive. The traitor who was almost beheaded in the Prince's Mansion recently became the lord of the mansion with a blink. That was truly too shocking.

But as long as they recalled the ones who supported Qi Fengyang's back was the Jiang Dynasty, the shock they had turned into not as shocked as before. Rather, they felt that Lin Moli was too pitiful.

Pitiful as he offended a person that he should not have offended. Not only did he lose his position of the mansion lord, even his little life was not kept and his entire head got crushed and exploded.

Just as great transformations happened in the Azure Province, after the journey of several days, Chu Feng passed through the Spirit Province and entered the land of the Qin Province.

Although the continent was divided into Nine Provinces, the area of land of the Nine Provinces were all different. Without a doubt, the Azure Province was the smallest within the Nine Provinces. The Spirit Province was very big, but it was said that the Qin Province was the province with the vastest area of land within the Nine Provinces.

Because he was hurried in his current journey, he did not prepare enough food. So, after the journey of several days, Chu Feng's stomach was already rumbling from hunger and it was really hard for him to continue on.

He couldn't help but reduce his flying speed. He wanted to search for a place below that could fill his stomach, and as he was there, he also wanted to inquire about the direction to the Thousand Monster Mountain.

“Haha, finally, a small town has been found by me!”

“Ehh, that's not right. Why are there so many people gathered there?”

# Chapter 327: I Go To The Thousand Monster Mountain

---

In front of Chu Feng, a small town appeared. But looking from afar, Chu Feng discovered that outside of a huge mansion in the small town, there were many people gathered. Those people were in a long line, as if there to get something.

As he came to that location for the first time, to avoid any unnecessary troubles, Chu Feng did not display his strong cultivation. Rather, he secretly descended from the sky, then walked into the town.

This time, Chu Feng discovered that it was truly only an ordinary small town. It was even inferior to the Mountain Town that his Chu family lived in before. In this town, most of them were commoners and there wasn't even a restaurant.

However, there was a huge mansion in the town. At that instant, several hundred citizens were lining up like a huge dragon. They gathered outside of the doors of the huge mansion to collect food.

“Ahh, Lord Li is truly a good person! He gives out food every month to us poor people.”

“There were many natural disasters this year and the production of food was greatly diminished. If it wasn't for Lord Li who provided us food to help us, I'm afraid that we would have already starved to death.”



From the citizens' discussions, Chu Feng found out that free food was being given out in this place, and looking at Lord Li's residence, despite not being dazzling in gold and jade, he did seem like a wealthy person. At least his residence was quite a bit stronger than the other citizens' grass houses.

This meant within Lord Li's home, even if he didn't have luxurious delicacies, he still had delicious food such as chicken, duck, fish, etc. So, Chu Feng did not line up. As he was being stared by countless people's different and strange gazes, he walked towards the Li mansion's doors.

"Halt. To pick up food, you must line up. Who allowed you to cut the queue?" Seeing that, several residence guards, big men who had tall and large bodies, pointed at Chu Feng and shouted.

The several strong men had the cultivation of the 2nd level of the Spirit realm. Although their cultivation was extremely petty, it was quite good when compared to the citizens who did not have any cultivation.

"I am not here to pick up food. I am here to buy food." Chu Feng lightly smiled and said.

"Buy food?" After hearing those words, from within the courtyard, a middle-aged man with an [eight-shaped](#) mustache who wore gorgeous clothing walked out. After the middle-aged man saw Chu Feng's beautiful clothing and young face, instantly, his eyes lit up as he quickly chuckled and said, "Young hero, may I ask

how much food you wish to buy?”

Eight = “八”

“I only want to buy a single meal of food. Bring your family’s best wine and meat over and make me a meal. I guarantee that I won’t treat any of you badly.” Chu Feng said.

“Okay, young hero, please come this way.” Seeing that, the middle-aged man with the eight-shaped mustache invited him in with an evil smile on his face, and he also yelled at the big men next to him, “What are you staring blankly at? Quickly go the kitchen and order them to prepare a table of top-level dishes for this young hero! The quicker the better!”

Who was Chu Feng? Although he was young, he was the person who flipped the entire Azure Province upside-down! Naturally, he could see that Eight-shaped Mustache felt that he was a wealthy person. Chu Feng’s age was also really young, so the man wanted to take the chance to cheat him.

However, Chu Feng was too lazy to bother with him because currently, he was really hungry. He only wanted to eat a good meal. As for money? Chu Feng was not even lacking in money.

Following that, Chu Feng was invited into a pretty nice hall. It also had to be said that Eight-shaped Mustache’s working efficiency was rather good. Very quickly, many dishes filled the table.

Perhaps because Chu Feng was too hungry, or because their

dishes were very pleasant-smelling, as Chu Feng looked at the table of dishes, golden stars could truly appear in front of his eyes. As he drooled, he pulled back his sleeve and revealed his arm, preparing to fill himself with all the food.

“Wait.” But just at that time, Eight-shaped Mustache suddenly spoke. He chuckled while smiling and saying to Chu Feng, “Young hero, it’s not that I don’t believe you, but quite a few ingredients have been spent on this table of good dishes. Usually, my family’s lord wouldn’t dare to be so extravagant so if you can’t take out something that has equal value, I can’t really give a good explanation when I get back.”

“Damn.” Chu Feng got angry. You think that I don’t have enough to eat your meal?! So, Chu Feng put his hand towards the Cosmos Sack on his waist and wanted to just casually take something out to stupefy Eight-shaped Mustache.

“Crap.” Although it seemed like an insignificant touch, Chu Feng’s face changed because he astonishedly discovered that within his Cosmos Sack, other than the World Spirit Compass and some other backup equipment, it was completely empty. There wasn’t even fur.

At that instant, Chu Feng recalled at first when he was in the Thousand Bone Graveyard, he tidied up his Cosmos Sack. He handed the things he felt were useless over to Li Zhangqing, and the Profound medicines and whatnot that he left for himself were all used up when he cultivated.

Currently, Chu Feng was truly unable to take out an item of equal

value to pay the table of dishes. After all, what he left behind were things he needed to use, and all of them were priceless materials. Putting aside that giving it to this Eight-shaped Mustache would be very troubling, even if he took it out, that man might not be able to recognize what it was.

“I say, young hero. You aren’t planning to eat and run right?” Seeing that, Eight-shaped Mustache shot his gaze sideways. The previous solicitous smile completely dissipated, and replacing it was a smear of dark fierceness. At the same time, several big men also rushed in from outside. Looking at how they were, they seemed to want to attack Chu Feng.

At that instant, Chu Feng was furious as well. He thought of his identity, his strength. Yet he was actually being looked down upon by the group of beggars? Chu Feng’s first thought was to raise his hand and throw a punch to lift their roof off and away so that they could see his own strength and deeply realize their mistake.

But thinking in more detail, Chu Feng discovered that he was indeed unreasonable. Eating a meal without money to pay the bills was a fact, and it was truly not too good to use force to solve the problem. Although Chu Feng was not afraid of things, he wasn’t an evil person who did nothing but commit crimes. Naturally, he could not do so overbearing and arrogant things while bullying the weak.

“What are all of you doing?” But just at that time, from outside of the hall, an old man’s strict yell rang out. Following that, an old man in his sixties walked in.

That old man wore very ancient clothing and his appearance was very dirt-like as well. He really seemed like an old man who walked around striking gongs in the night to indicate time. However, when that old man appeared, no matter if it was Eight-shaped Mustache or the several big men, they instantly turned more humble.

“Lord, this guy wants to eat and run.” Obviously, Eight-shaped Mustache was very afraid of that old man as he quickly went up to explain.

At that instant, Chu Feng finally knew that the old man who did not look like anyone special was the lord of this big residence, the Lord Li who was said, by the citizens, to be kind and liked to give his wealth out for others.

“Really...The so-called ‘those who come are guests’. It is but a single meal, so is there truly a need to ask for money, and to even attack him?”

“Why aren’t you apologizing to this guest?” However, after hearing Eight-shaped Mustache’s explanation, Lord Li was even angrier as he pointed at their heads and harshly reprimanded.

In a situation like that, Eight-shaped Mustache and the other big men could only apologize to Chu Feng one after the other. On the other hand, it caused Chu Feng to feel slightly bad.

“Friend, you aren’t a native person right? Where are you heading towards?” Lord Li sat next to Chu Feng and smiled while asking.

The current Chu Feng already did not restrain himself as he started to stuff himself with food as he swept away everything. Only after hearing Lord Li ask did he wipe his mouth that was full of oil and said, “I am indeed not a native person. I came from Spirit Province and I want to go towards the Thousand Monster Mountain.”

“What? Thousand Monster Mountain?!”

After hearing the three words “Thousand Monster Mountain”, not only Master Li, almost the faces of everyone on scene changed greatly as they were not lightly frightened. Lord Li’s body even swayed and he almost fell off from the chair. If Chu Feng didn’t have quick hands and sharp eyes, and caught him, he was certainly going to fall down with four of his limbs pointing towards the sky.

## Chapter 328: Help Him Out

---

“Friend, I didn’t hear wrong did I? You said that you wanted to go to the Thousand Monster Mountain?” Lord Li had shock across his face, and within the gaze that he looked at Chu Feng with, it was filled with curiosity and alarm. How was he even looking at a person? He was simply looking at a monster.

And from the reactions of Lord Li as well as the people on scene, Chu Feng could guess that most likely, the Thousand Monster Mountain was an unknown land, or a forbidden zone. So, with a clever thought, he said,

“Actually, without hiding anything, I am a martial cultivator. When I was in the Azure Province, I heard that the Thousand Monster Mountain in the Qin Province was a strange land and it had great benefits towards martial cultivation. So, with a far and hard journey, I came to this place because I wanted to experience the glory of the Thousand Monster Mountain.”

“Martial cultivator? A little brat like you?” However, after hearing the two words “martial cultivator”, Eight-shaped Mustache and the other big men instantly hiddenly shot gazes of disdain. Obviously, they did not believe that Chu Feng was a martial cultivator.

“Friend, I don’t know whether or not the Thousand Monster Mountain has great benefits towards martial cultivation, but the Thousand Monster Mountain is a forbidden land for humans. It is the world of Monstrous Beasts.”

“The Prestigious Prince’s Mansion had once ordered that any power or person were not allowed to enter the Thousand Monster Mountain without permission. Or else, if they angered the Monstrous Beasts in the Thousand Monster Mountain, a huge battle would be initiated.” Master Li gravely reminded as he was deeply afraid that Chu Feng did not know good or bad and would enter the Thousand Monster Mountain.

“Prestigious Prince’s Mansion? They’re the ruler of the Qin Province?” Chu Feng curiously asked.

“Friend, it seems like this is truly the first time that you’ve come to the Qin Province, and you seem to not know anything about it.” Seeing that, the old man was first taken aback, then later on, he explained in detail,

“The Prestigious Prince’s Mansion was originally called the Prestigious Villa and it is the number one power in my Qin Province. Because the Prestigious Villa got stronger by each day and had already surpassed the original ruler of the Qin Province, the Thick Ground Grass Prince’s Mansion, the dynasty removed the ruling power of the Thick Ground Grass Prince’s Mansion and handed the Qin Province over to the Prestigious Villa for managing.”

After hearing the words of Lord Li, Chu Feng was also able to understand the strength of the Prestigious Villa. To be able to use their own development to exceed the dynasty’s recognized ruler meant that the Prestigious Villa did indeed have some methods. At least the Lingyun School was unable to do that.



“The Monstrous Beasts in the Thousand Monster Mountain are truly that powerful? Even the strongest body of power don’t dare to offend them?” Chu Feng tried to inquire more news about the Thousand Monster Mountain.

“Of course! The Monstrous Beasts in the Thousand Monster Mountain are really scary. The Monstrous Beasts within have already ruled over the Thousand Monster Mountain for almost a thousand years. I heard that the number of Monstrous Beasts that are living in there reach several million. Every single of them are extremely savage and some can even transform into a human shape.”

“Especially the Four Great Monster Kings inside the Thousand Monster Mountain. They have extremely strong power, and even the lord of the Prestigious Prince’s Mansion fear them.”

“But luckily, their activities stay within the Thousand Monster Mountain or else the citizens of the Qin Prince would come across misfortune.”

“And also because of that, the Prestigious Villa gave an order and stated that no one is allowed to step in the Thousand Monster Mountain or else, if it stirs up the anger of the Monstrous Beasts and causes them to attack humans, it would be a huge crime worthy of family extermination.” Lord Li continued saying.

“So it’s like that. It seems like Lord Li, you truly understand quite a bit regarding the matters of the Qin Province.” Chu Feng couldn’t help but admire Lord Li a bit. One’s knowledge was usually quite limited, so those in lower positions would know less.

Especially the little town that Lord Li and the others were in. It was the border area of the Qin Province, so accordingly, as they had the status of commoners, they shouldn't know a lot.

“Ho...Actually, I heard it from my grandson.”

“My grandson is a core disciple of the second-rate school, the Illusionary Thunder School. To be honest, my family were originally poor citizens, but because my grandson has quite some potential, that is why we can have our current wealth.” As he mentioned his own grandson, Lord Li had pride across his face.

“Lord, Lord!” But just at that time, bursts of yelling suddenly rang out within the hall. Following the yells, a thin and weak young person quickly ran over.

“So it's Wang Er! What happened? Why so hurried?” Lord Li chuckled and asked when he saw the person who came was. It could be seen that he treated the servants in the mansion quite well.

“It's a letter from the Illusionary Thunder School.” The male called Wang Er handed the letter over.

“It's my grandson.” At that instant, Lord Li was greatly joyed. After taking the letter, he tore the letter open in a very practiced way and started to read it with a full face of happiness.

However, Chu Feng discovered that Lord Li's face became more and more off. First, it was a bit pale. Then, it was a bit blue. At the end, it was a bit purple and even his body started to tremble. At the end, his body leaned to the side and he fainted away.

“Lord Li, are you okay?” Luckily, Chu Feng extended his hands and propped him onto a chair. That scene also frightened the people from the Li mansion and they hurriedly went over to check out what happened to Lord Li.

On the other hand, Chu Feng picked up the letter Lord Li dropped on the floor. After reading, Chu Feng generally understood the situation that happened as well as the reason why Lord Li fainted away.

That letter was not sent by his grandson. It was secretly sent over by one of his grandson's closest friend in the Illusionary Thunder School.

The rough contents of the letter was that Lord Li's grandson, accidentally, offended the young school head of the Illusionary Thunder School. Currently, he was imprisoned and his friend hoped that Lord Li could think of a way to save him.

However, how could Lord Li, a person who was born into a poor family, have the strength to help his grandson get out of imprisonment? The current wealth he had was all brought to him by his grandson.

Besides, to them, the Illusionary Thunder School was an

untouchable enormous monster. They would be afraid even if they merely thought about them, not to mention going to such a place to save their own grandson.

So, Lord Li could not be blamed for fainting away after getting hold of that news, because to him, it was truly like a thunder in a clear sky. A terrifying nightmare.

“Oi. What’s the name of Lord Li’s grandson?” Chu Feng asked the man with an eight-shaped mustache.

“What’s that for?” Eight-shaped Mustache looked at Chu Feng with alert.

“I’m asking you for his name.” Chu Feng’s pupils shrunk and a streak of cold glare appeared.

Eight-shaped Mustache was terrified by Chu Feng’s gaze. With a poof, he sat limply on the ground. He did not dare to even conceal anything as he said with a trembling voice, “He’s...He’s called [Li Datou](#).”

Li = Surname | Datou = “Big head”

“Which direction to the Illusionary Thunder School?” Chu Feng asked again, and Eight-shaped Mustache told him the direction to the Illusionary Thunder School as well as the distance from here to there.

After hearing everything, Chu Feng left with quick steps. As for

the servants of the Li family, they had faces full of confusion as they did not understand why the young man with such a young age was asking about things like that.

On the other hand, the man with an eight-shaped mustache blankly sat there and for a long time, he did not come to his senses. He was still submerged within the horror that was brought along with Chu Feng's gaze.

As for why Chu Feng asked about those things, naturally, it was to help Lord Li. Chu Feng could see that Lord Li was a good person. A true good person, and the citizens of the entire town agreed with that.

Putting aside that he told him about the things regarding the Thousand Monster Mountain, he even gave him a meal. Purely based on his goodwill and his exceptional character, Chu Feng felt that there was a need to help him out.

## Chapter 329: Completely Subdued

---

The Illusionary Thunder School was actually not far from the Li family. For ordinary citizens, if they were to ride on carriages, they would require several days' worth of time. But with Chu Feng speed, he only required a short half-day.

So after half a day of hurrying, Chu Feng already currently arrived at the so-called Illusionary Thunder School. Chu Feng came here to save someone, so he did not enter openly but carefully snuck in.

Also, Chu Feng discovered that despite being a second-rate school, the Illusionary Thunder School's elders and disciples did not have weak strength. They were absolutely not inferior to the first-rate schools in the Azure Province.

Although such a school could not threaten Chu Feng and he could even completely destroy that place with Eggy's power, after all, the Qin Province was different from the Azure Province, and Chu Feng still had to keep low profile when he first came here.

Thus, relying on unique methods of World Spiritists, Chu Feng secretly sneaked into the core zone of the Illusionary Thunder School and arrived in a colourful garden. The first step in saving Li Datou was to first find the person who locked him up: The young head of the Illusionary Thunder School.

One step at a time, he approached, and Chu Feng finally found several figures. It was a group of males and females, all of them

being young. Their cultivations were not weak as well, being all in the Profound realm.

Especially a male with a crest hairstyle. His cultivation already reached the 6th level of the Profound realm. That cultivation was truly not weak, or at least within the Azure Province, only a few people in the young generation reached that stage.

However, within the borders of the Qin Province, he had actually so casually become the young head of a second-rate school. From that, it could be seen how big of a difference there was in strength between the Qin Province and the Azure Province.

At that instant, Chu Feng originally wanted to immediately rush up to give a lesson to the young school head before asking the whereabouts of Li Datou, but after he heard the content of their conversation, Chu Feng couldn't help but hold back such urges because within their conversation, Chu Feng heard the sensitive three words, "Thousand Monster Mountain".

"I never would have thought after staying hidden for so long, the Prestigious Villa still cannot stand it and they will start their attacks on the Thousand Monster Mountain."

"Yeah, the so-called 'A single mountain cannot hold two tigers, a single province cannot hold two kings'. Although the Monstrous Beasts in the Thousand Monster Mountain don't interfere with the matters of the various powers in the Qin Province and they are only staying in their small piece of land, the ruler of the Qin Province, the Prestigious Villa, will naturally be unwilling to have a group of existences that they cannot control on their own land.

Thus, starting a battle with the Thousand Monster Mountain was only a matter of time, so the current scene isn't too strange."

"Mm. But it has to be admitted that the Prestigious Villa does have some methods. It actually set up a Marriage Gathering and took out all the excellent beauty geniuses with outstanding strength. Right now, the entire young generation of the Qin Province are heading towards the Prestigious Villa, and even the peak geniuses from other provinces are coming."

"Is that real or fake? To take care of the Thousand Monster Mountain, the Prestigious Villa had actually used such methods? Joining up with the powers from other provinces for help?"

"Thousand trues and ten thousand certainties. Although they did not say to make alliances with other powers, if this so-called Marriage Gathering succeeds, naturally, they will have a relationship of an alliance with other powers. I'm sure that as long as the Prestigious Villa has attacking intentions towards the Thousand Monster Mountain, the great powers from the other provinces would not sit and wait. After all, within that mountain range, there are many treasures."

"Setting up an alliance with the peak powers of the other provinces? That is just like a double-edged sword! If things do not go well, it will truly be 'giving up the bride and losing an army'. Aren't they a bit too careless by doing this?"

"Ahh, naturally, I'm sure that the Prestigious Villa will have their own considerations, so there is no need for us to worry about these things. On the other hand, I heard that the future chief of the Jie



clan from the Spirit Province, ‘Jie Qingming’ has already arrived in the Qin Province, and his goal is to join this Marriage Gathering.”

“Jie Qingming? He’s a really outstanding genius! I heard that when he was in the 9th level of the Profound realm, he had once defeated an expert in the Heaven realm. The current him should have already entered the Heaven realm right?”

“Not only Jie Qingming. The peak characters of the young generation from the Tang Province, Song Province, Yuan Province, Ming Province, and Sui Province have also come to the Qin Province, and their goal is to join this Marriage Gathering.”

“Heavens! I never would have thought that the rallying power of the Prestigious Villa would be this strong. This time, aren’t the strongest of the young generations in the continent of the Nine Provinces all gathered in the Qin Province?”

“Ahh, I truly want to take a look at the glory of those monsters. But sadly, I heard that only people in the younger generations are allowed to participate in the Marriage Gathering. Other than the monsters who received the invitation, if one wanted to join this Marriage Gathering, they would need to pass layers of screenings! It looks like we won’t have any hope like that.”

After hearing the conversation between the several people, Chu Feng couldn’t help but rejoice. He hiddenly said, “I never would have thought that the Prestigious Villa would actually prepare to attack the Thousand Monster Mountain. They are even gathering people from all areas! Truly, even the heavens are helping me.”

It had to be said that Chu Feng's current journey brought him quite good news. So, he didn't bother continue listening to the group of people's useless words so he leaped, and like a ghost, appeared within the pavilion that the three people were. So looked at the male with a crest hairstyle, smiled, and asked, "You're the head of the Illusionary Thunder School?"

The sudden scene caused the several people there to be terrified. Especially the young head of the Illusionary Thunder School. His face changed greatly as he pointed at Chu Feng and said with panic, "Who are you?"

bang However, without saying anything, Chu Feng raised his hand and threw a fist. It directly collided with the face of the young head of the Illusionary Thunder School. The strong power caused him to be fierce dropped to the ground, and he who had the cultivation of the 6th level of the Profound realm had half of his mouth's teeth forcibly shattered.

"When I ask you a question, reply honestly. God damn, don't answer with a question and ask who I am." Chu Feng coldly said after hitting the young school head with the single punch.

And at that instant, the faces of the several young males and females were already pale-white from fright. Everyone was aware that Chu Feng was an expert since he was able to defeat the young head of the Illusionary Thunder School, who was the strongest within them, with one strike.

So, at that instant, they did not speak any words and they started to run away. However, with a thought from Chu Feng, he spread out his Grey-coloured Spirit Formation and enveloped everyone within. Not to mention wanting to escape, even their voices could not be spread out.

“I ask you again. Are you the head of the Illusionary Thunder School?” Chu Feng also did not bother with the group of people who wanted to escape as he pointed at the male in front of his eyes who had a crest hairstyle and interrogated.

“I..I am.” This time, the young head of the Illusionary Thunder School did not dare to have any hesitation. He covered the side of his cave and obediently replied.

“In period of time before, have you imprisoned a core disciple called Li Datou?” Chu Feng asked.

“Li Datou? I don’t know!” The head of the Illusionary Thunder School quickly shook his head.

“I’ll let you not know.” However, Chu Feng threw a hook straight towards his face, and it caused the young school head who very uneasily climbed back up to fall back down to the ground. It also caused the teeth on one side of his mouth to be shattered.

“I’ll speak, I’ll speak! All the disciples in the Illusionary Thunder School that offended me gets imprisoned in the underground prison. The person you spoke of must also be there!” This time, the young head of the Illusionary Thunder School was completely

subdued.

## Chapter 330: Young Man

---

Within the Illusionary Thunder School, the second-rate school, it was the same as usual. The disciples and elders all had smiles on their faces. The ones who cultivated cultivated, and the ones who chatted chatted, showing the scene of thriving and flourishing.

However, no one knew that the young head of their Illusionary Thunder School was currently suffering a young man's beating and devastation behind the Illusionary Thunder School's back garden.

“Stop hitting, I beg you! I'll give you whatever you want!”

The young head of the Illusionary Thunder School presently had a blue nose and a swelled face. Purely from looking at his outer appearance, one could not even tell that he was the young school head who had the elegant demeanor before. In reality, even his voice changed and it was even more unpleasant than a pig being killed.

“Who do you take me as? Do you think I'm here to rob you, to take the tiny bit of wealth you have on you?” Chu Feng disdainfully and coldly snorted, but as he spoke, he extended his hand towards the young school head's Cosmos Sack. Simultaneously, he scanned his gaze towards his surroundings, towards the young males and females who had pale-white faces from fright.

“Little brother, please accept this with smiles.” It had to be said

that the group of people were rather cooperative. Every single one quickly took off their Cosmos Sacks and directly gave them to Chu Feng.

“Mm. Not bad. At least you have a tiny bit of insight.” After Chu Feng put all the Cosmos Sacks into his pocket, he nodded his head in satisfaction.

To be honest, although the statuses and positions of the several people should be quite good and the things in their Cosmos Sacks were fine, when facing Chu Feng who had extremely harsh requirements towards cultivating resources, their things could not even catch his eyes normally.

But right now, the reason why Chu Feng took their Cosmos Sacks away was because the current Chu Feng had an embarrassingly little amount of money. Coincidentally, their Cosmos Sacks could fill his own up.

After putting the several people’s Cosmos Sacks away, Chu Feng cast his gaze towards the young head of the Illusionary Thunder School who had a battered up face and coldly said, “You, listen up. Today, I’m taking away Li Datou so you better act as if nothing had happened.”

“If you dare to harm Li Datou or his family, then the ones who will suffer will not only be you. Your father will be included, as well as your entire Illusionary Thunder School.”

As Chu Feng spoke, ferociousness was revealed in his eyes. They

emitted icy cold killing intent, and with a single glance, it would cause one to feel that chilliness entered their body and feel fear from deep in their heart. It caused others to feel that his words were absolutely not joking, and since he could say it, he could do it.

Quickly following that, Chu Feng stuck his palm out again and forcefully grabbed the commanding badge on the waist of the young Illusionary Thunder School. He said, "I'll borrow this for a while. Also, all of you, rest here for a while. Half a day later, this Spirit Formation will automatically be removed."

After saying those words, Chu Feng prepared to leave, but the young head of the Illusion Thunder School closely asked, "Who exactly are you?"

Hearing that, Chu Feng turned his head around, lightly smiled, then said, "I am Asura."

After speaking, Chu Feng leaped, stepped out of the Spirit Formation, and swiftly left. He left the young head of the Illusionary Thunder School and the others behind as they were standing where they were while being dumbfounded. Deep fear towards Chu Feng still lingered around on their faces.

From this day forth, within their brains, they would forever remember the figure of a young man. Asura, who was even younger than them yet had such terrifying strength to the point of abnormality.

There were many people imprisoned within the prison in the

Illusionary Thunder School. They were locked in that place because of all sorts of reasons, but if one had to say who were the most miserable out of the people were confined within that place, it would absolutely be none other than the people who offended the young school head.

In this place, they wouldn't receive any punishment, but they were forbidden from cultivating. If they were locked in for their entire life, it meant they were sending their life's future to the grave, and those who offended the young school head would always receive that ending.

“Look! That person seemed to enter this place because he offended the young school head.”

“Then he's dead. Even the gods cannot help those who offended the young school head.” The prisoners within a cell were pointing and discussing about a thin and weak young man who knelt in the cell's corner without speaking.

“Oi! Boy, what's your name?” After knowing that the young man entered because he offended the young school head, the several prisoners looked at one another, then surrounded the young man with malicious intents.

“I...I'm Li Datou. Seniors, what's the matter?”

The young man was obviously terrified by those people. Within the prison, things such as prisoners beating other prisoners were very normal. Since he offended the young school head, for



bootlicking, many people would attack him. So, that was why many people who offended the young school head got beaten to death in the prison.

“What? You’re called Li Datou? This is the first time that I’ve heard of such an ugly name! Come over and kneel down, then slap yourself a thousand times.” One male pointed at Li Datou and loudly yelled.

“Seniors, we have no grievances nor hatred between us, so why do you need to make things so difficult for me?” Although Li Datou was cowardly, he did not lower his head easily. Telling him to kneel and slap himself was one of the things that he was determined not to do.

“God damn. I tell you to slap yourself, so slap yourself! You dare to speak such rubbish? Beat him.” Seeing that Li Datou did not follow what he told him to do, the male was furious and after raising his leg, he kicked Li Datou to the ground. Following that, everyone in that cell surrounded him and started to throw fists and kicks at him.

“Stop! What are you doing?” Just at that time, the old elders who guarded walked over, opened the cell, and pointed at the people in the cell while strictly yelling. However, behind those elders, there was a graceful young man with a young face.

“Elder. This boy offended the school head, and not only did he not repent, he even dared to speak such disrespectful and rude words, and insulted the school head. As a member of the Illusionary Thunder School, naturally, we have the obligations to

give him a lesson for the school head.”

“Yeah! Elder, this boy is too dishonest. We should truly punish him well. Locking him in for his entire life isn’t even much.”

Seeing that, the same school disciples who attacked Li Datou quickly solicitously explained. It was all intentional. Although they were also locked into that place because they committed wrongs, it was actually effective to gain the good impressions from the elders by beating up prisoners who offended the young school head.

At that instant, Li Datou lowered his head and did not speak because he knew that he was out of luck again. As he faced their cunning explanations, he did not even have any chance to defend himself. Certainly, not only would he not get any assistance from the elders, he would even get some painful punishment.

However, just as Li Datou thought his luck was out, and just as the males who were beating him up thought that they were going to be rewarded, the elder guards cast their gaze towards the young man next to him and respectfully asked, “Milord, look. This...”

Chu Feng lightly smiled, then said, “The school head said it. Those who dare to attack Li Datou will get their hands and feet snapped. Do you question that?” As he spoke, Chu Feng flipped his palm and the school head’s commanding badge appeared in his palm.

“Yes sir.” After seeing the commanding badge, the several elders instantly steeled their hearts and they did not dare to hesitate in

the slightest anymore.

And as they turned around, their gazes revealed ferociousness and their faces brought killing intent. Without mercy, they headed towards the several males.

“Ahh~~~”

At that instant, all sorts of heart-tearing and lung-splitting yells endlessly rang out, and all males, as they did not know what to do, got their hands and feet forcibly snapped by the elders.

As for that Li Datou, he even widened his mouth from shock. He blankly stood where he was, and his face was at a loss while he was astonished.

Only until the nearby young man brought him out of the cell, left the Illusionary Thunder School while riding on his White-headed Eagle, then flew towards his hometown did he finally understand that he was saved, and he seemed to be saved by the young man.

# Prestigious Villa

## Chapter 331: Prestigious Villa

---

After saving Li Datou and bringing him away, with the White-headed Eagle, Chu Feng sent Li Datou back to the small town. To avoid any unnecessary troubles, Chu Feng did not directly send him back to the town. He landed outside of the small town.

Also, to prevent the head of the Illusionary Thunder School from taking revenge, Chu Feng gave Li Datou one of the Cosmos Sacks he took from the young head of the Illusionary Thunder School and the others.

As he held the Cosmos Sack, Li Datou was so moved that he didn't know what to do because he could not think of the reason why Chu Feng would help him. So, after a while of hesitation, he curiously asked closely, "Young hero, why did you help me?"

"Ho..." As he faced Li Datou's question, Chu Feng lightly smiled but did not reply. He leaped onto the White-headed Eagle, and when the White-headed Eagle flapped its huge wings and prepared to rise into the sky, then, Chu Feng said to Li Datou, "Go back and say this to your grandfather in my place, 'Thank you for treating me to the meal'."

At the same time that his voice finishing sounded out, the White-headed Eagle already rose into the air, and with an ear-piercing cry, it rushed deeper into the Qin Province. As for Li Datou, he wasn't a person who was dumb, so he knew that his grandfather must have done something so that the mysterious young man would save his life.

After clearing up the ins and outs of the situation, without any more hesitation, Li Datou quickly went towards the small town that his family lived in. First, he needed to understand what his grandfather had actually did. Next, it was to quickly make a plan for his entire family so they could quickly leave the small town; to quickly distance themselves from the range of power of the Illusionary Thunder School.

Within the small town, Lord Li already awakened. However, because his grandson offended the young head of the Illusionary Thunder School, got locked in prison, and it was unknown whether he was currently alive or not, Lord Li truly was devastatingly sorrowful and endlessly sad.

As an old man born as a commoner, fame, profit, and wealth meant very little to him. Even without his current family's property, he could still live through the days poor. But if something truly happened to his grandson, there would no longer be any meaning in living.

“Grandfather, grandfather!”

Just at that time, a familiar voice suddenly rang out outside the door. Closely following that, Li Datou also hurriedly entered the room. After knowing his grandfather sank into a coma, Li Datou was extremely worried as well.

“Datou, is that you? I...I’m not dreaming right?” After seeing Li Datou, Lord Li even thought that he was dreaming. He felt that it wasn’t reality.

“Grandfather, it’s me! I’m Datou!”

“Lord, it’s young master! It is really young master, he has returned!” Li Datou quickly nodded his head, and at the same time, the servants in the room were also endlessly joyful.

“It’s really Datou? But weren’t you imprisoned?” Seeing that it was truly his grandson who returned, Lord Li was both ecstatic and confused. He felt that there was certainly something strange about it.

“Grandfather, didn’t you ask someone to save me?” Li Datou answered with a question.

“I asked someone to save you? I didn’t! Datou, you know the situation in our family. The reason why we have our current family wealth is all because of you. How would it be possible to ask someone to save you from the Illusionary Thunder School’s prison?” Lord Li firmly denied.

“Grandfather, you didn’t ask someone you save me? Then recently, have you treated a young man to a meal?” Li Datou continued asking.

“This...In today’s morning, there was indeed a young man who came from the Spirit Province and ate a meal in the mansion. Datou, why did you ask that? The one who saved you wouldn’t have been that young man right?” Lord Li was a bit stupefied as he was being asked.

“There shouldn’t be any mistake. Grandfather, since you helped others with kind heart, that’s why the expert came and save me, because after saving me, the young man even told me to represent him to thank you for treating him for his meal.” Li Datou already completely cleared up the truth of the situation.

“Datou, what you said was all true? That young man saved you? But his age, how is it possible...”

At that instant, Lord Li’s face was filled with astonishment. He could still remember Chu Feng’s young face was well as his extremely small age.

Although Chu Feng called himself as a martial cultivator, even if he was one, it would not be possible for him to have the strength to save his grandson from the Illusionary Thunder School right? If Chu Feng was truly that strong, that was a bit too terrifying. It wasn’t a matter than an ordinary citizen could accept.

And when faced with the questioning of Lord Li and the others, Li Datou nodded his head with confirmation that filled his face and said, “It was a young man, and it is certainly the young man that you talked about as well. Grandfather, this time, you unintentionally saved my life!”

Seeing Li Datou be so sure, everyone couldn’t help but take in a breath of cold air, and they had choice but to believe that the one who saved Li Datou was the young man who ate a meal within the mansion this morning.



However, compared to the pure shock of others, the male with the eight-shaped mustache as well as the several big men had their faces filled with lingering fear. As long as they recalled that “they had eyes but didn’t recognize Mount Tai” and almost attacked a martial cultivation expert who had a special identity, they would still feel extremely frightened with endless fear that abided.

After that, Li Datou also listened to Chu Feng’s instructions. On the same day, he hurriedly brought his grandfather as well as his close family away from the small town.

However, Chu Feng did not know anything about the reactions of the Li family in their mansion because Chu Feng’s current goal was very clear. It was to enter the Thousand Monster Mountain, and after knowing that the Thousand Monster Mountain was a danger land where Monstrous Monsters proclaimed themselves as the rulers, there was only one chance for Chu Feng to enter the Thousand Monster Mountain. It was to enter through the Prestigious Villa.

Although the Qin Province was very big, with the speed of the top-quality White-headed Eagle, Little White, after a few more days’ worth of time, Chu Feng finally arrived at the Prestigious Villa.

Although the Prestigious Villa was named as a villa, it was a true enormous power. On top of a mountain range, several huge cities were created. Not only did the cities cover a large area of space with grand might, every single one of them were even connected. No matter if it was in terms of might or area, it was the most

extreme out of all the powers that Chu Feng had seen.

However, because of the Marriage Gathering, currently, people formed mountains and oceans outside of the Prestigious Villa. The young geniuses of the Nine Provinces were gathered, and right now, even wanting to enter the Prestigious Villa was a huge problem, not to mention getting the qualifications to participate in the Marriage Gathering.

“Damn. This scale...all of them can’t find a wife? Why have so many people come here for the liveliness?”

The current Chu Feng was standing within an ocean of people. As he looked at the road towards the Prestigious Villa that had a long dragon of humans in which the end could not be seen, he tightly frowned and his face turned slightly blue.

Because Chu Feng truly did not know how long he would need to enter the Prestigious Villa if he were line up.

Besides, not only did one need to line up to enter the Prestigious Villa. In reality, for many people, they trekked a long distance to this place and painfully waited for a long time in the queue, but they were driven away in the first investigation checkpoint because their status or position was insufficient.

And after seeing such strict examinations, Chu Feng who came from the Azure Province truly did not know whether he was able to gain the qualifications to enter the Prestigious Villa.

“Oi, that boy over there. Are you going to line or not? If you’re not going to enter, don’t block the road. The people behind you still need to enter the line right?” Just as Chu Feng was hesitating, the people behind him started to impatiently yell.

“You damn...” When Chu Feng who already did not have a pleased mood heard that people even dared to howl at him, the angry suppressed in his heart rushed out with a whoosh. He turned his head around and was going to start insulting, but when he cast his gaze behind that person, his eyes couldn’t help but light up and his face instantly turned happy.

## Chapter 332: Relics Of The Monster King

---

Focusing his gaze and looking over, within the original crowd of people who were like mountains and oceans, they opened a wide path.

The ones going along the path were pairs of men and horses. The ones who led were two middle-aged males who rode on golden-coloured battle horses. The auras of the two males were unordinary, and they were both powerful people in the peak of the Profound realm. They were the people from the Prestigious Villa.

Although the Prestigious Villa was strong, those in the peak of the Profound realm were still absolutely top-level characters in the Prestigious Villa. So, after people like them appeared, who would dare to block their path?

As for why the two people from the Prestigious Villa appeared at that place, it was because they were opening a path for the body of power behind them. That power was not simple, and it was one of the rulers of the Spirit Province, the people from the World Spirit Guild.

This time, there weren't many people from the World Spirit Guild who came. There wasn't even two hundred people, and all of them were males. The oldest doubtlessly did not reach thirty years old, and they were all still in young generation, being of mediocre level.

And the reason why Chu Feng was so happy was not only because

he saw people from the World Spirit Guild, it was also because he saw a familiar person within the group of people. It was the person who was similarly aged as Chu Feng, being both young men; the one named as being the most outstanding genius within the young generation of the World Spirit Guild, Gu Bo.

“Gu Bo!” After seeing Gu Bo, Chu Feng quickly waved his hand as he went closer.

“Halt.” However, before even letting him speak, the two people from the Prestigious Villa who were opening the path stopped Chu Feng with unkind faces.

“Chu Feng?!” Seeing Chu Feng, Gu Bo was truly incomparably joyful. He hurriedly went up and said to the two Prestigious Villa experts, “Elders, this is my friend. He’s part of my World Spirit Guild.”

“Oh?” At that instant, the two people from the Prestigious Villa did not immediately let Chu Feng in. They cast their gaze towards the young man who was also in the peak of the Profound realm behind Gu Bo. Those people were clearly the representative characters of the World Spirit Guild who came on this journey.

“Gu Bo, you recognize him? Why have I never seen him before?” Seeing that, a man with a white face asked Gu Bo.

“Big brother Wang, he’s the person who stepped onto the peak of the Asura Ghost Tower last time, Chu Feng!” Seeing that, Gu Bo quickly explained.

“What? He’s Chu Feng?!” After the words came out, pretty much everyone in the World Spirit Guild cast their amazed gazes towards Chu Feng.

To normal people, perhaps they would not know what the Asura Ghost Tower was all about, but to the people from the World Spirit Guild, they deeply knew the impressiveness of the Asura Ghost Tower. The news of Chu Feng climbing the Asura Ghost Tower last time already spread around in the World Spirit Guild, so many people wanted to personally see what kind of character Chu Feng was.

“Elders, he is indeed part of my World Spirit Guild, so I hope you can help me out.” After assessing Chu Feng, the white-faced male walked forward and said to the people from the Prestigious Villa.

“Ahh, you’re too polite. It is only giving an extra spot out! It’s fine.” It had to be said that the white-faced male had quite a bit of face, because after speaking, the two elders from the Prestigious Villa quickly let Chu Feng into the World Spirit Guild’s group.

Soon after, under countless gazes of admiration and envy, Chu Feng followed the World Spirit Guild’s group. No need to line up, no need for examinations. He directly stepped into the Prestigious Villa.

After entering the Prestigious Villa and by the arrangements of Gu Bo and the others, Chu Feng even got a luxurious palace for himself to live in. Within the palace, there were even beautiful

female servants serving there. It could be said to be top-class treatment for important guests.

“Chu Feng, what a coincidence. I never would have thought you would come to his place as well. Are you here for the Marriage Gathering?” As Chu Feng was resting in the palace, Gu Bo asked with excitement that filled his face.

“Heh, I just came past here by chance, and incidentally, I heard that this Prestigious Villa was hosting a marriage gathering or something, and on a curious whim, I came here for the liveliness.”

“But I never would have thought that the rallying power of this Prestigious Villa would be so big, being able to call so many people here. I just discovered that there seemed to be quite a few people from other provinces and powers, but I never would have thought that even you came.” Chu Feng sighed as he pretended that he did not know anything.

“Chu Feng, you should know the reason why the Prestigious Villa is setting up this Marriage Gathering right?” Gu Bo asked.

“Reason? Isn’t it a chance for single males to find a beautiful wife? What other reason can there be?” Chu Feng continued to feint idiocy.

Seeing that, Gu Bo first sent the female servants in the palace away, then only after laying a sound-proof Spirit Formation did he come near Chu Feng’s side and said in a low voice,

“Chu Feng, think carefully. If this is truly only a simple marriage gathering, would it be able to attract so many young generations from so many powers to this place? Is it even possible that there are no beauties in other provinces? Besides, for those who are able to enter this place, which one of them would be unable to find a wife?”

“After hearing your words, that is indeed true. What are they actually doing here? Don’t keep me in suspense!” Chu Feng closely asked with a face of confusion.

“Without hiding the truth, in this Qin Province, there are treasures. The Thousand Monster Mountain.”

“According to rumours, many years ago, a Monster King appeared within the Thousand Monster Mountain. That Monster King had powerful strength. With the raise of the hand or foot, mountain peaks could collapse and the earth could crumble. He had the abilities to call upon the wind and rain.”

“However, it’s said for a human, the greater the ability, the greater the ambition. Monstrous Beasts are no exception. That Monster King always wanted Monstrous Beasts to rule over this land, and because of that, unavoidably, there was a conflict with the Jiang Dynasty.”

“That battle was truly the so-called ‘Shocking the heaven and earth, causing ghosts and gods to sob’. From rumours, the Thousand Monster Mountain that year had actually had a really large area. The reason why it shrunk so much to the current stage is because it was caused by the battle between the Monster King



and the dynasty's emperor back then.”

“At the end, although it was the emperor who gained victory in the battle as he killed the Monster King, thus pacifying the rebellion of the Monstrous Beasts, the emperor was also heavily injured, and after a short while, he passed away.”

“Before he left, he gave an order out to warn his successors: The other powers in the continent of the Nine Provinces could become an enemy to the Monstrous Beasts in the Thousand Monster Mountain; the other powers in the continent of the Nine Provinces could plunder the resources in the Thousand Monster Mountain, but the Jiang Dynasty absolutely could not take the lead to attack the Thousand Monster Mountain, they could not plunder the resources in the Thousand Monster Mountain, and they could not step into the Thousand Monster Mountain again.”

“There were many different opinions why the old emperor of the Jiang Dynasty gave such a warning to his successors before he left. Some said that the emperor respected the Monster King's battle power, and felt that despite having plenty of ambition, he was still a top-level character. Although he personally ended the life of the Monster King, he did not want his successors to disturb the peace of the Thousand Monster Mountain.”

“Some people also felt that the emperor discovered the secret of the Thousand Monster Mountain, and since that place was very possibly an ominous location, he didn't want his successors to enter the Thousand Monster Mountain anymore.”

“But no matter what reason it was because, the Jiang Dynasty

didn't go attack the Thousand Monster Mountain anymore, and they did not even step half a step into the Thousand Monster Mountain."

"However, that is still not the important reason. The important reason is back then, the Monster King attacked countless schools and robbed no small amount of treasures. Right now, the treasures are still in the Thousand Monster Mountain."

"Also, it is rumoured that the reason why the Monster King was so strong was because it found the relics of a martial cultivation expert within the Thousand Monster Mountain, and within it, it received a great chance and even got a Strange Armament."

"Although the Monster King is already dead right now, the Strange Armament and the resources it looted that year are still in the Thousand Monster Mountain. The place where it found its chance very possibly still exists."

## Chapter 333: Prestigious Invitation Letter

---

“There’s actually something like that? Could it be that coming here this time, it wasn’t for any Marriage Gathering, but for the treasures in the Thousand Monster Mountain?”

Chu Feng finally understood how the Prestigious Villa was able to rally the strongest powers from everywhere in the Nine Province to this place. So it turned out that everyone didn’t come here for some Marriage Gathering, nor was it for any true alliance. It was for the treasures in the Thousand Monster Mountain.

“Although it’s said like that, it is clearly not as simple as imagined. The Prestigious Villa wants to use the power of others to get rid of the thorn that is the Thousand Monster Mountain to take the treasures within the Thousand Monster Mountain, but they also don’t want everyone to come to the Thousand Monster Mountain, the land of treasures, to take a part of the profit.”

“So, that’s why they set up the so-called Marriage Gathering. That also means only the people and powers who gained the approval of the Prestigious Villa can have a chance to enter the Thousand Monster Mountain.” Gu Bo explained.

“That feels so troubling. From what I see, why not directly join up with the strongest bodies of powers and attack the Thousand Monster Mountain all together? The people that this Marriage Gathering can mobilize are only the powerful people within the young generation. Even if they are genius-level characters, they still wouldn’t be able to defeat the group of Monstrous Beasts within the Thousand Monster Mountain right?” Chu Feng felt

slightly puzzled.

“You don’t understand. Actually, the strongest few powers in the Nine Provinces have a hostile relationship. Everyone wants to fight over the title of the number one power in the Nine Provinces, so unless there isn’t any choice, they will absolutely not truly ally together. At most, they will temporarily join hands, but there will still be a lot of exploitations and worries.”

“Besides, if the several big powers openly join hands, there will be suspicions of rebellion, and it would be hard to avoid the Jiang Dynasty from being displeased. At that time, everyone would have to face the consequences.”

“And this Marriage Gathering isn’t only for allying with the several big powers. It is open to everyone in the continent of the Nine Provinces, and there is even no age restriction. As long as one has strength, they can come to this place.”

“That’s a benefit. The hidden experts who lives in seclusion within the mountains and forests and also doesn’t belong to any school or faction can come and take a part of the reward. The geniuses and monsters with peak strength can also come and take a part of the reward.”

“If any accidents happen to any geniuses within the Thousand Monster Mountain, the responsibility does not get carried by the Prestigious Villa. It gets carried by the Monstrous Beasts within the Thousand Monster Mountain. So, the power behind that genius would absolutely not ignore and not do anything about the Monstrous Beasts in the Thousand Monster Mountain.”

“In simpler terms, since the Prestigious Villa wants to take care of the Thousand Monster Mountain yet doesn’t have sufficient strength, it has to ally with other people and powers who do have strength. However, since there is the giant, the Jiang Dynasty, who is standing by the side, there are many restrictions if they wanted to ally with other powers.”

“Besides, temporarily joining hands with powers against the enemy is always a double-edged sword. If one place is handled poorly, there will be double losses and their own vitality will be harmed.”

“But the Prestigious Villa set up this Marriage Gathering, and the biggest thing it does is reduce the degree of self-damage. If there’s something that goes wrong, they can be clean of all responsibilities.” Du Bo explained.

“So it’s like that.” Only after hearing Gu Bo’s explanation did Chu Feng understand the specific situation about the Marriage Gathering. It had to be said that Gu Bo who came from the World Spirit Guild was much better informed in terms of information than Chu Feng.

“Besides, because of face, even peak-level powers will only send people of the young generation to join this Marriage Gathering, However, in here, there is no one who has strength that doesn’t surpass others.”

“Chu Feng, you should know that the Prestigious Villa sent out

eight Prestigious Invitation Letters right?” Gu Bo continued speaking.

“Prestigious Invitation Letters? I don’t know. What are Prestigious Invitation Letters?” Chu Feng truly did not know.

Seeing that, Gu Bo didn’t ridicule him for having blocked-off information. He continued explaining, “Then I’ll tell you. Although my World Spirit Guild was invited over, but for example you and me, as well as many people in the young generation of the World Spirit Guild, we still need to pass some tests before we can truly enter and participate in the so-called Marriage Gathering, and only then do we have the qualifications to enter the Thousand Monster Mountain.”

“But the people who received the Prestigious Invitation Letter do not require any tests or examinations. It could be said to be a symbol of strength and position.”

“But the Prestigious Villa sending the eight Prestigious Invitation Letters isn’t any secret. What I want to tell you is who the eight invitation letters invited.” Gu Bo said.

“Who are they?” Chu Feng got more and more curious.

“These eight people can be said to be truly famous people within the young generation of the current continent of the Nine Provinces.”

“Tang Province. The number one disciple of the Yuangang School, Tang Yixiu.”

“Song Province. The number one disciple of the Fire God School, Song Qingfeng.”

“Yuan Province. The number one disciple of the Hidden White Sect, [Bai Yunfei](#).”

Bai Yunfei = White clouds fly.

“Ming Province. The number one disciple of the Free and Unrestrained Valley, Liu [Xiaoyao](#).”

Xiaoyao = free and unrestrained.

“Sui Province. The number one disciple of the Sword God Valley, Murong Yu.”

“Also the Jie clan member, the future chief, Jie Bufan’s elder brother, Jie Qingming.”

“As well as the number one person in the young generation of my World Spirit Guild, Xu Zhongyu.”

“Those people are very strong. Some already entered the Heaven realm, and even those who haven’t, they are in the peak of the Profound realm. Some grasps unique strong methods, and some even grasp Strange Armaments. They are existences who even those in the old generation do not dare to easily offend.”

“However, within those people, Chu Feng, you must be careful of a person: Jie Qingming. Jie Qingming has already stepped into the Heaven realm, and not only does he have the Strange Armament of the Jie clan, the Armor of Thorns, he is even a Blue-cloak World Spiritist. That person is so strong to the point that he can disdainfully look at the people from his own generation.”

“The most important thing is that extremely dotes on his little brother, Jie Bufan. Last time, you attacked Jie Bufan in the Asura Ghost Tower. This time, if you meet Jie Qingming, I’m afraid that he will not let you go.”

“However, you don’t need to be too worried. You’re part of my World Spirit Guild, so this time, if we can smoothly gain the qualifications to the Marriage Gathering and successfully enter the Thousand Monster Mountain, it will be fine as long as you keep on following us.”

“Because, my World Spirit Guild’s big bro Xu Zhongyu stepped into the Heaven realm not too long ago and he is also a Blue-cloak World Spiritist. With him there, even if Jie Qingming wants to touch you, he will still need to think about it three more times.” Gu Bo seriously reminded.

“Mm.” Chu Feng nodded his head. He knew that he unintentionally offended a huge enemy. The Heaven realm. Chu Feng deeply knew how terrifying people in that stage were.

Yan Yangtian and Lin Moli who were people in the 1st level of the



Heaven realm could force him to that state, let alone the strongest genius in the Jie clan, Jie Qingming, who had a Strange Armament within his grasp.

“Eh? Gu Bo, that’s not right! You said that there were eight Prestigious Invitation Letters, but you only stated seven people. Who’s the eighth?” Suddenly, Chu Feng curiously ask.

“Brother Chu Feng, you should be able to guess who the last person is.” Gu Bo said.

“I can guess it?” However, Chu Feng’s head was filled with fog.

“Yeah! Think carefully. There are nine provinces in the continent of the Nine Provinces. The Han Province is occupied by the Jiang Dynasty, and that giant won’t participate in the activities of other powers because from the bottom of their hearts, they look down on us.”

“As for the number one disciple of the Prestigious Villa, Liu Zhizun. Although he is very strong, since this Marriage Gathering is open to the outside, it would be impossible for him to receive an invitation letter.”

“Think about it. Other than the strongest people in the young generation within those provinces, which other province was not mentioned?”

“This...You’re talking about my Azure Province?”

“That’s right. The person who was invited by the last Prestigious Invitation Letter was from your Azure Province’s young generation.”

# Chapter 334: The Future's Number One Person

---

“Is it truly a person from my Azure Province’s young generation? Gu Bo, are you sure this isn’t a joke?” Chu Feng was several times more stunned as he heard Gu Bo’s firm tone.

As a person from the Azure Province, Chu Feng could not possibly understand even more about the young generation of the Azure Province. Within the Azure Province’s young generation, he really could not think of a person who had the qualifications to receive the so-called Prestigious Invitation Letter.

“Of course I’m not joking. Chu Feng, you’re from the Azure Province, so you should be able to guess who received this Prestigious Invitation Letter right?”

“After all, the name of a character like that should have already spread throughout the Azure Province and be invincible within their own generation.” Gu Bo said.

“Gu Bo, who exactly is the person you are talking about?” Naturally, Chu Feng was unable to guess which person received the Prestigious Invitation Letter.

“It’s Zhang Tianyi!” Gu Bo said.

“Zhang Tianyi?” After hearing that name, Chu Feng couldn’t help but be greatly shocked because he had heard of that name

before.

Several years ago, there was a genius who appeared in the Azure Dragon School. When that genius was sixteen years old, he was already the number one disciple of the Azure Dragon School. The famous Wings Alliance within the inner court of the Azure Dragon School was also established by this person called Zhang Tianyi.

However, soon after Zhang Tianyi became the number one disciple of the Azure Dragon School, he left the school and no longer appeared. So many years had passed and there was no one who knew where he went.

Yet at that instant, Gu Bo had actually said Zhang Tianyi's name. Also, from his words, Chu Feng could tell that the Zhang Tianyi he was talking about should have come from the Azure Province. So, Chu Feng was thinking whether the Zhang Tianyi he knew and the Zhang Tianyi from Gu Bo's words were the same person or not.

“Chu Feng, you should have heard of this person called Zhang Tianyi right?” Seeing Chu Feng's shocked expression, Gu Bo also felt extremely surprised and he couldn't help asking back.

“I have indeed heard of the name Zhang Tianyi, and he was originally in the same school as mine. However, he left the Azure Dragon School many years ago and there were no more news about him in the Azure Province. So, I'm not sure if the Zhang Tianyi you're talking about is the same as the one I know.” Chu Feng replied with the truth.

“That’s strange. A character like him shouldn’t be unknown in the Azure Province!”

“But Chu Feng, is the Zhang Tianyi you’re talking about a martial cultivation genius?” Gu Bo continued asking only after thinking for a while.

“Mm. He did indeed leave a legend behind in the hearts of the Azure Dragon School’s disciples. He is a rare martial cultivation genius.” Chu Feng replied.

“If it is like that, I feel like it is very possible that it’s the same person because in the recent year, Zhang Tianyi’s name completely rang throughout several big provinces! Even if he did not go to my Spirit Province, the peak powers of my Spirit Province still heard that an outstanding genius appeared in the Azure Province.” Gu Bo said.

“What actually happened?” Chu Feng impatiently asked very closely.

“This matter is quite a long story. At the earliest, it was something that happened in the Tang Province one year ago.”

“Although the Tang Province’s Yuangang School isn’t the ruler of the Tang Province, it is still the number one school of the Tang Province. The strength it has is extremely powerful, and the number one disciple of the Yuangang School, Tang Yixiu, is even a rare genius. Once before, with the cultivation of the 9th level of the Profound realm, he battled an expert in the 1st level of the

Heaven realm for three days and three nights without the outcome being decided.”

“However, just one year ago, on the elated day of the Yuangang School’s celebration, a young man arrived at the school and challenged Tang Yixiu.”

“As they faced that male’s actions, everyone on scene felt that it was idiotic because that person’s age was close to Tang Yixiu’s. They were both of the same generation. However, within the Tang Province, there was no one in the young generation who could contend against Tang Yixiu.”

“So, many people felt that the male was looking for humiliation, and Tang Yixiu even calmly agreed to the battle. However, the unexpected thing was that the male had the same cultivation as Tang Yixiu, as he also had the cultivation of the 9th level of the Profound realm, and within ten short rounds, he defeated Tang Yixiu.”

“After defeating Tang Yixiu, that male left his name behind. Zhang Tianyi from the Azure Province.” Gu Bo said.

“He was actually that strong?” At that instant, even Chu Feng couldn’t help being greatly shocked. Tang Yixiu being able to have a battle with a Heaven realm expert for three days and three night without losing and with the cultivation of the 9th level of the Profound realm already stated that he was an extremely outstanding genius.

The Heaven realm was very different from the other realms. It was a boundary that was very hard to step over. Without being an apical genius, one would be unable to do what Tang Yixiu did.

However, Zhang Tianyi who was in the same realm as Tang Yixiu had actually defeated Tang Yixiu within ten rounds. What did that mean? It mean that Zhang Tianyi was not only slightly stronger than Tang Yixiu. He was a super genius who was an even greater genius than an apical genius.

“But that was not the end. Soon after Tang Yixiu’s event, the number one genius of the Song Province, Song Qingfeng, met the same fate. He was challenged by Zhang Tianyi when he arrived at the school, and within ten moves, he was defeated.”

“Quickly following that, the number one genius of the Yuan Province, Bai Yunfei, as well as the number one genius of the Ming Province, Liu Xiaoyao, were all challenged by Zhang Tianyi, and not a single person could surpass ten rounds by the hands of Zhang Tianyi.” Gu Bo continued saying, and a complexion of admiration covered his entire face.

“Huu~~~” And at that instant, Chu Feng also couldn’t help but take in a breath of cool air. Currently, he already basically confirmed that that Zhang Tianyi was the Zhang Tianyi from his Azure Dragon School, but he never would have thought that Zhang Tianyi was a genius in such a stage.

“To be honest, right now, Zhang Tianyi’s name has already spread throughout the provinces, so I never would have thought that no one knew that he did such things in your Azure Province.”

Suddenly, Gu Bo smiled.

“Heh. The powers in the Azure Province are weaker than other provinces, so it make sense that we are being shut-off from information.” Although Chu Feng spoke like that, his face also had a bitter smile.

“Ahh, don’t say it like that. Several hundred years ago, the Azure Province was always the strongest province in the Nine Provinces. Especially the Azure Dragon Founder one thousand years ago. He was an existence that even the Jiang Dynasty feared.”

“Although the Azure Province has been in the decline for the recent two hundred years, right now, hasn’t an exceptional genius like Zhang Tianyi appeared? Besides, other than Zhang Tianyi, there’s also you, Brother Chu Feng.” Gu Bo smiled and said.

“Me? Brother Gu Bo, don’t joke around. Being also in the young generation, yet can only listen to the achievements of others. When it’s said like that, it is truly sad.” Chu Feng bitterly smiled. Currently, in the Azure Province, he was indeed a top-level character, but that was only because he relied on Eggy’s power.

If Eggy wasn’t here, Chu Feng would only be a little cultivator in the 9th level of the Origin realm. Perhaps he would have his place in the Azure Province, but in the grand stage of the continent of the Nine Provinces, his own cultivation could simply not be taken onto the table.

“Brother Chu Feng, how can you think like that? Yes, right now,



Jie Qingming, Zhang Tianyi, as well as my World Spirit Guild's Xu Zhongyu are indeed very strong, and they are representative characters in the young generation, but how old are they? How long have they been martial cultivating for? How old are we? How long have we been martial cultivating for?"

"Five more years, seven more years, ten more years...When we grow up, when we reach their current age, how would it be possible that we be inferior to the current them?"

"Brother Chu Feng, I'll say this to you. I, Gu Bo, have this confidence. A few years later, big bro Xu Zhongyu's current position in the World Spirit Guild will be mine."

"But I believe even more that when I become a well-known person in the young generation of the continent of the Nine Provinces, Brother Chu Feng, you will certainly become the number one person in the young generation of the continent of the Nine Provinces. Don't forget. You're the person who climbed to the top of the Asura Ghost Tower!" Gu Bo extremely sincerely vowed as his face was filled with confidence.

## Chapter 335: Lewd Old Man

---

“Chu Feng, even I, Gu Bo, deeply believe and do not doubt that you are a genius, so you can’t doubt yourself because the facts prove that your talent is really far above me and Jie Bufan.”

“One year ago, I and Jie Bufan were already in the 7th level of the Origin realm, and with the time of one year, the two of us have both stepped into the 9th level of the Origin realm. There is only the distance of one step from the Profound realm, and everyone felt that the two of us are geniuses as we can reach this step at this age.”

“However Chu Feng, you and I are similar in age. One year ago, you were only in the 1st level of the Origin realm yet could resist against the pressure that neither I nor Jie Bufan could resist in the Asura Ghost Tower. You were even able to beat Jie Bufan like a dog who was six levels of cultivation over you.”

“Right now, with the time of one year, you stepped into the 9th level of the Origin realm from the 1st level of the Origin realm and caught up to both my and Jie Bufan’s realm of cultivation. I deeply express my admiration towards such martial cultivation speed because I feel that within the people in the same age, there is already no one who can be compared to you.”

As Gu Bo spoke, he was a bit moved because he already discovered earlier, as Chu Feng did not conceal his cultivation, that Chu Feng’s current cultivation was the same as his, being also a cultivator in the 9th level of the Origin realm. That speed caused him to feel shock and sigh with admiration.

“Brother Gu Bo, thank you for your reminder. I, Chu Feng, am very happy to know a friend like you.”

After Gu Bo’s words, Chu Feng also smiled from happiness. It wasn’t that he didn’t understand Gu Bo’s meaning; in reality, Chu Feng was, from start to finish, full of confidence and expectation about his future. However, he never would have thought that Gu Bo would actually approve of him so much.

After all, people like Gu Bo who were extraordinarily born with extremely strong talent should originally be extremely prideful of themselves. However, Gu Bo didn’t. Instead, he acknowledged Chu Feng’s strength and even felt that Chu Feng was stronger than him. Just now, he even unrestrainedly passed down the information he got from the World Spirit Guild to Chu Feng. It showed that he trusted Chu Feng a lot.

So, that was why Chu Feng was happy. Chu Feng felt that Gu Bo was a friend that he could make, and in the present, what he needed the most were friends in which he could open his heart to. Real friends.

In the later periods of time, for almost every day, Gu Bo came to where Chu Feng was to chat with him, to discuss about Spirit Formation techniques as well as things about martial cultivation. The relationship between the two also got closer and closer, and they became friends that talked about everything possible.

And as Chu Feng and the others were comfortably passing by the

days in the Prestigious Villa, the Marriage Gathering selection was also happening.

Finally, after a while of screening, within the outer city of the Prestigious Villa, several hundreds of thousands of people already surged in. Those people came from every single place, and most of them were those in the young generation. However, there were also people who were older.

But no matter what their ages were or where they came from, they were equipped with a certain strength, and they all had the same goal. It was for the Prestigious Villa's Marriage Gathering.

On this day, they were all gathered within the outer city of the Prestigious Villa because the Marriage Gathering qualification test that was planned for a long time was going to start today.

“Look! Isn't that the lewd old man Wang Qiang? Why is he also here?”

“Heavens! Such a famous senior expert has actually come to join a Marriage Gathering like this? That's too unacceptable is it not?”

“Rubbish! What kind of senior expert is he? He's a despicable and shameless human failure who has done every type of evil possible. What is the Prestigious Villa actually thinking of? How can they let such a guy in? Aren't they just letting their own ladies get defiled by such a beast?”

Suddenly the crowd went into an uproar. Chu Feng slanted his gaze and looked over. He saw a white-and-grey-haired short old man who was walking into the crowd as he was stared by countless gazes and mocked by all sorts of words.

The old man acted as if he didn't hear the words of others. From start to finish, his mouth was brimming at an angle caused by the corners of his mouth raising up. His eyes restlessly swept over the Prestigious Villa beauties that were on the tall stage. He was indulged in looking, and without restraint, he even stuck his tongue out and licked his lips. He seemed just like an old rogue.

However, although the old man wasn't respectful despite being an elderly person, Chu Feng astonishedly discovered that his strength was extremely frightening. He was an expert in the Heaven realm.

“Gu Bo, who's this old man? Why is he so famous? It seems like many people recognize him.” Chu Feng curiously asked Gu Bo who was next to Chu Feng.

“That old man is called Wang Qiang. He also has a nickname called ‘lewd old man’. He is a rapist whose lust can cover the sky, and he is also an escapee from the many provinces. Wanted posters have pretty much been posted everywhere in the Nine Provinces, and the women he has defiled are uncountable.” Gu Bo explained in detail.

“How can such a person possibly come into the Prestigious Villa?” At that instant, Chu Feng finally understood why those people had such disgust towards the lewd old man. It was because

he was truly an unlikeable guy who committed countless sins.

“This lewd old man is very smart. Although his interest are beauties, he also know his limits. He will absolutely not extend his dirty hands towards powers that are stronger than him.”

“Exactly because of that, although the lewd old man has done the extremes of bad things, but he has not committed any crimes in the Qin Province, nor does he has any grudges with the Prestigious Villa. So naturally, the Prestigious Villa will not deny him entry.”

“Besides, the reason why the Prestigious Villa started this Marriage Gathering was originally so that they could invite some people to help them handle the Monstrous Beasts in the Thousand Monster Mountain. There is no reason for the Prestigious Villa to not accept a Heaven realm expert such as the lewd old man.” Gu Bo explained.

“So it’s like that. It seems like humans and dragons are mixed together in the Marriage Gathering, and all sorts of people will be here.” Chu Feng couldn’t help but sigh. More and more, he felt that the Marriage Gathering wasn’t as simple as he imagined.

And after the lewd old man started a not-small commotion, the Prestigious Villa manager elders finally appeared. Five elders appeared, and they all had the cultivation of the Heaven realm. The one who led even stepped into the 2nd level of the Heaven realm.

And according to Gu Bo’s words, the elder in the 2nd level of the

Heaven realm was absolutely not the strongest existence in the Prestigious Villa. From that, one could tell the strength of the Prestigious Villa.

But the most important part was that that elder told Chu Feng and the other hundreds of thousands of people what one had to do in order to gain qualification to participate in the Marriage Gathering.

“First, I represent the lord of the villa and thank everyone here for coming here, despite the distance, to join my Prestigious Villa’s Marriage Gathering with a sincere heart.”

“In order to return everyone’s sincerity, in this Marriage Gathering, my Prestigious Villa meticulously chose a hundred excellent female disciples. They all have their special traits of beauty, and their cultivation and talent are well known within their generation.”

“I cannot show their excellent points with words one by one, but I dare to guarantee to all of you that the females in my Prestigious Villa’s Marriage Gathering this time are absolutely the most outstanding ones in the continent of the Nine Provinces. They will undoubtedly be worthy of any male in the world.”

“And right now, they are waiting for all of you in the main city. As for whether you have a chance to gain their favours and who exactly will be able to bring a beauty back will depend on your own strengths.”

## Chapter 336: Attracting Reward

---

rumble rumble rumble Just as the old man finished speaking, the ground in front of the crowd started to slowly shift with ear-piercing rumbling noises. Finally, two huge entrances appeared. So it turned out that underneath the ground, there were two deep and wide tunnels that led towards a vast underground palace.

“Everyone, these two tunnels lead to my Prestigious Villa’s Limitless Underground Palace. Everyone, you only need to pass through this Limitless Underground Palace to be qualified to participate in this Marriage Gathering.”

“And because there are many people who are going to take part in his test, in order for fairness, the Limitless Underground Palace is split into two levels. One level is suitable for Profound realm cultivators and those who are eighteen years old. Those people must enter the Profound level Limitless Underground Palace.”

“The other level is suitable for Origin realm cultivators and those who haven’t reached eighteen years of age. They can choose to enter the Origin level underground palace, and as long as they can pass it, similarly, they can gain the qualifications to participate in the Marriage Gathering.”

“Also, if those who haven’t reached eighteen years of age feel that the Origin level underground palace is too simple and feel that it is injustice towards their own strength, they can choose to enter the Profound level underground palace. However, those who are already eighteen years old can absolutely not enter the Origin level underground palace.”



“And no matter if it is the Origin level underground palace or the Profound level underground palace, the first person to pass it will get a generous reward.”

“For the Origin level underground palace, the first one to pass will be awarded a Prestigious Badge. The person who has a Prestigious Badge can receive the most superb treatment within the range of my Prestigious Villa’s control. They can exit and enter my Prestigious Villa at any time they wish without being stopped.”

“Other than the Prestigious Badge, the first person to pass can also get ten thousand Origin beads as reward.”

As for the first person to pass the Profound level underground palace, not only can that person get a Prestigious Badge, they can also get ten thousand Profound beads as reward.” The manager elder loudly said.

“What? It’s ten thousand Profound beads?!” After hearing those words, almost everyone on scene revealed expressions of mad joy. Even Gu Bo and the others who were born in the World Spirit Guild couldn’t help but excitedly lick their lips and said, “This Prestigious Villa is truly wealthy and imposing. Indeed, if they give out something, it’ll be in a huge scale.”

“Heavens, they used Profound beads as a reward, and it’s even ten thousand of them!” But compared to others, the one who was most shocked was none other than Chu Feng.

Chu Feng who came from the most lonely province in the continent of the Nine Provinces, the Azure Province, he had never even seen what Profound beads were. He even flipped the strongest school in the Azure Province, the Lingyun School, upside down, yet he could not even find a single Profound bead.

But at that very instant, the Prestigious Villa had actually taken ten thousand Profound beads as reward. Such a reward was simply far from achievable even with everything the Lingyun School had.

From that, it could be seen how big the distance was between the Prestigious Villa and the Lingyun School. No wonder the Lingyun School could title themselves as overlord in the Azure Province, but was unable to even step onto the stage of the continent. It was because when compared to the top-level huge powers such as the Prestigious Villa, the Lingyun School was simply too weak.

“Chu Feng, with ten thousand Profound beads, not only can it allow you to easily break into the Profound realm, perhaps it can even bring you to another level and directly step into the 2nd level of the Profound realm. This is truly great!”

“If you are able to enter the 2nd level of the Profound realm, your cultivation and mine will only be separated by one level. Even without relying on my power, you can still be able to call yourself as king within the powerful people in the Profound realm. It is indeed not a mistake by coming to this Prestigious Villa. You are going to be huge profits!” In reality, not only Chu Feng, even Eggy was endlessly excited.

“The ten thousand Profound beads are indeed attracting, but

you've seen it as well. Within the tens of thousands of people here, over half of them are in the Profound realm, and many are in the peak of the Profound realm. Within them, who knows how many have the strength that is far above Dugu Aoyun's."

"Besides, other than them, there's also the lewd old man Wang Qiang. With that Heaven realm expert, it isn't easy to get first place!" Chu Feng first sighed, then quickly after, he decisively said, "But the attraction power of the ten thousand Profound beads is really too big. No matter what, I still need to give it a try."

"Everyone. The reward for first place is in the exit area of the passageway. The first person to pass can get it."

"However, I need to remind all of you that this Limitless Underground Palace is the result of many of my Prestigious Villa's seniors' several hundred years of transformation. Not only is it extremely big inside, it is extremely dangerous. After entering, those who do not have sufficient strength can very possibly lose their life."

"So, if there is anyone who know the difficulty and wish to retreat, it is best to not step in or else life and death will be left up to fate. If there is anyone who meets with misfortune within the Limitless Underground Palace, my Prestigious Villa is not responsible."

"The limit of the test is ten hours. After ten hours, those who passed through either of the Limitless Underground Palace and participate in the Marriage Gathering that comes after. But those who are unable to pass are all disqualified."

“Okay. Useless words are finished now. I will wait and see who will get the two Prestigious Badges.”

Immediately after the manager elder finished speaking, the tens of thousands of people in the middle of the plaza started to move. They separated into two batches and surged towards the entrances to the two tunnels.

There were two entrances to the tunnels. In the Origin level entrance area, there was a layer of special Spirit Formation. The Spirit Formation was created after combining with special equipment. It could invisibly assess a person's age.

So, when many people who already reached eighteen years of age wanted to take advantage of the chaos, as they chose to enter the Origin level underground palace, were all stopped by the invisible Spirit Formation. Some were even harmed, and the people who wanted to exploit it had their qualification instantly canceled and chased out of the Prestigious Villa.

“Oh? Isn't this the Azure Province bumpkin Chu Feng? I never would have thought that even you would come here! You have truly come here to get something that you will never get.”

Suddenly, an ear-piercing voice rang out. Looking towards the voice, a familiar person was seen. The person who was gradually approaching Chu Feng was a Jie clan member, Jie Bufan.

The current Jie Bufan was the same as Gu Bo, being also in the

9th level of the Origin realm. There were also several Jie clan members following behind him, and they were people in the Profound realm.

“I even wondered who it was. So it’s the trash who was completely frightened by me after being beaten up by me in the Asura Ghost Tower.” Chu Feng disdainfully shot a glance at Jie Bufan.

“Haha, what a joke. At first, you were only able to defeat me because you were not bound by the suppression in the Asura Ghost Tower. If now, being outside the Asura Ghost Tower, are you able to?”

“Want to give it a try?” Chu Feng was not afraid of Jie Bufan because currently, behind him, there were also Gu Bo and the other people from the World Spirit Guild. Besides, with Chu Feng’s current strength, not to mention Jie Bufan, he did not even put the even the several clan members in the Profound realm behind him in his eyes.

“Very well. Right now, I’ll be waiting for you inside. If you have the guts to, come in.” After leaving those words behind, Jie Bufan walked towards the Profound level underground palace’s entrance, and after the people behind him coldly glared at Chu Feng, they also followed and one after the other, they followed the human current and stepped into the Profound level underground palace.

# Chapter 337: Beat You Up Even More Miserably

---

Despite facing Jie Bufan's provocation, Chu Feng lightly smiled, and unhesitantly followed. But just at that time, Gu Bo grabbed onto Chu Feng and said with a bit of worry, "Chu Feng, if you want to give him a lesson, you can at any time, and there's no need to fight right now."

"You're afraid that he will ambush me?" Chu Feng said.

"Not only am I afraid that he will ambush you, but it's just that the Profound level underground palace is indeed unsuitable for us."

"Besides, that Jie Bufan intentionally waited for my World Spirit Guild's seniors to enter the underground palace before provoking you. Clearly, he has malicious intents, and I'm afraid that the people who are waiting for you in there will not only be those people." Gu Bo reminded.

"Don't worry. As long as that Jie Qingming isn't here, not a single Jie clan member can do anything to me." Chu Feng calmly smiled, then quickly walked towards the Profound level underground palace.

How sensitive was Chu Feng's Spirit power? He already found out that Jie Bufan and the others were hiddenly staring at him. However, as long as there were no one in the Heaven realm, Chu Feng was not afraid in the slightest.

“Gu Bo, this boy is arrogant enough! We should still not bother with him. Big bro Zhao and the others just instructed us to enter the Origin level underground palace. We cannot defy them!” Seeing that, the several young men behind Gu Bu who were similarly not eighteen years old said.

“No. I cannot abandon him.” However, as “honor does not permit one to hesitate and look back”, Gu Bo followed Chu Feng over.

Seeing that, the remaining young generation of the World Spirit Guild looked at one another and hesitated a bit. But as they looked at Gu Bo’s departing back, they still bit down on their teeth and followed as well.

The underground palace was very big and it was also very intricate. There was a heavy feeling of an underground castle, but even if it was a castle, it was a super-huge castle.

But that wasn’t the important part. The important part was that soon after Chu Feng and the others entered the underground palace and before entering the zone of checkpoints, their paths were blocked by a group of people, and they were exactly the Jie Bufan and the other Jie clan members.

However, just as predicted by Chu Feng and Gu Bo, the ones who appeared at that instant were not only the several few people. There were over twenty or so.

Within the twenty or so people, only Jie Bufan himself was in the 9th level of the Origin realm. All others were actually in the Profound realm, and two of them even stepped into the 3rd level of the Profound realm while emanating oppressive auras.

“Dammit. There is indeed an ambush.”

As they saw the Jie clan members who surrounded them all around, the several people from the World Spirit Guild started to cast gazes of blame towards Chu Feng because they knew that this time, it was likely that they wouldn't be able to pass the underground palace within the time limit. And all of that would have been caused by Chu Feng.

And after seeing the terrified faces on the World Spirit Guild's crowd, Jie Bufan smiled as he was pleased and said, “Bu Go, today, I am settling a debt with Chu Feng. It is unrelated to your World Spirit Guild, and if you leave right now, you'll still make it.”

“Jie Bufan, I think that you haven't cleared up the situation. Chu Feng is already part of my World Spirit Guild. His matters are the matters of my World Spirit Guild, so how can it not be related?”

“I advise you to not do anything rash or else my World Spirit Guild will absolutely not leave this alone.” Gu Bo also knew that the situation wasn't good, but he did not retreat. Instead, he stood in front of Chu Feng.

At that instant, there was no need to mention how warm Chu Feng's heart was. The so-called “true feelings are seen with



disaster strikes”. Seeing that Gu Bo was able to stand in front of himself in such a time showed that such a brother was worthy to make.

“Gu Bo, I, Chu Feng, am indeed a part of the World Spirit Guild, but I still want to solve today’s matter by myself.” Chu Feng stood out, stuck his arm out, and pushed Gu Bo behind him. Quickly after, he smiled while looking at Jie Bufan and said,

“Jie Bufan, I think you just said that I was able to defeat you that day in the Asura Ghost Tower is because I had an advantage right?”

“Hmph. Is that not true?” Jie Bufan coldly snorted, and when the matter of that day was mentioned, traces of fury couldn’t help but surge in his gaze.

whoosh But just at that time, Chu Feng attacked like lightning. He raised his leg, and kicked Jie Bufan’s chest. The strong power directly threw Jie Bufan onto the ground.

With a bang, Jie Bufan ferociously fell on the ground. Quickly after were some painful cries because at that instant, cracking noises kept on coming from his breastbone and it was already forcefully broken by Chu Feng’s kick. He was no longer able to continue participating in the underground palace’s qualification test.

And after stepping Jie Bufan under his feet, Chu Feng indifferently smiled and said, “Actually, I want to say that outside

of the Asura Ghost Tower, I can beat you even more miserably.”

“Heavens, this...” The sudden scene that arrived caused everyone to widen their mouths from terror. No matter what you said, Jie Bufan was still a genius within the young generation of the Jie clan members. His battle power within the people in the same age was top-level, and only Gu Bu from the World Spirit Guild could fight against him.

But at that very instant, in front of Chu Feng, Jie Bufan did not even have the chance to return any attacks. What did that mean? It meant that Chu Feng’s battle power was far above Jie Bufan’s, and simply comparable to the Profound realm.

“Brat, you’re looking to die!” But compared to the pure amazement of the World Spirit Guild’s crowd, there was none of that on the faces of the Jie clan members. The twenty powerful people in the Profound realm attacked all at once as they surrounded Chu Feng.

“Hmph. All of you, kneel down.” But just at that time, Chu Feng coldly snorted and at the same time, a wave of brutally strong pressure swept out and instantly engulfed the twenty or so people.

And after they were engulfed by it, the pressure formed by Origin power really forced all the twenty or so Profound realm Jie clan members to kneel onto the ground and it was difficult for them to climb back up. They completely lost any power to fight, and several of them even forcibly lost consciousness from that pressure.

At that instant, the people from the World Spirit Guild whose mouths were already widened roundly were even more amazed, to the point that they could not care for themselves. Their eyes endlessly flickered while emitting incomparable shock.

It was because they could clearly feel that Chu Feng's aura was only the 9th level of the Origin realm, but at that instant, he was actually able to use his pressure to easily cause those in the Profound realm to fall to the ground. Such battle power that defied common sense truly caused disbelief for people.

“Look! That young man's strength is so strong! Who exactly is he? He can actually rely on the cultivation of the 9th level of the Origin realm to defeat a group of cultivators in the Profound realm!”

“Impressive. Those people aren't simple cultivators. They're the Jie clan members who come from the Spirit Province! This young man can actually use his pressure to suppress them so that they cannot return any attacks. Isn't that battle power a bit too strong?”

“It seems like in this Marriage Gathering, there are indeed hidden dragons and crouching tigers. The glory of an apical genius can be seen so quickly. But I just wonder which province he comes from and what his name is.”

In reality, the action that Chu Feng and the others caused also attracted the attention of others. Many people even gave up the

chase for being first, stopped their steps, and started to observe.

But Chu Feng did not care about the discussions of the crowd. He said to Gu Bo, “Brother Gu Bo, I thank you for being able to stand out for me, but believe me. This Profound level underground palace isn’t enough to cause difficulty for me.”

After saying those words, Chu Feng leaped and rushed towards the deep parts of the underground palace as he impatiently charged towards the attracting reward of being first.

And as he saw Chu Feng’s body that completely disappeared with a blink, Gu Bo ashamedly smiled and said, “So Chu Feng’s battle power that defies common sense is unrelated to the Asura Ghost Tower, and he is truly this strong. I, Gu Bo, still underestimated you!”

After that, Gu Bo did not continue deeper into the underground palace. He brought the World Spirit Guild’s group back out from the entrance and re-chose the Origin level underground palace.

It was because they didn’t have Chu Feng’s strength. In order to guarantee that they would be qualified to participate in the Marriage Gathering, it was safer to choose the Origin level underground palace.

# Chapter 338: Slight Mastery Of Dragon Travelling

---

The design of the Limitless Underground Palace was very mysterious. The mechanisms were limitless. In other words, when the first person passed through here, they had to charge past the mechanism. But after that person passed through, the mechanism would not be destroyed and it would still exist.

That formed a rule. If one wanted to pass through the hurdle, they had to rely on their own abilities. Follow an expert's butt, run behind them, and after they destroy the hurdle, pick up the advantage and pass with deception? Don't even think about those things.

Also, the Limitless Underground Palace was extremely large. The hurdles at the beginning were not too bad, and those in the Profound realm would not be pressured. However, when they reached the middle, most of the people in the 5th level of the Profound realm were stopped by them. As for the later parts, they were even more difficult.

With such difficult hurdles, if Chu Feng wanted to use his own cultivation of the 9th level of the Origin realm to walk around in the Limitless Underground Palace, it was a nearly impossible thing.

So, Chu Feng could only borrow Eggy's power to walk around the Limitless Underground palace. Chu Feng's actions could be said to be cheating, but in reality it was also not. Eggy was one of Chu Feng's World Spirits, so she was also one of Chu Feng's abilities.

It was just like the people who had Strange Armaments protecting them. Compared to the people who had the same level of strength, it was like having an absolute advantage. If two people were fighting, were Strange Armaments not allowed if they had one? Of course that was not possible, so gaining benefits by borrowing Eggy's power was a reasonable action.

whoosh whoosh whoosh

The current Chu Feng already used his Imperial Sky Technique to the extreme. With his own detection power of a World Spiritist as well as Eggy's cultivation of the 3rd level of the Profound realm, no matter what mechanisms they were, they could not trouble Chu Feng.

In a situation like that, countless people started to be passed by Chu Feng, and when they saw the person who pass them was actually a young man, not a single person weren't extremely shocked as they deeply remembered the face of the young man because they felt that that person would very possibly be a genius whose name would be spread in the continent.

"This isn't working. It isn't a way for this to continue on. There are too many expert who participated in this Marriage Gathering, and because Jie Bufan and the others wasted some time, with my current methods, I have no way of catching up."

However, Chu Feng presently was tightly furrowing his brows because he was able to feel that there were still many martial

cultivation experts in front of him. Those people grasped special methods, and some had bodily martial skills that were no weaker than his Imperial Sky Technique. In that situation, not to mention getting the first place prize, Chu Feng would not even be able to cram in the top ten.

“It seems like I can only stake it on this or else this journey will be for nothing.”

At that instant, Chu Feng grinded his teeth, and had actually suddenly stopped his quickly forwarding steps. He cross his arms in front of his chest, and simultaneously, he closed his eyes.

“Why is this boy standing and not moving?”

“Wasn’t this the boy who just passed me? What is he doing?”

“He only has the cultivation of the 3rd level of the Profound realm, so I’m sure that the terrifying speed just now was certainly because he used some forbidden methods, and right now, he is getting the rebound right?”

Chu Feng stopping his steps and not going forward caused many people, who were passed by Chu Feng, to catch up to him. Seeing that Chu Feng stood there without moving, many people guessed one after the other and some people even spoke to mock him. However, not a single person stopped to observe. They gave it their all to continue madly running forward.

Actually, any one of the people who were able to reach this stage could be said to be famous people in the Profound realm. All of them had enough confidence to pass through this underground palace and to gain the qualifications to join the Marriage Gathering.

And the reason why they were giving it their all was naturally because they drooled over the ten thousand Profound beads. In the continent of the Nine Provinces, most likely not a single person would not be moved by ten thousand Profound beads. So, they were giving it with everything they had and charged towards the ten thousand Profound beads.

But how would they know that even though Chu Feng seemed calm on the surface as he stood there, in reality, change that was turning the sky and earth upside down was happening within his body.

The Profound power that surged within Chu Feng's body was currently quickly shrinking, causing characteristical change that had never happened before. And the Profound power that was changed characteristically was, right now, condensing under Chu Feng's feet.

hmm

Suddenly, a large area of azure-coloured fog appeared under Chu Feng's feet. The fog surged and rolled like clouds and mist. However, the azure-coloured gas was not simple fog, because at the same time it churned around, it was condensing into a shape, and it was actually an azure dragon.



That azure dragon was five meters long, both of its eyes were empty, its body was blurry, but it was indeed a shape of a dragon. Although from its outer appearance, the azure dragon that the Azure Dragon Founder condensed out that day, which looked like a real dragon, had far more might and domineeringness than the azure dragon Chu Feng condensed out, its body also similarly contained spiritual energy, as if it was a real dragon that had life.

“Haha, I succeeded!”

As he saw the azure dragon under his feet, Chu Feng was unceasingly joyful. With a strike towards the ground with both his feet, Chu Feng rode on top of the azure dragon. Because the azure dragon was too small, standing was clearly not as comfortable as sitting. But it had to be said that riding the azure dragon was much more comfortable than riding a horse.

But being able to ride it wasn't the important part. The important part was with a thought from Chu Feng, the azure dragon had actually become a row of light and started to fly. With a blink, it already disappeared.

“Aao!” The azure dragon under Chu Feng was like a little dragon that just was just born. Although the atmosphere it gave off wasn't strong, its speed was extremely quick and at the same time, it was also able to make low roars that had a bit of overbearingness.

In a situation like that, the people that just caught up to Chu Feng were all passed by him again, and this time, the speed that he

passed them was many times quicker than before. They did not even have a chance to see Chu Feng's appearance clearly. They only saw a row of azure light brush past their bodies, and after that, they no longer saw any traces of him.

“What was that? Is it someone in the Heaven realm?” Since then, almost everyone who were passed by Chu Feng were dumbstruck by Chu Feng's strangely fast speed from surprise.

A large portion of the people felt that it was a powerful person in the Heaven realm, or else it would not be possible to have such fast speed. But some people also felt that it was only their hallucinations because the azure-coloured object passed with a flash. It was really too fast, and it was unclear whether it truly happened, or if their eyes were broken.

“Haha, I never would have thought that this Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens would be so profound! I haven't even mastered it yet I can already reach such speed. If I do master it, wouldn't even Heaven realm expert be unable to do anything to me?”

The current Chu Feng was in endless elation. In terms of speed, the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens already completely surpassed the Imperial Sky Technique. At the end, he could not even catch up to any life forms in front of him. It meant that Chu Feng very possibly became the number one person in the underground palace.

But Chu Feng did not dare to underestimate his opponents because he clearly remembered the powerful person in the Heaven

realm, the lewd old man Wang Qiang, was the first to step into the underground palace.

And up until now, Chu Feng still did not discover the traces of the lewd old man, which meant that he, Wang Qiang, was always in front of Chu Feng and he also flung Chu Feng far behind himself.

So, not only did Chu Feng not reduce his speed, he even gave it his all and did the preparations to compare against the Heaven realm expert, the lewd old man. At least in terms of speed, he had to surpass him.

## Chapter 339: Young Genius

---

Chu Feng's hand was grasping the dragon's horn while he was riding on the dragon's back. With light-like speed, he quickly surged in the underground palace. He was truly too fast. So fast that just as the Limitless Underground Palace's mechanisms were activated, Chu Feng already disappeared like the light.

However, the Limitless Underground Palace was truly too big. Even if he used the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heaven, the extremely profound bodily martial skill, and was able to dodge any mechanisms, from start to end, he still felt that there was a very long distance to the exit of the Limitless Underground Palace.

Without him knowing, two hours had already passed since Chu Feng entered the Limitless Underground Palace. However, even as he flew with such quick speed, he still did not reach the end.

Chu Feng truly suspected whether the Limitless Underground Palace was even bigger than the Prestigious Villa which was above ground. Truly as expected of the painstaking efforts of the seniors of several generations, because they truly dug it deep enough.

And after quickly travelling for a further distance, in front of Chu Feng, there were actually no more mechanisms. However, Chu Feng entered an endless underground world in which he could not tell the direction.

The thing that ached his head the most was in this place, Chu Feng's World Spirit Compass was actually ineffective. His Spirit

Formations techniques were not useful, and in this place where one could not see the sun, yet wanted to figure out the direction and wanted to find the endpoint of the underground palace, it was truly too hard.

“Damn. What is this Prestigious Villa doing? A single test has been made to such difficulty? Are they even letting people pass it?”

At that instant, Chu Feng felt extremely helpless and even a bit irritated. If even he found it difficult to determine the direction, wouldn't it be even harder for the people, who he left far behind, to want to find the end point when they came to this place?

So, Chu Feng felt that even if many people could pass through the difficult mechanisms, if they wanted to get out of the underground palace within the limited time, it was still very difficult. In this test, it was fated that many people would fail.

But Chu Feng did not care about other people's successes or failures. What he was worried about was him being stuck in this place and the reward of being number one getting taken away by someone first.

“Chu Feng, don't panic. If even you get locked in here, I'm sure that the lewd old man will have a very hard time finding the exit as well. Right now, what you are betting on is speed and luck.”

“As long as your speed is fast enough, it wouldn't be a difficult thing for you to go around in this place, but to want to quickly find the exit still requires some absolute luck.” Eggy reminded.

“Mm. There’s no time to waste. For the ten thousand Profound beads, I can only bet on this.” Chu Feng gnashed his teeth and rushed deeper into the vast underground world. At that instant, Chu Feng could deeply feel that he was like a headless fly that flew randomly in this world, yet there was nothing he could do.

boom boom boom But just as Chu Feng entered the underground world for a short while, he heard bursts of rumbling noises from afar. The rumbling was extremely deafening, and Chu Feng was able to hear that there were people fighting. Experts were fighting.

“There was indeed someone who entered his place before me. Why is there a battle here? Could it be that they already found the exit, and they are fighting over the price of being first?” After hearing the noises, Chu Feng did not panic. Instead, he secretly rejoiced, turned his body, and rushed towards that direction

Simultaneously, he also laid a layer of Spirit Formation around his body. It was able to completely conceal his aura, and if one did not carefully observe, they could even be unable to see Chu Feng. It was a concealment Spirit Formation that only Grey-cloak World Spiritists could lay.

And when Chu Feng neared, he astonishedly discovered that the rumbling had already dissipated. In a situation like that, Chu Feng also did not dare to spread out his own Spirit power to observe. He had to meticulously hide his aura, approach bit by bit, and use his naked eye to see what had actually happened.

“This is!” But when Chu Feng came close, his pupils abruptly shrunk and an expression of extreme shock emerged onto his face.

In a distant place, there were imposing and majestic big doors. Without question, the big doors were the exit to this underground palace.

And from a nearby place, two people stood. Clearly, those two people were fighting over the right to approach the big doors.

One of them was a short old man who had an evil smile on his face. That person was none other than the infamous lewd old man, Wang Qiang.

But the reason why Chu Feng was so shocked was because the one opposing the lewd old man was a young man.

That young man wore gorgeous clothing, had a white and handsome face, and looking at his tender appearance, he seemed to be even a bit younger than Chu Feng. However, when such a young man stood in front of Wang Qiang who was in the Heaven realm, not only was he not afraid, instead, within his gaze, there was even a trace of contempt.

“Haha, I never would have thought that a genius like you appeared in the continent of the Nine Provinces who is able to fight on par with me! Boy, what’s your name, where did your master come from, and where did you come from?”

The lewd old man Wang Qiang suddenly loudly laughed, but his eyes were never-endingly assessing the gorgeously garbed young man, seemingly trying to find a flaw in his opponent.

“You are not worthy enough to know my name. Also, you are also unable to fight on par with me. I was just testing you just now.”

“But the results were very disappointing. So it turns out that the infamous lewd old man, Wang Qiang, is only a normal character. Indeed, you can only bully the weak, the ones with mediocre cultivation, or even citizens that had never done martial cultivation.” The corners of the young man’s mouth rose into a cold smile. The disdain in his gaze also became a bit denser.

“What an arrogant brat! Today, I will give you uneducated thing a good lesson in place of your family. ”

Being humiliated by such a small young man, the lewd old man’s expression changed as he was furious and he emanated the aura of the Heaven realm. Even the air twisted and cracks appeared from the slabs under their feet which were made out of special materials. Quickly after, they were shattered from the stress.

The lewd old man was truly furious. The aura he emanated was a lot savage than Yan Yangtian’s and Lin Moli’s. It could be seen that even though they were both in the 1st level of the Heaven realm, the strength of the lewd old man was far above Yan Yantian’s and Lin Moli’s.

“Hmph. You’ve done the ends of horrible deeds, and your



conscience has been completely lost. Today, I will carry out judgement for the heavens and remove an evil like you.”

However, as he faced the berserk lewd old man, the young man only faintly smiled then lightly waved his sleeve. A layer of Profound power engulfed out from his body.

“The 9th level of the Profound realm.” Chu Feng was greatly shocked. He never would have thought that the young man who seemed to be even younger than him would actually have the cultivation of the 9th level of the Profound realm.

But that wasn’t even much. The scariest thing was after the Profound power swept out, it interweaved with the Heaven power that the lewd old man emanated out.

The two invisible powers already shaped in the air. Even explosions were compressed from the air, causing bursts of rumbling. Layers of ripples kept on spreading out from the two as the middle. It blew the special rocks from the ground up, and the young had actually fought Heaven power with Profound power, and fought equally so.

“Chu Feng, take the chance right now and sneak in. The reward of being first will be yours!”

And as Chu Feng was deeply attracted to the young man’s brutally strong methods that defied common sense, Eggy’s voice suddenly rang out next to Chu Feng’s ears.

# Chapter 340: Emperor Bloodline

---

Eggy's beautiful voice and solemn tone caused Chu Feng to react as if he woke up from a dream.

Although the two people in the distance were brutally strong and either one of their strengths was far above his, they were currently fighting for life and death, so they weren't able to be distracted.

A situation like that worked well for Chu Feng. As long as Chu Feng was able to resist the pressure they created and pass through that pressure, he would be able to gain the benefit of the fisherman and take away the ten thousand Profound beads.

TL : benefit of the fisherman =>  
[https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The\\_Fight\\_Between\\_the\\_Snipe\\_and](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Fight_Between_the_Snipe_and)

“Sorry you two!”

As he thought of that, Chu Feng did not hesitate. He walked forward and started to carefully circle around to pass. He wanted to walk towards the exit of the underground palace while avoiding their circle of battle.

However, their auras were really too strong and they pretty much sealed the roads to the exit. In a time like that, Chu Feng could only risk being discovered by them and step into the circle of battle enveloped by their pressure.

“So strong. The pressure from these two people are too strong. I just entered their region of pressure yet it’s already so powerful. If they cast their pressure towards me at full strength, I’m afraid that even if I used Eggy’s power, I would not be able to resist against it.”

At that instant, Chu Feng tightly clenched his teeth and concentrated all his Spirit power into maintaining the concealment Spirit Formation lingering around his body. If that Spirit Formation was destroyed, with their observation powers, they would certainly discover Chu Feng immediately, and at that time, Chu Feng would undoubtedly be dead.

But luckily, the more the two fought, the farther they went. If it was only remanent pressure, Chu Feng could still hold it back. In those circumstances, Chu Feng finally walked successfully onto the path that led to the exit, and finally, he arrived in front of the big doors.

In front of the big doors, there was a green-coloured jade stage. The jade stage was not even half a meter tall, and there was a golden-coloured badge stuck on it. On the front of the badge, there was “Presti”, and on the back, there was “gious”. Clearly, it was the Prestigious Villa’s Prestigious Badge.

When the Prestigious Badge was stuck into the jade stage, it was like a key. Intuition told Chu Feng that as long as he pulled the Prestigious Badge out, the huge doors that were ten meters tall would open.

But that wasn’t the important part. The important part was that in the area behind the Prestigious Badge, there was a Cosmos Sack.

After lifting up the Cosmos Sack, Chu Feng rubbed it once, and a bead that was as translucent as crystal landed into Chu Feng's palm.

The bead was extremely beautiful and it contained extremely strong Profound power within. Perhaps even several hundred high-quality Profound medicine would not be as strong as the Profound power in that single bead.

“So this is a Profound bead! Haha, it is truly a good thing!” Chu Feng at that instant was incomparably excited because there were still 9999 more Profound beads in the Cosmos Sack that were exactly the same as the one in his palm. Undoubtedly, Chu Feng had made a huge profit this time. It was the largest amount of wealth he had ever gotten since he was born.

“Haha, Chu Feng, quickly pull out the badge and leave this place. Let that old thing and the little guy continue fighting!” At the same time, Eggy was also endlessly happy.

“That won't work. If I go out right now, everyone will know that I am the first person to pass and that will attract many people's attention. That will be extremely detrimental to me.”

“The most important part is that the lewd old man Wang Qiang and the mysterious young man will also know that I took the opportunity and exploited them as they were fighting.”

“Right now, I already offended the people from the Jie clan so I can't make any more big enemies in this place or else in the future,

when I enter the Thousand Monster Mountain, I'm afraid without even Monstrous Beasts attacking me, I will die by their hands first."

"Then what now? You can't just leave the ten thousand Profound beads and not take them right?"

"There's only one way. Act as if nothing happened: where I came from is where I will return." As Chu Feng spoke, he put the Cosmos Sack that was full of Profound beads away, and quickly after, he headed towards the location where the two people were fighting.

"You can't! This is too dangerous. There is no need to put yourself in such danger." Eggy urged heavily.

"Don't worry. I have the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens on me. If I get discovered, I can still escape from the scene. If I don't get discovered, I can avoid making two big enemies." Chu Feng firmly said.

And after hearing Chu Feng's words, Eggy felt that they were very reasonable as well. If he directly exited right now, the two great enemies were certainly made and it would be hard to avoid conflicts in the future. But right now, if he could walk back, he would be able to avoid future conflicts. So, Eggy did not urge him otherwise.

"Ahh!"

However, just as Chu Feng walked a short distance back, a brutal wave of ripple came sweeping by, and after withstanding the ripple, Chu Feng astonishedly discovered that the lewd old man Wang Qiang was currently laying in a distance with a blood everywhere on his body. One of his arms was snapped off.

Looking back at the young man, his body was emitting faint radiance, as if a god descended to the mortal world with might that could not be blocked. On his forehead, there was a golden and dazzling character, The “Emperor” (皇) character.

“That’s an Emperor Bloodline! No wonder he’s so fierce, it’s because he grasps such strong bloodline power.” Eggy explained.

“You...you...you’re from the Jiang Dynasty! You are from the Jiang Dynasty!!” At that instant, the face of the lewd old man was already filled with fear and his voice of speaking was trembling. He was terrified by the young man’s strength and identity.

“It’s not too late for you to know right now, but the result is actually the same. Today, you are set to die by my hands.” The young man had a light smile on his face as he gradually got closer to the lewd old man.

“You want to kill me? It won’t be that easy.” However, the lewd old man flipped his hand and a black-coloured pill appeared in his palm. It was a Forbidden Medicine. The lewd old man swallowed the Forbidden Medicine, then after that, the Heaven power in his body instantly increased greatly. Then in a blink, he disappeared, and he escaped.

“Hmph. Want to escape? It won’t be that easy.” However, the young man coldly snorted, and quickly after, the tip of his feet touched the group and he also disappeared from where he stood. Undoubtedly, he was chasing after the lewd old man.

“So it turns out that a person from the Jiang Dynasty snuck in this place. No wonder he was so strong.”

“Just now, the aura emitted from his body was very special. That’s the power of bloodlines?” After the two people left, Chu Feng hurriedly ran towards another direction, but at the same time, he felt admiration towards the young man’s special power.

To be able to force a Heaven realm expert while being in the Profound realm showed that the bloodline power the Jiang Dynasty grasped was indeed not simple. Indeed, no wonder the Jiang Dynasty was able to develop as it wished towards powers in all directions, yet there were still no powers able to move the Jiang Dynasty’s position.

After getting the ten thousand Profound beads, Chu Feng did not hurry to leave this place. He hid in a quiet corner to rest and counted the time. Only until he felt that the ten hour limit was almost up did he quickly go towards the exit.

When Chu Feng walked out the exit, he discovered that there were a large number of people gathered there. After they saw Chu Feng, within their gaze, there was more or less some amazement. But that amazement did not reach the stage of “shock”. So, for

most people, after looking at Chu Feng once, they cast their gazes towards other directions.

The reason it was like that was because the time Chu Feng came out was exactly on time. They were amazed because of Chu Feng's very young age, and to be able to pass the stage with that age showed that Chu Feng was a genius.

However, there were many geniuses in that level, so it was still unable to attract too much attention from others.

If Chu Feng held the badge and became the first to come out, doubtlessly, the gazes of those people would not purely have a bit of amazement. They would have incomparable shock. But right now, what Chu Feng did not want the most was to attract some unnecessary commotions. He wanted a low-profile.

“Brother Chu Feng!” Just at that time, a familiar voice suddenly rang out. Focusing his gaze and looking over, he saw Gu Bo and the other people from the World Spirit Guild's young generation currently walking towards himself with a light smile. It could be seen that they also successfully passed the qualification test.



# Chapter 341: Breaking Past The Obstruction

---

“Gu Bo, you passed?” Chu Feng was very happy when he saw Gu Bo because after getting along with him for the past few days, Chu Feng already saw Gu Bo as a good brother, so naturally he hoped that Gu Bo could pass the test.

“Not only did he pass, Gu Bo is the person who passed the Origin level underground palace first and got the Prestigious Badge!” Before even letting Gu Bo reply, a young man behind him spoke with a face full of pride, as if the person who got first was him.

“Brother Gu Bo, truly, congratulations.” Chu Feng was not too surprised by that result, and on his face, he only had happiness that came from his heart as he felt happy for Gu Bo.

It was because not only did Gu Bo have dominating strength, his Spirit Formation techniques were outstanding as well. Being able to get first place in the Origin level underground palace was within Chu Feng’s expectations.

“Brother Chu Feng, if you also chose the Origin level underground palace, this number one place would have belonged to none other than you.” Gu Bo was very humble, and the people from the World Spirit Guild did agree quite a bit on Gu Bo’s words.

No matter what doubts they had in their hearts before when they heard about Chu Feng’s achievements, when they personally saw Chu Feng defeat the group of Profound realm experts like dogs, with the cultivation of the 9th level of the Origin realm, they felt

admiration, or even fear, from their hearts towards Chu Feng.

And when facing the special gazes of the crowd, Chu Feng only lightly smiled, then quickly after, shifted the topic and asked, “My Brother Gu Bo got first place in the Origin level, then who got first place in the Profound level?”

“Chu Feng, a [black horse](#) has appeared this time!” As that matter was mentioned, Gu Bo’s and the others’ faces instantly changed greatly.

“Black horse” refers to an “unexpected victor/winner”.

“Black horse? What actually happened? The lewd old man Wang Qiang didn’t get first place?” Chu Feng acted as if he knew nothing and asked.

“No. This time, it’s a young man. A young man who is only fifteen years old. He got first place.” When Gu Bo said those words, he had a complicated face on because it was a young man who was even younger than him and Chu Feng.

It meant that a real genius stepped onto the stage because no matter how he got first place, in terms of talent, he already surpassed all the geniuses in the continent of the Nine Provinces.

“Yeah? What’s his name?” Similarly, Chu Feng was very intrigued with the young man.

“Jiang Wushang.” Gu Bo extremely solemnly said those three words.

After knowing the name, Chu Feng hidden said in his heart, “So it’s Jiang Wushang. He’s indeed part of the Jiang Dynasty.”

After that, Chu Feng, Gu Bo, and the others, all entered the main city of the Prestigious Villa. It also meant that they already gained the qualifications to join the Marriage Gathering.

Within a residence for resting, Chu Feng first laid some Spirit Formations and after doing some preventive measures, he impatiently took the Cosmos Sack with the ten thousand Profound beads out.

At that instant, Chu Feng was a bit excited in his heart because he felt that the ten thousand Profound beads could absolutely help him break into the Profound realm, and possibly even step into the 2nd level of the Profound realm.

“What is happening? I feel that they are clearly already full, but why am I still unable to break through?”

However, what had happened wasn’t as successful as imagined. He clearly felt that the Profound power consumed by the Divine Lightning in his dantian should already be enough to break into the Profound realm, yet Chu Feng was still unable to.

And currently, other than never-endingly consuming the

Profound beads in order to continue feeding the Divine Lightning with Profound power, Chu Feng did not have any other methods he could use. But it had to be said that the break through this time was much more difficult than any single one in the past.

After Chu Feng was still unable to break through, despite the fact that Chu Feng completely refined the ten thousand Profound beads and the boundless Profound power was all consumed by the eight Divine Lightning in his dantian, Chu Feng completely panicked.

“Dammit! Where did something go wrong? So much Profound power has clearly been saved up, and clearly a breakthrough should already be possible. But why can’t I?” Chu Feng’s forehead was permeated with sweat from panic as he anxiously walked back and forth on the ground.

“Chu Feng, don’t panic. Carefully feel the things in your dantian. Try to link up with them, to understand them.”

“It is not possible for the journey of martial cultivation to be so smooth. It is not possible for it to be so simple. When any person wants to break into a new level or realm, they must comprehend that realm. This requires a long process.”

“Many people are unable to step into the Heaven realm, and many people are even unable to step into the Profound realm or Origin realm. That is because their comprehension power isn’t sufficient, and they cannot comprehend the Origin power and Profound power in between the sky and the earth.”

“But you are different. You don’t need to comprehend the Origin power or Profound power, you don’t need to link up with them. You only need to link up with the things in your dantian and make them be able to be used by you.”

Just as Chu Feng did not know what to do, Eggy’s sweet and gentle voice suddenly rang out. The current Eggy seemed abnormally calm, like a clear lamp that gave directions in the darkness, and pointed towards where Chu Feng should go forward towards.

“That’s right. In the road of martial cultivation, there are indeed layers of obstructions. One can only step into a completely new realm and welcome new power by continuously destroying the obstructions.”

“And as for me, the methods of breaking through before were too easy, and because of that simplicity, it caused me to feel that as long as I have sufficient resources, I could unlimitedly break through, and it even made me feel that as long as I have sufficient resources, breaking through was something that should expectedly happen.”

“But I was wrong. Even if I have special Divine Lightning in my dantian, wanting to break through isn’t that simple.”

“Eggy, thank you. I know what I should do.”

Chu Feng was quickly and thoroughly enlightened and he no longer anxiously walked back and forth. He crossed his leg and sat

directly onto the floor. He started to stabilize his heart, and with his entire body and heart, he started to feel the eight huge lightning beasts in his dantian.

Chu Feng was unable to determine what the eight huge lightning beasts looked like, but Chu Feng was able to feel that they all had their own intelligences, they all had their own appearances, yet they were all one.

The huge lightning beasts interweaved together and became a lump. Seven of them were very peaceful, as they were in hibernation, but one of them was very fidgety. It was currently very restless, as if it wanted to escape the lump of bodies.

“It’s you huh? You want to merge with my body and give me new powers?”

“Don’t hesitate. Believe me. I won’t disappoint you. Give your power to me. I will certainly let your power blossom with radiance.” Chu Feng sensed where the problem was and he was instantly elated. He quickly spoke in his heart to try to link up with the huge lightning beast.

roar~~~ Suddenly, as if it understood Chu Feng’s words, the huge lightning beast immediately roared furiously. The sound resonated next to Chu Feng’s ears, as if it could pierce through the heavens and shake the world.

The most important part was after the furious roar, the huge lightning beast, with savage lightning power, it separated from the

other seven huge lightning beasts and surged out from the dantian.

At that instant, Chu Feng could distinctly feel that the appearance of the huge lightning beast did not have a fixed shape. It could change at any time. It also did not have any eyes, but it was able to figure out the direction. What was condensed was blue-coloured lightning, and it emanated extremely terrifying power.

# Battles On The Mountain Peak



# Chapter 342: 3rd Level Of The Profound Realm

---

whoosh

Suddenly, the huge lightning beast's figure moved and it drilled into Chu Feng's heart. He did not feel any pain yet, but his body trembled and he felt that his entire body was paralyzed.

However, even so, Chu Feng could still feel that the blue-coloured huge lightning beast was already starting to break down in Chu Feng's heart and starting to become countless tiny blue-coloured lightning. They swam in his veins, quickly occupying all of Chu Feng's blood, and merged together.

At that instant, Chu Feng was even able to feel that world-flipping change was happening to every single part of this body, including his dantian. His eyes were brighter: he could see things clearly in the night. His hearing became more sensitive: he could even hear the rustling noises of the grass when blown by the wind.

His body became stronger, his strength became more powerful. Enormous change happened to his entire body.

He was able to feel the Profound power that lingered around him and permeated the world. Indeed, Chu Feng broke through and successfully stepped into the Profound realm. But that was not the end.

At that very instant, change was also happening to the seven huge lightning beasts in Chu Feng's dantian. The Profound power consumed by them was currently changing into entirely new power. They melded into his body, and with such transformations, Chu Feng's cultivation also started to increase.

One level. Two levels. Three levels. With one breath, Chu Feng broke through three levels in the Profound realm. From the 9th level of the Origin realm, he entered the 3rd level of the Profound realm.

“Success! I succeeded! Eggy, do you see it? I succeeded!” Chu Feng was incomparable ecstatic, and on his face that was formerly filled with worries, unprecedented mad joy surged and appeared.

“Haha, so strong! It's actually even stronger than my expectations as you directly entered the 3rd level of the Profound realm! Right now, you no longer need to borrow my power, and you can still be named as king within the Profound realm!”

On Eggy's face, similarly, there was joy, and the sweet smile on her face of absolute prettiness would undoubtedly be able to bewitch countless people. But sadly, no one was able to see the little beauty's smile that could turn the world upside down.

“Haha, it seems like my power is slightly above when I borrow yours, Eggy.”

Chu Feng chuckled, then quickly after, golden-coloured lightning emerged into his eyes. When the lightning appeared, Chu Feng's

bones throughout his body groaned and his muscles were expanding sharply. His aura directly went from the 3rd level of the Profound realm to the 4th level of the Profound realm.

After that, with another thought, within Chu Feng's eyes that were filled with golden-coloured lightning, blue-coloured lightning emerged. After the blue-coloured lightning appeared in his current eyes, the golden-coloured lightning had actually shrunk into a tiny golden-coloured lightning snake. It interweaved with the blue-coloured lightning and became a pattern from the interweavement of the blue-coloured lightning and golden-coloured lightning.

The pattern was gathered over the pupils. Without looking in detail, one would not detect it, but if it was detected, most likely, people would be shocked because it was not a simple pattern. It seemed more like two huge beasts, which had power which defied common sense, deeply sleeping within Chu Feng's pupils.

The most important part was that after the pattern was formed, Chu Feng's aura had actually violently rose again, and from the 4th level of the Profound realm, he stepped into the 5th level of the Profound realm.

“You actually broke through again! Quite impressive. It seems like you've got a new power, and right now, you can break through two levels. So that means your true cultivation isn't the 3rd level of the Profound realm, but the 5th level of the Profound realm?!”

Feeling the change in Chu Feng's body, Eggy was also greatly shocked. She did not expect that after breaking into the Profound realm, Chu Feng would get a new power which caused him to be

able to continuously break through two level of cultivation.

“The 5th level of the Profound realm is still too weak when compared to Jiang Wushang from before. After all, this cultivation is still far from being able to fight against the Heaven realm.”

Chu Feng was very satisfied with the power he got from his own Divine Lightning, but as long as he thought of Jiang Wushang, he still felt that he was lacking a lot and he had to continue working hard. At least currently, within the same generation, he was not the strongest.

“Jiang Wushang being strong is within expectations. As the overlord of the continent of the Nine Provinces, the Jiang Dynasty’s accumulation of several thousands of years is not imaginable by you. Jiang Wushang is a rare genius, and I’m sure even within the Jiang dynasty, he is an outstanding existence.”

“A person like that gets the best development since birth. Not only will there be specialized people guiding him in martial cultivation, he can even receive the most excellent cultivation resources. As long as he can think of it, he can get it. So, it is reasonable that he has his current achievements.”

“But you’re different. Although you started martial cultivation at the age of ten, before fifteen years old of age, you didn’t even have much improvement. Why didn’t you have much improvement?”

“Because your body is special, yet you didn’t have any resources that could be provided for your special body to cultivate. This is

the point where you are inferior to him, because in terms of the starting point, you were already a huge chunk behind him.”

“However, with a bit more than one year of time, you stepped into the 3rd level of the Profound realm from the 2nd level of the Spirit realm, and the martial cultivation resources that you acquired were all fought for by yourself. This is the distance between you and him. You rely on yourself, while he relies on his entire clan.” As Eggy said that, her face was filled with pride. She felt pride for Chu Feng.

“Heh. Eggy, thank you for your consultation. Actually, you don’t need to worry about anything. I have always had this confidence, and one day, I will leave this continent of the Nine Provinces. I will step onto the stage of the world because I still need to find my parents and I still need to find my family.”

“I will find out who sealed you in my body, and no matter who that person is, I will think of a way to get that person to open your seal to return your freedom.” Chu Feng said with a light smile.

After hearing Chu Feng’s words, Eggy’s heart ached a bit and she went into silence...

“Actually, compared to that Jiang Wushang, I am more curious what stage she reached right now. After all, she has a Divine Body!”

Chu Feng’s thoughts couldn’t help floating back one year when he met the purple-clothed young female in the White Tiger Villa.

The young female was the same as Jiang Wushang, being even younger than Chu Feng, but her strength was extremely terrifying.

One year ago, she was already so strong. So one year later, Chu Feng truly did not know what stage she developed into. After all, what she had was the same body as the master of the Emperor Tomb in the Azure Province, a Divine Body.

knock knock knock

“Brother Chu Feng!”

Just at that time, sounds of knocking and yelling rang out from the other side of the palace door. From the voice, Chu Feng was able to hear that it was Gu Bo.

Chu Feng quickly opened the doors, and only then did he discover that currently, the sky was dark, and without him even knowing, he had actually spent so much time.

Gu Bo was standing in front of his palace door. After seeing Chu Feng, he couldn't help but smile and said, “Brother Chu Feng, let's head out. The Marriage Gathering is going to start soon, and don't miss such an exciting moment!”

“Also, my World Spirit Guild's Big Brother Xu Zhongyu has already arrived and he even wants to see you.”

# Chapter 343: Marriage Gathering

---

“It seems like a good show will finally appear.”

Only after hearing Gu Bo’s words did Chu Feng suddenly come to a realization. If it weren’t for Gu Bo who reminded him, he really would have almost forgotten that tonight was the official beginning of the Marriage Gathering. Also the day that the Prestigious Villa’s hundred beauties show their faces to them.

“Yeah, without any incidents tonight, the Prestigious Villa will announce the start of the battle between them and the Thousand Monster Mountain. Also, using the name of the Marriage Gathering, they are going to pull all of us into this battle.” Gu Bo said.

“Ho...Isn’t it what you, I, and everyone hope for?” Chu Feng smiled and a streak of yearning emerged into his eyes.

“Perhaps. Let’s go and see my Big Brother Xu Zhongyu. He is looking very forward to seeing you!” Gu Bo also smiled, and while hugging Chu Feng’s shoulders, the two good brothers headed towards the hosting location of the Marriage Gathering.

The main city of the Prestigious Villa was extremely large, and there was even the beautiful night scenery with bright lamps as well as big and gorgeous houses.

But tonight, the most beautiful and most lively place in the Prestigious Villa was not within the main city. It was on the

summit of a mountain peak outside of the main city.

White clouds were all underneath the mountain peak as they rolled and surged around. The mountain peak was surrounded by waterfalls that flowed straight down, and on the summit of the mountain peak, there was a great celebration with mountains and oceans of people.

This place was the hosting location of the Marriage Gathering.

However, after passing the underground palace test, after sieving through the several tens of thousands of people, only less than a thousand people remained. But those who passed the test were all able to be titled as geniuses. There was not a single person there who was mediocre.

“This is rather lively. It seems like the Prestigious Villa did diligently prepared for a long time.”

Coming to the summit of the mountain peak and looking at the paradise-like natural beautiful scenery that surrounded the mountain peak, then looking back at the large and glorious human-made structures on the summit of the mountain peak, Chu Feng knew that all of that certainly used up quite a bit of wealth and manpower from the Prestigious Villa.

And at that very instant, because the Prestigious Villa's hundred beauties had not appeared yet, the males that came from the powers everywhere gathered close together and chatted.



After all, the people gathered in this place were the so-called famous people of the young generation on the continent of the Nine Provinces. Some could very possibly be the ruler of various places in this continent, so many people were willing to take this rare chance to make some friends.

And other than the many young handsome geniuses that successfully gained the qualifications to participate in the Marriage Gathering, there were also many disciples from the Prestigious Villa gathered on the spacious summit of the mountain peak. Also, most of them were female disciples.

The female disciples had something special about them. Although they wore the clothing of the Prestigious Villa, every single one of them were adorned by beautiful clothing, and naturally, they had their reasons for it.

Although the disciples from the Prestigious Villa had very high status and position, after all, the people who gathered in this place were the geniuses of the same generation that came from many places in the entire continent. Naturally, the female disciples' heart would be moved, and perhaps within the geniuses, they could meet their future ideal husband.

Most of young geniuses were very willing to chat and create relationships with the Prestigious Villa's beauties. After all, there were only a hundred gorgeous beauties, which also meant in the near a thousand people, only a hundred had the chance to marry the hundred gorgeous beauties.

However, many people did not want to return empty-handedly,

so naturally they would be willing to get acquainted with the beautiful Prestigious Villa disciples. At least, if they were unable to be chosen by the hundred gorgeous beauties, there would at least be an extra choice for them. Why wouldn't you go for it?

“I never would have thought that even the old generation has come.”

At the same time, Chu Feng also noticed that within some special buildings, there were people in the old generation laughing and talking. The auras of the old people were not low. The weakest was in the peak of the Profound realm, and Chu Feng was actually not even able to detect the depths of some of them, so without a doubt, they were experts who stepped into the Heaven realm.

“Mm. Most of them arrived just today. There are also quite a few elders from my World Spirit Guild, and I'm sure that they're afraid any misfortune will fall upon their own family's young generation right? But it has to be said that this Marriage Gathering hosted by the Prestigious Villa will be very successful. At least, many experts will be pulled into the battle between them and the Thousand Monster Mountain.”

Gu Bo first sighed and smiled, then added,

“That's right. Chu Feng, I received news just now. After the conclusion of the underground palace test, and when the staff were searching for people stuck in the underground palace, they discovered the lewd old man Wang Qiang's corpse!”

“It’s no wonder the old guy didn’t get first place, so he was killed. However, I wonder who did it. After all, in the Limitless Underground Palace today, only he was in the Heaven realm.”

“Something like that actually happened?” Chu Feng faked amazement, but he still felt shock in his heart because he knew who the culprit was. Undoubtedly, it was the young man who came from the Jiang Dynasty, Jiang Wushang.

“Look! Tang Yixiu and Song Qingfeng have come!”

Suddenly, the shriek of female disciples came from the crowd, quickly afterwards, the females from the Prestigious Villa became a human tide as they ran towards the road that led up to the mountain.

“They’re the strongest people in the young generation in the Tang Province and Song Province? Let’s go over and see.” And after hearing those two names, the expressions of the young geniuses that came to participate in the Marriage Gathering changed, and they followed the human current and rushed over.

“The geniuses who received the Prestigious Invitation Letters have come. Want to go over to take a look?” Gu Bo asked.

“Sure, why not go over and look? After all, they are famous people in the young generation.” Chu Feng smiled, and started to stride and walk forwards behind the crowd of people.

After passing through the crowd of people, Chu Feng was able to see four tall, big, and handsome males currently walking towards the summit of the mountain peak while being escorted by many elders and disciples.

Although the four males had light smiles on their faces, they were still unable to conceal their arrogance, and from the whispers of the surrounding crowd, Chu Feng knew where the four people came from,

The Tang Province's Tang Yixiu.

The Song Province's Song Qingfeng.

The Yuan Province's Bai Yunfei.

The Ming Province's Liu Xiaoyao.

“The four of them can be said to be the ones in the young generation to have the highest-profile in their activity styles. From what I've heard, at first, because all of them spoke and humiliated the Azure Province, that's why they were challenged by Zhang Tianyi and were all defeated by him.” Gu Bo quietly said next to Chu Feng's ear.

“Humiliating the Azure Province... no wonder.” After hearing those words, Chu Feng lightly furrowed his brows and remembered the faces of the four clearly because he who came from the Azure Province already had a horrible impression on the

four of them. At the same time, he had better impressions towards Zhang Tianyi.

whoosh Suddenly, a row of light brushed past the top of the heads of the four geniuses as well as the many people from the Prestigious Villa. At the end, that person stood in the middle of the crowd.

It was a young man who was similarly old as the four geniuses. He should be around twenty years old, but compared to the beautiful clothing of the four geniuses and handsome appearances, the young man seemed rather ordinary.

He wore very normal clothes, he wasn't tall, and he wasn't handsome. Even the clothes he wore were roughly-made clothing, and it could be said that there was not a single good point on his body. But from the strength he just displayed, people knew that he was not an average person.

Because, from the aura he just displayed, it showed that he was in the 1st level of the Heaven realm. The young man was actually an expert in the 1st level of the Heaven realm.

However, compared to the male's powerful strength, Chu Feng was deeply attracted to the weapon behind his back. It was a wooden sword, but it wasn't a normal wooden sword. Extremely complex patterns were on it as well as terrifying energy.

He had seen a similar object on Jie Bufan's body. The Armor of Thorns Jie Bufan wore before also emanated the special aura,

which meant that the wooden sword behind the cloth-clothed male's back was a Strange Armament.

# Chapter 344: Might Of Strange Armaments

---

“Murong Yu...The [young head](#) of the Sword God Valley, Murong Yu!”

Being a “young head” might mean something like a “vice-head”, he can be that while being a disciple.

“Unless the thing behind his back is a Strange Armament, the Divine Wood Sword?” After the cloth-clothed male appeared, it caused many people to yell in surprise. So it seemed he was the number one person in the young generation of the Sui Province.

“Murong Yu, you’ve truly gotten tired of living. You dare to cross over my head?”

“Murong Yu, you truly have big nerves! You think that you can be lawless by being the young head of the Sword God Valley?”

At the same time, the four geniuses had faces full of fury. The pointed at Murong Yu and loudly howled. Obviously, Murong Yu’s actions just now caused them to be extremely displeased.

“It was clearly all of you who blocked my path so I had to leap over your heads. But if you have to say that I stepped over you, then I can’t do anything about it. After all, there is one sentence in the world, and that is ‘bringing humiliation to oneself’.” Murong Yu disdainfully smiled, and then didn’t pay attention to them and prepared to continue walking towards the summit of the mountain peak.

“Murong Yu, you stop right there.” But before letting Murong Yu move, the four geniuses sprung and surrounded Murong Yu.

At that instant, everyone subconsciously backed far away because they were aware that there were conflicts between the five geniuses, and they seemed to want to attack.

In a situation like that, the elders from the Prestigious Villa did not stop them, and similarly, they entered the ranks of the observing crowd.

In reality, even the seniors and experts from the powers everywhere who were resting on the summit of the mountain peak also walked out as they wanted to see the battle between the famous people of the young generation.

“Good dogs don’t block the road. Move.” Murong Yu said with abnormal domineeringness without even furrowing his brows.

“Murong Yu, you’re truly arrogant enough. You think only you’ve entered the Heaven realm?” The four geniuses coldly snorted, then emanated a wave of boundless aura. It caused even the surrounding air to twist. It was Heaven power. The four of them had actually also stepped into the Heaven realm.

“So strong. As expected of the people who received the Prestigious Invitation Letter. If they already entered the Heaven realm at such an age, how outstanding would their future achievements be?”



“I truly admire those senior and junior sisters. To be able to have a chance to join together with such geniuses... If one were able to become a wife to such geniuses, what other wishes would they have in their life?”

After the four people displayed their strengths, the observers on the side were fine, as at most they were amazed. However, every single of the females let their imaginations run wild. But they could not be blamed, after all, a large portion of the females would want to find a husband they wished to have as a powerful person to rely on.

“So what if you entered the Heaven realm? Weren’t you still beaten like a dog by Zhang Tianyi?” The disdain in Murong Yu’s eyes did not diminish. Rather, the corners of his mouth were raised to form a curve with a smear of ridicule.

“Murong Yu, you truly know no ends to your arrogance! Today, in your father’s place, I will give a conceited person like you a good lesson!” As the most shameful thing was mentioned, the four geniuses were so angry that their eyes sprayed fire, and without speaking anymore useless words, they directly attacked.

The four of them did not use any martial skills. They only simply exchanged punches and kicks, but every single style and move contained Heaven power. Every single punch and every single kick would open mountains and shatter rocks as they had endless strength.

Perhaps even a normal punch could completely destroy a grand palace, and perhaps a casual kick could cut off rivers. And that,

was the strength of a person in the Heaven realm.

“You overestimate yourselves.”

Murong Yu coldly smiled, then quickly after, he pulled the Divine Wood Sword out from behind his back. When the Divine Wood Sword entered his hand, it immediately gave off strange light. Countless symbols lingered around, then they blended into Murong Yu's body. At that instant, the strange light symbols melded with Murong Yu and his aura greatly increased.

whoosh

At the same time, Murong Yu pointed his sword at the four people. A wave of boundless pressure descended from the sky and instantly, under the four people's feet, sand and rocks flew and a huge deep pit appeared. The four chosen geniuses could also not be able to resist against the pressure and they were forcibly pressed down to the ground, and could not stand up.

“Heavens! That Murong Yu is actually so strong! With one strike, he defeated the four peak geniuses!”

“No. It's not that Murong Yu is strong, it's the Divine Wood Sword that's strong. The might of this Strange Armament is too powerful. With the Strange Armament, not to mention Tang Yixiu, Song Qingfeng, and the others, I'm afraid even experts in the 2nd level of the Heaven realm would need to avoid clashing.”

“Impressive. Too impressive. According to legends, Strange Armaments are based off of the unique Marital power that Martial Lords have, made with strange minerals in the world as the raw materials, and created by the formation that a Purple-cloak World Spiritist condenses. The might it has can shake the world, so it can’t be helped that it causes people to admire the powers which own Strange Armaments, which all become the overlord of an area.”

“Yeah, treasures like that have been passed down from the ancient times. Right now, on the continent of the Nine Provinces, there is no one who can create such treasures.”

“I’m afraid that in the entire continent of the Nine Provinces, there wouldn’t be over ten Strange Armaments. Most of them are grasped within the hands of the Jiang Dynasty, and only two of them are grasped by other powers. It would be the Divine Wood Sword of the Sword God Valley, and the Armor of Thorns of the Jie clan.”

When Murong Yu’s Strange Armament appeared, it caused innumerable people to sigh in admiration and they were deeply attracted by the Strange Armament’s unique power. But compared to them, several old people outside of the crowd revealed ugly faces. Clearly, they were the elders of the four apical geniuses. At that instant, if they went out, it wouldn’t be good. If they didn’t go out, it wouldn’t be good either, so they sank into a realm of embarrassment.

“So this is the true might of Strange Armaments. It is indeed a good thing.” At the same time, Chu Feng was also deeply attracted

to the might of the Divine Wood Sword. Chu Feng was able to feel how strong the formation it contained was.

Power that was far above Heaven power was contained within it. Perhaps it was like how people said it was. In the Strange Armament, maybe it did contain Martial power that only Martial Lords could grasp.

“Brother Murong, relying on Strange Armaments to suppress people doesn’t seem to be too appropriate right?”

Just at that time, a light laugh suddenly rang out, and quickly following that, a path speedily appeared within the groups of people. At the end of the path, a male with elegance was gradually approaching.

That male was two meters or so tall, but his body was not too muscular. Rather, he was tall and handsome. His face was not the same as the other four geniuses, and he didn’t have a little white charming face. He was filled with the manliness of males. The handsomeness of men.

The most important part was that the male emanated a unique atmosphere. It was an atmosphere of “looking down on the world and I’m the most powerful”. It caused countless females to be attracted to him, and even some males were bewitched by his atmosphere.

“Jie Qingming?!”

At that instant, without the need for Gu Bo to speak, Chu Feng already guessed the identity of the male because there was even a group of people who tailed behind him. They were the Jie clan members, and from his age and atmosphere, without even guessing, Chu Feng knew that doubtlessly, he was the future chief of the Jie clan, Jie Qingming.

“Jie Qingming, on the other hand, you have the qualifications to exchange blows with me. Why not also take out your Strange Armament and try it out with me?” Within the gaze that Murong Yu looked at Jie Qingming with, it similarly also emanated maliciousness.

“My thoughts exactly.”

Suddenly, Jie Qingming’s body flashed and he disappeared. When he reappeared, he was already standing in front of Murong Yu. At the same time, a layer of blood-red-coloured gas, containing horrifying aura, started to spread with Jie Qingming as the middle, and it attacked Murong Yu straight on.

# Chapter 345: Cultivation Exposed

---

The blood-red-coloured gas was extremely violent. Tens of thousands of thorns were contained within it, and if one were to be stuck by the red-coloured gas, they would certainly have thousands of wounds and die with mutilations.

whoosh As he faced such a horrifying attack, even Murong Yu's expression slightly changed and fear appeared within his eyes. He leaped back to dodge it and escaped the previous circle of battle. Simultaneously, he lifted the oppressing pressure from the four geniuses.

“Murong Yu has actually been forced back! Such a tyrannical Murong Yu has been forced back by Jie Qingming!”

“Impressive. It's said that Jie Qingming is the number one person in the young generation of the continent of the Nine Provinces. Looking at it today, it is indeed so.”

After Jie Qingming attacked, it caused everyone to be astonished. Being also in the 1st level of the Heaven realm and having a Strange Armament as well, Jie Qingming was able to induce fear into Murong Yu. It could be seen that his strength was indeed on another level above Murong Yu.

After Murong Yu backed away, Jie Qingming did not chase to fiercely beat him. Rather, he put the red-coloured gas away and helped the four people on the ground up one by one and politely asked, “Brothers, are you uninjured?”

“Yeah. Brother Qingming, thank you for helping. Murong Yu is too worthless. Relying on the Strange Armament, he becomes completely lawless. If he didn’t have the Strange Armament, I would have certainly beat him up well.”

“Ahh, but sadly, you don’t have any Strange Armaments, and I don’t have any Strange Armaments. Only Brother Qingming can cause him to be fearful.”

The four apical geniuses were extremely grateful towards Jie Qingming, and as they spoke, they couldn’t help casting malicious gazes towards Murong Yu because this time, they truly lost face because of Murong Yu.

“Hmph.” On the other hand, Murong Yu first coldly snorted, but then he no longer did anything. Instead, he put his Divine Wood Sword in his hand away behind his back and said, “Jie Qingming, your controlling power over the Strange Armament is indeed above me, but that is only because you stepped into the Heaven realm before me.”

“Before long, I will also be able to thoroughly control my Divine Wood Sword, and at that time, I will fight against you again.”

“I welcome it at any time.” Jie Qingming was not afraid in the slightest. He displayed unique domineeringness as if he was the king of the young generation. Afraid of nothing, and sweeping over everything.

Jie Qingming's performance caused the beauties on scene to be completely captivated by him. Even the people from the old generation from all sorts of places kept on praising him.

"Big Brother Qingming, that brat over there is Chu Feng. He's the one who heavily injured Jie Bufan." But just at that time, a Jie clan member ran over to Jie Qingming's side and pointed his finger towards Chu Feng who was within the crowd.

"Oh? Brother Qingming, isn't Jie Bufan your younger brother? This brat injured your younger brother?"

"He is truly imprudent. Let me, your brother, give him a lesson."

As they heard those words, before letting Jie Qingming say anything, Tang Yixiu, Song Qingfeng, Bai Yunfei, and Liu Xiaoyao who were just saved by Jie Qingming all cast their unkind gazes towards Chu Feng.

"Everyone, thank you for your kind intentions, but this is my family's business so I want to personally handle it." Jie Qingming first indifferently smiled towards the four people, then quickly after, he cast his gaze towards Chu Feng.

At that instant, Chu Feng was able to feel two formless sharp blades piercing through his body straight towards his heart. He almost lost consciousness and almost knelt to the ground.

ta But luckily, Chu Feng's Spirit power was extremely strong, and



there were even the Divine Lightning rolling and surging around in his blood. He was able to resist against the formless pressure only because of that, and he only took one step back. But Chu Feng's current face instantly turned deathly-white. Big droplets of sweat permeated his forehead and he was even gasping for breath, as if a horrific battle took place.

“Chu Feng, are you okay?” Seeing that, Gu Bo quickly supported Chu Feng and his eyes were filled with worry. Being also a World Spiritist, he was able to feel that Jie Qingming's gaze just now contained extremely powerful pressure.

“I'm fine.” Chu Feng shook his head and hiddenly said in his heart, “This Jie Qingming is too strong. The gaze just now seemed to see through everything I have. It almost caused my mind to collapse. So this is the strength of Blue-cloak World Spiritists?”

“The 3rd level of the Profound realm. You do have a bit of strength, but you dare to heavily injure my younger brother with just this? Your nerves truly cover the sky.” Jie Qingming coldly snorted, and he had actually seen through Chu Feng's real cultivation just now.

“What? The 3rd level of the Profound realm? Brother Chu Feng, you've stepped into the Profound realm?” After hearing those words, Gu Bo was greatly shocked.

“Mm.” Chu Feng admitted silently by nodding his head as he faced Gu Bo's closely followed question.

“Heavens! You truly entered the 3rd level of the Profound realm?!” And after Chu Feng confirmed it, Gu Bo’s mouth widened even more as he stared at Chu Feng with disbelief and felt that it was not real.

After all, one year ago, Chu Feng was still in the 1st level of the Origin realm. With the time of one year, as he caught up to his own cultivation, he was already seen as an exceptional genius. But right now, he had actually stepped into the 3rd level of the Profound realm and flung him far behind. That completely surpassed his expectations.

“The 3rd level of the Profound realm? That child?”

“He stepped into the 3rd level of the Profound realm at that age? It seems like he’s also quite an outstanding genius!”

“He is indeed a genius, but he seemed to have injured Jie Qingming’s younger brother and offended Jie Qingming. With this, no matter how much more of a genius he is, I’m afraid that no one can save him.”

“Yeah. Jie Qingming is the number one person in the young generation! The number one genius in the current continent of the Nine Provinces! That young man actually dares to offend Jie Qingming? He’s truly looking to die!”

“Ahh, the class of geniuses are always arrogant and proud, but the arrogance and pride will always cause them to walk towards their path of demise. This boy is such an example.”

At the same time, Chu Feng already attracted everyone's attention, and when they saw Chu Feng's young appearance while actually having the cultivation of the 3rd level of the Profound realm, almost everyone felt that Chu Feng was a genius.

But there were also many people who felt Chu Feng was undoubtedly going to die in the future since he offended Jie Qingming. So, most of the people, with an attitude of looking at drama, waited to see how Jie Qingming was going to give Chu Feng a lesson.

“Chu Feng, you injured my younger brother, causing him to be unable to pass the Limitless Underground Palace's test and unable to participate in this Marriage Gathering. You really are quite heartless. Are all the people from the Azure Province uneducated like you and find pleasure in destroying other people's future?”

Jie Qingming walked in front of Chu Feng, and with a thunder-like yell, he interrogated Chu Feng. The deafening voice shook Chu Feng's ears to the point that they ringed. Layer after layer of invisible voice waves were currently attacking his body.

However, from Jie Qingming's words, it also mocked another person from the Azure Province. Zhang Tianyi. It could be seen that Jie Qingming did not appear to be pleased with Zhang Tianyi.

“Jie Qingming. Don't think about flipping the right and wrong. Clearly, Jie Bufan and the others surrounded and attacked Chu Feng in the Limitless Underground Palace and had malicious

intentions towards him. Because of self-protection, Chu Feng injured Jie Bufan.”

“If you have to blame someone, you can only blame your Jie clan members overestimating their strengths. Over twenty experts in the Profound realm were all defeated by Chu Feng with the strength of the 9th level of the Origin realm.”

“What’s this? Right now, since there is no one who can do anything to Chu Feng in your Jie clan’s young generation, only you can personally come out?” Just at that time, Gu Bo stood in front of Chu Feng and started to strictly reprimand Jie Qingming.

## Chapter 346: Archenemy

---

“Hmph. I’m talking to Chu Feng right now. How is it your turn to speak so much?” As he faced Gu Bo’s questioning, Jie Qingming lightly furrowed his brows and a streak of cold glare emerged into his eyes.

“It is only a fight between those in the young generation. If one’s ability is inferior to others, then they should be thoroughly convinced. So, how is it your turn to interfere, Jie Qingming?”

Just at that time, another voice came from the crowd. That voice was as gentle as water, yet also contained thunder-like explosive power. It was another person in the Heaven realm.

Slanting gazes to look over, within the crowd, a group of people walked over. It was the people from the World Spirit Guild. The person who led was a handsome male who seemed to be gentle. He held a feather fan and waved it in front of his chest, showing an elegant style.

If it was said that the atmosphere Jie Qingming gave off was domineeringness that did not back down, then that male’s unique atmosphere was as gentle as the flow of water. But it had to be admitted that everyone could feel that the seemingly gentle male should not be offended.

“Big Brother Zhongyu!” After seeing that person, Gu Bo rejoiced as if he saw his savior.

“Xu Zhongyu? The number one genius of the World Spirit Guild!”

At the same time, many people recognized the person who arrived. The yearning within their gazes became stronger and stronger because everyone knew that the young generation of the World Spirit Guild was not on friendly terms with the young generation of the Jie clan.

Jie Qingming and Xu Zhongyu were archenemies for many years. Every time, when the two of them met together, some conflicts would more or less happen. So, when the two of them gathered together at that moment, people knew that a good show was going to start.

“Xu Zhongyu, why are you meddling in other people’s businesses?” Jie Qingming turned his head and cast his unkind gaze towards Xu Zhongyu.

“Jie Qingming, Chu Feng and Gu Bo are both part of my World Spirit Guild. Protecting them is what I should do, so how can you say that I’m meddling in other people’s businesses?” Xu Zhongyu indifferently smiled, and a bit of mockery was within this words.

“Fine. I would rather like to see if you, Xu Zhongyu, are able to protect them.” Jie Qingming didn’t speak any useless words, and with a thought, the red-coloured gas surged out from his body once again.

The might of the Strange Armament reappeared and it was even

quicker than before, and even more terrifying than before. Jie Qingming obviously wanted to treat Xu Zhongyu as he did to Murong Yu. He wanted to control his enemy with one strike and to quickly finish Xu Zhongyu off so that he and the World Spirit Guild would have no more face.

“Jie Qingming, it seems like you know that you cannot defeat me with your own body’s cultivation so you directly used the power of the Strange Armament. However, your calculations are off because you’re not the only one with a Strange Armament.”

As he faced the red-coloured gas that pounced towards him head-on, contained thousands of thorns, and was like a ferocious wild beast, Xu Zhongyu only disdainfully smiled, and quickly after, with a thought, his body started to emit golden-coloured radiance. The golden-coloured radiance was extremely dazzling, just like the sun.

The most important part was that when the golden-coloured radiance appeared, people could still hear bursts of angry roars. They seemed to be the roars of a dragon. Unexpectedly, there was a golden dragon lingering within the golden-coloured radiance.

boom The golden-coloured gas and the red-coloured gas collided together and instantly, the mountain peak under their feet trembled and swayed. The horrifying power emanated by the Strange Armaments had actually interweaved together.

“Strange Armament! It is really a Strange Armament! Why does your World Spirit Guild have a Strange Armament?” At that instant, even the face of Jie Qingming, who was formerly filled

with confidence, changed because within his memories, the World Spirit Guild did not have any Strange Armaments.

“That’s the Strange Armament from the Jiang Dynasty, the Golden Dragon Armor. With an extremely huge price, the head of my World Spirit Guild traded with the Jiang Dynasty and gained it. The reason was to not let Big Brother Xu Zhongyu lose to Jie Qingming who’s in the same generation.” Gu Bo leaned forward towards Chu Feng’s ear and hiddenly said.

“Oh?” At that instant, Chu Feng couldn’t help but be taken aback because he could imagine how big the price would be in order to trade a Strange Armament from the hands of the Jiang Dynasty. It could be seen that because of face, the World Spirit Guild spent quite a bit of wealth.

“Xu Zhongyu actually also has a Strange Armament! I never would have thought that the World Spirit Guild hid that so deeply and did not reveal it.”

“I’ve heard that when Jie Qingming fought against Xu Zhongyu at first, he never used the power of the Strange Armament. He wanted to use his own power to defeat Xu Zhongyu, but it was useless, as it was a tie every time and the win or loss was undeterminable.”

“And right now, the two of them both have Strange Armaments. Which also means that similarly, the win or loss will be undeterminable as well. From this, wouldn’t the spot of being the young generation’s strongest person in the continent of the Nine Provinces be taken by both Jie Qingming and Xu Zhongyu



together?”

It was exactly the same as what the crowd said. Xu Zhongyu and Jie Qingming had alike talent, alike strength, and even their Spirit Formation techniques were alike. Always, the outcome of their fights were hard to determine, and right now, as they clashed with Strange Armaments, it was the same.

Currently, the two of them wanted to defeat their opponent, so they put their full power into the Strange Armament on their bodies.

In a situation like that, blood-red-coloured patterns appeared on Jie Qingming's clothes. The patterns became denser and denser, and faintly, it became a blood-red-coloured piece of armor. It gave off the feeling of being indescribable as well as horrifying power that was extremely frightening to people.

But Xu Zhongyu did not display weakness as well. The golden-coloured radiance that he gave off did not diminish, but people were still able to faintly see that he who was in the middle of the golden-coloured radiance had a golden-coloured armor on his body, and around the armor, there was even a golden dragon lingering with unordinary grandeur.

As the two fought, cracks appeared on the mountain peak under their feet and with the two of them as the middle, layers of ripples kept on sweeping away. In that state, not to mention Chu Feng and the others, even some powerful elderly people were forced back as it was difficult to resist against the might of Strange Armaments.

“This isn’t working. The might of the Strange Armaments are too strong. If this continues, I’m afraid that this entire mountain peak will be destroyed.” As they looked at the quickly spreading cracks, the elders from the Prestigious Villa started to worry.

rumble rumble rumble

Suddenly, even the sky starting trembling. Raising their heads to look, people astonishedly discovered that a wave of power that did not belong to Strange Armaments was currently condensing in the air, and after looking, there was even a person standing there.

That person’s body was covered by dazzling brilliance and his appearance could not be seen clearly. One could only see that his clothes were fluttering left and right and his hands were speedily changing. Also, he even said some words,

“Prestigious!”

“Sky!”

“Opening!”

“Hand!”

Suddenly, immediately after speaking, that person became a row of light and descended from the sky. It directly darted into the

circle of battle between Jie Qingming and Xu Zhongyu.

boom After that person landed, a berserk energy ripple was instantly created. The ripple went wild, as if it could split the sky and the earth.

In that situation, Chu Feng who stood at forefront felt a fatal threat as if the ripple itself could split him apart.

But luckily, with the combination of powers from the senior experts hidden within the crowd, they laid a blue-coloured Spirit Formation in front of the crowd, and only then were unnecessary injures avoided.

# Chapter 347: Intimidation And Oppression

---

“So strong. So this is the confrontation between the strongest geniuses in the continent of the Nine Provinces.” Looking at the devastating energy ripples that were howling like ferocious beasts in the area contained by Spirit Formations, Chu Feng deeply felt the huge distance between him and the geniuses in the Heaven realm.

However, Chu Feng was even more curious about the identity of the person who entered the circle of battle and broke away the might of Jie Qingming’s and Xu Zhongyu’s Strange Armaments because Chu Feng had used his Spirit power before to examine that person, and he discovered that he was also a young male. Also a person of the young generation.

In reality, not only Chu Feng, pretty much everyone on scene completely locked their intrigued gazes within the Spirit Formations and they wanted to see who it was.

hmm

Finally, after the energy ripples dissipated and the experts who laid the Spirit Formations unlocked the Spirit Formations, at that instant, three bodies also appeared within everyone’s line of sight.

As for the third person, exactly the same as Chu Feng’s feeling earlier, it was indeed a young male, and from his clothes, everyone was able to figure out his identity. Clearly, it was the number one disciple of the Prestigious Villa, Liu [Zhizun](#).

Zhizun = Prestigious

“So it’s Liu Zhizun. He was able to enter the circle of battle of two geniuses’, who have Strange Armaments, without being injured! Is it possible that he also has one on him?”

“No. It’s not possible for the Prestigious Villa to have a Strange Armament. Did you not hear the name Liu Zhizun said earlier when he arrived? It’s the Prestigious Sky Opening Hand! He used the Prestigious Villa’s unique skill, and with that unique skill, he broke apart the might of their Strange Armaments.”

“It’s really the Prestigious Sky Opening Hand! I never would have thought that this martial skill truly has might that is comparable to Strange Armaments.”

Discussions rose from the surrounding people, and Chu Feng was extremely curious what kind of unique skill was able to break the might of Strange Armaments apart. So, he inquisitively asked Gu Bo, “What martial skill is the unique skill they’re talking about? It possesses such domineering might!”

“Chu Feng, I’m sure you know in the continent of the Nine Provinces, the strongest martial skills are rank 8 martial skills. However, rank 8 martial skills are extremely rare. So rare that even powers like my World Spirit Guild and the Jie clan do not have any.”

“But the Prestigious Villa possesses such a rare martial skill. So, it can be said that other than the Jiang Dynasty, the Prestigious Villa

is the only power that has a rank 8 martial skill, so naturally, this rank 8 martial skill became the Prestigious Villa's foundation treasure."

"However, this Prestigious Sky Opening Hand is challenging to cultivate. There are very few people in the Prestigious Villa who grasps this martial skill, and also because the casting time of the martial skill is too long, it is not possible for it to be used in a one-on-one fight. While using it, they must have someone protecting them."

"But it has to be said that the might of the Prestigious Villa is very horrifying. As long as one can use it successfully, it will be like the might Liu Zhizun showed earlier. It would be comparable to the might of Strange Armaments."

"Of course, the reason why Liu Zhizun was able to use the Prestigious Sky Opening Hand fully just now is because he had sufficient time to put the rank 8 martial skill into use." Gu Bo explained in detail.

"The Prestigious Villa's Prestigious Sky Opening Hand is indeed outstanding. Brother Zhizun, it seems like if I clash against you in the future, I must have a Strange Armament on me or else I will certainly not be able to defeat you." Xu Zhongyu spoke, but a bit of unkindness was within his tone. Obviously, he felt displeased towards Liu Zhizun's interference.

"Ehh, Brother Zhongyu, don't joke around... Although my Prestigious Villa's Prestigious Sky Opening Hand has extremely strong might, everyone knows that it is very complicated and

difficult to use in a one-on-one situation.” Liu Zhizun explained while smiling.

“Oh? From what you’ve said, if your Prestigious Sky Opening Hand can be used anytime, the two of us will truly not be able to defeat you?” Just at that time, Jie Qingming also spoke, and within his words, there were sharp ridicule.

“Brother Qingming, Brother Zhongyu, please don’t make things difficult for me. I know that interfering with your fight without permission isn’t appropriate, but after all, this is still the place where the Marriage Gathering is hosted.”

“The might of the Strange Armaments you two have are too strong, and if this hosting location for the gathering gets destroyed, it is truly difficult for me to explain it to the head of the villa.” Liu Zhizun apologetically smiled and said.

“Brother Zhizun, it’s not that I, Jie Qingming, am not giving you face and must fight on your Prestigious Villa’s territory, but the reality is that someone broke the rules of your Prestigious Villa, yet your villa didn’t handle the matter. Can I still not take care of this myself then?” Jie Qingming said with a mouth full of sourness.

“This...” Liu Zhizun, from start to finish, was observing on the side, so naturally he knew what the ins and outs were. So, after thinking for a while, he arrived in front of Chu Feng with a light smile on his face and politely said,

“Little Brother, I wonder what your name is?”

“Chu Feng.”

“So it’s Brother Chu Feng. Brother Chu Feng, I do not know what grudges you have with Jie Bufan, but right now, Jie Bufan is injured because of you. That’s the truth.”

“And since this matter happened on the land of my Prestigious Villa, I should help all of you uphold fairness.”

“How about this. Let us change the big matters into small ones, and small matters into nothing. Just apologize to Jie Bufan’s elder brother, Jie Qingming, and this matter will be finished. What do you think?”

Although Liu Zhizun’s appearance was kind and polite, more or less, there was some forceful attitude within his words. There was even some meanings of threat in his gaze. He wanted to force an apology from Chu Feng to dissolve the matter.

But what was the thing Chu Feng could not take the most? It was being threatened! Also, no matter what, he was absolutely never going to apologize and admit any wrongs towards Jie Qingming. So, he coldly laughed, then said,

“Help me uphold justice? You’re upholding justice like this? I have originally done no wrongs, so why do I need to apologize? Since you are from the Prestigious Villa, you should clear up the cause and effects of this matter. Investigate clearly before coming here to uphold justice, or else you aren’t upholding justice but



oppressing others.”

After Chu Feng’s words came out, the faces of everyone on scene changed greatly, and within the crowd, one could even hear the sounds of breathing cool air in. They were completely terrified by Chu Feng’s actions.

Even Xu Zhongyu slightly frowned and felt that the situation wasn’t good. What status did Liu Zhizun have? He was the number one disciple of the Prestigious Villa! An existence that could fight against him and Jie Qingming!

If there was a negotiation with Liu Zhizun, he, Xu Zhongyu, could stand out for him. After all, in terms of strength and status, Chu Feng was not the same as Liu Zhizun. They were not on the same level.

When he said those words in front of the crowd, it clearly meant that he wasn’t giving Liu Zhizun any face, causing him to be in a difficult situation. It was like slapping Liu Zhizun’s face in front of everyone. Even if Liu Zhizun did not chase after this matter, he would certainly remember this grudge and in the future, think of methods to deal with Chu Feng.

Naturally, Chu Feng clearly understood that logic as well. However, as a person, Chu Feng had some baselines. He would not easily lower his head to others. Even if he knew that an enemy would be created from that, he would still not lower his head. There was a sentence that was well said, “Soldiers can be killed but they cannot be disgraced”. Chu Feng was a person who was willing to die but not willing to be humiliated.

“Well said!!”

But just at that time, when everyone felt that Chu Feng had stirred up a huge disaster, a cheer suddenly rang out from a close place.

Looking over towards the voice, on top of a nearby rock, there was a young man sitting on it. The young man was currently clapping his hands and continuously cheering. And he, was the apical genius who killed the lewd old man Wang Qiang, Jiang Wushang.

# Chapter 348: Who Gave You That Confidence

---

“It’s him?”

Jiang Wushang was the first person to pass the Limitless Underground Palace, and he was an apical genius who stepped into the 9th level of the Profound realm at the age of fifteen. Also, his origins were unknown. No one knew where his master came from, nor where he himself came from. No one even knew whether Jiang Wushang was his real name or not so he had a very mysterious identity.

But everyone knew that Jiang Wushang was a peak genius, and in the future, he could possibly even surpass existences like Jie Qingming and Xu Zhongyu. So, not a single person dared to not look at the young man with importance.

whoosh Jiang Wushang’s hands pressed against the rock under his body and strength was suddenly put into his waist. With a beautiful carp-like flip in a perfect curve, he leaped down from the huge rock and had rushed into the middle of the crowd.

“Liu Zhizun, it’s not that Chu Feng is condemning you, but as the number one disciple of the Prestigious Villa, you are truly unfair in handling things. No one would handle this like you.” Fearlessly, Jiang Wushang started to point and rebuke Liu Zhizun.

In a situation like that, the surrounding people took in a breath of cool air again and they felt that Jiang Wushang’s nerves were

too big. They were even bigger than Chu Feng's! However, only Chu Feng knew that Jiang Wushang did indeed have the capabilities to be so haughty.

“Ho...Then you go ahead and say it. How should I handle this in order for it to be fair?” Liu Zhizun was not a simple character. His face did not change, and from the beginning to the end, there was always an indifferent smile as he returned a question to Jiang Wushang.

“Isn't it simple? Let them to fight together, and the one who loses just needs to apologize and admit that he was wrong.” Jiang Wushang said proudly.

“Huu~~~~”

And after he spoke, from shock, the ground was filled with everyone jaws. Originally, his looked like he was going to help Chu Feng, but now, he was truly pushing Chu Feng into a pit of fire!

Letting Chu Feng, who was in the 3rd level of the Profound realm, fight against Jie Qingming, who was in the 1st level of the Heaven realm. Wasn't that telling Chu Feng to look to die?

“Ho...You have indeed made a good suggestion, but I'm just afraid that Chu Feng won't dare to agree to the fight.” Jie Qingming lightly smiled and disdain was filled in the gaze he looked at Chu Feng with.

“You’re stupid? Are you stupid?” But who would have thought that Jiang Wushang’s face changed, and in front of the crowd, he started to insult Jie Qingming.

“You~~~~” Seeing that, Jie Qingming’s complexion shifted as he was furious, but after recalling Jiang Wushang’s status of unknown origin, he suppressed his anger.

Because, as long as one took a guess where a genius like Jiang Wushang could appear from in the continent of the Nine Provinces, it wasn’t that hard to figure it out. It would be from the Jiang Dynasty.

So, that was the reason why Jiang Wushang could do what he wished to in this place without fear and no one dared to do anything to him. Everyone feared that point. They were afraid that Jiang Wushang was a person from the Jiang Dynasty.

“What about me? Am I wrong? I’m not even done speaking yet you say that he doesn’t dare. Say, are you stupid?” Jiang Wushang fiercely shot Jie Qingming a glance, then quickly after, he said,

“Look at how old you are. A person who is ‘[running towards three](#)’ is fighting against a young man who isn’t even an adult. Not only are you not ashamed, you are even saying that he doesn’t dare in such a justly and confidently way. Are you even embarrassed?”

“Thirty” in Chinese is made up of two characters: “Three” + “Ten”. So, “three” in this example can be seen as a short form of “thirty”. What “running towards three” means is “running towards thirty”, aka a person reaching thirty years of age.

“I...” Jie Qingming’s face went blue from anger and his eyes went red. He was truly almost going to explode. How was he even a person who was “running towards three”? No matter if it was terms of appearance or true age, he was clearly just out of twenty, a handsome young man with elegant style.

“What about you? Listen up. If you are going to fight Chu Feng, it must be fair. So, how can it be fair? Having a comparison of strength on the same level of cultivation. That’s called fair.”

“Aren’t you a Blue-cloak World Spiritist? It shouldn’t be hard for you to suppress your cultivation right? As long as you press your cultivation down to the 3rd level of the Profound realm, you’ll be the same as Chu Feng.”

“At that time, when you two exchange blows, it will be in absolute fairness. So, do you dare or not?” Jiang Wushang pointed at Jie Qingming’s nose and asked.

“Hmph. Why would I not dare?” Jie Qingming coldly snorted. If he didn’t fear Jiang Wushang’s real identity, he truly wanted to kill the damn brat right now.

“Chu Feng, how about you?” Jiang Wushang pointed at Chu Feng. He was still full of arrogance as well without any increase or decrease.

“I am willing to at any time.” Chu Feng lightly smiled and couldn’t help but step forward.

Although Chu Feng did fear the current Jie Qingming, if the two of them had the same level of cultivation, Chu Feng was not afraid of Jie Qingming at all. Even if he has the Strange Armament on him, he was similarly not afraid.

“Okay, since it is like this, you two can begin.”

“Okayokayokay! Everyone, back away and give the two of them some space to extend their fists and kicks.”

“The World Spiritists over there! Lay a Spirit Formation on the ground so that this mountain peak doesn’t get destroyed from the over-fierceness of their battle.”

After confirming the resolving method, the little child Jiang Wushang then gestured and commanded the people on scene, but the thing that made people most speechless was that no one dared to not listen to his words. Even the Blue-cloak World Spiritists from the World Spirit Guild and Jie clan laid Spirit Formations according to his instructions.

When everything was in place, like a judge, Jiang Wushang pointed at Jie Qingming and said, “That’s right. For fairness, you cannot use your Blue-cloak World Spiritist methods, and if you’re not afraid of embarrassing yourself, go ahead and use your Strange Armament.”

“God damn. I really want to choke you to death.” As he faced more restrictions from Jiang Wushang, Jie Qingming truly

gnashed his teeth in anger, so much that it even made creaking sounds, but he could not do anything about it. He could only choose to endure, and even the sentence of cursing could only be said to himself in his heart.

hmm After Jiang Wushang left, Jie Qingming went along with his words and suppressed his aura. From the 1st level of the Heaven realm, he pressed it down to the 3rd level of the Profound realm.

And at that instant, Chu Feng did not conceal his aura anymore. He sent out his aura of the 3rd level of the Profound realm and confidently walked towards the middle of the empty space.

“Chu Feng really agreed to the battle! Who do you think will win?”

“Is there even a need to say it? Do you think that Jie Qingming being recognized as the number one genius in the continent of the Nine Provinces is a joke? Even without the cultivation of the 1st level of the Heaven realm, his battle power is still far above Chu Feng’s.”

“That’s right. I’ve once heard that other than Xu Zhongyu, there is no one who can defeat Jie Qingming while having the same cultivation as him. Once before, when he was in the 9th level of the Profound realm, without borrowing power from his Strange Armament, he killed a person in the 1st level of the Heaven realm.”

“He’s actually that strong? The distance between the Profound



realm and the Heaven realm is the difference between the sky and the earth! Doesn't that mean Chu Feng will be defeated?"

"Hmph. How strong can the people from the Azure Province even be? He is just looking for humiliation."

At that very instant, there were more and more people gathering on the summit of the mountain peak. No matter if it was the young geniuses who were participating in the Marriage Gathering or the native disciples from the Prestigious Villa, or the senior experts from powers everywhere, at that instant, they were looking at this special contest. In this place, people from almost every part of the continent of the Nine Provinces gathered here.

Jie Qingming was abnormally happy as he heard the incessant praise that came from all directions. So, he disdainfully said to Chu Feng, "Take out all the abilities you have. I don't need to use any martial skills, and with this single hand, I will defeat you."

And as he faced Jie Qingming's incomparably arrogant and attitude of disrespect towards himself, Chu Feng only indifferently smiled and said, "Who gave you that confidence?"

# Chapter 349: Beat You All Over The Place

---

“Of course self-confidence is given by myself. Don’t speak useless words. Go ahead and attack. To avoid being without face when I attack first and instantly finish you off, I’ll give you some chances to show yourself!”

One of Jie Qingming’s hands was put behind his back, and one was extended slightly forward in front of his chest. He had the strong appearance of an exceptional expert, and when he spoke, he spoke very loudly as he wanted everyone to know that in reality, Chu Feng was actually not worthy to exchange blows with him.

“Since you’re so kind, let me see whether your single hand can block my attacks.”

Chu Feng coldly smiled, then quickly after, he stepped forward, and like an arrow that just left its bow, he explosively shot out. When he arrived in front of Jie Qingming, he did not use any martial skills. With empty hands and fists, he started his attacks towards Jie Qingming.

whoosh whoosh

Every single one of Chu Feng’s fists stirred up the wind and he was as fast as lightning. A simple punch from a single style and single move bewitched Jie Qingming’s eyes, causing him to not know how to defend.

“How is this possible? This brat’s speed and power is actually so

powerful?”

At that instant, Jie Qingming’s complexion changed greatly. His former calmness and unanxiousness already disappeared, and replacing it was incomparable shock.

It was because the current Chu Feng was like an army of thousands of people and horses when he was in front of him. With his single hand, blocking wasn’t a way, yet attacking wasn’t a way either. So, he could only dodge back to avoid the tip of the weapon.

swish

Jie Qingming leaped and escaped backwards. But Chu Feng was like a shadow as he followed him, and attacked once again. With that, Jie Qingming tightly frowned, but he could not do anything else but to continue escaping.

Thus, in the huge space, a scene that caused people to be dumbfounded appeared. Jie Qingming, the person who spoke arrogantly and said that he could defeat Chu Feng with one hand was currently being chased around everywhere by Chu Feng, and he was in a very ragged state.

“What is this? Why isn’t Jie Qingming returning attacks?”

“You can’t even tell what’s happening? Clearly, Jie Qingming is letting Chu Feng do what he wants for a while, and later on, when Jie Qingming attacks, he will certainly be able to defeat Chu Feng

in one strike and let him know the huge difference between the two.” Some people were had plenty of confidence in Jie Qingming. They even thought that Jie Qingming was intentionally playing around with Chu Feng.

“This Chu Feng is quite strong. His attacks are air-tight, and both the speed and power are extremely powerful. The changes in his style are even clever to the extreme.”

“The battle power he is displaying can simply be compared to those in the 7th level of the Profound realm. It seems like this time, Jie Qingming has been careless and underestimated his enemy. It seems like this time, he will be tripping over himself.”

But compared to the people who blindly believed in Jie Qingming, Xu Zhongyu who understood Jie Qingming saw a door to victory. He felt that this time, if Jie Qingming was not going to return attacks at anytime, he was likely going to be defeated.

“I told you that Brother Chu Feng’s battle defies common sense. This time you believe it right?”

“Although Jie Qingming is very strong, given that he’s in the same level of cultivation as Brother Chu Feng, he will absolutely not be able to defeat him. Even if he uses the Strange Armament, the outcome would still not be set.” Seeing that Xu Zhongyu praised Chu Feng, Gu Bo’s face was filled with pride as if the one being praised was him.

“Little Bo, you don’t understand the might of Strange

Armaments. Although Chu Feng's battle power is indeed very outstanding, Jie Qingming is not an ordinary person either. If he truly uses the Strange Armament, I'm guessing that Chu Feng will certainly have difficulty holding it back." Xu Zhongyu shook his head. He who also had a Strange Armament deeply knew how terrifying the might of Strange Armaments were.

"Big Brother Zhongyu, Chu Feng also has a trump card. On that day, in the Asura Ghost Tower, Jie Bufan also wore Jie Qingming's Armor of Thorns, but at the end, he was also beaten like a dog by Chu Feng. If I didn't go up to dissuade him, I'm afraid that on that day, Chu Feng would have killed Jie Bufan and the Strange Armament wouldn't have saved him." Gu Bo went close to Xu Zhongyu's ears and explained in a low voice.

"There was actually something like that?" After hearing those words, Xu Zhongyu was a bit shocked, then after that, some expectation was added within the gaze he looked at Chu Feng with as he calmly said,

"After hearing you say it like that, I do want to see what methods Chu Feng uses to break past the might of the Strange Armament."

"But Jie Qingming oh Jie Qingming, will you go back on your word and use the Strange Armament?"

"Jie Qingming, you're born in the year of the monkey right? You're running quite fast! Go faster, go faster! Or else, I will catch up to you!" Chu Feng was chasing Jie Qingming all over the place, and occasionally, he even laughed in ridicule.

“It is only because you are able to use your entire body’s power. If I used my full power, it wouldn’t even be your turn to act so wildly here.” Jie Qingming’s face turned red from anger, and he deeply regretted talking big before.

“Oh oh oh? Then use the power of your entire body! Was it me who forbid you from using it? I wonder which bastard said he only needed a single hand to defeat me?”

“What’s wrong? Go ahead, attack, and defeat me right now! What’s that hand doing? So that hand is just for show? If your legs get tired from running, go ahead and use your hand to run around! At least some of its value can be seen, right?”

“Chu Feng, don’t think of taking advantage of your sharp tongue. I admit, I was indeed careless and underestimated your strength, but as a person, it is best not to be too excessive. It is good to leave yourself a road of retreat, or else, beware that you won’t even know how you die in the future.”

Jie Qingming spoke those words very quietly and only Chu Feng could hear them, because when he said those words, even he himself felt embarrassing and it was like he was slapping his own face.

But Chu Feng did not care about those things. He yelled the words very loudly, almost wanting even the people under the mountain peak to hear, “Jie Qingming, what did you say? You said that you regret speaking big words?”

“But no matter. I, Lord Chu Feng, am a big-hearted person. Right now, I’ll give you a chance. I’ll allow you to use your two hands and two feet to fight against me. How about it? It’s fine, it’s really fine. To the words you just said, at most, I’ll just take it as listening to fart. Although it’s pretty smelly.”

“Chu Feng, you are looking to die!”

Jie Qingming was truly furious because of Chu Feng. Ignoring reason, he spun around, and his hands and feet moved together. He ran with profound running techniques, his fists became a storm of meteors, and he started to counterattack Chu Feng.

“Look, Jie Qingming attacked! That isn’t right. Didn’t he say he would only use one hand? Right now, he is clearly attacking with his full strength!”

“What is this situation? Could it be that what Chu Feng said was true? Jie Qingming will not be able to defeat Chu Feng with one hand, so he’s forced by him to use his full power?”

Many people felt astonished by Jie Qingming’s attack because it was completely different from their expectations! What they expected was that with a single hand, Jie Qingming could beat Chu Feng down to the ground, but right now, the difference was a bit too big wasn’t it?

“What do you even know? Don’t forget, Jie Qingming is in the 1st level of the Heaven realm. Right now, his cultivation is pressed

down to the 3rd level of the Profound realm. He's already going easy on Chu Feng. So what if he uses both of his hands and feet? He just doesn't want Chu Feng to be defeated too badly."

Jie Qingming made quite a few friends, so in a situation like that, there were quite a few people who spoke up for him. But no matter what the people on the side said, the true battle situation was not looking well.

Because even when Jie Qingming used his full power and fought against Chu Feng, people still astonishedly discovered that not only did Jie Qingming not gain the advantage, he was even in a disadvantage.

The grand Jie Qingming, the future chief of the Jie clan, the person said to be the number one genius in the young generation, was actually, in terms of fighting with fists and kicks, being suppressed by the unfamous brat Chu Feng who came from the Azure Province.



# Chapter 350: Returning Damage

---

bang bang bang

Chu Feng and Jie Qingming fought against each other with fists and kicks. Every time they collided, the sound of steel clashing was made. Every time the ripples swept away, it would cause the ground under their feet to shake and the air around them to twist.

The punching speed of the two people was very fast with innumerable changes in styles. Many people in the Profound realm were even unable to clearly see the change in style of the two as well as their attacking speed. Only those in the peak of the Profound realm could clearly see them.

And not a single person who saw them clearly didn't sigh in admiration because both of their methods really did break common sense. Their use of Profound power were as pure as fire, and their comprehension in attacking and defending also far surpassed normal people.

In a situation like that, it was still fine when all that appeared from Jie Qingming. After all, he was a publicly recognized genius.

But when Chu Feng was also able to do that, and even better than Jie Qingming, it caused people to be endlessly shocked because that mostly meant that in terms of martial cultivation attainment, Chu Feng was above Jie Qingming.

“How is this happening? I clearly operated the high-level

Mysterious Technique, yet I cannot occupy any advantages. Is it possible that he also cultivated a high-level Mysterious Technique? Such a precious and rare technique such as a high-level Mysterious Technique... How is it possible for a place like the Azure Province to have that kind of thing?”

Jie Qingming originally thought that with him using his full power to attack, even if he could not defeat Chu Feng, he should still be able to suppress him. After all, he had extremely abundant battle experience and the level of Profound power use already reached the apex. However, he never would have thought that even though he used his full power to attack, he was still being suppressed by Chu Feng.

In reality, Jie Qingming was indeed very strong. Within all the opponents that Chu Feng had met, other than the purple-clothed young female, he would be the person with the strongest battle power.

But sadly, his opponent was Chu Feng. Chu Feng who had two types of lightning merged with his blood, in terms of brutal strength of his physical body and reaction, he was indeed above Jie Qingming.

“Jie Qingming, right now, I can’t see any strength coming from you even after using your hands and feet. Say, after a few more years, when I, Chu Feng, catch up to your cultivation, what will you use to fight against me?”

Chu Feng coldly mocked and ridiculed and his extremely serious cold glare flashed. What Chu Feng’s nature was, was either you

don't offend a person, but if you did, then offend him to the end because enemies should not exist together.

“Hmph. Want to catch up to me? We'll still need to see whether you have that chance or not.”

Jie Qingming coldly snorted, then his footsteps suddenly began to change. It was actually even quicker than before, and with every step, it laid the foundations for the next step. It was extremely profound.

Simultaneously, Jie Qingming's fists also became harder and harder. Every single punch was as hard as a huge peak, and while in that state, he counter-attacked Chu Feng and forced Chu Feng to continuously back away.

“Dammit. Did this guy conceal his strength?”

Chu Feng lightly frowned. He discovered that Jie Qingming fists became harder and his speed also quickened. He already surpassed him, and if that went on, by only fighting with fists and kicks, Chu Feng was clearly going to be defeated.

“Haha, Jie Qingming finally used his full strength huh? No wonder. I knew that it wasn't possible for Jie Qingming to be unable to defeat Chu Feng. Indeed, once he gets serious, Chu Feng can't go on.”

And seeing that Jie Qingming gained the advantage and

suppressed Chu Feng back, the people who leaned towards Jie Qingming were instantly incomparably joyful and every single one of them gave out a certain type of atmosphere.

“Quite despicable. Jie Qingming is actually hiddenly using martial skills.” Xu Zhongyu lightly furrowed his brows as he already recognized Jie Qingming’s methods. Quickly after, with a clever thought, he loudly yelled, “Jie Qingming, Chu Feng is still fighting against you with fists and kicks, yet you use Cloud Walking Steps and Huge Peak Fists. Isn’t that a bit too dishonest?”

“You’re able to trick others, but you cannot trick me, Xu Zhongyu. Your Cloud Walking Steps and Huge Peak Fists come from the inside. On the surface, it doesn’t seem like a martial skill, but the unique style sold you out.”

Seeing that, the people from the World Spirit Guild quickly added. One after the other, they yelled their throats out and loudly said, “So it’s like that. I wondered why Jie Qingming suddenly became so strong. So he hiddenly used martial skills.”

“The transformation in style is indeed the Jie clan’s Cloud Walking Steps and Huge Peak Fists. You can conceal it from others, but you cannot conceal it from my World Spirit Guild.”

“So he used martial skills. I wondered why you suddenly became strong.” At that instant, Chu Feng also came to a realization and he hurriedly changed his attacking style. He operated the Imperial sky Technique underneath his feet to cause gusts of wind to lift him up, and he opened his fists into palms to start to use the Illusionary Palms.

whoosh whoosh Chu Feng had already comprehended the Illusionary Palms to the highest realm. Currently, when he used it again, how did they even seem like palms? They were simply a wall overlaid by palms. As they came straight towards him, one could not distinguish the real ones and the fake ones.

bang Suddenly, a single palm from Chu Feng landed and collided into Jie Qingming's chest. However, as it collided into Jie Qingming's chest, a numbing feeling immediately came from Chu Feng's palm and arm. A burst of strong recoil threw him back several meters and he also fell onto the ground.

Raising his hand to look at his palm, Chu Feng astonishedly discovered that his palm already went purple and large amounts of hematoceles appeared. His own palm had actually caused injury to himself. If his physical body wasn't overwhelmingly strong, perhaps his hand would have already been ruined.

“What happened? Clearly, Chu Feng struck Jie Qingming, yet why was he thrown back?” Such a change also caught the attention of the observers and every single one of them were similarly endlessly shocked.

“Dammit. It's the Armor of Thorns on Jie Qingming's body. It has the effect of returning damage back, and without even him doing anything, he will still receive the defense effect of returning damage. Right now, Chu Feng is exchanging blows with Jie Qingming head-on. It's even better to not hit Jie Qingming! If he hits him, the one who gets injured is only himself.” Xu Zhongyu worriedly said.

“Chu Feng, don’t physically attack him! The Armor of Thorns on his body is extremely strong, and even without him doing anything, it will still automatically defend and cause injury back to the attacker!” Seeing that, Gu Bo hurriedly yelled loudly.

“So it’s like that. But that’s fine. It just happens to be right for me to try that one.”

Chu Feng lightly smiled after knowing the reason. Not only did he not retreat, his footsteps even changed and he darted towards Jie Qingming again. But this time, there was a layer of faint-green gas that covered Chu Feng’s entire body.

The faint-green gas covered Chu Feng’s clothing.. Without looking closely, one could not even see it. But if one looked closely, they would discover that the faint-green gas had special patterns and it had a feeling of indestructibility. It was the Secret Skill, the Black Tortoise Armor Technique.

“Hmph. You overestimate your own abilities.” Seeing that Chu Feng was actually attacking again, Jie Qingming just didn’t dodge or avoid it. He just bluntly allowed Chu Feng to hit himself, because he who had the Strange Armament as protection did not feel that he would be harmed by Chu Feng, and instead, Chu Feng would only be harmed by him.

whoosh And just at that moment, Chu Feng arrived in front of Jie Qingming. He revolved the Profound power in his body, and put strength in his waist and legs. Then, he threw a fist, head-on,

towards Jie Qingming.

hmm Indeed, just before Chu Feng punch was going to strike Jie Qingming's face, a faint layer of red-coloured gas appeared from his body. If one looked carefully, they would discover that thorns were all over the gas and they contained the power to return damage.

But even so, Chu Feng did not do any movements to stop. Instead, he couldn't help increasing more of his power, and quickly after, with a bang, Chu Feng's fist crashed into the red-coloured gas.

And after the boom, this time, Chu Feng didn't fly back. Rather, Jie Qingming floated up and was thrown back by Chu Feng's punch.

# Chapter 351: It's Time To End This

---

whoosh

Jie Qingming was caught off guard and he was thrown by Chu Feng's punch, and only after flying for dozens of meters did he react to it. He hurriedly turned his body and landed on the ground with his feet, but even so, he was still unable to dissolve the might of Chu Feng's one first. After sliding for a full dozen meters or so, he finally stabilized his body.

“How is this possible? He can actually strike me without being injured?” Jie Qingming's pupils could not stop trembling and astonishment was filled within his eyes.

It was the first time that he flew from the power of a person's physical strike while wearing the Armor of Thorns. A situation like that had never happened even when he was battling a Heaven realm expert back then with the cultivation of the Profound realm.

Also, when Chu Feng's fist met his Armor of Thorns head-on and was actually not damaged in the slightest, that truly surpassed his expectations.

“Very impressive. The layer of inconspicuous gas armor covering Chu Feng's body is completely different from the Armor of Thorns on Jie Qingming's body. Although it doesn't have the effect of returning damage, it still emanates a feeling that it is indestructible, as if nothing can break through that layer of armor.”



“What actually is it? Is it the method that Chu Feng used to almost break open the Armor of Thorns last time? Is it possible that Chu Feng also has a Strange Armament on him?” As a Blue-cloak World Spiritist, Xu Zhongyu used his Spirit power to observe Chu Feng’s change. After discovering the Black Tortoise Armor Technique that covered Chu Feng, shock filled his eyes.

“No. It’s different from the method Chu Feng used last time. Last time, what Chu Feng displayed was a martial skill. A very dominating martial skill, and the might it had was as though it could break through everything without anything that could block it.”

“But this time, it’s exactly the opposite. What he is using right now is another method, but it is similarly strong..”

“He has absolute defense covering his entire body, then with the help of that defense, he attacks Jie Qingming. I must say that I haven’t seen the methods that Chu Feng is using on anyone else.”

Gu Bo’s face was also filled with shock and he was unable to see through Chu Feng more and more. He felt that the methods Chu Feng grasped was truly too many, and too strong. He was far inferior to them.

“No. It is not a martial skill, nor is it a Strange Armament.” Just at that time, an aged voice suddenly entered Xu Zhongyu and Gu Bo’s ears.

Turning their heads back to look, the two of them discovered that an old man wearing a World Spirit Blue-cloak was currently standing behind them, and that person was one of the manager elders of the World Spirit Guild.

“Elder Gongsun, you said that what Chu Feng is using right now isn’t a martial skill, nor is it a Strange Armament. Then what actually is it?” Xu Zhongyu and Gu Bo went closely over and asked in a low voice. They were very afraid that others would hear their conversation.

“It’s a Secret Skill.”

“Secret Skill?!”

“That’s right. Secret Skills are extremely powerful and extremely special methods. In terms of might, they are even above rank 9 martial skills. They can be said to be unique skills that are truly unique in the world.”

“Such things had only appeared in the Azure Province in my continent of the Nine Provinces. A thousand years ago, the Azure Dragon Founder who swept across the continent had grasped an extremely extraordinary Secret Skill.”

“And exactly because of that, the seniors of my World Spirit Guild had once even snuck into the Azure Province to want to find the origin of the Secret Skill, but at the end, they returned with no achievements.”

“Finally, they came up with a conclusion.”

“What conclusion?”

“As the same as the legends, Secret Skills cannot be cultivated. They can only be passed down. But people did not choose the Secret Skill. Rather, the Secret Skill chose the person.”

“So, that’s why this Chu Feng can be said to be very impressive, because he has actually gained the approval of the Secret Skill! This child must be well protected by my World Spirit Guild and carefully roped in with us. It is best for him to be tied with my World Spirit Guild.”

“Because, since ancient times, not a single person who gained the approval of a Secret Skill wasn’t an expert that could sweep throughout the continent. For example, that Azure Dragon Founder. Back then, he was an existence that even caused headaches for the Jiang Dynasty yet nothing could be done to him.” Elder Gongsun calmly smiled and said.

“It’s actually that powerful?” And after hearing Elder Gongsun’s words, no matter if it was Xu Zhongyu or Gu Bo, within the gazes that they looked at Chu Feng with again, they already became brighter because they finally knew how huge Chu Feng’s potential was.

“Explosive Wind Fist!”

“Tornado Kick!”

bang bang bang...

As Xu Zhongyu and the others were chatting, Chu Feng and Jie Qingming had already arrived in another area as they fought. The current Jie Qingming no longer covered anything, and he started to use all sorts of methods to attack Chu Feng.

However, no matter if he used rank 1 martial skills, rank 2 martial skills, rank 3 martial skills, rank 4 martial skills, rank 5 martial skills, or even rank 6 martial skills, they were useless against Chu Feng, and they had no way of breaking through Chu Feng’s Black Tortoise Armor Technique.

Chu Feng was even more straightforward. Without even using any martial skills and only with the invincible body that the Black Tortoise Armor Technique brought him as well as his physical power, he kept on throwing attacks at Jie Qingming.

“Heavens! That Chu Feng’s strength has reached this stage?! With only the power from his physical body, he blocked such terrifying attacks from Jie Qingming! Is this boy even a person?”

“Outstanding. Truly outstanding. In my life, this is the first time that I’ve seen such an outstanding person in the young generation. But why has such a powerful person appeared from the Azure Province? Can such a desolate location like the Azure Province be able to develop a genius like him?”

“Previously, Zhang Tianyi who appeared from the Azure Province was already overpowering enough. I never would have thought that this Chu Feng would be even more overpowering. Could it be that the Azure Province is truly going to rise greatly in power? Will geniuses that shake the entire continent appear again in the land that has been deep slumber?”

If it was said that before, people were quite one-sided about the fight between Chu Feng and Jie Qingming, felt that Jie Qingming was undoubtedly going to win, and even felt that it made sense for Jie Qingming to be victorious, then right now, a large portion of the observers were deeply convinced by Chu Feng’s strength that he displayed. Many people already recognized Chu Feng’s strength and felt that he was very possibly a person who was going to shake the entire continent in the future, or even a person who was going to cause the Azure Province to rise greatly in power. As long as he continued developing, he was not to be underestimated in the future.

“Why is this happening? Is this guy even a person? He can actually block my rank 6 martial skills!”

After a barrage of powerful attacks, Jie Qingming’s face was already pale-white and big droplets of sweat fell. It was the first time in his life that he met such a difficult opponent.

It was truly almost forced to a dead end by Chu Feng. In a situation where even his strongest martial skill was useless, he truly did not know how he should fight against Chu Feng. Did he really need to use the might of his Strange Armament? But if even the Strange Armament could not work against Chu Feng, wouldn’t

he be completely defeated and built up Chu Feng's name?

whoosh Just at that time, Jie Qingming only felt that his vision flashed, and like a ghost, Chu Feng appeared in front of him. With a smile that rose from the corners of his mouth, Chu Feng coldly said, "It's time to end this."

And just as he finished speaking, Chu Feng already attacked abruptly. The fist that was covered by the Black Tortoise Armor Technique, with sounds of it piercing through the air, headed towards Jie Qingming's chest.

"Crap."

After hearing those words, Jie Qingming's complexion changed and his heart trembled. He felt that chills went down his spine and cold sweat permeated throughout his body. He actually felt deterrence that he never felt before from Chu Feng's body, as if the young man who was a lot younger than him could truly defeat him with that one punch.

# Marriage Gathering

## Chapter 352: Beauties Arrive

---

bang When the punch struck, a berserk ripple instantly swept out. As he was within the ripple, Jie Qingming also flew out, but this time, he did not stably land. Instead, he ferociously fell onto the ground.

boom Strong force caused the blue-coloured Spirit Formation which covered the ground to wiggle, as if it was unable to hold the power back, and from Jie Qingming's own body, he even felt a wave of heart-tearing and lung-splitting pain. Quickly after, warm liquid flowed in his mouth. It was blood. Jie Qingming had actually coughed up blood by Chu Feng's punch.

“Dammit.” But naturally, Jie Qingming could not vomit out that blood. So, he tightly clenched his teeth and forcibly swallowed it back. At the same time, fury from his heart rose.

When he was forced by Chu Feng to that state, an incomparably intense thought emerged into his heart. It was to display his true cultivation, and with the cultivation of the 1st level of the Heaven realm, crush Chu Feng to death with one palm.

However, there was a rational voice in his head telling that he could not do that because there was too many experts on scene. Even if he truly used his real cultivation, he still might not be able to kill Chu Feng.

If he could not kill Chu Feng even then, he would thoroughly lose face. After all, in the beginning, he already promised Jiang



Wushang. If he went back on his word, he would naturally be degraded into a laughing stock.

whoosh

As Jie Qingming was hesitating, Chu Feng rushed to the front of him again and simultaneously, Chu Feng's fists that were covered by the Black Tortoise Armor Technique, like a violent storm, were thrown towards Jie Qingming once again.

swish

But before Chu Feng's densely packed fists reached Jie Qingming's body, a figure suddenly appeared in the middle of the two. Also, a powerful big hand tightly grabbed onto Chu Feng's wrist.

“This aura.”

At that instant, Chu Feng felt a burst of extremely berserk aura drilling into his body from his wrist, but he could not fight against that powerful aura. It was Heaven power. The Heaven power was extremely strong and it instantly occupied his body. It caused him to be unable to move even an inch as he stood there blankly.

But after stopping Chu Feng's attacks, that person quickly released his hand, causing Chu Feng to recover his strength.

After he raised his eyes to look, Chu Feng astonishedly discovered

that the person standing in front of him as a middle-aged man.

The man had sword-like brows, eagle-like eyes, and on his face that was as sharp as a blade, there were some extremely manly features.

The most important thing was that he wore unique clothing belonging to the Prestigious Villa, yet was different from normal people's. As for his cultivation, it was even more outstanding. It could only be described with two words, "unfathomably deep".

"Lord Villa Head?!"

At the same time the middle-aged man appeared, all of the surrounding faces of the people from the Prestigious Villa changed, and from their words, Chu Feng also found out the identity of the man. The head of the Prestigious Villa, one of the strongest people in the current continent of the Nine Provinces

"My friends, stop when appropriate when comparing strength. Today, give me some face and call this fight an end. How about it?" The head of the Prestigious Villa said to the two people with a smile on his face.

As they faced the head of the Prestigious Villa's request, no matter how much more arrogant Jie Qingming was, he still had to give him some face. Besides, stopping the fight was, in reality, helping Jie Qingming out of a predicament as he didn't want him to lose too badly, so of course, he nodded his head and agreed.

As for Chu Feng, he already forced Jie Qingming to a very difficult state and everyone there already saw that scene. His goal was already reached, so naturally, he did not chase after the matter

“It’s almost time, and this Marriage Gathering should start as well. My friends that came from afar, please enter.”

After resolving the dispute between Chu Feng and Jie Qingming, the head of the Prestigious Villa lightly smiled towards the crowd and waved. Then, the crowd of people that were so close to one another that even water could not pass scattered with a cheer and they all walked towards the summit of the mountain peak.

“Lord School Head.” But just at that time, an elder from the Prestigious Villa walked over and said in a low voice, “Zhang Tianyi has not appeared today. It seems like he isn’t planning to come.”

“Oh?” After hearing those words, the head of the Prestigious Villa was first taken slightly aback, but there wasn’t too much change in terms of expression. He then smiled at Chu Feng and said, “Chu Feng, why not come with us onto the stage to rest?”

After those words were spoken, the faces of almost everyone on scene changed greatly. Especially Liu Zhizun. The gaze he looked at Chu Feng with was filled with envy, and it was also a bit unkind.

It was because everyone knew what that stage represented. In this Marriage Gathering, there was an extremely luxurious viewing stage. On the stage, there were some special chairs, and at that

place, one could appreciate everything even closer.

However, the chairs could only be sat on by people with special statuses. It could be said that the people who could sit on those chairs were the most important esteemed guests of this Marriage Gathering.

As for the people of the young generation, there were only ten seats. They were for the eight geniuses who received the Prestigious Invitation Letters, as well as Gu Bo and Jiang Wushang who got first place in the Limitless Underground Palace.

And at that instant, the reason why the head of the Prestigious Villa invited Chu Feng was because Zhang Tianyi did not appear, and there was one extra seat. But even so, that seat could not be sat by normal people. After all, even Liu Zhizun did not have that qualification so Chu Feng still modestly said, “That wouldn’t be too good right? After all...”

“Ahh, originally, the seats on the stage are left for the most important guests. Chu Feng, everyone has seen your strength, so you certainly are worthy to sit on that seat.”

“So, Chu Feng, don’t push this away and come along with us onto the stage.” With a light smile, the head of the Prestigious Villa had plenty of sincerity.

“Yeah, Brother Chu Feng, don’t decline. Let’s go!”

At the same time, some people around him also started to urge him as well. No matter what Chu Feng's current cultivation was, the strength he displayed earlier and huge potential was already recognized by them. Pretty much everyone felt that Chu Feng had the qualifications to go onto the viewing stage.

“Since it is like this, I'll humbly accept it.” Seeing that, Chu Feng did not evade from it anymore. So, under the expressions of envy by Liu Zhizun, he followed the head of the Prestigious Villa as well as Gu Bo, Jiang Wushang, Xu Zhongyu, and the others, and stepped onto the luxurious viewing stage.

From then on, all the other people took their seats. The head of the Prestigious Villa first said some greetings, then quickly after, he announced the arrival of the main characters of this Marriage Gathering, the hundred beauties.

aoo~~~

Immediately after he finished speaking, ear-piercing cries rang out from the sky. Raising their heads to look, only then did they discover that under the night sky with the star light lingering, huge colourful cranes flew over.

The colourful cranes were also a type of mount. Their speed was quite close to White-headed Eagles, but because there were extremely few of them, their prices were far above White-headed Eagles, even several times more expensive.

And at that instant, there were a hundred of those cranes circling

around in the sky. Those hundred cranes were extremely beautiful as they were full of colour. Especially when the near hundred gathered together and spiraled around under the bright starlight, they were extremely exquisite.

At that instant, everyone was raising their heads to look. They tightly stared, with their eyes, at the sky because everyone knew that the Prestigious Villa's carefully prepared hundred beauties were arriving.

# Chapter 353: Distant From The Beauty Of Females

---

swish swish swish

Suddenly, air-piercing sounds came from the sky and from the colourful cranes, ten females with skirts descended down.

The bodies of the females were all covered with faint brilliance. Their appearances could not be clearly seen, and even their colour of their skirts could not be clearly seen. However, one could vaguely see that all of them were holding a beautiful flower umbrella.

bang bang bang

And just as the ten females fell in mid-air, the flower umbrellas in their hands were opened at the same time.

Immediately after they opened, flower petals that filled the sky fell and their speed of descent instantly decreased. Also, following their descent, the faint brilliance that covered their bodies became dimmer and dimmer, and at the end, completely disappeared.

“Waa~~~”

After the brilliance dissipated, the males who were there widened their mouths almost at the same time and their breathing

quickenened because in their eyes, ten extremely beautiful females appeared.

The ten females had tall and slender figures, demon-like bodies, fox-like faces, and they were extremely alluring.

Especially the pairs of snow-white beautiful legs under their skirts. When people saw them, they gulped. Despite the fact that the males on scene were all people who had seen countless pretty women, at that instant, a large portion of them were deeply attracted by the ten beauties.

“So impressive. They are all in the 7th level of the Profound realm!”

But there were always exceptions for all things. Chu Feng who was closest to the beauties were not attracted by their appearance, but he was surprised from their cultivations.

Although the females were only around twenty years old, their cultivations were already all in the 7th level of the Profound realm. That martial cultivation talent was already truly not low.

And under countless fiery gazes, the ten beauties from the Prestigious Villa finally landed on the viewing stage and started to bewitch the people on scene with their alluring figures and enchanting faces. Especially to the young geniuses who participated in the Marriage Gathering.



bang bang bang

Quickly following that, fifty more beauties, while being accompanied by the rain of flowers that filled the sky, descended from the air.

Similarly, they came down while holding flower umbrellas, and similarly, they were rare beauties and they also had the cultivation of the 7th level of the Profound realm.

“Waa, so outstanding! Where did the Prestigious Villa get their hands on so many genius-type beauties?”

The fifty young females were all in the 7th level of the Profound realm. But that was acceptable, after all, a huge power such as the Prestigious Villa had never been lacking in geniuses, no matter in terms of males or females.

But the fifty geniuses were also all extreme beauties. That caused people to be many times more shocked. However, that shock was instantly multiplied by many times after the forty beauties appeared soon after.

The forty beauties gradually descended. When their faces appeared in front of the crowd's line of sight, the already incomparably shocked crowd couldn't help but widen their mouths because the forty beauties actually all had the cultivation of the 8th level of the Profound realm. Also, in terms of prettiness, they were equal to the fifty beauties before.

whoosh whoosh whoosh

And just as everyone was deeply amazed by the strength of the forty beauties, from the colourful cranes, nine more attractive figures floated down.

This time, the people on scene were truly dumbfounded because the nine beauties all had the cultivation of the 9th level of the Profound realm. They were in the true peak of the Profound realm. Also, their appearances were also truly extremely beautiful. Compared to the ninety beauties from before, they were a lot more breathtaking.

Even the faces of the young apical geniuses on the stage changed. Especially Tang Yixiu, Song Qingfeng, Bai Yunfei, and Liu Xiaoyao. Clearly, they were captivated by the appearances of the nine beauties.

“I never would have thought in the continent of the Nine Provinces, the Qin Province is the place with an abundance of beauties. I have not seen beauties like these in my Tang Province before.” The eyes of Tang Yixiu were already filled with covet. He who had seen innumerable beauties was, at that instant, also attracted by the nine beauties.

“Brother Yixiu, the leftmost one is appropriate for you. She’s white enough. As for me...I like the one in the middle who has two ponytails. She’s pure enough. I like.” Song Qingfeng smiling eyes were darting around the nine beauties and similarly, he was not lightly captivated.

“Pure? How do you know she’s pure?” Bai Yunfei curled his mouth. Their relationship was always very good and there was nothing that they didn’t talk about. They had also done no small number of bad things.

“Haha, Yunfei, is there even need to ask? I’ve heard that the Prestigious Villa had been preparing many years for this Marriage Gathering. The beauties on the viewing stage today were all carefully developed and such beauties have not been tainted by males. They are absolutely pure enough, and they are all ‘young chicks that haven’t flown yet’.” Liu Xiaoyao triumphantly revealed.

“That means that the Prestigious Villa is rather sincere. It seems like this time, this trip has truly been worthwhile.” After hearing Liu Xiaoyao words, the eyes of the three others whose hearts were already moved instantly blasted with radiance. Like a hungry lewd wolf starting to search for the sheep they liked.

In reality, not only the four of them. Even Murong Yu who had a Strange Armament was moved. His eyes already sank into the group of beauties and could not be pulled back out.

After the ninety-nine beauties arrived, they started to introduce themselves one after the other. Age, name, everything.

And at that instant, while the males were carefully listening, they were also detailedly observing the ninety-nine beauties as they searched for the type they liked. Currently, the only ones who

could remain calm were only Chu Feng, Gu Bo, Jie Qingming, and Xu Zhongyu.

Because Gu Bo was too young and his strength was insufficient, he didn't have any expectations in winning the hearts of any of the hundred beauties.

As for the two absolute geniuses, Jie Qingming and Xu Zhongyu, because their desire for strength was too strong, they gave off a bit of "untainted by the mortal world" feeling. No matter how much more beautiful the beauties were or how much more excellent they were, in their hearts, they were still thinking how to gain some benefits in the Thousand Monster Mountain.

As for Chu Feng, although he was very young and it was the first time that he truly stepped onto the stage of the continent of the Nine Provinces, there was not a single beauty there that could attract Chu Feng. It wasn't that he was distant from the beauty of females, but not a single one of them could move his heart.

"Chu Feng, why aren't you taking a good look? I heard that after entering the Thousand Monster Mountain, people can get in touch closely with the hundreds beauties, and with your strength, I'm sure that you can get some of their favours."

"Right now, first choose a type you like, then in the future, after entering the Thousand Monster Mountain, you can somewhat go ahead!" Seeing that Chu Feng's mind was wandering and his eyes weren't even looking straight on the figures of the beauties, Gu Bo couldn't help reminding with a kind heart.

“Brother Gu Bo, we are still young, and for an event like this, we only need to go along with a bit of the liveliness. Right now, martial cultivation should be the number one priority.” Chu Feng lightly smiled with an appearance of “distant from the beauty of females” and “separated from worldly matters”.

“Mm. Brother Chu Feng, you’re correct. In our age, we should indeed focus on martial cultivation and make it our number one priority. It wouldn’t be late to consider the things between a male and a female in the future.” After hearing Chu Feng’s words, Gu Bo also felt that it was quite reasonable and he couldn’t help but nod his head.

But if he knew that Chu Feng who spoke those words, was in reality, no longer a “young chick”, doubtlessly, he would cough up blood from anger.

## Chapter 354: Zi Ling

---

After the beauties on the stage finished their self-introductions, the head of the Prestigious Villa stood up and loudly said, “Everyone, peak geniuses of the continent of the Nine Provinces, are you pleased with the hundred beauties that my Prestigious Villa carefully chose?”

“We are!!” Clear voices interweaved together, and like thunder, it resonated throughout this land, stating everyone’s current excited emotions.

As he faced the young geniuses’ reactions, the head of the Prestigious Villa nodded his head in satisfaction and then said, “I’m sure that everyone will be more pleased with the following person.”

As he spoke, the head of the Prestigious Villa pointed towards the sky over the main city, and following his finger to look over to that direction, people astonishedly discovered that in the night sky, a beautiful sedan chair was floating over in the air.

The sedan chair’s materials were extremely special. They were as bright as crystal. Especially in the night sky, they flickered and shone, causing it to be abnormally gorgeous.

“Almost forgot that there is still one more beauty who hasn’t arrived yet. It seems like she’s the grand finale.”

At that instant, almost everyone couldn’t help standing up. Even

the esteemed guests on the viewing stage were no exception because when that sedan chair came closer, people discovered that the ones carrying the crystal sedan chair were four manager elders from the Prestigious Villa. Those four manager elders were all Heaven realm experts.

Who exactly was the person sitting in the sedan chair, to be able to make the four manager elders in the Heaven realm lower themselves to carry it? Before the person in the sedan chair even appeared, it already caused everyone who were there to guess.

Just at that time, as it was controlled by the four manager elders, the sedan chair arrived above the viewing stage. It was currently slowly descending, and the ninety-nine beauties standing in the middle of the viewing stage also quickly made way and the most sparkling place on the viewing stage was reserved out.

Finally, the sedan chair landed on the ground. The four manager elders stood on both sides, and two people who were close to the sedan chair's exit pulled the curtains simultaneously.

At that instant, many people on scene couldn't help but hold their breaths and without shifting their gazes, they stared at the exit of the sedan chair. They wanted to see what kind of person was able to be the finale of the Marriage Gathering, who was also able to have the manager elders in the Heaven realm carry the chair for her.

And under the gazes of countless people, the figure of a young female finally appeared within people's line of sight. After that young female appeared, no matter if it were the males or females,

all of them were taken aback and they couldn't help but be attracted by the appearance of the young female.

Indeed, it was a young female, and it was even an extremely young one. However, her appearance was incomparable to any of the other females there.

It was said that fresh flowers needed green leaves to accompany them, so beautiful women also needed ugly women as embellishment. However, that young female's pretty appearance needed none of that. Even if she stood within ten thousand flowers and was compared to beauties, she would still be the existence that was the most attracting, a true beauty that could devastate cities and countries and bewitch the living.

The snow-white and sparkling skin, the standard and beautiful face, and the eyes as clear as water. Of course, in the instant people saw her, their hearts couldn't help but beat quicker as they were moved.

“Heavens! How is there such a beautiful female in the world?”

After the young female appeared, all the beauties on the stage were instantly outshined. Everyone's gazes were focused on her body, and some people even drooled from the young female's beautiful appearance.

“I truly never would have thought that there would be such an exceptional lady in the world.” At that instant, even the eyes of Xu Zhongyu, who was not charmed by the beauty of females, lit up as



he was deeply attracted by the young female's appearance.

As for Jie Qingming, he was the same. He who was usually conceited, after seeing the complexion of the young female, couldn't help but secretly gulp.

Even the young genius who came from the Jiang Dynasty, who didn't even look straight at the beauties on scene and was always sleepy, Jiang Wushang, couldn't help but widen his mouth at that moment.

“It's her?”

But compared to others, Chu Feng's current expression changed slightly despite the fact that he was rather calm before. His eyes were filled with shock and there were huge waves in his heart in the present that were incessantly surging.

Because, at that very instant, the young female who appeared nearby was the same purple-clothed young female who he met in the White Tiger Villa that day, who fought over the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique. The one with the Divine Body.

However, with the time of a short one year, the young female no longer had the original cultivation of the 1st level of the Profound realm, but the 9th level of the Profound realm. She was truly in the 9th level of the Profound realm. With the time of one year, she actually stepped into the 9th level of the Profound realm from the 1st level of the Profound realm.

“Impressive. Looking at her appearance, she should only be fifteen years right? Entering the 9th level of the Profound realm at the age of fifteen...Isn't she equal to that Jiang Wushang?”

After being deeply attracted by the young female's beautiful appearance, people also started to be astounded by the young female's powerful strength. Having this cultivation at such an age meant that her future achievements were simply unimaginable.

“I never would have expected this girl to be from the Prestigious Villa, and looking at her appearance, it seems like her status and position isn't low.”

“This won't do. She certainly still has a heart of hatred because of what happened that year. I cannot let her see me!” Feeling that the situation was heading towards a bad direction, Chu Feng wanted to smear some oil on the bottom of his foot to secretly run for it.

“Brother Chu Feng, where are you going? It wouldn't be possible for even this little beauty to be unable to attract your interest right?” But before letting Chu Feng turn around, Gu Bo grabbed onto Chu Feng's arm.

“Ehh...I...Crap!” Chu Feng originally wanted to explain something, but when he turned his head back around, he discovered that some of the people on the stage already noticed their movement and cast their gazes towards himself. The most important part was that even the purple-clothed young female saw Chu Feng.

After seeing him, the young female's expression also slightly changed and her beautiful pupils abruptly shrunk.

Chu Feng discovered within her eyes, there was a streak of icy cold bloodlust. However, that bloodlust only flashed and disappeared, so most likely other than him, no other person discovered it.

But after looking at Chu Feng, the purple-clothed young female did not say anything. Instead, she pretended as if she didn't know who Chu Feng was and turned her sweet little face away.

Seeing that, Chu Feng's heart which reached his throat finally went back down. So, he tidied up his clothes, chuckled, and said to the people on the stage, "Slightly tired from sitting so I moved my body for a bit." After speaking, he sat back down.

And at that very instant, the head of the Prestigious Villa slowly walked to the purple-clothed young female's side and announced with a face full of pride towards the crowd.

"This is my foster daughter, 'Zi Ling'. In order to express my sincerity to everyone's arranged marriage here, in this Marriage Gathering, Zi Ling will also be part of my Prestigious Villa's hundred beauties and a candidate for marriage."

# Chapter 355: Special Experience

---

“[Zi Ling](#)? A purple-coloured bell?”

Zi = purple, Ling = bell.

“She took a name rather close to her own ability. It seems like the person who named her knows that she has a Divine Body.”

“This Prestigious Villa is not simple! It actually hiddenly developed a Divine Body. In front of this girl, I’m sure that even Jiang Wushang will be inferior right?” Chu Feng who personally experienced Zi Ling’s strength deeply knew how powerful she was.

Although on the surface, Zi Ling’s cultivation was only the 9th level of the Profound realm, her true battle power was far superior than Chu Feng’s. So, Chu Feng felt that even Jie Qingming who had a Strange Armament and the cultivation of the 1st level of the Heaven realm would not necessarily be able to defeat Zi Ling.

At that very instant, the most apical young geniuses of the Nine Provinces were gathered on the viewing stage, but people did not know that the strongest genius was actually the purple-clothed young female who was as beautiful as a fairy, Zi Ling.

Zi Ling’s pretty appearance undoubtedly stunned everyone. Before, Tang Yixiu and the three others who were still sweeping over the nine beauties’ bodies were currently looking around Zi Ling’s body. They were unwilling to look away, and they were even muttering to themselves without stop,

“There’s actually such a beautiful woman in the world... If she’s already so bewitching at such an age, when she grows up in the future, how outstanding would she look like? What other wishes would one even have if they were able to marriage this person?”

Not to mention them, even Jie Qingming and Xu Zhongyu were captivated by Zi Ling’s beautiful appearance. Especially the extremely conceited Jie Qingming. At that instant, even he was hiddenly saying in his heart as well, “If one were to ask me what kind of woman could accompany my left and right, I would answer: None other than this girl.”

“Chu Feng, this is truly a rare chance! You must fight over the affection of this girl in the Marriage Gathering to get hold of her, or else you will miss this heavenly-great chance.” Eggy giggled and reminded.

“What? Don’t joke! It’s not like you don’t know how dangerous this girl is. Besides, she must hate me to death, yet you want me to hit on her? Aren’t you telling me to enter the tiger’s mouth as lamb, to look for my own path of death?” Without even thinking, Chu Feng refused.

“What do you even know? Divine Bodies are people who are cared by the heavens. They innately have abilities that normal people do not have. What they possess are divine powers bestowed by heaven.”

“It would be quite fine if such divine powers get bestowed on the body of a male, but if it gets bestowed on the body of a female, then her future husband will also gain enormous benefits.” Eggy

reminded.

“Enormous benefits? What benefits?” After hearing the word “benefits”, Chu Feng was instantly interested and he couldn’t help but ask closely.

“As long as you do the thing between a male and female with her and take away her first time, then a part of her unique divine power will be absorbed by you and transformed into power that only you have.”

“To normal people, that divine power will help extremely greatly in the martial cultivation aspect, but to you, perhaps it will let you understand the power of the Divine Lightning in your body.”

“Although you can continuously break through two level of cultivation with the power of the golden-coloured lightning and the blue-coloured lightning, I believe that you also know that it isn’t their real power.”

“You have no way of comprehending their power, so naturally, you have no way of using them. However, if you can do the thing between a male and female with that Zi Ling and take away part of her divine power from her body, perhaps you will have a chance to understand the obscurity of the Divine Lightning. Even if you cannot comprehend it, it will still increase your cultivation by a step.” Eggy explained in detail.

“There’s actually something like this?” At that instant, Chu Feng was also incomparably elated and his heart was filled with

yearning.

It was exactly as how Eggy said it was. From the beginning, he was able to feel how much power the Divine Lightning in his body contained. It was an ineffable, horrifying power. So horrifying that it was as if it shouldn't exist in this world.

However, he was only able to feel the Divine Lightning, but he could not control the Divine Lightning, let alone gaining its powers. So, after hearing Eggy's words, his heart instantly changed.

Even if there was a mountain of knives or an ocean of flames in front of him, he still had to walk through it. He made a decision. No matter what, he had to get his hands on Zi Ling because he did not want to miss a chance to gain the power of the Divine Lightning.

Zi Ling did indeed attract the attention of all the males there. Regardless of age, no matter if it was the young generation, or the elderly experts, they were smiling and admiring the young female who was peerless in beauty.

Especially when the head of the Prestigious Villa, Qin Lei, announced that Zi Ling was his foster daughter, people viewed the young female with even more importance.

At that very instant, on the luxurious stage that was on the summit of the mountain peak, a young female called Zi Ling was doubtlessly the most dazzling person there.

“Everyone, since the Marriage Gathering has reached this stage, it’s time to announce the method of marrying for this Marriage Gathering.”

“The reason why my Prestigious Villa set up this Marriage Gathering is very simple. First, it’s to find a good person for my Prestigious Villa’s excellent ladies to rely on. It’s also to make good friends throughout the world with this. To spread the connections of my Prestigious Villa throughout the continent of the Nine Provinces.”

“Perhaps there will be people who ask: Right now, there are almost a thousand males who are participating in this Marriage Gathering, yet there are only a hundred ladies. How should it be distributed? Should a martial competition be conducted?”

“Of course not. Although I, Qin Lei, want to find a husband who has powerful strength for my Prestigious Villa’s ladies, it’s not limited to their current strength. What I have my eyes on is their future potential.”

“This is also why I opened two Limitless Underground Palaces in the first test. It’s also why there are both geniuses in the Profound realm here as well as geniuses in the Origin realm.”

“Although the distance in your current strength is huge, all of you have the same traits. That is, in terms of martial cultivation, all of you have very good talent, and in the future, all of you will have very good developments.”



“Speaking to that point, perhaps some people will ask: Since there is no need to compete martially to judge who can bring a beauty back home, how will this Marriage Gathering be carried out?”

“Actually, this is still very simple. I hand the power to choose over to my hundred ladies.”

“My Prestigious Villa will organize a special experience. The hundred ladies of my Prestigious Villa will also participate in this experience. This is also a provided chance for you to get closer to one another.”

“While being together, I’m sure that the hundred ladies will have a husband they are pleased with in their hearts, and after this experience is finished, the hundred ladies can announce who they are satisfied with, and at that time, it will also be the full conclusion of this Marriage Gathering.” The head of the Prestigious Villa, Qin Lei, loudly narrated.

“So it’s like this? Let us use our own abilities to attract the attention of the hundred beauties and not purely with martial power? This method is rather interesting.”

At that instant, the groups of people started to get restless. Many people expressed approval because Qin Lei’s method gave everyone a chance.

## Chapter 356: Prepare To Start The Battle

---

“He wants us to be in touch with the hundred beauties, and use our own strength to conquer the beauties in order to have one in our embrace? In terms of handsomeness, who here can surpass us four brothers?” Tang Yixiu was filled with confidence.

“My three brothers, choose any of the nine beauties for yourself. I’ll be fine with just Lady Zi Ling.” Song Qingfeng said.

“Song Qingfeng, do you have no shame? Why not ask, within us four brothers, who is still thinking about those nine beauties? Who isn’t thinking about Lady Zi Ling in their heart? Besides, when compared to Lady Zi Ling, are those nine girls even beauties?” Bai Yunfei sneered and said.

“What? From what I hear, Brother Yunfei, you want to have a fight with me, Song Qingfeng?” Song Qingfeng’s face darkened as he changed his expression.

“Ahh, what is there to argue about? It will suffice if everyone fairly fights.” Liu Xiaoyao spoke.

“Hmph. Let’s fight then. Who’s afraid of who?” The other three all coldly snorted.

The conversation of the four people were spoken with mental messages, so other people were not aware what they were discussing about, and after announcing the marriage method of the Marriage Gathering, the head of the villa, Qin Lei, announced

once again,

“As for the location of this special experience, it’s the Thousand Monster Mountain.”

“Huaaaa~~~”

After those words were spoken, a commotion instantly rose. Many people who did not know the truth were greatly stunned. What place was the Thousand Monster Mountain? It was a forbidden land!

Didn’t the Prestigious Villa always clearly prohibit it and not allow anyone to step into the Thousand Monster Mountain?

Compared to the confusion of the bystanders, a smile of yearning rose from the corners of the mouths from the people who already received the information because the real good show was finally going to start.

“Everyone, no need to be surprised. Since this is a special experience, there must be a special place. I, Qin Lei, am looking for husbands for my Prestigious Villa’s hundred ladies, so naturally, the requirements need to be a bit stricter.”

“Although martial cultivation talent is something that absolutely necessary, a person’s courage is even more necessary. As for this thing called courage, it can only be shown when one meets true danger.”

“And the Thousand Monster Mountain is the best place to test one’s courage.”

“Of course, there are certainly dangers by entering the Thousand Monster Mountain, and one can even lose their life in there. So, I, Qin Lei, will not make things difficult for everyone.”

“If anyone feels that they cannot protect themselves in the Thousand Monster Mountain, they can choose to leave right now. I, Qin Lei, will absolutely not stop them.”

At that instant, the disturbance got even more serious. Everyone was discussing and whispering. But after a full hour passed, no one chose to leave.

The reason was very simple. When a time like this arrived, who would be willing to easily give up?

Besides, if anyone left at this time, it was telling everyone that they felt that they couldn’t do it. Not only would they lose their own face, they would even blacken their own power, and in the future, after returning to the power, it would be difficult for them to raise their heads again.

So, naturally, no one chose to give up, and as he faced that situation, Qin Lei smiled as he got his way. Because everything was within his grasp, and the scene in front of him was exactly within his expectations.

“It seems like I, Qin Lei, have not been mistaken. The young people here are indeed the most outstanding in the continent of the Nine Provinces. Not only in terms of martial cultivation talent, but also in terms of courage.”

“Since it is like this, I will announce the specifics of this experience as well as the circumstances of the Thousand Monster Mountain.”

“The Thousand Monster Mountain is a land governed by Monstrous Beasts. Within it, there are countless Monstrous Beasts. All their cultivations are dominatingly strong and there is no space for underestimation.”

“The Thousand Monster Mountain is split into five areas. The five areas are respectively controlled by the five Monster Kings.”

“Not only are the strengths of the five Monster Kings extremely strong, they have no conflicts between them. Rather, their relationship are extremely good.”

“This also means that the five Monster Kings are one group, causing all the Monstrous Beasts in the Thousand Monster Mountain to be united as one.”

“In addition to their intense dislike of humans, I classify the Thousand Monster Mountain as one of the most risky places in the continent of the Nine Provinces.”

“This is also why my Prestigious Villa views it as a forbidden land to prohibit anyone from stepping into the Thousand Monster Mountain.” Qin Lei explained in detail.

“Since the Thousand Monster Mountain is so risky and the Monstrous Beasts are so dangerous, if we enter and are discovered by them, aren’t we causing them to be enraged? Are you not afraid of their retaliation? You are simply playing fire and burning yourself.”

Just at that time, Jiang Wushang who was sitting on the viewing stage suddenly spoke. Actually, many people had the same question, but only he would dare to ask like that.

“Ho...Your words are correct. If the Monstrous Beasts discover that we entered the Thousand Monster Mountain, with their methods, they will certainly retaliate over humans.”

“However, the reason why I still want to do this is because in the past few years, the Monstrous Beasts in the Thousand Monster Mountain are being restless. Again and again, humans outside of the Thousand Monster Mountain suffer misfortunes. Some villages even got slaughtered, and after investigations, what was discovered was that the ones who committed such sins were exactly the Monstrous Beasts in the Thousand Monster Mountain.”

“The Thousand Monster Mountain has already declared war against us humans. Today, what we are doing is only a counter-attack. So, I’m not afraid of their retaliation because what I want is

to thoroughly start the war, to let the Monstrous Beasts in the Thousand Monster Mountain to know the power of us humans, so that in the future, they can know their place a bit more.” Qin Lei explained.

“But you don’t have confidence, so you drag us down the water, and you want to borrow our strengths to deal with the Thousand Monster Mountain together?” Jiang Wushang started to strictly interrogate.

“Haha!” But at that instant, Qin Lei started to laugh loudly, then quickly after he said, “I knew that someone would think like that.”

“Indeed, through this Marriage Gathering, my Prestigious Villa does want to establish a bridge of connection with the powers here, but I never once thought of borrowing everyone’s power to attack the Thousand Monster Mountain.”

“That’s because my Prestigious Villa already has the ability to attack the Thousand Monster Mountain on its own.”

After speaking, Qin Lei waved his big sleeve and quickly following that, twenty bodies descended from the sky and landed behind Qin Lei. They were twenty old people, and the four who carried Zi Ling’s sedan chair were also there. They were all manager elders of the Prestigious Villa, but the most important part was their auras. They were all experts in the Heaven realm.

“There are twenty Heaven realm elders? The Prestigious Villa is actually this powerful?”

At that instant, many people on scene were endlessly shocked. Even Chu Feng felt extreme unexpectedness because not only were all the twenty manager elders Heaven realm experts, some of them even stepped into the 2nd level of the Heaven realm, even the 3rd level

The Heaven realm was different from other realms. Every level was a difficult gap to go over, causing some middle-aged people with unordinary talent to step in the Heaven realm, yet in their remaining lives, they could not walk another step forward. In their old ages, they still remained in the 1st level of the Heaven realm.

But within the Prestigious Villa's manager elders, there were actually people who stepped into the 2nd level of the Heaven realm, even the 3rd. Then what realm did the head of the villa step into? What degree of power did the Prestigious Villa reach?



# Chapter 357: Beautiful Woman Paying A Visit

---

“The strength of the Prestigious Villa is actually this strong! They have twenty manager elders in the Heaven realm, so in addition to the head of the villa, don’t they have twenty-one Heaven realm experts?”

At that instant, the experts from various powers all tightly furrowed their brows and indescribable uneasiness started to rise from their hearts. Even if it was a peak power from other provinces, it was the same.

Because in certain aspects, the strength that the Prestigious Villa displayed already surpassed them. Currently, the only ones that could remain calm were only the two special powers, the World Spirit Guild and the Jie clan.

“It’s not that I’m looking down on the Thousand Monster Mountain, but my Prestigious Villa does absolutely have the ability to sweep it away.”

“Right now, the army of my Prestigious Villa has already gathered and they are prepared. Tomorrow, they will start the attacks on the Thousand Monster Mountain and let them know the power of us humans, let them know that it is best for them to hide like a turtle in their Thousand Monster Mountain, their tiny bit of land.”

“And the event of the Marriage Gathering will also start there.”

“Everyone, don’t worry. Although it is an event that tests courage, I won’t let any of you take any unnecessary risks.”

“We’ve already scouted out the landscape of the Thousand Monster Mountain. Within the Thousand Monster Mountain, there are two zones. In those two zones, the least number of Monstrous Beasts are located there and their strengths are comparatively weaker as well.”

“The event will be carried out in those two zones. Of course, after entering, all of you will need to rely on yourselves.”

“But as advice from me, it is best to kill all the Monstrous Beasts you see, or else they will certainly kill you. Even if they cannot kill you, they will lead stronger Monstrous Beasts that will in turn kill all of you.”

“The event will last for ten days. Ten days later, you can leave the Thousand Monster Mountain and my Prestigious Villa will send people to bring you back to the Prestigious Villa.”

“And at that time, I believe that the hundred ladies from my Prestigious Villa will already have a satisfied impression in their hearts. As for which of you can win over the heart of the hundred ladies, that’ll depend on your performances in these ten days.” Qin Lei spoke again. He had plenty of confidence and was filled with self-assurance.

After seeing the strength of the Prestigious Villa, there was

indeed no one who questioned anything, and they all approved of the special event.

Soon after, on the summit of the mountain peak, a dance party for breaking the ice between one another was started. On the stage, the alluring figures of many beauties were displayed as well as their graceful dancing. It caused everyone to be extremely excited and they incessantly cheered.

There were even some shameless people who lost their control from the beauties on the stage. They hid in a quiet corner, and as they looked at the beauties on the stage, their right hand danced around and they secretly did some low-class things.

However, Lady Zi Ling did not participate in this session of the performance. After Lin Lei finished announcing the details of the event, she left first with the escort of elders.

As for Chu Feng, he did not have much interest towards the remaining beauties. He focused on Gu Bo, Xu Zhongyu, and the others from the World Spirit Guild and drank merrily.

Currently, he already made quite a number of big enemies both intentionally and unintentionally. After entering the Thousand Monster Mountain, there would certainly be someone who would attack him. So, the only people he could rely on were those from the World Spirit Guild.

After drinking happily for a while, the night was already dark, and because tomorrow was the day to head towards the Thousand

Monster Mountain, Xu Zhongyu suggested that the young generation of the World Spirit Guild should go back rely to rest, and Chu Feng and the others, naturally, responded to the call.

After returning to his room, Chu Feng first steeped some green tea. Because he was happy today, he really did drink quite a bit. So, he needed that in order to dispel the power of wine a bit.

After steeping the tea and with a teacup in hand, Chu Feng walked towards a window. As he drank tea, he raised his head to look at the night sky, but in reality, he was thinking and organizing the map in his memories.

The map was shown to him by the mysterious Monstrous Beast when he was first in the Asura Ghost Tower, and the landscape that the map recorded was the landscape of the Thousand Monster Mountain.

In the Thousand Monster Mountain's middle zone, there was a vast underground palace, and within the palace, the thing that Chu Feng needed was there.

However, outside of the underground palace, there were also five special areas and they were guarded like a castle. Without even thinking, Chu Feng knew what those five special areas were. They were undoubtedly the areas that the five Monster Kings were in charge of.

So, it also meant that the five Monster Kings knew what treasure Chu Feng wanted was. Perhaps they even had some special

relationship with the mysterious Monstrous Beast in the Asura Ghost Tower.

At the beginning, the mysterious Monstrous Beast did not tell Chu Feng about the dangers of the Thousand Monster Mountain. Although the mysterious Monstrous Beast told Chu Feng where the treasure was, it was equivalent in giving him a test.

whoosh

But just at that time, a flash appeared in front of Chu Feng's eyes, and a row of purple-coloured light, like lightning, rushed into his room from a window.

“Crap.”

At that instant, Chu Feng subconsciously felt that something was off and with a leap, he wanted to escape through the window.

However, after Chu Feng leaped and was pouncing towards the window, with a bang, it was as if he collided into a copper and iron wall and he was reflected back and he fell onto the floor.

“Blue-coloured Spirit Formation?” Chu Feng was thrown and flipped onto the ground. He raised his head to look, and he discovered, with the power of blue-coloured Spirit Formation, a formless Spirit Formation was covering the window and it already sealed the entire room.

Turning his head and looking, indeed, it was the same as Chu Feng's predictions. A beautiful figure was currently standing inside his own room.

It was young female who wore a pretty skirt and had a face that was beautiful beyond compare. It was the young female who stunned the entire mountain peak today, Zi Ling.

“She already became a Blue-cloak World Spiritist?”

Chu Feng's heart was shocked. He never would have thought that Zi Ling who was only in the 9th level of the Profound realm already became a Blue-cloak World Spiritist.

However, clearly, one had to be in the Heaven realm in order to gain the blue-coloured Spirit Formation power, yet with the cultivation of the 9th level of the Profound realm, she gained the power of a Blue-cloak World Spiritist. That defied common sense a bit.

But after thinking a bit more carefully, it was acceptable. Only those in the Heaven realm could gain the power of blue-coloured Spirit Formations. That was common sense.

However, there were many people could break common sense, for example, Chu Feng himself. He broken it many times, and since even he could, why not people with Divine Bodies?

“Ho... So it's Lady Zi Ling. The so-called 'males and females must

keep a distance'. Could it be that you wish to go against such principles by intruding into my room in the middle of the night?"

Although Chu Feng was shocked by Zi Ling's strength, he did not overly panic. He stood up, naturally patted the dust on his body away, and revealed a peaceful light smile towards Zi Ling.

whoosh

But suddenly, Zi Ling's body flashed, and like a ghost, she appeared in front of Chu Feng. At the same time, her clean-white, shiny, and smooth hands already tightly clenched on Chu Feng's neck.

"Mm."

At that instant, Chu Feng was able to feel layers of strong power engulfing his body and sealing his entire body's movement.

At that instant, he was powerless throughout his body. Not to mention fighting back, he couldn't even say any words. He could only watch as Zi Ling's face of absolute beauty approached him bit by bit.

Finally, Zi Ling's mouth came right next to Chu Feng's ear, and she said with an extremely icy cold tone, "Do not tell anybody about my matter, or else even if you escape to the ends of the world, I will still split your corpse into ten thousand pieces."

# Thousand Monster Mountain



# Chapter 358: Igniting The Flames Of War

---

“Damned girl, she dares to threaten you in such a way? Chu Feng, let me control your body and let me give this damn girl a good lesson.”

At that instant, Eggy was furious. Chu Feng was clearly able to feel Eggy’s fury. Although this wasn’t the first time Chu Feng was threatened by someone, this time however, Eggy was particularly angry.

“No need, I can take care of it myself.” But Chu Feng coldly snorted, and quickly after, the two types of lightning still flowing in his blood were like volcanoes that were going to erupt as they started to boil.

boom Suddenly, as if an explosion happened within Chu Feng’s body, a berserk aura bursted out from his body.

In that situation, Zi Ling’s hand that was squeezing Chu Feng’s neck immediately trembled, then she hurriedly let go and went a few steps backwards.

“Your eyes?!” Seeing Chu Feng’s pupils that had yellow and blue interweaved and feeling Chu Feng’s aura that instantly climbed into the 5th level of the Profound realm, Zi Ling’s likeable little face couldn’t avoid changing and within her eyes, a streak of fear had actually appeared.

“You are indeed very special. You don’t have a Divine Body, yet

you possess power that is not inferior to Divine Bodies.”

“But right now, you are unable to defeat me because this is my territory. If I want to kill you, you will have no way of escaping.”

“But you don’t need to be afraid. I won’t kill you. I just hope that you can keep a secret and don’t let anyone learn about my special body.”

“At the same time, I will also guarantee that I won’t reveal your secret to anyone. I won’t let anyone know that you are an oddity who grasps strange abilities.”

Zi Ling spoke with an extremely gentle tone, as if she was bargaining over price. Simultaneously, her bright big eyes also cautiously stared at Chu Feng, as though afraid of any movements from him because truly, she could not see through him.

Although Chu Feng’s current two pupils were very strange, when compared to the black-coloured power that seeped out of Chu Feng’s body that day, there was still a huge difference. She knew that Chu Feng did not use his true power, and the power of the darkness was exactly what she was fearful of.

Chu Feng did not pay attention to Zi Ling. He first rubbed his neck, and only then did he shoot Zi Ling a glance and said, “You were intentionally testing me just now right? If I didn’t have any power to resist, would you have just directly attacked and killed me? ”

After hearing those words, Zi Ling's pupils shrunk and she did not reply to Chu Feng. She walked straight towards the window before turning her head back to say, "Remember my words. If you dare to reveal my secret, believe me. You will absolutely die extremely miserably."

After speaking and with a thought, the Spirit Formation that enveloped the entire room instantly disappeared, and with a leap of her beautiful body, like a ghost, she disappeared within the night sky.

"This girl is too dangerous. Just now, I really did feel her killing intent." After Zi Ling left, Chu Feng breathed a long sigh of relief as if a burden was lifted.

Because he knew that if Zi Ling truly attacked him, the current him would certainly not be able to defeat her. Even if he borrowed Eggy's power, he would still be unable to defeat her. That girl, was indeed very terrifying.

But luckily, Zi Ling seemed to be scared by Chu Feng, so at least up until now, she would still not kill Chu Feng.

But the thing that caused the biggest headache to Chu Feng wasn't that. The thing that caused him the headache was that he wanted to do it with Zi Ling, but as he faced a woman who wanted to kill himself, how could that be accomplished? It was really too hard.

But currently, Chu Feng did not have any methods. He could only

leave it up to fate and go along with nature. After all, his real goal in this journey was the mysterious treasure inside the Thousand Monster Mountain.

On the next day, Chu Feng got out of bed very early, followed the peak experts of the Prestigious Villa and stepped onto the expedition towards the Thousand Monster Mountain

On this journey, not only were there the head of the Prestigious Villa, Chu Feng, and the thousand or so others who participated in the Marriage Gathering, there were also the representative characters from the powers everywhere. In order to express sincerity towards the marriage, they took the initiative to give their assistance to the Prestigious Villa, to attack the Monstrous Beasts in the Thousand Monster Mountain together.

Although on the surface, the representative characters of the powers were very righteous, respectable and they had very good intentions, Chu Feng and the others from the Prestigious Villa knew very clearly regarding the reason why they were willing to follow their actions. In reality, it was for the treasures in the Thousand Monster Mountain.

After several days of hurrying, they finally arrived at the forbidden land of the Qin Province, the Thousand Monster Mountain.

However, at that instant, the vast mountain range was no longer peaceful. In many places, the flames of battle were already lit. The battle powers that the Prestigious Villa gathered beforehand already started their attacks on the Thousand Monster Mountain.

And after seeing the flames on the Thousand Monster Mountain, the head of the Prestigious Villa and the manager elders of the Prestigious Villa, as well as the experts from powers everywhere immediately joined the battlefield and rushed into the boundless mountain range. Only two manager elders remained, who were in charge of Chu Feng and the others' event.

boom boom boom

Finally, when the White-headed Eagles that Chu Feng and the others' rode on landed outside of the Thousand Monster Mountain, it was a lot more peaceful when compared to back there. There were no fires burning, but one could still hear bursts of explosions from afar, and occasionally, even the furious roar of Monstrous Beasts. It caused the land they were standing on to tremble, and from that, it could be seen how intense the battle in the distance was.

“Everyone, my Prestigious Villa has already sent one hundred thousand elites to attack the Monstrous Beasts in the Thousand Monster Mountain.”

“I believe that after our villa head joins that battlefield, we will have even bigger breakthroughs. The Monstrous Beasts in the Thousand Monster Mountain will certainly pay the price for their evil actions.”

“However, although the Monstrous Beasts right now are already as muddled as a pot of congee, there are several hundreds of

thousands of Monstrous Beasts in this Thousand Monster Mountain. So, even if all of you are going to enter a rather safer zone, do not be careless.”

“Because, what you will be facing are cruel and heartless Monstrous Beasts. It is still possible that you will face life-threatening dangers.”

“Like the words of the villa head, we advise you to kill the Monstrous Beasts after meeting them in the Thousand Monster Mountain. Do not leave any alive, or else the ones who will suffer will be you.”

The Prestigious Villa elders first told them some things they should pay attention to, then quickly after, they gave everyone a map.

That map was completely different than the one in Chu Feng’s brain. It was a lot simpler when compared to it and the location of the underground palace was not even recorded.

However, on the map, two areas were circled out. They were the areas that Chu Feng and the others needed to survive ten days for, and the first step they needed to do was to first arrive in that area, and ten days had to pass before they return. And that, was the event that they needed to undergo.

Because there were two safe areas, Chu Feng and the others also needed to be split into two groups.

Unluckily, Chu Feng was in the same group as Jie Qingming, Tang Yixiu, and the others. They did not like Chu Feng.

But luckily, Xu Zhongyu and the others from the World Spirit Guild were also together with Chu Feng. As long as Xu Zhongyu was there, Chu Feng felt better security.

Although Chu Feng was going to split away from them sooner or later, at least before leaving the group, Chu Feng still needed Xu Zhongyu to suppress Jie Qingming.

Of course, other than Xu Zhongyu and Jie Qingming, there was also a person who was unknown whether he was an enemy or friend. It was Jiang Wushang.

The genius from the Jiang Dynasty was very strange. Although he did help Chu Feng that day on the summit of the mountain peak, on the road, when Chu Feng started a conversation with him, he was rather icy cold. From that, Chu Feng was unable to see through him. That boy.

## Chapter 359: Public Enemy of Males

---

“Elder, is it possible to make an exception? I truly want to go over to their side. I am close friends with Bai Yunfei and the others, so if I go together with them, it will be more helpful in the event.”

At that instant, Tang Yixiu was tangling a manager elder of the Prestigious Villa. Because Zi Ling wasn't in their group, he who had special thoughts towards Zi Ling was intensely requesting to go to the group that Zi Ling was in.

However, his request was heartlessly denied by the manager elder, because that was the rule. If everyone requested to be in the same group as Zi Ling, how was the event going to be held?

“Quickly look! Isn't that Lady Zi Ling?”

“Waa, it is truly her! It is possible that she will join in our group?” But just at that time, there was suddenly a person in the crowd who exclaimed in surprise. Focusing their gazes to look over, Zi Ling was truly walking towards where they were.

Seeing that, the manager elder quickly went up to greet her, and with a quite humble attitude, he chuckled and asked, “Miss Zi Ling, what's the matter?”

“Elder Xu, I want a person from you.” Zi Ling's voice was extremely beautiful. Especially when she spoke those words quietly, one would be drunk from listening, and when they saw her smile of absolute beauty on her face, the nerves of the people



on scene were stretched and the hearts in their chests almost jumped out.

“This... Miss Zi Ling, I wonder who you want over?” The manager elder heard the meaning behind Zi Ling’s words and he was clearly in a bit of a difficult situation. But he did not refuse, and he curiously asked.

“Him.” Zi Ling pointed her finger towards Chu Feng and the others.

At that instant, the hearts of all the males surrounding Chu Feng couldn’t help beating quicker and their breathing turned rougher. Even the thoughts and emotions of Xu Zhongyu next to Chu Feng and Jie Qingming behind Chu Feng also rippled.

Zi Ling personally inviting someone to go over to her side meant that Zi Ling had feelings towards that person! Everyone hoped that they could get that honor.

“Crap.” But compared to others, Chu Feng hiddenly cursed. Over on that side, he did not have a person like Xu Zhongyu to look over him. If he was called over, it would really be too dangerous. After all, putting others aside, even Zi Ling had thoughts of killing Chu Feng.

“Lady Zi Ling, you’re....you’re talking about me?” Just at that time, a male who stood in front of Chu Feng walked forward with disbelief and incomparable excitement.

“Not you. The one behind you.” Zi Ling lightly frowned, then pointed at Chu Feng who was behind that male.

Seeing that, Chu Feng’s face slightly changed, then he hurriedly turned his body and hid behind Gu Bo.

“Chu Feng, I’m talking about you. Where are you hiding?” But who would have thought, that the seemingly insignificant action of Chu Feng hiding forced Zi Ling to directly call out his name?

“What? Chu Feng?!”

With that, the situation turned horrible. Almost everyone on scene, no matter male, female, old, or young, cast their gazes towards Chu Feng. With the eyes of females, there was strangeness but also the rare jealousy. Some people even revealed bare killing intent.

And the thing that caused Chu Feng to be the most speechless was that as Chu Feng stood where he was with a face full of helplessness, Zi Ling had actually speedily walked into the crowd, extended her clean-white hand and grabbed onto Chu Feng’s cuff. As they were being stared by the eyes of the crowd, she forcefully dragged Chu Feng out.

Zi Ling pulled Chu Feng and arrived in front of the manager elder. She then said one sentence, “Elder, it’s him.” After speaking, without even turning her head back around, she directly tugged Chu Feng into another group.

“This...”

As they looked at Chu Feng's and Zi Ling's slowly distancing backs, Gu Bo and Xu Zhongyu looked at each other with their four eyes. Even though their relationship was quite good with Chu Feng, a bit of jealousy couldn't avoid appearing in their eyes.

On the other hand, Xu Zhongyu was the first to relievedly smiled. He said, “Brother Chu Feng does have quite good luck.”

And Gu Bo also closely nodded his head, “On that topic, the two of them do match each other rather well.”

However, compared to Gu Bo and Xu Zhongyu, the people who were unrelated to Chu Feng could only purely envy them. Especially people like Jie Qingming and Tang Yixiu. They were so angry that their eyes spit fire and the root of their teeth itched.

The person they loved was pulling the person who they felt extreme displeasure, even hatred, towards, away in front of them. That feeling caused them, who were always surrounded by beauties, to taste the pain of jealousy.

And as for the males in the other group, they were even more furious. Especially Bai Yunfei, Song Qingfeng, and Liu Xiaoyao. Their faces turned white from anger, and within the gazes that they looked towards Chu Feng with, cold glare glittered and they wished they could choke Chu Feng to death.

Originally, they thought that their chance to chase after Zi Ling arrived as they were separated into the same group as Zi Ling. But what was the current situation? Was it possible that in Zi Ling's heart, she already chose the brat that came from the Azure Province?

But no matter how much more displeased they were in their hearts, right now, they could only endure because at that very instant, after all, there were still manager elders from the Prestigious Villa.

After Zi Ling brought Chu Feng and approached her team, a figure was also speedily walking over. It was Liu Zhizun.

Although Liu Zhizun wasn't a participator in the Marriage Gathering, as the number one disciple of the Prestigious Villa, he also joined the event, and like them, after seeing Zi Ling's actions, he was similarly displeased.

At that instant, he stopped in front of Chu Feng and Zi Ling, and while smiling, he said to Zi Ling, "Junior Zi Ling, the divide of these two teams were pre-arranged by the elders. By doing this, it doesn't seem to be appropriate right?"

"Ho..." As she faced Liu Zhizun's obstruction, Zi Ling sweetly smiled, then quickly after, she said, "The elder has already approved of it, so there is no need to trouble yourself." Following that, Zi Ling also did not care about Li Zhizun, and directly, she pulled Chu Feng and walked into the crowd.

Seeing that, a streak of cold glare flashed by Liu Zhizun's eyes. However, his eyes were not facing Zi Ling. They were facing Chu Feng.

"I'm finished I'm finished! I've been tricked to death by this girl." As a World Spiritist and at that moment, Chu Feng was naturally able to feel the gazes that revealed killing intent condensing onto his body.

He felt that this time, he was tricked by Zi Ling. He was forced into a predicament and became the public enemy of all males.

Yet he could not have done anything. As he faced the little beautiful girl, he couldn't have refused right? Besides, even the manager elder agreed, so how could he not?

But with a thought, Chu Feng felt that since it was already like this, why not just take the chance and touch Zi Ling a bit? So, he waved the sleeve of his robe and got rid of Zi Ling's hand from his cuff, then quickly afterwards, he extended his hand and grabbed. He had actually grasped Zi Ling's white hand into his own hand.

"You..."

Feeling that her own little hand was being tightly grasped, the face of Zi Ling changed and she quickly retracted her hand, ferociously glared at Chu Feng, then said at a low voice, "Don't think that I have any thoughts towards you. I'm just afraid that you won't be able to control your own mouth when you are together with others."

# Chapter 360: Unfathomable

---

After the little interlude of Zi Ling forcibly pulling Chu Feng into her group, the event finally officially started.

The two groups split up and went forward. As they were led by the two manager elders, they headed towards the so-called safe area.

In the group Chu Feng was in, there were almost five hundred males but only fifty females. Other than the manager elder who was responsible for leading the road and Liu Zhizun, all of the other males were people who were participating in the Marriage Gathering.

So, because of that, there were many wolves but little meat. In fact, there were many, many wolves, and very little meat.

In a situation like that, the young geniuses from all directions started to give it their all to gain the favors of the beauty geniuses.

Especially Zi Ling. There were countless males who wanted to approach, but those who did get close to her were all coldly yelled at to scram by Zi Ling. Even those who received the Prestigious Invitation Letter, Song Qingfeng, Bai Yunfei, and Liu Xiaoyao, were no exception.

When they faced that scene, even the manager elders could only helplessly shake their heads and did not dare to interfere. Although by rejecting people a thousand miles away, Zi Ling went

against the idea of the Marriage Gathering, as long as they thought of the lady's special status and her monster-like strong grandfather, who even the head of the villa feared, that manager elder could only watch and do nothing.

But there were exceptions for all things. Chu Feng was such an exception. Although Zi Ling stayed a thousand miles away from other males, she pulled Chu Feng next to her and even if Chu Feng wanted to leave, he could not.

The thing that was the most intolerable was after a while of escaping without results, Chu Feng actually started to become unrefined and not only did he start to work his ways in becoming friends with Zi Ling, he even occasionally took some small advantages from Zi Ling. That truly caused other to be unable to continue looking.

In fact, Song Qingfeng, Bai Yunfei, and Liu Xiaoyao, the three people who recognized themselves as the pride of the heavens all walked to the front of Chu Feng, stopped the path in which Chu Feng and Zi Ling was walking on, pointed at Chu Feng, and fiercely reminded,

“Boy, behave yourself! How can Lady Zi Ling be touched by you?”

At that instant, the face of Chu Feng who was currently speaking his heart out to Zi Ling instantly sank. He originally wanted to speak and curse, but before he even opened his mouth, Zi Ling who was to his side actually spoke instead.

“None of you need to interrupt the matters between me and Chu Feng. If you block my path again, don’t blame me for being impolite.” Zi Ling’s voice was pleasant, yet had plenty of domineeringness, as if she truly did not put the three people in her eyes.

“We...we...” At that instant, Song Qingfeng and the two others were first taken aback, then following that, their faces instantly turned ashen and they didn’t know what to do. They were originally thinking to stick out for Zi Ling, but who would have thought that a burst of lashing was exchanged back.

However, they truly did not have any excuses, so at the end, as the crowd was watching, they could only slip away gloomily. They really lost all face, yet they could not do anything about it.

“Heh. Are you still saying that you don’t like me? If you don’t like me, why did you help me?” Chu Feng chuckled, and as he spoke, he extended his hand of evil towards Zi Ling’s well-developed little waist and got closer.

Although he did not know why Zi Ling kept him by her side, whether it was because she only wanted Chu Feng to be the target of maliciousness or if she truly wanted to have Chu Feng within her line of sight, or other thoughts, Chu Feng took this chance and started scoundrel tactics against Zi Ling. It was to harass her and do all sorts of shameless things.

What Chu Feng wanted to do was to cause Zi Ling to be angry so she wouldn’t always have her eye on him. Only then could Chu Feng have a chance to escape that group.



Because looking at it currently, the group was no longer safe. Chu Feng truly did not know what kind of dangerous situation he would sink into after the manager elder left. Not to mention others, even the unfathomable Zi Ling was a huge threat, so he had to quickly leave.

And as she felt the hand of evil that Chu Feng extended over, Zi Ling's little face changed and she quickly evaded it. She also fiercely glared at Chu Feng and said, "You better not imagine that your affection is being returned. I just don't like anyone bothering my business and I was not helping you."

"Explain, continue explaining. It's best to explain so that everyone will believe it."

"I won't believe it anyway. In my heart, I know clearly that without knowing when, you have already deeply fallen for me and you have no way of pulling yourself away, so by making up idiotic reasons, you want me next to you."

Chu Feng drew the corners of his mouth back and chuckled. His eyes were even so openly, shamelessly, staring at Zi Ling's twin peaks that would cause one to be proud. His heart was moved from looking, and he couldn't even help sticking out his tongue and he licked his lips.

"You... I have never seen such a shameless person like you before! If it wasn't for... Hmph!!"

Zi Ling's little face reddened from anger because of Chu Feng and traces of fury sprung out from her eyes. There were even a streak of killing intent, but that killing intent only flashed past before being suppressed by her. At the end, she coldly snorted and walked forward with quick steps.

“Hehe, I would quite like to see how long you can take me.” Chu Feng smiled as he got his way and chased after her.

“Oi, girl, don't be angry! If not, I'll tell a joke to you to cheer you up?”

“Not listening.”

“If not, then you tell me one to cheer me up?”

“Shut up!”

People felt that Chu Feng was aiming for something that he could never get, yet others could not do anything about it as she was unfathomable. Although she expressed impatience towards Chu Feng, she didn't allow Chu Feng to leave her side. It gave off a feeling of looking for suffering for herself.

As they saw Zi Ling who would occasionally rebuke Chu Feng, many people truly wanted to go up and kick Chu Feng from Zi Ling's side, but as long as they thought of how Song Qingfeng, Bai Yunfei, and Liu Xiaoyao ended up as, ultimately, they dispelled that thought.

“Damn it. What so good about that brat from the Azure Province to be able to get the heart of Lady Zi Ling?!” Song Qingfeng grinded his teeth in anger. He who had done it innumerable times never would have thought that he would lose to a bumpkinly brat.

“Who knows what that Zi Ling is thinking. Perhaps [they are like a turtle’s eyes and green beans](#) and they match like that.” Bai Yunfei curled his lips and similarly, his mouth was full of sourness.

A bit confusing to translate, but the expression means that the two are similar, though in a negative manner.

“From what I see, Lady Zi Ling doesn’t really like Chu Feng and they should have already known each other from an earlier date. Perhaps there is some secret that others cannot know between them.” Liu Xiaoyao guessed.

“If you don’t understand, don’t speak random things. How could Zi Ling fall for a person like him?”

But just at that time, an extremely icy cold aura suddenly came from behind the three people. Turning their heads to look, it was Liu Zhizun.

# Chapter 361: Leader

---

“Ho... Brother Liu, not that I’m saying anything bad, but such an excellent lady like Zi Ling really shouldn’t be participating in this Marriage Gathering for marrying another person. Clearly, you two are the natural couple.” As he saw Liu Zhizun, Song Qingfeng fawningly smiled and said.

“That’s right. The proverbs have said it well, ‘don’t let the fertile water flow into an outsider’s field’. I truly don’t know what Villa Head Qin is thinking. How can he marry a lady such as Zi Ling off to others?”

“That’s right that’s right. Lady Zi Ling should, of course, be with Brother Liu!” At the same time, Bai Yunfei and Liu Xiaoyao also echoed on the side.

“Hmph. No need to trouble yourselves. Instead, take care of yourselves.”

“Remember. Don’t let me hear you say anything negative about Zi Ling. Or else, don’t blame me if I don’t hold myself back.” However, Liu Zhizun did not buy it. After fiercely glaring at the three people, he waved his big sleeve, and with a wave of icy cold chilliness, he walked towards the foremost part of the group.

And after Liu Zhizun walked far away, Song Qingfeng’s face which was previously filled with a servile smile instantly sank and he ferociously said, “What is this?! Wait until the elder leaves, then he’ll get it!”

“That’s right. First take care of that Liu Zhizun, then butcher that Chu Feng. Also that Zi Ling. The three of us will take turns on her. Who let her be so arrogant? After that, even if she wants us, we won’t give it to her.” Bai Yunfei mentally said.

“Right, let’s do that. This is the Thousand Monster Mountain anyway, and at that time, we can push all the fault onto the Monstrous Beasts of the Thousand Monster Mountain and say that they did it.” Song Qingfeng approved of it extremely and his eyes were filled with maliciousness.

“Ahh, Brother Qingfeng, Brother Yunfei, the two of you cannot be rash. It is better to not offend this Liu Zhizun.” But just at that time, Liu Xiaoyao sent a mental message and advised.

“Why not? Will we still be unable to defeat him if the three of us join hands?” Song Qingfeng and Bai Yunfei both expressed confusion.

“Believe me. Liu Zhizun concealed deeply and he hasn’t revealed everything. If he truly attacks, I’m afraid that even Jie Qingming and Xu Zhongyu may not be able to defeat him.” Liu Xiaoyao seriously said, and after seeing that the two of them still had some doubts, he explained more,

“In my Free and Unrestrained Valley, a senior went to the Prestigious Villa in an earlier time. He personally saw Liu Zhizun, with his own strength, kill two Heaven realm Monstrous Beasts.”

“That Liu Zhizun?”

After hearing those words, Song Qingfeng and Bai Yunfei both took in a breath of cool air. The bodies of Monstrous Beasts were extremely powerful and their life expectancy were longer than humans. When compared to humans in the same cultivation level, the strength of Monstrous Beasts was far above humans.

Liu Zhizun being able to kill two Heaven realm Monstrous Beasts already stated how powerful his strength was. At least, the three of them could not do something like that. Not to mention the three of them facing a Heaven realm Monstrous Beast alone, even if the three of them face one, they wouldn't be able to defeat it, let alone two.

From then on, Song Qingfeng, Bai Yunfei, and Liu Xiaoyao had no choice but to give up any thoughts on facing Liu Zhizun. However, the thing that depressed them the most wasn't that they couldn't deal with Liu Zhizun, it was that they couldn't touch Zi Ling because Liu Zhizun was there.

They truly wanted to see what taste an exceptional beauty like Zi Ling had. But right now, they were going to miss that chance. That caused them to be endlessly sad.

The Thousand Monster Mountain was very big. If one walked, it would be extremely long. Especially when the strengths of the people on scene weren't equal, as there were people in both the Profound realm and the Origin realm. So, they had to spend a full day before entering the area of the event.

On the road, they did meet quite a few Monstrous Beasts. However, their strengths weren't too strong so when a Monstrous Beast appeared within their range of detection, the males on scene took it as a chance to display their strengths as they fought over killing Monstrous Beasts.

Thus, all of the Monstrous Beasts that appeared could be said to be unlucky because all of them died very wretched. They were tortured to death by a group of males who did not have a conscience. They didn't even leave a complete corpse.

“Although this event is testing your individual courage, at the same time, it is also testing your fighting capabilities as a whole.”

“So, I advise everyone to not leave the group. It would be best to choose a leader to command unified actions.”

“As for who will lead your group, that will be left for you to choose.”

“Ten days will start from now. Ten days later, I will come here to pick you up.”

After the manager elder of the Prestigious Villa gave some last instructions, he left. And his departure also represented the official start of the so-called event.

And after the manager elder left, everyone whispered amongst

themselves. They were all discussing who the leader should be.

Just at that time, Liu Zhizun walked into the middle of the crowd, looked around him, then loudly said, “Everyone, the event has already officially started. Just now, before the elder left, he also said it. Currently, we are a whole. So, we need a leader. Only a proper leader can let us survive better in this dangerous land.”

“As the number one disciple of the Prestigious Villa, I, Liu Zhizun, have a relatively good understanding of the Thousand Monster Mountain and I have also fought against Monstrous Beasts many times before. So, I’ll volunteer to be this leader. I wonder if anyone has any objections?”

“No objects! I approve of Senior Liu leading us!”

“I also approve! No matter if it is in terms of cultivation, ability, or wisdom, Senior Liu is the most excellent person out of all of us. He is the only one who is appropriate for leading us!”

After Liu Zhizun spoke, the beauties of the Prestigious Villa all started to agree and after they expressed their approval, who would raise any objections?

Putting aside that raising objections meant offending the beauties, what they said was also correct. Within the group, only Liu Zhizun was most suitable to lead them.

Then as expected, Liu Zhizun became the leader of everyone, and



the first decision Liu Zhizun made was to not go any deeper, stay where they were, set up camp, and rest for a night, because it was already late and everyone was tired from the journey.

It had to be said that Liu Zhizun did have some capabilities in leading. After the decision to set up camp, he started to orderly split up the work. He let the World Spiritists lay detection Spirit Formations and defense Spirit Formations, forming an invisible defensive fortress in that place.

Chu Feng also stated his identity of being a World Spiritist. It wasn't that he wanted to show his special abilities, rather, he wanted to use that chance to lay a Spirit Formation that had a hole so it would be convenient for him to escape.

And because of the difference in males and females, there was some distance between where the males were situated in and where the females were situated in.

But perhaps because it was resting at night, and it was indeed inconvenient, Zi Ling did not request Chu Feng to stay by her side. But only when they separated, she gave Chu Feng a sentence of threat "Manage your own mouth."

As he faced that situation, Chu Feng hiddenly celebrated. He already made a resolution to secretly leave this place when it was deep into the night and when people were quiet.

"Junior Chu Feng? Is Junior Chu Feng here?"

But just as the colours of the night descended, a beauty with a beautiful voice arrived in front of Chu Feng's tent and called out with that soft voice.

## Chapter 362: Xia Le'r

---

At that instant, Chu Feng was sitting cross-legged in his resting tent and cultivating, but the sudden call awoke Chu Feng from his cultivating state.

Although he did not know who it was, since he was called out, then naturally, out of politeness, Chu Feng had to go out to take a look. After Chu Feng walked out of the tent, he discovered that currently, in front of his tent, a beauty was standing there.

That beauty had delicate facial features and an extremely good figure. Her eyes were as big as walnuts under her eyelashes that were sticking out. She showed indistinctive eye expressions, making it extremely attracting.

If one were to say which part of a female was the most alluring, it would absolutely not be the captivating eyes, but the two mountain peaks in front of her chest that wished to come out when she breathed. As Chu Feng looked at the firm and raised appearance, Chu Feng's heart was truly shaken.

That beauty did not have low cultivation. She was in the 9th level of the Profound realm, and she was one of the nine beauties that Bai Yunfei and the others had their eyes on.

“Junior Chu Feng, I am called Xia Le'r.” The well-developed female who called herself as Xia Le'r first charmingly smiled, then politely greeted Chu Feng.

“So it’s Senior Xia. I wonder what matters you have by looking for me at this time?” Chu Feng also politely greeted back.

“Junior Chu Feng, did you have dinner yet?” Xia Le’r asked.

“Eh... Not yet.” Chu Feng looked around him and he saw many people were indeed eating dinner. After he set up his tent, he was cultivating since then so he did not eat dinner. On that topic, he really was a bit hungry.

“Coincidentally, I just finished making dinner, so I would like to invite you to come over and eat together with me, to have a taste of my work.” Xia Le’r softly invited.

“This...doesn’t seem to be too good right?” Chu Feng hesitated a bit. After all, right now, the resting grounds of males and females were already separated. It would be hard to avoid any disturbances if he, a male, went into the resting area of females.

“Ho... The sky just got dark, and my juniors and seniors haven’t rested yet. How is it inconvenient? Junior Chu Feng, it’s not like you’re afraid that I’ll do anything to you right?” On her face, there was an expression that showed she was in a difficult situation.

“Of course not. Since it is like this, I’ll humbly accept your invitation.” Seeing that, Chu Feng hurriedly accepted. After all, she was a female, and if he truly refused after she invited himself in front of so many people, it would really put her in an awkward position.

So, since Chu Feng was invited by Xia Le'r, he headed towards the female's resting area.

“He should really die. Where did this brat get this luck from, to be able to have a beauty invite him over for a meal?”

“Ahh, we're so bitterly eating rations yet he can go have a taste of a table of good dishes made by a beauty. He could truly anger a person to death.”

“God damn. Although this female from the Prestigious Villa is beautiful enough, she truly doesn't have good judgement of grade. What kind of eyes does she have? How does she have her eyes on Chu Feng, the damn young brat?”

Seeing the departing backs of Chu Feng and Xia Le'r, some people envied, some people admired, and especially Song Qingfeng and the others who recognized themselves as extraordinary, they gnashed their teeth in fury.

After unsuccessfully hooking up with Zi Ling, they also switched their targets over to Xiao Le'r and the other beauties, but what they never would have thought was that even though Xiao Le'r and the others did not refuse so directly like Zi Ling, they still euphemistically refused their good intentions.

Right in front of their eyes, the girl they liked had actually went up to invite Chu Feng. How could they accept that? They truly had a stomach full of anger, yet there was no place to let it loose. Simultaneously, their hatred towards Chu Feng became a bit

stronger.

“Waa, I never would have thought that your handiwork would be this good!”

The tent of Xia Le’r wasn’t as simple and rough as Chu Feng’s. It was extremely exquisite. Especially the insides of the tent. Chairs, tables, what should be there was there. How did it even look like staying in the wild? It was simply as if it was a warm and comfortable room.

But at that very instant, Chu Feng did not have the mind to admire the layout of the room. His appetite was suspended enough by the table of good dishes, and he was currently pulling his sleeve back, revealing his arm, and unrestrainedly stuffing himself with food.

“It’s great if you like it, and eat more if you do!” Xia Le’r stayed by Chu Feng’s side and kept on pouring wine and bringing food for Chu Feng. She provided extremely good service.

“Senior Xia, three big bowls of wine have already been poured from your little wine flagon. How is there still more?” As Chu Feng looked at the wine flagon that wasn’t even an inch big, then looked at the huge porcelain bowl in his hand, he felt a bit puzzled.

“Hehe, Junior Chu Feng, my flagon is a treasure! It has the same effect as Cosmos Sacks. Although it is only as big as my palm, within it, there are three big tanks of wine and even if you continuously drink for an entire month, you will absolutely not be

able to finish it.” Xia Le’r smiled and explained.

“There’s actually such a magical thing? Senior Xia, could you lend it over for me to have a look?” As a World Spiritist, Chu Feng was very interested in all sorts of new and strange gadgets. After knowing that the flagon was a treasure, he couldn’t help but take it over from Xia Le’r hands and looked over it in detail.

But from the surface, Chu Feng could not see anything special about it. So, he projected his overflowing Spirit power into the flagon and wanted to seriously study it for a while.

huaaa~~~~ But who would have thought that just as Chu Feng’s Spirit power touched the flagon, it had actually exploded and at the same time, a huge amount of wine came spilling, and as Chu Feng was caught off guard, it sprinkled over his entire body.

“Junior Chu Feng, are you okay? I forgot to remind you. You cannot use Spirit power to inspect it or else it will explode.” Seeing that, Xia Le’r hurriedly wiped the wine on Chu Feng’s body and her face was filled with expressions of nervousness and guilt.

“Ehh, Senior Xia, I am really sorry. I didn’t know that this flagon couldn’t be inspected with Spirit power. But don’t worry, I, Chu Feng, will compensate for it.” Chu Feng felt shame by unintentionally destroying the flagon.

“Junior Chu Feng, what are you saying? This is but a toy and it is not worth anything. There’s no need for you to compensate.”

“Look! Your clothes has been drenched and you’ll catch a cold like this. How about I go out first, and you quickly change your clothes. After changing, then continue eating.” Xia Le’r wasn’t even concerned about her own flagon. Instead, she was worried about Chu Feng’s body.

“That’s fine.” Seeing Xia Le’r like that, a streak of warmth rose from Chu Feng’s heart. Although he didn’t feel anything from her beautiful appearance, when she took care of him so considerately, he felt feelings of friendliness.

So, after Xia Le’r turned around and walked out of the tent, Chu Feng took off his clothes that were drenched with wine.

swish

But just at that time, the tent that Chu Feng was in was suddenly lifted up and Chu Feng, whose upper-half was naked, was revealed in the wild.

“Help! Quickly help me!” And just at that time, an incomparably frightened call sounded out behind Chu Feng, and after he turned his head around to look, it was Xia Le’r.

At that instant, her beautiful skirt was already ripped to shreds and quite a bit of snow-white skin was revealed beyond the clothes. Both of her hands were crossed in front of her chest, blocking the snow-white double peaks in front and she was sobbing with incomparable grievance.



“Senior Xia, what happened?” Seeing that, Chu Feng who had good impressions on Xia Le’r hurriedly ran up and tensely asked.

“Leave!” But who would have thought that just as he neared, Xia Le’r had actually pushed Chu Feng away, then quickly after, she also powerlessly laid on the ground limply, pointed at Chu Feng, and said,

“Chu Feng you beast! I kindly invited you to a meal, yet you put poison in the wine and wanted to take the chance to do immortal things! Are you even a person?!”

# Chapter 363: Entrapping Success

---

“Someone! Save me!” With an extremely weak voice, Xia Le’r loudly yelled.

At the same time, the females from nearby tents already ran over. Zi Ling also ran over. Even the males who were in another area ran over with extreme speed, and when they saw that scene, all of them revealed expressions of fury.

And looking at the situation around him and looking back at the appearance of Xia Le’r, Chu Feng truly wanted to yell loudly, “Damn your mother!”

Because he knew that he landed into her trap. Although he did not know why Xia Le’r needed to entrap himself, but currently, she did indeed succeed.

“Senior Xia, I have no grievances nor hatred with you. Why do you need to set me up like this?” Although he knew that the situation wasn’t going well, Chu Feng did not panic. He took out clothes from his own Cosmos Sack, wore them, and questioned Xia Le’r.

“Senior Xia, are you okay?”

“Junior Xia, don’t be afraid. We’re here and Senior Liu will arrive soon.” At the same time, the females from the Prestigious Villa already went up and covered Xia Le’r with clothes.

Very quickly, Liu Zhizun also ran over. He went next to Xia Le'r and asked with concern, "Junior Le'r, what's the matter here? What actually happened?"

"Wuu~~~~" At that instant, Xia Le'r first loudly sobbed with incomparable grievance, and only after that did she speak to Liu Zhizun with a timid and trembling voice,

"Senior Liu, I saw that Chu Feng was young and it wasn't easy for him being alone outside. So, after making dinner, I invited him to have a meal with me."

"But who would have thought that even though he isn't old, he's a lustful and shameless person with nerves that can cover the sky. He had actually put poison in my wine when I was looking away, and after my powers were all drained, he had immoral desires and he wanted to go violent on me."

"If it wasn't because the Mysterious Technique that I cultivated was deep, allowing me to keep a trace of power, I'm afraid that today, I would have been tainted by this beast in my own tent." As Xia Le'r spoke to that point, her cries were without sound and her face was filled with tears. As people looked, they felt pity.

And with her superb acting, the surrounding people were all successfully tricked by her. All of them looked at Chu Feng with steaming anger. Especially the males. Bloodlust appeared in their eyes, and they truly wished to cut Chu Feng thousands of times and split him in eight pieces.

However, Chu Feng was not too concerned about others. What he cared about was Zi Ling. The thing he cared about the most was Zi Ling's opinion on himself. After all, he still wanted to do it with the Divine Body.

But regretfully, although Zi Ling did not show the killing intent that others had nor the fury, at that instant, her little face of absolute beauty was a bit unnatural. She seemed to be a bit angry, and clearly, Xia Le'r brought the negative emotion over to her.

“Chu Feng, what a good person you are! You are young, yet your heart is so sinister. Junior Xia felt pity for you and generously invited you for a meal, but not only did you not know what gratitude was, you even repaid her kindness with hatred and treated Junior Xia like this.”

“If you are already like this in your current age, when you grow up, won't you become a second lewd old man? How many females in the continent of the Nine Provinces would suffer from your poisonous hands?” Liu Zhizun stood up, pointed at Chu Feng, and furiously roared.

At the same time, several hundred males moved together and tightly surrounded Chu Feng, sealing his escape. Some people were even approaching Chu Feng and they planned to attack him.

“Hmph. Damn Liu Zhizun, you only heard her one-sided words yet you determined that what she said was the truth as if you personally saw what happened. Could it be that this scene was

directed by you?” Chu Feng was also not afraid and instead, he started to rebuke Liu Zhizun.

“Nonsense.” After hearing those words, Liu Zhizun’s expression changed, then quickly after, he said, “Many people have seen your actions. You still dare to provide excuses?”

“Excuses? I, Chu Feng, have no need to provide excuses because I know that they will be useless.”

“But Liu Zhizun, and also Xia Le’r, you two remember this well. I, Chu Feng, am not fun to entrap. Sooner or later, I will let you two pay the price.” Chu Feng was also angry. Looking at the pair of dogs in the distance, he fiercely yelled.

“Damn Chu Feng, you even dare to speak such malicious words to threaten! I’m afraid that you won’t have the chance to take revenge on Senior Liu and Senior Xia.”

“Brothers! Let’s go at the same time and tie this little lustful demon and evildoer, Chu Feng, with the ropes of the law!”

Within the crowd, someone suddenly loudly yelled, and after that person yelled his throat out, Chu Feng could distinctly feel that from all directions, layers of boundless auras were surrounding and attacking him.

“Hmph. There are different types of people who throw rocks at people who fall into a well. I, Chu Feng, remember those who

attacked me in my heart. The grudge between us will be returned in the future.” Chu Feng leaped, and with a flash under his feet, he rose into the air and shot towards the night sky like an arrow leaving a bow.

“How is this possible? This brat can actually fly?”

Seeing Chu Feng rise into the air, everyone couldn't help but be astonished. After all, walking on air wasn't something that those in the Profound realm could do, yet such a young man like Chu Feng had actually done it. How could they not be shocked?

“He only grasps a special type of martial skill. Everyone, don't worry. A defense formation has already been laid here. Not only does it block the outside, it also blocks the inside. Today, even if Chu Feng has wings, he will not escape.”

However, when he faced Chu Feng's escape from flight, Liu Zhizun disdainfully snorted coldly and with a thought, an invisible layer of Spirit Formation appeared and it enveloped the mountain, the forest, everything.

Liu Zhizun was also a World Spiritist and he grasped the power of grey-coloured Spirit Formations. When the Spirit Formation was being laid, he became the person who controlled the opening and closing of the formation.

“Hmph.”

However, facing the Spirit Formation that already covered the sky, Chu Feng only coldly snorted and with a thought, the power of grey-coloured Spirit Formation covered his body and it actually had the appearance of a key.

Then, he faced towards a point in the Spirit Formation above and charged straight at it. With a boom, the Spirit Formation was actually destroyed. Chu Feng passed through, and he started to escape towards the distant horizon.

“Dammit. This brat laid a hole in the Spirit Formation. He already planned this out for a long time.”

Seeing the Spirit Formation he opened up was so easily broken through by Chu Feng, Liu Zhizun was not lightly angered. He heavily regretted letting Chu Feng join in laying the Spirit Formation because otherwise, he wouldn't have left an opportunity for him to safely escape.

“Don't worry, he is but a mere brat in the 3rd level of the Profound realm. How could he possibly escape from our hands?”

“Hand this brat over to us.”

However, when Chu Feng broke open the Spirit Formation, three bodies in the crowd rose into the air, and with even faster speeds than Chu Feng, they chased after him.

The three of them were none other than Song Qingfeng, Bai

Yunfei, and Liu Zhizun who were already filled with displeasure, even hatred, towards Chu Feng.

After seeing three people leaving, many people couldn't help but breathe a sigh of relief. Although the three geniuses didn't have too proper behaviors, after all, they were Heaven realm experts. Since they went out, no matter how much more Chu Feng's methods defied common sense, he was certainly going to be caught.



# Chapter 364: Come Chase After Your Grandfather

---

At that instant, Chu Feng was using the Imperial Sky Technique and resisting the air to walk.

However, before escape for too far, he felt three boundless auras quickly chasing after him.

He turned his head to look back, and in the horizon behind, they gave off three atmospheres so horrifying that they surged. The three auras were extremely powerful and even the air twisted.

In the night sky, the surging atmospheres did not even seem like atmospheres. They seemed more like three horrifying faces, and the reason why they were like that was because the ones who emanated them were filled with bloodlust.

And as the three terrifying atmospheres neared, Chu Feng saw their faces clearly. They were exactly Song Qingfeng, Bai Yunfei, and Liu Xiaoyao.

“Song Qingfeng, Bai Yunfei, Liu Xiaoyao. Are you three not the dog legs of Liu Zhizun? He doesn’t come chase after me, so why the hell are all of you coming over?” Chu Feng turned his head around and cursed.

“Damn brat. Continue cursing! Curse louder! In a while, you’ll know the consequences of cursing us.” Song Qingfeng and the

others disliked Chu Feng already before, so since there was actually a chance to openly and justly deal with Chu Feng, how could they let it go?

“Three scums, do you truly think you can catch up to your grandfather, me, with your tiny short legs?”

“I know that the three of you hiddenly love Zi Ling, but let me, your grandfather, tell you this. Sooner or later, Zi Ling will be mine. The three of you shouldn’t even think about getting her.”

“Come! Chase! Continue chasing! Come chase your grandfather! If today, you are able to catch up to me, I’ll say that all of you are impressive; if you can’t catch up to me, then go and regret.”

“Not only you three, the powers behind your backs will also pay the price for today’s actions. Wait for me, your grandfather, to go over to your Fire God School, Hidden White Sect and Free and Unrestrained Valley to pay some visits.”

After speaking those words, the Profound power in his body suddenly started to change, and quickly after, a large area of azure-coloured gas started to surge out of his body and it became the appearance of an azure dragon as it condensed under Chu Feng.

“Brat, quite big words you have there! Right now, I’ll come over to rip your mouth.”

Song Qingfeng could really not endure it anymore. Change

happened to his steps and his speed immediately increased significantly. He used a special bodily martial skill.

At the same time, Bai Yunfei and Liu Xiaoyao similarly also displayed the bodily martial skills that they were all proficient in as they speedily forced their way towards Chu Feng.

“Hmph. Three garbages. You should be ashamed of being in the Heaven realm. You can’t even catch your grandfather here who is only in the 3rd level of the Profound realm.”

“All of you truly wasted so many years in martial cultivation and threw away countless resources. Look at all of you! You’re running towards thirty years old, yet you can’t even catch a child who isn’t even an adult. Has your lives been lived as a dog?”

“Whatever, I, your grandfather, am in a hurry and I don’t have time to play with you. You can slowly stroll around. Heaven realm? It is truly a waste for this realm to be put on your bodies.”

Chu Feng kept on insulting the three people, and only when the three were going to reach him did he urge the azure dragon under him and darted towards the distant horizon.

“Little brat, not only will I rip your mouth, I cut off your tongue, split you into eight pieces, then shatter your corpse into ten thousand pieces.”

Song Qingfeng gnashed his teeth in anger and with a grab of his

hand, a huge hand condensed by Heaven power wanted to crush Chu Feng.

According to his estimations, with that distance, his hand formed by Heaven power should absolutely be able to grab onto Chu Feng.

But he never would have thought that the azure-coloured thing under Chu Feng's body swayed, its tail twisted, and it ran several thousands of meters away extremely swiftly. They were all flung far behind, and with a blink, it drilled into the forest underneath and disappeared.

“This...”

When they personally saw Chu Feng disappear with speed like lightning, Song Qingfeng and the others simultaneously stopped their steps. They stood in the air, their expressions were strange, and they looked at one another. Only after staring at each other without knowing what to do in that situation did they say at the same time, “How is this brat so quick?”

As Song Qingfeng and the two others were chasing after Chu Feng, Xia Le'r also returned to her own tent as she was accompanied by the crowd. In order to calm her emotions, several beauties decided to rest with her in this night.

However, there were still people gathering in the place where Chu Feng was wrongly accused and they were still incessantly talking about Chu Feng's matter with interest.

Especially the males who endlessly envied Chu Feng. They insulted him by saying he was a beast, inferior to even dogs and pigs, and in short, all sorts of horrible words were all thrown onto his body. The people who knew nothing had actually wanted to use that method to gain the admiration of the beauties.

“Junior Zi Ling, before, I already thought that Chu Feng’s character was inappropriate, but I never would have thought that he was truly a person like this. Luckily, his abilities weren’t enough and he revealed his true form.”

“If not, then given that my Prestigious Villa truly gave a lady to him, that would simply be the same as my Prestigious Villa pushing a good female into a pit of fire.” Liu Zhizun walked to Zi Ling’s side with a face of concern.

And after hearing those words, Zi Ling’s eyes flashed as if she detected something, but she didn’t say much. She only sweetly smiled and said to Liu Zhizun, “Luckily Senior Liu is here, or else there would truly be no safe feeling while having an event in this place.”

“Junior Zi Ling, if you are afraid, I can set up my tent next to you. With me by your side, not to mention scum like Chu Feng, even if it is a Monstrous Beast, I will absolutely not let it return where it came from.” Seeing Zi Ling who was like a little bird relying on a person, Liu Zhizun instantly rejoiced as he patted his chest and guaranteed.

“Ho... I’ve taken your good intentions to heart. However, males and females splitting up to rest was the rule you set. As the leader

of this event, you can't break your own rules right?" Zi Ling sweetly smiled. Her smile could bewitch tens of thousands and it moved one's heartstrings.

"This..." After hearing Zi Ling's words, Liu Zhizun's face was filled with depression and he truly wanted to fiercely slap his mouth.

He regretted setting such a rule. In reality, when he set that rule before, it was to prevent Zi Ling from keeping Chu Feng by her side, which gave Chu Feng advantages.

But he never would have thought that the rule that he set messed himself up. So, he hurriedly thought cleverly, and said while smiling,

"Today is the first day that everyone is getting close, and after all, we are still not familiar with one another so it wouldn't be too appropriate to sleep together."

"When everyone is familiar with one another tomorrow, we can set up tents together. After all, if there are any sudden situations, it would be easier to deal with if everyone gathers closer to one another."

"We'll all listen to your arrangements." The beautiful smile was, from start to finish, still hung on Zi Ling's face. She seemed abnormally cute, and quickly after she also said, "Senior Liu, I feel a bit sleep so I'm going to go back and rest first. Senior Liu, you should also rest early."

“Ahh, yes. Don’t worry, even if I’m not next to you, I can still guarantee that you won’t be disturbed by others.” Liu Zhizun’s face was filled with consideration and his lustful eyes were constantly staring at Zi Ling. Only after Zi Ling walked into her own tent did he smile and said as he got his way,

“Only I, Liu Zhizun, am worthy of such a beautiful person. All other males should not even think of approaching her. Those who go near, I will put to death.”

# Chapter 365: Horrifying Force

---

swish swish swish

Soon after Zi Ling returned to her tent, three bodies descended from the sky and landed within the group of people.

“Bai Yunfei, Song Qingfeng, and Liu Xiaoyao have returned!”

After seeing the three people, everyone was in ecstasy and they all surrounded them at the same time.

However, after they saw that Chu Feng wasn't next to the three of them, the joy on their faces instantly froze.

“What happened? Where's Chu Feng?” Liu Zhizun also walked over and asked the three people.

“That brat was too strange. He used an extremely powerful method and a thing that looked like a snake yet was not a snake, looked like a dragon yet was not a dragon appeared under him. I don't know if it was a Monstrous Beast or something. Anyway, its speed was oddly quick and it disappeared with a blink. We could not have caught up.” Song Qingfeng said exactly what happened.

“What? Even three peak geniuses in the Heaven realm could not catch up to Chu Feng?”



“That Chu Feng is a bit too strong isn’t he? What should we do? That brat is too mysterious. Who knows what other special methods he grasps. If he comes back in the future for revenge, what should we do?”

At that instant, people panicked. They couldn’t help but remember the words of revenge that Chu Feng said to them when he was escaping.

Especially when they recalled Chu Feng’s super strong battle power when he fought Jie Qingming as well as his strange and special methods, more and more, they felt that Chu Feng was too dangerous. If he were to be developed, his might could not be blocked and all of them would suffer.

“Truly garbage.” And after knowing that Chu Feng had actually ran away, Liu Zhizun’s face also immediately sank.

Originally, he wanted to use their hands to remove Chu Feng and with that, many troubles could be avoided. After all, Chu Feng was part of the World Spirit Guild, and to the World Spirit Guild, he had many hesitations so he didn’t want to personally kill Chu Feng.

But he never, ever, would have thought that Song Qingfeng and the two others were that useless. Not to mention catching Chu Feng to give him a lesson, they didn’t even touch his shadow and they directly let Chu Feng run away. He was extremely furious because that was equal in losing a huge chance in killing Chu Feng.

“It’s not early now. My seniors and juniors from the Prestigious Villa also need to rest, so everyone, return and rest.” After Liu Zhizun, who was in a very horrible mood, yelled at the crowd for a while, he took the lead to walk back to his own resting area.

As for Song Qingfeng and the two others who were insulted as garbage by Liu Zhizun in front of the crowd, they were extremely displeased, but they who knew the strength of Liu Zhizun did not dare to say anymore. He could only mutter in a quiet voice, “God damn, you’re truly taking us as your subordinates! Just you wait, sooner or later, you’ll receive the consequences.”

At the same time, after getting rid of Song Qingfeng and the others with the wondrous bodily martial skill, the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens, just in case, Chu Feng speedily flew for quite a bit more. Only after feeling that an absolute distance had been pulled apart and that there shouldn’t be anyone chasing after him did he sneak into the mountain range.

“This Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens is truly an outstanding bodily martial skill.”

“The ancestor said that this martial skill was evolved from the Secret Skill he grasped, which also means that the Secret Skill is undoubtedly more profound than this martial skill.”

“Which means that the Secret Skill the ancestor grasps should be an extremely miraculous bodily martial skill. I truly want to get my hands on it.”

“Right now, I have the peerless attacking White Tiger Slaughtering Technique as well as the indestructible Black Tortoise Armor Technique. If I also get an extremely quick Secret Skill, when I exchange blows with others, wouldn't I be unbeatable?”

For the first time, in a real battle, Chu Feng felt the wonderfulness of the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens and he looked more and more forward to the Secret Skill the Azure Dragon Founder grasped because he knew that it would certainly be a method that was above the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens.

“Wuaa~”

But just at that time, an angry roar suddenly rang out from a distance. The sound was extremely deafening and it was even more horrifying than the roar of a fierce tiger.

After that sound rang out, Chu Feng could feel the ground under his feet tremble like an earthquake. Quickly after that, there was even a violent gale that came crashing on him and the trees around Chu Feng were swaying from the wind blowing.

“Monstrous Beast. It's a Heaven realm Monstrous Beast.”

After hearing that sound as well as the might it created to its surroundings, Chu Feng already confirmed his opponent's strength. It was a Monstrous Beast. A Heaven realm Monstrous Beast.

“Wuaa~”

Suddenly, the Monstrous Beast miserably cried out, and following that, Chu Feng could clearly see and hear the forest in front of him booming. A large area of trees quickly collapsed, dense smoke rolled and charged into the sky.

“Crap.”

With his sharp Spirit power, Chu Feng felt the presence of an extremely terrifying current of air in front of him, and that terrifying current of air was currently engulfing everything and heading straight towards him.

Aware that the situation was going towards a bad direction, Chu Feng subconsciously wanted to escape, but he was still one step slower.

boom Just as Chu Feng wanted to turn around, a huge force flew and charged straight towards him head-on, and as he was within that force, he had no way of resisting. He could only go along with the flow and be pushed by the force.

At that instant, Chu Feng could feel that sand, rocks, broken wood, and even a Monstrous Beast with petty strength, being blown by that huge force.

“Wuaa~”

Finally, that burst of force weakened and Chu Feng finally fell onto the ground. He raising his head to look at his surroundings, and he discovered that everything was in chaos around him. Especially behind him, there was a road caused by the destruction of terrifying force.

From the powerful force, the Monstrous Beast that was blown along with Chu Feng was already crushed to death. Even Chu Feng suffered some slight injuries and his clothes were all tattered.

“So strong. What level of power does one need to have to create such powerful destruction?” Seeing the large area of destroyed forest, Chu Feng was shocked because he felt that the guy who had such level of destruction power would certainly be an extremely frightening existence.

But just at that time, with crashing sounds, the ruins in front of Chu Feng suddenly dashed into the air. Rocks and dirt flew everywhere and an enormous huge thing bore out. At the same time, an extremely terrifying aura engulfed everything.

It was a Monstrous Beast. That Monstrous Beast did not transform into a human shape and it was still, completely, in a Monstrous Beast state.

It was three meters tall, ten meters long, its shape was like a wolf, but every single fur on its body was like a sharp blade. From the insides of its body, it emanated extremely powerful aura. It was the Heaven realm. It was that Monstrous Beast in the Heaven

realm.

However, it was injured because several of its sharp fur were broken off and a large amount of blood flowed out from its flesh. Even quite a few of its huge and pointy teeth were snapped off.

After seeing Chu Feng, its dim green-coloured eyes instantly lit up. It emanated incomparable fury and hatred, opened its mouth, and wanted to bite Chu Feng.

“Crap.”

At that instant, Chu Feng hidden cursed. With such a distance, he had nowhere to escape. The Monstrous Beast’s powerful aura already thoroughly locked Chu Feng in place.

Seeing the continuously approaching blood big mouth, Chu Feng felt that he was going to become its food, be torn into shreds by it, then swallowed into its stomach and refined into blood.

# Chapter 366: Sudden Change

---

boom

But just as Chu Feng thought he was doubtlessly going to die, a row of light abruptly descended from the sky and fiercely slammed onto the body of the Monstrous Beast.

That object's speed was extremely quick and its power was extremely strong. When it collided into the body of the Monstrous Beast, the beast's body instantly sank, and not only did it stop its attack on Chu Feng, it even sank into the ground and a mouthful of blood was sprayed out. It had actually died and breathed no more.

That sudden change caused Chu Feng to be shocked. When he raised his head and looked, he couldn't help but be taken aback.

Because he astonishedly discovered that the Heaven realm Monstrous Beast was crushed to death, and it wasn't even some unknown object. It was a thin little old man.

That old man wasn't even 1.5 meters tall, and he was very skinny, as if a gust of wind could bring him away.

Although the old man's appearance was nothing special, his eyes were particularly spirited. The most important part was that Chu Feng was unable to see through the old man's cultivation, and he was like the head of the Prestigious Villa, being so unfathomably deep.

“Hey, boy, you’re here for the Marriage Gathering right?”

The old man also discovered Chu Feng. Putting strength into his waist, he did a beautiful flip in the air and landed next to Chu Feng. He raised his head, looked, with his spirited eyes, he assessed Chu Feng in detail.

“Senior, may I dare to ask who you are?” Chu Feng did not directly reply, and he wanted to know the identity of the old man.

“I am the guest elder of the Prestigious Villa, Zi Xuanyuan.” The old man patted his chest and said.

“Zi Xuanyuan? That surname... Perhaps he is related in some way to Zi Ling?”

After hearing those words, a thought rose from Chu Feng’s heart. After all, there weren’t many people with the surname of “Zi”, and up until now, he only knew two people who had that surname. One was Zi Ling, and the other was the old man in front of his eyes.

“On that topic, my baby granddaughter seems to also be participating in the Marriage Gathering and she is also in the event in this Thousand Monster Mountain. Boy, do you know my granddaughter? Do you know where she is?” Zi Xuanyuan suddenly asked.

“Elder Xuanyuan, your granddaughter is...?”



“Ah, that girl is called Zi Ling. You should know who she is right?”

“This...” Although he already suspected, after that guess was confirmed, Chu Feng still felt that it was a bit inconceivable to have actually met Zi Ling’s grandfather in this place. Obviously, that was not anything good.

The most important thing was that Zi Ling’s grandfather seemed to be even more overpowering than Zi Ling. He was an unfathomably deep expert. If Zi Ling told her grandfather about the matter of him taking the Secret Skill away from herself, wouldn’t Chu Feng receive the consequences?

“So you’re Lady Zi Ling’s grandfather. Of course I know who she is, but without hiding anything, Elder Xuanyuan, although I came to participate in the Marriage Gathering, I am here for the event.”

“However, I accidentally got lost. I’ve already been separated from them for a whole day, and right now, I truly don’t know where Lady Zi Ling and the others are.”

Chu Feng had just escaped from that place, so how could he throw himself into back into the net? And even bringing such an overwhelmingly powerful old man! He would simply be looking to die.

“Ohh, so it was like that. Boy, you’re truly stupid enough.”

“But no matter. Your luck is good as you met me. I’ll bring you back to them.”

As Zi Xuanyuan spoke, he got a map out from who knew where. The map was the same as theirs: the map where the event area was marked.

“Elder Xuanyuan, there is no need to trouble you. You can go find yourselves on your own as I don’t want to rely on your strength to return.”

“After all, this is an experience. I carelessly got lost, and that is because I am not capable enough. I must fill in such incapability. So, I want to rely on my own power to find my way back.” Chu Feng shook his head and refused.

“Ahh, you just don’t know how dangerous this place is. Boy, with your strength, you are simply looking for your own path of death by walking around here randomly.”

“Senior, it’s really fine, I should still...”

“No more useless words, let me bring you back.”

Zi Xuanyuan did not listen to Chu Feng’s nonsense. He extended his hand, grabbed, and grabbed onto the front folds of Chu Feng’s clothes. Quickly after, Chu Feng only felt a blur in front of his eyes and gusts of violent wind started to blow next to his ear. He was

already brought into the air by Zi Xuanyuan. His speed was quick and it was actually several times quicker than when Chu Feng used his Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens.

Also, Zi Xuanyuan had very strong sense of direction and he seemed to understand the landscape of the Thousand Monster Mountain quite well. So, after going around in the air for several loops, he quickly locked onto the location where the event was held.

Within the area of the event and after circling around for a while more, Zi Xuanyuan's face suddenly changed and along with Chu Feng, they stabbed straight into the forest underneath.

As they landed into the forest, Chu Feng hidden cursed became from the appearance of the forest, he could tell that it was the place where Liu Zhizun and the others set up camp. It seemed like this time, a disaster was heading his way.

“This...”

However, after Chu Feng landed into the forest and saw everything in front of his eyes clearly, his face couldn't help but change.

Because, he astonishedly discovered that in the forest, it was in completely chaos. The Spirit Formation was destroyed and the tents that were set up were also ripped into shreds. Even from a nearby place, there were dozens of various corpses laying there. They were the ones who participating in this Marriage Gathering

and their deaths were all very wretched. Not a single complete corpse was left behind.

“Dammit.” Seeing that scene, Zi Xuanyuan seemed to have guessed something and the uneasiness on his face couldn’t help becoming a bit stronger.

“Why did this happen? They were just nice and well, so it is possible that...?” And Chu Feng’s face was also, similarly, filled with shock. He never would have thought in the short amount of time that he left, such a change happened. Obviously, Zi Ling and the others had met with misfortune

Looking at such cruel methods and the traces of destruction from claws, Chu Feng roughly guessed who did all of that. Clearly, they were attacked by Monstrous Beasts, and they were extremely strong Monstrous Beasts or else with Zi Ling’s, Liu Zhizun’s and the others’ power, it would not be possible for everything to end up like this.

Chu Feng was not concerned about the life or death of others, but after all, Zi Ling had a Divine Body and Chu Feng still wanted to gain some benefits from her body, so naturally, he did not hope that anything bad would happen to her.

Thus, Chu Feng hurriedly spread out his Spirit power as he wanted to find some clues.

Although he did not expect much, he had actually felt some signs of life. Within the corpses that laid on the ground, there was still

someone living.

“Elder Xuanyuan, this way!”

Chu Feng hurriedly ran towards that person. Only after running near did he discover it was a male. He no longer had any of his legs, and it was as if someone forcibly ripped them off with brute force. But that person was indeed still living. Chu Feng could feel that he was still living.

“Oi, what happened to you?” Because that person was laying on the floor without moving, Chu Feng could only flip him over.

“Don’t kill me, don’t kill me!” However, just as Chu Feng touched him, he started to loudly yell. So it turned out that he wasn’t unconscious, and he was just broken from fright.

“My friend, don’t be afraid. I’m an elder from the Prestigious Villa.” Just at that time, Zi Xuanyuan also went close. He put his skinny palm onto that person’s head and imbued some special power.

With Zi Xuanyuan’s interference from his special power, the male’s incomparably frightful expression started to gradually steady and he had actually recovered his reason.

# Chapter 367: Taking A Risk To Save People

---

“My friend, what actually happened here? Where are the others?” After that person cleared up his mind, Zi Xuanyuan asked.

“We...we were attacked! There were traitors within the people who joined the event! There were spies sent by the Monstrous Beasts and with their special methods, they transformed into a human shape and blended with us, hiddenly selling us out!”

“We were attacked by Monstrous Beasts and many people were killed by Monstrous Beasts. The others were taken away by the Monstrous Beasts and they want to use those people to threaten the other big powers. We were plotted against! We were plotted against by the Monstrous Beasts!” Although he recovered his reason, that male’s nerves were still tight and he was extremely frantic. Obviously, he was not lightly terrified.

“They were all taken away? How about Liu Zhizun? Is it possible that even he wasn’t able to defeat the Monstrous Beasts?” Zi Xuanyuan continued asking.

“Very strong. That Monstrous Beast was very, very strong. It was a black-coloured toad and Liu Zhizun had no way of defeating it. No one had any way of defeating it. We didn’t have any power to fight back, and those who did all died. Even those who wanted to escape were all killed.”

As he mentioned the people who were taken away by the

Monstrous Beast, that male's face greatly changed as he was even more scared. Even his body started to intensely tremble.

“What about Zi Ling? Was Zi Ling also taken away?”

“Mm. She was taken away, everyone was taken away, Lady Zi Ling was also taken away.”

After asking to that point, Zi Xuanyuan's brows were slightly furrowed as if he already knew everything. So, he no longer continued asking and he said to Chu Feng, “Boy, dress up his wounds.”

“Ah.” Without delay, Chu Feng hurriedly treated that male.

“You? Ah, a bit lighter.” That male clearly recognized Chu Feng, but seeing that he came with Zi Xuanyuan, he did not say much and he only silently endured the pain of his legs being teared off while letting Chu Feng take care of his wound.

As a World Spiritist, taking care of injuries was a piece of cake. With a blink, Chu Feng finished treating the man's injuries and he also gave him a medicinal pellet.

He said it was a pellet that stopped pain, but in reality, it was a pellet that caused people to lose consciousness. Of course, if one lost consciousness, they would naturally not feel any pain.

And the reason why Chu Feng gave a medicinal pellet such as

that was actually also because he was worried that the male would say anything extra to Zi Xuanyuan.

It had to be said that the effect of the pellet was very good. Soon after the man took it, he started to become sleepy and very quickly, he went unconscious.

Only after handling that male did Chu Feng go up to ask, “Elder Xuanyuan, do you know what Monstrous Beast the black-coloured toad is? Even Liu Zhizun and the others weren’t able to defeat it.”

“It is one of the five Monster Kings, the Black Toad King.” Zi Xuanyuan replied.

“Black Toad King?” Naturally, Chu Feng had heard of the five Monster Kings. Although he did not know what they were specifically called, he knew that they were the rulers of the Thousand Monster Mountain. The five strongest Monstrous Beasts in the Thousand Monster Mountain.

“No wonder. No wonder we didn’t see any signs of the Black Toad King. I never would have thought that we were tricked by the Monstrous Beasts.”

“This matter isn’t easy to deal with now. This event is arranged by my Prestigious Villa, and the ones who are participating in the event are the most excellent people in the young generations from the schools everywhere in the continent of the Nine Provinces. If anything happens to them, my Prestigious Villa cannot carry that responsibility.”



Zi Xuanyuan's face was filled with worry, but from Chu Feng's perspective, he did not seem to be worried about those in the young generation in the other powers. He was clearly worrying about his own granddaughter, Zi Ling.

As for why he was so worried about Zi Ling, Chu Feng could generally guess the reason. Although Chu Feng had not seen the Black Toad King before, Chu Feng had heard that within Monstrous Beasts, some were naturally extremely lustful and they had extremely strong desires. Also, they liked the human beauties and things such as Monstrous Beasts going violent on human beauties had happened in many places before.

And the toad species were the ones with the vilest reputation within Monstrous Beasts and the ones whose horrible names spread the farthest.

So, not only was Zi Xuanyuan worried, even Chu Feng was worried. Toad species Monstrous Beasts were originally very lustful and Zi Ling was also an exceptional little beauty. Currently, she was being held as captive by the Black Toad King, and it would be hard for her to avoid being the best choice of defilement by the Black Toad King

However, Zi Ling was Chu Feng's target. An existence that gave him a chance to unlock the Divine Lightning's power in his body.

If Zi Ling's first time was taken away by the Monstrous Beast, it was equal to Chu Feng missing out a chance to unlock the true

power of the Divine Lightning in his body. Naturally, Chu Feng did not want something like that to happen.

So, Chu Feng hurriedly asked, “Elder Xuanyuan, since we know that it was done by the Black Toad King and it was carefully planned out by them, where do you feel that Lady Zi Ling and the others were taken off to?”

“The five Monster Kings control five areas, and this place is indeed the area that the five Monster Kings control. If I’m not mistaken, in this moment, Zi Ling and the others should have already been taken back to the Black Toad King’s nest.” Zi Xuanyuan said.

“Black Toad King’s nest? Elder Xuanyuan, what are you waiting for then? Quickly go save them?” Chu Feng urged.

“You boy, it’s easy when you say it. You think you can go to the Black Toad King’s nest whenever you want to?”

“Besides, I don’t even know where its nest is. If we knew where the nests of the five Monster Kings were, we wouldn’t need to spend so much effort in attacking them and we would have just directly surrounded their nest and slaughtered them!” Zi Xuanyuan impatiently shot a glance at Chu Feng.

And only at that instant did Chu Feng come a realization. He finally knew why Zi Xuanyuan’s face was filled with worry. So he didn’t even know where to go to save them.

In a situation like that, Chu Feng pondered for a long time. At the end, he looked at the advantages and disadvantages, and for the sake of getting a chance to unlock the Divine Lightning power in his body, he decided to take a risk and he said to Zi Xuanyuan, “Elder Xuanyuan, I think I know where the nest of the Black Toad King is.”

“What? You know?” After hearing those words, Zi Xuanyuan’s expression changed but he did not believe him yet. He cast his gaze of doubt towards Chu Feng, as if wanting to pierce through his lies and see through Chu Feng’s essence.

“I truly know. Without hiding the truth, I’ve seen a map in a place, and on that map, what it recorded was the Thousand Monster Mountain. On the map, there were five underground castles, so I’m guessing that they should be the nests of the five Monster Kings.” Chu Feng explained, as if everything he said was true.

“Oh? You’re speaking the truth? Where did you see it?” Zi Xuanyuan closely asked.

“Within some remains in the Azure Province. Elder Xuanyuan, if you don’t believe me, I can bring you over to the remains in the future for a look, but right now, saving people is the important part. Even if I cannot confirm that it’s the nest of the Black Toad King, it should be at least attempted right?” Chu Feng’s spoke lies as though they were the truth, and only he himself knew that he was lying.

However, Zi Xuanyuan was very cautious, and only after

thinking for a while did he nod his head and agree, “Okay, I’ll believe you once.”

# Chapter 368: Entering Deep Into The Enemy's Territory

---

After deciding, Zi Xuanyuan didn't bother with the male who fainted away. Bringing Chu Feng, they headed straight towards the so-called nest of the Black Toad King. It could be seen that he was impatient to go saving and he didn't want to delay it anymore.

Although the Thousand Monster Mountain was extremely big, at that instant, by flying in the air, the entire Thousand Monster Mountain could be seen by their eyes. In addition, Chu Feng was a World Spiritist and he had extremely powerful sense of direction so it wasn't too difficult to find the nest of the Black Toad King. However, what was required beforehand was the map.

It must be said that the map in Chu Feng's brain was indeed accurate without mistake. With Zi Xuanyuan's flight of extreme speed, very quickly, they found a hidden area.

That place was a rock forest. Rocks of unequal sizes and shapes were erected under the huge tree that reached the sky.

And within the rock forest, many Monstrous Beasts were roaming around, and within them, there were two Heaven realm Monstrous Beasts.

Although they seemed to be roaming around, very clearly, they were patrolling. Which also meant that it was very possible that it was their nest. Or else, it would not be possible for such savagely strong Monstrous Beasts to guard in that place.

“How about it? Elder Xuanyuan, I didn’t trick you right?” At that instant, Chu Feng and Zi Xuanyuan were hiding within a forest as Chu Feng said with pride. Because, as long as he found that place, it at least meant he didn’t trick Zi Xuanyuan.

“Mm. Not bad. I never would have thought that you would be rather not simple. Already a Grey-cloak World Spiritist at such a young age and your detection power is even so strong.” Zi Xuanyuan nodded his head in satisfaction, then quickly after, he asked, “That’s right. Boy, I still haven’t asked what your name is.”

Chu Feng already pondered that question at an earlier time and how he should reply if Zi Xuanyuan were to ask for his name.

At the end, he decided to not hide it from the senior expert. So, he said the truth, “I am Chu Feng.”

“Ahh, so it’s Chu Feng. Not a bad name. Chu Feng, [have a good trip!](#)” Suddenly, Zi Xuanyuan strangely smiled and said.

In some cases, “have a good trip” (lit. On the road, walk well) means “have a good trip...in the underworld” (after dying).

“Elder Xuanyuan, what do you mean?” Seeing that, Chu Feng slightly frowned and was aware that something was off. He subconsciously backed away.

“Heh, walk well, you.” And just at that time, Zi Xuanyuan’s palm already grasped onto Chu Feng’s shoulders, and following that,

with the wave of his big arm, like a scarecrow, Chu Feng was thrown out by him.

Everything happened too fast and before Chu Feng even reacted to it, he fiercely fell into the rock forest. The strong power forcefully created a deep pit.

“Dammit.” And when Chu Feng stood back up, his face couldn’t help but freeze and he hidden cursed in his heart.

Because at that very instant, he was already surrounded by Monstrous Beasts. To his front and back, there were two Heaven realm Monstrous Beasts that emanated unique Heaven power that only belonged to the Heaven realm and they sealed all his escapes.

“So it’s a human brat? Apprehend him!” One of the Heaven realm Monstrous Beast’s gaze was filled with fury. It could be seen that it already felt plenty of hatred towards humans.

However, after discovering Chu Feng, they did not directly kill him. They caught him, and after binding his entire body once with special vines, they carried Chu Feng and walked deeper into the rock forest, seeming to be bringing Chu Feng into their nest.

At that instant, Chu Feng was not panicking too much. He was endlessly pondering, thinking why Zi Xuanyuan had to do this to him. He didn’t have any reason to harm him because from everything before, the powerful old man clearly did not know the grudge between him and Zi Ling, and he also did not know that he was an escapee.

At the end, Chu Feng thought of two possibilities.

The first was that Zi Xuanyuan wanted to use Chu Feng. He wanted Chu Feng to shift the attention of the Monstrous Beasts.

After all, it was uncertain whether that place was the nest of the Black Toad King or not, nor was it known what kind of defenses were in that place. Rashly intruding at a time like that was indeed not the best tactic. Letting Chu Feng scout out the road was quite a nice choice.

Another possibility was that Zi Xuanyuan still had some cautiousness towards Chu Feng. He was afraid that Chu Feng was a spy sent by the Monstrous Beasts, so he wanted to test it out to see what reactions the Monstrous Beasts would have after seeing Chu Feng.

And no matter which reason it was, it at least showed that Zi Xuanyuan wasn't harming him directly, so Chu Feng did not have anything to worry about because he felt that sooner or later, Zi Xuanyuan was going to come out. After all, Zi Xuanyuan was still impatient to save his own granddaughter.

At the same time that Chu Feng was pondering, the group of Monstrous Beasts were not in leisure. They moved Chu Feng from the rock forest into the underground cave.

Everywhere on the walls of the cave, special pictures were engraved. Most of them were pictures of Monstrous Beasts, but



there were also pictures of humans. There were even pictures of humans and Monstrous Beasts battling, and roughly, Chu Feng could see the meaning behind the pictures of the mural.

It was the story of humans often bullying and humiliating Monstrous Beasts, and the Monstrous Beasts opposing intensely. As a summary, it portrayed the Monstrous Beasts as very just, and in contrast, humans became the side of evil.

From that, it could be seen that Monstrous Beasts already felt clear enmity towards humans at an earlier period of time. However, that wasn't what Chu Feng was concerned about. What Chu Feng was concerned about was where specifically were they bringing him to.

But the mystery was going to be unravelled soon. After going around in a few circles in the rugged cave, they entered an extremely wide one.

The wide cave seemed more like a palace. But compared to the golden and dazzling big palaces created by humans, that palace was too simple and crude.

However, as long as one remembered that it was a palace created by Monstrous Beasts, it would be rather acceptable. After all, Monstrous Beasts didn't seek for things like appearances. Besides, their taste in beauty was also an existing problem.

At that very instant, within the big palace, several thousand Monstrous Beasts were gathered. They stood orderly on the two

sides in the palace and all of their cultivations weren't weak, as they were all in the Profound realm.

But if one were to say who the strongest one was, it would be the one sitting on the chair made of skeletons.

That Monstrous Beast had a human body but a head of a beasts. It actually had a head of a toad, and it was even a black-coloured toad head. It was as disgusting as one could get.

However, although its appearance was very disgusting, its cultivation could be said to be unfathomably deep. At least, with Chu Feng's Spirit power, he had no way of detecting what cultivation it had.

With its revolting appearance in addition to its undetectably deep cultivation, without even thinking, Chu Feng knew that it was the Black Toad King.

But, that wasn't the key thing. The key thing was that in the middle of the big palace, there was a group of people gathered. The group of people were the same as Chu Feng as they were binded with special vines, and that group of people were exactly the same people who joined the event with him, Zi Ling, Liu Zhizun, and the others.

“Chu Feng?!” Seeing Chu Feng, Liu Zhizun and the others were all taken aback. Their faces were filled with surprise because they never would have thought that even Chu Feng, who ran so quickly, was caught to this place.

And after seeing them, Chu Feng was elated in his heart. First, at least it meant that Chu Feng did not come to the wrong place as he had already found Zi Ling and the others.

It was also because Chu Feng discovered that Zi Ling was within the group of people. Her undamaged purple-coloured skirt and her unique calm expression told Chu Feng one thing

It was that Zi Ling hadn't been defiled by Monstrous Beasts, and she was still a pure "chick".

## Chapter 369: Play A Game

---

“Chu Feng, it’s you?” After seeing Chu Feng, although those people were already a prisoner, they still expressed their hatred towards Chu Feng. Especially Song Qingfeng, Bai Yunfei, and Liu Xiaoyao. The expressions in their eyes could simply kill.

“What is this?” And after seeing Chu Feng being brought in, the Black Toad King also asked.

“My king, this human brat just now intruded into our territory so we caught him. Looking at his appearance, he should also be from the Prestigious Villa.” One of the Heaven realm Monstrous Beast explained.

“Oh?” After hearing those words, the Black Toad King’s blood-red big eyes spun around wildly as it started to assess Chu Feng.

“Heh, you misunderstand. I’m not part of the Prestigious Villa. Actually, I just passed by and I truly didn’t have any intentions to offend.” Chu Feng had a light smile on his face, and he who knew that Zi Xuanyuan was possibly hiding in the dark was not afraid of those Monstrous Beasts.

No matter how much more stronger the Black Toad King was, from Chu Feng’s estimations, Zi Xuanyuan’s strength would not necessarily lose to the Black Toad King’s, and the two of them should be able to fight fairly equally.

And to be truthful, although the number of Monstrous Beasts

were a lot, the ones with strength that was actually significant was only the Black Toad King. If the Black Toad King was being held back, Zi Ling and the others could absolutely be able to handle the remaining Monstrous Beasts.

“Chu Feng, you’re here to save us right?” But just at that time, Liu Xiaoyao expression changed. His face was touched, his tone had gratitude, and with incomparable passion, he called out Chu Feng.

As they faced Liu Xiaoyao’s change, at first, Song Qingfeng and Bai Yunfei didn’t understand, but very quickly, they reacted to his words. With a strange smile, they also said to Chu Feng,

“Chu Feng, I knew that you would put importance in brotherhood and you wouldn’t abandon us! So how about it? You’ve already notified the elders right? They should be quickly coming to save us right?”

“Chu Feng, it’s still you who’s the impressive one. On the road, you’re the one who killed the most Monstrous Beasts, and after this event is finished, I’m sure that Villa Head Qin Lei will grant you with a huge reward.”

“God damn, your schemes in harming others are too ridiculous aren’t they? Do you think that everyone is as idiotic as you?” Chu Feng coldly snorted and his eyes were full of disdain. He knew that Liu Xiaoyao and the others wanted to borrow a knife to kill. They wanted to make some lies to stir up the anger of the Monstrous Beasts, and borrowing the hands of the Monstrous Beasts, to kill Chu Feng.

“Mm?” However, the Black Toad King was obviously very intelligent and he saw that Chu Feng had some past incidents with Liu Xiaoyao and the others. So, on his ugly face, a smear of strangeness emerged and he said, “So it seems that you know each other!”

“We know, of course we know. He’s our good brother and I advise you to not touch him, or else his father will certainly stamp over your Thousand Monster Mountain.” Liu Xiaoyao did not leave it as that and he continued to fabricate lies.

“That’s right. Chu Feng’s father hates Monstrous Beasts the most. Every day, his father eats Monstrous Beasts and the bedding in Chu Feng’s home is made out of the fur of Monstrous Beasts.” Bai Yunfei also added.

“Do you dare to be anymore shameless? You don’t need to be so obvious in framing others right? Do you truly think that everyone has the same intelligence as all of you?” Chu Feng refuted.

“Hahaha, interesting, interesting! So it seems that there’s a story between all of you!”

“Little Cow, what actually happened? Tell me the story.” The Black Toad King first loudly laughed, then afterwards, he waved his hand towards a cow-headed Monstrous Beast nearby.

That Monstrous Beast was different from the others, as it was wearing the clothes of humans. It walked to the side of the Black

Toad King and narrated with a face filled with respect,

“So it’s like this, my king. This boy is called Chu Feng, and before all of you made your move, he wanted to go violent on that female over there, but he was discovered by this group of humans. So, the human were furious and wanted to kill Chu Feng, yet they could do nothing as Chu Feng escaped. But I never would have thought that he actually ran back to us!”

At that instant, Chu Feng also finally knew that the cow-headed Monstrous Beast was the spy who snuck within them, or else it would not be possible for it to know these kinds of things.

“Haha, so it’s like this. There are indeed grudges. Humans are humans, and every single one are ruthless and despicable organisms. You want to use me to kill your enemy? But you’re underestimating me a bit too much aren’t you?”

After knowing the truth, the Black Toad King looked at Liu Xiaoyao and the others with contempt, then after that, pointed at Chu Feng and ordered,

“Throw the one called Chu Feng over with them. Also, bring the other group of human brats over. Tonight, I want to play an interesting game.”

After the Black Toad King ordered, Chu Feng was thrown within Liu Zhizun and the others. Although Liu Zhizun and the others wished to kill Chu Feng at that very instant, they were helpless as they were also prisoners so they could only use their gazes to

threaten Chu Feng.

But sadly, Chu Feng completely ignored their gazes and because he was comparatively close to Zi Ling, Chu Feng nimbly twisted his body and without caring about face, he neared Zi Ling.

“Zi Ling, I’m here to save you.” Chu Feng went close to Zi Ling’s ear and said in a low voice.

Zi Ling first looked at Chu Feng, then looked at Xia Le’r who was within the group. After that, she fiercely glared at Chu Feng before coldly snorting, turning her little face away, and didn’t pay any more attention to him.

“Oh? You’re jealous?” Seeing that, Chu Feng first chuckled, but when he saw that Zi Ling still didn’t pay attention to him, he explained himself, “You wouldn’t truly believe the words that Xia Le’r said right? With your intelligence and wisdom, can you not see that I was wrongfully accused?”

“Chu Feng you brat, stay farther away from Junior Zi Ling or else I’ll kill you!” And seeing that Chu Feng was disturbing Zi Ling with misconduct, Liu Zhizun who was afar burned with anger and loudly yelled at Chu Feng.

“Come come! Let me see how you are going to kill me!” Seeing that, not only did Chu Feng not leave Zi Ling, he instead endlessly rubbed against Zi Ling’s body.



As for Zi Ling, no matter how she evaded, she could not evade away, and it was as if Chu Feng stained herself, so at the end, she could only powerlessly give up and allow Chu Feng to get close to her.

“Chu Feng, you better not leave this place alive or else I will make you regret it!” At that instant, Liu Zhizun grinded his teeth and smoke came out of his seven facial orifices. Even his eyes rolled back and it seemed that he was not lightly angered by Chu Feng.

“Shut up! If you dare to make so much noise again, I’ll cut off your tongue.” Just at that time, the Heaven realm Monstrous Beast didn’t like how Liu Zhizun made such a huge racket. It walked over and stepped onto Liu Zhizun’s body, then stepped his face to the ground and even his forehead cracked and his gums bled. That appearance was called miserable.

And as they saw that scene, everyone shut their mouths and didn’t dare to speak to threaten Chu Feng anymore. They could only look at Chu Feng as he endlessly rubbed against Zi Ling’s body and gained some small advantages from her.

Short after that, a group of people surged into the big palace from another side. Focusing his gaze to look over, Chu Feng couldn’t help but be shocked because within the group, he saw many familiar figures.

Within them, there was Gu Bo, Xu Zhongyu, and the others from the World Spirit Guild. There were also the people from the Jie clan such as Jie Qingming.

Even they were caught, and looking at their appearances, they seemed to have been caught before Chu Feng and the others.

“Chu Feng, even all of you were...” And after seeing Chu Feng and the others, the faces of Gu Bo and the others were filled with shock because that meant that their situation wasn’t looking too good.

After that, Jie Qingming and the others were like Chu Feng and the others. They were pushed into the middle of the palace and they sat in a circle.

At that instant, the Black Toad King stood up, strode with airs of extravagance and arrived in front of Chu Feng and the others.

At that very instant, on its ugly toad face, it revealed a standard toad light smile and said, “Everyone, shameless humans, how about we...play an interesting game?”

# Chapter 370: Sacrifice Self To Save Others

---

Game? After hearing those words, everyone's hearts couldn't help but be shocked and their faces changed, becoming extremely uneasy.

Because, they could hear that the game the Monstrous Beasts wanted to play with them was certainly not any good game. The Monstrous Beasts that were always ruthless were most likely going to torture them.

“Haha, although humans are innately despicable, shameless, and have vicious hearts, it has to be said that some human females do indeed have quite nice appearances. The females here today are quite rare beauties.” As the Black Toad King spoke, it extended its rough hand towards a beauty's face and touched.

“Ahh~~No!” Seeing that, the female instantly started to shriek frightenedly and her face was filled with fear.

“Stop! Black Toad King, do not act impetuously. We can discuss about anything, but if you dare to act wildly, my Prestigious Villa will not let you get away with it.” Liu Zhizun yelled out.

“Nonsense. You think that I'm afraid of your Prestigious Villa?” However, after Liu Zhizun spoke his words, the Black Toad King's expression changed and it was furious. With a thought, a layer of boundless Heaven power came sweeping out and collided into Liu Zhizun's chest and flew him away. The strong force caused Liu Zhizun to spit out a mouthful of blood while he was still in mid-air

and it splattered all over the floor.

Quickly afterwards, with another thought, boundless suction power emanated out from the insides of the Black Toad King. It sucked back Liu Zhizun, who hadn't fallen onto the ground yet, and hung him one meter in the air in front of him.

“Brat, don't think that I'm afraid of your Prestigious Villa, and even more so, don't make your Prestigious Villa seem so righteous. As for what kind of trash you are, there is no one who is more clear on that than me.”

“What did you say just now? Was it that, if I touched her, your Prestigious Villa wouldn't let me get away with it?” The Black Toad King's blood-red eyes, which were as big as two fists, were angrily glaring at Liu Zhizun who was being suspended in mid-air with a face filled with pain.

“I...” As he faced such a sinister gaze, Liu Zhizun clearly did not have any more confidence and he did not dare to directly reply.

“God damn, I'm asking you a question!” But just at that time, a huge slap from the Black Toad King came flying over and smacked Liu Zhizun's face along with his body away.

This time, like last time, Liu Zhizun did not fall onto the ground. Before he did, he was sucked back by the Black Toad King's horrifying suction power.

At that instant, the right side of Liu Zhizun's face already swelled up highly. It was so red to the point of complete abnormality and it was more like a stuffed bun. It could be seen how powerful the Black Toad King's slap was.

"I'm asking you! Reply! Is it that if I do anything to her, your Prestigious Villa will not forgive me?" The Black Toad King pointed at the female that it touched and loudly interrogated. Its voice was loud and clear, like thunder, and it caused the entire palace to tremble.

As he faced that situation, Liu Zhizun's gaze flickered as if thinking of an answer that could let him keep his life. So, at the end, he gnashed his teeth and said, "Yes!"

"Damn you." But who would have thought that just as he finished speaking, the Black Toad King gave him another big slap on the left side of his face.

The strength this time was the same as last time, so the left side of Liu Zhizun's face also swelled up and his handsome face could be said to be completely ruined.

"If I touch her, your Prestigious Villa will not let me get away with it. So when I haven't touched her, when I haven't caught all of you, have your Prestigious Villa let us get away?"

"Don't tell me you don't know what your Prestigious Villa's people are doing right now. Right now, they are slaughtering the lives of my Thousand Monster Mountain, and before this, my

Thousand Monster Mountain had never once offended your Prestigious Villa.”

“However, you better listen up. Don’t think that you’ve won. Don’t think that we’re afraid of you. Your Prestigious Villa is only a group of ordinary people. From the start, you have already been caught in our schemes.”

“Right now, they probably cannot survive and they will die soon. You’re still waiting for them to save you? Go dream! Hahaha...” Suddenly, the Black Toad King laughed madly. It didn’t seem like it was announcing its own victory, but more like letting out its own anger.

“Shameless humans, you should pay the price for your greed and ambition.”

As it spoke, the Black Toad King grabbed the female just now from the ground back up, then quickly after, it abruptly pulled and with some tearing noises, it ripped the female’s skirt into shreds. Her snow-white skin and alluring body were all revealed without anything remaining, and what was left behind was only the red-coloured undergarment that covered her front.

“Ahh~~~”

At that instant, the female crossed her arms in front of her chest and shrieked, but why would the Black Toad King care about her? So, with the wave of its big sleeve, it tossed her over to the cow-headed Monstrous Beast.

“Little Cow, because of your meritorious spying, this girl is rewarded to you. No need to hold yourself back, play with her straight until she dies! Hahaha~~~” The Black Toad King madly laughed.

“Thank you my king.”

That cow-headed Monstrous Beast did not restrain itself as it pressed the female onto the ground, pulled with its big hand, and tore off the red-coloured undergarment that was remaining in front of the female’s chest, revealing a pair of firm little white rabbits.

“Haha, truly beautiful!” As it saw such a stunning beauty, the cow-headed Monstrous Beast’s eyes instantly lit up and under him, a huge thing that was like a weapon rose.

“Save me, save me!” That female was deathly-white from terror and her soul could almost fly away. She hysterically cried for help, but in a situation like that, who would dare to save her?

“Stop!!” Just at that time, a male stood up and angrily yelled.

That man, looking at his age, seemed to be near thirty years old. His appearance was ordinary and there wasn’t any special points about it. His cultivation was in the 7th level of the Profound realm, and normally, his cultivation wasn’t considered to be weak, but when his age was compared to the others who were participating in the Marriage Gathering, he seemed overly mediocre.

However, despite the fact that his appearance was normal and his cultivation wasn't overwhelmingly stronger, his guts surpassed the group and he had actually dared to stand out in a time like this for the female.

“Oh? There is someone who dares to flaunt and be the hero? Not bad, you have courage.”

“You want to save a person right? Don't say that I'm not giving you a chance, but if you want to save her, take your life as an exchange. Do you dare?” The Black Toad King looked at the man and coldly said.

“I dare. As long as you let her go, take my life away.” That brother was quite just and in order to prevent that female from being wretchedly defiled, he was truly willing to give up his life. However, everyone could see that as he looked at the female, the expression in his eyes were off and he seemed to have some special adoration feelings towards that female.

“Good, you have bravery. Come! Bring him out.”

“Little Cow, release that girl. Later on, I'll give you another one for you to play with.” The Black Toad King said.

“No need. I can walk myself.” That male had a torch-like gaze as though he already made the resolution to die. As he was stared by countless gazes, he gradually walked out of the group of people.



At the same time, the female who was bare-naked also quickly wore her skirt and after being tied by the vines again, she walked back to the group of people.

But whether it was because she was not lightly frightened, or because she was originally cold towards others, when her shoulders brushed past the man's who saved her, she didn't even say any words of thanks.

That situation caused the male's expression to change. It could be seen that he seemed to really like that female, or else he wouldn't have given up his life to save her.

That result was obviously not something he expected because although he was going to die in place of the female, she didn't even look straight into his eyes.

At that instant, the Black Toad King assessed the man who walked out of the group of people, then looked at Liu Zhizun who was to its side and said, "I say. You're the damn number one disciple of the Prestigious Villa, yet you're even inferior to an outsider. Truly trash."

# Chapter 371: Truth Exposed

---

After the Black Toad King's words were spoken, Liu Zhizun's face was quite ugly as well. At the same time, everyone's gazes were looking at Liu Zhizun, and their eyes were similarly very strange.

Because, at a time like this, the one who should stand out the most was indeed Liu Zhizun, but after facing such a dangerous situation, he did not stand out. That couldn't avoid causing some people to be disappointed.

After that, the Black Toad King didn't pay attention to Liu Zhizun anymore. He cast his gaze towards the male with the ordinary face and said, "You can indeed die for her, because this is the game that I want to play with all of you."

"But very quickly, you will know that to you, perhaps death is an unfeasible request, perhaps death is an escape."

"Hedgehog, I'll leave this brat to you. There is no need for me to say what to do right?" After that, the Black Toad King looked at another Monstrous Beast that had sharp spikes all over its body. That Monstrous Beast was one of the two Heaven realm Monstrous Beasts.

"My king, just leave this to me." That hedgehog Monstrous Beast had a very large body and sharp weapons were everywhere on its body. Especially its claws. They were simply like murder weapons.

"Ahh!" After it arrived in front of the man, it raised its leg and

kicked him to the ground. Quickly after, it said with an extremely strange tone and an eerie gaze, “Don’t worry. I will make you endless recall this aftertaste and this life will never be forgotten by you.”

whoosh Suddenly, the hedgehog Monstrous Beast abruptly attacked and its sharp claws fiercely stabbed into the man’s back. Instantly, blood splattered everywhere and a miserable cry endlessly rang out.

“Ahh~~~~~” Feeling such sudden piercing pain from his back, the man howled in agony. However, that was merely the beginning.

After stabbing its claws into the man’s body, the hedgehog started to use all sorts of methods to ceaselessly torture the man. The level of cruelty simply caused people to not dare to look straight, and even Chu Feng’s scalp numbed.

It had to be said in terms of ruthlessness, humans were still a bit inferior to Monstrous Beasts. The bloodthirsty animals were really too savage.

As he was tortured by the hedgehog Monstrous Beast, very quickly, that man’s body had blood all over him and his limbs were incomplete, and as predicted by the Black Toad King, the man started to beg. He wasn’t begging to live, but begging to die because the current him would indeed rather die than live.

But how would the Black Toad King, who felt incomparable

hatred towards humans, easily let him go? The man was still always tortured, and after the man's blood ran out, his consciousness was extracted and tormented. It was only willing to stop after the man's mind collapsed and was thoroughly destroyed.

“Applaudable courage, but his perseverance was not too great. He died so quickly.” Looking at the man who breathed no more and was laying on the ground, the Black Toad King disappointedly shook his head, then after that, he grabbed with his big hand and threw another female to the cow-headed Monstrous Beast, looked towards the group of people, and said,

“The rules are the same as last time. As long as someone is willing to trade life for life, not only will this girl be able to continue living, she can even avoid being toyed with and abused.”

After hearing those words, everyone's faces changed greatly and all of them lowered their heads in silence, avoiding the Black Toad King's gaze.

“Timid humans!” The Black Toad King first smiled in mock, then after that, turned around and said to the cow-headed Monstrous Beast, “Little Cow, this time, you can play as you wish. Remember, play until death, and don't restrain yourself.”

“Thank you my king.” And why would the cow-headed Monstrous Beast restrain itself when it was already burning up in the flames of desire? He stripped off the clothes of the beauty in a very practiced way, then following that, started to violently play around with that beauty in front of the crowd.

“Ahh~~~~~Save me! Help! Ahh~~~~~It hurts! Ahh~~~~~”

At that instant, the female started to howl in a heart-tearing and lung-splitting way. It could be seen what kind of agony she was enduring.

But no one cared. Since they were unrelated in any way, who would be willing to take their life to save her? Especially after seeing how miserably the man before was tortured, a thing like that would not possibly happen again.

So, after a while of cruel abuse, the tragic female, at the end, died because of insufficient strength, and her process of dying was not much better than the man's.

“Ahh, humans are truly weak! They're finished so soon! Little Horse, you have done meritorious spying as well, so I'll give this one and you can handle her.”

“Thank you my king.” Just as the Black Toad King finished speaking, a cow-headed Monstrous Beast walked out from one of the palace's sides. Although it was a horse's head, one could still see how happy and excited it was at that moment. So it seemed like a large portion of Monstrous Beasts yearned for a taste of human beauties.

“Mm. This girl is truly not bad. I'll reward her to you.” After searching for a while, the Black Toad King had actually landed its gaze onto Xia Le'r. Its big claw swiped the air, and Xia Le'r floated

up and landed within the embrace of the horse-headed Monstrous Beast.

“Ahh, no, no!”

“Save me, save me!”

Xia Le’r never would have thought that she would become the next sacrifice. As long as she thought of the scene of the previous female being abused to death by the cow-headed Monstrous Beast, she was going to collapse inwards.

However, no matter how much she yelled for help, there was no one who cared about her. Seeing that the horse-headed Monstrous Beast was going to pull her skirt away and prepared to go violent on her, she could only cast her gaze towards Liu Zhizun and say, “Senior Liu, quickly save me!!”

But what kind of person was Liu Zhizun? How was it possible for him to be willing to give up his own life for someone like her? So naturally, he decided to lower his head and ignore.

“Liu Zhizun you bastard! What a waste it was to help you. Are you not going to save those in mortal danger? If you still don’t save me, I’ll announce what you did and let everyone know all the things you’ve done, and let everyone know what kind of person you are!” Xia Le’r started to insanely yell.

“Xia Le’r, don’t blurt out nonsense. What things do I, Liu Zhizun,

need to fear being revealed by you?” Liu Zhizun’s expression slightly changed and he coldly questioned.

“Fine! Damn Liu Zhizun, do you truly think that I won’t dare to say it?”

“From head to toe, you are a false, despicable person. You lied to me, and said that you were already set to be the future villa head by the current villa head, and from that, stole my body away. After that, you coerced and bribed me to help you do some unrevealable things.”

“You’re saying that I’m blurting out nonsense? Fine, I won’t talk about the distant past, I’ll talk about the recent. You wanted me to invite Chu Feng to a meal, then falsely accuse him for wanting to violate me. Was it arranged by you?”

“Don’t you think I didn’t know what you thought about. You were just feeling envy towards Chu Feng and Junior Zi Ling’s close relationship so you thought of a method like this in order to entrap Chu Feng.”

“I was blind, and I had actually believed the promise you set with me in order to do such conscienceless thing.” Seeing that Liu Zhizun wasn’t willing to come out and help, Xia Le’r didn’t hold herself back and stated all the actions done by Liu Zhizun in detail.

“What? This wouldn’t be true would it? Liu Zhizun is actually so despicable?”

And after Xia Le'r words came out of her mouth, it caused people to be abruptly shocked and every single one of them couldn't help but cast their gazes towards Liu Zhizun as they felt such disbelief.

After all, on the road here, Liu Zhizun pretended to be so righteous, he pretended to be filled with airs of just.

If what Xia Le'r said was true, didn't it mean that Liu Zhizun was, in reality, a complete phony? A complete hypocrite?

In actuality, even Zi Ling's beautiful eyes slightly trembled and she couldn't help but look at Chu Feng.

Seeing that, Chu Feng chuckled and said, "See? I told you, I was framed right?"

Zi Ling curled her lips, and after fiercely glaring at Chu Feng, she said, "You are no good thing either." After speaking, she turned her head around and no longer paid attention to Chu Feng.

"Xia Le'r, you truly know how to make up things. Do you truly think that everything will believe your idiotic lie?" At the same time, Liu Zhizun laughed loudly. Obviously, he could not admit that he had done that.

"Naturally, everyone is able to determine whether my words are true or false. I just want to give a word of advice to my sisters. Do not, ever, believe Liu Zhizun because he is a despicable person."



“As the number one disciple of the Prestigious Villa, he sees his own juniors being abused by others yet only watches on the side with hands in his sleeves. Purely that makes him unworthy to be the number one disciple of the Prestigious Villa.”

Xia Le’r hysterically yelled, expressing her current fury. Before death, she still wanted Liu Zhizun to lose all of his reputation.

However, that was unable to change fate. Before she finished speaking, the horse-headed Monstrous Beast who had intense lust started to move on her. With that, Xia Le’r became the second female to be sorrowfully sacrificed.

But Chu Feng did not have the slightest trace of sympathy because to his enemies, Chu Feng only felt hatred, regardless of gender.

## Chapter 372: If You Can, Come At Me

---

“Dammit. Why isn’t Zi Xuanyuan showing himself? Is it possible that he truly wants to ignore the life and death of the Prestigious Villa’s disciples?”

Although Chu Feng did not sympathize with the death of Xia Le’r, he still didn’t hope that too many innocent people would be killed by the Monstrous Beasts. After all, as long as Zi Xuanyuan showed himself, he could stop everything completely and there was no need for people to die.

But Zi Xuanyuan still hadn’t appeared yet, so Chu Feng really didn’t understand. He truly could not see through the thoughts of Zi Xuanyuan and why he hadn’t appeared yet to save people.

“No! Don’t kill me, don’t kill me!”

The Black Toad King extended his hands once more and pulled another beauty out from the crowd. That beauty was completely terrified and her face was filled with tears as she kept on begging.

“Don’t be afraid. I’m not going to choose you. Just now, I heard a name... I think it was Zi Ling? Can you tell me which one is Zi Ling?” The Black Toad King asked.

“Crap.” At that instant, Chu Feng’s nerves couldn’t help tightening as he hiddenly cursed in his heart. Even Zi Ling’s face couldn’t help but change and uneasiness flashed into her beautiful eyes.

“Really? As long as I say who Zi Ling is, you will let me go?” After hearing those words, the female’s eyes were roundly widened as if she saw the hope to life.

“I will let you live and absolutely no one will dare to touch you.” The Black Toad King guaranteed.

“There! Zi Ling is there! The one wearing a purple-coloured skirt is Zi Ling!” After listening, the female rejoiced and without hesitation, she pointed towards Zi Ling who was in the group of people. In order to protect herself, she directly choose to sell Zi Ling out.

“Oh? So this is Lady Zi Ling! She’s quite a rare little beauty! So she was hiding so well, no wonder I didn’t discover her.”

Seeing Zi Ling within the crowd, the Black Toad King threw the female in front of it back into the crowd and with a thought, boundless suction power sucked Zi Ling up from the group and she was placed in front of itself.

“Haha, truly beautiful! In my life, I have never seen such a beauty. No wonder there were people who fought for you in jealousy and harmed one another.”

“Lady Zi Ling, I would truly hate to kill such a beauty like you. How about...you become my wife?” The Black Toad King’s lustful eyes stared at Zi Ling, and it seemed that its heart was truly moved.

“No, don’t touch her!” Seeing that, Liu Zhizun loudly yelled.

“Mm? You don’t let me touch her? That’s fine! Give me your life as exchange. How about it?” The Black Toad King smiled and asked.

“I...” After hearing those words, Liu Zhizun’s face instantly changed greatly. He first looked at Zi Ling, then quickly after, hesitated for a bit; but at the end, he still silently lowered his head.

“Tsk tsk tsk. Lady Zi Ling, have you seen it yet? See how useless these humans are. Being together with them is truly wasting your own beauty. It’s best to accompany me and live happily right?” The Black Toad King loudly laughed. As it spoke, it opened its arms and wanted to bring Zi Ling into its embrace.

Seeing that the situation wasn’t good, the aura in Zi Ling’s body quickly started to change and a type of special power was surging. Her eyes that were as clear as water also started to change. Faint purple coloured light had actually appeared and horrifying power that existed outside of this world was contained within it.

When facing a danger to her life, Zi Ling was prepared to use all her strength, to use her Divine Body.

“Wait.” But just at that time, a loud and clear voice suddenly rang out behind Zi Ling.

Such a change caused the Black Toad King to be taken aback. Zi Ling's complexion also changed and she stopped using the power of her Divine Body. She turned her head to look back, and at that instant, even her beautiful eyes couldn't help but fiercely tremble.

Because, a body already stood up from the crowd behind her, and that person was none other than Chu Feng.

The current Chu Feng had a tranquil face and a smile hung on the corners of his mouth. He calmly faced the Black Toad King and said, "Let the one whom I love go. If you can, come at me."

After hearing those words, not to mention Zi Ling, even Gu Bo, Xu Zhongyu and the others were astonished. They quickly shot glances at Chu Feng. Especially Xu Zhongyu. He even hiddenly sent a mental message and advised Chu Feng to not be dumb. He could not cut off his life for a female and send his great future to the grave.

But Chu Feng did not care about all that. With a light smile on his face and relaxed steps, he stepped out of the crowd, and at the end, came in front of the Black Toad King and said, "Let her go. If you want to kill or want to cut, you come at me."

"Chu Feng you..." At that instant, on Zi Ling's usually calm little face, it was also filled with expressions of being touched. Within her pretty eyes, disbelief surged. No matter what, she never would have thought that as her life was threatened, it was Chu Feng who would stand out in front of her to protect herself.

“Boy, you are truly going to use your life to save her? You should know how miserable you will end up as right?” The Black Toad King intentionally looked at the remains of the male who was tortured to death by the hedgehog Monstrous Beast before, as if reminding what torment Chu Feng was going to face soon.

“No need for useless words. Let her go immediately. Didn’t you want to play some game? How do you want to play it? I’ll accompany you.” Chu Feng’s expression was serene and his face was indifferent. There was even a smear of disdain hung on the corners of his mouth.

Although he was calm on the surface, Chu Feng was struggling in his heart. Chu Feng was making a bet. He was betting his own life.

He bet that Zi Xuanyuan would save him as he saw he was going to die. If he won that bet, more or less, he would win some good feelings from Zi Ling. If he lost the bet, then he could only accept it.

If Zi Xuanyuan was truly the type of person to ignore those in mortal danger and was heartless, then Chu Feng felt that even if he could escape from the hands of the Monstrous Beasts, after leaving, he would still be plotted against by Zi Xuanyuan.

After all, in Chu Feng’s body, he had two Secret Skills! And there was only one method if others wanted to gain those Secret Skills: To kill Chu Feng.

“Haha, boy, you have guts.”

“Today, I will satisfy you. I’ll let you experience my methods.”

As it spoke, the Black Toad King had actually personally attacked. With the flick of his finger, an invisible current of air explosively shot out and pierced through Chu Feng’s chest. A row of bright-red blood also shot out.

However, such a powerful attack only caused Chu Feng to go one step back, and he didn’t even make any sound. Rather, a tiny smile rise from the corners of his mouth and he said,

“You should be ashamed of being a Monster King. Your method is only this? I see that you are even inferior to your hedgehog subordinate.”

“Damn brat, you want excitement? I’ll grant you that wish.”

Seeing that, the Black Toad King coldly smiled, and with a thought, Chu Feng was brought into the air by invisible power and quickly after, he was fiercely slammed onto the ground with the same invisible power.

The strong force caused wild crackling noises that came from Chu Feng’s back, snapping it in many places. The agony caused Chu Feng to grimace and he almost yelled out.

Following that, the Black Toad King flipped its palm and a strange object appeared within its hand. It was wiggling, and

looking closely at it, it was a one-inch long strange bug.

The body of the bug was white-coloured, yet it had densely packed black-coloured claws. It was extremely revolting, but the most important thing was that on the body of the bug, it was unexpectedly emanating an aura that caused Chu Feng to tremble even though it wasn't cold.



## Chapter 373: The Airs Of A King

---

“This insect is called the Bone Devourer. If it enters your body, it will, bit by bit, nibble away your organs, flesh, and at the end, even your bones will be eaten by it.”

“But before that, you will clearly feel the process of it nibbling your organs away. I’m guessing that you will certainly love this feeling.” The Black Toad King played around with the Bone Devourer in its hand and strangely smiled and said to Chu Feng.

“Tsk, so it’s a Bone Devourer. I even thought that it was some outstanding thing.” However, as he looked at the horrifying Bone Devourer, Chu Feng disdainfully curled his lips.

“What? You recognize this Bone Devourer?” Seeing that, the Black Toad King couldn’t help but be taken aback. The Bone Devourer was its pet and it was extremely hard to find. Normal people shouldn’t have seen it before.

“Hmph. Of course I’ve seen it before. It is only a bug that can eat flesh and bones.”

“To others, this thing would be fine, but to me, there’s no challenge at all. It is still best if you change your torturing method.” Chu Feng curled his lips and said.

“Really? Then it’s very simple. First, you challenge this Bone Devourer. If you succeed, then I’ll find another method to torture you.” The Black Toad King oddly smiled as if it saw through Chu

Feng's acting and as it spoke, it walked towards Chu Feng.

“Oi, this truly isn't challenging. Switch it for something else. Damn, don't give me such a disgusting thing to eat. Oi! Ahh~~~~~”

This time, the Black Toad King no longer paid attention to Chu Feng. With one hand, it opened Chu Feng's mouth, and with the other, it was going to stuff the Bone Devourer into Chu Feng's mouth.

“Let him go, I don't need him to die for me!”

As she saw that scene, a streak of unwillingness emerged onto Zi Ling's sweet face. Her beautiful body slightly quivered and a burst of boundless power was emanated out and had actually broke off all of the vines that tied her up. She extended her hand and wanted to stop the Black Toad King.

“Get back there. What I say here goes.” However, with the wave of the Black Toad King's hand, a layer of immense aura covered Zi Ling's body and sealed her power, causing her to powerlessly fall onto a side and she could not stand back up.

And seeing that the disgusting big bug was going to be stuffed into his own mouth, Chu Feng's face greened. He didn't want to be eat by a bug like that.

“Father, save me~~~~~” But just at that time, a toad-style howl

rang out from the entrance of the palace.

At that instant, Chu Feng could clearly feel that on the nasty face of the Black Toad King, panic emerged. Not only did it stop its movements towards Chu Feng, it even cast its gaze towards the entrance of the palace and loudly yelled, “Let it go!”

At the same time, Chu Feng also cast his gaze towards the entrance of the palace. He discovered that an old man was standing there, and that person was exactly Zi Xuanyuan.

And in front of Zi Xuanyuan, there was even a Monstrous Beast kneeling. That Monstrous Beast’s appearance was extremely similar to the Black Toad King’s. Not only was it a black-coloured toad, even its eyes and physique were extremely similar. It also had the cultivation of the 7th level of the Profound realm. So, it seemed like the Black Toad King even had a son.

No wonder Zi Xuanyuan didn’t appear for such a long time. So the old thing went to catch the Black Toad King’s son.

Indeed, from the Black Toad King’s appearance, it could be seen that it cared a lot for its son. This time, Zi Xuanyuan could be considered to have grasped onto the Black Toad King’s weak spot.

“Elder Xuanyuan.” At the same time, Liu Zhizun and the others from the Prestigious Villa were also elated because they all knew Zi Xuanyuan’s strength. It would at least be equal to the Black Toad King, so after seeing Zi Xuanyuan, it was like they saw their savior.

However, Zi Xuanyuan did not pay attention to them, and he said to the Black Toad King, “Let those two children go or else I’ll kill your little toad.”

“You dare?! If you dare to do anything to my son, none of you should even think of leaving this place.” The Black Toad King shot his cold glare out in all directions as he furiously howled.

“I don’t dare? Do you want to give it a try?” Zi Xuanyuan lightly smiled and chilliness emerged into his eyes.

“Don’t! I’ll let him go.” Seeing that, the Black Toad King hurriedly stopped, and quickly after, he pulled Chu Feng up from the ground and said, “For fairness, you release my son, and I’ll release him. Let them both walk on their own over and neither I nor you are allowed to move. How about it?”

“Fine, as you say. But you better not play any tricks. If you dare to rashly move, I will let you have a taste of the consequences.” Zi Xuanyuan did not hesitate too much. Instead, he straightforwardly replied.

And as he spoke, he pushed the toad over, but at the same time, he used his aura to tightly hold the toad in place. If the Black Toad King dared to have any actions, he would immediately kill the successor of the Black Toad King.

“Scram.” Simultaneously, the Black Toad King also pushed Chu Feng out but he kept Zi Ling over on his side.

At that instant, Chu Feng could clearly feel a pair of icy cold eyes tightly staring at him from behind, and a wave of horrifying aura also locked onto himself.

So, Chu Feng didn't dare to do any unexpected movements, and he carefully walked towards where Zi Xuanyuan was. But at the same time, he adjusted the Divine Lightning in his body. Just in case.

“Ribbit , I caught him!” Indeed, just as Chu Feng was going meet the toad, the toad exploded the aura of the 7th level of the Profound realm out and extended its sticky black-coloured hands towards Chu Feng and grabbed. In such a distance, even if Zi Xuanyuan wanted to attack, it would be too late.

“Hmph.”

However, Chu Feng coldly snorted. Both of his pupils suddenly changed and his aura instantly rose from the 3rd level of the Profound realm to the 5th level of the Profound realm. He flipped his hand, and put the toad's arm into his palm.

After that, he twisted with strength and with a poof, Chu Feng pressed the toad, that had a large body, down so that it was kneeling in front of him.

“What?!” After seeing that scene, the Black Toad King and the other Monstrous Beasts on scene were all greatly stunned.

They never would have thought that Chu Feng's aura would suddenly change and his strength would be that strong. He was actually able to easily subdue the Black Toad King's son.

But at that instant, compared to the shock of the Monstrous Beasts, the people who were participating in this event were clearly much calmer.

After all, they already knew from before that Chu Feng wasn't a lamp that saved on oil. He grasped no small number of special methods and had battle power that defied common sense. But even so, when Chu Feng easily subdued the toad which was in the 7th level of the Profound realm so easily, they still felt astonishment in their hearts.

Nevertheless, the toad wasn't a normal Monstrous Beast. It was the son of the Black Toad King, and special Monstrous Beast's blood that contained special power certainly flowed within its body. Yet such a powerful Monstrous Beast was still so easily taken care of by Chu Feng. That showed how scary Chu Feng was.

"Release Lady Zi Ling or else I'll cripple your son." One of Chu Feng's hand was grasped onto the toad's shoulder, and another one was slightly raised with a golden-coloured danger condensed in his hand, aimed at the toad's neck.

"Damned human, you play tricks? We agreed to release at the same time. What is the meaning of this?" The Black Toad King did not reply, and it only angrily howled at Chu Feng.

“It was only the agreement between you and Elder Xuanyuan. He has already fulfilled his part of the promise. Right now, I am negotiating with you. Don’t ask me what the meaning of this is. I only ask you one question. Release, or not release?”

Chu Feng’s gaze was as sharp as a sword, and the pure domineeringness in his tone captivated no small number of beauties on scene because the airs that Chu Feng displayed was absolutely not something normal people had. They were innate airs of a king.

# Chapter 374: Retreat

---

“Brat, you dare to speak to me like that? Do you know what the consequences are for threatening me?” The chilliness in the Black Toad King’s gaze surged. When it was coerced by a small human brat like Chu Feng, it felt extremely displeased and it gnashed its teeth in anger.

whoosh

But just at that time, with a flash from Chu Feng’s hand, blood splattered everywhere. He had actually fiercely stabbed the dagger into the toad’s face.

“Ahh~~~” The pain on its face caused the son of Black Toad King to widen its mouth and strangely howl. Obviously, it was not in light pain.

“You...” And seeing the large amount of blood gushing out of its son’s face, the Black Toad King’s eyes also flickered and it was terrified.

It never, ever, would have thought that Chu Feng, a human brat, would have so many nerves and would be so fierce to directly attack its own son. It was something that even Zi Xuanyuan did not dare to do!

But the thing that he did not expect was still coming up. Seeing that the Black Toad King did have any responses, Chu Feng abruptly pulled out the dagger, pointed towards the eye of the



Black Toad King's son, and was going to stab down again.

“Stop! I'll release her!!” Seeing that, the Black Toad King hurriedly yelled loudly and only then did Chu Feng stop his descending motion.

“But like the old rules, we release together. You let my son go, and I'll let this girl go.” The Black Toad King pulled Zi Ling up from the ground.

“Those were the rules that you set with Elder Xuanyuan. They were useless to me. Release Zi Ling right now or else I'll scoop your son's eyes out.” Chu Feng's attitude was firm and his tone was icy cold.

“Brat, don't push your luck. If you dare to do anything more to my son, do you believe that I will cut all over her face?” The Black Toad King fiercely said.

whoosh But before it even finished speaking, the dagger in Chu Feng's hand came down once again. With a “puchi” sound, blood spurted everywhere and the dagger in Chu Feng's hand was stuck into the eyes of the Black Toad King's son. Following that, he dug up with the dagger and forcibly scooped the blood-red-coloured eyeball out.

whoosh Afterwards, Chu Feng did not show any signs of stopping his movements, nor did he care what threats the Black Toad King gave out. He aimed towards the other eye of the Black Toad King's son, then abruptly stabbed down again. His attacks were decisive

and abnormally blunt.

“Stop! I release!!”

The Black Toad King panicked and it no longer negotiated any terms. It grabbed Zi Ling, waved its big hand, and directly flung her over to Chu Feng. And just at that time, Zi Xuanyuan rose in to the air and caught Zi Ling into his embrace and broke her imprisonment.

“Quick! Quickly release my son!!” The Black Toad King yelled hysterically, and even its body was trembling. Who knew whether it was because it was angered by Chu Feng or terrified by Chu Feng, but all in all, it was filled with fury and he was forcefully enduring the killing intents surging in his body.

“Tell your subordinates to release them.” However, Chu Feng did not immediately release the Black Toad King’s son. Instead, he cast his gaze towards Xu Zhongyu and the others who were surrounded by Monstrous Beasts.

“Brat, do you even want face? I’ve already released the people you wanted me to release, but right now, not only are you not letting my son go, you even want me to release everyone! You still dare to speak?!” Within the Black Toad King’s tone, it contained eerie bloodlust.

But Chu Feng was not afraid in the slightest. Instead, he said calmly and at ease, “I think you’re mistaken. I never said that I would release your son if you release Zi Ling. That was only your

one-sided wish.”

“God damn, I have never seen such a shameless human like you before!”

“Then today, at least you’ve broadened your horizon. A single straightforward sentence. Release, or not release?” As he spoke, Chu Feng raised the danger in his hand again.

“Release! I’ll release! Don’t harm it anymore. But you must promise me that after I release them, you must release my son.” The Black Toad King really cherished his son too much and it didn’t want it to suffer any more harm.

“Fine, I promise you.” Chu Feng nodded his head.

Following that, with the Black Toad King’s indication, the Monstrous Beasts that completely surrounded Xu Zhongyu and the others hurriedly undid the special vines on their bodies.

Finally, Xu Zhongyu and the others successfully walked to the entrance of the palace and hid behind Zi Xuanyuan.

“Let my son go, let my son go! I’ve already done everything you told me to do! You cannot break your promise!”

And at that instant, the Black Toad King nearly reached insanity. Bursts of roars shook the palace, causing it to tremble, as if it was going to collapse.

Chu Feng was absolutely able to imagine how wretched he would be if he were to land into the hands of the Black Toad King.

But Chu Feng also deeply understood that they were still inside the nest of the Monstrous Beast. Although everyone was in their range of control, it did not represent that they were truly safe.

So, Chu Feng cast his gaze over to Zi Xuanyuan and asked, “Elder Xuanyuan, what’s next?”

“Boy, very beautifully done. You’ve taken care quite a few troubles for me.” Zi Ling looked at Chu Feng with praise, then quickly after, he said to Zi Ling,

“Zi Ling, bring them away and directly leave the Thousand Monster Mountain. Return to the Prestigious Villa. Also, don’t ask the elders in the Prestigious Villa to send troops into the Thousand Monster Mountain. Just wait for our news in the villa.”

“Grandfather, you...” Zi Ling was still a bit worried about her grandfather.

“Quickly leave. All of you being here will only distract me.” Zi Xuanyuan’s tone was firm.

“Zi Ling, let’s go. Their battle is not something that we can participate in.” Chu Feng also went up to advise.

“Grandfather, you must be careful.” At the end, Zi Ling still nodded her head.

“Everyone, follow me. I’ll bring you away from this place.” Seeing that, Chu Feng pulled Zi Ling and directly walked out. Gu Bo, Xu Zhongyu, and the others from the World Spirit Guild naturally unhesitatingly followed.

As for the others, they hesitated for a bit, but at the end, they still decided to follow Chu Feng and walk towards the outside because after the scene just now of Chu Feng coercing the Black Toad King, people felt that the young man who wasn’t even as old as them was actually full of reliability.

And Chu Feng did not disappoint everyone. In the rugged cave, he did not get lost even once and he brought several hundreds of people out of the Black Toad King’s nest. As for why one thousand people became several hundred, it was naturally because when they were being caught by the Monstrous Beast, a portion already died.

boom

However, soon after Chu Feng and the others walked out of the rock forest, deafening rumbling rang out behind them and the ground under their feet also trembled. Countless thick cracks spread and a large area of trees started to fall. Dense smoke rolled and rose from the underground palace.

“Run! We must quickly leave this place!” In a situation like that,

everyone could guess that doubtlessly, Zi Xuanyuan and the Black Toad King started their attacks. The strength of the two were too powerful, and even if it was just a small remnant from their clash, almost no one on scene could endure it.

So, in such circumstances, Chu Feng, Xu Zhongyu, Jie Qingming, and Liu Zhizun, all displayed their leading abilities and started to lead the group and speedily escape out of the Thousand Monster Mountain.

But the thing that Jie Qingming and Liu Zhizun could not take the most was that unknowingly, the leader that people trusted the most were not they who had the most outstanding strengths, but Chu Feng who was only in the 3rd level of the Profound realm.

# Chapter 375: Location Of Treasure

---

The current Thousand Monster Mountain already became the battlefield between humans and Monstrous Beasts. From afar, the roars of Monstrous Beasts endlessly echoed as well as deafening rumbling. A large area of dense smoke charged into the sky, and everyone could see it within the circumference of a thousand miles.

However, it seemed like the Prestigious Villa was set up by the Monstrous Beasts in this war. So, the current battle situation was absolutely not looking favourable. If not, Zi Xuanyuan wouldn't have instructed Zi Ling to not let the Prestigious Villa send any more reinforcements to the Thousand Monster Mountain.

But luckily, on the road, Chu Feng and the others didn't meet any Monstrous Beasts that were too strong, and they finally safely escaped the Thousand Monster Mountain and returned to the Prestigious Villa.

After turning to the villa, the news of the event group being ambushed and the Monstrous Beast sending spies into the Prestigious Villa quickly spread, causing chaos within the Prestigious Villa. People's hearts were fearful and they were extremely uneasy.

Everyone was worried whether the main force that the Prestigious Villa sent to attack the Thousand Monster Mountain was met with misfortune or not.

Even Xu Zhongyu, Gu Bo, and the others were worried. After all, not only did the experts from the Prestigious Villa attack the Thousand Monster Mountain, even the World Spirit Guild sent out some peak experts to help.

In short, the current Prestigious Villa was enveloped with a gloomy atmosphere. Everyone was worried about the experts of their own power, because every single fallen expert would affect their future development.

Even Zi Ling was worried whether her grandfather was safe or not, but people could not do anything, and they could only choose to wait.

But the thing worth mentioning was that after returning to the Prestigious Villa, not only did Liu Zhizun not make things difficult for Chu Feng anymore, instead, on the day that he returned to the Prestigious Villa, he quickly disappeared.

Facing that situation, everyone felt that there was guilt in his heart. He had no face to see others, so he hid himself.

However, it had to be said that after the farce that Liu Zhizun stirred up and after the matter of being kidnapped by the Monstrous Beasts, not only did everyone not feel dislike towards Chu Feng, their good feelings towards him even increased many times, and those good feelings were not restricted by gender.

“You’re saying that Jiang Wushang left the group immediately after entering the Thousand Monster Mountain?” At that instant,



within Chu Feng's resting palace, a streak of amazement emerged into his eyes.

Because, he discovered that he hadn't seen Jiang Wushang's shadow anywhere so he called Gu Bo to his resting area and inquired about it.

And the answer Gu Bo gave him caused suspicions to rise in Chu Feng's heart because that Jiang Wushang had left the group after entering the Thousand Monster Mountain, which meant that the boy very possibly already had plans.

Then, linking it to the special information sources that Jiang Wushang very likely possessed, Chu Feng had to feel that his journey here would probably also be for the treasure in the Thousand Monster Mountain. After all, his Jiang Dynasty had attacked the Thousand Monster Mountain before so it was quite likely that he was even more clear about the situation of the Thousand Monster Mountain than the Prestigious Villa.

But compared to whether Jiang Wushang knew the whereabouts of the treasure or not, Chu Feng was more worried about the war situation between the Prestigious Villa and the Thousand Monster Mountain.

In reality, no matter who was right or wrong, Chu Feng still hoped that the Prestigious Villa could occupy a certain advantage, because only with that could the Monstrous Beasts' defense be lowered, and only if the Monstrous Beasts' defense abilities were lowered could Chu Feng more easily sneak in to have a chance to get the things he wanted to get.

That anxious and uneasy waiting lasted for a good three days. Finally, in the direction of the Thousand Monster Mountain, a large number of White-headed Eagles appeared.

“They’re returning! Lord Villa Head is returning!!”

At that instant, cheers rang out within the Prestigious Villa because the troops that the Prestigious sent out this time had returned victoriously.

Although after the battle, the Prestigious Villa and powers from all directions more or less lost some powerful people, they were not suppressed by the Monstrous Beasts. Instead, this time, it could be said that they returned with a huge victory.

As for why it was said like that, it was because they brought a captive back. That captive was not a normal captive. It was one of the five Monster Kings, the Black Toad King, and the one who did such a meritorious service was Zi Ling’s grandfather, Zi Xuanyuan.

“This Zi Xuanyuan is truly strong. I heard that the elders in the guild say that the Black Toad King has the cultivation of the 5th level of the Heaven realm, yet Zi Xuanyuan can catch it back alive, It means that Zi Xuanyuan must at least have the cultivation of the 5th level of the Heaven realm and grasp special methods or else it would not be possible for him to catch the Black Toad King, which has special blood, alive.”

At that instant, Gu Bo arrived in Chu Feng’s resting palace again.

In the past few days, although Chu Feng did not step out of the house, he still understood the matters outside like the back of his hand, and the reason for that was all because he had Gu Bo, the know-it-all, who endlessly provided information to him.

“The 5th level of the Heaven realm. So the Black Toad King and Elder Xuanyuan are that strong. Gu Bo, in the current continent of the Nine Provinces, can one be counted as a peak expert with the cultivation of the 5th level of the Heaven realm?” Chu Feng inquired, because regarding information in certain areas, Gu Bo did indeed know more than Chu Feng.

“They can, of course they can! Chu Feng, you should know that one absolute apical genius appeared a hundred years ago in both my World Spirit Guild and the Jie clan right?” Gu Bo answered with a question.

“Mm, I remember.” At first, before Chu Feng entered the Asura Ghost Tower, he did indeed hear about the story of the two geniuses.

From what he heard, they were geniuses that were quite difficult to see within a thousand years, and exactly because of their existences, the Spirit Province back then became the strongest province in the continent of the Nine Provinces. Of course, the so-called strongest naturally excluded the Han Province that the Jiang Dynasty occupied.

It was because ever since the Jiang Dynasty entered the continent of the Nine Provinces, within the continent, the strongest power was only the Jiang Dynasty. The overlord could not be shaken, and

even the Azure Dragon Founder that year, who was so overwhelmingly powerful, only caused headaches for the Jiang Dynasty but could not shake the position of overlord of the Jiang Dynasty.

But going back onto the main topic, the two geniuses that year were quite young, and to be able to cause the Spirit Province to become the strongest in the Nine Provinces at that age was already very outstanding.

But Chu Feng also heard that the two apical geniuses who had extremely high martial cultivation talent and was extremely skilled in the attainments of Spirit Formations were defeated by a mysterious expert.

And Chu Feng also knew who the so-called mysterious expert was. It was the Monstrous Beast that was imprisoned within the Asura Ghost Tower right now.

“At first, the two peak geniuses only had the cultivations of the 6th level of the Heaven realm. Although the current continent of the Nine Provinces is already different from the one a hundred years ago, as the powers in all directions rose very quickly and the number of experts have increased greatly as well, a person in the 5th level of the Heaven realm can still be said to be a character who stands on the top of the pyramid of the continent of the Nine Provinces.” Gu Bo explained.

“So it means that Zi Xuanyuan is truly quite strong.” Chu Feng also nodded his head. Thinking back so far, he also felt that Zi Xuanyuan was unfathomably deep, and perhaps even a bit

mysterious.

“Yeah. The head of the Prestigious Villa is already very powerful, and now Zi Xuanyuan appeared. It seems like only my World Spirit Guild and the Jie clan in the continent of the Nine Provinces can confront the Prestigious Villa.”

Speaking to that point, there was a smear of pride on Gu Bo's face. Because, not only were there experts as common as the clouds in the World Spirit Guild, in terms of strength, it was not weaker than the Prestigious Villa. The guild also had an extremely good relationship with the Jiang Dynasty, which meant that behind the World Spirit Guild's back, the supreme power, the Jiang Dynasty, was there to support it.

So, from Gu Bo's perspective, no matter how much more powerful the Prestigious Villa got, at the end, it would still be unable to be equal to his World Spirit Guild because if there were conflicts that happened between the Prestigious Villa and the World Spirit Guild and if the Jiang Dynasty stepped in, the dynasty would certainly lean towards the World Spirit Guild. The reason was very simple. The Jiang Dynasty needed the group of powerful World Spiritists from the World Spirit Guild.

“That's right. Chu Feng, actually, I have an important thing to tell you today by coming here.” Suddenly, Gu Bo's face became a lot more serious.

“What thing?” Chu Feng curiously asked.

“From the elders of the guild, I heard that in the past few days, the Prestigious Villa tortured the Black Toad King and they wanted to find out the whereabouts of the Thousand Monster Mountain’s treasures.”

“At the end, they threatened the Black Toad King with his son and finally succeeded in forcing the Black Toad King to speak, and it told them the location of the treasure.”

“Is that true?” After hearing those words, Chu Feng’s face couldn’t help but change and he excitedly stood up with a “ceng”.

# Treasure Hunting

# Chapter 376: Last Chance

---

“It is absolutely true.”

“The Prestigious Villa have already formed a pact with powers such as my World Spirit Guild, and the Jie clan, Yuangang School, Fire God School, Hidden White Sect, Free and Unrestrained Valley, and the Sword God Valley. An eight-sided alliance has been temporarily established.” Gu Bo said.

“Eight-sided alliance?” Chu Feng was a bit amazed.

“Mm. There are only eight powers.”

“As for the other small powers, their qualification for attacking the Thousand Monster Mountain has been canceled because those small powers aren’t qualified to get the treasures in the Thousand Monster Mountain.” Gu Bo said.

“What treasure is able to make the eight big powers establish an alliance to move as one?” Chu Feng asked.

“According to what the Black Toad King said, within the Thousand Monster Mountain, there are truly archaeological remains left behind by a mysterious expert, and within those remains, there are many amazing treasures, and even possibly Strange Armaments. Back then, the Monster King, which fought against the Jiang Dynasty, was able to have such brutally strong strength only because it stumbled upon a great chance in the remains.”



“And right now, the Monstrous Beasts of the Thousand Monster Mountain take the treasures as divine objects and they worship them, putting them within an underground palace.” Gu Bo explained.

After hearing those words, Chu Feng’s thoughts quickly changed because he knew that the thing he wanted to find was found by the eight great powers.

“The things that I’ve told you today are secrets and only the higher-ups of the eight powers know. Do not tell anyone else about it.” Gu Bo solemnly reminded.

“Don’t worry, I will make sure to keep the secret. That’s right, when are they going to make their move?” Chu Feng closely asked.

“They still need to wait a few more days. After all, the remaining four Monster King are not characters that are easy to deal with. From what I’ve heard, if it wasn’t because it was the first time that they attacked the Thousand Monster Mountain and if Zi Xuanyuan didn’t arrive just in time, Qin Lei and the others would have very likely died, so this time, they are preparing to go serious.” Gu Bo said.

“What are they preparing to do?” Chu Feng asked.

“Every single one of the eight powers must send out a person in the 5th level of the Heaven realm as well as ten Heaven realm experts to form a Heaven realm super powerful team to sweep

through the Thousand Monster Mountain in one go.” Gu Bo said.

“This means that they are indeed truly going serious.” Chu Feng lightly furrowed his brows. Over eighty Heaven realm experts and eight of them even had the cultivations of the 5th level of the Heaven realm. Other than the Jiang Dynasty, which power could fight against such a formation within the continent of the Nine Provinces?

It was the same as gathering the ones with the most powerful battle power from the eight big powers. No matter how much stronger the Thousand Monster Mountain was, despite still having the four Monster Kings as foundation, they were still clearly unable to hold such a force back.

Although Chu Feng hoped that the Prestigious Villa’s side could suppress the Thousand Monster Mountain, he did not hope that humans completely annihilated the Monstrous Beasts. If they directly did that, then the treasures would land into the hands of the humans and Chu Feng would be unable to gain benefits, let alone grabbing the treasure he needed.

“Yeah, this time, they are truly going serious. After all, they are extremely attracting treasures. A Strange Armament! That’s a thing that can cause people to go mad.”

“But the strengths of the four Monster Kings cannot be underestimated. After all, the physiques of Monstrous Beasts have always been extremely powerful. Especially the four Monster Kings. They are all Monstrous Beasts that have special blood, and if they stake their lives on it, I’m afraid that even the alliance of the

eight powers will have some troubles.”

“So this time, the ones who are sent out are the ones in the old generation. Big Brother Xu Zhongyu tried his best to join the battle, but he was refused by the elders.” Gu Bo spoke the secrets, which could not be revealed to the outside, to Chu Feng in detail, because he did not take Chu Feng as an outsider.

From then on, after the time of a few days, Gu Bo came over again and told him that the vice head of his World Spirit Guild as well as some manager elders secretly arrived at the Prestigious Villa, and similarly, the vice chief of the Jie clan as well as some manager elders arrived as well.

Then after two days, Gu Bo came over again and told Chu Feng that the head of the Yuangang School, the head of the Fire God School, the head of the Hidden White Sect, and the head of the Free and Unrestrained Valley personally led manager elders and arrived in the Prestigious Villa.

And at the same night, the head of the Sword God Valley as well as peak experts of the Sword God Valley also secretly arrived in the Prestigious Villa. The eight-sided alliance had all arrived, and a battle was going to be commenced with a touch.

On the next morning, the head of the Prestigious Villa called everyone who was participating in the Marriage Gathering to the summit of the mountain peak once again, and he first expressed his sorrow for the people who had unluckily fallen in the Thousand Monster Mountain.

Then after that, he took the initiative to hold himself responsible and promised a large amount of compensation to the powers that had members who perished.

And at the end, he announced one thing, and it was that the Marriage Gathering was still going to continue. However, this time, they weren't going to enter the Thousand Monster Mountain for any event. They were to mingle with the people who were participating in the Marriage Gathering within the Prestigious Villa.

This time, the limit was twelve days. Twelve days later, the ladies who were from the Prestigious Villa would state the name of the man they liked on the summit of the mountain peak, and at that time, it would also be when the curtains of the Marriage Gathering perfectly fell.

“Twelve days later, the curtains of the Marriage Gathering will perfectly fall? The curtains will indeed perfectly fall, because at that time, it will be when their eight-sided alliance return victoriously after splitting up the treasures in the Thousand Monster Mountain.” At that instant, Chu Feng was muttering to himself in his own palace.

After finishing the announcements regarding the Marriage Gathering in the morning, the head of the Prestigious Villa, Qin Lei, left the Prestigious Villa, and the ones who left along with him were the peak big characters from the seven other powers. The location they were heading towards was naturally the Thousand Monster Mountain.

And Chu Feng also carried out his final preparations. In the past days when he didn't leave the house, he was not locking himself in to rest. From morning to night, without pause, he was thinking back and studying the map of the Thousand Monster Mountain that the mysterious Monstrous Beast showed him back then.

Chu Feng had to go back to the Thousand Monster Mountain because it was his last chance. He could not let the treasure, which could raise his Spirit power, be landed into the hands of others.

However, this time, there were truly too many experts who were heading towards the Thousand Monster Mountain. The most important thing was that when facing the precious treasure, Chu Feng did not have any allies. No matter if it was a human or a Monstrous Beast, either one of them would be his enemy.

So, Chu Feng had to more deeply understand the structure of the Thousand Monster Mountain. He had to understand the area that hid the treasure. But sadly, Chu Feng's memory was limited, and the records of the map were also limited. Chu Feng only knew the road that headed towards the underground palace, but he could not find out what kind of dangers were within it.

whoosh Suddenly, a row of purple light flashed in front of Chu Feng, and a pretty figure had already appeared in front of him.

That purple-coloured skirt, that beautiful face, that speed that even Chu Feng could not see clearly. It was none other than Zi Ling.

“You girl, I say, can you not appear so randomly? You’ve frightened me. Should I blame you for that?” Chu Feng was pondering the things about the Thousand Monster Mountain, and when Zi Ling suddenly disturbed him like that, he could have indeed jumped from fright.

“Tch. ‘If you do nothing guilty, you need not fear the knock of ghosts.’ What were you thinking about just now? So sneaky...” Zi Ling’s beautiful big eyes were spinning around, as if she was going to see through the things in Chu Feng’s heart.

“Pah pah pah! You’re the one who’s so sneaky. Speak upfront. In the middle of the day you jump through my window. Are you planning to commit immoral acts?”

Chu Feng chuckled, then quickly after, he cast his evil eyes towards Zi Ling’s delicate and alluring body. And especially after seeing the plump curve protruding in front of her chest, Chu Feng felt that he was burning in lust and uncontrollably, there was a reaction below him.

# Chapter 377: Cooperation

---

“You...If you look a bit more, I’ll scoop your eyes out.” Seeing that, Zi Ling’s white, glossy, and smooth little face instantly became a bright red apple, and she extended her hand, preparing to hit Chu Feng.

“Heh, fine fine fine! I won’t look. But speak the truth. Are there some things you want from me since you looked for me? I haven’t told anyone about you having a Divine Body!” Chu Feng chuckled and said.

“You!!” Hearing the two words “Divine Body”, Zi Ling’s little face instantly tensed up and with a leap, she arrived in front of Chu Feng and she used her hand to tightly seal Chu Feng’s mouth shut.

At the same time, she spread her Spirit power out and only after discovering that there were no other people in their surroundings did she breathe a sigh of relief. She looked at Chu Feng with a bit of resentment and said, “I came to look for you because I have something that I want you to help me with.”

“What thing?” Chu Feng got rid of Zi Ling’s hand and curiously asked.

“I’m sure that you’ve heard of the matter of my Prestigious Villa establishing an alliance with the other powers such as the World Spirit Guild.”

“Within the Thousand Monster Mountain, there is indeed a

treasure trove. I don't have much interest towards the treasures inside, but I am very interested in powerful martial skills, so I want to go over to take a look." Zi Ling said.

"Since you want to go to the Thousand Monster Mountain, then just directly go along with Qin Lei and the others. With your status, it is possible that they won't bring you along if you want to go with them?" Chu Feng asked.

"Of course they cannot bring me. This time, all those who are moving out are the experts in the old generation. If I go, that is equal to breaking the rules."

"Besides, even if they were willing to bring me along, I wouldn't have went. There would be too many restrictions and it would be quite boring. I want to go myself." Zi Ling curled her little mouth and on her face of absolute beauty, a tiny bit of playful cuteness appeared.

"Then why me? What can I possibly help you with?" Chu Feng feinted confusion. From start to finish, he was still cautious towards Zi Ling.

"Don't pretend anymore. Don't think that I don't know your goal for coming here. Isn't it also for the treasures in the Thousand Monster Mountain? My grandfather has already spoken to me about it." Zi Ling fiercely stared at Chu Feng.

"What did he say to you?" Chu Feng slightly frowned. He wasn't afraid of anything that Zi Xuanyuan said to Zi Ling, and what he



was actually afraid of was the things that Zi Ling would say to Zi Xuanyuan. After all, he was a person who bullied Zi Ling before

“He said that you have a special map. He also said that he was sure that the map you have is the same as the one the Black Toad King handed over. So, if I want to go to the Thousand Monster Mountain for adventuring, I need to bring you a long.” Zi Ling curled her lips.

And after hearing those words, Chu Feng sank into contemplation. He was pondering whether Zi Xuanyuan was an enemy or friend, and what kind of thoughts that the mysterious old man had.

At the end, Chu Feng was still unable to think of an exact answer, but he knew that Zi Xuanyuan would absolutely not harm him for now, and Zi Ling would also not harm him for now.

Also, right now, he wanted to go to the Thousand Monster Mountain as well. If he had Zi Ling as assistance, that would be the best.

After all, her Divine Body was very strong and it had battle power which did not lose to the Heaven realm. The most important thing was that she was even a Blue-cloak World Spiritist. When scouting out unknown things, the Blue-cloak World Spiritist's special abilities were truly too useful.

So, Chu Feng nodded his head and said, “Then we shouldn't waste any more time and let's move right now. We must catch up

to them.”

“Wait.” But just at that time, Zi Ling stopped Chu Feng and said, “Before anything, let us agree on some things first. This time, we are secretly operating and it would be for the best to avoid any contact with the people from the eight-sided powers. If there are any gains in this operation, everything will only belong to you and me.”

“I agree on that.” Chu Feng smiled and nodded his head. It was also something he wanted to say.

“Also, if martial skills or Secret Skills are discovered, they belong to me. Profound medicines and Heaven medicines will belong to you.” Zi Ling added.

“What about Strange Armaments?” Chu Feng asked.

“You truly believe that there will be a Strange Armament in the Thousand Monster Mountain?”

“We cannot be sure that there is, but we also cannot be sure that there isn’t. What if there is?”

“Then we’ll discuss it at that time.” After speaking, Zi Ling pulled Chu Feng and just rushed out of the window.

The current Prestigious Villa was tightly guarded. Not only to the outside, but also to the inside. During this period of time, no one

was allowed to leave the Prestigious Villa.

But what status did Zi Ling have? Her grandfather was Zi Xuanyuan! The current person who fortified the position of the current Prestigious Villa! So, if Zi Ling wanted to leave, it would naturally be relaxed and unrestrained.

“Oi, girl! Why aren’t you bringing a coloured crane when coming out? Are you planning to walk to the Thousand Monster Mountain?” After leaving the Prestigious Villa, Chu Feng discovered that Zi Ling did not have any intentions to call a White-headed Eagle or a coloured crane. The girl seemed to prepare to travel on foot.

“I have always liked to rely on myself when going out.”

Zi Ling disdainfully looked at Chu Feng, then quickly after, her footsteps moved and under her, pretty brilliance rose and after that, she rose into the sky, charging straight into the sky.

The girl actually grasped a bodily martial skill that allowed her to walk on air, and looking at its appearance, it seemed to be a lot more superior than Chu Feng’s Imperial Sky Technique.

It was because the speed of Zi Ling walking on air was extremely quick, and Chu Feng could only barely catch up to Zi Ling when he used the Imperial Sky Technique to the utmost.

The most important thing was that although Chu Feng used all

the power of the Imperial Sky Technique, Zi ling was clearly not using all her strength.

In a situation like that, and with a clever thought by Chu Feng, he changed his steps and the special martial skill, the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens was displayed by him. The azure-coloured little dragon reappeared under him and instantly, he passed Zi Ling and very quickly, he disappeared in the horizon in front.

“This guy.”

Seeing Chu Feng who went towards the distance with extreme speed, Zi Ling’s eyes quickly widened and her eyes were filled with shock. She was stunned by Chu Feng’s terrifying speed.

swish

Naturally, Chu Feng was not going to fling Zi Ling behind. As he rode on the azure dragon and after going around in a circle in the air, he returned to Zi Ling’s side and said while chuckling, “Girl, how is it? My steed is quite nice right?”

“You relied on that to get rid of Song Qingfeng and the others?” Zi Ling’s eyes were carefully assessing the azure dragon under Chu Feng, as if she was trying to see through how Chu Feng’s martial skill was condensed out.

Facing that question, Chu Feng did not reply, and he only said,

“Come! Come behind your big brother here and I’ll give you a ride.”

“Hmph. You want to take small advantages of me again? Don’t even think about it.” Zi Ling curled her lips and saw through Chu Feng’s bad intentions.

“Aren’t you overthinking too much? How can I even be in the mood for that today?”

“The people of the eight-sided powers have already left half a day earlier than us. With your speed, there is no way to catch up to them.”

“If their might is truly like snapping bamboo and they directly cause the defense of the Monstrous Beasts to collapse and get all the treasures, wouldn’t you and I have wasted this journey?” Chu Feng explained.

Hearing those words, Zi Ling also didn’t feel that it was unreasonable. So, her alluring body rushed behind Chu Feng and she sat on the azure dragon.

“Hehe, that’s right. Tightly hug your big brother here.”

“Don’t even think about it.”

“Then you better sit stably.” Chu Feng chuckled, then quickly after, suddenly accelerated.

“Ahh~~~”

The force that came suddenly caused Zi Ling to shriek and her body abruptly leaned back, almost falling off of the azure dragon. As she could do nothing about it, she could only extend her hands and tightly grab onto Chu Feng's clothes to maintain stability.

# Chapter 378: World Spirit From The Fairy Spirit World

---

It had to be said that the speed of the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens was truly fast. With merely short two days, Chu Feng caught up to the people from the eight-sided powers. However, Chu Feng did not go near them and he only secretly tailed behind them.

After the eight-sided power, which knew the location of the treasures, entered the core of the Thousand Monster Mountain, they directly attacked and they wanted to open the entrance of the treasure trove.

They who had gathered over eighty Heaven realm experts swept through everything and there was not a single Monstrous Beast that could stop them. They directly opened the entrance to the underground palace and entered.

At that instant, Chu Feng and Zi Ling originally wanted to follow behind them and enter, but suddenly, Zi Ling's expression changed and she pulled Chu Feng back.

At first, Chu Feng didn't understand why Zi Ling stopped himself, but very quickly, within a distant forest, a body shot out.

That body's speed was extremely fast and with several jumps, he rushed into the entrance to the underground palace.

But Chu Feng and Zi Ling still recognized that person.

It was the little genius of the Jiang Dynasty, Jiang Wushang.

“This guy is indeed also here for the treasure.” Zi Ling also guessed the reason why Jiang Wushang disappeared as well as what his goal was, and quickly after, she asked Chu Feng, “Are you sure that this is where the treasures are and that it isn’t a trap laid by Monstrous Beasts?”

“The treasures should be here, but whether this is a trap or not is unknown.” Chu Feng said.

“Follow me. Remember, do not use your Spirit power because within the eight-sided powers, there are at least ten Blue-cloak World Spiritists. With your current strength, as long as you use Spirit power, you will be discovered by them.” Zi Ling seriously reminded.

“Mm.”

And Chu Feng also seriously nodded his head. Naturally, he knew how powerful they were, so on the road, he didn’t use Spirit power and he let Zi Ling detect everything.

That was also why just as Jiang Wushang neared, Zi Ling felt it yet Chu Feng did not have any reactions.

Following that, Zi Ling and Chu Feng tailed behind Jiang



Wushang and they headed towards the underground palace passageway that the eight-sided powers opened.

The eight-sided powers were too strong. On the road, their might was like snapping bamboo. No matter if it was a Monstrous Beast, or a mechanism, or a Spirit Formation, nothing could stop them.

But on the road, Chu Feng gradually felt that something was off. As for where, he was unclear either. Only when Jiang Wushang suddenly stop following the eight-sided powers did Chu Feng and Zi Ling discover which part was off.

The underground palace at that place was already very wide. Actually, although it was said to be an underground palace, it would better be said to be a broad underground cave because other than some fluorescent rocks or some unextinguished fires, there weren't any decorations and it was abnormally simple.

And when the eight-sided powers were continuing deeper, Jiang Wushang suddenly stopped walking when he arrived in front of a wall.

He took out a special object, which looked like a key. But that was not the key point. The key point was that with the key, he opened a big door from the wall, and from that door, extremely special aura was emanating.

After that aura was emanated, Chu Feng's face couldn't help but change because he astonishedly discovered that the aura was extremely familiar. He felt it when he was in the Asura Ghost

Tower, and he could even feel it on Eggy's body. It was the aura of Asura.

However, after Jiang Wushang walked through the door that emanated the Asura aura, he disappeared, and the face of the wall returned to its original form.

“Indeed, this guy knows some things. It seems like only the path he went is the right one.”

After Chu Feng neared, he started to carefully look at the rock wall. With his Spirit Formation power, he could feel that the wall was very special, yet he had no way of opening it. So, he could only cast a pleading gaze towards Zi Ling and said, “How about it? Can you open it?”

“I'm not too sure. This wall is too strange, but I can give it a try.” Zi Ling also didn't have confidence in opening the wall, but in that situation, she could not do anything else and she had to use everything she had.

As insurance, Zi Ling first laid a concealment Spirit Formation in that land, and with that, no one would be able to see her and Chu Feng there, and no one would be able to see what she was doing.

After laying the concealment Spirit Formation, with a thought, a two meter wide and three meter tall black hole appeared in front of her. The black hole was filled with symbols and the bottom couldn't be seen. It gave out an aura that did not belong to this world, and it was as if it extended towards another world.

hmm

Suddenly, within the black hole, a figure appeared, and at the end, a person walked out of the black hole.

No, it wasn't a person. To be more precise, it seemed more like a consciousness, yet there were clear differences than a consciousness.

It was a female. Although her appearance wasn't very beautiful, she had quite the atmosphere around her. The most important part was that her height reached two and a half meters and golden light shot everywhere from her body. The clothes she wore also had quite the atmosphere, and the aura she gave off was the 2nd level of the Heaven realm.

“Master, I pay my respects.” After the strange female appeared, she respectfully greeted Zi Ling.

“Right now, I need to lay a Fairy Spirit Formation and I require assistance from your Fairy power.” Zi Ling did not speak any useless words and she directly went to work, starting to lay a Spirit Formation on the wall.

At the same time, the strange female emanated special power from inside her body and it endlessly blended into the Spirit Formation Zi Ling laid.

That power was very special. It was like the sunlight, yet there were slight differences. All in all, it caused people to be extremely comfortable as if the world's positive energy was condensing.

The most important thing was that the power was also very strong, and it even made Chu Feng felt that such a magical power shouldn't even exist in the world from the start.

“Eggy, this wouldn't be the World Spirit that made a contract with Zi Ling right?” Chu Feng curiously asked in his heart.

“That's right. It's a World Spirit from the Fairy Spirit World.”

“This girl is quite impressive! She is actually able to connect to the Fairy Spirit World and make a World Spirit, who is two levels stronger than her, serve her.” Even Eggy revealed her rare amazed expression.

“Fairy Spirit World? Are the World Spirits from the Fairy Spirit World really strong?” Chu Feng curiously asked.

“Them being the strongest is impossible, but they are absolutely not weak. It can be said that they're the second strongest within the Seven Spirit Worlds.” Eggy explained.

“Then the strongest? Which world is the strongest world?” Chu Feng closely asked.

“Is there even a need to ask that? Of course, the strongest is my

Asura Spirit World. Any World Spiritist that can establish a contract with a World Spirit from my Asura Spirit World can show off just because of that.” Eggy said proudly.

And after hearing those words, Chu Feng was very happy as well because that at least meant that the world he could connect to was the strongest world in the Seven Spirit Worlds.

“That’s not right. World Spirits can’t leave the bodies of their masters right? How can Zi Ling’s World Spirit come out to help her?” But with some more careful thinking, Chu Feng felt that it wasn’t too right.

After all, Eggy in his body was also very strong, but she could only remained locked in his body and she couldn’t come out to help him. At most, she could only borrow his body to display her own power.

So, he was thinking, if Eggy could also come out to help him, how good would that be? After all, the power that Eggy grasped was very strong, even terrifying.

Besides, if he was accompanied by an exceptional little beauty like Eggy, in the future, he would no longer be alone by himself. His life would also become extremely exciting and even more interesting.

# Chapter 379: You Cannot Save Him

---

“Idiot. Who said that World Spirits can’t be separated from the bodies of their masters? If they can’t be separated from their masters’ bodies, then how will World Spirits help their masters? Where would their value be?” Eggy fiercely disdained Chu Feng.

“Then according to what you’ve said, World Spirits can be separated from the bodies of the masters, and with their own awareness, enter our world?” Chu Feng got more and more happy. He truly, really hoped that Eggy could accompany him with a physical body.

“It can be done within a reasonable range, and size of this range depends on the strength of the master.”

“Of course, if you want a World Spirit to leave the Spiritual World, enter your world, and do things with their own awareness, you need to create a big door that links to your Spiritual World and this big door is called the World Spirit Big Door.”

“Naturally, if you want to open the World Spirit Big Door, you need to at least grasp the power of blue-coloured Spirit Formations, which also means that you must reach the strength of Blue-cloak World Spiritists.” Eggy explained.

“Then doesn’t that mean in the future, as long as become a Blue-cloak World Spiritist, you can be separated from my Spiritual World and live together with me?”

At that instant, Chu Feng was elated because he knew that Eggy didn't like staying in his Spiritual World. After all, how could such a cheerful and lively little girl like Eggy like being alone? She should like liveliness quite a bit.

And after hearing those words, Eggy's heart warmed because she understood, in her heart, Chu Feng's intentions. So, she sweetly smiled and said, "Yeah, for my freedom, you need to keep it up!"

hmm And just at that time, Zi Ling's Fairy Spirit Formation already finished being laid and it gave off dazzling golden-coloured radiance. The strange thing was that as it was enveloped by the golden-coloured radiance, a big door had actually slowly appeared from the perfect and undamaged wall and it also slowly opened. Zi Ling succeeded.

"Girl, not bad!" Seeing that, Chu Feng laughed and said.

"Less speaking, quickly follow." With a thought, Zi Ling reopened a World Spirit Big Door and her World Spirit also went back to Zi Ling's Spiritual World on her own.

After that, Zi Ling speedily walked towards the insides of the wall door and Chu Feng also hurriedly followed.

boom

Just as Chu Feng and Zi Ling entered, the big door behind them shut and at that instant, Chu Feng discovered that the passageway

was a lot more exquisite than the cave outside.

The walls everywhere there were made by special rocks. On them, beautiful patterns were carved and an indescribable atmosphere appeared. The most important part was that on the wall, Chu Feng felt special Spirit Formation powers, and those powers emanated the auras of Asura.

“The master who created this was also a World Spiritist who was connected with an Asura World Spirit.” Eggy said.

“Is it that Monstrous Beast trapped in the Asura Ghost Tower?” Chu Feng asked.

“I’m not sure about that.” Eggy shook her head.

Following the passageway and going forward, their line of sight became more and more broad, and Chu Feng and Zi Ling also discovered some mechanisms. However, those mechanisms were all nullified just now, and without even thinking, they knew that Jiang Wushang did it.

In a situation like that, Chu Feng and Zi Ling couldn’t help but quicken their steps because they were afraid that Jiang Wushang would find the treasures first and if that happened, they were going to lose quite a bit.

“Quickly follow.” Suddenly, Zi Ling’s eyes flashed as if she felt something. She started to use a bodily martial skill and ran with



extreme speed in the passageway.

Without delay, Chu Feng also used the Imperial Wind Technique and quickly followed.

With such speed, Chu Feng and Zi Ling quickly arrived at the end, and a palace dazzling in gold and jade appeared in front of them.

That place was truly dazzling in gold and jade because everything there was made out of gold. It emanated the radiance of gold.

Also, in the middle of the palace, there was a huge area of treasures. All sorts of strange treasures, all sorts of Origin beads and Profound medicines, were piled up into a small mountain.

Within the little mountain that was caused by piling treasures, there were even several extremely ancient books. They were also placed in the middle, and obviously, they were not Mysterious Techniques. They were martial skills.

“Haha, they are finally found by me!” After seeing those, Zi Ling rejoiced and her beautiful body leaped. As her skirt fluttered, she already flew quickly towards the palace.

“Wait!” But at that instant, Chu Feng hurriedly yelled to stop her because he astonishedly discovered that in that palace, he didn’t see any traces of Jiang Wushang yet that place was clearly the end.

hmm Indeed, just as Zi Ling stepped into the palace, the palace had actually twisted and the scene in front of their eyes started to quickly change. It shrunk into a lump and started to wrap around Zi Ling.

“Chu Feng, save me!” At that very instant, Zi Ling originally wanted to evade it but her efforts were in vain as the twisting scene already wrapped around her, causing her to lose her ability to escape.

“What a powerful Illusionary Formation.” After that place completely disappeared, the real scene appeared in front of Chu Feng’s eyes.

Currently, in front of Chu Feng, how was that even any “palace dazzling in gold and jade”? It was a quagmire condensed with a dominatingly strong Spirit Formation, and within the quagmire, Zi Ling was quickly sinking and no matter how she struggled, she could not escape her surroundings.

“It’s you?”

At the same time, a familiar voice also rang out. It was Jiang Wushang. At that instant, Jiang Wushang was also sank into the quagmire and over half of his body already sank in. After seeing Chu Feng and Zi Ling, his face was filled with shock.

whoosh whoosh whoosh The current Chu Feng didn’t dare to be slow and he hurried laid a Spirit Formation. Quickly after, he sat cross-leggedly, overlaid his palms, then abruptly yelled

explosively, “Break!”

hmm

After speaking those words, within the Spirit Formation that had floating light lingering, two rows of light shot out.

After that light enveloped Zi Ling and Jiang Wushang, countless symbols, like bugs, started to drill into the quagmire. With that, the sinking speed of Zi Ling and Jiang Wushang had actually slowed down.

hualala

Quickly after that, the hand seals in front of Chu Feng’s chest changed and two Spirit Formation chains condensed by symbols shot out from the Spirit Formation and at the end, coiled around Zi Ling’s and Jiang Wushang’s body.

“Haaa!!!!”

After that, Chu Feng yelled explosively again and simultaneously, the palms that he overlaid suddenly tightly clenched and his entire body tensed up. Also, his body started to turn pale-white and droplets of sweat as big as beans never-endingly slid down his face. Boundless Spirit Formation power was unrestrainedly being channeled into the Spirit Formation.

But luckily, as Chu Feng gave it his all, the Spirit Formation

chains also started to retract and Zi Ling and Jiang Wushang who had already sank into the quagmire were slowly rising.

In that situation, it caused both Zi Ling and Jiang Wushang to be extremely joyed because it meant that Chu Feng's methods were working and Chu Feng could save them.

whoosh

Finally, Zi Ling was the first to be pulled out. Without the interference of the illusion, her body was as light as swallow and her original strength returned. With a beautiful angle, she landed in front of Chu Feng.

hmm

But just as she landed, her hand clenched to form a fist, and within her hand, she condensed a Spirit Formation sword out. Quickly after, she sliced down towards the Spirit Formation chain that Chu Feng was using to pull Jiang Wushang up. With a snapping sound, she had actually cut the Spirit Formation chain.

“What are you doing?!” Seeing that scene, Chu Feng was suddenly shocked and he couldn't help but loudly yell.

On the other hand, Zi Ling was abnormally calm. After dissipating the Spirit Formation sword in her hand, she lightly rubbed her hand and composedly said, “You cannot save him.”

# Chapter 380: Broken Walls

---

“Why can’t I save him?” Chu Feng’s face was filled with confusion.

“Is there even a need to ask that? He is our opponent, and he will take the treasures away from you and me.” Zi Ling explained.

“I won’t. I won’t take your treasures. Save me, Chu Feng save me! As long as you save me, I will leave this place immediately.” Jiang Wushang begged. When faced with death, even the young man with a noble identity expressed fear from his heart.

“Don’t believe him. If I’m not mistaken, he is a person from the Jiang Dynasty. If you save him today, even if he leaves this place right now, in the future, he will certainly retaliate towards you and me.” Zi Ling interrupted.

“No! Chu Feng, believe me! I will absolutely not retaliate against either of you. I will not mention today’s matter to anyone.” Seeing that Zi Ling was truly not going to save a dying person, Jiang Wushang completely panicked.

And at that instant, Chu Feng tightly furrowed his brows and his gaze was like a torch. His thoughts were quickly spinning around and he was pondering many questions.

At the end, with his eagle-like sharp gaze, Chu Feng tightly stared at Jiang Wushang’s face and said, “Jiang Wushang, out of kindness, the two of us save you today. I believe that you aren’t a

person who repays kindness with hatred.”

hualalala

After speaking, Chu Feng overlaid his palms again and another Spirit Formation chain shot out from the Spirit Formation in front of him and coiled around Jiang Wushang’s body again.

And this time, Zi Ling’s eyes glittered and within the gaze that she looked at Chu Feng with was filled with complaint. But she did not stop Chu Feng, and she only silently looked at everything that was happening.

Finally, Chu Feng successfully saved Jiang Wushang out and indeed, Jiang Wushang did not attack Chu Feng or Zi Ling. However, after being saved, his previous pettiness faded away and what was traded back was his former prideful attitude. However, it could still be seen that he was extremely grateful towards Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, I, Jiang Wushang, have remembered today’s favor. If there’s a chance in the future, I will certainly come back to repay you.”

“But as a word of advice, this place isn’t a place where you or I can explore. It’s still best to leave this place together with me.” Jiang Wushang said to Chu Feng.

“I’ve taken your good intentions to heart, but since I’ve come, I,

Chu Feng, will absolutely not return with no achievements. Leave, I hope that you can honor your promise and don't tell anyone about today's matters." Chu Feng said.

"Don't worry. I, Jiang Wushang, have always followed my promises. Since you won't listen to my advice and you insist on going forward, then take this. Perhaps it will be of some help to you."

Seeing that, Jiang Wushang no longer urged Chu Feng and from his Cosmos Sack, he took out a rolled up sheep-skin paper and handed it over to Chu Feng, then quickly afterwards, he walked back on the path that he came from.

And only after sending Jiang Wushang off with his gaze did Chu Feng open the sheep-skin scroll. He discovered that it was a map, yet it wasn't a complete map.

The map recorded the entrance to enter this palace and recorded the locations of some mechanisms as well as the method to nullify them. However, not all the mechanisms were recorded on it. For example, the quagmire in front of them and the Illusionary Formation just now. They were not on the map, so no wonder Jiang Wushang got caught by them.

"This map isn't too important, and we still need to rely on ourselves." Zi Ling also walked over and looked at the map. Afterwards, she started to lay a Spirit Formation on the ground, and after the Spirit Formation was complete, it became strands of rainbow lights and were condensed into a bridge. It went over the quagmire in front and connected to the other side of the quagmire.

“This quagmire has suction power and by walking on air, one would certainly be sucked in. It is still better to be more careful.” After speaking, Zi Ling went first and stepped onto the rainbow bridge and crossed. She who was too careless before also started to be more cautious this time.

After that, Chu Feng and Zi Ling walked forward together and broke through obstacle after obstacle. At the end, they discovered a problem. The obstacles recorded on the map was rather aged, and they seemed to have already been existing for many years.

While breaking through the obstacles, they would restore themselves back after a period of time. The methods were extremely brilliant, and if they didn't have the map, even if Zi Ling wanted break through them, she would be required to spend a lot of power, and it was even possible that she couldn't break through them.

Similarly, there were many mechanisms like the Illusionary Formation just now. The map did not record such mechanisms; however, those mechanisms did not seem to be laid for a very long period of time. Although they were extremely brilliant, they weren't as exceptional as the ones recorded on the map.

That stated a problem. Once before, there were two people here and the mechanisms were laid in two eras. Also, even if there was a treasure here, there shouldn't be so many mechanisms laid.

Which meant that the mechanisms were used to prevent



intruders. But it was better to say that they seemed to be testing the intruder because the obstacles later on clearly got harder and harder, yet they weren't impossible to break through.

The most important thing was that even though many mechanisms would cause a person to die, they would still leave a sliver of life for them. For example, before, if it wasn't a quagmire but another type of trap, perhaps Zi Ling and Jiang Wushang would have already died.

But luckily, Zi Ling's Spirit power was very strong and her strength wasn't weak as well. Especially her Fairy Spirit World's World Spirit. Her battle power was so outstandingly strong, and in a situation like that, Chu Feng and Zi Ling finally arrived at the end of the map.

In that place, a vast palace appeared. That palace was extremely big, and it was even like a plaza. It was big enough to hold several hundreds of thousands of people.

And the general structure was exactly the same as the palace before which was dazzling in gold and jade.

However, in the middle of the palace, there were no treasures. The place could even not be said to be dazzling in gold and jade. Instead, it was utterly ragged because the walls all around them were destroyed by someone.

“The walls are very special, and even with my current strength I am unable to break any slightest bit of it. The person who did this

must be very strong.” Zi Ling observed the walls carefully and sighed with a face full of shock.

“These walls seemed to have recorded something before, so the person who destroyed them must have wanted to prevent others from seeing them right?” Chu Feng also found some inklings.

“Truly dammit. If I’m not mistaken, the things recorded on the walls before should be the things left behind by that martial cultivation expert.”

“And the one who destroyed them should be the Monster King that was defeated by the old ancestor of the Jiang Dynasty that year. After all, from legends, it only became so powerful because it got some inheritance.”

Zi Ling was tightly clenching her teeth and she seemed extremely angry. Purely because of the Monster King’s own selfishness, it destroyed the inheritance left behind by a senior in order for others to be unable to gain benefits from it. It was truly infuriating.

“Wait, this doesn’t seem to be the end of the underground palace.” Suddenly, Chu Feng spoke.

“Why so?” Zi Ling curiously asked.

“Look here.” Chu Feng pointed at the map in his own hands.

“This! This is!” After Zi Ling approached and carefully looked at the area that Chu Feng was pointing towards, even her expression couldn’t help changing.

# Chapter 381: Gold-Cloak World Spiritist

---

The area Chu Feng pointed at was the palace right now. But on the map, there was a thing in the center of the palace, yet at that instant, there wasn't.

The most important thing was that if one looked closely, they would discover that the palace actually had two floors. But at that instant, only one floor appeared. Which meant that there was either another floor below the palace, or another floor above the palace. This place was not the real end.

When Zi Ling discovered that change, she hurried arrived at the place where the map indicted there was an object and laid a Spirit Formation at that place.

After all, with a light yell of “open”, the Spirit Formation started to give out dazzling brilliance and at the same time, in the direction of the Spirit Formation, a stage of rock appeared with seven-coloured radiance lingering around it.

After that stage of rock appeared, the brilliance got brighter and brighter, and at the end, it projected up and enveloped the entire palace's ceiling. But the strangest thing was that as it was being covered by the seven-coloured radiance, the ceiling of the palace started to change and the special rocks got more and more faint, and finally, started to disappear. The thing that appeared in front of Chu Feng's and Zi Ling's eyes was another palace.

The shape of the palace was the same as the one they were in

currently, but the only thing different was that in mid-air of the palace's center, a row of symbols were floating. Those symbols were floating in the air and they emanated strange energy, as if within the delicate symbols, they contained tens of thousands of changes.

And the most important part was that outside of the symbols, there were four golden-coloured big words floating in the air. A rank 9 martial skill.

“It's a rank 9 martial skill!” After seeing the four big words, rank 9 martial skill, Zi Ling's eyes instantly lit up. Her alluring body leaped, she rose, and while extending her hand, she flew over towards the symbols that concealed the rank 9 martial skill and grabbed.

“This girl, such a quick speed.”

Seeing that scene, Chu Feng tightly frowned because he knew the reason why Zi Ling went over so quickly was certainly because she was afraid that he would go over before her and take away the rank 9 martial skill. Obviously, the girl had still not completely trusted him yet.

hmm But before Zi Ling's thin and long hands touched the symbols, a strange energy surge started to spread and instantly, it permeated the top area of the entire palace.

whoosh whoosh whoosh

Immediately after, around Zi Ling, several golden-coloured Spirit Formation chains appeared. The Spirit Formation chains were like water snakes as they coiled around Zi Ling's body and tied her tightly.

“Dammit.”

“Ahh~~”

At that instant, Zi Ling used her entire body's power and wanted to get rid of it, but her efforts were in vain as just as she used strength, the golden-coloured chains quickly shrunk and they were going to be imbedded into her bones. The agony of feeling that her physical body was almost going to shatter caused Zi Ling's little face to instantly turn deathly-white and from her forehead, large amounts of sweat slid down and because of the pain, she couldn't help but shriek.

“Why has this happened? This is actually also a mechanism? But I used my Spirit power to scout it out yet there was clearly nothing wrong with it!”

Seeing Zi Ling who was in the upper-layer of the palace while suffering torment, Chu Feng's expression slightly changed because he could not see through where the mechanism in the palace was. He didn't know how to save Zi Ling because the golden-coloured Spirit Formation chain was truly too powerful. The Spirit Formation power that was condensed out was something that Chu Feng had never seen before, and he could not understand it at all.

hmm But just at that time, the air next to Zi Ling's body suddenly wiggled and quickly after, a figure appeared.

It was a consciousness as his body was half-transparent, but the consciousness was still a World Spiritist because he was wearing a World Spirit Cloak and his appearance was tightly covered by the cloak.

And the thing that shocked Chu Feng the most was the World Spirit Cloak that the consciousness wore was extremely unordinary. Golden light overflowed out of him and it had a very imposing grandeur.

His cloak was imprinted with symbols and they were extremely special as well, as if every single symbol had tens of thousands of changes with infinite power. That person was actually wearing a World Spirit Gold Cloak.

“Gold-cloak World Spiritist?”

Chu Feng's face was filled with shock and he couldn't help but take in a breath of cool air. In the entire continent of the Nine Provinces, there was no one who could reach the realm of Purple-cloak World Spiritist and they were like a legend. But at that instant, in front of him, a Gold-cloak World Spiritist had actually appeared, so how was it possible that Chu Feng wasn't shocked?

At the same time, the Gold-cloak World Spiritist also cast his gaze towards Chu Feng. His eyes were like an eagle's eyes, and like two sharp blades, they pierced through Chu Feng's body, seeing

through everything that he was, and Chu Feng had no way of resisting.

“This...this is the power of a Gold-cloak World Spiritist! It is too scary. Other than the Divine Lightning in my dantian, almost everything was seen through by him.”

Chu Feng was greatly shocked once again and even cold sweat couldn't help but be left behind on his forehead because he discovered that the Gold-cloak World Spiritist in front of him was truly too scary. He had never seen such a scary person. With a single glance, he saw through everything.

“Mm?” And after looking at Chu Feng, even the Gold-cloak World Spiritist expressed a bit a surprise, then quickly after, he spoke with a voice of a middle-aged man, “You have actually established a contract with an Asura World Spirit at such a young age. You're not simple! Boy, what is your relationship with this lady?”

“Senior, she is my friend.” Chu Feng respectfully replied. As he faced that person, he didn't dare to be disrespectful in any way because he was too strong. The power that he grasped was absolutely unimaginable by Chu Feng, and perhaps with a thought from him, Chu Feng would disappear like smoke.

“Only a friend?” The Gold-cloak World Spiritist indifferently asked and there was a bit of suspicion in his voice.

“No, not only a friend, she is the...”



“She is the one whom I love. Senior, I beg you. Please let her go.” Chu Feng pleaded.

“Let her go? It seems like you want to save her?” The Gold-cloak World Spiritist curiously asked.

“Yes, of course! Senior, as long as you let her go, I will be willing to do whatever you want me to do. You can torture me, but I hope that you can let her go.”

For some reason, when Chu Feng saw Zi Ling’s painful appearance, he could really not endure it. Even if he endured the pain for her, he would be willing to.

“So it is still that kind of foolish love. But you must understand clearly that when she saw my martial skill, she didn’t even consider your feelings.”

“Her selfishness was extremely strong and she wanted to take it herself. Is a female such as her worth it for you to love?” The Gold-cloak World Spiritist seemed to be reminding Chu Feng that Zi Ling was an extremely selfish female.

“Senior, perhaps in your perspective, she isn’t worth it, but in my eyes, she is. She is worth it for me to love her without regards of myself.” Chu Feng honestly and calmly smiled and his face was filled with sincerity.

Chu Feng didn't truly love Zi Ling. He had always had a heart of caution towards her, so how could he love her?

However, he didn't want Zi Ling to be harmed. Also, he knew that if the Gold-cloak World Spiritist in front of him didn't want him and Zi Ling to leave alive, it didn't matter what Chu Feng said.

When facing such an expert after intruding into his land and causing him to be displeased, a few simple words of pleading was absolutely not enough to move that expert's heart to cause him to let Chu Feng and Zi Ling go.

# Chapter 382: Risking One's Own Life To Save

---

At that instant, since he hadn't directly attacked to finish off Chu Feng's and Zi Ling's life and was asking Chu Feng some questions meant that he didn't want to kill Chu Feng and Zi Ling yet. Or at least, it was like that for now.

If he truly didn't want to kill Chu Feng and Zi Ling, then they still had a strand of chance to live. Then at that time, it would be the best time for Chu Feng to take away Zi Ling's heart.

Before, no matter how Chu Feng said he liked Zi Ling, she didn't believe it. Instead, she felt disgust and felt that Chu Feng was saying flowery but false words.

But in a crucial life and death situation such as this, Zi Ling's inner heart was extremely weak. At this time, by standing out for her to express his heart's intentions was the easiest to move her.

Since it was unknown whether they were going to live or not, Chu Feng decided to stake it at this time. He was staking that the Gold-cloak World Spiritist would give them a chance. A chance to continue living.

"Senior, I implore you to let her go and don't torment her. If you have any things you want to do, do them to me. I'll endure them for her." Chu Feng patted his chest and said with an attitude of "charge towards him for Zi Ling's crimes".

"Haha, interesting. Lady, you have quite the charm to be able to

make such an excellent young man face you like this.” The Gold-cloak World Spiritist looked at Zi Ling, then after, said to Chu Feng again,

“You cannot endure her crimes.”

“However, since you insist on saving her, I will still give you a chance.”

whoosh

As he spoke, he waved the sleeve of his cloak, extended his palm and lightly pointed at Chu Feng. Then, within the palace that Chu Feng was in, bone-piercing chilliness encircled him. The chilliness was extremely domineering and almost instantly, it turned the palace into an ice house, and Chu Feng’s surroundings became ice.

Even if Chu Feng used his Profound power to block, the chilliness still invaded his body. At that moment, on his skin, layers of frost was condensed and that frost was rapidly increasing.

whoosh whoosh whoosh Quickly after, the Gold-cloak World Spiritist waved his fingers in the air and very quickly, in front of Chu Feng, a picture scroll that was two meters tall and ten meters long appeared.

“Remember the contents of this picture scroll.” The Gold-cloak World Spiritist said.

In reality, before the Gold-cloak World Spiritist even spoke, Chu Feng already cast his gaze onto the picture scroll and diligently engraved the contents of the picture scroll in his head.

whoosh However, just as the Gold-cloak World Spiritist finished speaking, his big sleeve was suddenly waved and at the same time, the picture scroll was fragmented and they were scattered within the vast palace.

“If you can restore this picture scroll to its original form within an hour, she can be saved.”

“If you cannot restore this picture scroll within an hour, then she will be split into pieces by this Spirit Formation chain and a complete corpse of the one you love won’t even be left behind.” The Gold-cloak World Spiritist said.

swish After hearing those words, Chu Feng didn’t hesitate and with a leap, he waved his hand and Profound power surged out. He wanted to gather the picture scroll fragments floating in the vast palace.

However, the thing that made him feel helplessness was that his power was unable to move those picture scroll fragments. The other thing that shocked him was at that instant, within the palace, he was unable to use any martial skills and his feet were abnormally heavy. Every step he walked required extreme effort.

At the same time, the bone-piercing chilliness was endlessly eating away Chu Feng’s body. Chu Feng felt that his body got more

and more numb, more and more stiff, and gradually, he was going to lose control over his own body.

“Dammit. You sealed my power! If you do this, how can I restore this picture scroll within an hour?” Chu Feng was a bit furious. The Gold-cloak World Spiritist simply gave him an unfinishable problem.

“That’s your problem.” The Gold-cloak World Spiritist laughed as if he was watching a good show, then after, he added, “That’s right. Although you won’t die if you don’t restore this picture scroll within an hour, the chilliness here is strong and with your cultivation, you have no way of bearing past an hour. Which also means that you will also die before an hour.”

“Of course, the exit is over there. If you don’t want to die, you can leave at any time, but if you leave, she will die.”

“As for whether you want to risk your life to save her, or to die together here will depend on your own capabilities. Hahaha...”

Suddenly, the Gold-cloak World Spiritist laughed loudly, and within his laughter, his body also started to dissipate and at the end, blended into the palace above.

“Ahh~~~” And after the Gold-cloak World Spiritist disappeared, Zi Ling shrieked again in pain.

Raising his head to look, Chu Feng astonishedly discovered that

the golden-coloured Spirit Formation chain that coiled around her body had actually started to shrink again. Although the shrinking speed was extremely slow, it still caused great pain to Zi Ling. If that went on, Zi Ling's body was truly going to be stifled to death.

“Dammit. I don't believe that I cannot restore this picture scroll within one hour!” Seeing that, Chu Feng did not hesitate anymore. The two lightning in his blood surged and his aura instantly climbed to the 5th level of the Profound realm.

And following his rise in strength, Chu Feng's steps were also no longer as heavy as before and he could even run.

So, Chu Feng started to run around to gather the picture scroll fragments in the palace which was like an ice house as it was filled with chilliness.

But as the time he spent staying in the ice house became long, and the chilliness that corroded his power became stronger and stronger. Chu Feng's entire body was covered by frost and his walking speed became slower and slower, and his skin was currently losing signs of life.

Seeing Chu Feng give so much to fight for a chance for her to continue living, Zi Ling's clenched her teeth. She did her best to endure the sharp pain coming from her body and she no longer made any sounds from pain.

It had to be said that Chu Feng's memory was very good and he was able to place every single picture scroll fragment in the correct

position. However, as time passed bit by bit, Chu Feng's body gradually found it hard to hold on and at the end, he even continuously tripped and his entire body started to quiver.

“Chu Feng, don't care about me! Leave! Or else, both of us will die!” At that instant, even Zi Ling couldn't bear it anymore and she had actually urged Chu Feng to leave.

“Shut up girl. How can I leave you?” Chu Feng forced a slight smile and he no longer cared about what Zi Ling said. He continued to go around, collecting the picture scroll fragments.

However, the current Chu Feng truly had the heart to do, but not the strength. The chilliness had already entered deep into his bones and his entire body was frozen as hard as iron. He already gradually lost his control over his body and at the end, Chu Feng powerless laid on the floor.

“Chu Feng, you...”

And seeing Chu Feng who already powerlessly fell onto the ground yet was still doing his best to stand up, Zi Ling seemed to have already forgot the pain of her own body because her heart was trembling and her soul was trembling. No matter what, she never would have thought that Chu Feng would truly not care about his own life to save her.

When she faced a person who was unrelated to herself yet gave so much to save herself, Zi Ling had no way of being not moved.



# Chapter 383: Treasure The Person In Front Of You

---

At that instant, she who was usually strong had actually moistened her eyes. Suddenly, she loudly yelled,

“You damn guy, leave! I don’t need you to save me!”

“Even more so, I don’t hope that you give up your life in order to save me! Quickly leave!”

“We were unrelated from the start and you don’t owe me anything and there is no need to help me like this! Leave, quickly leave, don’t care about me!”

This time, from the bottom of her heart, Zi Ling didn’t want to Chu Feng to die for her. She hoped that Chu Feng could continue living. After all, the reason why she was trapped in that place was all because of her selfishness. It was all because of herself, and it was unrelated to Chu Feng.

However, Chu Feng still ignored her and with determination, wanted to stand up. And when he was in the situation where he could no longer stand up, Chu Feng then resolutely chose to crawl. With his frozen stiff hands and feet, bit by bit, he moved his body.

At the start, Chu Feng only wanted to do everything he could to save Zi Ling. If he had no way of saving her, then Chu Feng would decide to leave. He didn’t want to send his life to the grave because

of Zi Ling.

But when Zi Ling started to urge him to leave, Chu Feng's heart wavered. His heart had actually shook, and unfathomably, a thought that he had to save Zi Ling emerged. Also, that thought became more and more firm and up until this point, it was indestructible and immovable.

Although Chu Feng's determination to save Zi Ling was immovable, his body no longer followed his heart.

Right now, his line of sight became blurry and his awareness became blurry. In his brain, there was only one thought, and it was to finish gathering the picture scroll to save Zi Ling.

But that thought could no longer support his actions, and at the end, Chu Feng's body went limp and he powerlessly laid on the ground, sinking into a coma.

After Chu Feng lost consciousness, he had no way of using his Profound power to block the chilliness outside his body. The chilliness was like an invisible fierce and wild beast. From all directions, it surrounded and attacked him. Very quickly, Chu Feng was solidified into a huge ice block and he was thoroughly frozen.

“Chu Feng!!!” Seeing that scene, Zi Ling's face greatly changed and she started to hysterically yell.

At that very instant, her Profound power was sealed and she could not use her Spirit power. She didn't know how Chu Feng was and she even thought that Chu Feng died.

As long as she thought that he died, and died because of herself, the tears in her eyes started to flow down like a flood and it completely soaked her face of absolute beauty.

“Although his strength wasn't good enough, his perseverance is applaudable. It seems like this boy truly steeled his heart to save you.”

“From the start, he had never planned to escape himself.” But just at that time, the Gold-cloak World Spiritist appeared next to Zi Ling soundlessly. He said to Zi Ling, “Do you want to see how much he loved you?”

After speaking, without even waiting for Zi Ling to reply, he flung his sleeve a few times downwards at the palace and the chilliness that covered the bottom part of the palace was absorbed into his sleeve.

At that instant, the palace underneath had returned to its original form. Not even a single strand of the chilliness was left behind. However, Chu Feng's appearance was greatly changed.

The current Chu Feng was completely unrecognizable. There were surface wounds all over his body, and certain places even ulcerated, revealing eerie white bones. He had frostbite that went deep into the bones throughout his body.

“Chu Feng!!!” Seeing Chu Feng who was in that state, Zi Ling’s eyes suddenly widened and her little mouth was slightly opened, showing unspeakable shock from deep within her heart.

“Have you seen it? This is the pain that his body endured. It is a lot more serious than yours, yet he held on to this point. Say for yourself, what was the thing that supported him?” The Gold-cloak World Spiritist smiled and asked.

“Wuu~~~~~” Zi Ling at that moment already sobbed so much that no sound formed and she couldn’t even speak.

“Little lady, you should treasure a person who loves you like this well.”

“The remains that I left behind here are for people who are fated to get them. However, some people were too greedy so I didn’t give all of it to them.”

“This rank 9 martial skill shall be gifted to you two. I hope that both of you can develop quicker and I hope that one day, the figures of the two of you can be seen on that land where heroes gather.”

The Gold-cloak World Spiritist calmly smiled and his body started to dissipate. It became seven-coloured brilliance that covered the sky, and after the seven-colored brilliance descended down and landed on Zi Ling’s body, the golden-coloured Spirit Formation chains that tied Zi Ling disappeared.

And when the seven-coloured brilliance landed on Chu Feng's body, his utterly ruined physical body instantly healed.

“Chu Feng!!” At that instant, Zi Ling who had recovered her freedom leaped and arrived in front of Chu Feng, then propped Chu Feng, who was laying on the ground, up.

“Mm~~” Chu Feng confusedly opened his eyes and a painful expression still appeared on his face.

“Zi Ling, you?” After seeing Zi Ling in front of his eyes, his pupils suddenly shrunk and immediately, he was shocked. He couldn't help but raise his head to look at his surroundings, and he discovered that everything was so normal and the bone-piercing chilliness disappeared extremely thoroughly, as if it had never even appeared.

“I wasn't caught in an Illusionary Formation just now right?” Chu Feng rubbed his head, and he even suspected that everything he experienced before was only an illusion.

“No, it wasn't an illusion. Everything was real. Your perseverance moved him, and it is you who saved me.” After seeing Chu Feng awake, Zi Ling's alluring body fell and she pounced into Chu Feng's embrace, tightly hugging him.

“This...” At that instant, Chu Feng was a bit bewildered because the happiness came too suddenly. He got Zi Ling just like that?

But no matter what, at least, it was something that Chu Feng hoped to happen. So, he did not restrain himself. He opened his arms and tightly hugged Zi Ling's waist.

“What are you doing?”

But who would have thought that just as Chu Feng touched Zi Ling, her body couldn't help but violent tremble and she subconsciously got rid of Chu Feng. Her palm that made wind-piercing sounds also flew towards Chu Feng's face.

But luckily, when that palm was half an inch to Chu Feng's face, it stopped, and only then could Chu Feng escape a disaster.

Looking at Chu Feng, a smear of shame emerged onto Zi Ling's body. After that, she stood up, leaped, and rushed towards the upper part of the palace again. She stretched towards the rank 9 martial skill and grabbed.

“Zi Ling, you...” Seeing that scene, Chu Feng was so frightened that his heart could jump out. He thought in his heart, “This girl truly wants money but not life! After escaping so uneasily, she actually still has her heart on the rank 9 martial skill! She truly doesn't learn.”

whoosh But who would have thought that this time, Zi Ling actually successfully grasped the rank 9 martial skill within her hand, then after that, she floated down.

And when Zi Ling landed again, she held Chu Feng's left hand and forcefully put the rank 9 martial skill into Chu Feng's hand, then said, "You keep this."

# Chapter 384: There's Something Hidden

---

“This...”

Looking at the martial skill in his hand, Chu Feng hesitated a bit because before, they already came to an agreement that martial skills belonged to Zi Ling, and Profound medicines belonged to him. No matter what, the martial skill should be given to Zi Ling.

However, after all, it was a rank 9 martial skill. It was a martial skill that no one cultivated before in the continent of the Nine Provinces. Giving a martial skill like that to another person truly ached Chu Feng's heart.

“Chu Feng, give this rank 9 martial skill to her.”

“As long as you give the martial skill to her, perhaps you can capture her heart in this instant, and perhaps this girl will love you because of this.”

“It is only an insignificant rank 9 martial skill. How can that be compared to the benefits a Divine Body brings you? Is there even a need to hesitate?” But as Chu Feng hesitated, Eggy's voice of reminder rang out next to his ear.

With Eggy's reminder, Chu Feng gnashed his teeth, and when Zi Ling was caught off guard, he threw his hand out with lightning-like speed and patted the rank 9 martial skill in his hand onto Zi Ling's head.



hmm

In the instant the rank 9 martial skill touched Zi Ling's head, it became a strand of light and burrowed into Zi Ling brain, and disappeared.

“Chu Feng, you..”

Facing Chu Feng's actions, Zi Ling's face was filled with shock. Her eyes were roundly widened and her little mouth also slightly opened.

Because, no matter what, she never would have thought that Chu Feng would actually give the rank 9 martial skill over to her. To know that it wasn't a normal martial skill, but a rank 9 martial skill!

“I already made a promise and said that martial skills are yours. So this is yours.” Chu Feng chuckled and said, showing a face of indifference.

Seeing Chu Feng who was so calm, Zi Ling's heart rapidly changed and there was an unspeakable feeling. So, she said in a low voice, “Chu Feng, thank you.”

“What is there to thank about? That's right, is this martial skill really a rank 9 martial skill?” Chu Feng unconcernedly waved his hand, but after that, he still curiously asked closely.

“Mm. It’s a rank 9 martial skill and it is extremely impressive. It seems like the master here is an extremely high-level expert.” Zi Ling nodded her head.

“Yeah. If the consciousness that he left behind was so strong, then wouldn’t he himself be even more outstanding?”

“However, the remains here are clearly a bit old. If that Gold-cloak World Spiritist is truly the master here, then hasn’t he lived for many years? What realm would the current him be in?” Chu Feng said.

“Although this place hasn’t existed as long as a thousand years, it has definitely existed several hundred years. If he was a Martial Lord who stepped into the peak level, then it isn’t impossible for him to have a life of several hundred years. If he was in the Marital King realm, then there is no need to even talk about it. Besides, he’s a World Spiritist, so his life would always be longer than normal people.” Zi Ling explained.

“Mm.” After hearing those words, Chu Feng also nodded his head in approval, but he discovered that the things Zi Ling knew didn’t seem to be any less than what he knew, perhaps she even knew more than him. At least, in terms of martial cultivation realms, she knew them in more detail than Chu Feng.

rumble rumble rumble

But just at that time, the rock stage in the middle of the stage

suddenly rumbled and the seven-coloured light that was projected from the upper part of the palace also quickly faded away. At the end, the palace that stored the rank 9 martial skill disappeared, and the ceiling made out of rocks returned.

However, the rumbling of the rock stage did not disappear like that. Instead, they became louder and louder, and following the rumbling sounds, the rock stage had actually gradually sank down.

After that rock stage went down, Chu Feng and Zi Ling astonishedly discovered that it was a passageway. Although the passageway was very small, it was indeed a passageway.

“There’s something hidden?”

Chu Feng rejoiced. First, he used his Spirit power to explore it for a while, then after discovering that there were no dangers, he walked down first. Zi Ling also closely followed him.

Going along the passageway for roughly a thousand meters, there was a transparent door that appeared in front. The Spirit Formation door was transparent and they could see everything on the other side of the door.

“This... This is?” And after Chu Feng and Zi Ling saw everything on the other side of the Spirit Formation door, the two of them were both shocked.

This was similarly a palace, and the palace was exactly the same

as the one Chu Feng and Zi Ling were in before.

However, in the middle of the palace, there was a circular rock stage. That rock stage was very big and its diameter was a hundred meters. It seemed like a mini plaza, and as it fluctuating up and down and while floating in the air of the vast palace, it seemed abnormally magical.

But that wasn't the important part. The important part was at that instant, on the rock stage, it was emitting a bundle of light that enveloped downwards.

Within that light, there were eighty-eight people sitting cross-leggedly on the floor. Those eighty-eight people were the apical experts sent by the eight-sided powers.

However, the current them did not have good faces. Palms overlaid, trembling bodies, and they were currently using their Heaven power to resist something.

“Ahh!”

Suddenly, an old person in the 1st level of the Heaven realm abruptly quivered violently and a mouthful of blood sprayed out. After powerlessly laying on the ground, he started to painfully struggle and miserably yell.

As he struggled, his body had actually started to twist and from his body, crackling noises kept on ringing out, as if the bones in his

entire body were shattering. At the same time, his physical body also started to change and at the end, he became a pool of blood.

Seeing that scene, Chu Feng and Zi Ling stared at one another with their four eyes and the two of them couldn't help but take in a breath of cool air. To be able to forcefully turn an expert in the 1st level of the Heaven realm into a pool of blood. What kind of terrifying power was it?

“Dammit. We were set up. There wasn't any treasure in this place and it was only an Illusionary Formation. We were tricked.”

Looking at that scene, a middle-aged man wearing a fiery-red-coloured long robe furiously roared. He was an expert of the 5th level of the Heaven realm, the head of the Fire God Valley.

“Fire God Valley head, if it wasn't for you who was too impatient and flew over quickly after seeing the treasure, we wouldn't have followed you and also step into this Illusionary Formation, causing us, at this very moment, to be trapped in this formation and unable to escape.”

A man with black hair as well as eyebrows like swords coldly snorted. And that person also had the cultivation of the 5th level of the Heaven realm. He was the head of the Sword God Valley.

“Rubbish. If all of you didn't also have a selfish heart, why also follow me and intrude into this place?” The head of the Fire God Valley yelled.

“All of you, shut up! The power of this formation is so strong, yet none of you concentrate on resisting against it. Do you have the leisure to waste strength on battling with mouths? Do all of you want to die in this place?” Suddenly, an old man with greying hair on both sides of his temples angrily yelled.

That old man wore a blue World Spirit Cloak. Although he was also in the 5th level of the Heaven realm, his aura was extremely thick and on his clothes, there was even a badge. It was the badge of the World Spirit Guild. He was the vice head of the World Spirit Guild.

“Haha, as expected of a World Spiritist! You actually still know to conserve your power to fight against the pressure of the formation.”

“But sadly, this formation is not something that any of you can resist against. Not to mention you, even if the old ancestor of the Jiang Dynasty comes, he will have trouble stepping out of the formation and he would be fated to be refined into a pool of blood.”

# Chapter 385: Unexpectedly, There Is A Strange Armament

---

“When all of you got the map to this place from Black Toad, have you ever thought that this will be your grave?”

“Hahaha, shameless humans! Do you truly think that Black Toad would sell us out? No matter what, you never would have thought that he intentionally got himself caught, intentionally told everything to you, and intentionally sent yourselves to this place to your death, right?”

“Ahh, what’s the point of telling this to them? This is a group of idiots who believe themselves to be intelligent. How can they possibly understand the feelings between us five brothers.”

“Although Black Toad’s son is very important to it, we brothers and the millions of Monstrous Beasts in this Thousand Monster Mountain are more important to Black Toad.”

And just at that time, ear-piercing laughter kept on ringing out nearby, and four figures walked into the palace. They were four Monstrous Beasts with well-built physiques and strong auras.

All of them wore armor. One had a scorpion head, one had a centipede head, one had a spider head, and one had a venomous snake head. They were precisely the four other Monster Kings of the Thousand Monster Mountain.

“Dammit. Four old monsters, if you have the guts, let me out and openly fight me! ”The head of the Yuangang school furiously howled.

“Despicable Monstrous Beasts, you only know how to use deceptive schemes and machinations. If you fight one-on-one against me, which one of you would even be able to defeat me?” The head of the Hidden White Sect also sinisterly roared.

However, facing their howls and insults, the four Monster Kings didn’t seem to care about them. They only loudly laughed, then quickly after, said, “In terms of despicableness, how can we be even compared to you? If you have to blame something, you can only blame yourselves for being too greedy.”

“Whatever, no need to speak any more useless words with them. It’s best to quickly kill them off to avoid any other problems.” The Scorpion King urged.

“No. I want to see the process of them painfully hanging on until their strengths get exhausted, then at the end, being refined into a pool of blood.” The Centipede King said.

“Big brother, second brother is correct. This formation was personally laid by our master back in that year. With extremely skilled formation methods, the power of the Strange Armament is thoroughly displayed.”

“Not to mention them, even if our master walked in the formation, it would be difficult to escape. That was what our



master personally said.” The Spider King said.

“Yeah, this group of human scum have done many evils and immediately killing them is too favourable for them. It is better to watch as they die from torment.” The Venomous Snake King smiled and said.

“Strange Armament? Doesn’t that mean that there’s a Strange Armament within the formation?” After hearing those words, Chu Feng was elated in his heart and he hurriedly spread out his Spirit power. It had actually penetrated through the transparent Spirit Formation door and covered the circular rock that gave off strange light.

“Zi Ling, there is truly a Strange Armament on top of it! Heavens, it seems like this time, we’ve gotten really lucky.” Chu Feng was madly joyful.

“Yeah, that Strange Armament is the source of power for this formation. As long as the Strange Armament is taken away, the formation will disappear.”

Zi Ling’s Spirit power was even stronger than Chu Feng. Not only did she detect that there was a Strange Armament on the circular rock stage, she even detected that the Strange Armament was crucial for the formation.

“Really? That means as long as that Strange Armament is removed, doesn’t that mean that the people from the eight-sided powers can be saved?” After hearing those words, Chu Feng

rejoiced.

“What? You want to save them?” Zi Ling’s expression slightly changed and puzzledness appeared on her face.

“I owe favours to the people from the World Spirit Guild so I can’t let them just die like this. Besides, that’s the vice-head. If he dies, it will have huge effects on the World Spirit Guild. I cannot just watch as he dies and do nothing.” Chu Feng nodded his head.

Chu Feng didn’t care much about the other people’s lives, but to the people from the World Spirit Guild, he had to care about them. After all, the people from the World Spirit Guild had always treated Chu Feng quite well and they had helped him many times.

After the troubles at the Asura Ghost Tower, if he wasn’t strongly protected by the World Spirit Guild, perhaps Chu Feng would have been killed by the people from the Jie clan before even leaving the Spirit Province. So, Chu Feng really wanted to save the people from the World Spirit Guild.

“Do you know how dangerous this is? If we want to save them, what we face are the four Monster Kings with strengths in the 5th level of the Heaven realm.”

“You’ve experienced the Black Toad King before, so you know how strong it was. But do you know that within the five Monster Kings, the Black Toad King can only be ranked as fifth? The ranking of the five Monster Kings are arranged by strength.”

“It also means that if you want to save those people, then at this moment, what we need to face are four monsters that are even more terrifying than the Black Toad King.” Zi Ling seriously explained.

“Zi Ling, your foster father is also in there! Are you truly going to watch as he dies without saving him? How can your heart bear that?” Although Chu Feng knew that Zi Ling’s methods were ruthless, he never would have expected that Zi Ling would be so cold-hearted.

“He’s my foster father only because he wants to bind my grandfather to the Prestigious Villa to work for him. I don’t feel half a bit of familial affection towards him.” Zi Ling curled her mouth, then after that, urged Chu Feng,

“Chu Feng, there is no need for us to take this risk. Wait until all of them die and after the Monster Kings leave, we can go out again and get the Strange Armament without even gods or ghosts knowing. Why is there a need to take this risk?”

“Then can you guarantee when everyone gets refined into a pool of blood, the Monster Kings will leave the priceless Strange Armament here? Will they not take the Strange Armament away?”

“If I were them, I would absolutely not leave a treasure like this there. I would only bring it along with myself.”

“Besides, they have the ability to protect this treasure quite well. There is no need for them to leave it here.” Chu Feng justified.

At that instant, Zi Ling's pupils glittered and she couldn't help but slowly lower her head and sank into silence.

“.....”

Seeing Zi Ling who was in that state, Chu Feng's heartstrings jumped and he even thought that his words were too intense and had harmed Zi Ling. Just as he wanted to speak to console, Zi Ling suddenly raised her head and said to Chu Feng,

“Then fine. I'll go out to distract them. Take the chance to take the Strange Armament, and if you can't get the Strange Armament, then turn around, run, and leave me.”

“That won't do. My speed is quicker than yours. I can just go out and take the Strange Armament. If I get it, I get it; but if I can't get it, I can still retreat alive.”

“Who said that your speed is quicker than mine?” Suddenly, Zi Ling's pupils turned purple and at the same time, layers of purple-coloured gas also surged out from her body.

The purple-coloured gas was extremely strong and it was simply extremely horrifying. After it appeared, the powerful aura forced Chu Feng a few steps back and he almost fell onto the ground.

“You...You are going to use your body's power? Won't that reveal your identity of a Divine Body?” Seeing that, Chu Feng's face was

filled with worry. Although the current Zi Ling was indeed very strong, and she was even stronger than the experts in the 2nd level of the Heaven realm, even so, she was far from being able to defeat the four Monster Kings. The most important thing was that Chu Feng worried about Zi Ling revealing her Divine Body, which would cause the Jiang Dynasty to chase after her to kill her.

## Chapter 386: Asura Ghost Axe

---

“Putting aside that not everyone can recognize that I have a Divine Body, my power can be concealed.”

Zi Ling lightly smiled, then the purple-coloured gas retracted. After that, her footsteps lightly tapped on the ground and with a swish, Zi Ling already flew out of the transparent Spirit Formation with quick speed. That terrifying speed was not much different from Chu Feng’s when he used the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens.

“[Father](#), I’m coming to save you!” After Zi Ling rushed into the palace, she loudly yelled towards the sky. Her voice was loud and clear, and it was simply like thunder as it resonated throughout the entire palace.

“Father” should actually be “Foster Father”, but that doesn’t sound too well so I shortened it to “father”.

“This... Where did this girl pop out from?” The sudden scene frightened the four Monster Kings because they discovered that Zi Ling had actually jumped out of the wall. They understood the walls extremely clearly. They were strange things that could not be destroyed, yet how could someone pass through such a wall?

“Zi Ling, don’t come over! This formation isn’t something that you can resist against. Quickly escape!” And after seeing Zi Ling, Qin Lei’s face greatly changed and he hurriedly yelled loudly. From that, it could be seen that he still cared quite a bit about Zi Ling.

“Father, don’t be afraid. I still have the treasure that my grandfather gave me. It can break all the formations in the world and kill all living things or Monstrous Beasts. In front of my treasure, this formation isn’t even worth mentioning.” Zi Ling sweetly smiled, then took out a treasure, which shot radiance in all directions, from her Cosmos Sack.

The treasure was grasped within Zi Ling’s hand and one could not see what it was too clearly. However, the faint green-coloured radiance that it gave off was extremely dazzling and it almost enveloped everything within a hundred meters.

Zi Ling raised it highly and it seemed incomparably holy. Without even looking back, she flew towards Qin Lei and the other. With her appearance that was filled with confidence, it was as if the object in her hand could truly save Qin Lei and the others.

“Crap. Quickly go catch that girl!”

Seeing that scene, the four Monster Kings’ blood-red eyes were instantly roundly widened and they moved at the same time, flying towards Zi Ling. Simultaneously, they emanated their powerful auras and they wanted to envelop Zi Ling and suppress her movements.

But it was useless. Although their pressure was strong, they had no way of suppressing the current Zi Ling. She who used the power of her Divine Body did indeed have an atmosphere that normal people did not. Normal pressure could not suppress her.

“Hmph. Four old monsters. If you dare to approach again, don’t blame me for using this treasure to kill all of you.” Zi Ling turned and she ran towards another side of the palace.

“Damn girl. I will swallow you alive!” The four Monster Kings were completely manipulated by Zi Ling, but from four sides, they flanked Zi Ling.

“This Zi Ling girl truly does have some tricks. I should be the next to appear.”

Seeing Zi Ling successfully lead the four Monster Kings away, Chu Feng was extremely happy and with a thought, the azure-coloured little dragon appeared under him and following that, with the flash of light, Chu Feng flew up and rushed straight towards the rock stage.

“Dammit, there’s another!” However, just as Chu Feng entered the palace, the four Monster Kings felt Chu Feng’s aura and two of them darted towards Chu Feng.

“Four old monsters! Today, I will take care of you! Die!” Seeing that, Zi Ling thought cleverly and quickly after, she threw the treasure in her hand, which was shooting light in all directions, with lightning speed towards the middle of the four Monster Kings.

“Careful!” When Zi Ling yelled like that, it caused the hearts of the four Monster Kings to tremble and after that, the four of them, simultaneously, threw attacks at the object which shone radiance



everywhere.

However, before their attacks even arrived on their target, the object could not take the pressure that their attacks gave off and it was crushed into pieces. It became green-coloured glowing objects that filled the air and floated down.

“This wasn’t even any treasure?” At that instant, the four Monster Kings came to a realization because within the green-coloured glowing object, they could not feel a single trace of threat. How was that even a treasure that could kill all living things? It was simply a garbage item.

“Four idiots! The thing that scared all of you was only an ordinary Night Shining Pearl!” Seeing the special shocked expressions appear on the faces of the four Monster Kings, Zi Ling was so amused that she laughed until she was joyful and she was swaying back and forth.

“Damn girl. I will torture you until you die!” After knowing that they were fooled with, two of the Monster Kings flew towards the high stage, while two pounced towards Zi Ling again.

“Chu Feng, the rest is up to you!” Zi Ling loudly yelled at the direction of the stage then she leaped with her alluring body, became a row of light, and flew away. As she run, she loudly yelled, “Come! Come chase me! If you catch me, you get a prize!”

At the same time, Chu Feng arrived on the high stage and the current Chu Feng was incomparably excited in his heart because he

discovered that special symbols filled the top of the high stage and the symbols formed a formation. It was extremely beautiful.

However, at that very instant, the thing that attracted Chu Feng's gaze the most was not the formation which had bright symbols lingering around them, but the object in the middle of the formation.

In that place, there was a big axe stuck in there. The axe was two meters long and the material was originally pure black colour. However, when light shot past it, one would be able to discover that on the black-coloured axe, blood-red-colour radiance emerged as if the black colour was not simple black colour, but the accumulation of limitless blood.

The shape of the axe was also exceptionally overbearing. On the front side, it was a typical big axe head and it was incomparably sharp. It could chop through any object. Even if it was a huge elephant, the axe could still easily chop off its head.

The side of the axe was like a half-moon-shaped hook. It seemed like a big blade that had the same effects as the axe, but it seemed more like a hook that could dig out a human's internal organs.

That big axe was simply a slaughtering weapon, and Chu Feng also attentively discovered that in the middle of the big axe, there were even three big words written there. "Asura Ghost Axe".

"What a nice Asura Ghost Axe. You are mine." Chu Feng arrived in front of the axe, extended his hand, and grabbed. He tightly

grasped onto the Asura Ghost Axe, but just as Chu Feng put strength to raise his hand wanted to pull the Asura Ghost Axe out of the formation, his face couldn't help but change.

Because Chu Feng astonishedly discovered that he was unable to pull the Asura Ghost Axe away, and it was as if the axe was one with the rock stage and there was no way of moving it.

“Hahaha, ignorant brat! Do you really think you can pull this Asura Ghost Axe out?”

But just at that time, bursts of mocking laughter rang out behind Chu Feng, and when he turned his head around to look, the Venomous Snake King was already currently standing behind Chu Feng and gradually nearing him. At the same time, the pressure it emanated had already sealed the escape behind him.

swish

At the same time, the Scorpion King rushed over to the other side of the rock stage and sealed off Chu Feng's retreat in front of him. As it walked towards Chu Feng, it said to him,

“This Asura Ghost Axe has been stuck in the rock stage for several hundreds of years. Even my master and the Monster King that year were unable to pull it out. Do you think that you can pull it out and become its master?”

“Truly foolish! Truly laughable! Hahaha...”

## Chapter 387: Recognize Me As Master

---

“What? No one has been able to pull this Asura Ghost Axe in several hundred years?”

After hearing those words, Chu Feng’s heart trembled and quickly after, bursts of uneasiness surged out. For several hundred years, there was not a single person who could pull it out. Could he pull a Strange Armament such as that out?

Right now, there were no roads of retreat. If he had no way of pulling out that Strange Armament, not to mention to be unable to save the people from the eight-sided powers, even he himself would die here and Zi Ling would also suffer.

“Chu Feng, hand your body to me.” In the moment of life and death, Eggy’s sweet voice suddenly rang out from the bottom of Chu Feng’s heart.

And at that instant, without delay, Chu Feng hurriedly gave the control over his own body to Eggy.

Because he felt that since the Asura Ghost Axe had the name of “Asura”, it was very possible for it to have some sort of special relationship with Eggy.

boom

In the instant Chu Feng gave his body over to Eggy, a boom

exploded from Chu Feng's body and layers of ripples spread, coming from his own body. Waves of violent wind went in all directions and even the air twisted from that.

A large area of black-coloured gas lingered around the current Chu Feng and he emitted bursts of cries. The cries seemed like the howls of ghosts, and they also seemed like the howls of wild beasts. They were extremely horrifying.

“This brat, what's happening?!” Seeing the current Chu Feng, the two Monster Kings were also terrified and their faces lost all colour. Their ugly big mouths were opened so widely that they were round.

Because in such a close distance, they could clearly feel that Chu Feng's body was emanating a special aura at that very instant. That aura was indescribable, and in short, it was extremely powerful and it could even make one feel afraid.

And the most important thing was that the aura being emanated by Chu Feng's body was exactly the same as the feeling the Asura Ghost Axe gave. The two of them were as if they were one.

“This feeling... He has finally used that special power?” At the same time, Zi Ling who was speedily running also noticed that change and she couldn't help but cast her gaze towards Chu Feng.

In reality, everyone noticed Chu Feng's change. The two Monster Kings who chased after Zi Ling also couldn't help but stop their steps and they cast their gaze towards Chu Feng on the high stage.

Even the expressions of Qin Lei and the others who were imprisoned in the formation changed. Especially the World Spiritists from the World Spirit Guild and the Jie clan. Their faces even turned into incomparable shock and they hiddenly said, “This aura is from the Spirit World, but which Spirit World has such powerful aura?”

“You... Who exactly are you?” The two Monster Kings said with extremely astonished tones when they saw Chu Feng in front of them.

And at that instant, Chu Feng whose body was already occupied by Eggy coldly smiled and said, “I am the master who this Asura Ghost Axe will approve of.”

After speaking, one of Chu Feng’s palm suddenly tightly clenched and after that, powerfully pulled outwards. With a boom, the rock stage hanging in the air had actually instantly shattered and became rolling dust that permeated throughout the palace, and the Asura Ghost Axe was already grasped within Chu Feng’s hand.

“Haha, I actually got this Strange Armament!”

“Eggy, I love you to death!”

After pulling the Asura Ghost Axe out, Eggy returned the control over his body back to Chu Feng and the current Chu Feng was able to clearly feel the Asura Ghost Axe in his hand.

The big axe was grasped within his hand. It was very, very heavy. If it was thrown, it could even crush a palace and make it cave in. If it was thrown from the air to the ground, it could certainly cause a huge pit to form, but when Chu Feng tightly held it, it felt just right. It felt like only that weight was appropriate for him.

The most important part was that within the Asura Ghost Axe, he was able to feel extremely strong power. As for how strong that power was, it was extremely similar to Eggy's power, yet there were differences.

The most important part was that at that very instant, the power of the Asura Ghost Axe was held within Chu Feng's hand. If Chu Feng could completely grasp that power in the future, he could even fight against Heaven realm experts. Even if he could not defeat them, he could still handle them.

"This brat... He...he...he actually pulled the Asura Ghost Axe out! Could it be..."

At that very moment, the faces of the four Monster Kings were filled with shock and their expression changed many times. Within their blood-red eyes, there was unexpectedly some fear.

"Run!" Suddenly, the four of them leaped forward and they had actually turned around to escape, and they ran.

"Quickly chase! We cannot let these four monsters escape!"

And at the same time, underneath Chu Feng, dozens of overwhelmingly strong auras exploded out and they chased towards the four Monster Kings.

However, very quickly, those people returned without achievements as they ran back. All of them cast their gazes of incomparable admiration towards the Asura Ghost Axe in Chu Feng's hand.

Some of them couldn't even help gulping and from that, it could be seen how much they longed to get Chu Feng's Asura Ghost Axe.

"What are all of you doing? Chu Feng got this Asura Ghost Axe, so it should belong to him." Seeing that, Zi Ling hurriedly stood next to Chu Feng and fiercely pointed at the crowd.

"Lady, the words cannot be spoken like that. This Asura Ghost Axe was originally a masterless object, and it can't be his because it is in this young man's hand right now right?"

"Yeah! Look. For this Strange Armament, my Yuangang School has lost two Heaven realm experts and the losses are really too big." The head of the Yuangang School also had his face filled with grievance.

"Your Yuangang School has only lost two Heaven realm experts. My Hidden White Sect has lost three Heaven realm experts! They are seniors in my Hidden White Sect who had done many meritorious deeds and outstanding battle achievements." The head



of the Hidden White Sect also added.

“My Free and Unrestrained Valley is also the same. Three Heaven realm seniors died just like that. This is simply a huge blow to my Free and Unrestrained Valley.” The head of the Free and Unrestrained Valley also shook his head.

Seeing that, Chu Feng looked downwards and he discovered that down there, there were indeed a dozen or so pools of blood and other than the two powers, the World Spirit Guild and the Jie clan, the remaining powers more or less lost a few Heaven realm experts and some were injured as well.

“To the death of many seniors, I, Chu Feng, feel pity.”

“But let me say some harsher words. Even if they died for the Asura Ghost Axe, what the hell does it have to do with me?”

“Was it I who caused them to enter the formation? Was it I who caused them to die?”

“If it wasn’t to save all of you, why did I risk such huge dangers to come out? If it wasn’t for me who risked my life to save all of you, would any of you still be standing here, alive?”

“What? As the grand overlords of provinces, right now, you want to repay kindness with hatred and take away my Asura Ghost Axe?” Chu Feng coldly swept his gaze over the crowd and his words were extremely sharp. As he spoke, the crowd’s faces were

extremely ugly and they were all speechless.

# Chapter 388: King Of Strange Armaments

---

“What [Chu Feng](#) has said is reasonable. If he didn’t come out, we would have all died today. How would we even have the chance to continue speaking here?”

“Chu Feng” in these dialogues should be more accurately translated as “Friend Chu Feng”, but I left it out because it would sound too awkward/repetitive.

“Yet everyone still has their minds on Chu Feng’s Strange Armament. I do really suspect that everyone is repaying kindness with hatred.”

Just at that time, the vice-head of the World Spirit Guild, “Gao Qizhi” also stood out and he kindly smiled towards Chu Feng, seeming to hiddenly indicate to Chu Feng that his World Spirit Guild would stand behind Chu Feng as support.

“Vice-head Gao, things cannot be said like that. If you’re saying that we, by having our minds on this Strange Armament, is repaying kindness with hatred, then wouldn’t you, by protecting Chu Feng, be embezzling the Strange Armament? After all, everyone knows that Chu Feng is part of your World Spirit Guild.”

Suddenly, an old man spoke. His face was filled with smiles, yet they seemed strangely sinister. His gaze was always on Chu Feng’s Asura Ghost Axe and it was not willing to shift even the slightest bit, and that person was the vice-chief of the Jie clan, Jie Yan.

“You...” After hearing Jie Yan’s words, Vice-head Gao tightly

frowned and his face was not pleasant. Because of his identity, it was truly not good to defend Chu Feng in a situation like that. Even if his words were fair, people would feel that he had a selfish heart.

“Yes, Chu Feng did indeed save us, and all of us admit this. We are also very grateful in our hearts, and we will absolutely express our gratitude.”

“However, this Asura Ghost Axe is a masterless object. It isn’t too reasonable for it to belong to him just because he pulled it out? Also, everyone here all risked their lives for this Strange Armament and there were even people who were sacrificed for it.”

“Besides, with his strength, would he be able to keep the Strange Armament?”

“With the Strange Armament by his side, it won’t bring any good fortune to him and it will only bring murderous disasters.” Jie Yan continued saying.

“That’s right. Vice-chief Jie is very correct. Chu Feng has saved us, so naturally, we need to express our gratitude. My Yuangang School is willing to give ten thousand Profound beads to thank this friend for the favor of saving our lives.” The head of the Yuangang School hurriedly said.

“My Fire God School is also willing to give ten thousand Profound beads.”

“My Hidden White Sect is willing as well.”

“The Free and Unrestrained Valley is the same as everyone.”

“My Sword God Valley will also use ten thousand Profound beads to express our gratitude towards Chu Feng for the favour of saving our lives.” At the same time, the overlords of the other powers also all expressed their attitude but in reality, they were pushing Chu Feng towards a pit of fire.

“Chu Feng, my Jie clan is willing to give twenty thousand Profound beads to express our gratitude for the favor of saving all of our lives.”

“However, you cannot take this Asura Ghost Axe away. It belongs to everyone here.” Jie Yan smiled and said.

“Hmph. From what all of you mean, you want to take the several tens of thousands of Profound beads to buy my Strange Armament?”

“Vice-chief. If someone offered several tens of thousands of Profound beads to buy your Jie clan’s Armor of Thorns, would you sell it?” Chu Feng coldly snorted and he was extremely displeased. He never would have thought that those people would be so shameless. He saved them out of kindness, yet they were still thinking about his own Asura Ghost Axe.

“My friend, the words cannot be spoken like that. This Asura

Ghost Axe was originally a masterless object, so when did it become yours?” Jie Yan, the vice-chief, smiled more and more sinisterly and he was simply a typical old fox.

“Yeah. My friend, you can’t say that because you hold it right now in your hand, therefore it’s yours, right?”

“I also feel that it’s reasonable. This Asura Ghost Axe was originally a masterless object, and it can be said that it belongs to everyone here. Friend, you cannot monopolize it!” Seeing that, the crowd echoed one after the other.

hmm However, just at that time, the Asura Ghost Axe in Chu Feng’s hand flashed and it started to quickly shrink in Chu Feng’s hand. The two-meter long huge axe had actually become rows of brilliance and disappeared within the hand that Chu Feng tightly clenched into a fist.

“What’s this? Where did the Strange Armament go?” Seeing that scene, the faces of the masters of the Yuangang School and the Fire God School changed greatly and they incomparably panicked. Their eyes were roundly widened and they started look everywhere, wanting to find where the axe went.

Because, the Strange Armament attracted them too greatly. Every single person wanted to get it. After all, the powers that had a Strange Armament would be one level higher than the other powers in terms of position.

For example, the Sword God Valley. It was originally a small

power, and only because it got the God Wood Sword did it have its current position. Its position was even rapidly rising.

“Wait. Everyone, don’t panic.”

Just at that time, the vice-chief seemed abnormally calm. He tightly stared at Chu Feng’s clenched hand and said, “Chu Feng, can you open your palm and let us take a look?”

After hearing those words, everyone condensed their gazes onto Chu Feng’s hand, and in that situation, it was not good to conceal it, so he could only gradually open his palm.

“Heavens! This...”

And after Chu Feng completely opened his palm and when people clearly saw Chu Feng’s palm, other than the vice-chief of the Jie clan and the vice-head of the World Spirit Guild, the expressions of almost everyone on scene changed greatly and their faces were filled with shock.

Because at that very instant, in Chu Feng’s palm, there was a picture. That picture was none other than the Asura Ghost Axe that just disappeared.

The Asura Ghost Axe was imprinted on Chu Feng’s palm. Although it was only a picture, it was vivid and lifelike. When one looked, it seemed extremely three-dimensional and it was simply as if someone took a shrunk Asura Ghost Axe and hung it on Chu

Feng's palm.

“It recognized its master! It's a Strange Armament that can recognize its master!”

At that instant, people ceaselessly yelled in shock. On their faces, there was admiration, and there was also envy. Even the gaze of the vice-chief of the Jie clan, Jie Yan, became complicated and no one knew what he was planning.

“Eggy, what is happening? Why did the Strange Armament enter my palm?” In reality, even though Chu Feng felt the Strange Armament enter his palm, he did not understand what was happening.

“Idiot. This means you've gotten the approval of the Strange Armament and you've been recognized as its master! It can be one with you, and other than you, no one else can use it.” Eggy explained.

“Something like this can actually happen? This means that Jie Qingming's Armor of Thorns and Murong Yu's Divine Wood Sword haven't approved of them?” Chu Feng asked.

“Of course not. Do you think that all Strange Armaments can do a recognition? The Strange Armaments that can are kings of Strange Armaments and they are the best within Strange Armaments. No matter if it's in terms of power or quality, they are incomparable by other Strange Armaments.”



“Which also means that in front of your Asura Ghost Axe, no matter if it’s Jie Qingming’s Armor of Thorns or Murong Yu’s Divine Wood Sword, they are no longer good things. They cannot even be discussed with your Asura Ghost Axe, and only Strange Armaments that can recognize their masters are real Strange Armaments. Those which cannot are broken defectives.” Eggy explained.

# Avarice

## Chapter 389: Return

---

“So it’s like that? Doesn’t that mean that only the Asura Ghost Axe in my hand is the real Strange Armament?” After hearing those words, Chu Feng was elated.

“Of course! Try to control it. It will move as you wish.” Eggy said while giggling. When Chu Feng got such a Strange Armament, she also felt happy for him.

whoosh And Chu Feng didn’t hesitate. He grasped with one hand, and with light that shot in all directions from his hand, the Asura Ghost Axe transformed back to its previous huge state and it was grasped within Chu Feng’s hand once again.

Quickly after, with another thought from Chu Feng, the Asura Ghost Axe flashed and disappeared, returning to Chu Feng’s palm.

And after personally seeing Chu Feng control the Asura Ghost Axe in such a natural way, the expressions of everyone on scene changed and there were some unspeakable emotions.

Just at that time, Zi Ling walked two steps forward, and after that, said to the crowd,

“I believe with everyone’s experience, all of you certainly know about Strange Armaments recognizing its master. Normal people have no way of using a Strange Armament like this, and even if they had it within their hand, it would only be like scrap iron and not a single trace of power can be used.”

“Only the person it approves can display its power, and right now, the Strange Armament has already approved Chu Feng to be its master, which means that it is not a masterless object. It is Chu Feng’s, and the Strange Armament itself chose Chu Feng. Everyone, is there anything more you want to say?”

“This...” At this instant, people were speechless because they already had no way of refuting. After all, it was the same as what Zi Ling said. Right now, the Strange Armament was no longer a masterless object.

“I never would have thought that things like a Strange Armament approving its master still exist.” The vice-head of the World Spirit Guild, Gao Qizhi, sighed with a face filled with admiration. Although his face was also filled with admiration, there was no complexion of greed.

“The master of the remains is very powerful, so other than this Strange Armament, perhaps there are other treasures.” Zi Ling interrupted.

“That’s right. Lady, Chu Feng, you two didn’t seem to enter from the front just now right?” Vice-head Gao curiously asked.

“That’s right. Other than this place, there’s another hidden passageway. There are many mechanisms within the hidden passageway, and Chu Feng and I only charged through them to pass. But sadly, there were still not the slightest bit of gains and at the end, we walked to this place.” Zi Ling shook her head.

“Really? Where’s the hidden passageway?” After hearing those words, the faces of Jie Yan and the other Jie clan members changed and they started thinking.

They were all World Spiritists. Especially Jie Yan. His Spirit Formation techniques were extremely strong, and even if Zi Ling and Chu Feng got nothing from it, it did not represent they would get nothing as well after they entered.

Quickly after, Zi Ling told Jie Yan about the hidden passageway and all the experts from the World Spirit Guild and the Jie clan entered to search for a while.

After the Strange Armament recognized him as the master, there were no more people who made things difficult for Chu Feng, and he was in quite a leisure position. He wandered around in this place, but he had a goal. What he wanted to find was naturally the first thing he came to this place for. The treasure that could train his Spirit power.

Because, Chu Feng had asked Vice-head Gao whether any special treasures were found on the road, and his answer was very clear. On the road here, they did not discover anything.

That was also why they were so excited when they arrived in the last palace and discovered the large amounts of treasures under the rock stage, but then they were imprisoned in the palace.

After knowing everything, Chu Feng still felt that the treasure he

wanted was still in the underground palace. So, he started to seriously search.

But the more he searched, the more uneasy he got. After almost detailedly searching the huge underground palace for several times, Chu Feng still had no gains and it was just as Vice-head Gao said. Other than the Strange Armament here, there was nothing else.

“Dammit. Why isn’t there the treasure that has the special effect for Spirit power?” At that instant, Chu Feng was tightly frowning and he was panicking a bit in his heart. If he could not find that treasure, his Spirit power would be unable to quickly develop. What would he take to save Su Rou and Su Mei?

“Don’t worry. Perhaps you’ve already found the treasure that the Monstrous Beast talked about.” Eggy suddenly spoke.

“Eggy, why so?” Chu Feng felt puzzled.

“Carefully feel the Asura Ghost Axe in your palm. Use your Spirit power to feel. Can you discover that deep in the core of the axe, there is a layer of formless energy locked away from you?” Eggy said.

Without being slow, Chu Feng hurriedly followed Eggy’s instructions. At the end, he discovered that it was truly the same as what Eggy said.

“Eggy, what is going on? Can it be that this Asura Ghost Axe is the treasure that can train Spirit power?” Chu Feng rejoiced, and it was as if he finally saw a tiny bit of light in the endless darkness.

“Indeed, real Strange Armaments will contain some other uses, and those special uses are usually unrelated with battle.”

“If I’m not mistaken, your Strange Armament can train Spirit power.”

“However, that special power needs to be pulled out by a special formation in order for it to be released.”

“This is perhaps why the rock stage was filled with formation marks.”

“When you rushed onto the rock stage, you were pressed with time and you didn’t notice these details and you only focused on pulling the Asura Ghost Axe out.”

“But I noticed it. So, from the start, I carefully recorded the formation’s formation symbols and after you leave this place, I can help you relay the formation and use it to pull out the hidden effects of the Asura Ghost Axe.”

“If this Asura Ghost Axe is truly a treasure that can train your Spirit power, then that would certainly come into effect. But if it isn’t, then I can only say that you’ve been played with, that there were no treasures that could train one’s Spirit power in this place

and perhaps the Monstrous Beast only wanted to send you here to your death.” Eggy explained.

“Mm, it can only be like so.” Chu Feng nodded his head. He felt that what Eggy said was very reasonable, and currently, he could only follow Eggy’s words and try it out.

“God damn. Nothing. There is nothing here!”

“Dammit. Who spread the rumours that stated there are treasures here? Who spread the rumours that stated this place is where the remains of the martial cultivation expert are? They were simply damn rumours. They were nonsense. They were deceiving us.”

Just at that time, continuous angry yells rang out next to Chu Feng’s ears and some people even powerfully struck the indestructible underground palace.

The heads of the peak powers were doing the same as what Chu Feng was doing. They were detailedly searching the underground palace.

But it was useless as they did not get anything. That caused them to be extremely displeased. After all, in this journey, they had lost many Heaven realm experts. Powerful people such as them couldn’t be developed whenever they wanted to, so they had lost quite a bit on this journey.



“Chu Feng, this time, it was all thanks to you and Zi Ling. After returning to the Prestigious Villa, I, Qin Lei, must express my gratitude for the favour of saving my life.” Compared to others, Qin Lei seemed quite calm and it seemed that he was truly thankful for Chu Feng and Zi Ling.

After that, Qin Lei invited all of the heads to return to the Prestigious Villa as an honored guest to witness the results of the Marriage Gathering.

At first, the heads did not want to go, but after a while of thinking, they nodded their heads. So, the grand group of people left the Thousand Monster Mountain and returned to the Prestigious Villa.

However, because of the fury in their hearts, it caused them to carry out great destruction in the Thousand Monster Mountain before they left. They slaughtered no small number of Monstrous Beasts, and without the Monster Kings as their foundation, this time, the vitality of the Thousand Monster Mountain was truly injured greatly.

# Chapter 390: Change Starting

---

Within the Prestigious Villa's palace that Chu Feng lived in, he laid layers of Spirit Formations from the inside, and in the centre of the palace there was even a Spirit Formation surrounded by floating light.

In the heart of the formation, Chu Feng's Asura Ghost Axe was inserted in it.

Chu Feng sat cross-leggedly and he sat in front of the Asura Ghost Axe. Occasionally, his eyebrows slightly raised, and occasionally, they lightly relaxed. On his tranquil face, barely detectable feelings were endlessly changing.

“Haha, success! Eggy, you succeeded! You've successfully pulled out the special effects from this Asura Ghost Axe!” Finally, Chu Feng opened his eyes and he directly jumped up from the ground from happiness and he was so excited that he could almost dance.

Because, it was the same as what Eggy said. The Asura Ghost Axe was truly a treasure that could hone Spirit power and as long as one bonded with the formation, then channel their Spirit power into the Asura Ghost Axe, then connect to the mysterious object in the axe, there would be the effect of raising Spirit power

“This formation is only the experimental version. After the Marriage Gathering ends, find a spacious and hidden area to cultivate. I can then lay the complete formation and only at that time can I truly display the Asura Ghost Axe's effects of honing

Spirit power.” Eggy said.

“Eggy, many thanks to you. If it wasn’t for you, perhaps I wouldn’t even have discovered the obscurity in this Asura Ghost Axe, and I wouldn’t have known that this is the treasure which could train one’s Spirit power.” Chu Feng felt true gratitude that came from his heart towards Eggy.

“Che, of course! Who can even be compared to my intelligence and wit?”

“But you’re not stupid either. Even if I didn’t remind you, I believe that after carefully studying it, you would certainly look back at this small detail.” Eggy’s little face raised and her smile was called sweet. Obviously, she also really liked Chu Feng’s praise.

“As long as I become a Blue-cloak World Spiritist, I can save the monkey Monstrous Beast in the Asura Ghost Tower, and at that time, Su Rou and Su Mei can be saved as well. Also, as long as I become a Blue-cloak World Spiritist, I can open the World Spirit Gate and freedom can be restored to you.”

Chu Feng’s face was filled with yearning because he felt that the effects of the Asura Ghost Axe was truly very good. Perhaps before a year, his Spirit power could be so strong to the point where he could link with the power of blue-coloured Spirit Formations and at that time, he would also become a Blue-cloak World Spiritist.

“Your thoughts are too simple, and it isn’t that easy to become a Blue-cloak World Spiritist. If your body isn’t strong enough, your

Spiritual World isn't strong enough.”

“Usually speaking, when a cultivator's cultivation hasn't reached the Heaven realm yet, their Spiritual World will have no way of enduring the stress of blue-coloured Spirit Formation power, let alone using the blue-coloured Spirit Formation power.” Eggy struck blows on his spirit.

“What? Heaven realm? Can it be that my body, my Spiritual World, also have no way of enduring the blue-coloured Spirit Formation power and I must reach the Heaven realm first?”

Chu Feng who had extreme confidence in his own physical body never would have thought that he himself was also unable to break through that restriction.

However, Zi Ling hadn't stepped into the Heaven realm as well, yet she was already a Blue-cloak World Spiritist. Was it possible that his body was truly inferior to a Divine Body?

“Your body is very strong, and in certain places, it is even stronger than Zi Ling's body.”

“But it is not so strong that you can fight against Heaven realm cultivators. On the journey of martial cultivation, or on the road of Spirit Formations, there is always a corresponding restriction and a certain limit.”

“Some people can indeed break through that limit and escape the

bindings, but there's still a range for that."

"According to my calculations, if you want to gain the power of blue-coloured Spirit Formations and become a Blue-cloak World Spiritist, you must raise your current cultivation of the 3rd level of the Profound realm to the 7th level of the Profound realm. When you have the cultivation of the 7th level of the Profound realm, you should be able to link to the power of blue-coloured Spirit Formation." Eggy explained.

"So it must be the 7th level of the Profound realm? Then what if I raise it to the 5th level of the Profound realm, then use the power of the two types of lightning and raise my cultivation to the 7th level of the Profound realm?" Chu Feng asked.

"Of course that won't work. The Divine Lightning can indeed strengthen your cultivation, but even if it is in your blood, it is, after all, still external power. Your Spiritual World's endurance power is only related to the cultivation of your body itself. It must be your own cultivation that is raised to the 7th level of the Profound realm in order for it to work." Eggy explained.

"The distance to the 7th level of the Profound realm is still four levels. The resources required for every level is extremely huge, and the further I go, the more it will multiply. Within the time of less than two years, can I succeed?"

Chu Feng tightly frowned and his gaze started to glitter. He felt huge pressure because if he did not succeed, the ones being sent to the grave were Su Rou and Su Mei, two females whom he loved.

“You will succeed. You need to believe in yourself because even I believe you in such a way.” Eggy consoled.

“Thank you. Eggy, with you accompanying by my side, I believe that I can do it.” Only after hearing Eggy’s words did Chu Feng put away his worried complexion and a hint of smile rose from the corners of his mouth.

On the road, if it wasn’t for Eggy, no one could say for sure how many times Chu Feng would have died. No matter how much more powerful he was, after all, he was still a young person. His experience was limited and his character wasn’t mature enough. But Eggy filled in his weaknesses and taught him how to grow.

dong dong dong, dong dong dong

“Chu Feng, Chu Feng, I know that you’re here. Quickly open the door, quickly!!” But just at that time, the big doors of the palace was knocked while an urgent voice rang out.

Seeing that, Chu Feng hurriedly put away the Asura Ghost Axe, dissipated the Spirit Formations and quickly after, arrived in front of the palace and opened the door.

swish And just as Chu Feng opened the door, a body rushed in. It was Gu Bo.

At that instant, Gu Bo’s expression was panicked and sweat

permeated his head. After stepping into the palace, he quickly closed the palace door and laid a sound-proofing Spirit Formation as he did that. Only then did he grab onto Chu Feng's shoulders and say,

“Chu Feng, this isn't good. You need to quickly leave! If you don't, it's very likely that you will lose your life!”

“Gu Bo, what's the matter? What happened?” Chu Feng calmly asked.

“Long story short, I already know about you getting the Strange Armament. Vice-head Gao told me.”

“Right now, he got me to tell you to leave this place right now because from the delusions of Jie Yan, the Yuangang School, Fire God School, Hidden White Sect, Free and Unrestrained Valley, Sword God Valley, and the Prestigious Villa want to join hands with the Jie clan to forcefully take your Asura Ghost Axe away.”

“Something like that actually happened? Despite me being a part of the World Spirit Guild? Do they dare to ignore the existence of the World Spirit Guild?” Chu Feng's brows slightly furrowed. The reason why he dared to relievedly return to this place was because he knew that the World Spirit Guild would protect him, but right now, the situation clearly changed.

“That was then, and now is now. Jie Yan made up lies and said that your Asura Ghost Axe is not only a simple Strange Armament, and that it contains endless Mysterious Techniques and martial

skills within it and stores inexhaustible treasures.”

“He said that if one were to be able to grasp those Mysterious Techniques and martial skills, it would cause the strength of the eight-sided powers to increase significantly and possibly even break through the bindings of the Heaven realm to step into the realm of Martial Lords and become the Martial Lords of a generation.”

“When he said it like that, the other powers were all moved. Right now, they are like wolves and tigers and they swore to get your Asura Ghost Axe and to open it to obtain the treasures within. In this situation, my World Spirit Guild can no longer protect you or else they will join hands and attack my World Spirit Guild.” Gu Bo said.



# Chapter 391: Conditions

---

“Rubbish. There are no treasures inside my Asura Ghost Axe.” Chu Feng gnashed his teeth from anger.

“I know, Vice-head Gao knows, and even Jie Yan knows. We all know that within Strange Armaments, it is impossible for there to be treasures hidden.”

“But the people from the several other powers don’t know! They have already been bewitched by Jie Yan and they deeply trust his words without doubt.”

“Jie Yan is too ruthless. He wants to use the six big powers to finish you off, and if my World Spirit Guild dares to interfere, he will use the six big powers to annihilate my World Spirit Guild.”

“The Jie clan, like my World Spirit Guild, also has a close relationship with the Jiang Dynasty. If the Jie clan joins up with the six big powers to attack my World Spirit Guild, the Jiang Dynasty will absolutely not care about it.” Gu Bo had quite an emotional tone and his expression was hectic. It could be seen that he was also furious, and simultaneously frightened.

And at that instant, Chu Feng’s eyebrows slightly furrowed and after that, a touch of cold glare flashed into his eyes and he coldly said, “What a damn sinister Jie Yan. One day, I will make him pay the price.”

boom And just at that time, the closed palace door suddenly

opened and a violent burst of air current swept in and easily shattered the Spirit Formation Gu Bo laid.

“Careful.” Seeing that, Chu Feng quickly grabbed onto Gu Bo’s shoulder then leaped back, and only then did he dodge the current of air. Otherwise, even though Chu Feng would be fine with his cultivation, with Gu Bo’s cultivation on the other hand, he would certainly be heavily injured by the violent current of air.

whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh

Quickly after that, seven figures rushed in and stood in the middle of the palace. Those seven people were none other than:

The vice-chief of the Jie clan.

The head of the Yuangang School.

The head of the Fire God School.

The head of the Hidden White Sect.

The head of the Free and Unrestrained Valley.

The head of the Sword God Valley.

And the head of the Prestigious Villa.

After they entered, the palace door also quickly closed, closing off all Chu Feng's escape.

"A little mouse already ran over here so quickly for informing?" Jie Yan's eyes narrowed and he coldly looked at Gu Bo.

"God damn. The World Spirit Guild's Gao Qizhi really is useless. We knew that he would disclose information, so we shouldn't have discussed this thing with him." The head of the Yuangang School gnashed his teeth in anger.

"Ahh, what are you so stirred up for? Isn't the person still here?" The head of the Fire God School looked at Chu Feng's right hand and evilly smiled.

"What are you doing?!" Chu Feng put Gu Bo behind him and loudly asked with a torch-like gaze.

"My friend Chu Feng, no need to be afraid. No matter what this boy told you, in reality, we don't have any malicious intentions."

"It's just that I suspect that your Asura Ghost Axe is where the remains of the Thousand Monster Mountain is truly located at, and that the unfathomably deep martial cultivation expert stored all of the treasures he left behind inside the Asura Ghost Axe."

"So, we want to borrow your Asura Ghost Axe for a use." Jie Yan smiled and said.

“Nonsense. How is it possible for there to be treasures inside a Strange Armament? Right now, the Strange Armament has already recognized me as the master and I understand everything about it like the back of my palm. This is an ordinary Strange Armament and there are no treasures inside.” Chu Feng coldly snorted.

“My friend Chu Feng, your words cannot count. Although this Asura Ghost Axe recognized you as its master, it does not mean that it is yours. After all, it is the result of what all of us staked together.”

“Can you say that it recognized you as its master, therefore it belongs to you? Yet we get nothing, and busied for nothing, and sacrificed several Heaven realm experts for nothing?” Jie Yan coldly interrogated.

boom

But just at that time, the doors that were tightly shut suddenly opened again. Quickly afterwards, several bodies flew in. It was the vice-head of the World Spirit Guild, Gao Qizhi, and also all the experts of the World Spirit Guild who were inside the Prestigious Villa. Even Xu Zhongyu arrived.

“What are you doing? You want to commit crimes against a person of my World Spirit Guild in broad daylight?” Gao Qizhi was also not a lamp that saved on oil and after entering, he fiercely yelled. As for the others from the World Spirit Guild behind him such as Xu Zhongyu, similarly, their gazes were unkind and they

all had hostile tones and attitudes of attacking.

“Vice-head Gao, could it be that you want to pocket the treasure by protecting Chu Feng like this?”

“That’s right. Even Vice-chief Jie knows that there are treasures within the Asura Ghost Axe. How is it possible that you, who is also a Blue-cloak World Spiritist, don’t know?”

“Hmph. Respecting you as a senior expert was in vain. I never would have thought that you would be so despicable and shameless!”

However, before Jie Yan even said anything, several characters at the school-head level started to coldly snort. Looking at their appearances, they did seem to be deceived by Jie Yan and they were also determined to get Chu Feng’s Asura Ghost Axe.

For the treasures within the Asura Ghost Axe, they didn’t care about making an enemy of such a huge power like the World Spirit Guild.

“Nonsense! How can there be treasures within Strange Armaments? Do you even have common sense?” Gao Qizhi faced turned blue from anger and he loudly cursed.

And seeing that the several peak experts in front of him endlessly argue, Chu Feng’s eyes slightly narrowed and he did some calculations in his heart. Then after that, he suddenly spoke,

“It seems like everyone must take away my Asura Ghost Axe. I, Chu Feng, am not a person who isn’t reasonable, and I also don’t want to make things difficult for you.”

“You say that there are treasures within this Asura Ghost Axe and you want to take it away and think of a method to get the treasures. Fine. I, Chu Feng, will satisfy your desires. However, you need to agree on a condition.”

“What condition?” Hearing those words, the expressions of everyone there changed and they couldn’t help but stop their disputes, look at Chu Feng, and closely ask.

Although they were already strongly determined to take away Chu Feng’s Asura Ghost Axe, after all, Chu Feng did save them. So, regardless of emotion or reason, they couldn’t excessively force others. Besides, when he had the World Spirit Guild as a shield, they had to know their limits even more.

Actually, many people on scene didn’t want to make this matter too big. Despite the fact that the treasures did greatly attract them, if they were traded for a huge battle, even they would ache. If there was a way to truly peacefully resolve the matter, that method would be something that everyone hoped for.

“Give me a million Profound beads and I’ll give this Asura Ghost Axe to you. No matter how you study it, it would no longer be related to me in any way.” Chu Feng said.

“What? A million Profound beads? You are [simply a lion opening your mouth widely](#)!” Hearing Chu Feng’s words, many people’s faces instantly greened.

“Lion opening mouth widely” refers a person who provides a price/condition that is extremely high, often due to greed.

No matter how much larger their powers were, a million Profound beads was absolutely not a small number. Even if the seven powers gathered them collectively, every power had to give out at least over a hundred thousand Profound beads. That was similarly not a small number.

“Everyone, didn’t you say that within my Asura Ghost Axe, there are treasures that a martial cultivation expert left behind? Those treasures are absolutely not only worth a million Profound beads right?”

“As long as you hand a million Profound beads to me, this Asura Ghost Axe will belong to all of you. No matter what treasures you find within it, I don’t want half a bit of them.” Chu Feng said.

“This...” At that instant, people started to hesitate. Indeed, if it was like how Jie Yan said it was, and that there were powerful martial skills and endless treasures inside the Asura Ghost Axe, a million Profound beads was truly not much.

“Fine, I agree.” Suddenly, Jie Yan spoke and agreed. However, quickly after, he coldly added, “But in order to gain to the treasures in the Asura Ghost Axe, I need to cut the link from it to you. So, I need that right arm of yours.”

“You dare?!!” After hearing Jie Yan’s requirement, without waiting for Chu Feng to speak, Gao Qizhi, Xu Zhongyu, Gu Bo, and the others from the World Spirit Guild were already furious. Cutting off a genius’s arm was simply cutting off his future.

However, Chu Feng laughed at Jie Yan’s requirement then after, his gaze became abnormally sharp and as he stared at Jie Yan, he said, “Put a million Profound beads in front of me then this right arm will be yours.”



# Chapter 392: Want Money But Not Life

---

“Haha, nice, straightforward!”

“Everyone, it is but a million Profound beads. From our eight powers, each one of our powers can take out one hundred and twenty-five thousand Profound beads. No objections right?” Jie Yan said.

“No objections.” The other school heads also responded. Only the people from the World Spirit Guild said nothing, and they were strangely staring at Chu Feng, not knowing what he was thinking.

“No, just your seven powers.” But Chu Feng suddenly spoke.

“What do you mean?!” The head of the Yuangang School furiously asked.

“As a part of the World Spirit Guild, how can I, Chu Feng, ask for something from my own power? Besides, the World Spirit Guild will not want my right arm, and similarly, I believe that they will also not want the treasures in my Asura Ghost Axe.”

“So, this trade is in the name of myself, Chu Feng, and your seven powers.” Chu Feng calmly smiled and said.

“You..” After hearing those words, the faces of all of the people there changed. Although on the surface, Chu Feng’s words did make perfect sense, in reality, he was intentionally wanting them

to give out more.

“Everyone, it is only giving a few more Profound beads. Are we unable to afford it?”

“Then, each of us will put out one hundred and fifty thousand Profound beads. As for the fifty thousand extra, take it as some extra compensation.”

“After all, you’re a martial cultivation genius, and if you lose one hand, it would be hard to avoid some future effects in martial cultivation.” Jie Yan darkly and coldly smiled, and there was a bit of mock.

“That is correct. It is but taking out a few more Profound beads. Is it possible that we can’t afford it? Chu Feng, a million and fifty thousand Profound beads should be enough for you to live your remaining life relaxedly and unrestrainedly right? Hahaha...”

At the same time, the several other heads laughed loudly and within their tone, there was some smugness and also some ridicule. They were hiddenly ridiculing Chu Feng; that he wanted money but not life.

And facing their ridicules, Chu Feng only lightly smiled, slightly clenched his right hand, and the Asura Ghost Axe appeared in his hand. He looked at the crowd and said, “There is no need for you to worry about whether a million and fifty thousand Profound beads will be enough for me to finish living my remaining life or not.”

“So, take out a million and fifty Profound beads then this Asura Ghost Axe will be yours.”

“This...”

Jie Yan and the others were caught in a predicament by Chu Feng. Who would be so free as to carry hundreds of thousands of Profound beads on their body for no reason? Even if the people from all the powers gathered all their belongings together, they could, at most, only gather a hundred or two hundred thousand Profound beads.

“Villa Head Qin, look...” So, in that situation, people cast their gazes of pleading towards the head of the Prestigious Villa, Qin Lei.

“Ho... Everyone, there are also limited number of Profound beads in my Prestigious Villa and there is really not enough to cover everyone.”

Seeing that, Qin Lei quickly apologetically smiled. Although he could collect a million Profound beads if he put together everything in his Prestigious Villa and was willing to sell anything, he wouldn't be so stupid as to lend it over to those people. After all, a million Profound beads wasn't a small number and it would undoubtedly cause the foundation of the Prestigious Villa to be heavily damaged.

“What? Can't take it out? So the school head lords aren't as wealthy as I imagined huh?” Seeing the several people in front of

him being in such a difficult situation, Chu Feng smiled mockingly.

“Nonsense. Who would carry so many Profound beads on their body for no reason?” The head of the Yuangang School fiercely glared at Chu Feng

“Hmph. Then that’s your problem. I give you ten days. You must put one million Profound beads in front of me or else don’t blame me when I back out.” Chu Feng coldly snorted and his attitude was exceptionally domineering and obnoxious.

“What? Ten days? Isn’t that a bit too short?”

“That’s your problem, none of my business.”

“You...” After hearing Chu Feng’s words, the several school head-level characters were not lightly angered.

On the other hand, Jie Yan was very calm from start to finish. He lightly smiled and said, “Chu Feng, then in ten days, we’ll see you here! Remember, don’t play any tricks or else no one will be able to protect you.”

After saying those words, Jie Yan shot a glance to the crowd and they prepared to leave just like that.

“Villa head Qin Lei, so this is the gratitude you give to me for saving your life. I, Chu Feng, have truly gained experience today.” However, just as they prepared to turn around, Chu Feng suddenly

spoke and killing intent was filled within his lightly squinted gaze.

And after hearing those words, Qin Lei's face changed. There was a bit of shame, but there was also a bit of fury. After hesitating for a while, he still didn't say anything and he quickly left.

"Chu Feng, have you gone mad? Are you truly going to give this Asura Ghost Axe to them?" After the seven big powers left, Gu Bo asked with a face filled with confusion.

"An Asura Ghost Axe isn't much. After all, it is only a Strange Armament and as long as one is fated, it is not impossible to get a thing like this in the future."

"On the other hand, Brother Chu Feng, you are actually willing to trade your arm for the million Profound beads! This is really too hasty." Xu Zhongyu shook his head.

"The Jie clan have always been displeased with you. Especially after discovering that you were a rare genius, they even wanted to get rid of you. Even without today's matter, they would still think of ways to take care of you."

"It's just that...Chu Feng, you're a member of my World Spirit Guild yet we can only watch as an arm is chopped off. Truly..." Vice-head Gao's face was filled with shame.

"Vice-head, please don't speak like that. I, Chu Feng, will always engrave the kindness that the World Spirit Guild showed in my

heart. Today's scene was created by me from the start, and I truly don't want to drag the entire guild down because of my own personal grudges and cause innocent people to die because of me." Chu Feng said.

"Ah..." Vice-head Gao first helplessly sighed, then after, sincerely asked, "Chu Feng, I wonder if there is anything that I can help you with?"

Seeing that, Chu Feng first looked around, and only after seeing that there were no abnormalities did he go close to Vice-head Gao's ear and said,

"I need a single Forbidden Medicine that can raise my cultivation. The higher the quality the better, and there is no need to care about the negative effects."

"I also need at least ten attacking talismans that can break open blue-coloured Spirit Formations. Vice-head, I wonder if you can help me get my hands on those?"

"Chu Feng, you are..." After hearing those words, Vice-head Gao's face instantly changed and his aged eyes were roundly widened, as if he thought of something.

And when he looked back at Chu Feng and saw that there was a smile on his face, it seemed that his heart was already firm and he only awaited Vice-head Gao's reply.

“Ahh, perhaps this is the method within no methods. Only that after this, I afraid that your days will truly be difficult to pass.”

Vice-head Gao's face was filled with helplessness, then after that, he added, “But don't worry, within ten days, I will certainly give you a satisfactory answer.”

After that, Vice-head Gao and the others from the World Spirit Guild chatted for quite a long time with Chu Feng and they even ate a rich banquet with him, and they only left when it was dark.

However, for Chu Feng's safety, Xu Zhongyu and Gu Bo stayed behind to accompany Chu Feng, just in case someone wanted to hiddenly attack Chu Feng within the ten days.

Of course, Jie Yan and the others didn't trust Chu Feng so they had people who were hiddenly strictly observing Chu Feng. If he made any signs of escaping, they would directly attack Chu Feng and even finish off his life.

# Chapter 393: Insane Young Person

---

After setting the conditions with Chu Feng, Jie Yan and the others started to send the news over to their own powers with special methods. With the fastest speeds, they sent people over to obtain Profound beads back to the Prestigious Villa.

Just in case, they even used some backup plans to guarantee that they could collect a million and fifty thousand Profound beads to Chu Feng within ten days.

And as Jie Yan and the others were so utterly busy, Chu Feng was in quite a leisure position. If he wasn't drinking wine and talking about joyful things with Xu Zhongyu, Gu Bo, and the others in the same generation from the World Spirit Guild, he would be playing chess and chatting.

There were even some female disciples from the Prestigious Villa, who did know what the situation was, drinking wine merrily along with them and playing so unrestrainedly. They were truly comfortable and at ease.

That caused the people who were hiddenly watching Chu Feng, and were in rough conditions such as eating in the wind and sleeping outside, to curse Chu Feng non-stop. However, they could only curse a bit in their hearts.

After a few days like that passed, the most important moment of the Marriage Gathering finally arrived. All the people who participated in the Marriage Gathering from the beginning



gathered once again on the summit of the mountain peak.

Also, even characters such as the school heads, who were always hidden in the darkness, showed themselves grandly at that instant, and it caused people to sigh in admiration and to cheer.

The people who did not know the truth even truly thought that the Prestigious Villa had face and invited all the characters from the many overlord-level powers here to support the scene.

And according to the rules set for the Marriage Gathering before, the beauties who joined the Marriage Gathering started to state the person whom they loved in front of the crowd. As long as that person agreed, the marriage would be a success.

It had to be said that Chu Feng truly had quite good affinity for females, and he had actually become, other than Jie Qingming and Xu Zhongyu, the most popular person there. Within the hundred females, there were seven females who expressed their love towards Chu Feng and said that they were willing to marry Chu Feng and hoped that he could take them away.

In a situation like that, it caused Chu Feng to feel astonished, and it caused the bystanders to feel admiration. It also caused Tang Yixiu, Bai Yunfei, Song Qingfeng, Liu Xiaoyao, and the others with extraordinary lives to grind their teeth in anger.

Because no matter what, they never would have thought that in the section of comparing charm, they would lose to Chu Feng, the brat whom they looked down upon.

However, the thing that people never would have thought of the most was to the seven beautiful females' expression of love, Chu Feng had actually rejected all of them and did not agree to be together with any one of them. That result caused many people on scene to yell in shock and it caused quite an uproar.

But compared to Chu Feng, there was a person who was even more ridiculous, and it was the little beauty who received the most attention in this Marriage Gathering, Zi Ling.

Zi Ling who was viewed as a saint by countless number of people; Zi Ling who countless of people looked forward to had purely not appeared, and with the reason of cultivating in seclusion, she refused to appear in the Marriage Gathering.

Also, she also got someone to announce a piece of news. It was that she already had a male whom she liked; however, as for who that male was, she wanted to personally tell everyone after she got out.

Facing that situation, even the Prestigious Villa expressed helplessness. After all, Zi Ling's status was special and it was very difficult for them to request or order her.

But in order to express an apology, the Prestigious Villa was quite sincere and they urged all the people who participated in the Marriage Gathering to stay for a few more days and only leave after Zi Ling got out and announced the one she loved.

It had to be said that Zi Ling's popularity was quite prosperous. Almost 90% of the males chose to stay behind as they wanted to personally hear the person whom Zi Ling loved and they also wanted to get an extra glance at the exceptional little beauty.

Of course, there were also many people who were making super, peerless, huge, beautiful dreams and hoped that they themselves were the person whom Zi Ling loved and that Zi Ling would become their wife.

A few more days after that, there was only one day to the agreed day set back then. From rumours, Jie Yan's and the others' preparations had almost finished and a million and fifty thousand Profound beads were basically gathered sufficiently.

And also on that day, the vice-head of the World Spirit Guild, Gao Qizhi, who agreed to some of Chu Feng's requests came to Chu Feng's residence.

"My friend Chu Feng, these are the things you need. They were personally made for you in these days when I cultivated in seclusion." Gao Qizhi gave a Cosmos Sack to Chu Feng.

After Chu Feng examined it, he discovered that within the Cosmos Sack, there were two medicinal pellets and also twenty-three special attacking talismans.

The Forbidden Medicine was extremely overbearing and it was the most terrifying Forbidden Medicine that Chu Feng had seen before. If Chu Feng took that Forbidden Medicine, his cultivation

could continuously leap four levels up and he would step into the 7th level of the Profound realm.

With that, in addition to the lightning within his blood, Chu Feng's cultivation would be able to reach the 9th level of the Profound realm. Even he knew how horrifying he would be if he was in the 9th level of the Profound realm while grasping a Strange Armament.

And other than the extremely overbearing Forbidden Medicine, there was also a healing medicine because when the rebound effects of the Forbidden Medicine came surging over, the healing medicine would more or less have some effects of easing the pain of the rebound.

As for the twenty-three attacking talismans, they were even more impressive. The might contained within them was extremely terrifying. Not only could they easily break blue-coloured Spirit Formations, if a Heaven realm expert were to be struck head-on by the attacking talisman, it was likely that they would have more bad luck than good, and they could even disappear completely.

Even normal Blue-cloak World Spiritists couldn't create such attacking talismans. Only peak experts with extremely abundant experience, extremely profound strength, and the ability to use the power of Spirit Formations extremely cleverly could create them.

“Vice-head Gao, sorry for the troubles. I, Chu Feng, have engraved this favour in my heart and in the future, I will certainly repay you.”

Chu Feng looked at Vice-head Gao in detail and he discovered that the old man, within the short few days, actually aged quite a bit. Both of his eyes sank inwards and they were lifeless. His face was also pale-white without blood, and it was as if he was suffering from a heavy illness.

Without even thinking, Chu Feng knew the reason why Vice-head Gao became so haggard. Doubtlessly, it was because he exhausted a lot of his spirit and even used up his life in order to make those things for Chu Feng. It could be said that he paid an extremely large price.

“My friend Chu Feng, please don’t say that. I am the vice-head of the World Spirit Guild, yet I cannot protect you. I feel ashamed in my heart!” Vice-head Gao helplessly sighed and his face was filled with shame.

“Vice-head, the World Spirit Guild is truly a very good force of power. Although I have only been in the World Spirit Guild for a very short amount of time, many people from the World Spirit Guild have gave me a very close feeling.”

“You, for example. You were originally unrelated to be, but you’ve done so much for me only because I’m a member of the World Spirit Guild. I, Chu Feng, truly express my gratitude from my heart. So, please do not feel ashamed.”

“Because, the one who should feel ashamed is me, Chu Feng. I know what kind of person I am the most. I am a person who

doesn't think of the consequences when doing things, is extremely rash, and loves to get into trouble. No one can clean after me because he would never finish."

"However, since I, Chu Feng, have the ability to get into trouble, I also have the ability to get out of trouble. I can similarly live quite well by relying on myself."

"So, don't worry. Tomorrow, I will certainly safely leave this place. They cannot keep me here and they will pay the price for their greed." Chu Feng vowed sincerely, and as he spoke those words, he was filled with confidence.

And seeing Chu Feng who was acting like that, Vice-head Gao relaxedly smiled and said "I must say that you are the most insane young person I have never seen, but at the same time, you are also the young man whom I admire the most."

# Chapter 394: Might Of The Asura Ghost Axe

---

Chu Feng's plan was very simple...

When he discovered that Jie Yan and the others were already determined, and no matter what the price, had to take away his Asura Ghost Axe, Chu Feng decided to make a plan against their plan.

He lied about making a trade with Jie Yan and the others. In reality, he had never intended to make a trade. He wanted to use their desires of wanting his Strange Armament to trick a million Profound beads from them and use them to increase his own cultivation.

After getting the Profound beads, not to mention cutting off his own arm, he wouldn't even leave the Strange Armament behind. He would unhesitantly leave. The Forbidden Medicine and Attacking Talisman he wanted from Vice-head Gao was prepared exactly for that.

Although his preparations were quite sufficient, it could not be denied that there were still huge risks within his plan. It could be said to be a situation where he could only succeed and not fail. If he failed, what Chu Feng was going to face was death, and no one would be able to save him.

On that morning, Chu Feng woke up early and he put the horrifying Forbidden Medicine into his mouth. He sat within the palace's hall and silently awaited the arrival of Jie Yan and the

others.

The World Spirit Guild's Vice-head Gao, Xu Zhongyu, Gu Bo, and the others had already arrived at an early time within the hall, that was decided to be the trading location back then, and stood behind Chu Feng.

boom

Finally, the shut door to the palace suddenly opened and seven bodies speedily flew in. They were none other than Jie Yan, Qin Lei, and the others.

bang After entering, Jie Yan did not waste any time with words and he directly threw the seven Cosmos Sacks in front of Chu Feng, then said, "A million Profound beads, not one less. There are even fifty thousand extra gifted to you for free."

"Carefully examine it. After confirming that there isn't any error, hand your Asura Ghost Axe over then cut off your right hand."

As he spoke, Jie Yan did not move, but Qin Lei and the others behind him went into a circular formation and from all directions, surrounded Chu Feng. It could be seen that they were also afraid that Chu Feng would "take the money but not do the deed" by turning around and escaping.

After all, within the underground palace in the Thousand



Monster Mountain that day, they had also seen the bodily martial skill Chu Feng displayed. They had no choice but to prepare against that speed.

And Chu Feng did not restrain himself. With the wave of his big sleeve, he sucked the seven Cosmos Sacks into his palm. Quickly after, he used his Spirit power to check and he discovered that indeed, there were one million and fifty thousand Profound beads. Not one less, and it was genuine.

At that instant, Chu Feng's heart was in ecstasy. One million and fifty thousand Profound beads! It was absolutely a huge number, and it enabled his cultivation to rise greatly.

After putting the Profound beads away, Chu Feng slowly stood up and released the Asura Ghost Axe from his palm out. He swept his gaze towards the seven people and said,

“Everyone, of course I keep my promise, but who should I had this Asura Ghost Axe over to?”

gulp

After seeing the Asura Ghost Axe in Chu Feng's hand, the gazes of the seven people all lit up and some people couldn't even help gulping because the Strange Armament was not a normal Strange Armament. It was a Strange Armament that could recognize its master, and any person would want to possess a Strange Armament that could do that.

“I need to bring this Strange Armament back to my clan and let my chief personally lay a formation. He will study this in order to open it.” Just at that time, Jie Yan dully spoke.

The crowd did not object Jie Yan’s words. It could be seen that before, they had already discussed who the Asura Ghost Axe was going to be given to for handling.

“That’s fine. Elder Jie Yan, catch!” Chu Feng lightly smiled, then immediately afterwards he waved his big sleeve and threw the Asura Ghost Axe over. But the angle in which Chu Feng threw it was very strange. It was a typical high toss.

At that instant, everyone’s gazes couldn’t help being attracted by the Asura Ghost Axe and also at that instant, Chu Feng had already swallowed the Forbidden Medicine in his mouth and it was quickly being refined.

Coincidentally, the lighting in Chu Feng’s blood also rapidly surged and when lightning patterns emerged into Chu Feng’s eyes, his aura also invisibly rose quickly.

4th level, 5th level, 6th level, 7th level, 8th level, 9th level. It was exactly the same as Chu Feng’s predictions, and Chu Feng’s cultivation rose into the 9th level.

At that instant, Chu Feng could clearly feel how scary the power in his body was. The power was so strong that it almost surpassed the range of what his physical body could endure, and it was as if it would explode out of his body.

bang

Suddenly, Chu Feng leaped and became a row of light as he flew. He did not escape towards the palace door. He went straight up the palace and flew away.

“Crap, he wants to escape!”

At that very instant, everyone’s gazes were on the Asura Ghost Axe and there was no one who paid attention to Chu Feng. When they discovered that something was off, Chu Feng already flew away and with lightning-like speed, he blew open the ceiling of the palace and flew upwards.

“Grab the Asura Ghost Axe first!” Seeing that, Jie Yan’s face changed and he waved his big sleeve. A wave of boundless suction power appeared and he grasped Chu Feng’s Asura Ghost Axe into his hand.

Almost in the instant that the Asura Ghost Axe entered his hand, Jie Yan finished laying a Spirit Formation and covered the Asura Ghost Axe within. He wanted to cut off Chu Feng’s control over the Asura Ghost Axe.

hmm However, just as the Spirit Formation finished enveloping it, the Asura Ghost Axe in his hand became a strand of light and disappeared.

“Haha, idiot old guy. Do you truly think you can cut off the connection between me and my Asura Ghost Axe? This axe is already one with me. It is born as I wish, and destroyed as I wish. Other than me, no one else can control it.”

Just at that moment, Chu Feng’s unrestrained mad laughter that was filled with ridicule rang out from the sky above.

Raising their heads to look, people discovered that Chu Feng already jabbed through the palace and made a huge hole. Presently, he was flying into mid-air and his hand was still grasped on the Asura Ghost Axe.

“Kill him and don’t leave him alive!” At that instant, Jie Yan was incomparably furious. He never would have thought that he who had already made good preparations beforehand would still be played around by Chu Feng.

“This little swindler dares to make a fool of us like this?! Today, he is bringing the disaster upon himself and he cannot escape it. So, we cannot be blamed for ignoring the lifesaving favour that day to take his life.”

At the same time, the other six heads were gnashing their teeth in anger because of Chu Feng. Their complexions changed greatly and one after another, they flew and chased after Chu Feng.

However, why would Chu Feng just stand where he was to wait for them? Even though the current Chu Feng had extremely powerful strength and could fight against those in the Heaven

realm, when facing seven experts in the 5th level of the Heaven realm and also an experienced Blue-cloak World Spiritist, he did not dare to be careless. So, his goal was very clear. It was to escape.

hmm

However, before Chu Feng flew away for too far, the air in front of him started to wiggle and change. A boundless blue-coloured Spirit formation appeared and sealed the sky at that location and blocked Chu Feng's path.

It was a Spirit Formation and it was obviously laid by someone beforehand. As long as one saw that Chu Feng broke the agreement, someone would open the Spirit Formation and the goal was to prevent Chu Feng from escaping.

“Chu Feng, where are you going to escape now?”

Indeed, just as the Spirit Formation opened up, two bodies flew up from below. They were two elders from the Jie clan, and both of them had the cultivation of the 1st level of the Heaven realm.

“Good timing.”

“I'll take this chance to use you two to test the might of my Asura Ghost Axe.” However, why would the current Chu Feng be afraid of them? He suddenly waved the Asura Ghost Axe in his hand and a crescent-shaped blade of light explosively shot out.

The blade of light was a dozen or so meters long and it was black-coloured, yet it emitted faint lustre. As it came surging forth, it brought howls like wolves and ghosts and even cracks appeared in the spaces where it passed.

“Crap.”

At that instant, the faces of the two elders from the Jie clan changed greatly and they hidden cursed because within the black-coloured crescent-shaped blade of light, they felt the aura of fatality.

But the time was late and the blade of light flew through them, and with a poof, the two experts in the 1st level of the Heaven realm were chopped in half and even their consciousnesses were destroyed. Their lives was completely lost.

# Chapter 395: Breaking Formations

---

“Haha, the might of this axe is indeed powerful! With it in my hand and with my current cultivation, those under the 3rd level of the Heaven realm will all be unable to defeat me.” At that very instant, Chu Feng stood straight in the horizon and he was incomparably elated.

The chop just now was him only trying out its damage and he didn't use his full power yet. If he used his full power, the bodies of the two people would certainly be shattered and their bones crushed. Perhaps before the blade of light even reached them, they would be smashed into two piles of meat paste.

“Let me see if you can cut this Spirit Formation apart.”

Being joyful was being joyful, so the current Chu Feng didn't dare to be slow in any way. He flew forward, and waved the axe in his hand again.

This time, the black-coloured blade of light was even several meters wider than before and its power was also several times more powerful. The space wiggled and twisted, and even the air was cut into two. The spiritual energy, Origin power, and Profound power in the air were unable to hold the majesty back and they dispersed.

boom Finally, the black-coloured blade of light collided into the blue-coloured Spirit Formation and the berserk energy instantly became berserk vortexes of ripples and swept through the air.

“Look, what’s happening?”

The sudden scene cause people to be astonished. Within the Prestigious Villa, many people who did not know the truth were attracted by the deafening noise and they raised their hand to look towards the horizon.

“Tha...That seems to be Chu Feng! What is he doing?”

“What...What’s the thing in his hand?”

Although the distance was very far, some sharp-eyed people immediately recognized Chu Feng. But compared to Chu Feng himself, the Asura Ghost Axe in his hand clearly attracted more attention.

Even though, at that very instant, they were unable to feel the power of the Asura Ghost Axe, the overbearing appearance of the Asura Ghost Axe couldn’t help but attract their attention as long as they looked at the distance. They would even be shocked, and felt that it was not a simple Strange Armament.

“Jie Yan is indeed very impressive. The Spirit Formation he laid is still not something that I can break with my own power.”

Although the ripples were still spreading out, with Chu Feng’s sharp Spirit power, he still detected that his axe was unable to break apart the Spirit Formation. Which meant that Jie Yan’s



methods were indeed very strong.

Chu Feng firmly believed that if the Spirit Formation was laid by Zi Ling, his axe could absolutely be able to easily break it apart, yet currently, Chu Feng had no way of breaking the Spirit Formation Jie Yan laid.

That indicated a problem. Even though they were both Blue-cloak World Spiritists, there was still strong and weak in terms of Spirit Formation strength. The strong and weak had an inseparable relationship with the martial cultivation strength of the World Spiritist.

“Chu Feng, I’ve already laid an inescapable net here. You no longer have any road to escape.” Just at that time, a thunder-like voice rang out behind Chu Feng. Jie Yan and the others had caught up.

“An inescapable net? Today, I’ll break through your inescapable net.” Chu Feng coldly snorted, then lightly slid past his Cosmos Sack with his left hand and an Attacking Talisman appeared in his hand.

“Go.” He lightly flicked his finger and the Attacking Talisman explosively shot out. Quickly after, with a boom, the blue-coloured Spirit Formation exploded open and a large hole appeared

Seeing that, Chu Feng loudly laughed, then urged the azure-dragon underneath him to fly past and go through the hole in the Spirit Formation.

“God damn. That damn old guy in the World Spirit Guild. He did indeed hiddenly help this brat.” At that instant, with a single glance, Jie Yan could see that the Attacking Talisman Chu Feng used was something that ordinary people were unable to create.

Such an Attacking Talisman, in the entire continent of the Nine Provinces right now, perhaps only people from three powers could create it. It would be the Jiang Dynasty, the Jie clan, and also the World Spirit Guild.

The first two would naturally not help Chu Feng, so without thinking, Jie Yan knew who helped Chu Feng. Undoubtedly, it was his archenemy, Gao Qizhi.

“Hmph. But I would quite like to see how many Attacking Talismans you have. Open all Spirit Formations! Let me see how many he can break through.” However, Jie Yan was unafraid as he knew that he had something to rely on. Even if it was Gao Qizhi who created Attacking Talismans like those, he needed to exhaust an extremely large amount of spirit.

Before, Gao Qizhi would not create the talismans for no reason at all, so even if he created them, it should be as preparation for Chu Feng’s escape. Meaning that he created them within these ten days.

Within ten days, even if Gao Qizhi never-endingly created talismans, he at most made a few more. Or else, it would damage his life expectancy and it would even affect his future cultivation

attainments.

Although several Attacking Talisman could break open several Spirit Formations, in these ten days, Jie Yan was not lying around in leisure. With the palace that Chu Feng lived in as the center, he laid thirteen Spirit Formations that sealed this land. So, he felt that even if Chu Feng had Attacking Talismans, he would still have no road of escape

hmm hmm hmm

Indeed, After Jie Yan angrily yelled, the Jie clan experts who were already located within the Spirit Formation started to activate the Spirit Formations that were laid beforehand.

Twelve blue-coloured Spirit Formations charged straight into the sky and opened. It sealed the sky and it was exceptionally grand. So much that the observing crowd in the Prestigious Villa were dumbfounded and they continuously yelled in shock.

boom boom boom

But quickly after, Chu Feng broke open all the Spirit Formations that were separated in the sky and flew past all of them. The mouths and eyes of the people who watched were all askew and their faces were filled with astonishment.

“How is this possible? How can he possess so many Attacking Talismans?”

Seeing that Chu Feng was unstoppable on the road and had actually broke open all thirteen Spirit Formations that he laid, Jie Yan's former calmness was no more and replacing it was a face filled with shock.

The most important part was that Chu Feng's speed was too quick. In a situation where there were no obstacles, even Jie Yan could not catch up to him. They just saw Chu Feng riding a little azure dragon, and with bursts of laughter, disappeared into the horizon like a strand of smoke.

“Dammit. Truly damn it! That brat actually escaped.”

“God damn, it was a million and fifty thousand Profound beads. A million and fifty thousand!”

Seeing Chu Feng escape, the head of the Yuangang School, the head of the Fire God School and the others grinded their teeth in anger and the fists that were clenched in their sleeves crackled.

“Jie Yan, didn't you say you made preparations for everything and that Chu Feng would absolutely not able to run away? What is this damn situation right now?” With circumstances such as those, some people switched their fury over to Jie Yan.

Normally, they would absolutely not dare to speak to Jie Yan like that. But the current times were not like the past. Their losses were really too big and they were no longer able to control their fury.

“Hmph. My preparations were originally completely perfect and not to mention Chu Feng, none of you should even think of breaking open the Spirit Formations I laid.”

“However, I could do nothing about someone hiddenly helping. What am I able to do if they grant Chu Feng special Attacking Talismans.” As he spoke, Jie Yan cast his gaze towards the palace that Chu Feng lived in before. On top of the palace, there were a few figures standing straight in the air, and they were the people from the World Spirit Guild.

“Damned World Spirit Guild. They are truly a hindrance.”

“God damn, they are really relying on power to bully others. My Fire God School isn’t finished with his World Spirit Guild.”

“Hmph. I’ll let them be so conceited. One day, I will make them pay the price for today’s actions.”

After hearing Jie Yan’s words, Qin lei and the others cast their bloodlust gazes towards the bodies of Vice-head Gao and the others. After today’s matter, they no longer had any good impressions towards the World Spirit Guild.

# Chapter 396: Chief Jie Xingpeng

---

“Chu Feng has finally successfully escaped.”

Vice-head Gao did not care about the gazes of hatred at all. What he was worried about was only Chu Feng’s safety. Seeing Chu Feng successfully escape, a relieved smile emerged onto his drained face.

Xu Zhongyu behind him as well as the many super-powerful elders from the World Spirit Guild reacted similarly. They all felt happy for Chu Feng’s safe escape.

However, compared to them, Jie Yan and the others had gloomy faces and they were endlessly dispirited. One million and fifty thousand Profound beads. It was truly not a small number, yet it was swindled away by Chu Feng just like that.

The most important thing was that, who were they? They were the most distinguished characters in the continent of the Nine Provinces, yet they let a brat who was only sixteen years old escape from their layers of encirclement. They truly had no face and they felt that they were in quite a difficult situation.

whoosh

But suddenly, Jie Yan’s eyes lit up and his ears suddenly twitched. A barely detectable hint of shock appeared on his face and quickly after, he cast his gaze towards the horizon that Chu Feng escaped towards, and the corners of his mouth rose into an angle of reassurance.

“Huhuhu~~”

At that instant, by Chu Feng's side, bursts of violent wind constantly blew past, but Chu Feng still speedily went forward.

Even though the current him had already escaped the Prestigious Villa, he still did not dare to have any bit of carelessness. After all, in order for him to have his current strength, he consumed a super-strong Forbidden Medicine

After the Forbidden Medicine effects fade away, not only would he lose his current extreme speed and lose his current strength in cultivation, his body would even receive the rebound of the medicine's power and he would endure intense agony.

In a situation like that, not only mention continuing running, it would be extremely difficult for Chu Feng to even walk a single step. So, before the power of the medicine fade away, Chu Feng had to hurry with his full strength to find a safe place to hide himself, and the farther that place was to the Prestigious Villa, the better.

swish swish swish

But suddenly, all around Chu Feng, blue-coloured gas appeared and like a swimming dragon, the blue-coloured gas kept on surging around Chu Feng's surroundings and flew along Chu Feng.

Also, there was more and more of the gas, and at the end, the blue-coloured gas was all around Chu Feng.

“This is? Blue-colored Spirit Formation power!” Facing that change, Chu Feng was suddenly surprised because he could determine that the blue-coloured gas that gathered more and more was precisely the blue-coloured Spirit Formation power that only Blue-cloak World Spiritists had.

And just as Chu Feng detected something was off, the blue-coloured Spirit Formation power already interweaved together and formed a huge round ball, imprisoning Chu Feng within.

“Break.” Chu Feng didn’t dare to move slowly and he quickly pulled out an attacking talisman and threw it out.

However, the thing that greatly surprised Chu Feng was that his attacking talisman did not have any effects on the Spirit Formation at all. Even though extremely strong attacks could still explode, indeed, he could not move the Spirit Formation in the slightest.

boom boom boom boom

After failing the first time, Chu Feng continuously threw several more attacking talismans again and he also threw them in the exact same spot. Even though there were some effects after throwing several talismans at the same spot and exploding, they were still unable to shatter the Spirit Formation.



The thing that shocked Chu Feng the most was that layers and layers of Spirit Formations were condensing and at that very moment, countless layers had already been condensed and they were so tight that even wind couldn't pass through, thoroughly imprisoning Chu Feng within.

“What person is doing this in the dark?” Chu Feng tightly frowned. He knew that even Jie Yan could not do such powerful methods, and very likely, the person who blocked his path was an extremely scary person.

“Chu Feng, you truly have huge nerves!”

And just at that time, suddenly, a fierce yell rang out next to Chu Feng's ears. That sound was extremely deafening, as if a thunder exploded within Chu Feng's ears. It shook Chu Feng so much that his brain hummed. He swayed and almost fell off from the azure-dragon under him.

Quickly afterwards, the blue-coloured Spirit Formation in front of Chu Feng started to wiggle and at the end, a huge door formed. From the middle of the door, a black-clothed middle-aged man stepped out.

That man's eyebrows extended to his temple and his eyes were like swords. He had a head of jet-black long hair that scattered along his shoulders, blending with his clothes that were as black as ink. He appeared violent and unrestrained, yet incomparable dangerous.

Because, Chu Feng astonishedly discovered that the middle-aged man's cultivation had actually reached the 6th level of the Heaven realm.

Although he was only one level stronger than Jie Yan, the strength of the two people was like the distance between the sky and the earth. Not only in terms of cultivation. That middle-aged man's comprehension in martial cultivation and also his own talent were far above Jie Yan.

In front of that man, even if Chu Feng's cultivation rose greatly and grasped a Strange Armament, he still felt extremely powerless, as if he was an ant facing a huge elephant. The strength of the two could not even be compared.

"You're the chief of the Jie clan, Jie Xingpeng?" Chu Feng asked in a low voice because he felt that having that strength at his age as well as the special black-coloured clothing unique to the Jie clan meant that he was definitely the chief of the Jie clan.

"You are quite smart. I am indeed the chief of the Jie clan, Jie Xingpeng."

"Chu Feng, you have focused your attacks on my Jie clan many times before, and now, you even dare to openly cheat away my clan's Profound beads. Your crimes are unforgivable. Before death, what words do you have to say?" Jie Xingpeng asked. As he spoke, he stood high in the sky as if he was a god questioning a commoner.

“Ho...It is truly the chief of the Jie clan. I, Chu Feng, really do have face, and even the grand chief of the Jie clan has been moved because of me.” Chu Feng laughed loudly, then quickly after, said, “What words do I have to say? It’s you who wants me to say something right?”

“Haha, smart.”

“Speak the truth. I don’t believe that a brat like you truly came from the desolate Azure Dragon School. Even if you did come from that place, your abilities were absolutely not learnt there.”

“I want to know who your master is and who passed your current abilities down to you. You even grasp Secret Skills, and even gained the approval of a Strange Armament.” Jie Xingpeng asked. It could be seen that he already knew about Chu Feng.

“Hmph. My master? If I told you my master’s name, you would be frightened to death. But you are still not worthy enough to know his name. If you dare, touch my finger and try! He will undoubtedly avenge me and completely annihilate your Jie clan.”

Chu Feng coldly snorted. Seeing that there were no other methods and since he saw that Jie Xingpeng seemed a tiny bit afraid, he could only take the chance to scare him a bit. If he failed, he would die.

“Haha, you really think that I’m afraid of the person behind you? Your so-called master? I only want to know who is making you oppose my Jie clan.”

“You won’t speak? That’s fine. Today, I will kill you, strip you of your Secret Skill, take away your Strange Armament, then silently await the day that your so-called master searches for me for revenge. On that day, I’ll remove him as well.”

Suddenly, Jie Xingpeng’s gaze turned icy cold and layers of Heaven power exploded out from his body and surged towards Chu Feng. Quickly after, they tightly surrounded Chu Feng and started to attack into his body.

hmm Seeing that, Chu Feng did not dare to be slow and with a thought, a layer of faint green-coloured gas armor encircled around him. He used the Black Tortoise Armor Technique.

“Ahh~~”

However, that was useless as the Heaven power was really too strong. Even if Chu Feng had the Black Tortoise Armor Technique protecting him, it was still very difficult for him to fight against it. He felt powerful pressure lingering around his body and endlessly pressing into his physical body. His body was almost going to be squeezed and crushed, and in the next second, he was going to die.

boom But in the moment of life and death, a boom rang out behind Chu Feng and at the same time, the Heaven power that surrounded Chu Feng had actually immediately disappeared as well. Also, an aged voice rang out behind Chu Feng.

“Young man, Chu Feng’s age is still small. How about you give an

old man like me some face and spare his life?”

## Chapter 397: A Simple Palm

---

After that voice rang out, Chu Feng felt a layer of soft power covering him and then he quickly floated backwards.

After Chu Feng's body stopped drifting and the power that covered him disappeared, Chu Feng astoundingly discovered that by his side, a familiar old man was standing there. That old man was none other than Zi Ling's grandfather, Zi Xuanyuan.

However, the feeling that the current Zi Xuanyuan gave Chu Feng was still very strong. Even though Chu Feng right now was relying on the power of Forbidden Medicine and his cultivation increased greatly, he was still unable to see through Zi Xuanyuan's cultivation. Also, from Zi Xuanyuan's calm appearance, one could tell that he was not afraid of Jie Xingpeng in front of him in the slightest.

"Who are you?" Jie Xingpeng's sword-like brows inverted and he coldly asked.

"I am Chu Feng's friend." Zi Xuanyuan squinted his eyes and kindly replied.

"Friend? I'm asking for your name." Jie Xingpeng coldly snorted.

"Oh, the name. My name is Zi Xuanyuan." Zi Xuanyuan ashamedly smiled.

“You’re Zi Xuanyuan?” Hearing that name, Jie Xingpeng’s expression changed and a hint of shock emerged into his eyes.

“Hmm? Young man, could it be that you’ve heard of my name?” Zi Xuanyuan smiled and asked.

“Ho... Many years ago, the overlord of this Qin Province was the Thick Ground Grass Prince’s Mansion. The foundation of the mansion was very thick and it had already titled itself as overlord of the Qin Province for three hundred years of time, suppressing all other forces in the Qin Province. Within the borders of the Qin Province, there was not a single power that could fight against the Thick Ground Grass Prince’s Mansion.”

“However, the silent and unknown Prestigious Villa suddenly rose in power a dozen or so years ago and defeated the Thick Ground Grass Prince’s mansion and became the overlord of the Qin Province. All of that was related to one old man.”

“This old man came to the Prestigious Villa to be a guest elder. It seems very simple, but in reality, it caused the Prestigious Villa to have world-flipping change. In a short few years of time, it expanded everyday up until it surpassed the Thick Ground Grass Prince’s Mansion and became the overlord of the Prestigious Villa.”

“And this old man who was like a legend... Isn’t it you, Zi Xuanyuan?” As Jie Xingpeng spoke, his eyes were tightly staring at Zi Xuanyuan and his gaze was very strange.

“Hahaha, I never would have thought that I would be that famous. However, outsiders don’t understand these things well so it seems like your Jie clan hiddenly investigated quite a few things.” Zi Xuanyuan laughed, then after, said a bit reminiscently,

“I do indeed have some relations with the previous head of the Prestigious Villa. We were old friends, and I was entrusted by him to stay in the Prestigious Villa as a guest elder and to take care of the Prestigious Villa.”

“At first, the Thick Ground Grass Prince’s Mansion was too tyrannical. Seeing that the Prestigious Villa had the momentum to rise greatly in power, it dealt with the Prestigious Villa many times. It played tricks hiddenly, and bullied in the open. That caused the people from the Prestigious Villa to be very fearful and it was quite chaotic.”

“I really could not continue looking so I went into the Thick Ground Grass Prince’s Mansion to chat a few words to the mansion lord. But I never would have thought that he would actually take the initiative to send a letter to the Jiang Dynasty, saying that his Thick Ground Grass Prince’s Mansion was inferior to the Prestigious Villa and implored them to hand the Qin Province over to the Prestigious Villa for handling.”

“Although that result was not something I expected, it must be said that the lord of the Thick Ground Grass Prince’s mansion really gave me face.”

“Today, I want to bring Chu Feng away. I sincerely ask for you, Chief Jie, to forgive Chu Feng. I wonder if you can also give me



some face?”

Zi Xuanyuan’s face had a light smile and his words seemed to be gentle, but in reality, he had hidden motives. He was exhibiting his own strength and wanted to let Jie Xingpeng know the difficulty of the situation and retreat.

“Since even you, Senior Zi Xuanyuan, has spoken, I will naturally give you this face. Today, I will forgive Chu Feng but in the future, if we meet again, I cannot guarantee that I won’t attack him.” Jie Xingpeng said.

“Then I thank you, Chief Jie.” There were thanks on the surface, but in actuality, Zi Xuanyuan did not express any gratitude.

“Haha, Senior Xuanyuan, you’re truly too polite. But Senior Xuanyuan, since you’re able to use your own strength to invoke fear in the Thick Ground Grass Prince’s Mansion, I’m sure that your strength must not be ordinary.”

“I don’t have any other intentions, but I do enjoy endlessly challenging the extreme to search for even higher realms in martial cultivation. So, I would like to exchange some blows with you, Senior Xuanyuan. I wonder if you can grant me face?”

Jie Xingpeng was very cunning. Although he promised Zi Xuanyuan he would forgive Chu Feng, actually, he did not truly plan to forgive Chu Feng.

In the name of exchanging blows, he wanted to fight Zi Xuanyuan. If he could not defeat him, then it would be fine. But if Zi Xuanyuan was unable to defeat him, it was likely that Zi Xuanyuan and Chu Feng would die by his hands today.

“Haha, that’s fine. I have also heard that the Jie clan is the clan which has been continued for a long time.”

“Today, since I have met with the chief of such a clan, it can be counted as fate. So, let me experience the strength of the Jie clan’s chief!”

Suddenly, Zi Xuanyuan’s robe fluttered and quickly after, he disappeared where he was like a ghost. When he reappeared, he was already in front of Jie Xingpeng.

Then, Zi Xuanyuan attacked. There were no showy martial skills, there were no dazzling bodily methods; there was no horrifying might, there was no lightning-like speed. He slowly threw out a palm, and with gentle power, without hurrying or rushing, pushed it towards Jie Xingpeng.

“Haa!”

However, Zi Xuanyuan’s palm that was full of loopholes, and even lacking threat, caused Jie Xingpeng’s face to suddenly change and a touch of fear even emerged into his eyes.

He loudly yelled, used a high-level Mysterious Technique and

revolved his entire body's Heaven power. His left hand was clenched into a fist and hugged around his waist and his right hand was spread open and thrown in front of chest. He threw his palm out similarly, and pushed towards Zi Xuanyuan's palm.

Although they were both striking with palms, the might of the two people were completely different. As Jie Xingpeng struck with his palm, Chu Feng could clearly see that the space around him twisted and trembled. Boundless Heaven power surged out and entered into his body. The palm's might did not allow for any underestimation and even a towering mountain peak would be shattered by his palm.

hmm

However, just as Jie Xingpeng's palm of such fierceness was going to get near Zi Xuanyuan's palm, it had suddenly started to decrease in speed and at the end, it only lightly stuck onto Zi Xuanyuan's palm.

There was no boom as imagined, and there was no explosion as imagined. The palms of the two had actually lightly combined together just like that.

ta

However, the collision that seemed to be gentle wasn't as peaceful as it was on the surface. Almost in the instant that the two people's palms touched, Jie Xingpeng suddenly walked one step back and the strong power had actually caused cracks to appear in

the air from him stepping.

Quickly after, extremely powerful might exploded out of his body and the Heaven power around him started to surge into his body even more fiercely. In the air, one could clearly see the formless Heaven power stirring the air and like a vortex, entered Jie Xingpeng's body.

Jie Xingpeng was currently using special methods to condense Heaven power. He truly used everything he had, and used his full power.

But even so, Jie Xingpeng was still unable to move Zi Xuanyuan. Rather, as he gnashed his teeth, he walked one step back once again.

## Chapter 398: Entrusted By Zi Ling

---

“Senior Xuanyuan, I concede!!” Finally, Jie Xingpeng loudly yelled.

And also as Jie Xingpeng yelled that out, Zi Xuanyuan retracted his palm and indifferently smiled. He had that relaxed expression from start to finish, as if he didn’t even use any strength at all.

But looking back at Jie Xingpeng, the chief of the Jie Clan, the expert in the 6th level of the Heaven realm, his face was pale-white and large droplets of sweat fell. He breathed roughly with large breaths and even the hand that he fought against Zi Xuanyuan with was slightly trembling. It was as if his power was going to be drained away.

“Senior Zi Xuanyuan, you are indeed exceptional. I sincerely accept my inferiority and I shall say my farewells today here.”

Jie Xingpeng’s face was very unsightly as he bowed to Zi Xuanyuan. Then, after he meaningfully looked deeply at Chu Feng, he waved his big sleeve and dispelled the surrounding Spirit Formation and without even turning his head back, he flew towards the distance.

“Waa, Elder Xuanyuan, I never would have thought that you were this powerful! Even Jie Xingpeng isn’t able to defeat you.” After Jie Xingpeng left, Chu Feng’s mouth was widely opened as he carefully looked at Zi Xuanyuan and his gaze was filled with little stars of adoration.

“Hmph. He is but a young person, yet he even wants to fight against me. Just now, if I used just a tiny bit more strength, he would have definitely been patted into meat paste by me.” Zi Xuanyuan coldly snorted and his face was filled with smug.

“Elder Xuanyuan, since you could have easily killed him, why didn’t you kill him just now?” After hearing those words, Chu Feng’s widened mouth couldn’t help but widen even more.

“Cultivators don’t easily appear.”

“I never easily take another person’s life, even if it is the Black Toad King that had thought of harming my precious granddaughter. I still carried a benevolent heart and let it and its son go.” Zi Xuanyuan smiled and said.

“What? Aren’t you letting it back to its base and causing endless future troubles?” Chu Feng’s face was filled with amazement and he had no way of understanding Zi Xuanyuan’s actions.

“Who? The Black Toad King? Even if it cultivates for another hundred years, it will not be able to defeat me. Besides, its nature isn’t bad and by sparing its life, it is intensely grateful so why would it possibly take revenge on me?” Zi Xuanyuan shook his head.

“I’m not talking about the Black Toad King. I’m talking about Jie Xingpeng! After all, the Jie clan’s force of power is enormously large and it even has a Strange Armament. They shouldn’t be

underestimated” Chu Feng worriedly said.

“Ho... The Jie clan? Other than that old guy who has been in seclusion for over a hundred years, who else in his Jie clan can defeat me? Besides, even if that old guy comes out, he may not be able to gain advantages from my hands.”

“On the continent of the Nine Provinces, other than the current dynasty’s old ancestor in the Jiang Dynasty, who am I afraid of?” Zi Xuanyuan flung his sleeve and his face was filled with disdain.

“The old guy in seclusion in over a hundred years? Could it be... Could it be the exceptional genius that year?” Chu Feng was many times more shocked.

“Other than him, who else can it be? The Jie clan and the World Spirit Guild fearlessly sits stably on the throne of the number one powers as they know they have support behind them.”

“How can it not be because of those two old things who fortifies their position? Others don’t know that they are painstakingly cultivating in seclusion, but I know.” Zi Xuanyuan curled his lips and said.

“This... Over a hundred years, yet they are actually still living in this world? Elder Xuanyuan, then what should the cultivation of those two be right now?”

Chu Feng curiously asked closely because his relationship with

the Jie clan was already like water and fire.

In the present, one Jie Xingpeng was already strong enough, yet there was an extra old monster who had lived for over a hundred years, and had also swept through the continent before. Chu Feng felt that it wasn't a good thing.

“They should be... Mm, wait. You brat, you want to take this chance to inquire about my cultivation?” Zi Xuanyuan contemptibly looked at Chu Feng.

“Eh, nono. I truly don't have any intentions like that. I'm just curious.” Chu Feng hurriedly shook his head and his head was like a pellet drum. Although the Jie clan person was indeed an old monster, Zi Xuanyuan's strength was also similarly like a monster, and Chu Feng could not afford to offend him.

“You boy, your nerves truly cover the sky and you dare to do anything.”

“Don't worry. It was only an exception today. After today, no matter what dangers you meet, I will no longer come out to help you. Even if you get skinned, your tendons pulled, and you beaten to death alive in front of me, I will still put my hands in my sleeves and only watch.”

poof After hearing those words, Chu Feng almost spit out some of his heart's blood because there was simply no one like Zi Xuanyuan who dejected others in such a way.



“Okay, quickly leave. I believe that Jie Xingpeng won’t follow you anymore.” Zi Xuanyuan didn’t even care what expression Chu Feng had and he waved his hand towards Chu Feng.

“No matter what, I, Chu Feng, am grateful towards you for saving my life. If there is ever a chance, I will definitely repay you.” Chu Feng respectfully cupped his hands and bowed to Zi Xuanyuan.

He did not blame him even though he said he would not save him in the future. After all, Zi Xuanyuan was unrelated to him and he didn’t have any reason to save him. Today, saving him once was already because he had ~~plot armor~~ good luck, so Chu Feng should be extremely thankful for this favor and engrave it in his heart.

“Okay, quickly leave. Or else, if Jie Yan, Qin Lei, and the others catch up, even I won’t help you.”

“That’s right. Hang this on your body and within one month, don’t leave the Qin Province.” Suddenly, Zi Xuanyuan seemed to have thought of something and he took out a triangular blue talisman from his pocket and handed it over to Chu Feng.

“Positional Talisman?” Chu Feng’s pupils shrunk. As a World Spiritist, naturally, Chu Feng recognized that thing. It was a type of Positional Talisman, and as long as Chu Feng put that on his body, it would be a lot easier for the owner of the Positional Talisman to find Chu Feng.

Of course, although the Positional Talisman could determine the

position of the person, there were still limitations of distance. The blue-coloured Positional Talisman was of an extremely high-level type. Even if it was a normal Blue-cloak World Spiritist, they would not be able to produce it. Only people like Vice-head Gao could, but they would still need to use quite a bit of power.

“No need to look at it. It’s not that I want to find you, but that girl told me to hand this over to you. Today, the reason why I came out to save you was also because she entrusted me on this.” Seeing Chu Feng’s face being filled with strangeness, Zi Xuanyuan shot him a glance.

“It’s Zi Ling huh?”

After hearing those words, Chu Feng’s heart warmed. Ever since returning to the Prestigious Villa, Zi Ling isolated herself and cultivated. She would not see anyone, and Chu Feng even thought that she forgot about the kindness and betrayed righteousness, and forgot about him saving her life that day. He thought that she turned her face to the other side and feigned ignorance. He didn’t expect that the girl was still thinking about himself.

“Okay, I’ll take my leave here. Take care.” As Zi Xuanyuan spoke, he stood up with both of his hands behind his back, floated up, and with a blink, he disappeared. That speed was indeed not something Chu Feng could catch up with.

And Chu Feng also didn’t dare to be slow. Currently, no short amount of time had been wasted and the medicinal power of the Forbidden Medicine could not keep up too much longer. Chu Feng had to quickly find a place to safely dodge the danger.

So, Chu Feng urged the azure dragon under him and with a flash, headed towards a direction that was different to Jie Xingpeng's and flew. Obviously, he did not want to meet with him again.

Chu Feng's speed was very quick. So quick that those in the 5th level of the Heaven realm could not catch up with him. Almost instantly, he disappeared into the horizon. Short after Chu Feng left, within some clouds, Zi Xuanyuan appeared. He smiled, and said, "Although this boy doesn't have a kind heart and has extremely heavy killing intents, he is quite worthy of my granddaughter."

# Chapter 399: United Wanted Poster

---

With the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens, Chu Feng flew at full speed. However, after flying for merely four hours, the power of the Forbidden Medicine started to quickly fade and the feeling of the rebound started to surge forth.

In that situation, Chu Feng also didn't dare to continue hurrying and in the nearest place, he chose a not very big mountain range and hid inside.

The so-called "The most dangerous place is the safest place". There were indeed certain truths in that phrase.

The mountain range that was unordinary was absolutely not the best area to hide, but exactly because of that, perhaps it would always be neglected by the people who search. So, Chu Feng felt that this was rather a good place for hiding.

boom boom boom

After entering the mountain range, Chu Feng grasped the Asura Ghost Axe and wildly swung. Forcefully, on a rock mountain, he dug out a mountain cave.

After digging the mountain cave, he first laid many Detection Spirit Formations outside the cave, then after that, laid Concealment Spirit Formations in the entrance of the cave, letting others to be unable to discover that place. Only after doing all that did he relievedly hide inside.

“Ahh~~~~~””

Very quickly, the power of the Forbidden Medicine's rebound started to increase. Even after consuming the healing pellet that Vice-head Gao gave Chu Feng, the pain was still extremely difficult for Chu Feng to endure.

It was as though countless ants drilled into Chu Feng's body, and from veins, skin, and even organs, they tore and bit Chu Feng all over his body. Unendurable strange itchiness and incomparable pain.

But very quickly, the excruciating agony disappeared and closely after, what engulfed him was scorching hotness, as if Chu Feng fell into a stove. He was enduring the torture of a fiery ocean, and it was also as if there was a stove burning Chu Feng's body from the inside.

As he was tormented by such horrifying heat, Chu Feng already ripped his clothing to shreds and he was already bare naked while he rolled around within the cave. But even so, he was unable to endure the feeling of the heat.

Finally, the hot feeling faded, yet what Chu Feng did not expect was that the Forbidden Medicine's torturing still continued and this time, it was bone-piercing coldness. So cold that Chu Feng shivered and it was unbearable. It was as though he got transferred into a cave of ice.

With that, occasionally, Chu Feng sweat with large droplets, and occasionally, his entire body quivered. Occasionally, he clenched his heart and scratched his lungs, and occasionally, he beat his chest and stamped his feet. He was tortured to death and back.

When it started, Chu Feng could even loudly yell to release his own pain, but afterwards, Chu Feng didn't even have the strength to yell and he could only powerlessly limp on the ground, and would occasionally twitch.

It had to be said that the rebound of this Forbidden Medicine was truly tormenting. It wouldn't cause people to faint away from pain. It would keep them clear and awake, to experience that pain with their entire body and heart.

That was the price. To ask for power that did not belong to oneself meant that they had to pay the appropriate price for that. That was what Forbidden Medicine were.

The current Chu Feng was paying that price, and in his entire life, it was the most unendurable physical pain that he had ever felt before.

But Chu Feng did not regret it because he lived, and he even gained a million and fifty thousand Profound beads because of that.

Those Profound beads would greatly increase Chu Feng's cultivation and the distance to the 7th level of the Profound realm would be one step closer. That also meant he was one step closer in

saving the sisters Su Rou and Su Mei. So, Chu Feng felt that everything was very worth it. Even if the price of the rebound was even more painful, even longer, it would still be worth it.

It had to be said that Zi Xuanyuan's deterrence had an effect. Jie Xingpeng truly left and he wasn't hiddenly following Chu Feng. So, temporarily, Chu Feng was safe.

However, as Chu Feng was getting filled with the pain of the Forbidden Medicine's rebound within the mountain cave and receiving wave after wave of torment, the powers that had each lost a hundred and fifty Profound beads did not willingly take the unspoken grievance and they made their moves.

The Yuangang School, Fire God School, Hidden White Sect, Free and Unrestrained Valley, Sword God Valley, and Jie clan, the six peak powers, offered heavy rewards and sent out wanted posters everywhere in the continent of the Nine Provinces and joined up to put out wanted posters for Chu Feng.

As for the reason they put out the wanted posters, it was very absurd as well. They had actually said that Chu Feng took away the Strange Armament, Asura Ghost Axe, they, the powers, discovered within an ancient archaeological remains. Also, because of that, poisoned the experts of their powers and caused them to have heavy losses.

They even said that Chu Feng was a plague. Even though he was very young, he had to be removed or else there would be endless disasters in the future.

Facing such absurd statements, the World Spirit Guild did not stand out to say anything. After all, they had already helped Chu Feng before by helping him to successfully escape.

And also exactly because of that, the Yuangang School and the other powers felt hatred in their hearts towards the World Spirit Guild and some even wanted to attack the World Spirit Guild. In times like those, the World Spirit Guild could really no longer interfere with the matters between Chu Feng and other powers, or else that would be equal to burning themselves.

As for the Prestigious Villa, they had unexpectedly not put out wanted posters and they silently accepted the hundred and fifty Profound beads that Chu Feng swindled away. As for why it was like that, doubtlessly, there was more or less some relation with Zi Xuanyuan.

It must be said that immediately after the wanted posters came out, commotions started to boil. After all, in the Marriage Gathering, Chu Feng already made his name in one go and many people had lots of good impressions of Chu Feng and felt that he was an outstanding genius.

But they never would have thought that Chu Feng was a person like that. That caused many people's rising good impressions of Chu Feng to be instantly destroyed.

Especially with the exaggerations of the six big powers, titles of being despicable, shameless, evil, sinister, were all fastened onto



Chu Feng and countless people felt disgusted towards him.

On that day, ten days had already passed since Chu Feng escaped from the Prestigious Villa. Everyone who was still participating in the Marriage Gathering regathered on the summit of the mountain peak.

It was for no other reason but only because Zi Ling, who had isolated herself for a long time, came out today, and also today, she was going to announce whom the person she loved was.

“I truly wonder who Lady Zi Ling likes.”

“It should be Jie Qingming right? If it’s not Jie Qingming, then it’s Xu Zhongyu. After all, those two are the most excellent within those who are in this Marriage Gathering, and only they are worthy for Lady Zi Ling.”

“How is that possible? Haven’t Jie Qingming and Xu Zhongyu already set a marriage with disciples of the Prestigious Villa?”

“They have already set the marriage with Zi Ling’s seniors from the same villa, so how can such an intelligent and clever lady like Zi Ling choose those two?”

“That may not be so. Marriages can be set, and they can similarly be destroyed. Besides, Lady Zi Ling had secluded herself before the marriages were set, and the one whom she loves was already living in her heart.”

“I believe that she is a lady who loves strongly. If she truly loves a person, even if that person has already set a marriage, she will still announce who the person she loves is and she wouldn’t switch because of that.”

At that instant, on the summit of the mountain peak, people formed mountains and oceans. People had many guesses regarding the person who Zi Ling liked and many people felt that the possibility of that person being Jie Qingming and Xu Zhongyu was the biggest. But some people also felt that it was impossible, and on that topic, people even started to argue.

“Hmph. Jie Qingming, Jie Qingming. Other than Jie Qingming, it’s Xu Zhongyu. Other than those two, is there no one else in the young generation of the Nine Provinces?”

Within the crowd of people, Tang Yixiu furiously spat out and the faces of Bai Yunfei, Liu Xiaoyao, and Song Qingfeng, who were by his side, were also similarly displeased.

To them who also got the invitation letters, they were really bitter because everyone only concentrated their focuses on the bodies of Jie Qingming and Xu Zhongyu.

## Chapter 400: Zi Ling Appears

---

“That’s right. The young generation of Nine Provinces is definitely not limited to only Xu Zhongyu and Jie Qingming.”

“And the one who Lady Zi Ling loves will also definitely not be those two. It will be me... Murong Yu!”

Suddenly, a figure carrying the Divine Wood Sword behind his back walked into their lines of sight. That person was the young valley head of the Sword God Valley, Murong Yu.

“Hmph. I’ve seen shameless people, but I haven’t seen a person as shameless as you.” After hearing Murong Yu’s words, Song Qingfeng and the others coldly snorted. They who had deep pasts with Murong Yu were naturally very displeased towards him and they would not endure Murong Yu as he bragged in broad daylight.

“What? Do you feel itchy and lack a beating?” Murong Yu disdainfully swept his gaze over the four people and he was incomparable domineering.

“You are only relying on your Strange Armament. If you don’t have a Strange Armament, you may not be able to defeat me.” Tang Yixiu howled bitterly.

“Truly ignorant. Having Strange Armaments is also having skill. What? I have a Strange Armament yet I’m not allowed to use it? If you can, get one as well! If you don’t have that capability, don’t tell others that they cannot use it.” Murong Yu disdainfully said.

“Rubbish. Did you get that Divine Wood Sword yourself? You only relied on the fact that you have a good grandfather.” Bai Yunfei cursed.

“Having a good grandfather means that I’ve done plenty of good things in my past life, so that’s why I have this luck in this life.”

“There is no need for all of you to admire or envy. Don’t do any more evil things in this life and do more kind things. Perhaps you can even be cast into a good fetus in your next life.” But looking at your current moralities and behaviors, I’m afraid that your next lives will be horrible.” Murong Yu mocked, hiddenly indicating that the four of them wouldn’t have a chance in this life and could only hope for the next.

“Yeah, on the topic of luck, your grandfather truly has some dog crap luck. Not only did he not die after being struck down a cliff, he even picked up a Strange Armament. But sadly, he was heavily injured from falling and less than two years after picking up the Strange Armament, his legs went limp, and he died. He died! Hahaha...” Liu Xiaoyao also coldly mocked.

“Liu Xiaoyao, you are truly looking to die!” And after hearing those words, Murong Yu’s face suddenly turned cold. He pulled out the Divine Wood Sword behind his back and the boundless pressure swept towards Liu Xiaoyao.

boom

However, before letting the pressure touch Liu Xiaoyao, a layer of ripple came exploding over and after the ripple dissipated, people astonishedly discovered that a middle-aged man holding a foldable fan soundlessly appeared in front of Liu Xiaoyao and that person was the head of the Free and Unrestrained Valley.

“Valley Head Murong, manage your own son. Right now, we are united. Where is the propriety by harming each other like this?”

After the head of the Free and Unrestrained Valley blocked that attack, he did not make things difficult for Murong Yu and he only angrily yelled at a figure walking behind Murong Yu. That person was the father of Murong Yu, the head of the Sword God Valley.

“Yu’er, my Sword God Valley right now is in an alliance with the Yuangang School, the Fire God School, the Hidden White Sect, and the Free and Unrestrained Valley. In the future, you must not be so disorderly and cause troubles to the other seniors. Or else, I will take your Divine Wood Sword back.” The eyebrows of the head of the Sword God Valley inverted and he coldly reprimanded.

“I won’t dare anymore.” Murong Yu was obviously very afraid of his father. Especially after hearing that he was going to retake his Divine Wood Sword, he hurriedly admitted his wrongs in fright.

Seeing that scene, it also caused the faces of Tang Yixiu, Song Qingfeng, and the others to shine more brightly as they sneered on the side.

“All of you also pay attention. In terms of age, you are even a bit

older than Murong Yu. As the senior, can't you yield a bit to the junior?" However, just at that time, the head of the Free and Unrestrained Valley yelled at the four.

The Free and Unrestrained Valley's relationship with the other powers was always very good, so the head of the Free and Unrestrained Valley was also equal to being their elder. Thus, Tang Yixiu and the others lowered their heads silently when facing the valley head's yells and didn't dare to talk back.

"I never would have thought that the God Sword Valley who had always disliked the Yuangang School, Fire God School, Hidden White Sect, and Free and Unrestrained Valley would surrender in front of benefits." Within the crowd, when Xu Zhongyu saw that scene, he couldn't help but lightly frown and his gaze glittered because to his World Spirit Guild, that was not a good situation.

"Ahh, it's all because of the Jie clan playing tricks behind their backs. If this continues, I'm afraid that sooner or later, my World Spirit Guild and the Jie clan will have a great battle." An elder from the World Spirit Guild said in a low voice.

"No matter. We only need to endure one more year. One year later, it will be the time when they pay the price." The gaze of Vice-head Gao became cold.

And after hearing those words, Xu Zhongyu and the others who received the mental message were all taken aback. Especially Gu Bo. He even hiddenly said, "One year later, the old ancestor will come out? I truly want to see his glory!"

“But Chu Feng, can you endure past this one year?” As long as he thought of Chu Feng who was wanted by the peak six powers in the current Nine Provinces, Gu Bo was extremely worried.

“Look! Lady Zi Ling is coming.” Just at that time, a shout suddenly rang out within the crowd and quickly after, everyone’s gazes couldn’t help but sweep towards the distant horizon.

At that instant, almost everyone’s hearts couldn’t avoid quickening because over the horizon, an exquisite sedan chair, which was being carried by four Heaven realm experts, gradually approached.

The people on scene were no stranger to the special appearance style. It was the unique appearance of Zi Ling. As the foster daughter of Qin Lei, the head of the Prestigious Villa, Zi Ling’s position in the Prestigious Villa could be said to be extremely high.

Also, some people who had inside information also understood that Zi Ling also had an outstanding grandfather. The strength of that grandfather was perhaps no weaker than Qin Lei, maybe even more powerful than him.

So, everyone on scene, as long as it was a male, wanted to be the one who could set up a marriage with Zi Ling, and they wanted to capture the young female’s heart.

Finally, the sedan chair slowly descended and following the gradual opening of the sedan chair’s doors, Zi Ling also walked out

and appeared within everyone's line of sight.

Zi Ling today was indeed very pretty. Clear and shiny big eyes, eyelashes that were long and curled up... Eyes like those were very clean, and they were even more attracting than those fox-like eyes.

There wasn't even a need to talk about Zi Ling's face. Extremely perfect oval face, small nose, pink cherry-like lips, snow-white and sparkling skin, and when adorned with the purple-coloured skirt that was different from the crowd, it really bewitched innumerable people.

“Waa, she's too pretty! Such a female should only be able to appear in dreams, but I never would have thought that I could even see her in reality!”

“I, in this very instant, am like arriving in the realm of dreams. If one has a beauty like Lady Zi Ling accompanying them in their life, what other wants would they even need?”

“Ahh, but I wonder who actually has such good luck and can gain the heart of Lady Zi Ling.”

“No matter who is it, to be able to marry a beauty like Lady Zi Ling must be from the luck cultivated from their former life and the [‘green smoke rising from ancestral tombs’](#).”

From baidu: A “feng shui” saying. Green smoke somewhat means green gas, and green gas is a “lucky gas”. It is a sign of very good luck.



After Zi Ling appeared, many yells rang out and everyone was attracted by that young female's beautiful appearance. Everyone looked forward to the person Zi Ling had in her heart.

# Chapter 401: Him Or None Other

---

And after Zi Ling walked out of the sedan chair, she lightly treaded, then walked two steps forward. Only then did she stand completely straight in the middle of the luxurious dance stage.

Zi Ling's eyes blinked and after she very casually swept her gaze over the crowd, she opened her red lips and spoke with her sweet, beautiful, and enchanting voice,

“The person whom I love...his name is Chu Feng.”

“What?!!”

“I haven't heard wrong right? It's Chu Feng?!!”

After Zi Ling spoke, it was like a thunder in a clear sky and people's expressions greatly changed to shock. All of them were stupefied and some even endlessly yelled madly. It had to be said that everyone on scene were stunned by Zi Ling's words.

Because, what they thought of was that the person could be Jie Qingming, could be Xu Zhongyu, it could also be an unknown yet a person who had a handsome face, but they never would have thought that the person would be Chu Feng.

Who was Chu Feng? He was a person with heavy crimes who the current six big powers were uniting to apprehend. The people in the continent of the Nine Provinces should be disgusted with him,

and righteous people should kill him.

Zi Ling... Yet Zi Ling had actually stood out and said the person she liked was Chu Feng! Was it possible that she was an idiot? Or did she still not know about Chu Feng's matters and was still lost in Chu Feng's outer righteous appearance?

It had to be said that after the name Chu Feng was spoken from Zi Ling's mouth, a huge uproar was ignited. Everyone on scene could no longer remain calm.

“Dammit. It's Chu Feng again. God damn, it's him.”

“He should die. He should truly die. Which part of that brat is good? Why did even Lady Zi Ling fall to him?”

But at that very instant, the ones with the most stirred up emotions were Tang Yixiu, Song Qingfeng, Bai Yunfei, and Liu Xiaoyao.

They who had fallen in love with Zi Ling for a long time never would have thought that the one who ultimately took away Zi Ling's heart was the brat they hated the most. Chu Feng.

If the one Zi Ling loved was Jie Qingming or Xu Zhongyu, even if it wasn't them, they could still accept it. But when it was Chu Feng, they could really not accept it

“It's that brat called Chu Feng? What virtue or ability does he

have? How is he worthy for my Zi Ling?”

At the same time, Murong Yu also angrily yelled. He, who was not on good terms with Tang Yixiu and the others, was currently facing the problem of “the one Zi Ling loved”. Unexpectedly, he was standing on the same line of battle as Tang Yixiu and the others.

In reality, although many people didn’t have appearances that were as violent as theirs, nor as lofty as them, they were similarly endlessly furious in their hearts.

For example, Jie Qingming, the genius who already successfully set up a marriage with a lady from the Prestigious Villa. Within his sleeves, his fists were already powerfully clenched tightly and the flames of fury in his body was currently running amok everywhere, but his roaring killing intent was not leaking anywhere.

He was very bitter. Bitter that he lost to a brat he looked down upon, and the one he loved had actually loved a person he hated.

In reality, not to mention the people of the young generation being extremely shocked, even the ones in the old generation were the same.

At that instant, the heads of the six big powers were all there. Their eyes narrowed slightly, their gazes flickered, and they were somewhat unable to see through the young female on the stage.

Because, when Zi Ling said that name, it was equal to declaring war to them. The consequences were very serious. Not only did it isolate herself, it even pushed the Prestigious Villa to the fiercest place of the battle.

And as the summit of the mountain peak was in chaos and people's thoughts were in all sorts of complications, Zi Ling seemed abnormally calm and she continued speaking,

“To love a person, there is no need to change oneself.”

“To love a person, there is no need to make things hard for oneself.”

“To love a person, even more so, one should not be wronged.”

“Because, in true love, there should be more sweet than sorrow; greater happiness than pain.”

“For true love, even if it is within a deep, endless ocean of pain, as long as my heart doesn't change, I will still be happy within.”

“So...”

“To love a person, one should ignore their own safety for him.”

“To love a person, one should give everything possible for him.”

“To love a person, one should have an eternally unchanging heart.”

“No matter what kinds of difficulties or dangers there are forward, one does not become timid. One does not be shaken.”

“Even if that person becomes the enemy of the world, then I will also be willing to be by his side and fight against the world together with him.”

“The person whom I love is Chu Feng. No matter how the world’s people see him, no matter how they loathe him, no matter how they hate him, I, Zi Ling, choose him. I do not waver on this, and I only approve of him.”

“No person can shake my heart. No object can shake my heart. In this current life, I will only love Chu Feng and none other. My heart is willing, and I have no regrets.”

“Today, I, Zi Ling, will withdraw from the Prestigious Villa and from now on, I am no longer a disciple of the Prestigious Villa, nor Villa Head Qin Lei’s foster daughter. From today on, no matter what I do, it is completely unrelated to the Prestigious Villa.”

Zi Ling’s voice was very soft and pleasant, but it resonated next to people’s ears and every single word and phrase stunned them.

“Heavens! Zi Ling is actually willing to do all that for Chu Feng! To even cut off the relationship between her and the Prestigious

Villa, to be by Chu Feng's side, and to fight against the world with Chu Feng?"

"It is truly a shame, truly a shame. How can such a beauty be so idiotic? Chu Feng is a despicable and shameless person. How is he worthy for Lady Zi Ling to treat him like that?" Many people cried injustice for Zi Ling and felt that Chu Feng wasn't worthy enough for her, and even more so, not worthy enough for her to do all that to that point.

"A female like that is blind like that. Indeed, this is extremely rare to see in this world. It must be said that Chu Feng is truly lucky. To be able to take away the heart of a female like that... His life is quite worth it."

"Actually, thinking more carefully, this is also strength! No matter what Chu Feng has done, after all, he is a genius. We've seen his talent, and his courage is outstanding as well. After all, within the underground palace that day, he was the only person who dared to save Lady Zi Ling."

"From the situation of that day, I do feel that Zi Ling's choice is right. Actually, only Chu Feng is the one truly worth it for her to love, and only Chu Feng is worthy for Zi Ling."

But some people also felt that Zi Ling was mad with love. She was a perfect female, and no matter what Chu Feng had done, at least Chu Feng madly loved Zi Ling as well, so the two of them matched quite a bit.

“God damn. What are the ways of the world these days? Is this the so-called ‘if it’s not a bad guy, women won’t love’?”

“It’s fine if such an excellent beauty like Zi Ling doesn’t choose us, but she doesn’t even choose Murong Yu. She doesn’t choose Xu Zhongyu. She doesn’t even choose Jie Qingming and she had to choose the wanted criminal, Chu Feng! What the hell is she thinking?”

However, some people also had no way of accepting that fact and felt that Zi Ling was simply an ignoble person. They had actually felt unfairness towards Jie Qingming and the others, and they started to loudly curse.

This was the so-called ‘same rice feeds a hundred types of people’. Every person’s thoughts were different. Every person’s view on things was different, but no matter what they thought, how they saw it, it was impossible to change Zi Ling’s heart because she had already chose Chu Feng.



## Chapter 402: Who Dares To Touch Her

---

“Lady Zi Ling, you are simply stooping and cutting off your great future by wishing to accompany Chu Feng. I advise you to think three times before making your move.”

But just at that time, the vice-chief of the Jie clan, “Jie Yan”, walked out from the crowd. His voice was very loud and clear, and the gaze in which he looked at Zi Ling with was also a bit unkind.

“Lady Zi Ling, Vice-chief Jie is correct. You cannot destroy yourself for a bastard brat like Chu Feng!”

At the same time, behind him, the head of the Hidden White School, the head of the Fire God School, the head of the Yuangang School, and the heads of the Free and Unrestrained Valley and the Sword God Valley walked out simultaneously, and slowly neared the high stage that Zi Ling was on.

After all, Zi Ling telling the crowd all this was the same as telling everyone in the world that she was going to chase after Chu Feng’s footsteps and become the six big powers’ enemy.

If those words were said behind their backs, then whatever. But at that very instant, Zi Ling was saying that in front of them! It was simply slapping their faces in front of the crowd and totally, she didn’t put them in her eyes. If they sat there and didn’t do anything about it, then where would their faces be?

“There is no need for any of you to advise what I, Zi Ling, wish to

do, because none of you have any way of affecting me. Even more so, none of you can interfere with what I want to do.” Zi Ling’s little mouth curled and she had a very stubborn and determined appearance.

“Lady Zi Ling, this means that you have decided to make us enemies?” Jie Yan’s eyes narrowed as he indifferently asked.

“So what if I am?” Zi Ling glared her eyes. She who knew the truth already felt badly towards Jie Yan in her heart and she felt very displeased towards him.

“Since it is like this, you cannot blame us for being impolite to you.” Jie Yan was quite straightforward. His tone suddenly became cold and there was not a single trace of caring or consideration for females. He waved his big sleeve and emanated the aura of the 5th level of the Heaven realm, planning to attack Zi Ling.

“I would quite like to see who dares to attack my precious granddaughter.”

But just at that time, Zi Xuanyuan soundlessly appeared next to Zi Ling and at the same time, a burst of formless aura also started to spread out with him as the middle.

Although that aura was formless, it caused all things to be deformed. The air tore, the space twisted, and the gorgeous dancing stage underneath his feet was instantly destroyed. Countless cracks started to extend from the mountain peak under him.

Even Jie Yan and the other heads grimaced from the burst of aura and they were constantly forced back. They had no way of even fighting back.

And other than Jie Yan and the others, the young generation characters on scene rolled around as they were blown. Some people even directly fainted away from the pressure and could not rise as they laid on the ground

“Zi Xuanyuan!!”

After Zi Xuanyuan appeared, many people recognized him. After all, within the Thousand Monster Mountain that day, Zi Xuanyuan had saved many superb geniuses in the young generation so many people had deep impressions of Zi Xuanyuan and knew that he was a very outstanding senior expert.

However, they never would have thought that Zi Xuanyuan would be this strong. Even Jie Yan and the others could not get near him. That was a bit too terrifying.

With an old man like him in the Prestigious Villa fortifying its position, didn't that mean that the Prestigious Villa very possibly surpassed the World Spirit Guild and the Jie clan, having a chance to become the number one power in the continent of the Nine Provinces?

“So you're senior Zi Xuanyuan. We meet because of fate today, and truly, well met well met.”

“However, I’ve heard that you’re a kindhearted righteous character. I wonder why you would interfere with us. Could it be that today, you wish to assist the evildoer, and stand out for Chu Feng to oppose us?”

After Zi Xuanyuan appeared, Jie Yan instantly lost his temper. He first respectfully cupped his hands towards Zi Xuanyuan before speaking.

Because, from the moment just now, Jie Yan felt an aura even more powerful than Jie Xingpeng. Which meant that Zi Xuanyuan was an expert who had strength even higher than the 6th level of the Heaven realm. A character like him wasn’t someone they could fight against.

If Zi Xuanyuan truly wanted to help Chu Feng, it was likely that they could not do anything to Chu Feng. At least, before his old ancestor came out, his Jie clan could absolutely not look into anything about Chu Feng.

“I do not have any association with Chu Feng. His life is not the slightest bit related to me, so I will not stand out for him to attack you.”

“However, my precious granddaughter is different. She is my only relative right now.”

“And if there is anyone who dares to touch her? No matter who that person is, I will not have mercy. I will definitely make him pay

a painful price.” As he spoke those words, Zi Xuanyuan revealed his killing intent and with a mere glance at that gaze, one’s heart would tremble.

“Senior, please don’t misunderstand. I don’t have any malicious thoughts towards Lady Zi Ling, but I just don’t want her to step onto the wrong path so I just reminded her out of kindness.” Jie Yan hurriedly explained because he felt that if the old man wanted to kill him, he would have no way of escaping.

“Hmph. Does my granddaughter need you to remind her?”

“All in all, today, I’ll put these words here. Chu Feng’s life is completely unrelated to me.”

“But if there is anyone who dares to harm my granddaughter, I will exterminate his entire family, destroy his ancestors’ graves, and make him unable to turn his life around eternally.”

Zi Xuanyuan coldly snorted and quickly after, he suddenly waved his big sleeve and a burst of violent gale came sweeping by. After the gale dissipated, Zi Xuanyuan and Zi Ling had already disappeared and they only left a dumbfounded crowd behind who had faces filled with fear that stayed behind.

“Ling’er, are you still truly planning to follow that boy Chu Feng?” On a tall mountain several hundred miles away from the Prestigious Villa, Zi Xuanyuan stood with his hands behind his back and smiled at his cherished granddaughter.

“Grandfather, don’t you hope that I can find a reliable person? I feel like Chu Feng is such a person.” Zi Ling sweetly smiled and said.

“Reliable? That boy is reliable? It would be quite nice if he doesn’t kill you. Right now, by following him, you will live a life of being chased after by people everyday. This is the so-called reliable you speak of?” Zi Xuanyuan curled his lips. Although his words were a bit unkind, his face did not have too much blame.

“He dares to sacrifice himself for me, so why can’t I sacrifice myself for him?” On Zi Ling’s face of absolute beauty, her smile became even sweeter.

“You girl, I truly can’t do anything to you. Whatever, I’ll let you experience some dangers. It will at least be better than always succeeding.”

“After all, sooner or later, you will return to your homeland. This little continent of the Nine Provinces cannot hold you in.”

“Before leaving, I’ll help you one more time and see if you can successfully make a breakthrough into the Heaven realm. If you succeed this time, I’ll let you go find Chu Feng.” Zi Xuanyuan gravely said.

“Then if I can’t succeed?” After hearing those words, Zi Ling’s little face instantly tensed up.

“If you cannot succeed, then I’ll still let you go, you little girl!” Zi Xuanyuan used his finger to lightly tap Zi Ling forehead and both helplessness and dotingness was on his face.

“Heh, I knew that you would treat me the best.” Hearing those words, Zi Ling rejoiced. If she could truly step into the Heaven realm, when she arrived by Chu Feng’s side, there would be an extra layer of safety.

But if she could not step into the Heaven realm, she would also look for Chu Feng impatiently. After all, the current Chu Feng was truly located inside of tens of thousands of dangers.

# Retaliation



# Chapter 403: 5th Level Of The Profound Realm

---

The curtains of the Marriage Gathering fell just like that, yet people were greatly amazed and it surpassed almost everyone's expectations.

Because the Marriage Gathering gathered the peak geniuses from all places in the continent of the Nine Provinces, after it ended, the matter about Zi Ling announcing her love for Chu Feng was unavoidably spread.

However, Chu Feng who was hiding within the mountain cave did not know any of those things.

After a full few days of rebound torment, the power of the Forbidden Medicine's rebound finally started to fade away and after Chu Feng's body gradually recovered, he didn't leave the mountain cave. He took out the million and fifty thousand Profound beads and started his journey of refinement.

Although the present Chu Feng had no way of getting the tiniest bit of news from the outside world, he could also guess that the seven powers wouldn't easily forgive him and they would certainly do whatever they could to search for him, and even set up wanted posters for him.

And at a time like this, Chu Feng could not rely on anyone and he could only raise his cultivation. However, even if he had a million and fifty thousand Profound beads on him, Chu Feng did not know

what state he could raise himself to.

After all, the Divine Lightning in his dantian were too savage. Every time he successfully broke through, the resources required next time to break through would multiply by many times. This point was really a bit unbearable for Chu Feng.

“Dammit. All of you can eat too much! Are you even letting me live?!”

“A good one million and fifty thousand Profound beads. One million and fifty thousand! It only let me break through two levels of cultivation! I couldn’t even reach the 6th level of the Profound realm. What can I take to feed you in the future now?”

At that instant, within the mountain cave that Chu Feng was in, bursts of howling resounded because after two full days of refinement, Chu Feng finally finished refining the million and fifty thousand Profound beads.

But the result caused Chu Feng to not be able to accept it. Although he knew that he couldn’t hope the million and fifty thousand Profound beads would allow him to “leap a thousand miles at once” and directly step into the 7th level of the Heaven realm, in which it was the realm he could become a Blue-cloak World Spiritist, he thought that he could at least enter the 6th level of the Profound realm. But the reality was not as how Chu Feng imagined it to be. Although large amounts of Profound power were still accumulated inside Chu Feng’s dantian currently, and the distance to the 6th level of the Profound realm was just a tiny bit, it was something that Chu Feng found hard to accept.

“Chu Feng, for all things, if there are advantages, there are disadvantages. Although breaking through a single level of cultivation requires a huge price, and that price is getting heavier and heavier, you still got a benefit that you should get. Think carefully. Within the current continent of the Nine Provinces, who is able to defeat you while being the same age as you?”

“You have already been invincible from those of the same age, and right now, you have a Strange Armament on you. Even if, on the surface, you have the cultivation of the 5th level of the Profound realm, your true battle power can already be compared to the Heaven realm. Even if you cannot defeat the Heaven realm, they would still be unable to do anything to you right?”

“But for normal people, if they are in the Profound realm, it would be impossible for them to fight against experts in the Heaven realm. This is your advantage. This is where you are strong in, so there is nothing really worth complaining about.”

“As for resources, you don’t need to worry about that either. This world is huge! The continent of the Nine Provinces is but a small tip of the iceberg. The so-called ‘there are skies beyond this sky’. All of this truly exists.”

“So, no matter how much more enormous cultivating resources you require, there are places where you get them. In this world, Profound beads and Heaven beads aren’t the only things that can raise your cultivation. There are also many strange objects in between the heaven and the earth that has effects of raising cultivation.”

“Even the blood and flesh of some special Monstrous Beasts can raise cultivation, and the effect can even be better. And the thing that I want to remind you about is that you have ways of getting them.” Eggy reminded.

“Don’t worry Eggy. I haven’t been discouraged nor have I been depressed. I just wanted to vent some of my annoyances. After all, it was a million and fifty thousand Profound beads.” Chu Feng chuckled. He knew that Eggy was worried about himself and was afraid that he would be dispirited from having have too much burdens and pressure, which would cause him to lose confidence for the future.

“Ahh, I’ve been in isolation for so long and I haven’t eaten a good meal in many days. I’m hungry! I want go out to find some things to eat and also inquire about the situation outside while I’m at it. Perhaps that girl Zi Ling is searching for me. I’ll wait until that girl finds me, then I’ll leave this Qin Province.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he found a set of commoner-like clothing and quickly after, took out a ragged conical hat and put it on his head. Only after concealing his own appearance did he leave the mountain cave and he headed towards a place where there were human residences.

Chu Feng walked on air and his speed was extremely fast. Before flying for long, he saw a [relay station](#) under the clouds.

“Relay station” is a place for travellers where they provide horse exchanges, food, living places, etc.

Although that station was created in the desolate plains, as the location of traffic was rather good and there were also many people coming back and forth, it was the best place to obtain food and news.

So, Chu Feng intentionally circled around and landed in an area where there were no people before walking towards the relay station.

After entering, Chu Feng directly walked into the tavern, found an empty table, and sat down there. However, when he raised his head to look, his gaze couldn't help but flash because he discovered that on the wall of the tavern, there was a wanted poster posted there, and looking at the painting on the wanted poster, it was none other, than him.

“Apprehend Chu Feng alive and hand over the Asura Ghost Axe. One million Profound beads will be rewarded.”

“Kill Chu Feng and hand over the Asura Ghost Axe. Nine hundred thousand Profound beads will be rewarded.”

“If Chu Feng cannot be killed but valid clues of Chu Feng's hiding location are provided, ten thousand Profound beads will be rewarded.”

“After providing clues and Chu Feng gets caught with those, a hundred thousand Profound beads will be rewarded.”

“Rewards can be obtained from the Jie clan, Yuangang School, Fire God School, Hidden White Sect, Free and Unrestrained Valley, and Sword God Valley?”

After seeing the content on the wanted poster, Chu Feng sneered and hiddenly said to himself, “There’s quite some reward. It seems like these powers still have a lot of treasures! The million and fifty thousand Profound beads I swindled wasn’t really much.”

“It’s only a million Profound beads. Not to mention suspecting that your Asura Ghost Axe has treasures within, even if there aren’t treasures, your Asura Ghost Axe is worth far more than a million Profound beads right? After all, normal Strange Armaments here are already priceless treasures, let alone your Strange Armament that can recognize a master.” Eggy said.

“That’s true. But to be honest, even I am moved with this reward.” Chu Feng knew that a reward like that would definitely make many people’s hearts move. After all, on the wanted poster, it said that Chu Feng only had the cultivation of the 3rd level of the Profound realm.

The 3rd level of the Profound realm. In the continent of the Nine Provinces, that wasn’t even anything. There was an uncountable number of people who were stronger than him in cultivation, so Chu Feng felt that many people would search for his whereabouts for that reward. Currently, he was truly forced into a dead end by the six big powers.

## Chapter 404: Bald Big Man Telling a Story

---

“Whatever, I won’t think about it. Not to mention some mobs, even if the heads of the six big powers appear, they may not be able to catch me.”

Chu Feng curled his mouth. With the methods he currently grasp, other than characters like Jie Xingpeng, the others could truly not do anything to him even if they appeared. Afterwards, he no longer thought about it and he loudly yelled, “Waiter! Bring me whatever good wine and meat you have!”

“Ah, coming!” The tavern’s waiter didn’t dare to be slow and very quickly, a table of dishes were brought to Chu Feng.

In a place like that, there were very few who had recipes for exquisite food and most of them were simple vegetables, big chunks of meat, big bowls of wine... But they were really delicious. To Chu Feng who had a stomach rumbling with hunger, those dishes were the most suitable.

“Waiter, bring your damn best wine and dishes over here. Today, I invite my two sworn brothers to a meal.”

As Chu Feng was stuffing himself with food, three big guys with well-built bodies walked in. The upper bodies of the three big guys were bare and on their healthy muscles, there were dragons and phoenixes. With a glance, one could tell that they weren’t any kind people. They seemed more like bandits in the mountain, or robbers in the forest.

So, after those three people appeared, the waiter's face instantly greened. Many customers also revealed gazes of fear and didn't dare to look more at them, deeply afraid that the three of them would look for trouble.

And the three people were indeed very domineering. Clearly, there were only three people, yet they chose the big table that could hold over twenty people in the tavern and sat down there. By doing so, it would cause many customers behind them to lose a place suitable for eating.

Chu Feng raised his head and looked at the three. Their ages seemed to be just over thirty years old and their cultivations were around the peak of the Origin realm. Facing people like them, other customers were afraid, but Chu Feng did not put them in his eyes in the slightest. So, he didn't pay attention to them and he only ate, caring about himself.

"Ahh, big bro, third bro, have you heard of it? The Marriage Gathering held in the Prestigious Villa has finally finished."

"I've heard of it. This time, the Marriage Gathering was very successful. The Prestigious Villa's excellent disciples has successfully set up marriages with the number one disciple of the World Spirit Guild, Xu Zhongyu, as well as the future chief of the Jie clan, Jie Qingming." A big man with a darker skin colour howled with his special loud voice, completely ignoring the feelings of others.



“I too have heard of it. The World Spirit Guild and the Jie clan have been said to be the strongest powers in the continent of the Nine Provinces. They even have the Jiang Dynasty supporting their backs.”

“Being able to successfully set up marriages with those two powers, the Prestigious Villa’s future position in the continent of the Nine Provinces will be unshakeable. Very likely, they will become the strongest power other than the World Spirit Guild and Jie clan.” The other big man also added.

“How can the news you two said be counted as new news?” The bald big man sitting in the middle disdainfully looked at the two people.

“Big bro, could it be that you’ve heard of some news that we don’t know about?” Seeing that, the two others hurriedly asked.

“Hmph. Of course! My family’s boy had participated in this Marriage Gathering! The news he knows is the most truthful and the most explosive.” The bald big man patted his chest and said. When he mentioned his nephew, his face was filled with pride.

“Oh? Big bro, quickly tell us! What kind of explosive news are there?” Hearing those words, the two other big men started to get excited.

At the same time, the dozens of people within the tavern all heard the conversions of the three people and they couldn’t help but cast their gazes towards the big man. An appearance of

curiosity and “washing ears to listen attentively” also emerged. After all, the Marriage Gathering was the most focused thing right now in the Qin Province. It was something that many people liked to discuss when they had time.

Facing that situation, the bald big man got even more proud. He just straightforwardly slammed the table and stood up with a bang. He said, “Today, I’ll tell all of you something that is unknown about the Marriage Gathering.”

“You should all know who that person is right?” The bald big man first pointed his finger at Chu Feng’s wanted poster.

“Of course we know. That brat is called Chu Feng, and he is also one of the participators of this Marriage Gathering.”

“However, because he was too treacherous and sinister, using the trust that the elders of the several big powers gave him, he hiddenly poisoned the elders, causing them to die.”

“Exactly because of that, he successfully stole away the Strange Armament that was discovered within the archaeological remains that the big powers found. I’ve heard that the Strange Armament even had quite an impressive name. I think it was called Asura Ghost Axe.” The dark big man said first.

“What you’ve said may not be the truth. From what my nephew said, Chu Feng isn’t a sinister person like that. Rather, oppositely, he even saved their lives.” The bald big man said.

“Is it true or not? Chu Feng is only in the 3rd level of the Profound realm, and your nephew is in the 6th level of the Profound realm right? That Chu Feng was able to save your nephew’s life?” The two big men expressed doubt.

“Hmph. This is where Chu Feng is impressive. My nephew has always been arrogant and conceited, but when he mentioned Chu Feng, his face was filled with idolization.”

“He said to me that even though Chu Feng had the cultivation of the 3rd level of the Profound realm, even those in the 9th level of the Profound realm weren’t able to defeat him. His battle power was extremely strong and his talent was the greatest of all the people he had seen.”

“On that day, they went into the Thousand Monster Mountain for an event and they were caught by a Monster King of the Thousand Monster Mountain. They were imprisoned within the palace, and even though an exceptional expert came to save them from the Prestigious Villa, they were still within danger.”

“Because, as long as that exceptional expert exchanged blows with the Monster King of the Thousand Monster Mountain, the entire labyrinth would have collapsed and they would all be buried within.”

“When everything was hung by a thread and when it was a matter of life and death, it was Chu Feng who led them and escaped the labyrinth. If it wasn’t for Chu Feng who led the way and if they were one step slower in escaping, it was likely that they would have died from the collapse of the labyrinth.” The bald big

man said.

“That Chu Feng was truly that impressive? Isn’t he only a sixteen year-old young man?”

The bald big man’s words cause people to half believe and half doubt after hearing, but they were extremely engrossed by it. All of them put down the bowls and chopsticks in their hands and some even just went close to the big man’s side and seriously listened.

“Every word is true. I heard my nephew say that the future chief of the Jie clan, Jie Qingming, challenged Chu Feng because of some conflicts in words with him. For fairness, Jie Qingming intentionally suppressed his cultivation to the 3rd level of the Profound realm to fight with Chu Feng.”

“Take a guess. What were the results of the fight?” The bald big man intentionally kept them in suspense and asked the crowd.

“Is there even a need to guess? Of course Jie Qingming won.”

“Yeah! Jie Qingming is named as the strongest person in the young generation of the continent of the Nine Provinces! Also, he even has a Strange Armament on him so how would it be possible for Chu Feng to defeat him?”

“That’s right that’s right. Jie Qingming is a person who can destroy the sky and the earth with a raise of his hand or foot!” Without even thinking, the crowd gave their answers and within

their eyes, Jie Qingming was simply like a legend.

“Ha! All of you heard rumours and not truths. Jie Qingming’s that strong? Have any of you personally seen it before?” The big man was furious. He slammed the table and angrily roared.

# Chapter 405: Disciple Of The Yuangang School

---

“What? That Chu Feng is actually that strong? If even Strange Armaments can’t stop him, isn’t he so strong that he breaks common sense?” After hearing those words, everyone couldn’t help but inhale a breath of cool air.

“Besides, back then when Chu Feng escaped the Prestigious Villa, my nephew was in the villa.”

“He personally saw, within the Prestigious Villa, that Chu Feng was sealed in by thirteen blue-coloured Spirit Formations. Have any of you even seen a blue-coloured Spirit Formation?” The bald big man continue saying.

“Of course not. But I heard that blue-coloured Spirit Formations can only be laid by Blue-cloak World Spiritists. World Spiritists in that level can do anything. They can create anything. There are only things that we can’t think of, and nothing that they cannot do. They are simply like gods.”

“I’ve also heard about Blue-cloak World Spiritists. They are truly like legends. But from what I know, in the continent of the Nine Provinces, it seems like characters like them only appear within the World Spirit Guild and Jie clan right? Is it possible that even the Prestigious Villa has some?” Some person asked.

“That’s right. Blue-cloak World Spiritists do defy common sense quite a bit, but the blue-coloured Spirit Formations that day

weren't laid by a normal Blue-cloak World Spiritist. I heard my nephew say that the blue-coloured Spirit Formation rose from the ground and sealed the sky. It was very majestic. Can you imagine blue-coloured Spirit Formations like those?" The big man continued speaking.

"Heavens! Spirit Formations that seal the sky? What kind of stunning sight would that be?" After hearing those words, everyone breathed in deeply then afterwards, they were all dumbfounded, seeming to imagine what the Spirit Formations that sealed the sky looked like.

"Whatever, it's better for you not to think. Even if your brains are destroying from thinking, you could not imagine what sight it would be. But I can tell you that the thirteen Spirit Formations, which were so strong, were all destroyed by Chu Feng."

"Also, there were Heaven realm experts who went up to stop Chu Feng, but with an axe, they were cut into two by him." The bald big man smugly said. He could even draw the sounds and expressions of the people there, and he described so precisely that it was as if he personally saw them.

"Heaven realm experts were chopped to death by Chu Feng's axe? Could it be that the axe was the Strange Armament, the Asura Ghost Axe?" People's mouths were widely opened and their jaws dropped from shock.

"It should be doubtlessly the Asura Ghost Axe. But even if it is a Strange Armament, its might is always limited. What did it mean for Chu Feng to be able to kill Heaven realm experts and cut open

blue-coloured Spirit Formations while grasping a Strange Armament? It meant that Chu Feng was powerful enough and he is a real genius. An exceptional person within geniuses.” The bald big man’s face was filled with idolization as he spoke.

“If... If what you said was true, then it means that Chu Feng didn’t poison the elders from the several big powers and hiddenly steal the Asura Ghost Axe.”

“It was that he openly took away the Asura Ghost Axe, and the elders from the several big powers joined hands to block him yet they were all unsuccessful and some even got killed, then he even broke open the thirteen Spirit Formations that sealed the sky?” The crowd asked together.

“Of course. All of that was personally seen by my nephew and it is absolutely true.” The bald big man said.

“Whatever. How would that be possible? If everything you said was true, then Chu Feng has already become a god. Why is there a need to hide?” However, no one took the big man’s words as true and they all scattered, returned to their own tables, and continued eating and drinking.

“Hmph. A group of ignorant things. It is truly wasting words by saying all of this to you.”

Seeing that, the bald big man was a bit angry. He spoke for so long with spit flying everywhere, yet at the end, no one believed him. That truly made a fire in his stomach. So, he cast his gaze



towards his two brothers and asked, “Second bro, third bro, do you two believe me?”

“Heh, Big bro, don’t blame me for striking your confidence, but what you said was too unreliable. Chu Feng is but a sixteen year old child. How is it possible for him to be that powerful?” The dark big man chuckled and said.

“Yeah. Big bro, you must have been tricked by your nephew.” The other one also chuckled, and seeming to be afraid that the bald big man would be angry, as he spoke, he even poured wine for him.

“Whatever. The truth is always hard to accept. Only an intelligent person like me can determine the right and wrong.”

Seeing that his brothers didn’t believe him as well, the bald big man first drank a bowl of wine, then after that, sighed deeply and he had an appearance of a lonely intelligent person. It could be seen that he had actually believed everything his nephew said, and believed that Chu Feng was really as strong as how his nephew said he was.

“Milords, this way please, this way please.”

But just at that time, the expression of an old man that seemed to be the manager suddenly became unsettled as he walked in with a face filled with apologetic smiles. If one observed carefully, they would discover that his body was actually trembling, seeming to be terrified by something.

And behind him, there were eighteen males. Most of the eighteen males seemed to be middle-aged, but there were also some young men. All of their auras were unordinary and they were all experts in the Profound realm.

“They are all disciples of the Yuangang School” Chu Feng raised his conical hat and revealed a pair of fierce eyes. From their clothing, he recognized the origin of those people.

“You three, scram!” After walking into the tavern, one disciple from the Yuangang School pointed at the three big people at the biggest table and furiously howled.

Seeing that, the three did not dare to be the slightest bit slow. As they bowed and smiled apologetically to the disciples of the Yuangang School, they chuckled and gave their seats to them.

At that instant, many people were terrified. Even though they did not recognize the identities of the eighteen people, they felt that they were extremely dangerous. So, some customers secretly stood up and wanted to sneak away.

“All of you sit down!” However, just at that time, the Yuangang School disciple that seemed to be the leader loudly yelled.

His yell frightened many people. The people who left their seats hurriedly returned and even the waiter and the manager found an empty seat and sat down.

“We are core disciples of the Yuangang School. Today, we coincidentally pass by this place so we will take a small rest here. No need to be afraid everyone. Those who should eat, eat, and those who should drink, drink. But none of you can leave because I enjoy liveliness when eating. The more people there are, the better. If any of you dare to break my mood, don’t blame me for not holding myself back.” The disciple of the Yuangang School said.

And after hearing those words, almost everyone didn’t dare to speak as they fearfully lowered their heads and ate.

On that topic, there was quite a coincidence. Because the tavern was slightly full at that moment and there were extremely few number of seats, as the three big men panicked, they had actually sat at Chu Feng’s table.

“Oi, go over to their table and stick with them. Don’t bother us three brothers when we eat.” The bald big man first pointed at Chu Feng, then quickly after, pointed at the four-man table behind Chu Feng in which there were already three who were seated there.

Chu Feng ignored him. He moved his ear to the side and was listening because he discovered that the Yuangang School disciples were currently talking about some things in low voices. The people beside could not hear the sounds they made, but Chu Feng was able to hear all of them into his ears.

## Chapter 406: He's Actually Chu Feng

---

“I’m truly god damn angry. The school head clearly told Tang Yixiu to be responsible for establishing the sub-school in the Qin Province, yet the result is him seeking pleasure for the entire day and he gave everything to us.” One of the disciples said, expressing the unfairness.

“Ahh, don’t complain. Who told us to have an inferior position than him and to have an inferior cultivation than him? Besides, Tang Yixiu isn’t the only one like this. The three others from the Fire God School, Hidden White Sect, and Free and Unrestrained Valley are the same.”

“They said that they are remaining in the Qin Province to establish a sub-school so Chu Feng could be caught more easily, but in reality, the four of them gather together, searching for enjoyment and not caring about anything.”

“It has to be said that no matter how much more arrogant the young school head of the Sword God Valley, Murong Yu, is, at least he is working properly. Despite being young, right now, he is indeed diligently creating the sub-valley of the Sword God Valley in the Qin Province. Who knows how many times stronger he is than our number one disciple.”

Although another disciple said “don’t complain” on the surface, in reality, within his tone, it was similarly filled with grudges.

“Whatever, let’s not mention these unhappy things. Come, let’s

drink!”

“Come drink come drink. After finishing this meal, we still need to continue hurrying. If we can’t finish this sub-school within one month, we will definitely be punished by Tang Yixiu.” The disciples of the Yuangang School raised their cups together and drank merrily.

“Oi, I’m god damn talking to you! You brat, can’t you hear me?” At the same time, the bald big man facing Chu Feng was also angry.

Because, he told Chu Feng to leave this table, yet he had actually ignored him. That caused him to feel that he had no face and made things difficult for him.

However, because the Yuangang School disciples were there, he also didn’t dare to yell loudly. He put his mouth close in front of Chu Feng’s body, suppressed his voice, and fiercely threatened, “God damn, if you feign to be deaf and mute, do you believe that I will cut your ears off, and cut your tongue off?”

“Seeing that you just spoke some truth, today, I’ll spare your life.” Chu Feng smiled and said.

“What? You brat, you dare to threaten me? So shamelessly say that you will spare my life? You are truly looking to die!!” Hearing Chu Feng’s words, the bald big man gnashed his teeth in anger and he could no longer enduring his current fury. He extended his hand and wanted to grab Chu Feng’s clothes.

whoosh But suddenly, Chu Feng's body flashed and without the bald big man even clearly seeing what happened, Chu Feng had already disappeared.

When Chu Feng reappeared, he was actually standing on top of the table of the Yuangang School disciples. He asked, "Who can tell me where Tang Yixiu is right now?"

"Who are you?"

Seeing that, the expressions of the Yuangang School disciples changed and they couldn't help backing away one step. They cautiously inspected Chu Feng because his speed was really too fast. They didn't even feel it before, so they determined that Chu Feng was a martial cultivation expert.

"What? Is it possible that even you don't recognize me?" Chu Feng lightly smiled, and as he spoke, he extended his right hand and gradually took off the grass-weaved conical hat, revealing his elegant face.

And that appearance was exactly the same as the one on the wanted poster!!

"Yo.. You're Chu Feng?!" After seeing Chu Feng, the faces of the Yuangang School disciples who originally had nervous expressions instantly became even more wonderful.

“What? He’s Chu Feng?!!”

At the same time, the others in the tavern also noticed that situation. After detailed comparisons, they discovered that the one currently standing on the table was truly Chu Feng. That terrified the people in the tavern.

Many people were so terrified that they directly went under the tables and they were deeply afraid that they would be pulled down by the fight between Chu Feng and the Yuangang School disciples. The ones closer to the entrance directly broke through the doors and escaped.

But at that very instant, the one who had the most wonderful expression was still the bald big man. At that instant, he was lifelessly sitting where he was and his entire body was unstoppably trembling. The chopsticks in his hand fell and his originally already ugly face became even more incomparably ugly, showing obvious endless fear.

Because, just now, he insulted Chu Feng. He had actually threatened Chu Feng. That caused him, who believed that Chu Feng was very strong, to feel all of his hopes turn into ashes, and felt that he was very likely dead.

“Catch him! Catch him, then we can take the large reward! Even if we are the disciples of the Yuangang School, we can still obtain the rewards!” Suddenly, someone explosively yelled and one Yuangang School disciple took the lead to attack Chu Feng.

bang However, Chu Feng struck out with a single palm and that person's body exploded. He didn't even get to cry out before becoming a pool of blood, splattering at the surrounding walls and spilling onto the ground at his feet.

bang bang bang bang bang bang... Quickly after, Chu Feng threw out several more palms and with a blink, seventeen people turned into pools of blood and died horribly.

“Young hero please spare my life, young hero please spare my life!” At that instant, the face of the Yuangang Disciple who prepared to attack yet didn't turned as white as paper and his eyes were filled with fear.

Unhesitantly, he knelt onto the ground and endlessly knocked his head onto the ground while admitting his wrongs. Because, personally seeing the seniors that were just now standing around him alive instantly be turned into pools of blood by Chu Feng, he could truly not control the fearful emotion in his heart.

At that moment, he could feel how terrifying Chu Feng was. How was the young man who was only sixteen years old the trash that Tang Yixiu said he was? He was simply a little devil who was strong to the extreme and killed without blinking.

“I'll ask one more time. Can you tell me where Tang Yixiu is right now?” Chu Feng slowly walked on the table, and only after arriving at the end of the table did he crouch down and question the Yuangang School disciple endlessly knocking his head on the ground.



“I...I know! I know where Tang Yixiu is. But... If I tell you, can you spare my life?” That disciple was quite smart. He did not directly refuse to answer Chu Feng’s question, but he also didn’t directly tell Chu Feng where Tang Yixiu was.

“As long as you can show me the road, I will spare your life, and I will also reward you.” Chu Feng’s eyes slightly squinted and revealed a dazzling smile that lacked any evil.

But in the perspective of that disciple, no matter how he looked at it, he seemed more like a terrifying devil who was lightly smiling at him while embracing malicious intents.

However, he had no choice. Even if he knew that Chu Feng would possibly not spare him, he could only chose to lead the road for Chu Feng.

Because, he would at least have a chance to continue living. So, he stood up and said to Chu Feng,

“I am willing to lead the way. I don’t need any reward, and I only hope that you can spare my life.”

“I’m begging you, please don’t kill me. In my home, I still have a family of old and young. All of them need to rely on me to live. If I die, they will starve to death as well. Besides, I am only a tiny disciple. The school setting up wanted posters is unrelated to me in the slightest.”

“Don’t worry. I said I wouldn’t kill you, so I will not kill you.” Chu Feng grabbed that disciple’s shoulders, then quickly after, a burst of gale swept in. Chu Feng and that disciple had already instantly disappeared from the tavern.

After Chu Feng left, the tavern was silent. People were trembling from fright under the tables and no one dared to move.

After a long while, when there were still no movements, the two big men that hid under the table carefully climbed out.

However, after they saw the scene in the current tavern, all of them couldn’t help but gulp and their legs almost went limp, almost fainting away from fear.

Because, within the tavern at that instant, blood was everywhere. Not only on the ground. There was even blood on the walls and on the ceiling. That scene was indeed a bit horrifying.

“Big bro, big bro! Are you alright?” And when the two of them discovered that the bald big man was still lifelessly sitting on the chair, they were immediately shocked and they hurriedly ran to the bald big man’s side.

The current him had a lifeless face and the expression when he first saw Chu Feng still remained on his face. His eyes didn’t even blink, and only after a long while did his lips gradually shut and he opened his mouth to say, “He...he...he is indeed the same as what my nephew said. Very strong.”

poof After speaking, the bald big man's body tilted, his legs went limp, and he had actually laid on the table, and didn't move.

When the two other big men checked what happened him for a while, their faces greatly changed because they astonishedly discovered that the big man had actually died. He was scared to death.

# Chapter 407: Gift A Huge Present

---

In the sky, within the white clouds, an azure dragon flew past.

Chu Feng rode on the azure dragon while his left hand was carrying the disciple from the Yuangang School. He was following the direction the disciple said to go and hurrying.

That disciple was completely terrified. He never would have thought that Chu Feng, a young man in the Profound realm, not only could fly in the air, his speed was even so abnormally fast. He was even quicker than some Heaven realm experts he had seen.

He could truly not see through Chu Feng. He felt that the young man had no ends to his terror, and the more it was like that, the more uneasy he got because Chu Feng's strength caused him to feel too small, so small that he could not even take a single attack.

“Chu Feng you boy, you aren't truly planning on taking care of Tang Yixiu and the others right? They have four people there, and since there are the number one disciples of the four powers, who are titled as outstanding geniuses of the Nine Provinces' young generation, they will definitely have methods that normal people do not.”

“Right now, you are only in the 5th level of the Profound realm. Even if you use the power of the Divine Lightning, you are only in the 7th level of the Profound realm. It would still be fine if you fight against normal people in the heaven realm, but I'm afraid that there will be some dangers when facing against them four.”

Eggy already detected Chu Feng's intention so she hiddenly advised.

“The four powers, the Yuangang School, the Fire God School, the Hidden White Sect, and the Free and Unrestrained Valley, are currently putting up huge sums for the bounty. Sooner or later, I will go look for them to calculate some old debts.”

“Right now, since the four of them are gathered together, it is a rare chance. As for whether I can defeat them with my current cultivation, I am not too clear, but at least, I have to try right?”

“Putting aside that I can escape if I cannot defeat them, as they can absolutely not catch up to me, don't forget that I still have a few Attacking Talisman on me. With my speed, in addition to the might of the Attacking Talismans, they will not be able to defeat me. This time, they will die, without a doubt.” Chu Feng was filled with confidence and he vowed to take their heads.

“I can truly not do anything to you. But this is fine. Since the situation is already like water and fire, appropriately letting those few powers pay some prices is something that should be done.” Eggy seemed to helplessly shake her head, but on her sweet little face, a slight smile of yearning rose.

The Qin Province was very big, and there were many strong powers in there. Many second-rate powers were even much stronger than the Azure Province's Lingyun School, let alone the first-rate powers.

And within the many first-rate powers, there was one power that was very special. Even though most first-rate powers were very powerful, because of the existences of the Prestigious Villa and the Thick Ground Grass Prince's Mansion, they could only have some fame within the borders of the Qin Province.

However, there was this one power which was different from the others. Not only was it famous in the Qin Province, it was similarly also very famous in other flourishing strong provinces. Also, it received strong love and respect by male experts from many places, and this power even had a very interesting name. It was "Like Drunk or Dreaming".

The owner of Like Drunk or Dreaming was a mysterious person. No one knew who he was, and the members of the Like Drunk or Dreaming were all beautiful and extremely graceful females who had extremely high cultivation. They opened the gates, welcomed guests that came from everywhere, and they traded appropriate rewards with excellent services.

To that point, there was already a guess in many people's hearts. The so-called Like Drunk or Dreaming was actually a place of romance. In more unpleasant terms, it was a high-level brothel, and who they welcomed were [big characters](#) from the continent of the Nine Provinces.

"Gongzi" is a title for more noble sons, and didn't translate it because it sounds better untranslated. Also, the dialogues below use third-person in a way.

### [Slightly lewd dialogue](#)

"Ahhhhhhh, Tang Gongzi, you're so naughty~ Toying around with

me like that...”

“I like it! I’ll toy with you however I want to toy with you. Yell. Yell loudly! Quickly speak, speak the way how I instructed you to!”

“Ahhhhhhh, it feels so good~ Tang Gongzi you’re so good~ Zi Ling loves Tang Gongzi, and that Chu Feng can’t even be compared to Tang Gongzi! Ahhhhhh~~~~”

“Haha, continue, continue! Yell louder!”

Within a pink-coloured palace, Tang Yixiu was performing an indecent action with a coquettish female who was completely naked. The two of their naked bodies tightly wrapped around together and they were playing around to the extreme.

“Ahh, Brother Tang is still remembering about Zi Ling and he can’t forget. But quite sadly, perhaps that Zi Ling has already went to find Chu Feng and maybe the two of them have already coiled together.”

“Hmph. That Chu Feng really has some dog crap luck. He actually made Zi Ling love him so unwaveringly. He better not let me see him again or else I will definitely castrate him and throw his ‘second bro’ to the dogs.”

Within the middle of the palace, there was an exquisite table. Bai Yunfei and Song Qingfeng were sitting on the ground cross-leggedly and they were currently toasting and drinking merrily. In

their embraces, both of them hugged a beauty each that had a certain gracefulness and also not weak cultivation.

Also, surround them, there were many females who had incomplete clothing while circling around them. Some of the females poured wine for them, some clasped some food with chopsticks for them, some pinched their feet, and some massaged their backs. Their services were extremely thorough.

“Tang Yixiu, can you grow up? Zi Ling is only a young little girl. Other than her decent face, where else does she excel at? In terms of skill, where is she superior to the ladies here?”

Within the palace, there was a red-coloured big bed and thin fabric hung over the bed, concealing everything inside. Liu Xiaoyao was hugging two females with a naked body. He stuck his head out, and howled loudly at the nearby Tang Yixiu.

“Liu Gongzi, all of you talk about Zi Ling here and Zi Ling there. Is that Zi Ling truly that good for her to be unforgettable by you?” A naked female in Liu Xiaoyao’s embrace seductively asked.

“Haha, there isn’t a single good thing about that girl! She is not even comparable to you two.” Liu Xiaoyao laughed loudly, turned his body, and then pressed the two females underneath him.

boom But just at that time, a boom suddenly rang out from the shut palace door and at the same time, the big doors made out of special materials were actually shattered.



“Ahh!”

Quickly afterwards, several males were thrown in and all of them had pale-white faces with blood all over their bodies. They were the juniors from the same schools as Tang Yixiu and the others, and they were responsible for guarding the palace.

“Who?” The sudden change surprised the four people in the palace and all of them cast their sinister gazes towards the entrance of the palace.

“Oh? We have only not seen each other for a small period of time yet you can’t recognize me already?” Calm laughter rang out and Chu Feng had already entered the palace.

“Chu Feng?!” After seeing Chu Feng, the expressions of the four all changed and the killing intent in their eyes became even stronger. One of them coldly shouted, “Chu Feng, you truly have huge nerves. You clearly know that we are looking for you, yet you dare to send yourself to our doorstep!”

“Actually, the reason why I came to look for you is because I want to send a big present to all of you.”

“Oh? What big present?”

“Send you all to die!”

# Chapter 408: Battling Song Qingfeng

---

“Hahaha, I haven’t heard wrong right? Send us to die?”

“You? You, a little cultivator in the 3rd level of the Profound realm, dares to speak those words to us?”

After hearing those words, Song Qingfeng, Tang Yixiu, and the others madly laughed as if they heard the funniest joke in the world.

Even the females next to them laughed loudly. Their cultivations were also in the Profound realm, and they were basically above the 3rd level of the Profound realm. In their hearts, they similarly looked down at Chu Feng

“Chu Feng, watch this. Without even me attacking you, the beauty in my embrace can easily kill you.” Song Qingfeng pointed at the female he was hugging, then said to that female,

“Beauty, go kill this brat and nine hundred thousand Profound beads will be yours.”

“Song Gongzi, is that true?” After hearing those words, that female’s eyes flashed and she was clearly moved.

It was because she had the cultivation of the 4th level of the Profound realm, and she had heard that Chu Feng was only in the 3rd level of the Profound realm. So, if she truly attacked, she

would really be completely sure that she could kill Chu Feng.

“Of course it’s true.” Song Qingfeng nodded his head.

“Song Gongzi, we want it as well!”

“Me too! I want it too!” After hearing those words, almost all the females on scene were moved. Nine hundred thousand Profound beads. That number was too attracting, and not a single person could fight against it.

That number was already not a small one in front of a peak power, let alone female prostitutes like them.

“Haha, of course of course! The nine hundred thousand Profound beads will be given to whoever is able to kill him!” Song Qingfeng laughed and said.

At that instant, all of the females stood up and slowly walked towards Chu Feng. Their bodies were naked, and they were alluringly walking. Charming smiles were even on their mouths as giggling sounds came from them.

However, at that moment, in their bones, dense bloodlust permeated throughout. Although those females normally chatted and laughed, when they attacked, they were female demons who were cruel and ruthless. Female devils who didn’t blink when they killed.

“Scram.” However, before the group of females neared, Chu Feng’s sword-like brows inverted and he suddenly explosively yelled. A thunder-like voice resonated within the palace.

At the same time, formless killing intent also spread from Chu Feng’s body and the group of females were blown back.

“Ahh~~~”

Chu Feng’s killing intent was extremely horrifying and the females who had originally planned to kill Chu Feng were terrified and they constantly yelled out in fear. Hurriedly, they leaped with their alluring bodies and hid behind Tang Yixiu and the others.

“Song Gongzi, how is he in the 3rd level of the Profound realm? He is clearly in the 5th level of the Profound realm!”

“Not only that, the aura he gave off just now was very scary. I... I have never felt such an aura before. It was as if it wasn’t an aura that humans should have. It seemed... it seemed more like a bloodthirsty devil.”

With a single word of “scram” from Chu Feng, he caused the group of females who revealed killing intents before to tremble in fear and they lost all their temperament.

“Hmph. A group of useless things. He is but in the 5th level of the Profound realm, yet all of you get scared to this state?” Song Qingfeng waved his arm and pushed all the females who stuck onto

him to the side, then after that, looked at Chu Feng and said,

“Chu Feng, it’s time for new and old debts to be cleared. Speak, how do you want to die today? No matter what, I, Song Qingfeng, can grant you that wish.”

“You want to kill me? Do you have the capabilities?” Chu Feng disdainfully looked at Song Qingfeng and that gaze showed that he didn’t put him in his eyes at all.

“What an arrogant brat. If I don’t show some of my colours to you today, I’m not called Song Qingfeng.” Song Qingfeng was furious. He emanated his boundless Heaven power and instantly, it engulfed the entire palace. The aura of the 1st level of the Heaven realm exploded out with unstoppable might, and the entire palace trembled because of that.

“Die!!”

After exploding his own aura out, Song Qingfeng did not directly attack. He stood with both of his hands behind his back and stood where he was. With a thought, the Heaven power surrounding him was able to be used by him and it became boundless pressure as it swept towards Chu Feng.

rumble rumble rumble The formless pressure was like a violent storm that could shock the heavens. Layer after layer, they came pressing straight towards him. The power should indeed not be underestimated. At least, with Chu Feng’s current cultivation, it was impossible for him to defend against it. It had to be said that

Song Qingfeng's strength was even a bit stronger than the two Jie clan elders in the 1st level of the Heaven realm.

But Chu Feng who had prior preparations was not afraid. Lightning surged within his pupils and the aura within his body, as well as his own body, started to change enormously. With a mere instant, Chu Feng's aura immediately rose and directly went from the 5th level of the Profound realm to the 7th level of the Profound realm.

“Break!” After his cultivation was raised, Chu Feng first explosively yelled, then quickly after, abruptly threw out a punch.

That punch didn't have too much heaven-shocking might, but it was controlled perfectly and it contained extremely strong power. With a boom, it dispelled Song Qingfeng's Heaven power pressure and even Song Qingfeng's body swayed. He couldn't help but back two steps and he almost fell onto the ground.

“How is this brat so strong?”

At that instant, not to mention Song Qingfeng, even Tang Yixiu, Bai Yunfei, and Liu Xiaoyao watching the liveliness on the side tightly frowned and a hint of shock emerged into their eyes.

Putting aside Chu Feng's instant rise in cultivation, even if Chu Feng was in the 7th level of the Profound realm, according to reason, he shouldn't be able to break Song Qingfeng's attacking might. After all, Song Qingfeng was in the Heaven realm. How could those in the Profound realm fight against those in the

Heaven realm?

“You have a bit of skill, but let me see if you can still take this next one.” Song Qingfeng was truly angry because his attack was broken by Chu Feng, the brat he looked down at. It caused him to feel that he had no face and he was incomparably furious.

“Anger of the Fire God!”

This time, he no longer restrained himself and he used a rank 7 martial skill as an attack. When that martial skill appeared, the entire world shook from its might and even the palace made by special materials could not bear it.

With the violent tremble, countless cracks started to speedily spread and at the end, with a boom, the palace was shattered by Song Qingfeng’s martial skill’s might.

“Ahh~~~~~”

Within the palace, even the Profound realm females were unable to fight against the might and they were forcibly pushed back and they flew through the air. The ones with light injuries spat out blood, but the ones with heavy injuries had died on scene.

“What is happening?”

“Heavens! There’s people attacking in Like Drunk or Dreaming? Who has such big nerves? Don’t they know that the master of this

Like Drunk or Dreaming is the mysterious expert?”

“It’s Song Qingfeng! It’s the number one disciple of the Fire God School, Song Qingfeng!”

“And also Bai Yunfei, Tang Yixiu, and Liu Xiaoyao! These are the peak geniuses in the Nine Provinces’ young generation, people who has already stepped into the Heaven realm at such a young age!”

“No wonder. No wonder they dare to attack others here. With their statuses and strengths, even if they break the rules, I’m sure that no one would dare to do anything to them.”

The ones able to look for pleasure in Like Drunk or Dreaming were all big characters of the martial cultivation world. Every single one had exceptional strength, so after hearing that boom, they hurriedly stopped their pleasure seeking and ran out to see what was happening.



# Chapter 409: Manmade Strange Armament

---

“That’s not right! Look, the person who’s fighting Song Qingfeng seems to be a young man!” Suddenly, someone discovered that Song Qingfeng’s attacking target was a tender young man, and looking at his appearance, he even seemed a bit familiar, as if he was seen before.

“Tha...That young man... Heavens! Isn’t he the felon who’s on the wanted list by the current six powers, Chu Feng?”

“My gods! It really is Chu Feng! Why has he ran over to this place?”

However, when people recognized that the person fighting Song Qingfeng was Chu Feng, all of them were dumbfounded and they were greatly shocked.

Who was Chu Feng? Perhaps before the Marriage Gathering, no one knew, but after the Marriage Gathering, most likely many people in the continent of the Nine Provinces already knew who Chu Feng was.

After all, a person who was able to be wanted by the six big powers would not be a simple character, let alone a young man only sixteen years old. So of course, it was specially attracting.

“Wasn’t it said that Chu Feng stole away the Strange Armament discovered in the ancient remains which was discovered by the great powers? Why hasn’t he used it yet?” Seeing Chu Feng

continuously dodging from the attacking might of Song Qingfeng's flames that rose to the sky, and didn't return any attacks, some people expressed doubt.

“Oi, that's not the important part right? The important part is that Chu Feng's aura is the 7th level of the Profound realm. It's completely different from the cultivation stated on the wanted poster!” Someone astonishedly yelled.

“The 7th level of the Profound realm? Even if he's in the 7th level of the Profound realm, he shouldn't be able to fight back against a Heaven realm expert right? Right now, that Chu Feng is fighting against Song Qingfeng, who's in the 1st level of the Heaven realm!”

”Heavens! Could this mean that Chu Feng is also a monster? He is actually able to rely on the cultivation of the 7th level of the Profound realm to exchange blows with Song Qingfeng, who's in the 1st level of the Heaven realm?”

“That's right. I heard from a person who participated in the Marriage Gathering say that Chu Feng truly is a monster. He had once fought with Jie Qingming and almost defeated him!”

“Is it true or not? He's that strong?”

“Damn! This means that the million Profound beads stated on the wanted poster isn't as easy to earn as one would imagine!”

But when people discovered that Chu Feng wasn't suppressed by

Song Qingfeng when he fought with him, all of them were so shocked they couldn't take care of themselves.

“Song Qingfeng, your Fire God School's martial skill is only this? I'll let you experience the abilities of me, Chu Feng!”

Chu Feng had never used his full power. He was only using the bodily martial skill, the Imperial Sky Technique, to revolve around Song Qingfeng and he kept on dodging and defending. But currently, Chu Feng's heart changed and he was going to attack.

Because, seeing that there were more and more observers, he wanted to let those people see how he was going to kill off the four so-called geniuses.

swish

Suddenly, Chu Feng's footsteps changed and he no longer backed away. He no longer evaded to the side. He stepped forward, and he pressed towards Song Qingfeng who was at front.

“One brat. What abilities do you have? If you don't mind, show them! Don't think that I, Song Qingfeng, will be afraid of you.”

Song Qingfeng coldly snorted and with a thought, the Heaven power that encircled him started to change and it spun around his body. With a blink, it had actually became lumps of flames and at the end, it was condensed into a long flame snake and it headed towards Chu Feng who heading towards it.

“This attack is useless to me.”

Chu Feng did not retreat. Instead, he increased his forwarding speed and thought at the same time, causing the ultimate Secret Skill, the Black Tortoise Armor Technique, to be used.

boom

The fire snake attacked head-on and it opened its big mouth and swallowed Chu Feng. He entered the fierce flames, but how could it be possible for Chu Feng, who had the protection of the Black Tortoise Armor Technique, to be injured by flames like those?

He stepped greatly forward and ran within the flames. Very quickly, he arrived in front of Song Qingfeng and quickly after, Chu Feng threw a punch out. The fist that was covered with faint green-coloured armor dispersed the flames surrounding Song Qingfeng and fiercely slammed into Song Qingfeng's body.

hmm

However, Chu Feng's fist clearly stuck Song Qingfeng's body, yet he felt a gentle power dissolving his fist's power. The fist that could have originally directly caused Song Qingfeng to be heavily injured had actually only forced him a few steps back.

“This is?”

Looking carefully, Chu Feng's pupils suddenly changed because he astonishedly discovered that around Song Qingfeng's body, a layer of radiant armor appeared. It was that thing which stopped Chu Feng's attack.

However, that faintly radiant armor was clearly not a martial skill. It seemed more of a body of energy that got automatically released from a special treasure.

"It's those two bracelets huh?" Chu Feng's Spirit power quickly observed, and he discovered that the special radiant armor came from a bracelet on Song Qingfeng's left hand.

That bracelet was red-coloured and "defense" was written on it. On Song Qingfeng's right hand, there was similarly a bracelet like that, and that bracelet had "attack" on it.

whoosh whoosh whoosh Just at that time, three bodies flew over and stood by Song Qingfeng's side. It was Bai Yunfei, Tang Yixiu, and Liu Xiaoyao.

"Song bro, this brat is very strange. You alone will not be able to defeat him. It's still best for us four brothers to join hands to take care of him." Liu Xiaoyao said.

"No need. He is but a brat in the 7th level of the Profound realm. I, by myself, can take care of him. Just now, I was only careless so he got some small advantages." Song Qingfeng stubbornly refused.

“Just leave it. If it wasn’t for the manmade Strange Armament that the Jie clan gifted you, you would have taken quite a bit from that boy’s fist just now.”

“But on that topic, it seems like the gifts that the Jie clan gave to our school heads are quite useful. They are even better than what I imagined.” Tang Yixiu first looked at Song Qingfeng, then looked at his wrist.

At that instant, Chu Feng discovered that on their hands, all of them had two special red-coloured bracelets and hearing the words that Tang Yixiu said just now, Chu Feng roughly understood that the special bracelets should be the gifts given by the Jie clan in order to rope their several powers closer to it.

“Song bro, Liu bro is very correct. This brat is very strange and you cannot tangle with him. Or else, if he runs away later, that wouldn’t be good to deal with.”

“Let’s finish this off quickly and take this chance to test the might of the manmade Strange Armament. Didn’t Vice-chief Jie say that these bracelets are extremely magical, and something about attacking and defense as one, comparable to real Strange Armaments?”

“We haven’t had any chance to try it, so why not use this Chu Feng and test out its might? How about it?” Bai Yunfei also said.

“Sure, let’s quickly take care of this brat and not waste time speaking nonsense to him.”

Song Qingfeng attacked first. This time, the bracelet with the word “attack” on it had actually changed. A layer of red-coloured gas surrounded his body and his aura instantly rose. No matter if it was speed or power, it was several times stronger than before.

# Chapter 410: The Body Of The Heaven Realm

---

Song Qingfeng at that very instant was simply like a human-shaped weapon. Compared to the martial skills he used before, it was several times more terrifying. Even Chu Feng felt extremely huge pressure from his simple punch.

However, when Chu Feng, who came to this place in order to challenge himself to see how his current battle power was, faced that situation, he would naturally not shrink away. Similarly, he threw out a punch straight at Song Qingfeng.

boom The two fists collided and instantly, a boom rang out, causing layers of ripples to sweep by.

However, this time, Chu Feng felt his feet slip and quickly after, he was pushed several steps back by a burst of force. At the same time, numbing feeling came from his left hand.

Observing in detail, tiny cracks had actually appeared on the faint green-coloured armor that covered his left hand. Although the cracks very quickly disappeared, Song Qingfeng's punch still injured him.

“Chu Feng, even if you have wings, today, you will die!”

And just at that time, Bai Yunfei, Tang Yixiu, and Liu Xiaoyao also released the power of the manmade Strange Armaments. They did not use any martial skills, and with only their physical bodies, they attacked Chu Feng.



“Just on time.”

Chu Feng coldly snorted and the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens was already under his feet. With an azure flash, it disappeared, and when it reappeared, it was behind Bai Yunfei.

“Eat my fist.”

Chu Feng threw out a punch and as Bai Yunfei was caught off guard, he was struck. However, it was exactly the same as when he punched Song Qingfeng’s body before. Chu Feng’s power was dissolved by a gentle power, and that power came from the radiant armor.

“Dammit. Attacking and defense in one. Is it possible that it’s a replica of the Armor of Thorns?”

At that instant, Chu Feng lightly furrowed his brows because he had to admit that the so-called manmade Strange Armament that Tang Yixiu and the others used was indeed a bit troubling.

As he was taken aback, Chu Feng felt three auras nearing. Tang Yixiu and two others had already started to attack from behind.

However, Chu Feng was not too worried. He urged the azure dragon that he was stepping on forward and after dodging Tang Yixiu and the others’ attacks with strange speed, he changed his attacking style and suddenly threw out a palm.

roar

At that instant, the roar of a fierce tiger that could shake the mountains and rivers rang out from Chu Feng's palm. At the same time, a huge claw of a White Tiger came out and slammed towards Tang Yixiu and the others.

“Crap.”

Seeing the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique that was headed straight for them, even if they had Strange Armaments as protection, and even if their cultivations were in the Heaven realm, their faces still changed greatly because within the huge claw of the White Tiger, they felt extremely horrifying aura as if the one claw could shatter themselves.

At the same time, the three of them originally wanted to dodge but it was useless as the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique was too powerful. Not only did it have outstanding attacking might, its speed was even faster and it didn't even give them a chance to escape.

boom

An explosion rang out, and the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique had already fiercely slammed the three of them into the ground. The savage power instantly caused a huge pit to appear.

“Chu Feng, I will kill you!”

Seeing his three brothers being struck by such a terrifying attack from Chu Feng, Bai Yunfei felt that Tang Yixiu and the two others didn't have much luck. So, he was incomparably furious and he attacked Chu Feng once again.

“Hmph.” However, Chu Feng only coldly snorted. The azure dragon under him flashed, and very easily and casually, he dodged Bai Yunfei's attack. After that, another White Tiger Slaughtering Technique directly slammed into Bai Yunfei, throwing him towards the deep pit where Liu Xiaoyao and the others were.

boom Another White Tiger Slaughtering Technique struck, so another layer of berserk ripple spread and the deep pit instantly increased quite a bit in size. The nearby palace buildings almost collapsed from such shocking power.

Even many observing people were blown dozens of meters back by the might, and some with weak strength even spat out blood from the shock and almost died.

“Heavens! How is it possible for Chu Feng to use such terrifying might? Even four geniuses in the 1st level of the Heaven realm cannot fight against it?”

“It's too scary. The attacking might he used just now was even undoable by some Heaven realm experts.”

The people who personally witnessed Chu Feng's White Tiger Slaughtering Technique all had complicated emotions and they had tens of thousands of thoughts in their hearts. They were deeply stunned by Chu Feng's strength.

At the same time, bursts of strange heat started to be given off from the deep pit. The hate permeated the deep pit and rose into the sky. There was no way of seeing the situation in the pit.

In such circumstances, Chu Feng could only use his Spirit power to observe the state of the four people. However, when Chu Feng saw everything in the deep pit, he couldn't help furrowing his brows and a hint of shock flashed through his eyes.

At that time, four bodies suddenly shot out explosively from the deep pit. It was Tang Yixiu, Bai Yunfei, Liu Xiaoyao, and Song Qingfeng.

At that instant, the four of them more or less suffered some light injuries on their bodies and faces. However, they were only light injuries. Chu Feng's peerless attacking skill, the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique, had actually been unable to kill them.

"What's this? Even my White Tiger Slaughtering Technique can't harm them!" Chu Feng was very puzzled.

"That's very normal. They are in the Heaven realm, and the degree of strength of their physical bodies are far from being comparable to the Profound realm. Although you can use the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens to dodge their attacks,

and use the Black Tortoise Armor Technique to block their attacks, it will be very hard for the offensive methods you grasp to kill them off.”

“Besides, putting aside the strength of their physical bodies, the four of them even have a Strange Armament replicas right now. In this situation, no matter how much stronger your White Tiger Slaughtering Technique is, it will be very difficult to kill them. After all, you haven’t completely grasped the Secret Skill, the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique.” Just at that time, Eggy detailedly analyzed.

“No. I do not believe that I cannot break open their imitative Strange Armaments nor be unable to destroy their Heaven realm bodies.”

However, Chu Feng did not believe in that. He who had absolute confidence in his White Tiger Slaughtering Technique used it once again.

But this time, it was the same as last time. Tang Yixiu and the others did not dodge and they were struck head-on by Chu Feng’s White Tiger Slaughtering Technique. However, the result was the same as last time. The four of them only received some light injuries, and to Heaven realm cultivators, light injuries to that degree were simply not significant at all.

“Haha, what you just used should be the Secret Skill Vice-chief Jie talked about right? It is truly not simple.”

“But sadly, when this Secret Skill is in your hands, its might it should have can’t be displayed and it is simply a waste for it to be yours.” After successfully defending against Chu Feng’s attack, Song Qingfeng and the others had actually started to mock Chu Feng.

They already heard about Chu Feng from Jie Yan earlier and knew that Chu Feng grasped a Secret Skill heard in the legends. But at first, they only half believed and half doubted. After all, Secret Skills were truly only in legends, and in the current continent of the Nine Provinces, no one grasped it.

But at that instant, they believed it because when Chu Feng used the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique, they really did feel unprecedented might.

That might didn’t come from Chu Feng. It came from the Secret Skill’s tiger’s claw. It was might that was unique to Secret Skills. That situation was something they never felt before, so they were sure that it was the legendary Secret Skill.

“Ho... The Heaven realm is truly a wonderful realm. It is indeed completely different from the Profound realm, Origin realm, and Spirit realm.”

Suddenly, Chu Feng smiled relievedly. After retrying the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique yet it was still useless, Chu Feng didn’t continue trying. He opened his right hand, and said to the four, “Since your bodies are so strong, why not try my Asura Ghost Axe?”

# Chapter 411: Blood-Coloured Forbidden Medicine

---

hmm

After speaking, light flashed in Chu Feng's palm and a black-coloured huge axe that was two meters long appeared.

After the Asura Ghost Axe appeared, Chu Feng's entire atmosphere was completely different. He was covered by layers of black-coloured gas and it was as if he combined into one with the Asura Ghost Axe.

“The Asura Ghost Axe! That's the Strange Armament on the wanted posters which was discovered by the six big powers in the ancient remains?” Seeing the Asura Ghost Axe, everyone on scene were astonished.

Especially Tang Yixiu and the others. They tightly furrowed their brows and fearful looks flashed into their eyes because from the Asura Ghost Axe, they felt the aura of fatality. They firmly believed that the axe was even scarier than Chu Feng's White Tiger Slaughtering Technique. If they were cut themselves, they would definitely not have much luck and they would undoubtedly die.

“My brothers, the methods that this brat Chu Feng grasp are really too strange. His Asura Ghost Axe cannot be underestimated. We cannot be careless anymore. We need to take out the hidden trump card Vice-chief Jie gave us or else we will very possibly die here today.”

Suddenly, Liu Xiaoyao sent mental messages to the three others. As he spoke, he flipped his palm and a blood-coloured medicinal pellet appeared. Looking at its special shape, it was a Forbidden Medicine.

That Forbidden Medicine was different from others. It was actually wiggling, and as it wiggled, it even kept on making horrifying yells, as if it was something alive.

And after taking out the Forbidden Medicine, Liu Xiaoyao unhesitantly swallowed it. At that instant, his aura suddenly rose speedily and from the 1st level of the Heaven realm, he stepped into the 2nd level of the Heaven realm.

“God damn. We are actually forced by this brat to this state and need to use this taboo medicine.” Song Qingfeng and the others looked at the Forbidden Medicine on their hands. They couldn’t help but gulp, and there was some fear on their faces.

However, even though they were more unwilling to, in that situation, they also didn’t hesitate and one after the other, they all took the Forbidden Medicine.

After the Forbidden Medicine entered them, like Liu Xiaoyao, their auras extremely quickly rose and very soon, they climbed into the 2nd level of the Heaven realm. Also, blood-coloured gas was like wiggling little snakes as they coiled around their bodies and swirled. Even their hair started to vibrate and their clothes started to flutter.



“Everyone look! What did they just eat? Was it Forbidden Medicine? What kind of Forbidden Medicine is able to cause even their strength, which is in the Heaven realm, to greatly increase?”

The observers who personally saw everything all yelled out in surprise and they felt it was hard to believe. Because, even though Forbidden Medicine was strong, there was a limit and it was best for Profound realm experts to use them.

And even though Heaven realm experts could get some effects, it would absolutely not cause their cultivation to rise greatly, to even break through a level. Right now, Liu Xiaoyao’s and the others’ auras violently rose, and that was clearly not normal.

“Forbidden Medicine like those should only be able to be created by a Purple-cloak World Spiritist and right now, your continent of the Nine Provinces shouldn’t have any Purple-cloak World Spiritists. Even if there is, only the Jiang Dynasty would have one.”

“So, the Forbidden Medicine the four of them consumed can be counted as priceless treasures. It seems like they are truly going to stake it all against you.” Eggy said.

“Hmph. The 2nd level of the Heaven realm? That’s fine. If they are too weak, I won’t have any feeling of accomplishment.” Chu Feng lightly smiled, then quickly after, he suddenly waved his big axe. With a swish, a half-moon-shaped black-coloured blade of light flew out and fiercely rushed towards Liu Xiaoyao and the

others.

“Careful!”

The speed of the black-coloured blade of light was very quick, but Liu Xiaoyao and the others who had Strange Armaments and the cultivation of the 2nd level of the Heaven realm successfully dodged.

boom The blade of light missed and it exploded towards a distant palace. Instantly, a berserk ripple spread and the buildings on the road were all destroyed by the black-coloured blade of light.

“I heard that his Strange Armament is able to recognize its master. It seems like its might is indeed quite a bit stronger than Murong Yu’s Divine Wood Sword.”

“Brothers! Right now, there is no retreat. We need to throw everything we have towards this little bastard and let him know the power of us four brothers!” Liu Xiaoyao explosively yelled and immediately after, his body flashed and he became a blur of blood-red and flew first towards Chu Feng.

“You’ve come at just the right time.”

Chu Feng continuously waved the axe in his hand and the black-coloured crescent-moon blades of light filled the air and flew. But it could do nothing towards Liu Xiaoyao who had used the Forbidden Medicine. Not only did his strength rise, even his speed

multiplied and Chu Feng's black-coloured blades of light had actually all been dodged by him. Very soon, he arrived in front of Chu Feng.

In that situation, even Chu Feng's face couldn't help but change and he hurriedly urged the azure dragon under him to move quicker and dodged to the side.

“Dammit. It is clearly only two levels of cultivation difference from that day when I escaped the Prestigious Villa, yet there's a huge difference of the Asura Ghost Axe's might in my hand. It seems like even if this thing recognizes me as the master and becomes one with me, there is an inseparable relationship between my cultivation and wanting to use its full power.”

At that very instant, although there was no need to doubt the power of the Asura Ghost Axe, he could do nothing about its speed slowing. Facing Liu Xiaoyao who used Forbidden medicine and also had a Strange Armament, Chu Feng's Asura Ghost Axe could truly not do anything to him.

“Chu Feng, the might of your Asura Ghost Axe is strong enough, but sadly, it isn't useful when used by your hands. It is still best to give it to us so we can take care of it for you.” At the same time, Song Qingfeng and the two others also surrounded Chu Feng and attacked.

Seeing that, azure light flashed under his feet and he hurriedly dodged.

When they were in the 1st level of the Heaven realm, they were already able to cause Chu Feng's Black Tortoise Armor Technique to crack.

Right now, they had stepped into the 2nd level of the Heaven realm so definitely, they were able to break open Chu Feng's Black Tortoise Armor Technique and perhaps even kill him. In times like these, forcefully fighting against them would simply be idiotic actions.

But luckily, Chu Feng grasped the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens, the profound martial skill that infinitely neared a rank 9 martial skill. So, he had an absolute advantage in terms of speed. Even if he was not able to defeat them head-on, no one could be compared to his speed of escape.

Also, the truth was like that as well. No matter how much quicker Liu Xiaoyao and the others got, they were still unable to match Chu Feng. Even Jie Yan, who was in the 5th level of the Heaven realm, would be unable to catch Chu Feng, let alone them.

"Chu Feng, are you a monkey? You only know how to escape? Don't you grasp a Secret Skill? Don't you have a Strange Armament? Aren't you going to send us to our deaths? Try and fight us head-on!" Song Qingfeng and the others loudly insulted.

"Four bastards. Can't defeat me so you take Forbidden Medicine. Don't you have any shame? People in the 1st level of the Heaven realm can't defeat me, who's in the 7th level of the Profound realm? Do you have any face?"

As Chu Feng ran, he insulted back. It was called being relaxed. It was called being at ease. Chu Feng could use the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens to move quickly for several days and nights and he would be completely fine. It was simply Chu Feng's most convenient and quickest transportation tool.

If he used the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens to circle around Liu Xiaoyao and the others, he could certainly exhaust them to death. After all, not everyone had endless Profound power in their dantians like Chu Feng to infinitely support his martial skill

But Liu Xiaoyao and the others couldn't do it. They used Forbidden Medicine, and only because of that were they able to chase after Chu Feng. If the power of the Forbidden Medicine disappeared and the power of the rebound came, not to mention exchanging blows with Chu Feng, it was likely that they couldn't even stand stably. They would be like fishes on a cutting board, and they would be able to do nothing but let Chu Feng butcher them.

## Chapter 412: Despicable And Shameless

---

“God damn, this brat is doing this intentionally. He is waiting for us to exhaust the power of our Forbidden Medicine then attack us after that.”

“We cannot continue letting him burn us up like this or we will die! Quickly run! We need to leave this place!” Finally, Liu Xiaoyao was the first to respond to that as he hiddenly sent mental messages to the three others.

“God, this damn bastard. He is this despicable.” And after hearing Liu Xiaoyao’s mental message, Song Qingfeng and the others also came to a realization so without speaking more, they turned around and escaped into the distance.

“Want to escape? Hmph! Can you?” Seeing that, Chu Feng coldly snorted and while riding on the azure dragon, he chased after the four people.

“Why are they running? Is it possible that the four geniuses cannot defeat Chu Feng even after taking Forbidden Medicine?”

When they saw that scene, everyone who was observing were greatly confused.

But sadly, not a person on scene was in the Heaven realm so they could only watch as they saw Chu Feng and the others leave. They had no way of chasing, so it caused many people to sigh and shake their heads, expressing misfortune.

“God damn, don’t follow us!”

At that very instant, Liu Xiaoyao and the others had already flew away from Like Drunk or Dreaming but it was in vain as Chu Feng kept on closely following them. No matter how they turned directions, they could not get rid of Chu Feng because when comparing speed, Chu Feng was originally quicker than them, so how could they escape from him?

“Haha, you bastards, don’t run! See how your grandfather here will take care of you!” Chu Feng loudly laughed and as he swayed by the four people’s sides, he insulted them and even shamelessly pulled faces and made despicable finger gestures.

“Chu Feng, you better not get into my hands or else I will definitely make you wish to live yet can’t, and wish to die yet can’t!” Song Qingfeng and the others gnashed their teeth in anger caused by Chu Feng because they knew what intentions he had by following them. Clearly, he wanted to wait until their medicinal powers faded, and then attack them when they received the rebounds.

In a situation like that, the four also threw attacks at Chu Feng while still moving, but they were all useless and they could not catch Chu Feng.

Chu Feng had also thought of using the might of the Asura Ghost Axe as well as his absolute speed to attack them while they were caught off guard to directly kill them like that.

However, it was useless as even though the speed of the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens was fast, he could not control it as well as the Imperial Sky Technique. It was fine if he was escaping or chasing, but fighting close quarters was clearly not as easy. So, it was very difficult to use the Strange Armament to attack, and at the end, he concluded with failure.

Like that, Chu Feng and Liu Xiaoyao and the others acted like so: For a while, you chase me, I run; for a while, I chase you, you run. Like so, they repeated that over and over again for a full hour.

Finally, Liu Xiaoyao bit his teeth, then sent mental messages to the other three, “It won’t do if this continues and the four of us will die from this Chu Feng. Split up and escape. At least that way, three people can continue living.”

After speaking, Liu Xiaoyao turned, and he took off first to escape towards another direction. Bai Yunfei and Tang Yixiu also quickly followed and escaped towards other directions.

“Crap.” And because the others’ speed was too quick, when Song Qingfeng responded to the situation, the three had already left for quite some distance.

Then when Song Qingfeng turned his head around, he helplessly discovered that Chu Feng was still following himself. That caused him to be incomparably furious. He almost went mad as he roared,

“God damn, they’ve already ran away! Why aren’t you chasing



after them? Why do you have to keep on following me?”

“Because, you bastard, you were the one who cursed the fiercest. Don’t worry. Today, your grandfather I will kill you first. One day, your three other bastard brothers will follow you down.” Chu Feng laughed and said, but within his eyes, looks of killing intent surged.

“Damn. If you have the cuts, don’t escape and fight me head-on!” Song Qingfeng angrily howled.

“Nonono. You’re the grandson, I’m the grandfather. Fighting you would be bullying you!” Chu Feng shook his head.

“God damn! If you can, stand still and don’t run!” Song Qingfeng insanely threw attacks at Chu Feng as he was in mid-air.

“Comecomecome! Good grandson, come chase your grandfather! Chase your grandfather’s overwhelming back! Quickly chase and come!” As Chu Feng rode on the azure dragon and flew in the air, he patted his buttocks, angering Song Qingfeng.

“Dammit. Stop following me. God damn, stop following me!” Song Qingfeng no longer chased after Chu Feng. He switched direction, and escaped with extreme speed. But it was useless as Chu Feng very quickly caught up and he could not get rid of him.

“Bastard grandson, be obedient! Your grandfather is afraid that you will meet bad people so I’m here to protect you!” Chu Feng

smiled and said.

“Go die! In my entire life, it is the first time that I, Song Qingfeng, have seen a person as shameless as you! No, you’re not a person. You are a shameless little animal!”

“That’s right. Continue cursing. Curse louder! See how your grandfather will take care of you.”

“Chu Feng, damn your ancestor!!”

“Very well, I’ll remember that. I’ll give you a lesson in place of your ancestor.”

“Ahhh~~~~~”

Finally, after a while of talking, Song Qingfeng’s medicinal power faded away and the power of the rebound started to consume his physical body. Very quickly, he was unable to hold on and he fell from the air.

“Chu Feng, I...I beg you...Kill me. Kill me! I beg you! Ahh~~~~~”

After landing on the ground, Song Qingfeng started to fully suffer from the torment of the Forbidden Medicine’s rebound. With a mere blink, he became as thin and weak as a match. Both of his eyes collapsed inwards and he looked the same as an alive corpse. It was terrifying.

Looking at his appearance, he was clearly enduring torture that was even more painful than Chu Feng's that day. Song Qingfeng could not bear such torture, and he had actually begged Chu Feng to kill him.

"Eggy, what's happening? Why am I feeling his life force in his body disappearing right now?" Looking at Song Qingfeng with that appearance, Chu Feng felt that he had no need to attack because the torment of the rebound clearly caused more pain for Song Qingfeng than him attacking.

"The stronger the power the Forbidden Medicine brings, the price paid will be heavier as well. This is the consequence for touching upon forbidden power. Perhaps without you doing anything, he will be tortured to death by his Forbidden Medicine because his willpower is too weak." Eggy explained.

"Forbidden power? I wonder how that Yan Ruyu is doing now?" After hearing the word "forbidden", Chu Feng couldn't help but think back at Yan Ruyu. After all, what that girl cultivated was a Forbidden Mysterious Technique. At first, even her outer appearance changed and that power was comparable to Divine Bodies.

"Chu Feng, I'm begging you. Kill me. Kill me!" Just at that time, Song Qingfeng pleaded towards Chu Feng again. His tone became extremely petty, and his pleading came from his heart.

And seeing Song Qingfeng whose face turned deathly-white, his

appearance no longer seemed human, and his heart only wished to die because of the torment of the Forbidden Medicine, rare kindness rose from Chu Feng's heart. He walked to Song Qingfeng's front and said in a low voice, "Since it is like so, I'll grant you that wish. Remember, be a good person in your next life." After speaking, Chu Feng put his hand on Song Qingfeng's head.

"Ahh~~~~~"

At that instant, Song Qingfeng made another heart-tearing and lung-splitting scream because Chu Feng was currently absorbing Song Qingfeng's Source energy. He was stripping away his life.

Finally, Song Qingfeng stopped screaming and at the same time, his heart stopped beating, and he thoroughly died.

"How about it? Eggy, has your cultivation been raised?" Chu Feng impatiently asked after helping Eggy absorb Song Qingfeng's Source energy.

Because he was in a rush when escaping from the Prestigious Villa that day, after killing the two Jie clan Heaven realm experts, Chu Feng did not pick up their corpses to absorb their Source energies.

Because of that, Eggy quite often complained to Chu Feng. Even though Chu Feng knew that Eggy wasn't truly blaming himself and she was mostly joking. Chu Feng still felt sorry. This time, it counted as making up for Eggy.

## Chapter 413: Enemy Or Friend

---

“Not bad. I broke through a level so there’s only one level between you and me. Right now, I’m in the 4th level of the Profound realm! Heh~~~” Eggy sweetly smiled, and her smile was very satisfied.

But Chu Feng knew that the girl did that intentionally. She was afraid that Chu Feng had burdens in his heart, so she pretended to be so content.

Chu Feng was very uncomfortable in his heart. Even though he did not know how powerful Eggy was at first, he could imagine how extremely impatient an extremely powerful person might feel when they wanted to recover their original strength after losing their power.

“I’ll wait for a bit more in the Qin Province. If Zi Ling still doesn’t come and find me, I’ll leave this place and find some Evil Tombs. With that, not only can my own cultivation rise, Eggy, yours can become stronger as well.” Suddenly, Chu Feng spoke.

“Things like Evil Tombs can only be met by chance and not found. However, some places will definitely have some.” Eggy giggled and said.

“What places?” Chu Feng quickly asked.

“Most of the ancestors of some peak powers, powers that have been existing for a lot time, are existences with powerful and deep

cultivations. As the later generation, they are very respectful toward those ancestors. So, they would usually generously bury them and they would also send experts to guard them.”

“Not only are the remains in tombs such as those complete, many people even put large amounts of treasures to accompany the burial because it is a way to cherish the dead. It is a type of respect to the dead.”

“And I feel that other than Emperor Tombs in the continent of the Nine Provinces, the largest tomb should be the Jiang Dynasty’s tomb.”

“But the Jiang Dynasty is unfathomably deep and you also have no grievances nor hatred with them, so if you anger them with your current cultivation, it would simply be looking for your own path of death. Thus, I don’t recommend that.”

“Besides, tombs like those are mostly used by the later generation to respect their ancestors. They are completely different from the Evil Tombs and remains in the wild.”

“If you go open the ancestor tombs of others for no reason, it is the same as digging up their ancestor’s grave. Doing that is never too virtuous and I believe with your character, you may not be willing to do these kinds of things.”

“However, some powers can be exceptions.” Eggy giggled and said, but she didn’t make things completely clear.

“What you mean are the Fire God School, Yuangang School, Sword God Valley, Hidden White Sect, Free and Unrestrained Valley, and the Jie clan, which are currently listing me as wanted?” But how intelligent was Chu Feng? He had already understood the intentions that Eggy indicated.

“For now, leave the Jie clan. Putting aside that they have an old monster who is training in seclusion, you can’t even defeat that Jie Xingpeng.”

“But you can try out the Fire God School, Yuangang School, Sword God Valley, Hidden White Sect, and Free and Unrestrained Valley.” Eggy said.

“Fine. After a bit more time, if Zi Ling still doesn’t come to find me, I’ll leave this place to visit the ancient tombs of the Fire God School, Yuangang School, Sword God Valley, and Hidden White Sect.”

“Hmph. Since they join up to list me as wanted, want to take away my Strange Armament, and want me dead, I’ll go kill their young generation and dig their ancestors’ tombs.” Chu Feng made a firm decision. After a few more days, if Zi Ling still didn’t come to find himself, he would take revenge on the powers that listed him as wanted in the entire continent of the Nine Provinces.

Afterwards, Chu Feng cleanly looted Song Qingfeng’s Cosmos Sack and he discovered that the number one disciple of the Fire God School truly had quite some inventory on him.

He actually had 37500 Profound beads on him. Even when the head of the Fire God School came out, he would not have possibly brought so many Profound beads on him.

Certainly, the reason why Song Qingfeng brought so many Profound beads was for playing around unrestrainedly. After all, in a land of romance such as Like Drunk or Dreaming, it was not something normal people could afford to spend

Especially when the females Song Qingfeng and the others looked for were even the ones with extremely high cultivation. From what he heard, in that place, females with comparatively higher cultivation were more expensive. Perhaps only people like Song Qingfeng and the others could find females with that level of cultivation.

However, to the current Chu Feng, the 37500 Profound beads were not really anything. Even if he was just a tiny bit away from the 6th level of the Profound realm, the 37500 Profound beads were not enough for Chu Feng to break through. So, Chu Feng did not refine them. He stored them, just in case he needed them.

Other than the 37500 Profound beads, there were even ten low-quality Heaven medicine. Those Heaven medicine were a lot more valuable and their medicinal power was stronger as well. After all, what was contained within them was Heaven power, which was far above Profound power. However, because they were too few of them and they wouldn't have much use, Chu Feng similarly didn't refine them and he also stored them.

Other than the Heaven medicine, there were also some scrap



items. To Chu Feng, those things were all not too useful. But it had to be said that the two bracelets on Song Qingfeng's wrist were indeed treasures.

Chu Feng took them off to study them for a while. He felt that they were very possibly Strange Armament replicas that the Jie clan created according to the Armor of Thorns.

Although their might was very strong, they were clearly inferior to real Strange Armaments. Also, they required at least the Heaven realm in order for their uses to be displayed. If it was the Profound realm, there was no way of using them.

But even so, it still counted as a treasure. To the Heaven realm, those things had great uses so Chu Feng felt that even if he himself could not use it, the two bracelets would certainly be able to be sold for quite a nice price.

After finding no small number of good things on Song Qingfeng's body, Chu Feng turned around and searched for a while.

He went over mountains, trekked through water, and wanted to find Bai Yunfei, Liu Xiaoyao, and Tang Yixiu.

After all, the three of them also used Forbidden Medicine and right now, they should be receiving the rebound. If Chu Feng found them, the three of them would also doubtlessly die and the treasures on their bodies would also belong to Chu Feng.

But it was useless, as Chu Feng could not find any traces of them. It was as if they disappeared, so at the end, he could only give up.

Later on, Chu Feng hung Song Qingfeng's corpse onto a large tree. Also, on the tree, he engraved four big words. It was: "Killed by Chu Feng."

Chu Feng wanted to let the world know, wanted to let everyone know, that he killed the number one disciple of the Fire God School, Song Qingfeng. It was the price for the Fire God School listing him as wanted.

Indeed, in less than a few days after Chu Feng killed Song Qingfeng, his corpse was discovered by someone and that news also quickly spread. It first shocked the Qin Province, then quickly after, the nearby several provinces also knew about it.

However, there was one thing that caused Chu Feng to feel uneasy, and it was unknown whether it was a good thing or bad thing. It was that on that day, he clearly only killed Song Qingfeng and hung his corpse on that big tree.

But later on, he heard that it was not only Song Qingfeng. Li Xiaoyao, Bai Yunfei, and Tang Yixiu, the four people that were chased by Chu Feng and escaped all died, and also, all of them were hung on that big tree and they all died because of Source energy absorption.

So, the rumours went like so. Chu Feng who was currently listed as wanted by six big powers went to Like Drunk or Dreaming and

fought the four geniuses Tang Yixiu, Bai Yunfei, Liu Xiaoyao, and Song Qingfeng. The four geniuses were unable to defeat him, so they used special Forbidden Medicine, yet they were still unable to defeat him.

As they were helpless, the four geniuses could only escape Like Drunk or Dreaming, but ultimately, they were unable to escape from Chu Feng's demonic hands and all of them died miserably.

When that news spread, it was undoubtedly explosive. It was undoubtedly shocking. It undoubtedly stunned the Nine Provinces.

After all, the ones who died were the number one disciples of four big powers. They were named as peak geniuses in the young generation! Geniuses like them were all killed by a young man called Chu Feng. So, how strong was Chu Feng? How scary? That caused many people to guess vaguely and it became the most common topic in people's spare times.

Some people felt that Chu Feng was too impressive and was an outstanding genius. Some people also felt that Chu Feng was too terrifying. A person like that had to be removed, or else if they developed in the future, they would certainly become a bloodthirsty devil, very possibly causing all living things in the continent of the Nine Provinces to turn into dust.

But no matter how people guessed outside, Chu Feng knew that on that day, he only killed Song Qingfeng. The three others were absolutely not killed by him.

So, he was guessing. Who killed the three others, and was that person an enemy or a friend?

## Chapter 414: Hundred-Faced Old Man

---

Very quickly, the news regarding Chu Feng killing Song Qingfeng, Liu Xiaoyao, Bai Yunfei, and Tang Yixiu completely spread and almost everyone knew about that.

But after knowing, the ones who were most shocked were none other than the four powers: the Fire God School, the Free and Unrestrained Valley, the Hidden White Sect, and the Yuangang School.

Currently, they put up wanted posters for Chu Feng, but not only did they not catch him, their number one disciples even got killed by Chu Feng. To them, it was simply a huge humiliation.

Besides, Song Qingfeng and the others were disciples that their four powers very carefully developed for many years. Originally, they had heavy expectations for them, as they even planned to rely on them to lift up the banner of their schools to become the new masters.

But now, they were killed. And they were even killed by the same person. How could the heads of the several powers accept that? How could they endure it? How could they bear it?

On that day, after the four huge characters, the head of the Yuangang School, the head of the Fire God School, the head of the Free and Unrestrained Valley, and the head of the Hidden White Sect, parted from the Prestigious Villa, they gathered together once again and the place that they gathered at this time was the

Free and Unrestrained Valley.

“Are we truly going to invite that Hundred-faced Old Man to come?” The head of the Yuangang School asked.

“I also feel that it is not appropriate. We are the overlords of parts of the Nine Provinces! Right now, to chase after and kill a single person, we need to degrade ourselves to ask for a killer. If this gets known, we will become laughingstocks.” The head of the Hidden White Sect said.

“Right now, we have already become the laughingstocks that people discuss about. The wanted poster says Chu Feng is in the 3rd level of the Profound realm, but the strength he showed was the 7th level of the Profound realm. He also killed our four disciples that we had developed for many years. We...We truly have no more face.” The head of the Fire God School sighed.

“Face is small. It’s the lives of the four children that can’t be wasted for nothing. Although Xiaoyao isn’t blood-related to me, I have seen and treated him as my own son. Right now, he has died so wretchedly. How can I only watch and do nothing?”

“Although it will indeed not be too great if the news of asking for the Hundred-faced Old Man gets known, who will know that it is us who asked for him? As the number one assassin, will the Hundred-faced Old Man not be moved by our wanted posters rewarding a million Profound beads?”

“So even if we ask for him, from the perspectives of outsiders,

they will only feel that the Hundred-faced Old Man is unable to resist against the temptation of the reward and came out himself.”

“Besides, this Hundred-faced Old Man does indeed have some methods that normal people do not have. He is a Blue-cloak World Spiritist, and he’s even an expert in the 3rd level of the Heaven realm. The most important thing is that his methods for tracking people is peerless in the world. There are only people he doesn’t want to find, and none that he cannot. Right now, as we wish to kill Chu Feng, we can only ask for him.” The head of the Free and Unrestrained Valley said.

“That is correct, but his request is for us to pay five hundred thousand Profound beads first, then he would catch Chu Feng alive. Isn’t this price a bit high? If he grabs the money but doesn’t do the deed, what should we do? Wouldn’t we get swindled again?” The head of the Yuangang School worriedly said.

“Yeah! Originally, the sum of the reward for the wanted posters was paid together by six powers, but right now, the four of us joins hands to ask for the Hundred-faced Old Man and he wants us to pay five hundred thousand Profound beads in advance. However, we four powers need to tackle that sum. This is really not too safe.” The head of the Hidden White Sect also felt that it wasn’t too appropriate.

“The Hundred-faced Old Man is ranked as number one on the assassin leaderboard not only because no person who he wants to be killed remains living, it is also because he has an extremely good reputation. He only takes the reward. Other than the reward, he never takes any part that doesn’t belong to him.”

“Besides, those who died right now are four children who we carefully developed. They have already died, yet you are still quibbling about some Profound beads? Are these four children’s lives not worth a hundred thousand Profound beads?”

“If any of you feel that this matter is not appropriate, you can back out. My Free and Unrestrained is willing to handle these five hundred Profound beads alone.” The head of the Free and Unrestrained Valley was a bit angry.

“This...” The head of the Yuangang School and the head of the Hidden White Sect both looked at each other, being a bit speechless.

“My Fire God School is willing to put out money to ask for the Hundred-faced Old Man.” The head of the Fire God School spoke.

“Ehh, Free and Unstrained Valley Head, five hundred thousand Profound beads isn’t a small number. If your valley takes all that by itself, its financial power will certainly be greatly damaged and its vitality will be heavy injured. Let us four powers take it together.” The head of the Yuangang School smiled and said after thinking for a while.

“Yeah, it’s best for us to tackle the price together. We also want to avenge our child! Besides, we must get that Asura Ghost Axe.” The head of the Hidden White Sect also smiled.

“Since it is like so, this matter has been set. I’ll contact the



Hundred-faced Old Man right now.” As the head of the Free and Unrestrained Valley spoke, he took out a special birdcage from the palace.

Within the birdcage, there was a strange bird that was roughly the same size as an owl. The reason why it was called strange was because that bird had six wings.

The price of a bird like that was extremely expensive. Only big peak powers could afford to breed them, and they were a type of tool for sending messages. Their speed was like light and almost no one could be comparable. So, they had a name. They were called Delivery Birds.

However, that Delivery Bird was not bred by the head of the Free and Unrestrained Valley. It was given by the Hundred-faced Old Man. To be more precise, them asking the Hundred-faced Old Man to kill Chu Feng was, in reality, the Hundred-faced Old Man recommending himself.

“Everyone, I’m sure that you’ve all prepared the Profound beads?” The head of the Free and Unrestrained Valley took out a Cosmos Sack, and within it, there was already a hundred and twenty-five thousand Profound beads. He prepared it beforehand.

Seeing that, the other few also took out the Profound beads that they brought and put them in the Cosmos Sack. After confirming that there were five hundred Profound beads in the Cosmos Sack, the head of the Free and Unrestrained Valley tied the Cosmos Sack on the leg of the Delivery Bird.

“Free and Unrestrained Valley Head. Are you certain that it’s the Hundred-faced Old Man’s Delivery Bird and it isn’t someone borrowing it to trick us?” Seeing that, the head of the Yuangang School worriedly asked.

“Honestly speaking, my Free and Unrestrained Valley has done many trades before with the Hundred-faced Old man so I am very familiar with his Delivery Bird. This is the Delivery Bird that only he has. I am sure without a doubt.”

As the head of the Free and Unrestrained Valley spoke, he waved his big hand and the Delivery Bird rose into the sky. With a streak of light flashing away, the Delivery Bird disappeared and not a trace of aura remained.

Chu Feng still remained within the borders of the Qin Province. With a blink, several more days had passed yet Zi Ling still hadn’t come to find Chu Feng.

And Chu Feng was also not in leisure in these few days. He killed countless disciples and elders from the six big powers, and within them, there was even one Heaven realm elder.

Although the elder was also in the 1st level of the Heaven realm, Chu Feng didn’t exhaust that much strength to kill him when compared to killing Song Qingfeng and the others. So, Chu Feng ended up with a conclusion.

When his strength was in the 7th level of the Profound realm,

there was absolutely no problem killing a normal person in the 1st level of the Heaven realm. As for the 2nd level of the Heaven realm, as long as that person wasn't too powerful, he could still fight. But if it was the 3rd level of the Heaven realm, it was likely that he could only run.

## Chapter 415: Begging Old Beggar

---

But that wasn't the important part. The important part was that as Chu Feng was slaughtering the people from the six big powers, he also plundered quite a few resources. Also, in that period of time, Chu Feng even participated in an underground exchange in the Qin Province.

The so-called underground exchange was a place where many big powers of the Qin Province and experts from everywhere came to trade things. Many of those things very possibly came from dark places, but they were all priceless treasures. They were also the so-called "black goods", so that was why it was named as the underground exchange.

In the underground exchange, Chu Feng sold the pair of manmade Strange Armaments that Jie Yan gifted to Song Qingfeng. He got fifty thousand Profound beads from trading, so from that, it could be seen despite being only an imitation, the manmade Strange Armament was also priceless.

Yet the Jie clan had actually gave things like those, all at once, to the four powers. It could be seen that they were indeed roping those four powers with them. To be precise, it was five powers. After all, the current Sword God Valley also stood on the same boat as the Jie clan.

However, Chu Feng did not care about how the Jie clan got closer to the five powers. What he was joyful for was that the Strange Armaments sold for high prices, and in addition to the Profound beads plundered from Song Qingfeng before, Chu Feng finally

surpassed that tiny bit and successfully broke into the 6th level of the Profound realm.

Only after using roughly a million and a hundred fifteen thousand Profound beads did Chu Feng go from the 3rd level of the Profound realm to the 6th level of the Profound realm. Also, his current dantian was completely empty. It was like a bottomless hole, waiting for Chu Feng to find resources to fill it up.

Chu Feng knew that even though he was only one step away from the 7th level of the Profound realm, that step was extremely difficult. The amount of resources required was extremely, extremely horrifying. It would be several times a million Profound beads.

On that day, Chu Feng just killed another batch of Yuangang School disciples and hung their corpses on trees. Also, after leaving the four big words, “Killed by Chu Feng”, he put on a conical hat, entered a city, and prepared to rest for a while and eat a meal.

Even though the present Chu Feng was listed as wanted by six big powers, and was a criminal that everyone wanted to kill, Chu Feng was not afraid. Instead, he even wanted to meet people from the six big powers. As long as they had strength that was inferior to Chu Feng, he would kill them all.

If their strengths were too strong, Chu Feng could ride on the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens to immediately escape. The problem was that up until now, Chu Feng hadn't met anyone who could cause him to feel fear from the six big powers.

“Oi, what did you say? Another batch of disciples and elders died from the Yuangang School, and the sub-school they created in the Qin Province was completely destroyed by him?”

“I heard that Chu Feng is simply a butcher. He is simply a devil. The six big powers have quite bad luck to have angered him.”

“Ahh, if even the six big powers can’t do anything to him, wouldn’t Chu Feng have powers that could go against the heavens when he continues to develop in the future? If this goes on, he will become the second Azure Dragon Founder!”

“On that topic, I heard that Chu Feng came from the Azure Province. Didn’t the Azure Dragon Founder also come from the Azure Province? Why has the Azure Province produced a monster within monsters?”

“Yeah! The Azure Province has stayed in dormant for several hundred years. I heard that in these several hundred years, within the borders of the Azure Province, not even a single Heaven realm expert has appeared, but right now, a terrifying monster like Chu Feng shows up.”

“Not only Chu Feng. Isn’t there also someone called Zhang Tianyi? That Zhang Tianyi seems to be even more powerful than Chu Feng. A long time ago, he had already defeated Song Qingfeng, Liu Xiaoyao, Bai Yunfei, and Tang Yixiu.”

“Nonono, from what I see, Chu Feng is still the stronger one.

Although Zhang Tianyi defeated the four, Chu Feng killed the four! Also, Zhang Tianyi at that time had the exact same cultivation as Song Qingfeng and the others, and his age was very similar to theirs as well.”

“But Chu Feng is different! With the 7th level of the Profound realm, he defeated people in the 1st level of the Heaven realm. He is even a young man! He is truly defying common sense.”

“Why does it matter who is stronger? Both of them came from the Azure Province after all, but it must be said that the Azure Province truly shocks people surprisingly. After being dormant for several hundred years, two terrifying monsters appeared. They are fated to cause the continent of the Nine Provinces to go into chaos.”

Within a tavern, as people ate, their mouths weren’t doing nothing and with excitement that shot everywhere, they discussed things about Chu Feng.

Chu Feng sat within the tavern. As he drank wine and ate meat, he listened to others talking about his story and guessing his cultivation. It was quite an interesting thing.

In reality, in the periods of time recently, Chu Feng had already gotten used to days like these because no matter where, as long as it was a place with many people, the topic that people discussed the most was related to Chu Feng.

“Hmph. Chu Feng is not far from death now.”

Just at that time, a tall male walked in, and as he spoke, he slammed a wanted poster onto the table.

“Brother, why so? Could it be that the heads of the six big powers have come out?” After hearing those words, someone curiously asked within the tavern.

“The heads of the six big powers? A person even fiercer than them has come! Look at this everyone.” The tall male pointed at the wanted poster on his table.

“Heavens! This is?!” And after people curiously walked over and saw the contents on the wanted poster, not a single person wasn’t greatly shocked. Because, it wasn’t a wanted poster, but an assassination poster.

“It’s the Hundred-faced Old Man! The Hundred-faced Old Man titled as the number one assassin in the continent of the Nine Provinces! He has finally come out for Chu Feng?”

“This is quite bad for Chu Feng. I heard that this Hundred-faced Old Man is extremely powerful. Not a single person he wishes to kill can return alive.” They astonishedly said.

“Of course! The wanted posters of the six big powers aren’t much, but as long as the Hundred-faced Old Man’s assassination poster comes out, Chu Feng is not far from death. I believe that very quickly, news of Chu Feng being killed by the Hundred-faced Old Man will come.” The tall male confidently said.



“Hundred-faced Old Man?” After hearing people’s discussion, Chu Feng only lightly smiled and didn’t put it in his heart.

Other than Jie Xingpeng, within the five remaining powers, almost no one could cause Chu Feng to feel fear because no one was able to catch him. Even if they were the heads of the five big powers, it was useless, let alone the Hundred-faced Old Man who had an occupation of an assassin.

“Shooshooshoo! Damn beggar, scram! Don’t affect our tavern’s business.”

“Milord, can you be charitable and spare a tiny bit of food for me? I haven’t eaten in three days!”

At the entrance of the tavern, some explosive yells rang out. The waiter was pointing at an old beggar who had broken ulcers all over his body and loudly yelling to chasing him away. But that old beggar was knocking his head on the ground and painfully begging.

With Spirit power, Chu Feng detailedly observed the old beggar. From up to down, his body did not have a single trace of martial cultivation aura. He was a normal person who had never cultivated before. Also, he seemed to have truly been hungry for many days. His stomach was empty, and if that went on, it was likely he would starve to death.

## Chapter 416: Mad Murdering Demon

---

Chu Feng was not any saint because the world was so huge and there were countless unfair things. Everyday, there would probably be people who died because of being wronged. Everyday, people miserably met misfortune. No one could do anything about those things, nor did anyone have the time.

But Chu Feng was not also any evildoer. Since things like those happened by his side and it was within his range of ability, his heart could finally no longer bear it and he wasn't willing to put his hands in his sleeve and merely observe.

So, as everyone was too lazy to spare that old beggar an extra glance, and even hoped that the waiter could quickly kick him out so that their appetites wouldn't be affected, Chu Feng stood up, walked to the entrance, pushed away the waiter, then quickly after, propped the old beggar up and said, "Old man, come over to my place and let's eat together."

"Thank you milord, thank you milord!" Seeing that, the old man could break from all the happiness as he endlessly bowed with his hands cupped in front.

After coming to Chu Feng's table, the old beggar started to stuff himself with food with speed that was like a gale sweeping away clouds in the sky. He had actually, by himself, cleanly finished Chu Feng's table of good dishes.

"Old man, no rush. Slowly eat. Today, eat until you're full and

it's all on me." Chu Feng lightly smiled, and after, said to the waiter, "Waiter, bring a few more fulfilling dishes!"

Hearing those words, the old beggar suddenly gratefully smiled and said to Chu Feng, "Young man, you are truly a good person. But sometimes, good people may not be rewarded."

whoosh

After speaking, the old man's gaze suddenly flashed and his originally benevolent and weak face changed. It became an extremely sinister complexion, and even though he still had the appearance of an old man, the feeling he gave others was already completely different.

At the same time, the aura of the 3rd level of the Heaven realm was emanated out from the old man's body. A layer of blue-coloured Spirit Formation also encircled Chu Feng's surroundings and sealed the tavern.

The sudden change caused Chu Feng to be greatly shocked. He hurriedly leaped back and kept a certain distance with the old man, then loudly asked, "Who are you?"

whoosh The old man did not directly reply. He opened his hand, and the assassination poster that the tall male put on the table entered his hand. Quickly after, he said to Chu Feng, "I take the money of others to remove the misfortune of others. Number one in the assassination world, the Hundred-faced Old Man is me."

“What? Hundred-faced Old Man?” Only at that instant did the others in the tavern slowly come to their sense. After hearing the old man’s words, people were undoubtedly astounded and instantly, they trembled from fright and kept on shrieking. They originally wanted to escape, it was useless as the tavern was completely sealed and they had no places to escape.

“So you’re the Hundred-faced Old Man. You indeed have some methods to be able to find me.” Seeing that, Chu Feng also no longer hid. He took off the conical hat on his head and revealed his true appearance.

“Heavens! He...He’s Chu Feng?!” And after seeing Chu Feng’s face, the originally endlessly shocked crowd were frightened into being dumbfounded.

Because, this was equal to two devils, who were the most infamous and had killed countless people in the continent of the Nine Provinces, appearing in front of their faces. If those two fought, wouldn’t all of them die?

hmm Just at that time, with a thought, the aura that the Hundred-faced Old Man gave off became strangely berserk. It had actually become pressure and it shattered everything from stress within the tavern. Even the innocent customers there were directly crushed into pools of blood.

“The people who have seen my true face must all die.” As he willed, after killing all other customers in the tavern, the Hundred-faced Old Man calmly smoke. There was no change on his face, as if the ones he killed were only ants and not worthy for him to show

any pity.

“What a savage old thing. An existence like you is the true evil. Today, I, Chu Feng, shall perform righteousness for the heavens and remove an old animal like you.”

Although the pressure of the 3rd level of the Heaven realm was strong, it was unable to suppress the current Chu Feng. At the present, Chu Feng was in the 6th level of the Profound realm, and when the power of his two lightning was added, he was in the 8th level of the Profound realm. With that cultivation, those in the 2nd level of the Heaven realm would have no way of defeating Chu Feng and he could definitely fight someone in the 3rd level of the Heaven realm.

boom With a thought from Chu Feng, boundless pressure descended from the sky. Even the blue-coloured Spirit Formation the Hundred-faced Old Man laid trembled.

Quickly after, a golden-coloured longsword appeared in Chu Feng's hand. When that sword appeared, bursts of dragon roars instantly sounded. It was the martial skill Chu Feng got from the Void School that day, the Blade of the Void Dragon's Cry.

“A rank 7 martial skill has already been mastered. Not bad. Your talent is indeed special, and you are a rare martial cultivating genius.”

“But sadly, the person you face is me. It's not that I look down at you, but with methods like yours, don't even think of fighting

against me. It would be better if you took out your Asura Ghost Axe, then perhaps I would leave you with a complete corpse.” The Hundred-faced Old man smiled and said. He was not feared at all when facing Chu Feng’s Blade of the Void Dragon’s Cry. He even disdained it.

“So you’re here for my Asura Ghost Axe.” Chu Feng lightly furrowed his brows. He felt that the old man was indeed not simple. He was an old fox who killed innumerable people and was also incomparably sinister.

“A single Strange Armament is priceless. How can it be bought with a million Profound beads?”

“Although I have always believed in honesty when taking assassination jobs, when facing a Strange Armament, even my heart will itch. So, I will take your life, and I will also take your Strange Armament.” The Hundred-faced Old Man had an appearance of “confident in victory”.

“Want to take away my Strange Armament? Want to take away my life? That’ll depend if you have the abilities or not.” Chu Feng stepped forward and his entire body became a blur of light. The Blade of the Void Dragon’s Cry in his hand directly stabbed towards the Hundred-faced Old man’s throat area.

hmm

However, just as Chu Feng’s Blade of the Void Dragon’s Cry was not even half an inch away from the Hundred-faced Old Man’s

throat, he raised his palm, extended two fingers, and trapped Chu Feng's blade in between his fingers.

“No matter how much stronger martial skills are, they are only trash. Your martial skill condensed by Profound power wants to touch my body of the Heaven realm? Truly foolish thinking.” The Hundred-faced Old Man strangely smiled, then afterwards, a burst of Heaven power came from his two fingers and had actually shattered the blade in Chu Feng's hand.

At the same time, strong force also swept towards Chu Feng, causing him to continuously fall back and he almost fell down.

“How is this possible? Why is this old man so strong?” Chu Feng tightly frowned. He discovered that the Hundred-faced Old Man, no matter if it was the degree of strength of his Heaven power or his true battle power, they were both exceptionally strong and it was absolutely not comparable to ordinary people in the 3rd level of the Heaven realm.

“I entered an assassination camp at the age of five, killed at the age of six, killed all thirty-three companions who were also receiving training at the age of seven, and became an assassin at the age of eight. I am the quickest person to become an assassin in the history of the assassination camp.”

“In my career as an assassin, I have killed a total of 338,541 people, exterminated 871 clans, and climbed back up countless times from the border of life and death. The battle skills that I have sharpened. The life and death tests that I have experienced. How can they be compared to a doll like you?”

“Don’t think that you can fight toe-to-toe with me just because you cultivated high-level Mysterious Techniques, because you grasp peerless Secret Skills, and because you grasp a Strange Armament that can recognize its master, with your cultivation of the 8th level of the Profound realm.”

“In front of me, you are like an ant. I can take your life whenever I wish to and you have no place where you can escape to.” The Hundred-faced Old Man’s eyes were like blades and killing intent flooded everywhere. The atmosphere of his entire person became extremely terrifying. This was a true executioner. A mad murdering demon who had his hands stained by countless people’s blood.



## Chapter 417: Battle Of Wits

---

“Killing intent like this isn’t formed by the accumulation of one or two days. Only after killing countless experts can one have such killing intent. So this is the most powerful one within assassins?”

At that instant, even Chu Feng tightly frowned because he could feel that the killing intent of the Hundred-faced Old Man was no joke. That old man truly had strength that could kill him.

“Since it is like so, I’ll grant you your wish. I’ll let you experience the power of my Asura Ghost Axe.”

Chu Feng coldly smiled, then light flashed in his right hand. The Asura Ghost Axe was grasped within his palm. At the same time, he waved his axe and a black-coloured blade of light appeared and rushed towards the Hundred-faced Old Man.

The tavern wasn’t really big and at such a distance, with such boundless attacking might, the Hundred-faced Old Man almost didn’t have any place to dodge. However, he did not panic. Without fear, and with a thought, a layer of blue-coloured Spirit Formation surged out of his brain and appeared in front of him.

boom

An explosion rang out and a burst of ripple spread. The Spirit Formation the Hundred-faced Old Man condensed out and had actually blocked Chu Feng’s black-coloured blade of light.

But at the same time the Hundred-faced Old Man blocked Chu Feng's attack, he had already spun around, and while holding an Attacking Talisman, he broke through the Hundred-faced Old Man's Spirit Formation, became a line of light, and flew out of the tavern.

The Hundred-faced Old Man was not simple. With Chu Feng's current strength, it was very difficult to gain advantages if he exchanged blows with him. Before having absolute assurance, it would be wise for him to escape first. So, from the start, he had never planned to truly fight with the Hundred-faced Old Man. He had planned to escape.

“Crap. He laid Spirit Formations beforehand.”

However, just as he flew out of the tavern, Chu Feng stopped in the air because he astonishedly discovered that outside of the tavern, there were even more Spirit Formations. The Hundred-faced Old Man had actually laid Spirit Formations in advance.

Also, there were many Spirit Formations. There were absolutely not only one or two. There were at least a dozen or so and it sealed the city, binding Chu Feng within it.

“What a cunning brat. However, how could I, who have seen your terrifying speed before, have no precautions before coming over to you and attacking?” Just at that time, the laughter of the Hundred-faced Old Man rang out again.

“You’ve seen me before?” Chu Feng tightly furrowed his brows. He felt like the Hundred-faced Old Man seemed to understand him quite clearly.

“Haha, without hiding anything, I am the master of Like Drunk or Dreaming. On that day, when you fought Song Qingfeng and the others, I was on the side watching. I already know your methods clearly in my heart.”

“You grasp two peerless Secret Skills. One is faint green-coloured armor that can protect your body, the other is a white-coloured tiger’s claw that contains slaughtering power. However, your strength is too weak and you are still unable to use the true power of these peerless Secret Skills. Right now, what your strongest thing is should be speed, as you grasp an azure-coloured bodily martial skill that looks like a dragon.”

“That martial skill is extremely quick. I have never seen such a profound bodily martial skill, so I believe that it has surpassed rank 8 and is a rank 9 martial skill.”

“However, although that martial skill is fast, it is only suitable for chasing and escaping. It cannot be used freely as it cannot change agilely in battle.” The Hundred-faced Old Man indifferently said. Indeed, he understood Chu Feng’s things extremely clearly.

“Haha, you do quite thoroughly understand my abilities, but since you know that I can run very quickly, do you think you can catch me in this sealed space?” Chu Feng lightly smiled and said.

“What you’re saying is that my speed of laying Spirit Formation isn’t as fast as you running?” The Hundred-faced Old Man smiled and asked.

“Try and you will know.”

whoosh

Chu Feng explosively yelled and the azure dragon under him had already flew and became a line of light as he started to speedily run in the sky.

And at the same time, the Hundred-faced Old Man also willed and laid Spirit Formations as he wished to and wanted to envelop Chu Feng. But he could do nothing as the speed of him laying Spirit Formations was truly not as fast as Chu Feng’s running.

“You are fast enough, but if I shrink the Spirit Formation that is sealing you, no matter how much faster you run, where can you go?”

The Hundred-faced Old Man was not agitated. He no longer chased after Chu Feng. He landed on the ground, and started to change the Spirit Formation he laid beforehand.

Indeed, after he changed it, the Spirit Formation that originally sealed that area had actually started to quickly shrink. That caused Chu Feng to gradually become a bird in a cage because in that land,

he no longer had space to freely fly.

“Haha, run! Keep on running! Let me see how you will still run!” Seeing Chu Feng who was forced to fly lower and lower and closer and closer because of his Spirit Formation, the Hundred-faced Old Man laughed loudly.

“Dammit, dammit!” In that situation, Chu Feng started to endlessly wave his Asura Ghost Axe to strike the Spirit Formation that became smaller and smaller as he tried to escape the bindings of the Spirit Formation because if that went on, he would have no place to escape and he would easily be killed by the Hundred-faced Old Man.

But it was useless. The Hundred-faced Old Man was truly not simple. Not only was his battle power very strong, even the Spirit Formation he laid was abnormally firm and Chu Feng was unable to use the Asura Ghost Axe to break it apart.

“Give up. In order to prevent you from escaping, I have refined no small number of Spirit Formation Rocks for these Spirit Formations. Their degree of firmness definitely surpasses your imagination.”

As the Hundred-faced Old Man spoke, he stopped changing the Spirit Formation and rose into the air.

Because of the distance of space, he could already freely attack. With such distance, no matter how much quicker Chu Feng’s speed was, he would be within his range of attack.

“Die.”

As he spoke, the Hundred-faced Old Man grabbed. From his palm, countless Spirit Formation chains explosively shot out and the Spirit Formation chains interweaved and at the end, had actually become a big Spirit Formation hand that was as sinister as a snake, and it aimed to grab Chu Feng.

“Dammit.” Seeing that, Chu Feng hurried steered his azure dragon to evade because the Spirit Formation hand’s might did not allow for any underestimation. If he got caught, he would very possibly be forcibly crushed to death.

“Haha, run! Continue running! Let me see how long you can run for.” Seeing that, the Hundred-faced Old Man laughed and he also extended his other hand. Another big hand formed by Spirit Formation chains flew out and also aimed to grab Chu Feng. It was like a game of cat and mouse, and he was even smiling so intensely.

“Dammit.”

In the very small space, even if Chu Feng’s speed was quicker, he would certainly receive restrictions. In a situation like that, the Hundred-faced Old Man’s two Spirit Formation hands forced their way closer and closer, and very soon, they were going to catch up to Chu Feng.

whoosh

But just as the Spirit Formation hands were going to grab onto him, a strange angle rose from the corners of Chu Feng's mouth.

Quickly after, Chu Feng's right hand's Asura Ghost Axe was grasped once again and the azure dragon under him turned, and unexpectedly, it flew towards the direction of the Hundred-faced Old Man. Its speed of turning was extremely fast, as if it wasn't restricted by anything.

With such a distance, Chu Feng's speed was simply comparable to the speed of light. Almost with a blink, he arrived in front of the Hundred-faced Old Man.

At that instant, the face of the Hundred-faced Old Man changed greatly. However, he was also not someone who was feeble. He, who was a Blue-cloak world Spiritist, noticed Chu Feng's intentions almost immediately when Chu Feng turned.

So, his footsteps changed and baguas appeared when he stepped. He became a blur of light, and with clever angles, he escaped outwards.

He did that because he had seriously studied Chu Feng's Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens. He knew that despite the martial skill had very quick speed, it had a weakness. It was unable to agilely change directions, and even more so, he was unable to freely turn. As long as the direction he escaped towards was tricky enough, Chu Feng should not even think of getting near him.

whoosh

But just as the Hundred-faced Old Man evaded Chu Feng's attack, he had actually followed him as he also changed directions along with him, as if he was a shadow. How did the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens even have a weakness? Clearly, it had already been thoroughly grasped by Chu Feng and became one of his moves in battle.

With the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens, almost with a blink, Chu Feng caught up to the Hundred-faced Old Man. Also, the Asura Ghost Axe was in his hand, and with wind-tearing sounds and its unique horrifying pressure, it unrestrainedly chopped towards the body of the Hundred-faced Old Man.



# Chapter 418: Bet Everything

---

“Crap, this boy can already agilely control that magical bodily martial skill! I’ve been tricked!!”

Only then did the Hundred-faced Old Man come to a realization and knew that he fell for the trick because Chu Feng was already able to control the Dragon Travelling Through Nine heavens however he wished to and use it in battle. Before, the reason why he escaped towards all places was to diminish the Hundred-faced Old Man’s heart of alert to make this strange attack.

Even though the Hundred-faced Old Man was surprised by Chu Feng’s move, he was no ordinary person. He who had extremely abundant fighting experience was only lightly taken aback before he hurriedly thought, causing a layer of blue-coloured Spirit Formation to surge out and it formed in front of him.

However, he never would have thought that in such a crucial moment, an Attacking Talisman would appear in Chu Feng’s left hand and the Attacking Talisman had landed on the Spirit Formation he condensed out.

That Attacking Talisman was created by Vice-head Gao. Its might was extremely strong and it could even break open the Spirit Formations that Jie Yan laid. The Hundred-faced Old Man’s Spirit Formation had no way of fighting back.

boom An explosion rang out and the Hundred-faced Old Man’s Spirit Formation had been broke open. At the same time, Chu

Feng's Asura Ghost Axe had fiercely chopped onto the body of the Hundred-faced Old Man.

“Ahh!”

A painful cry rang out and a thin line of blood gushed out. The Hundred-faced Old Man became a line of light and fell. At the end, he fiercely fell onto the ground underneath and a deep, huge pit was created. Some dense smoke also charged into the air.

“That's not right.” However, Chu Feng who had extremely sensitive Spirit power did not feel happy because he struck the Hundred-faced Old Man. Instead, he tightly furrowed his brows and tightly stared at the rolling smoke underneath and a hint of uneasiness rose from his heart.

Because, he astonishedly discovered that as his axe chopped onto the body of the Hundred-faced Old man, there was some power that dissolved the might of his attack and caused the power of the Asura Ghost Axe to be unable to be fully used. Chu Feng didn't kill the Hundred-faced Old Man from that chop of the axe.

“Damn cunning brat. If I didn't have this Strange Armament as protection, I would have taken quite a hit.”

Indeed, just as Chu Feng felt that something was off, the Hundred-faced Old Man became a line of light and from the rolling dense smoke, he gradually rose into the air.

There were still traces of blood on the corners of the current him. His face was also a bit white and there was also a blood wound on his chest, but he did not receive the fatal blow.

Also, there was a layer of radiant armor surrounding his body. Looking at its appearance, it had the exact same effect as the bracelets Song Qingfeng and the others used. Without a doubt, it was the radiant armor that saved his life.

“Bai Yunfei, Liu Xiaoyao, and Tang Yixiu were killed by you?” Chu Feng’s eyes glittered as he loudly questioned.

“That’s right. They were all killed by me. I intentionally killed them, then pushed the crime onto your head to cause the four big powers to be greatly angry at the same time. Then, I recommended myself so they would ask for me to kill you.” The Hundred-faced Old Man replied.

“So it’s like this. But I don’t understand. If you want to kill me, you could have done it back then. Why did you need to wait until now? Also, if you want the reward, you could have gotten it after you killed me. Why did you need to so troublingly recommend yourself?” Chu Feng puzzledly asked.

“The reason is very simple. I want your Strange Armament, but I also want the reward. So, I got them to pay me half of the reward first then I would kill you afterwards. With this, even if I go back on the contract, I won’t lose much.”

“But the four big powers aren’t idiots. No matter how much

better my reputation is, they wouldn't give me five hundred thousand Profound beads for no reason at all. After all, even to them, it is not a small number."

"So, I had to make them more furious so they impatiently wanted to kill you without being able to wait for a single moment."

"And currently, I have already succeeded. Right now, the last step is to take away your life and take your Strange Armament." The Hundred-faced Old Man said.

"That means you have five hundred thousand Profound beads on you?" Chu Feng intentionally asked after a thought in his heart.

"Haha, boy, you aren't thinking about my Profound beads right?" Hearing the implications within Chu Feng's words, the Hundred-faced Old Man couldn't help but loudly laugh and within his laughter, mock was filled.

"Actually, I want to say that I'll be taking your five hundred Thousand Profound beads."

whoosh

Suddenly, Chu Feng leaped, became a line of light, and flew straight towards the Hundred-faced Old man.

"Hmph. You think that I, right now, will still be afraid of you?" However, the Hundred-faced Old Man was not afraid in the

slightest and he had actually flew back towards Chu Feng

boom boom boom boom boom

With a blink, the two of them fought together. Ripples of powerful energy constantly exploded in the sky, and they were as striking as fireworks.

That scene caused the citizens in the city who were looking to be dumbstruck. At present, the city was sealed by layers of Spirit Formation and the people in the city could not escape. At first, they didn't know what was happening, but after seeing Chu Feng and the Hundred-faced Old Man in the sky, they finally knew what was happening.

So the Hundred-faced Old Man was there to chase after Chu Feng, and that city became the battlefield of the two people. But luckily, the Hundred-faced Old Man laid many Spirit Formations, and to limit Chu Feng's speed, he even specially shrunk the range of the Spirit Formation inside.

That also caused their circle of battle to shrink, causing the citizens within the city to not be affected. Or else, with their strengths and after a while of great battle, the city would certainly be flattened and the citizens of the city would also die.

With the manmade Strange Armament, the Hundred-faced Old Man's speed and power increased greatly. They were even several times stronger than before, and he who was extremely practiced in Spirit Formation techniques was already one with attack and

defense.

As for Chu Feng, the attacking might of him, who grasped a Strange Armament, was also not to be underestimated. Especially when joined with his absolute speed, even the Hundred-faced Old Man didn't dare to be careless.

The battle between the two was extremely intense. With the cultivation of the 8th level of the Profound realm, and with special methods and outstanding skills, the result of the battle was extremely difficult to determine when he was fighting the Hundred-faced Old man, the number one assassin in the 3rd level of the Heaven realm. An ending did not appear even after battling for several hours.

“Brat, I must admit that you are a genius. Being already so outstanding at this age, if you step into the Heaven realm in the future, perhaps even the Jiang Dynasty must look at you straight.”

“But sadly, today, you will die by my hands. My patience has been completely whittled away and I don't that time to continue fooling around here with you. Let's quickly finish this.”

The Hundred-faced Old Man flashed and got rid of Chu Feng. Quickly after, he landed underneath and changed the Spirit Formation once again.

He wanted to shrink the battle space even more so that Chu Feng would not have a strand of chance to escape. With that, he could easily put Chu Feng to death.

“Dammit. It seems like I can only use that to give it a try.”

Chu Feng was quite smart so he immediately understood the Hundred-faced Old Man’s intentions. He first swept his gaze for a while, then after looking at the city that was covered by layers of Spirit Formations, quickly after, his gaze suddenly turned fierce and he leaped, then dashed towards the Hundred-faced Old Man who was changing the Spirit Formation.

## Chapter 419: Illusion Method

---

“Hmph. You want to stop me from changing the formation? He is useless. I, as a Blue-cloak World Spiritist, in terms of defense methods, am far above you. Don’t even think of touching me.” The Hundred-faced Old Man coldly snorted. A layer of blue-coloured Spirit Formation surrounded him and protected him inside.

“The final two Attacking Talismans. Victory or defeat will be decided by this.”

However, Chu Feng did not move slowly. His palm lightly brushed past his Cosmos Sack and the remaining two Attacking Talismans appeared in his palm. He first threw one at the Spirit Formation, and with a boom, the Spirit Formation the Hundred-faced Old Man laid was shattered by Chu Feng’s Attacking Talisman.

“Hmph. I would quite like to see how many more of these overbearing Attacking Talismans you have.” The Hundred-faced Old Man coldly snorted, and wanted to recondense a Spirit Formation to defend against Chu Feng.

“I’m afraid you won’t have this chance.” But just at that time, radiance greatly bloomed and the faint green-coloured armor had actually gave off a large area of white-coloured fog, instantly engulfing the Hundred-faced Old Man.

“This is?!” At that instant, even the Hundred-faced Old Man’s expression couldn’t help but change greatly and at the same time,



he retreated a few steps.

Because, he astonishedly discovered that in front of him, in Chu Feng's previous position, an extremely terrifying huge beast appeared.

That huge beast was faint green-coloured, and it seemed like an invulnerable huge tortoise. But on the body of the tortoise, an extremely horrifying huge snake coiled around it. The snake and tortoise seemed to be one, and they emanated extremely terrifying aura.

“What is happening? How did Chu Feng suddenly become such a terrifying monster? Is it possible that the reason he defied common sense is because he was never a human in the first place? Can it be that he's a horrifying monster?”

Just in that split moment, the Hundred-faced Old Man was scared, because within the monster in front of him, he felt an extremely terrifying aura. It was an aura that suppressed his. An aura that he could not fight against.

“Wait, this is an illusion.” But suddenly, the eyes of the Hundred-faced Old Man flashed and his expression changed. He, as a Blue-cloak World Spiritist, felt that the monster in front of his eyes wasn't real, and seemed more like an illusion.

Thinking to that point, he hurriedly condensed Spirit power to break the illusion in front of him. As expected, just as his Spirit power became condensed, the monster in front of his eyes started

to fade away.

“Crap.”

However, as he broke the illusion, he did not celebrate because of that. Instead, unprecedented fear surged on his face because at that very instant, an extremely horrifying Attacking Talisman, at that moment, had already landed on his chest.

boom

A rumble exploded in front of the Hundred-faced Old Man's chest, and instantly, he miserably cried out, was thrown dozens of meters away, fiercely collided into the Spirit Formation that he laid himself, then powerlessly fell limply onto the ground.

At that instant, although the Hundred-faced Old Man's four limbs were still complete, there was a huge hole in his chest. His dantian was already damaged, his organs were ruined, and he was vomiting mouthfuls of black blood and his body was endlessly twitching when fallen on the ground.

“I never would have thought that even this Attacking Talisman couldn't directly take his life away. No wonder even my Asura Ghost Axe was unable to harm him. So this is the power of a Heaven realm body?” Looking at the Hundred-faced Old Man who fell onto the ground, constantly twitched, and had already lost power to fight, Chu Feng muttered to himself and his face was filled with an emotional expression.

Although he knew the reason why the Hundred-faced Old Man's physical body was so strong was indeed partly due to the manmade Strange Armament, his original body was extremely strong as well. Or else, he wouldn't have been able to use the power of the manmade Strange Armament.

This time, even though Chu Feng won against the Hundred-faced Old Man, it was a risky victory and he also relied on an unexpected surprise attack. It could be said that the reason why Chu Feng won against the Hundred-faced Old Man was because he didn't rely on his own body's strength, but his own wits and that single strand of luck.

In the past few days, although he was killing the disciples of the six big powers everywhere, he was simultaneously honing his own battle techniques. The reason why the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens was able to be freely used by him in battle was the result of the past few days.

Other than that, Chu Feng even comprehended the Illusion Method of the Black Tortoise Armor Technique. Just now, he used the Illusion Method to bring the Hundred-faced Old Man into a dulled state so he could not continue condensing Spirit Formations and it gave Chu Feng a chance to heavily injure him with the Attacking Talisman.

To be more precise, what Chu Feng relied on in his surprise attack was the Illusion Method of the Black Tortoise Armor Technique as well as the Attacking Talisman Vice-head Gao gave him. That was Chu Feng's final trump card. If he failed, he would die; but he succeeded.

Because, no matter if the Hundred-faced Old Man had even more abundant battle experience, was even more cunning as a person, he never would have expected Chu Feng to be able to grasp Illusion Methods. He even didn't need to lay Spirit Formations and he could use it with only a thought. Exactly because of that carelessness, he took a great hit.

At that instant, Chu Feng truly couldn't help but want to sigh in admiration towards the master of the Emperor Tomb because he created such a strong Secret Skill. Otherwise, truly, Chu Feng wouldn't have had that much luck.

hmm

"Chu Feng, this isn't good. He wants to condense a consciousness!" Suddenly, Eggy nervously reminded.

Only at that instant did Chu Feng discover that the Hundred-faced Old Man was indeed condensing his consciousness. Although his dantian was already damaged and his cultivation cultivated in many years was flowing away, his consciousness was still equipped with a portion of his cultivation. If his condensation was successful, it would not be a small trouble to Chu Feng.

"I'm sorry, but it's better if you die away peacefully." Chu Feng waved the Asura Ghost Axe in his hand and chopped towards the neck of the Hundred-faced Old Man and cut off his everything.

"Noo~~~~" In response, the Hundred-faced Old Man who was

already heavily injured yelled extremely bitterly and loudly.

However, Chu Feng had no mercy. With a poof, the head of the Hundred-faced Old Man fell onto the ground, and at the same time, the consciousness he was condensing was also shattered by the power of the Asura Ghost Axe. The Hundred-faced Old man thoroughly became a dead person and there was not a trace of aura remaining.

“Haha, Chu Feng you boy, not bad! What you’ve done today was beautiful! You won an unwinnable battle, and I truly look at you in another light.”

“Quick, absorb this old guy’s Source energy. The fresh Source energy of the 3rd level of the Heaven realm should be able to help me break into the 5th level of the Profound realm, and there’s even a possibility that I break into the 6th level of the Profound realm.” Eggy happily shouted.

Chu Feng also didn’t move slow and he hurriedly helped Eggy to absorb the Hundred-faced Old Man’s Source energy. Just as Eggy thought, her cultivation indeed rose from the 4th level of the Profound realm to the 5th level of the Profound realm. Although she was unable to reach the 6th level of the Profound realm, there wasn’t much to it.

Afterwards, Chu Feng checked the Hundred-faced Old Man’s Cosmos Sack. The seemingly insignificant check caused Chu Feng to be instantly endlessly elated because the Hundred-faced Old Man’s Cosmos Sack was truly a huge treasure trove.

# Chapter 420: Arrival Of Li Zing

---

Within the Hundred-faced Old Man's Cosmos Sack, there were Profound beads. There were over 623500 beads, and other than those, there were even twenty-three low-quality Heaven medicine and there was a single medium-quality Heaven medicine.

And other than those cultivation resources, there was even a special World Spirit Compass. That World Spirit Compass was golden-coloured. It seemed to be created by gold, yet it was not gold. Radiance did not flash everywhere, but there was plenty of texture. Anyway, it was extremely special.

Speaking with Eggy's words, it was a high-quality World Spirit Compass. Who knew how many times stronger it was than Chu Feng's? It was a priceless object, and all in all, it was an extremely rare good thing.

Other than the special World Spirit Compass, there was even a World Spirit Blue-cloak and a large amounts of Spirit Formation Rocks.

Those Spirit Formation Rocks could be placed within Spirit Formations and it could cause the might of the Spirit Formation to become even stronger, but because the prices for them were too high, very few people were willing to add those things when laying Spirit Formations.

But within the Hundred-face Old Man's Cosmos Sack, there was an extremely terrifying amount of Spirit Formation Rocks. Over

three hundred thousand. Even if Chu Feng used Spirit Formation Rocks everyday, the large number of rocks would be enough for him to use for many years.

Other than things World Spiritists used, there were even many precious treasures. For example, manmade Strange Armaments. Within his Cosmos Sack, there were even two sets of those. In addition to the ones on his wrists, there were three sets.

It could be seen that Liu Xiaoyao, Tang Yixiu, and Bai Yunfei were indeed killed by the Hundred-faced Old man, but it had to be said that this time, Chu Feng had earned greatly.

“Haha, truly, as expected of the Hundred-faced Old Man, the number one assassin in the continent of the Nine Provinces. It seems like he has really quite a few treasures stored. His Cosmos Sack is simply a huge treasure trove.”

Chu Feng could almost dance from excitement because that was definitely a huge sum of wealth. Perhaps the wealth the Hundred-faced Old Man gained from killing a lifetime of people and accumulated for his entire lifetime all landed into Chu Feng’s hands.

Over 623500 Profound beads, in addition to twenty-three low-quality Heaven medicine and one medium-quality medicine. Even if they couldn’t help Chu Feng break into the 7th level of the Profound realm, it would still become quite a good foundation.

Besides, throwing the cultivation resources on the side, every

single item in the Hundred-faced Old man's Cosmos Sack were the so-called priceless treasures. Things that were extremely expensive. If he sold those, their prices would even be far above the cultivation resources.

It had to be said that in the Hundred-faced Old Man's life, he truly obtained quite some wealth. Although it was impossible to be compared to peak powers like the Prestigious Villa, it was also not comparable to second-rate powers. But sadly, it went all to Chu Feng.

“Crap. Although the Hundred-faced Old Man has died, the Spirit Formation he laid is still here. Blue-coloured Spirit Formations. My current methods cannot break it and I have even used up my final Attacking Talisman. Doesn't this mean that I'm like a turtle in an earthen jar, and that I'm trapped in here?”

But just as the happiness arrived, Chu Feng's face couldn't help but freeze and after that, black lines appeared on his forehead because when he raised his head, he discovered that the layers of Blue-coloured Spirit Formations were still there. That thing could imprison him to death.

If he was unable to escape this place, by the time someone notified the six big powers and sent the heads over to catch Chu Feng, Chu Feng would really not be able to escape then.

boom

However, just as Chu Feng panicked, a deafening rumble rang



from the outside of the city. Even the land under Chu Feng's feet slightly trembled from the rumble.

boom boom boom boom boom boom Quickly after, several rumbles continuously rang out and at that instant, Chu Feng astonishedly discovered that the layers of Spirit Formations which sealed the city was being broken through one by one by someone. There was someone who came from the outside and was entering, and broke open all the Spirit Formations.

boom Finally, another rumble rang out, and looking towards the place where that noise was being emitted, Chu Feng found out that a beautiful body was currently slowly approaching.

That beautiful figure was a young female's. She wore a purple-coloured skirt, had a complexion of absolute beauty, sweet face, graceful body, and alluring curves.

Her power was also extremely overpoweringly strong. Although she was only in the 9th level of the Profound realm, she was able to easily break open the layers of Spirit Formation the Hundred-faced Old Man laid earlier.

And who else could that young female be? Naturally, it was the person who Chu Feng waited for a long time, Zi Ling.

“Zi Ling!”

After seeing Zi Ling, Chu Feng was also elated because not only

was Zi Ling going to save him from that place, the most important thing was still that, after waiting for so long, he was finally going to have returns today.

After being separated for a few days and seeing Zi Ling again, Chu Feng's feelings were completely different from before. He couldn't help but put down quite a bit of the alert in his heart.

Because, in the past few days when he wandered around the Qin Province, other than hearing things about himself, Chu Feng also discovered that in the Marriage Gathering, the person Zi Ling announced to be the one she loved was him and she even cut off her relationship with the Prestigious Villa because of that.

To be honest, in a time like this when there was even a person willing to follow him, and even stood out to support himself without caring for her own safety, Chu Feng was truly moved in his heart. "Real feelings are seen when disaster strikes". Perhaps that was true.

But Chu Feng never would have thought that Zi Ling would be the one who was going to back him up the most.

It had to be said at that very instant, Chu Feng finally felt that the all sorts of things he did for Zi Ling was worth it. He did not risk his life for nothing, and he did not take those crimes for nothing.

"Zi Ling!" When Zi Ling broke open the last Spirit Formation, Chu Feng continuously walked several big steps and arrived in

front of her. Quickly after, he opened his arms, and like a powerful fierce tiger pouncing on its prey, Chu Feng took Zi Ling's extremely beautiful body into his embrace.

At first, when she saw Chu Feng, Zi Ling was very joyful as well. She did not have any objections when Chu Feng hugged her like this.

But what could she do when Chu Feng was very dishonest? Not only did he hug Zi Ling very tightly, he even squished Zi Ling's two lumps of softness, her almost developed chest, and deformed them.

And after putting Zi Ling into his embrace, Chu Feng's hands had actually unrestrainedly wandered around Zi Ling's body, and that struck her bottomline.

It caused Zi Ling's thoroughly white little face to instantly become red. Quickly after, not only did she get rid of Chu Feng's embrace, she also, with a little hand that tore through the air and made "huhu" sounds, fiercely slapped Chu Feng's face.

With a clear bang, Zi Ling's pretty little hand left a deep red-coloured little handprint on Chu Feng's face.

"You?" Chu Feng was stupefied and thought in his heart, "What's this situation? Hasn't she already announced her love to me? Why doesn't she even allow a hug?"

“I...I know that you must have heard some things. Indeed, I, Zi Ling, have already quite...”

“But males and females must keep a distance... Before officially marrying, before I become your wife, don’t think of doing impolite things to me, or else...” Zi Ling said while pouting. When she spoke to the crucial point, her little face even reddened. That girl was actually embarrassed!

## Chapter 421: Magical Mask

---

“Or else what?” Chu Feng first shamelessly smiled, then curiously asked.

“Or else...Or else I’ll kill you!” Zi Ling’s little mouth curled and within her clear eyes, a hint of killing intent had truly appeared.

“Ehh~~~~” At that instant, Chu Feng hiddenly cursed because he could see that Zi Ling seemed to truly be a girl who guarded her body like jade. Also, no matter how she announced she liked Chu Feng in front of outsiders, when she was in front of Chu Feng, she seemed a bit embarrassed.

A girl like that was very difficult to deal with. Chu Feng could not force it, or else all his hard work would have been for naught. He could only sweet-talk and bit by bit, break through Zi Ling’s line of defense.

But luckily, Zi Ling already had feelings to him. Even if Zi Ling didn’t say that, Chu Feng could feel it. So, he did not rush it because he had confidence that sooner or later, Zi Ling would be his.

Also, Chu Feng discovered that after Zi Ling, the exceptional little beauty, shed off the layer of alert towards him, he had to say that he truly liked a girl like her who was sinister, cute, fierce, and stubborn. Even if he didn’t want to love her, it would be hard.

“What are you shamelessly smiling about?” Zi Ling first fiercely

shot Chu Feng a glare and she knew that Chu Feng definitely wasn't thinking about any good things. Quickly after, she no longer paid attention to him. She cast her gaze towards the corpse of the Hundred-faced Old Man nearby and muttered, "You have actually killed the Hundred-faced Old Man. You're as strong as usual!"

"Mm. You've collected quite cleanly as well, but you missed one." After arriving in front of the Hundred-faced Old Man, Zi Ling curled her lips and said.

"What did I miss?" Chu Feng asked confusedly. He clearly looted all of the Hundred-faced Old Man's treasure!

"Do you know why this Hundred-faced Old Man is called the Hundred-faced Old Man? It's because he can change his face to a hundred different ones as well as a hundred different auras. That causes people to be unable to catch him, and to be caught off guard by him."

"The reason why he could do all this wasn't because he relied on some special Mysterious Technique. He relied on this..."

As she spoke, Zi Ling extended her hand and grabbed the Hundred-faced Old Man's face which was filled with blood, and stuck her fingers deep into his flesh.

poof

Indeed, Zi Ling, the cruel little girl, truly stuck her own fingers into the face of the Hundred-faced Old Man. However, when Zi Ling's five fingers deeply entered the face of the Hundred-faced Old Man, his bloody face gave off faint brilliance.

Quickly after, Zi Ling's hand suddenly retracted and a half-transparent mask appeared in Zi Ling's palm, and at that instant, the face of the Hundred-faced Old Man changed to another. Even though it was still bloody, there was indeed change.

"This is the Hundred-faced Old Man's most precious treasure. Not only can it transform one's face, it can even transform one's aura and even World Spiritists can't detect it. When concealing aura, it does it very thoroughly."

"I wanted this treasure before, but I could do nothing as it was exactly the Hundred-faced Old Man who had this magical mask on him. So, almost no one was able to find him, and even my grandfather couldn't find traces of him."

"But right now, this thing is your spoil of battle." After finishing speaking all that, Zi Ling waved her hand, and threw the magical mask over to Chu Feng.

"Since you like it so much, you keep it." Chu Feng indifferently smiled, then threw it back to Zi Ling.

Seeing that, Zi Ling squinted her eyes and the corners of her mouth rose, revealing a bewitching light smile that was so sweet it could make a person drunk.

Quickly after, she walked, and step by step, she came in front of Chu Feng. She raised her beautiful little face, and said to Chu Feng, “You need it more than I do, so carefully keep it.” As she spoke, Zi Ling put the mask on Chu Feng’s face.

whoosh

At that instant, Chu Feng felt a strong burst of suction power from the mask sucking on his face, as if it was going to enter his skin.

His appearance, also at that instant, had changes. He looked like another person. Even though he still looked like a young man, it was completely different from Chu Feng’s original appearance and even his aura was completely different.

whoosh whoosh whoosh

Quickly after, as he willed, his face changed continuously. Also, it could follow his thoughts and return to his original appearance.

“Haha, this is truly a good treasure!” After feeling the wondrousness of the mask, Chu Feng was elated. He thought in his heart when he first saw the Hundred-faced Old Man today and was unable to see that he was a cultivator, it was definitely because of the marvelous mask.

And with treasure like that on his body, in the future, Chu Feng



could do many evils and not leave any traces of him behind. No one would know what he did, and it was simply the best tool for committing crimes.

“Of course! The reason why the Hundred-faced Old Man has his current position is because he relied on this treasure. Even my grandfather said that this mask is undoubtedly a strange treasure. He doesn’t even know where the Hundred-faced Old Man got it from.” Zi Ling curiously said, but quickly after, asking Chu Feng, “Do you have any plans?”

“I do, I’m preparing to go visit the Fire God School.” Chu Feng said.

“You want to go to the Fire God School?” After hearing those words, Zi Ling’s little face slightly changed, but there wasn’t too much shock. She didn’t ask Chu Feng why and just straightforwardly said, “That’s fine, let’s go.”

“Zi Ling, are you truly going to follow me? You should know how dangerous it is to follow me at a time like this right?” Chu Feng asked.

Hearing that question, Zi Ling sweetly smiled and said, “It is but the six big powers. What is there to fear from them?”

“Not to mention them, even if you poke a hole through the heavens, so what? I, Zi Ling, will still accompany you and be by your side.”

ba-dum ba-dum After hearing that, Chu Feng's heart couldn't help but intensely jump two times and afterwards, his brain went blank and some unspeakable feelings were born in his heart and entered his brain.

Although he had already heard of Zi Ling's determination to follow himself, after all, he only heard it on the road. Chu Feng couldn't determine it was true or false, so he didn't fully believe it.

Today, when he personally heard Zi Ling say those words in front of him, Chu Feng was indeed moved and good feelings towards the little beauty in front of him couldn't help but multiply.

“Okay, stop daydreaming. Since the journey has been decided, let's quickly leave.” Zi Ling said.

“Okay. My wife, come on the dragon!” Chu Feng proudly smiled, then the azure dragon underneath him appeared. He couldn't even help patting the place where Zi Ling sat before, indicting her to quickly sit.

However, when facing Chu Feng's call, Zi Ling fiercely glared at him, but she didn't say anything. Instead, she curled her lips and said, “Your bodily martial skill is indeed not bad, but after all, it's a martial skill. Since we want to hurry, it's better to sit on mine.”

As she spoke, Zi Ling flipped her right hand, and an exquisite chariot appeared on her palm.

The chariot was only as big as the palm. It was completely jade-green-coloured, as if it was made by jade, but it was extremely beautiful.

There was a total of ten wheels, and there were two horns at the front of the chariot. They seemed like sheep horns yet like cow horns yet like dragon horns. They were both beautiful, and also domineering. On the top of the chariot, a picture was engraved. It was an indescribable animal. It seemed like a Monstrous Beast, yet also like a symbol.

But the most important thing was that the chariot unexpectedly gave Chu Feng a feeling of indestructibility and invincibility. It also contained unique might.

# Chapter 422: Exquisite Chariot

---

“Zi Ling, yo...you also have a Strange Armament?” Such a unique feeling caused Chu Feng to instantly recognize that the chariot, which was as big as her palm, was a Strange Armament.

“My grandfather said that since I chose to follow you and take risks, he will not care about my life. Even more so, he won’t secretly follow me to protect me. Life or death will depend on the heavens, and he will not interfere.”

“But seeing that it wasn’t easy to raise me up to this age, before I left him, he gifted this Exquisite Chariot to me. This chariot isn’t the strongest within Strange Armaments in terms of offense or defense, but its speed is absolutely peerless in the world.”

Zi Ling sweetly smiled, then after, she lightly waved her hand and the Exquisite Chariot as big as her palm left her hand. Quickly after, light shot in all directions and with a blink, it became a huge chariot that was five meters wide, and ten meters long. At that very moment, it was floating off the ground.

“Waa, what a beautiful chariot.” Chu Feng was stupefied. At that instant, the Exquisite Chariot was even more beautiful than when it was on Zi Ling’s palm, and even more domineering.

The most important part was that after it became larger, the unique might of Strange Armaments became fully evident. It was a lot more overbearing when compared to the Jiang Dynasty’s chariot that was pulled by a Monstrous Beast back then.

“Stop staring and let’s go.” Zi Ling grabbed onto Chu Feng and the doors of the Exquisite Chariot automatically opened. Zi Ling leaped with her alluring body, and entered along with Chu Feng.

huhuhu

After the chariot doors closed, the ten wheels started to spin in mid-air. Their speed got quicker and quicker, and layers of special gas was emitted from the wheels. At the end, under the wheels, clouds had actually appeared.

swish

Suddenly, a rainbow charged into the sky and rose, and the chariot disappeared. That speed was several times quicker than Chu Feng’s Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens.

Shortly after Chu Feng and Zi Ling left, and after the people in the city hesitated for a long time, they could no longer bear their hearts of curiosity and started to carefully walk towards the battlefield between Chu Feng and the Hundred-faced Old Man.

But when they arrived at the battlefield and saw the deep pits on the ground as well as the buildings that were unrecognizably destroyed, many people felt fear.

At that time, only a person called “Fearless Li” bit his teeth and walked over.

At that instant, everyone was standing outside of the circle of battle and they started fixedly at Fearless Li and awaited his answer.

Finally, Fearless Li made some sounds. He loudly shouted, “The Hundred-faced Old Man is dead! The Hundred-faced Old Man has been killed by Chu Feng! There’s only one corpse here, and it is definitely the Hundred-faced old Man!!”

“What? The Hundred-faced Old Man actually died? Titled as the number one assassin in the continent of the Nine Provinces, killed countless people and never failed, the Hundred-faced Old Man, died? He has actually been killed by Chu Feng?”

When that news was known, almost everyone was greatly taken aback and felt disbelief.

Because, no matter how much more god-like the news about Chu Feng were before, no one would believe that he could break common sense so much to the point he could defeat the Hundred-faced Old Man. After all, the Hundred-faced Old Man was originally a legend who was never defeated. A name that would cause one to feel fear if they heard it.

However, after that thing got known, people had no choice but to believe it. After all, many people had heard the dialogues between Chu Feng and the Hundred-faced Old Man, and many people had seen the great battle between Chu Feng and the Hundred-faced Old Man.

Even later on, when someone asked the elder, who was in the assassination camp that the Hundred-faced Old Man went before, for identification, the result was that the old man who died was definitely the Hundred-faced Old Man.

When that news got known, it instantly shocked the Nine Provinces because it meant that Chu Feng truly defied common sense. If he even killed the Hundred-faced Old Man, who would be able to kill him?

Was it possible that the heads of the six big powers were truly required to come out in order to handle a young man, who was only sixteen years old?

But no matter how the outside world sighed in shock or how they were shocked, when the Yuangang School, the Fire God School, the Hidden White Sect, and the Free and Unrestrained Valley heard that news, they were doubtlessly furious.

It did not only mean that they failed once again to kill Chu Feng. It even meant that the five hundred thousand Profound beads they combined to take out were like “rocks spent to skip water”. They were very possibly given to Chu Feng for free. Five hundred thousand Profound beads entered Chu Feng’s hands once again.

That really caused the roots of their teeth to itch, causing them to angrily slam the table. Actually, ever since putting Chu Feng on a wanted list, they had already shattered countless tables because every time news about Chu Feng came, it would certainly not be

any good news.

But at the same time they were furious, they started to feel uneasiness because Chu Feng was really too overwhelming. Right now, the pillars of enmity had already been firmly laid. If Chu Feng continued to develop like that, one day, even they wouldn't be able to defeat Chu Feng. At that time, wouldn't a great disaster come?

Because Chu Feng's fame became bigger and bigger, someone had already announced Chu Feng's actions in the Azure Province to the Nine Provinces, and many things that Chu Feng did became legends.

Something about Chu Feng flattening the number one school in the Azure Province by himself, killed so many people that the head of the Lingyun School abandoned his school and escaped, several million disciples were all slaughtered and not a single lived, blood flowed and formed rivers in the Lingyun Mountain Range, the corpses could fill an ocean...

Also, there was the one about Chu Feng going to the Qilin Prince's Mansion's execution grounds, killed many Qilin Prince's Mansion generals, guards, and even with the lord of the Qilin Prince's Mansion there as fortification, they were unable to suppress Chu Feng and could only watch with their eyes wide open as he brought the person away and left the corpses of countless Qilin Prince's Mansion's members.

Anyway, not only were the things that Chu Feng did in the Azure Province spread, they were even made godly and that caused the



people who did not know the truth to believe those things to be the truth and they even made a conclusion regarding Chu Feng.

It was that Chu Feng was simply the reincarnation of a slaughtering god. The people who offended him would not end up well, because currently, Chu Feng had already killed no small number of disciples and elders from the six big powers, and he was indeed taking his revenge.

If he truly develops one day, they believed that the Yuangang School, Fire God School, Free and Unrestrained Valley, Sword God Valley, Hidden White Sect, and even the Jie clan would “follow the dust” of the Lingyun School and be annihilated.

That caused the heads of the several big powers to panic because they felt that Chu Feng was truly a calamity. That calamity had to be removed. Even if they couldn't get the Strange Armament, even if they could not open the treasure, Chu Feng still had to be removed or else they would be facing a huge disaster in the future.

So, the Yuangang School, Fire God School, Free and Unrestrained Valley, Sword God Valley, Hidden White Sect, and the Jie clan, the six big powers united and wrote a letter, asking the Jiang Dynasty to send out troops to remove the demon, Chu Feng.

Or else, if Chu Feng develops in the future, he would very possibly be like the Monster King of the Thousand Monster Mountain back then and a rebellion would start. On that day, even the Jiang Dynasty would be facing an approaching danger.

And when facing the united letter from the six big powers, as the ruler of the continent of the Nine Provinces, the Jiang Dynasty would not be in a good position to only sit and not do anything about it. So, the Jiang Dynasty sent out a batch of experts, who entered the Qin Province, and started to search for the whereabouts of Chu Feng.

# Chapter 423: Luring The Snake Out Of The Cave

---

It had to be said that after the people from the Jiang Dynasty started to move, Chu Feng kept an extremely low-profile. Ever since killing the Hundred-faced Old Man, he never reappeared.

Facing that situation, everyone started to guess one after another once again. Some people felt that Chu Feng was afraid of the might of the Jiang Dynasty and didn't dare to go wild, so he hid.

Some people also felt that even though he won against the Hundred-faced Old Man, Chu Feng suffered heavy injuries and was currently recuperating. Perhaps his injuries hadn't recovered and he died.

However, they never would have thought that the current Chu Feng already left the Qin Province and secretly arrived to the Song Province that the Fire God School controlled.

After a period of time of observing and understanding the Fire God School, Chu Feng and Zi Ling found the location of the senior tombs of the Fire God School

However, because the head of the Fire God School was there to oversee everything, even if it was Chu Feng and Zi Ling, they didn't dare to rashly enter. Facing the expert in the 5th level of the Heaven realm, the two of them feared as well.

However, after a few days of studying at the geography of the Song Province and some comprehension of the Fire God School, Chu Feng and Zi Ling made a plan.

On that day, with the magical use of the magical mask, Chu Feng changed his face and went into the Fire God School.

“You said you know the whereabouts of Chu Feng, and he is in the borders of my Song Province right now?” One of the manager elders of the Fire God School had the cultivation of the 3rd level of the heaven realm. After hearing Chu Feng’s words, he half-believed and half-doubted, and didn’t fully trust him.

Because after the wanted posters were sent out, many people wanted to swindle some money and they provided quite a few fake information. Even if they were real, they were useless. So, that caused the elder of the Fire God School to be very alert.

“It’s true! I saw Chu Feng! Right now, he is in the Beast Capitol Mountain Range in my Song Province.” Chu Feng firmly said. He started to lie. His little face did not redden or pale, as if what he said was all true.

“Really? How did you meet Chu Feng? And what did you see? Start from the beginning.” The manager elder seriously asked. At the same time, a pair of fierce eyes tightly stared at Chu Feng, wanting to find a loophole.

“When I saw him, he seemed to be seriously ill. His face was deathly-white and powerless, and his skin was even a bit purple.

He was fighting with a Monstrous Beast that was in the 8th level of the Profound realm in the mountain range.”

“At first, Chu Feng was at a disadvantage, but later on, his aura suddenly violently rose and it reached the 8th level of the Profound realm. Also, azure-coloured gas appeared underneath him. That gas was very strange. It seemed like a snake yet was not, and seemed like a dragon yet was not. Anyway, as long as it moved, its speed was odd, and I wasn’t able to clearly see his movements before he disappeared. When he reappeared, he was definitely in another location.”

“But even so, Chu Feng was still unable to defeat the Monstrous Beast. Because the physical body of the Monstrous Beast was too hard, Chu Feng could not injure it. Finally, Che Feng brought out a huge black-coloured axe.”

“That axe was extremely scary. It was two meters long, and it was huge. There was a hook on the back of the axe, and when Chu Feng waved it, it even shot out a black-coloured blade of light.”

“That blade of light was too powerful. It chopped down a large area of trees, and relying on that axe, he killed the Monstrous Beast by force.”

“However, after killing the Monstrous Beast, Chu Feng lost his strength and rested a long time on the ground. Only then did he hide into a mountain cave and seeing that he didn’t come out after a long time and when he entered, he even laid layers of Spirit Formations. I believe that he should be cultivating in isolation. So, I hurriedly came here to notify you.”

Chu Feng fabricated stories and could even draw the sounds and colours. His words were extremely realistic, as if the things he spoke of truly happened.

That caused the eyes of the manager elder of the Fire God School, who heard about it, to glitter and his face changed. It was because Chu Feng said many things that others didn't know about.

For example, the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens that Chu Feng grasped and also the appearance of the Asura Ghost Axe Chu Feng had, as well as all sorts of other special characteristics. People could not find out about those things other than those who personally saw Chu Feng.

“Wait a moment.” So, that manager elder hurriedly reported that matter to the head of the Fire God School.

After the head of the Fire God School got hold of that news, he was also greatly shocked and he hurriedly gathered three manager elders from the Fire God School and passed down a treasure to the manager elders. He also told them to bring twenty Grey-cloak World Spiritists who had cultivations in the peak of the Profound realm to go forward to the Beast Capitol Mountain Range to catch Chu Feng.

The reason why the head of the Fire God School didn't personally go out was because he could still not confirm that the news was real. Also, he was also afraid that this was Chu Feng's plan of “luring the tiger out of the mountain”, by taking the chance when

he left to surprise attack the Fire God School.

After all, he didn't know how Chu Feng got sick. Why was Chu Feng, who should originally have battle power that broke common sense, even unable to defeat a Monstrous Beast who was in the 8th level of the Profound realm, and had to use his full strength to defeat it?

Before clearing those things up, the head of the Fire God School would not personally move. Besides, if the news was truly accurate, and Chu Feng had difficulty even defeating a Monstrous Beast in the 8th level of the Profound realm, then it should be too easy for three Heaven realm experts to catch Chu Feng. Besides, within them, there was even one in the 3rd level of the Heaven realm. That level, even if it was in terms of the entire continent of the Nine Provinces, could be counted to be a peak-level character.

In addition to twenty extremely experienced Grey-cloak World Spiritists who were all over sixty-years-old, there shouldn't be any problem if they wanted to break open the Spirit Formations Chu Feng laid. So, the head of the Fire God School felt that if the news was reliable, this time, they could certainly catch Chu Feng.

Thus, with Chu Feng's trickery, from the Fire God School, an elder in the 3rd level of the Heaven realm, two elders in the 1st level of the Heaven realm, as well as twenty Grey-cloak World Spiritists with ages past sixty, all moved out at the same time. They formed an old group of twenty-three people and headed towards the Beast Capitol Mountain Range to apprehend Chu Feng.

Although there weren't many people heading there, the twenty Grey-cloak World Spiritists were going too slowly, as their cultivations were still in the Profound realm. So, they could only use the White-headed Eagle as transportation to hurry.

In addition, the Song Province was also very large and since the Beast Capitol Mountain Range was quite far from the Fire God School, only after a full few days did they finally arrive within the Beast Capitol Mountain Range.

“My friend, you said that Chu Feng is cultivating in isolation here, but why is there no mountain cave here? There aren't any Spirit Formations as well.” An elder in the 1st level of the Heaven realm stood next to Chu Feng and furiously interrogated him.

Because, after following Chu Feng to this place, they did not discover any traces of battle, let alone any Spirit Formations or mountain cave. There was a huge feeling of being tricked.

“Chu Feng is clearly here! Don't you see him?” Chu Feng's had a face of innocence.

“Nonsense! Where is he? Why haven't I seen him?” That elder was even more furious. He already determined that they were tricked.

“You old blind man, do you see him now?” Suddenly, Chu Feng abruptly stuck out his hand and with lightning speed, he grabbed that elder's skull. At the same time, his face also changed along and became how it was originally.



# Chapter 424: Divine Body

---

“Heavens! Yo...you’re Chu Feng?!”

After seeing Chu Feng, the face of the previous incomparably furious elder instantly became pale-white because at that very instant, Chu Feng had already used the power of the lightning and raised his cultivation to the 8th level of the Profound realm.

Chu Feng who had that cultivation could even defeat those in the 2nd level of the Heaven realm, let alone an elder in the 1st level of the Heaven realm. So, at that very instant, Chu Feng was pressing his hand on the elder’s skull, and was helping Eggy absorb his Source energy.

“Ahh~~~~~” Finally, as the elder miserably cried, Chu Feng absorbed all of his Source energy and the elder had no more life force. He powerlessly laid on the ground, and had died.

“Your Fire God School dares to put me, Chu Feng, on a wanted list? Today, all of you will die!” With the lightning methods, after killing the elder, Chu Feng furiously roared towards the sky. Within the circumference of several miles, both birds and beasts were frightened and many Monstrous Beasts were terrified to the point they howled in low voices and escaped towards the distance.

“Chu Feng! He’s actually Chu Feng! Quick! Quickly lay formations and catch him!” At that instant, the people from the Fire God School finally reacted and the World Spiritists in the Profound realm started to lay Spirit Formations and wanted to use

Spirit Formations to catch Chu Feng.

“Even a group of garbage want to catch me?” However, Chu Feng casually threw out a palm and as ripples exploded, the bodies of three World Spiritists shattered and they were crushed alive by Chu Feng.

“All of you quickly back away. I’ll take care of this child.” Seeing that, the elder in the 3rd level of the Heaven realm attacked. He emanated layers of Heaven power and they swept towards Chu Feng.

“Hmph. Even the Hundred-faced Old Man wasn’t able to defeat me. You think you’re worthy to fight me?”

Chu Feng coldly snorted and used the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens. He leaped, and became a blur of light as he dodged the elder’s attack. At the same time, he arrived behind the elder, the Asura Ghost Axe appeared in his hand, and he, without mercy, chopped towards that elder’s back.

“You’re wrong. I never thought of killing you. I just wanted to imprison you.” However, just as Chu Feng’s axe was going to land, the elder suddenly turned around and a smile, that showed a scheme succeeded, formed by the corners of his mouth raising and a strange but special little bowl appeared in his hand.

hmm After the little bowl left the elder’s palm, it quickly enlarged and had actually covered Chu Feng and at the end, it fell onto the ground.

“Quick! Quickly go back and notify the school head! Say that Chu Feng has already been caught by me while using this Profound Bagua Bowl, but I must continuously channel Heaven power into it in order for this child to be unable to escape. Quickly ask for reinforcements from the school head!”

After using the so-called Profound Bagua Bowl to cover Chu Feng, that elder’s face was quite unsightly. Although the power of the bowl was extremely powerful, it clearly needed boundless Heaven power as support.

However, he was still ecstatic because he caught Chu Feng. That was a meritorious deed and he would definitely be heavily rewarded by the school head.

“Elder Zhao, I’ll stay behind and help you channel Heaven power into this Profound Bagua Bowl.” Another elder said.

“No need. I am enough myself to support it. Right now, quickly go back and notify the school head or it will be too late.” The elder refused.

Hearing those words, after the elder in the 1st level of the Heaven realm bit his teeth, he didn’t hesitate anymore and he leaped into the air, then ran towards the Fire God School.

“Elder, we...”

At that instant, the remaining seventeen World Spiritists blankly stood there, and they didn't really know what to do.

It was because they discovered that even though they were also in the Profound realm, in front of Chu Feng, they were really too weak. Chu Feng was truly as powerful as the legends. Even a manager elder in the 3rd level of the Heaven realm needed to use so much strength in order to temporarily suppress Chu Feng.

“All of you, stay behind and protect me. I must use my entire body and heart to fortify this Profound Bagua Bowl or else despite this bowl being extremely special, without my Heaven power's fortification, it can still be broken apart by Chu Feng with his Strange Armament.” That elder seriously said.

“Yes sir.” Seeing that, the seventeen World Spiritists also didn't dare to hesitate and they hurriedly, with the manager elder as the center, started to lay Spirit Formations from the outside to the inside.

After all, the Beast Capitol Mountain Range was also a gathering location for Monstrous Beasts. Although it wasn't as powerful as the Thousand Monster Mountain and there weren't any Heaven realm Monstrous Beasts there, there were Monstrous Beasts in the peak of the Profound realm. Without the cultivation of the Heaven realm, it was extremely troubling for them if they wanted to take care of them.

With that, the elder never-endingly used Heaven power to fortify the so-called Profound Bagua Bowl, and the seventeen World Spiritist in the peak of the Profound realm guarded around him

desperately and protected him.

Up until the time changed, after the day turned into night, only then did Chu Feng suddenly speak, “Still not coming out? If you still don’t, I’ll be bored to death in this broken bowl.”

At first, facing Chu Feng’s abrupt howl, the crowd of the Fire God School were surprised, but they didn’t understand the meaning behind Chu Feng’s words.

“Truly annoying.” However, only after a beautiful figure flew out from a nearby forest, and with simple actions, broke the Spirit Formation they laid and killed all seventeen World Spiritists in the peak of the Profound realm did the manager elder come a realization. They were tricked. So that was a trap that Chu Feng had laid at an earlier time.

“You! You’re Zi Ling?” That manger elder had went to the Prestigious Villa before so he instantly recognized Zi Ling. But he never would have thought that Zi Ling who was only in the 9th level of the Profound realm would actually be that powerful. She could so casually kill seventeen World Spiritists from his Fire God School.

Those seventeen World Spiritists could be said to be the most excellent World Spiritists in his Fire God School. All of them cultivated for dozens of years, and they were existences who had very excellent battle experience and Spirit Formation methods. But even so, they could not even take a single strike from Zi Ling.

“That’s right. I’m Zi Ling. However, actually, I can tell you a secret.” Zi Ling lightly strode forward, and as she elegantly walked towards the manager elder, she sweetly smiled.

“What? What secret?” Although Zi Ling was only in the 9th level of the Profound realm, for some reason, that manager elder felt an extremely dangerous aura from Zi Ling’s body.

“Actually, I’m a Divine Body.” Suddenly, Zi Ling’s pupils started to change and they instantly became purple-coloured.

At the same time, layers of purple-coloured flames surged out of Zi Ling’s body. Extremely terrifying might descended from the sky. That power was very strong, and even if that manager elder was in the 3rd level of the Heaven realm, he was unable to fight against it.

“Dammit.” At that instant, the elder was suddenly shocked. He finally discovered that Zi Ling, the beautiful little girl, was a monster even scarier than Chu Feng.

Divine Bodies. Those were existences only in legends. They were divine bodies bestowed by the heavens, and what they had was power that was granted by the heavens. Their powers weren’t something ordinary people could fight against.

Thinking to that point, how could the elder still care about continuing to bind Chu Feng? He held the Profound Bagua Bowl, and threw it towards Zi Ling.

## Chapter 425: Eastern Sea Region

---

“Useless.”

However, Zi Ling didn't even move. The purple-coloured flames were like savage fierce beasts, part savage devils that came from hell, and they had actually forcefully shattered the Profound Bagua Bowl.

swish Seeing that, the face of the manager elder changed greatly from fright, so why would he even dare to continue tangling with Zi Ling? He leaped, and wanted to escape.

whoosh However, Zi Ling did not give him that chance. The purple-coloured flames became a purple flame huge mouth, and instantly, it engulfed the manager elder.

“Ahh~~~~~”

Quickly after, within the surging purple-coloured flames, the manager elder unceasingly made heart-tearing and lung-splitting miserable cries. However, the sound of the miserable cries became smaller and smaller, and weaker and weaker, then finally, disappeared completely.

At that instant, Zi Ling's purple-coloured eyes gradually returned to normal and the purple-coloured flames also returned to her body. However, looking back at the manager elder, there wasn't even a single bone remaining. They were all cleanly engulfed by Zi Ling's purple-coloured flames.

Looking back at Zi Ling, he discovered that there was a Cosmos Sack on her hand. Chu Feng saw that Cosmos Sack before. It was the manager elder's.

“You girl, you are quite scary. You're only in the 9th level of the Profound realm, yet you face someone in the 3rd level of the Heaven realm so easily.” Chu Feng sighed and said.

“Hmph.” After hearing those words, Zi Ling fiercely looked at Chu Feng disdainfully then quickly after, said, “You think that you're the only one who grasps special power? No matter what you say, I'm still a Divine Body. How can my power be comparable to ordinary people?”

“Not to mention the 3rd level of the Heaven realm, even if it's a person in the 4th level of the Heaven realm, I'm not afraid either. If I break into the Heaven realm, even if it's someone in the 6th level of the heaven realm, I can still fight.” Zi Ling said while being full of confidence. It could be seen that she was extremely sure in her own power.

“Is the Heaven realm that hard to break into? Before, when you closed yourself off in the Prestigious Villa, you were trying to break into the Heaven realm right?” Chu Feng curiously asked.

“Of course it's hard. It's extremely hard. Do you think that the Heaven realm is truly so easy to enter?”

“At first, when I isolated myself in the Prestigious Villa, it was



only my first time trying to break into the Heaven realm. After you left the Prestigious Villa, my grandfather tried to help me to break through two more times.”

“But those two times ended as failures. I must say that the Heaven power isn’t that easy to comprehend. Even if I’m a Divine Body, there’s still some difficulty.” Zi Ling pouted her little mouth. She seemed to feel displeased because she was unable to succeed after trying to break through three times.

“You girl, people can only successfully break into the Heaven realm when they’re over twenty, yet you want to break into the Heaven realm when you’re only fifteen. Even if you’re a Divine Body, have divine power bestowed by the heavens, and have talent that normal people don’t have, you can’t have strength that defies the heavens right?” Chu Feng smiled.

“Tch. What do you know? Divine Bodies should originally have strength that defies the heavens or else they can’t be called Divine Bodies.”

“My grandfather said before that the continent of the Nine Provinces is only tiny land. The people here mostly have extremely poor martial cultivating talent, so that’s the reason why there are several tens of billions of people yet very few people are in the Heaven realm.”

“This world is very big and there are countless people with high martial cultivation talent. There are also many people who are geniuses that can break common sense.”

“With normal standards, the martial cultivation talent of the people in the continent of the Nine Provinces can be counted to be very trash. So, even if they are the ones with the best talent within several tens of billions of people, they can only step into the Heaven realm when they are roughly twenty years old.”

“However, if it’s that region, there are actually many people who step into the Heaven realm at the age of twenty. But even those people cannot be counted as apical geniuses. At most, they are only geniuses. True apical geniuses must step into the heaven realm before the age of twenty. Only people like them can be recognized as peak geniuses. Real geniuses.”

“And if I, as a Divine Body, cannot enter the Heaven realm before the age of twenty, I simply shame the name of Divine Bodies and am not worthy of being one.” Zi Ling’s face was filled with stubbornness.

“That region? What region?” However, what Chu Feng was more curious about was the region that Zi Ling talked about, where people’s martial cultivation talent was extremely high.

“That is...” Hearing Chu Feng’s question, Zi Ling hesitated a bit, but after thinking for a while, she still said to Chu Feng,

“Other than the continent of the Nine Provinces, there are many other continents. Those continents are quite similar to the continent of the Nine Provinces. There are many citizens on the continent, but people’s normal martial cultivation aptitude are

horrible. On a continent like that, there is usually a ruler like the Jiang Dynasty.”

“But in reality, those continents aren’t everything of the world. Rather, they can only be counted as a corner of an iceberg because my grandfather said at the west of the continent, there is a boundless and borderless sea region.”

“In that sea region, there are many strong forces of powers. The disciples of those powers all have abilities that are extremely powerful. Take and put any ordinary disciple into the continent of the Nine Provinces, and that disciple will become a genius in people’s eyes.”

“That doesn’t mean that those people’s talents are good, it just means that the people in the continent of the Nine Provinces have horrible talent.”

“I’ve heard that the sea region is very large. On the sea, there are boundless continents and underneath the surface of the sea, there are even powerful sea beasts. Countless remains, countless treasures.”

“That sea region is named as the Eastern Sea Region and my grandfather and I came from that sea region. Sooner or later, I will return to that sea region.”

“It’s because my parents were killed in that sea region. My clan was exterminated in that sea region. So, I will avenge them. Sooner or later, I will return to that sea region and avenge my

parents.” Speaking to that point, Zi Ling was clearly a bit emotional.

At that instant, Chu Feng also finally understood why Zi Ling was a Divine Body yet no one knew. It was because Zi Ling wasn’t born in the continent of the Nine Provinces. She was born in the Eastern Sea Region.

Also, Chu Feng knew why Zi Ling and her grandfather were so powerful, yet had to hide like a turtle in the continent of the Nine Provinces. It was because Zi Ling was burdened by deep enmity that was like an ocean of blood. But clearly, her enemy was very powerful. So powerful that her clan was exterminated and only she and her grandfather escaped to this place.

So, no wonder Zi Ling would so impatiently want to become stronger. It was because she wanted revenge. Regarding the emotion of revenge, Chu Feng deeply knew about it so he could totally understand Zi Ling’s feeling.

“Zi Ling, your enemy is my enemy. Tell me who they are. In the future, I will definitely help you kill them.” Chu Feng grabbed Zi Ling’s delicate white hands.

Feeling the warmth coming from his hands, Zi Ling’s heart trembled and she awakened from her furious hatred. Looking at Chu Feng in front of her, she sweetly smiled and said,

“I also don’t know who they are because my grandfather said to me that because I’m too weak, right now, I am not even worthy

enough to know the name of my enemy.”

# Chapter 426: Returning To The Fire God School

---

“Chu Feng, my grandfather also told me that even if it is that boundless and borderless Eastern Sea Region, it is not the end of this world. The reason why it is called the Eastern Sea Region is because in this world, other than the Eastern Sea Region, there is also the Western Sea Region, Northern Sea Region, and Southern Sea Region.”

“In the middle of the four big sea regions, there is a mysterious land. That place is this world’s center. It is the heaven for cultivators, the place where all geniuses yearn to be in.”

“In that mysterious land, my grandfather said that Divine Bodies aren’t even extremely rare because that world is where all geniuses converge. It is where victors are right and losers are wrong. A place where only powerful people can survive in.”

“However, as for what that mysterious land looks like, even my grandfather isn’t clear because he has never went to that place.”

“That piece of land is like a legend. One does not go there only because that person wants to, but my grandfather said that it does exist because many peak experts had entered that land.”

“So, Chu Feng, this world is too big. So big that we cannot imagine it. There are also too many experts. So unimaginably many.”

“In the continent of the Nine Provinces right now, it is as if we are living in a desolate mountain village that people don’t like to come to. The people here are very easily satisfied, but they don’t know that there is a mountain beyond every mountain, and a person beyond every person. They are only living with self-satisfaction in this tiny little land.”

“So, we can never be arrogant. We cannot feel proud because we have such powerful talent in this land, and feel satisfied.”

“Because, in reality, we are taking our special bodies, special powers, and comparing ourselves to a pile of trash with extremely weak talent. No matter how much more they praise or fear us, it is useless because the people in this place are originally weak. They are people who cannot step onto the world’s stage.”

“And you and I are fated to leave this place. Not only will we need to enter the Eastern Sea Region, we also need to step onto the mysterious land which is like a legend.”

“It doesn’t mean much for us being titled as geniuses here because that is what’s expected. With their petty talent, they shouldn’t view us as geniuses. They should view us as gods.”

“What we need to do is not become the genius in their eyes. It is to be the genius in the Eastern Sea Region, even that mysterious land’s genius. Only then would we not be buried under other people’s strength after entering that place where powerful people are everywhere.” Zi Ling seriously reminded.

At that instant, Chu Feng's emotions were extremely complicated. Even the blood in his body was boiling, and he was feeling that he was being burned by steaming hot flames.

Even though Eggy had always reminded him that this place was only a corner of an iceberg in the world, and that this world was very big, as there was a sky beyond a sky and a person beyond a person, Chu Feng never thought of all those. His gaze had always remained on this continent of the Nine Provinces.

But after hearing Zi Ling's words, Chu Feng suddenly came to a realization. He was finally aware how big this world was, and was aware that there were uncountable number of experts in this world.

He knew that in his continent, he was viewed to be a genius who had heaven-defying battle power, but perhaps in other people's eyes, he was but a normal piece of garbage.

So, Chu Feng's blood was ignited. He finally knew the direction he needed to head towards. He still needed to endlessly become strong, become even stronger, because this continent of the Nine Provinces was fated to be unable to contain him.

His target wasn't the Eastern Sea Region where there were experts everywhere. It was the center of this world, where geniuses stood in masses. The mysterious land where only true geniuses could stand in.



“If Zi Ling came from the Eastern Sea Region, then where did I come from?”

“My parents, my family, where are all of you? Are you still living?” Chu Feng looked at the sky, and more and more, his heart wished to leave this continent of the Nine Provinces and head towards that new land.

“Okay. Chu Feng, the time is almost up. Let’s go to the Fire God School. After luring the head of the Fire God School away, we will loot everything from the Fire God School and make them suffer the evil consequences for their evil actions.” Suddenly, Zi Ling sweetly smiled and said.

“Mm. It’s time to let them pay the price.” Hearing Zi Ling’s words, the corners of Chu Feng’s mouth also rose and revealed a touch of a light, evil smile.

Quickly after, Chu Feng and Zi Ling rode Zi Ling’s Exquisite Chariot back to the Fire God School. It had to be said that the speed of the Exquisite Chariot was truly quite fast.

When Chu Feng and Zi Ling returned to the Fire God School, the elder who was returning to the Fire God School for notifying still hadn’t arrived yet. The two of them had actually waited a full two days before that elder returned to the Fire God School.

As for how Chu Feng and Zi Ling knew that elder returned, it was because suddenly, the Fire God School started to shake.

Then, the head of the Fire God School flew out and behind him, there were even eleven Heaven realm experts following him, and with extremely quick speed, they ran straight towards the Beast Capitol Mountain Range, and the elder who notified was also in that group.

After they left, in order to avoid any unexpected circumstances, Chu Feng and Zi Ling waited for another half a day, and after half a day, when the head of the Fire God School still didn't return, they calmed down and sneaked into the location of the tomb that they were searching for first.

The tomb of the Fire God School was built very vastly. Normal people's tombs were built underground, but half of this tomb was above ground, and half was underground.

It also meant that in the above ground section of the tomb, there were large palaces. Outside of the palaces, there were tall and big walls. Looking at its outer appearance, that place seemed like a city that stood alone, and on the gates of the city, there were four words written: "Fire God Burial Grounds".

In front of the gates of the Fire God Burial Ground, two core disciples stood. Those two core disciples both had the cultivations of the Profound realm. They stood perfectly straight, as straight as a javelin, and did not move at all.

But Chu Feng and Zi Ling knew that they were absolutely not the only guardians of that tomb. It could be said that the Fire God School valued the Fire God Burial Grounds very heavily, and they posted roughly a thousand core disciples to guard there.

Although being also core disciples, the disciples guarding within the burial grounds were definitely the elites within core disciples. Almost all of them had cultivations in the Profound realm, and even if they weren't in the Profound realm, they were certainly in the peak of the Origin realm.

And other than core disciples, there were around a hundred core elders. The cultivations of those core elders were a lot higher. They were all in the peak of the Profound realm. Most of them were roughly in the 7th level of the Profound realm, and some were even in the 9th level of the Profound realm, being truly in true peak of the Profound realm.

Other than those powerful guarding members, there were even layers of Spirit Formations within the Fire God Burial Grounds and all sorts of mechanisms.

There were even bells for alerting. No matter what kind of intruder dared to enter this place, as long as they were discovered, the guardians would definitely ring the bell immediately and at that time, everyone in the Fire God School would come to reinforce.

So, in order to not “shock the snake by striking the grass”, Chu Feng and Zi Ling's mission was very challenging. Not only did they need to kill everyone in the Fire God Burial Grounds, they had to kill all of them before they made any sounds and could not let them ring the bell to alert.

# Chapter 427: Opening The Tomb

---

swish

Suddenly, a gale flew past and like a ghost, Chu Feng appeared in front of the two gate guards. Without them even feeling anything, the sharp blade in Chu Feng's hand flashed past and he chopped off their heads.

Quickly after, Chu Feng and Zi Ling killed their way into the Fire God Burial Grounds. Those who saw Chu Feng and Zi Ling, no matter if it was a disciple, or an elder, not a single lived. All of them didn't even make any sound before they were killed by Chu Feng and Zi Ling.

Very quickly, Chu Feng and Zi Ling killed all 1058 guardians of the Fire God Burial Grounds.

Then, with Zi Ling's powerful Blue-cloak World Spiritist methods, she broke open layers of Restriction Spirit Formations, opened mechanism after mechanism, and easily intruded the core area of the Fire God Burial Grounds: the underground tomb that was within the underground section of the Fire God Burial Grounds.

“They are truly rich people! Even the tomb is constructed so well. Many main structures of third-rate powers aren't even as lavish as this.”

After walking into the core area of the Fire God Burial Grounds

and seeing the constructs dazzling in gold and jade as well as the delicate and fine ornaments, Chu Feng couldn't help but sigh in admiration.

Also, about the tombs in the Fire God Burial Grounds, every single tombstone was a huge sculpture. What was sculpted was the appearance of the person before death, and on the tombstone, what was recorded was the person's cultivation when alive, their position in the Fire God School, and all their contributions done for the Fire God School.

“The larger the power, the more they love face. This is very normal.” Zi Ling explained.

Even though the little girl was only fifteen years old, her mind was extremely mature and she also had extremely abundant experience. In all areas, she was not inferior to Chu Feng.

“Waa, so many delicious things and they're all fresh! Do they bring these in everyday?”

Because the ones who died outside didn't have very strong strength, Chu Feng was completely uninterested in their Source energies. On the other hand, the food placed in front of the tombstones attracted Chu Feng's interest. He unrestrainedly extended his hand to grab, and as he walked, he ate, and as he ate, he threw, and as he threw, he grabbed more.

“Stop eating. It's time to start working.” Suddenly, Zi Ling cast her gaze forward.

And at that instant, Chu Feng discovered that in front of them, a vast gate appeared. On the gate, a Spirit Formation that did not allow for underestimation was laid there.

That Spirit Formation was very powerful. Clearly, it was left behind by an expert. Even if it was Zi Ling, she needed to lay a Spirit Formation in order to open it.

“My wife, don’t be afraid. We have Spirit Formation Rocks!” Chu Feng waved his hand and quite a few Spirit Formation Rocks appeared in his hand. That thing could strengthen the power of the Spirit Formation and could open the gate even quicker.

Indeed, with Zi Ling’s profound Spirit Formation technique in addition to the assistance of Chu Feng’s Spirit Formation Rocks, the vast gate quickly opened.

“Waa~~” And after the gate opened, in front of Chu Feng’s eyes, light instantly shot in all directions because on the other side of the gate, there were twenty-one tombs.

Around the twenty-one tombs, there was beautiful radiance. They were all Profound beads, Origin beads, and Spiritual beads.

From the three beads, the number of Profound beads could be said to be the least, but there were still at least four to five hundred thousand beads, several million Origin beads, and as for Spiritual beads, it was uncountable, but there were at least several hundreds of millions.

Such precious cultivation resources were flatly spread on the ground, flatly spread around the twenty-one tombs and coffins.

“A huge profit this time! I never would have thought that the Fire God School would truly take so many cultivation resources as offerings to the people who have died. They are truly willing to give so much.” Chu Feng was speechless.

“These are all the school heads in their history who made great contributions for the Fire God School in order for them to be in their current position in the Song Province.”

“The cultivation resources here are only a type of symbol to their power when they lived. It represents no matter how many more cultivation resources there are, no matter how much more wealth, all that could only be stepped under their feet.” Zi Ling explained.

“Zi Ling, say, for a power like the Fire God School, if Profound beads are used as their assets, how much would they have?” Chu Feng curiously asked.

Because, at first, when he saw the masters of the several big powers take out over a hundred thousand Profound beads with such painful expressions, he even thought that a hundred thousand Profound beads was truly a huge number that they could not take out, but looking at it now, that was clearly not true.

“From what I know, if the Prestigious Villa’s assets are calculated with Profound beads, they should have five to six million Profound

beads.”

“As for this Fire God School... They have a longer line of inheritances than the Prestigious Villa, and they have already been the overlord of the Song Province for several hundred years of time. So, I believe that the wealth the Fire God School accumulated, if calculated in terms of Profound beads, should be over six million Profound beads.” Zi Ling explained.

“That many? At first, I even stupidly thought that tricking over a hundred thousand Profound beads from every power made them suffer a huge loss.”

“After so much, it was merely a corner of their icebergs. These selfish stingy people even feigned those painful appearances to me. Damn.” Thinking back at the expressions on the faces of the several heads when he demanded for a million Profound beads, he couldn’t help wanting to curse.

“This is the wealth countless generations of school heads accumulated for the almost a thousand years. You think that they can just casually take them out to use as they wish? To them, if they shift the usage of over a hundred thousand Profound beads randomly, it is already a huge number.”

“After all, powers like these must find victory within stability. Although they have a lot of wealth, they won’t easily use them. Ultimately, they still need to use those huge resources for several tens of millions of disciples to develop batch after batch of outstanding successors. Only then could they experience the long years yet not age, stand tall and not fall, and stabilize the position



of the strongest power.”

“Therefore, they only want to continuously fill the numbers in, so there can be more and more school’s assets in their hands. How could they be willing to take them out?”

Zi Ling sweetly smiled, then quickly after, said to Chu Feng, “I don’t want a single one of these cultivation resources. Take them all.”

“Zi Ling, this...this isn’t too good right?” Actually, Chu Feng truly planned to pocket all of the Profound beads by himself. After all, before, he was alone and it was already a habit to take all the treasures when he saw them.

But only after hearing Zi Ling say it like that did he slowly come to his senses. At present, he no longer moved alone. There was also a Zi Ling by his side! So naturally, he could not enjoy the use of all those cultivation resources.

“Take them all. Looking at how you are looking at those Profound beads, you’re almost going to drool.” Zi Ling smiled and said.

“But, do you not require cultivation resources?” Chu Feng asked.

“Me? I do, but my requirements are absolutely not as huge as yours. It can be said that to me, cultivation resources aren’t that important.”

“It’s because I am a Divine Body. I have divine power in my body, and that’s the greatest assistance to my cultivation. What I need is to endlessly understand the divine power in my body, because they are the crucial existences that raise my cultivation.”

“However, you are the direct opposite of me. Your cultivation requires extremely large amounts of cultivation resources, am I right?” Zi Ling smiled and asked.

“How did you know?” Chu Feng tightly furrowed his brows and felt that Zi Ling seemed to see something through. After all, the Divine Lightning in his body was his greatest secret.

# Chapter 428: Inherited Bloodline

---

“Your thirst in cultivation resources sold you out. At first, before escaping the Prestigious Villa, you didn’t swindle anything but Profound beads, and it was even such a huge number.”

“A few days after you tricked them, your cultivation rose. It’s something that doesn’t make sense.”

“So, if I haven’t guessed incorrectly, your cultivation method is that you need to spend a large amount of resources. So, I know that you aren’t a Divine Body. The special power you grasp very possibly is a type of bloodline. A very strong bloodline.” Zi Ling said.

“Bloodline?” After hearing those words, Chu Feng was astonished because he had never thought that the Divine Lightning in his body was a type of bloodline.

After all, that thing only abruptly drilled into his body when he was ten years old. So before, Chu Feng always felt that he was a Divine Body.

“Yeah. In this world, other than the special divine power that Divine Bodies have, people who have bloodlines passed down to them also grasp special powers.”

“For example, the Jiang Dynasty. What they grasp are special inherited bloodlines. So, when their clan raises their cultivations, they require a large amount of cultivation resources.”

“However, you are different from them.” Zi Ling said.

“Different? How so?” Chu Feng asked.

“If I’m not mistaken, over a million Profound beads have already been completely refined by you, and after refining so many Profound beads, you only rose from the 3rd level of the Profound realm to the 6th level of the Profound realm. The amount of resources you require is extremely horrifying. This is something far from being comparable to the people from the Jiang Dynasty.”

“Besides, you continuously break through levels, so that states two things.”

“First, the amount of cultivation resources you require is enormous. Second, breaking through, for you, is unrestrained. At least, within the levels, there is no limit. As long as you have sufficient cultivation resources, you can easily break through.”

“Am I correct?” Zi Ling asked.

“This... How did you know?” Chu Feng tightly frowned. He never would have thought that the little girl, Zi Ling, had actually seen through him so clearly and even understood his methods of cultivations and his rules of breaking through.

“It’s true? All that I’ve said was right?” However, Zi Ling suddenly celebrated, and answered a question with a question.

“You girl, you were testing me?” Chu Feng saw through Zi Ling’s intention and he couldn’t avoid being a bit angry.

“Actually, I was only guessing because at first, after exchanging blows with you in the White Tiger Villa, I asked my grandfather when I went back. Other than Divine Bodies, what kind of person could grasp extremely strong and special power?”

“My grandfather said that there are two types of people. The first are people who innately have the inheritance of bloodline, and the other are people who cultivate in Forbidden Mysterious Techniques.”

“Those who cultivate Forbidden Mysterious Techniques imitate the cultivation of Divine Bodies. They can, with Forbidden Mysterious Techniques, gain special power that is comparable to Divine Bodies, and the cultivation method is by only studying the Mysterious Technique and they do not require large amounts of cultivation resources.”

“However, those cultivation methods are accompanied by huge dangers. Usually, during the period of time of special cultivation, they will receive the torment from the Mysterious Technique. This is called Divine Punishment.”

“Divine Punishments will appear routinely. If they can bear it, they can continue cultivating. If they can’t, they will die; yet you clearly don’t have anything like that.”

“So, you should be a person who has inherited a bloodline, yet you are clearly different from the people in the Jiang Dynasty. So, it’s impossible that you’re part of the Jiang Dynasty. Also, my grandfather has said...”

“What did your grandfather also say?” Chu Feng impatiently asked closely.

“My grandfather also said that bloodlines are different from Divine Bodies. Divine Bodies are the heavens’ blessing. Their power comes from the bestowment of the heavens. But bloodlines... Their power comes from the cultivator getting it themselves. Their power comes from their own hard work.”

“Bloodline can evolve. After a person’s blood evolves, their future generation: children, grandchildren, can also enjoy similar benefits. So, there are different levels of bloodlines.”

“Levels? What kind of levels?” Chu Feng continued to ask closely because he learned some things that he did not know at all before. Also, things like those really matched what he was currently.

“Even my grandfather doesn’t know about the levels. He said that he only saw some on ancient books, as for if it’s true or false, he cannot confirm either.”

“But my grandfather said that the lowest level of bloodline should be the Emperor Bloodline.”

“For example, the Jiang Dynasty, the Royal Jiang clan. What they inherited should be the Emperor Bloodline, that’s why they’re called the Royal Jiang clan.”

“My grandfather also said that there are actually many clans with Emperor Bloodlines in the Eastern Sea Region. They can’t be considered to be any noble clans. They can only be said to be clans who have been around for longer.”

“So, that’s why the Jiang Dynasty came to a place like the continent of the Nine Provinces to name themselves as king, to name themselves as overlord, because in the Eastern Sea Region, they are truly not much. Instead, in this place, they can name themselves as overlord of an area and safe and stably develop.”

“As for the clans that are stronger than the Jiang Dynasty, there are quite a few. But in reality, they also have the Emperor Bloodline. Only because the blood in their bodies are stronger, that caused them to be stronger than other royal clans, and only then could they occupy a section of land in the Eastern Sea Region.”

“Anyway, at least in the Eastern Sea Region, my grandfather has not seen a clan that is above royal clans, which also means that in the Eastern Sea Region, bloodlines stronger than the Emperor Bloodline haven’t appeared before.”

“But that’s not the important part. The important part is that the special area of your bloodline is different from the Jiang Dynasty’s. My grandfather once said that the higher level the bloodline is, the amount of cultivation resources that person would need would be even more enormous.”

“Because, people with powerful bloodlines will always have higher difficulty walking on the road of martial cultivation. So, the resources they need to feed their blood will become even more enormous.”

“This is the so-called price. Because bloodlines aren’t Divine Bodies, they will not get the blessing of the heavens.”

“So, for people who inherit bloodlines, if they want to gain power, they need to pay a greater price and they must rely on themselves to gain it.”

“Also, the higher level a person’s bloodline is, the smaller the restriction they have. That also means that as long as one has sufficient resources, they can infinitely break through levels.”

“That’s a person with a high-level bloodline. The most obvious sign is that they break through levels quickly, and it is within reason because the power of their bloodline is strong in such a way, and it can shake away many bindings because of that.”

“For example, if a normal person wants to make a breakthrough for a single level, after accumulating enough power, they must go comprehend it. They must understand the entire new realm, but people with very high level bloodlines don’t need to comprehend anything.”

“It’s because their talents are high like that. They are strong like that. They don’t need to understand levels, because ever since



entering the realm itself, they already understood the realm's everything.”

“Of course, talent like that will always still be restricted. For example, the heaven realm. Even if people have higher-leveled bloodlines, after reaching that realm, they will still be required to understand it, and the difficulty of understanding will become more difficult as the realm rises.” Zi Ling said.

## Chapter 429: Very Understandable

---

“But no matter what you say, people with high level bloodlines, when breaking through the bindings of a realm, breaks through a lot easier when compared to many people. Even if it is compared to me, it is easier because this is the strength of inheriting a bloodline. From the day you were born, you were a martial cultivation genius.”

“My grandfather even said regarding people who have inherited bloodlines, if the bloodline level in their bodies reach a certain degree, they would be even stronger than Divine Bodies, and their future achievements would be inestimable.”

“It’s because even if it is a Divine Body and it receives the blessing of the heavens from a young age, after reaching a certain realm, breaking through would also be an extremely difficult thing. However, it is a lot easier for people with high-level bloodlines.” Zi Ling seriously said, detailedly narrating the differences between Divine Bodies and inherited bloodlines.

“Haha, nonsense! Inherited bloodlines are brought innately, yet clearly, divine lighting broke into your body and took the initiative to drill into your body. How is it possible that you have an innate inherited bloodline?” Just at that time, Eggy suddenly smiled mockingly and said.

“That’s right. Eggy is very right. Although the inherited bloodline Zi Ling said matches completely with my situation, there one thing that doesn’t match. Zi Ling also said that inherited bloodlines are brought innately and are fated to be a genius when

born.”

“But I am not like that. Before I was ten years old, I was a normal person. Only after the divine body entered my body did I gain this ability.” Chu Feng also muttered to himself and he was a bit unclear what situation he himself was.

“Chu Feng, can you tell me right now where you came from and what level your bloodline is?”

Suddenly, Zi Ling’s clear pupils became extremely solemn. She seriously started at Chu Feng, and her gaze was filled with yearning. Yearning to get Chu Feng’s answer.

“Ca...Can I say that even I don’t know where I came from, and that even I don’t know what’s the deal with the special power I grasp?” Chu Feng helplessly said.

“Of course you can, I believe you.” However, Zi Ling relievedly smiled, then afterwards, didn’t ask anymore. She jumped onto a coffin, turned her head around, and said to Chu Feng, “All the cultivation resources will belong to you, but these Source energies will belong to me.”

“This...” After hearing those words, Chu Feng was a bit speechless because Eggy also needed to raise her strength. Eggy’s method of raising his strength was to refine Source energy.

In front of him, there were so many complete Source energies

from experts. To Eggy, it was absolutely hugely attractive, something that could only be met by luck and not found.

However, Zi Ling already gave a large amount of cultivation resources to himself. If he still fought over the Source energies with Zi Ling, Chu Feng would really feel bad. If he didn't, he would feel sorry for Eggy. In that instant, he sank into a predicament.

“I've got it.”

Suddenly, Chu Feng found a thought. It was to only take half of the cultivation resources, then he would also take half of the Source energies. Damage his own benefits to help create benefits for Eggy.

“Idiot. What are you thinking about? Just give all of the Source energies to her. I don't need this tiny bit of Source energy. Right now, the most important thing is to quickly raise your cultivation. Don't you want to save Su Rou and Su Mei?” But just as Chu Feng was in a difficult situation, Eggy's kind and understanding voice suddenly rang out.

“Eggy, I...” At that instant, Chu Feng was truly unable to describe his feelings. The warmth in his heart flowed, yet he felt even guiltier.

It was because he knew that it was impossible for Eggy to not want those Source energies, but for himself, Eggy made a sacrifice. Also, in order to not make Chu Feng feel bad, she even pretended to be so unconcerned.

“Okay, don’t be so sensitive. Wait until you get stronger, then help me find even more Source energies. Now, go quickly collect those cultivation resources.” Eggy sweetly smiled. Although she seemed wild and unrestrained, in reality, she was cute and likeable.

“Mm.” Chu Feng nodded his head, and he also didn’t hold himself back. He took out his Cosmos Sack, then started to collect the cultivation resources on the ground in large amounts. There were too many cultivation resources.

Especially Spiritual beads. But no matter how much more Spiritual beads there were, to the current Chu Feng, their use was limited so Chu Feng only collected all the Origin beads and Profound beads.

“Finished?” When Chu Feng collected the last Profound bead into his Cosmos Sack, he discovered that Zi Ling was sitting on a tombstone. She waved her snow-white legs and from above, looked downwards at him.

At that instant, Chu Feng’s eyes flashed and a hint of red couldn’t help but appear on his face. He shamelessly smiled and said, “Pink.”

“What’s pink?” After hearing Chu Feng’s word, the pure Zi Ling’s didn’t react to it at first. But after seeing Chu Feng’s shameless and lewd smile, Zi Ling instantly understood.

She hurriedly combined her legs, rushed down from the tombstone, and loudly cursed Chu Feng, “Dirty.”

“I... I didn’t see anything.” Seeing that his actions were revealed, Chu Feng quickly closed his eyes.

“You...” That made Zi Ling furious. She extended her hand and wished to strike, but ultimately, she retracted it, fiercely glared at Chu Feng, and said, “A total of twenty-one Source energy remains, all in the Heaven realm.”

“Because my World Spirit needs to quickly break through, I refined eleven. Give the ten remaining to your World Spirit.”

“Zi Ling, you...” After hearing those words, Chu Feng was greatly shocked and he was a bit speechless.

“Don’t say all these you’s and I’s. Quickly go refine them. I know that you also have a World Spirit in your body and it also needs Source energy quite a bit. Or else, you wouldn’t go absorb your opponent’s Source energy every time you kill someone.” Zi Ling said.

Seeing that, Chu Feng no longer stayed stubborn and with warmth that filled his heart, he rushed towards the coffins that were already opened by Zi Ling and helped Eggy absorb and refine the Source energy.

“Chu Feng oh Chu Feng, I must say that your future wife is quite

understanding!”

“Not bad, not bad. I quite like her.” After refining the ten remains, Eggy’s cultivation had broke into the 7th level of the Profound realm. She was even one level higher than Chu Feng, and that caused her to feel very satisfied.

“You girl, aren’t you very understanding as well? When are you going to consider being my future wife?” Chu Feng giggled and said.

“You dare? If you dare to have any thoughts towards me, see if I castrate you or not. Hmph.” However, what was given back was Eggy’s emotionless insult.

“Chu Feng, what should we do now? Do we leave this place, or are we going to do something?” Zi Ling asked.

“Since we have already made a mess, of course we need to make a bigger mess. Let’s tear open all these ancestor’s corpses, then throw all the coffins and tombstones out.” Chu Feng coldly smiled, and as he said he was going to do it, he was doing it.

He first destroyed all of the remains of the previous ancestors and meritorious people of the Fire God School out, then afterwards, threw out all the coffins and tombstones.

After doing that, Zi Ling and Chu Feng started their attacks. What they did first as to make a complete mess of the Fire God

Burial Grounds, and they destroyed it to the point it became unrecognizable.



# Chapter 430: Old Ancestor Of The Fire God School

---

“This is bad. Someone is destroying the Fire God Burial Grounds!”

“Dammit, who dares to be so insolent, and dares to be disrespectful to my Fire God School’s previous ancestors?!”

The attacks of Chu Feng and Zi Ling very quickly attracted the attentions of the Fire God School’s elders and disciples. Large batches of elders and disciples started to, from within the Fire God School, hurry towards the direction of the Fire God Burial Grounds. Bursts of urgent bell rings rang out following that.

“The one who is destroying the Fire God Burial Grounds is your grandfather, Chu Feng.” Chu Feng flew out of the Fire God Burial Grounds, waved the Asura Ghost Axe in his hand, and wildly slaughtered the Fire God School’s disciples and elders who were on the ground.

“Crap, it’s Chu Feng! Run! Everyone run!” In front of Chu Feng, the Fire God School’s disciples and elders were like dirty residue. Chu Feng was killing them high in the air, and every single move and action could greatly injure or kill them. There was no one who could fight against it.

Zi Ling even directly steered her Exquisite Chariot and called her Saint Spirit World World Spirit out. Her killing methods were not the slightest bit weaker than Chu Feng, She would only be superior

and not inferior.

That put the Fire God School's elders and disciples in a horrible position. Currently, the school head and manager elders were all not there, and there was no one who could defeat Chu Feng and Zi Ling. If that went on, their Fire God School would be destroyed by them and be flattened.

“Speak. Where are your Fire God School's cultivation resources? Where's the treasury that stores the treasures?” Chu Feng grabbed a core elder and loudly interrogated.

“I... I don't know! I truly don't know! Only the school head himself knows!” That elder hurriedly shook his head, and he was frightened to the point his pants wet.

“If you don't know, go die.” Chu Feng coldly snorted, then threw out a palm and turned the elder into a pool of blood.

“Quick! Quickly open the Defense Formations! We cannot let them enter the Fire God School or else my Fire God School's tens of millions of disciples and elders will die!” At a time like that, the elders of the Fire God School could only open up the Defense Spirit Formations that were laid beforehand.

Blue-coloured Spirit Formations charged into the sky. The light pierced through the white clouds and sealed the city from the sky. The boundless Spirit Formations fully opened, and indeed, it caused people to sigh and stop to observe. It was a rare amazing sight.

“Hmph. Even Spirit Formations like these want to stop me?” However, as Zi Ling willed, the Exquisite Chariot rose into the sky. With rainbows, it charged towards the boundless Spirit Formations.

boom The Exquisite Chariot went through the vast sky and with bursts of explosions, the Spirit Formations that the Fire God School laid were destroyed one by one.

“Hell! The Spirit Formations were broken through! Run! Everyone run! Quickly leave the Fire God School or else we will die!”

Seeing that even the Defense Spirit Formations were unable to obstruct Chu Feng and Zi Ling, the elders of the Fire God School thoroughly panicked. They started to order the core disciples to quickly retreat and leave the Fire God School.

After all, those disciples were the future of the Fire God School. If any accidents happened to them, it would be equivalent to cutting off the Fire God School’s foundation as well as their future paths.

So, many huge White-headed Eagles started to rise into the sky and fly away from the Fire God School. The ones who were sitting on them were all core disciples of the Fire God School.

“Want to run? Are you able to?” Chu Feng was satisfiedly slaughtering at the moment, and he was picking core disciples to kill. Seeing that a large number of core disciples planned to escape,

naturally, he would not let them go.

“Who are the ones invading my Fire God School?!!!”

But just at that time, a thundering and furious shout suddenly rang out from the back mountains of the Fire God School.

That sound was extremely deafening and even Chu Feng's ears hummed from being shaken. Looking at Zi Ling, the girl with a Divine Body, even her little face of absolute beauty changed.

boom Suddenly, a burst of boundless might rose from the huge mountains as an exceptional expert came out from the back mountain of the Fire God School.

His speed was extremely quick. Even quicker than Chu Feng's Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens. His might was also extremely powerful. As he flew in mid-air, even the surrounding space twisted and changed, as if unable to hold his might back.

“Crap, it's the former head of the Fire God School! This old monster is actually still living! This aura... He has definitely entered the 6th level of the Heaven realm.”

“Chu Feng, quickly run! Neither of us will be able to defeat him!” With her sharp Spirit power, Zi Ling was the first to detect his cultivation. She hurriedly urged the Exquisite Chariot to arrive next to her, then quickly after, while pulling Chu Feng, they jumped onto the Exquisite Chariot and prepared to escape.

Simultaneously, the former head of the Fire God School, the old ancestor within many eyes of the disciples, had already arrived above the Fire God School and saw the silhouettes of Chu Feng and Zi Ling jumping into the Exquisite Chariot.

Seeing Chu Feng and Zi Ling's panicked appearances, he determined that the ones who caused destruction in the Fire God School today were definitely them. So, the old man furiously yelled, "Where did these two brats come from and dares to be so insolent in my Fire God School?!"

As he spoke, he waved his big sleeve, raised his hand, and palmed. Boundless Heaven power became formless huge waves and the air changed from being stirred. The layers of waves overlaid one another, causing the weather to change. They forced their way towards the Exquisite Chariot that Chu Feng and Zi Ling were on.

"Old thing, rather than asking me why I came to your Fire God School, ask your unfilial successor! The actions that I, Chu Feng, did today were all forced by him!"

The speed of the Exquisite Chariot was very fast. After Chu Feng's explosive yell sounded out, it became a long rainbow, flew into the clouds, and no traces of it could be seen after a blink.

"Chu Feng? That young man is called Chu Feng?" As the Fire God School's old ancestor watched the chariot that was disappearing from his field of view, he tightly furrowed his brows. Afterwards, he angrily shouted towards the Fire God School underneath him,

“Kong Chenguang!!”

“Kong Chenguang!!”

“What is happening?! Come out and give me an explanation!!”

That old ancestor’s strength was really too strong. His angry shout caused the ground to shake, the forests to tremble, and truly, mountains collapsed and grounds cracked.

In a situation like that, some disciples were even unable to endure that sound and they directly spat out blood from the shock and were heavily injured.

As for the Kong Chenguang he was shouting out to, there were very few disciples who knew who he was. Only some core disciples knew that the one he was calling out for was the current head of the Fire God School.

The old ancestor of the Fire God School was painstakingly cultivating in isolation, but he was awakened by the urgent alarms. After coming out, he discovered that the Fire God School was made into a mess by two brats, and if he didn’t come out in time, it was likely that today, the Fire God School would have been destroyed by the two children and the foundation of almost a thousand years would have been ruined.

The head of the Fire God School, Kong Chenguang, as well as the

manager elders of the Fire God School were all not in the school. It meant that Kong Chenguang didn't follow his instructions back then and didn't guard the Fire God School well. How could he not be furious?

But that was still mild. After the old ancestor discovered that the Fire God Burial Grounds were torn down by Chu Feng, and that the corpses of the past generations' heads and elders of the Fire God School were destroyed by Chu Feng, only then did the fury truly explode.

So, when the head of the Fire God School led the group of manager elders back, they could not avoid receiving extremely serious punishments.

# Coincidence



# Chapter 431: Shocking The Nine Provinces

---

The head of the Fire God School, Kong Chenguang, had his position of school head taken away. After being painfully beaten, he was even forced into confinement. The old ancestor of the Fire God School who had been cultivating in isolation for over a decade came out once again and retook control over the Fire God School.

The reason was very simple. Chu Feng caused the Fire God School to have no face, so he had to kill Chu Feng or else it would be impossible to dispel his heart's fury.

But the news that very rapidly spread throughout the continent of the Nine Provinces and could not be avoided was Chu Feng and Zi Ling visiting the Fire God School, the disciples of the school being slaughtered, the tombs of their ancestors being dug, and forcing out the old ancestor of the Fire God School who was painstakingly cultivating.

After that news was known, it was undoubtedly explosive. There was almost no one who wasn't greatly shocked.

It was because Chu Feng was getting more and more bold. He defied common sense more and more, and he had actually broke common sense so much that he took the initiative to go to the Fire God School to make a mess. He even dug up the tombs of the Fire God School's ancestors, killed a large number of elders and disciples, destroyed countless palaces, and it was said that even the Defense Formations the Fire God School asked the Jie clan to laid were broken.

If the old ancestor of the Fire God School didn't come out, the Fire God School would have been flattened. That was really too terrifying. Chu Feng was really too terrifying.

But other than Chu Feng, there was also another person who became famous. It was Zi Ling.

As long as one mentioned a purple-clothed young female who was in the 9th level of the Profound realm and had strength that similarly broke common sense, many people could associate her with Lady Zi Ling who announced, at the Prestigious Villa's Marriage Gathering, that she was willing to follow Chu Feng's footsteps.

A sixteen-year-old young man, in addition to a fifteen-year-old young woman, almost destroyed a trump card power that had been existing for nearly a thousand years. What did that mean? It didn't mean that the Fire God School was too weak. It only meant their opponents were too strong.

Chu Feng was definitely a person who was going to become an extremely powerful person. It was something the entire continent of the Nine Provinces publicly agreed on.

Chu Feng's battle power that defied common sense. Chu Feng's bold nerves and recklessness. Chu Feng's bloodthirsty nature. Chu Feng's insane actions. All of those had already made commotions from being known.

Chu Feng, the sixteen-year-old young man, became the most

heatedly discussed person in the continent of the Nine Provinces, and the name Chu Feng also became the representation of evil.

When some young children of grand martial cultivation families were disobedient, the seniors would even say, “Chu Feng would come to catch you if you don’t listen!” The little children would then obediently listen.

But there were also some people who felt that Chu Feng was brave and imposing enough. Even if the many powers on the continent of the Nine Provinces all wanted him dead, he was still not afraid in the slightest.

Not only did he escape this continent, he even dealt with those powers and caused them to suffer from heavy losses again and again. They were attacked again and again, and they were almost completely annihilated.

It had to be said that Chu Feng became an idol in some young people’s hearts. He became a person of adoration for many people, and some people even made biographies about Chu Feng’s rumours.

They did that because those people felt that the young man Chu Feng would definitely become a huge character that would shake the world, He could even possibly surpass the existence of the Azure Dragon Founder and become another legend of the continent of the Nine Provinces.

There were even many ladies who loudly yelled that they loved

Chu Feng and wanted to marry him. They were willing to be like Zi Ling, to follow Chu Feng's footsteps, and begged Chu Feng to accept them.

There were even some insane males who said they admired Chu Feng and were willing to befriend him and become brothers with him to fight against the many powers together.

All in all, in the current continent of the Nine Provinces, the person who was mentioned the most was Chu Feng. News that were paid most attention to were also things about Chu Feng and the six big powers.

When the news regarding the Fire God School were known, the ones most stunned were none other than the Yuangang School, Free and Unrestrained Valley, Hidden White Sect, Sword God Valley, and Jie clan.

It didn't matter much for the Jie clan. After all, within the clan, not only did they have Jie Xingpeng to stabilize their position, they even had an outstanding genius-level old ancestor who dumbfounded the continent a hundred years ago.

There were also many experts in the Jie clan, and their Spirit Formations were even so exceptionally powerful. They were not worried about Chu Feng going to their Jie clan to stir up a mess. Rather, if Chu Feng hurried there, it would simply be the same as sending himself to his death.

But the Yuangang School, Free and Unrestrained Valley, Hidden

White Sect, and Sword God Valley were different. They weren't as strong as the Jie clan, so they worried that they would get emptied and suffer huge losses like how the Fire God School did.

So, the four powers had also asked their respective old ancestors currently cultivating in isolation to come out and let them take over the general situation.

When all five old ancestors of the five big powers came out of their mountains and learnt about the matter's whole story, they also felt that their successors did the correct actions and approved of killing Chu Feng.

So, the five old ancestors joined up their names and reported to the Jiang Dynasty, imploring the dynasty to increase the offensive power towards Chu Feng even more.

In reality, the Jiang Dynasty was like an owner of a shop that only ordered others to do things and did nothing itself. Although it was the overlord of the continent of the Nine Provinces, other than the Han Province it occupied, all of the other provinces were handled by the strong powers which had been existing for long times. Every year, the Jiang Dynasty was only responsible for collecting some taxes and collecting some presents. They didn't care about anything else.

The Yuangang School, Prestigious Villa, Fire God School, Hidden White Sect, Sword God Valley, and Free and Unrestrained Valley were incidentally the targets they appointed for the several big provinces.

So, when the old ancestors of those powers joined up with their names, even if the Jiang Dynasty didn't want to handle that issue, in order to stabilize people's hearts, more or less, they would have to make their move.

So, the Jiang Dynasty announced to the world that the princess of the Jiang Dynasty, the number one genius of the young generation, "Jiang Yini", led a hundred Heaven realm experts out, and swore to find Chu Feng to bind him with the ropes of the law.

When that news became known, it instantly caused great shock. One hundred Heaven realm experts. How powerful was the Jiang Dynasty? They actually so casually sent out a hundred Heaven realm experts?

On the surface, the Jiang Dynasty was valuing the six big powers. It was valuing the safety of the citizens of the continent of the Nine Provinces.

But in reality, they were flaunting their own strength in order to let the powers of the world to never forget who the master of the continent of the Nine Provinces was. To let them know who, in an ordinary day, could completely change everything in a single province.

But if the Jiang Dynasty wanted to exterminate them, it would only be something that would be finished in a split moment. The position of the Jiang Dynasty could not be shaken. Even if all the powers in the continent of the Nine Provinces joined hands, they

would be unable to fight against the Jiang Dynasty.

No matter how much better the development of the other powers got, no matter how much stronger they got, they would still remain as a tiny hill, while the Jiang Dynasty would be a towering, unmoveable huge peak.

As loud discussions were stirred up when the Jiang Dynasty made their move, Chu Feng, the focus of these matters, disappeared once again.

In actuality, after Chu Feng and Zi Ling made such a huge mess in the Fire God School, the two of them left the Qin Province, stepped over several big provinces, and arrived at another neighbouring province of the Azure Province, the Yuan Province.

The Yuan Province was the land of the Hidden White Sect. When they arrived there at first, Chu Feng and Zi Ling originally wanted to redo the old tricks by digging the ancestors' tombs of the Hidden White Sect, and also slaughter their sect's disciples as they were digging.

But they could do nothing as the news about the Fire God School spread too quickly. When Chu Feng and Zi Ling arrived at the Yuan Province, the head of the Hidden White Sect already asked the old ancestor to come out. Also, they strictly increased defense and many disciples and elders outside were called back, as they were deeply afraid of receiving Chu Feng's poisonous hands.

In that situation, Chu Feng and Zi Ling could only temporarily

remain peaceful for a while. Thus, the two of them found a hidden place and started to cultivate in seclusion.

Zi Ling continued to try breaking into her Heaven realm, while Chu Feng was refining his grand piles and piles of cultivation resources. The Profound beads were acceptable: After all, there were only a million or so beads. But there were really too god damn many Origin beads, and they truly exhausted quite a bit of Chu Feng's time.



## Chapter 432: Honestly Explaining

---

“Oh? You’ve failed again?” When Chu Feng finished refining the last Origin bead and walked out of the mountain cave, he discovered that Zi Ling was sitting at the entrance of another mountain cave. Looking at her dispirited appearance, she clearly failed to make a breakthrough again.

“Shut up. Do you think breaking into the Heaven realm is that easy?” Zi Ling fiercely glared at Chu Feng, then quickly after, said, “Chu Feng, right now, even the Jiang Dynasty has sent out people. And about that princess Jiang Yini, I’ve heard about her from my grandfather.”

“When my grandfather was cultivating in a dangerous place, he met Jiang Yini. She’s the Jiang Dynasty’s current number one genius within the young generation. When my grandfather met her, she was already in the 5th level of the Heaven realm. I’m sure that at present, it is very possible that she already reached the 6th level of the Heaven realm.”

“Also, the methods the people from the Jiang Dynasty grasp are very strong. If Jiang Yini finds us, I’m afraid that we will not have much luck. How about...we leave the continent of the Nine Provinces and go to the Eastern Sea Region?”

“Eastern Sea Region? Is that place far?” Chu Feng asked.

“Far! Of course it’s far. We would need to pass several continents. For some of those continents, there would be people living, and for

other continents, there would simply be deserts. We would also need to pass many sea regions before truly arriving at the Eastern Sea Region. With the speed of my Exquisite Chariot, it would probably take half a year.” Zi Ling said.

“Half a year?” After hearing those words, Chu Feng whose heart was originally a bit moved instantly dispelled that thought. It would take half a year to go there, and a year would pass in total to come back. He could not waste that time. He could not afford to waste it.

“What’s wrong?” Seeing that Chu Feng seemed to be in a bit of a difficult situation, Zi Ling asked confusedly.

“Zi Ling, to be honest, temporarily, I cannot leave the continent of the Nine Provinces.” Chu Feng said.

“Why? Do you have something you need to do? Or do you feel that your cultivation isn’t enough?” Zi Ling asked.

And when he saw Zi Ling’s concerned appearance, Chu Feng was really unable bear continue hiding it from her. So, he told everything about himself and Su Rou and Su Mei, as well as the method to save them both, all to Zi Ling.

After hearing those things, Zi Ling went silent. Her clear eyes were no longer clear, and no one knew what she was thinking about.

“Zi Ling, I shouldn’t have hidden this matter from you. Are you blaming me? Blaming that I didn’t tell you earlier that I already have two fiancées before you?”

“Idiot. What are you thinking about? A male marrying three, four wives is a very normal thing. How could I blame you?”

“I, Zi Ling, said I approve of you, so I approve of you. No matter what kind of person you are, it has already been set that I will follow you. If you want to rescue the world’s commoners, then I will do good and give aid. If you want to slaughter everyone in the world, then I will also become a mad murderer along with you.”

“Besides, having a few extra sisters should be a very happy thing. At least girls know girls better, and it would be a lot more interesting than facing your face every day right?” Speaking to that point, an expression of incomparable yearning emerged onto Zi Ling’s face.

And when Chu Feng saw Zi Ling who was like that, his tense heart couldn’t help but relax because after the past few days of being together, Chu Feng discovered that Zi Ling was actually a person who dared to follow through with both love and hate. At least, she truly dared to be reckless for himself.

So, Chu Feng truly liked Zi Ling more and more. He hoped to take Zi Ling as a wife so he could live his life with a female like her.

“Then, what were you just thinking about?” Chu Feng asked with smiles.

“About that huh... I was thinking about a bold thing, but before I step into the Heaven realm, I cannot execute it so I won't tell you for now.” Zi Ling smirked and said.

“Tch, still playing the secrets game with me. You're too stingy. Whatever whatever, girls are always very stingy. How can you be as magnanimous as us men? Come come come, I'll tell you a secret.” Chu Feng mysteriously said.

“What secret?” Seeing that, Zi Ling curious asked.

“As a matter of fact, as long as you sleep together with me and let me do the thing between a man and a woman with you, perhaps my cultivation can greatly increase.” Chu Feng said shameless words on the surface, but his face had extremely serious solemnness.

“You! Go die!!” Zi Ling furiously howled, and a big slap flew towards Chu Feng.

With the experience of being together in these past few days, Chu Feng had already mastered a unique skill of dodging slaps at any time and any place. So, he darted, evaded Zi Ling's strike, and said with a face full of grievance, “What I said was true!”

“What I said was true as well. Quickly go die!” Zi Ling was truly angry. With a beautiful dash, she came up to Chu Feng.

This time, Chu Feng was caught off guard and with a carelessness, his ear was pinched by Zi Ling, then afterwards, Zi Ling twisted her hand and from the inside of the mountain cave, a painful shriek that was like a howl of a wolf or ghost rang out, “Ahh~~~ Save me! My future wife is killing her husband!!”

Only after being tormented for an entire morning then did the two finally calm down. Zi Ling sat on a huge tree, and while swaying her snow-white, slender, and beautiful legs, she pouted her little mouth as if she was still angry at Chu Feng.

“My wife, lunchtime is here! Today’s dishes are... roasted alligator, roasted tiger, roasted bear, roasted boar, roasted eagle, and roasted goose. What do you want to eat?” Chu Feng’s shout came from under the tree.

“I don’t want to eat nothing but wild beasts’ meat. I want to eat delicious foods that look good, smell good, and taste good.” Zi Ling said.

“Delicious foods... I don’t know how to make them!” Chu Feng scratched his head, then leaped, landed on the huge tree, and knelt next to Zi Ling.

He spoke to Zi Ling while grinning, “My wife, how about today, I bring you out to eat a good meal?”

“Hurray hurray! Go eat what?” After hearing those words, Zi Ling who got tired of the wild tastes instantly clapped and yelled hurray.

“We’ll go eat whatever you want to eat. My wife, come on the dragon!” Chu Feng rose into the air, and an azure dragon appeared underneath. After flying two circles around the huge tree, he came up to her.

“No need. Yours is too slow. It’s much better to sit on my chariot.” Zi Ling shook her head.

“What do you even know? This is called romance. Quickly come up and let’s go for a breeze.” Chu Feng firmly said.

“Fine.” Zi Ling hesitated a bit, but she still leaped and sat on the back of Chu Feng’s azure dragon.

This time, Zi Ling extended her arms without Chu Feng asking and clasped them around Chu Feng’s waist. She also stuck her little face of absolute beauty on Chu Feng back.

Feeling Zi Ling’s actions, Chu Feng rejoiced in his heart and his face couldn’t help but reveal a smile of happiness. Afterwards, with a thought, the azure dragon underneath him flew into the sky, pierced into the blue sky and in between the white clouds.

“My wife, what do you want to eat?”

“I want to eat red-braised pork ribs, spicy shredded meat, dry stirred fish, stewed chicken...”

“Wife, so you’re a carnivorous animal.”

“I never said I was a vegetarian.”

“You know, I have one thing on a body that’s pretty delicious.”

“Go die.”

“Ahh~~~~ I haven’t said anything yet!”

# Chapter 433: This Is Called A Spiritual Bead

---

Chu Feng rode the azure dragon formed by the martial skill, and while carrying the little outstanding beauty, they travelled through the white clouds while facing cool wind breezes. It was called being at ease. It was called being refreshed.

So, Chu Feng couldn't help but circle a few more times in the air because the feeling of Zi Ling, his future wife, hugging him was truly comfortable and he couldn't bear losing that feeling.

“If you still don't bring me to eat, I will starve to death!” Only until Zi Ling lashed out and loudly howled did Chu Feng hurriedly quicken his speed to head towards areas with human residences.

“Dammit. Damn Chu Feng, stinking Chu Feng, you dare to play around with me? You said you would bring me to eat some delicious food, yet you randomly fly and spin in the air. The sun has almost set, but I haven't seen you find a city yet. I will really starve to death!”

Who was Zi Ling? She was a typical nobly born lady, so with any small defect, like being hungry, her “lady” temper would come.

At that instant, her pure-white and slender hands no longer honestly hugged Chu Feng. They were like two pliers as they madly squeezed many different parts of Chu Feng's body to vent her anger.

“Ahh~~~~~My wife, forgive me!!”



“It’s just that seeing such a beautiful day with quite nice weather, I wanted to...”

“You’re still speaking?”

“Ahh~~~~”

“Okay! Look, there’s a village ahead! How about we go there for a meal?”

“Whatever. Right now, as long as I have something to eat, it’ll be fine because I already don’t want to move from hunger.”

He was really unable to take Zi Ling’s torture, so Chu Feng didn’t bother finding a decent restaurant in a city.

At this time, a satisfactory village appeared underneath. Although it could not be said to be very flourishing, that village would definitely have things like chicken, duck, and goose.

So, after Chu Feng circled around, he landed outside the village. Afterwards, with the mysterious mask, he changed his face and brought Zi Ling into the village.

“Wuu~~~Wuu~~~”

However, just as they entered the village, Chu Feng felt strange.

On the road of the village, it seemed very quiet and only a group of children were playing.

Even if they passed a few old people occasionally, they were depressed with their heads looking down. The most important part was that with sharp detection power, Chu Feng was able to hear some sobbing that was currently coming from some houses. If those sobs didn't belong to old people, then they belonged to women, and they were extremely sorrowful.

“Chu Feng, something must have happened here.” Suddenly, Zi Ling spoke. Clearly, she who had even sharper Spirit power already felt the abnormality of the village.

“Waa, big sister, you're so beautiful!” Just at that time, that group of children discovered Chu Feng and Zi Ling. They crowded up and surrounded them.

Zi Ling was really too beautiful. Her face was as if it shouldn't appear in the mortal world, so all the people who saw her would be attracted by her extremely beautiful face. The group of children who were innately lacking evil could not resist being drawn to her.

“Oi, snot child, don't touch!”

Chu Feng saw a girl with a face full of snot, hands full of snot, mouth full of snot, extending her hand, which was covered with snot, wanting to touch Zi Ling's purple-coloured skirt.

That made Chu Feng angry. Even he didn't dare to so shamelessly touch Zi Ling, yet that dirty child did. How could Chu Feng endure it?

"Ah! So scary!" However, Chu Feng regretted shouting because his voice was too loud and it terrified the group of children.

"Chu Feng, it doesn't matter. If the clothes get dirty, just wash it and it'll be fine right? Don't scare this group of children." Zi Ling sweetly smiled, then had actually hugged the girl with a face full of snot and asked, "Little lady, what's your name?"

"I'm called Erya." After the little girl with snot wiped the snot on her face, she spoke while smiling. It could be seen that she was very happy.

"Big sister, I'm called Gousheng." Just at that time, a little boy even dirtier than the snot girl ran over. He even shamelessly opened his arms and wanted Zi Ling to hug him.

"She didn't even ask you, so why tell her that?" A fat child shot a glance at the dirty boy and obviously, even he, who was a companion of the dirty boy, couldn't bear looking at his shameless action.

"No matter if you ask me or not, I'm still called Gousheng. Big sister, I also want a hug!" After the dirty boy fiercely returned a glare at the little fatty, he shamelessly pounced towards Zi Ling.

“You can go hug fart. Go back to your home and find your mother to hug.” Chu Feng suddenly extended his foot and kicked the little boy’s butt, throwing him one meter away. Girls were fine, but even the boy wanted to take advantage of her? To Chu Feng, that boy shouldn’t even think about it.

“Chu Feng, this group of children are truly very cute!” Zi Ling really liked the group of little children who were around five or six years old and she was extremely happy when playing with the group of dirty little children. Looking at her appearance, it seemed that she already forgot about her stomach being hungry.

“You like children? Me too!” Chu Feng maliciously smiled, then said to Zi Ling, “My wife, when should we also have a child?”

“Sure! If you want to die, give it a try?” Purple light flashed in Zi Ling’s pupils and instantly, Chu Feng backed one step away from fright then said with a smile, “Just a joke. But wife, I feel that your way of thinking is correct. We are still young, and it wouldn’t be late to have children or anything like that in the future.”

“Hmph.” Zi Ling curled her mouth and coldly snorted. In these days, she gradually got used to Chu Feng’s shamelessness.

“Erya, Gousheng, look. What’s this?” Suddenly, Chu Feng had a clever thought. He took ten Spiritual beads out from his Cosmos Sack.

There were truly an uncountable number of those things in the Fire God Burial Grounds of the Fire God School back then. But they

were useless as the spiritual energy they contained was too low so they weren't too useful for Chu Feng.

But even though those things didn't help cultivation too much, they were the most common and widely used currency. A single spiritual bead was already enough for a commoner to richly live through several generations without worries about food or clothing, while greatly eating fish and meat for meals.

So, at that time, Chu Feng casually collected a few. The reason was to avoid lacking money to pay people when they were eating outside.

After all, embarrassing things like those did indeed happen before on Chu Feng. Besides, to normal commoners, even if Chu Feng took out things like Profound beads or Origin beads, they might not necessarily recognize it. Instead, Spiritual beads had the best effects.

“Waa, big brother, your marbles are so pretty! Can you give them to Erya?”

“I also want them as well! Big brother, give them to Gousheng! I'll take my glass marbles to exchange for yours!”

Seeing the Spiritual beads which overflowed with radiance, little stars instantly appeared in the children's eyes and had actually thought that the Spiritual beads were the little marbles they played with.

But the most shameless one was still the dirty little child called Gousheng. He had actually took a dozen or so ragged and broken marbles that were grinded from rocks out from his pockets and he wanted to take the marbles that were dirty and ugly and broken and ragged for Chu Feng's Spiritual beads.

“All of you lack experience, so let me tell you this. These aren't marbles you play with. These are Spiritual beads. They are treasures, so they are worth a lot.” Chu Feng explained.

## Chapter 434: Elder Sister Goddess

---

“Big brother, give these treasures to me! Erya really likes them!” The snot girl in Zi Ling’s embrace extended hand and wanted to grab them.

“Big brother, give one to me! Will it not work if I take these to trade for one of yours?” The shameless dirty child pushed the marble he took out from his pants up to Chu Feng.

“If you want them, fine. But there’s one condition. Your big brother and big sister haven’t eaten for a whole day. Whose parents can make delicious food? Treat big brother and big sister for a meal, then these Spiritual beads will be theirs.” Chu Feng said.

And when Chu Feng’s words were spoken, all of the children went into silence. They cast their gazes of admiration and envy towards the snot girl, Erya.

“Haha, this is great! The Spiritual bead marbles are mine!” Indeed, Erya was so excited she immediately jumped down from Zi Ling’s embrace, and as she jumped up and down, she yelled, “The dishes my mom makes are the most delicious! She knows how to make anything, and they are the most appetitive in our village!”

“Big brother big sister, come home with Erya! I’ll tell my mom to make the most delicious food.” As she spoke, Erya skipped towards her home. Seeing that, Chu Feng and Zi Ling followed her.

Erya's family environment was not bad. At least, in terms of being in the small village, it counted as being a moderately prosperous family. Erya's mother was also very friendly. After knowing that Zi Ling and Chu Feng hadn't eaten yet, she hurriedly started to cook a table of deliciousness for Chu Feng and Zi Ling.

Although they were all local village dishes, it had to be said that Erya's mother's handiwork was truly quite nice. At least, it was a lot better than the wild beasts Chu Feng roasted.

Zi Ling and Chu Feng ate with great appetite. Especially Zi Ling. She ate a mouthful of oil, so it could be seen that the girl was truly starving badly.

But it had to be said that beauties were beauties. Chu Feng was entranced from looking at Zi Ling because no matter how much more wolfish she ate like, when one looked at her, they would still feel cuteness.

"Big sister, you are truly beautiful, just like a goddess!" After the snot girl Erya returned home, her mother changed a set of clothing for her and washed her face. When there was much less snot on her after her face became clean, the girl had quite a cute appearance and that also caused Chu Feng to be more pleased when he looked at her.

"Oh Erya, how can there be goddesses in this world?" Chu Feng hiddenly said. Having no culture was truly terrifying. In the world, there were only cultivators. How could there be any gods? They were merely martial cultivators with profound cultivation misunderstood by commoners.



Citizens that hadn't cultivated before liked to call cultivators as gods or deities-like things. In short, in their eyes, people with high cultivation were gods.

For example, Chu Feng and Zi Ling. If they displayed their cultivation, it was likely that Erya would believe that they were gods.

"There are! If they can fly, they are gods!" Erya blinked her big eyes that lacked any evil and argued with Chu Feng.

"Okay, if you say it like that, your big sister here would truly be a goddess." After Chu Feng looked at Zi ling, he couldn't help laughing because Zi Ling could fly! According to Erya's words, wasn't Zi Ling a goddess?

"Actually, in my family, there's also an elder sister goddess! My elder sister is very beautiful as well, but she is travelling afar or else she could compare with you, big sister!" As Erya spoke, she cast her gaze towards her mother and said, "Mom, when is my elder sister coming back? I miss her..."

"Your elder sister has only left for a few days. This time, she is travelling far so it'll take a long time for her to come back." Erya's mother smiled as she rubbed Erya's head, then quickly after, said to Chu Feng and Zi Ling, "There is still one more dish that is not finished. I'll go in to check." Erya's mother walked towards the kitchen while speaking.

Although to a naive child like Erya, she could not see anything wrong with that scene, Chu Feng and Zi Ling clearly saw the change in Erya's mother's emotions. It was helpless sadness, concealing the sorrow in her heart.

Definitely, Erya's elder sister wasn't doing something as simple as travelling to a far place and something must have happened in this village, or else there wouldn't be so many old people and women silently crying.

So, after signalling Zi Ling, Chu Feng tailed Erya's mother and entered the kitchen. Indeed, before even entering the kitchen, Chu Feng heard bursts of sobbing. They came from Erya's mother.

"Aunt, what happened? Where did Erya's elder sister go?" Chu Feng went up and asked.

"Eh? You..." Chu Feng sudden arrival jumped Erya's mother, and there was some panic and astonishment in the gaze she looked at Chu Feng with.

"Don't worry. I'm a cultivator. If you have any difficulties, feel free to speak them to me. Perhaps I can help you out." Chu Feng hurriedly explained.

"Really? You're a cultivator?" Erya's mother half-believed and half-doubted. After all, Chu Feng's appearance was only of a handsome young man. Even if he was truly a cultivator, how powerful could he possibly even be?

So, she shook her head and said, “Just leave it child, this matter is unrelated to you so I don’t want to pull you into it with no reason.”

whoosh Just at that time, Chu Feng waved his big sleeve and a layer of Spirit Formation enveloped Erya’s mother. Quickly after, he grabbed that Spirit Formation, used the Imperial Sky Technique, rose into the air, and directly brought Erya’s mother above the white clouds as well.

“Ahh~~~~~” Chu Feng’s speed was really too fast. When Erya’s mother reacted, she was already ten thousand meters in the air. She looked at the tiny village under the white clouds and instantly shrieked in fright.

“Aunt, now, can you tell me what actually happened? Perhaps I can truly help you.” Chu Feng asked again.

At that instant, Erya’s mother finally came to her senses. So Chu Feng could walk on air, and it was Chu Feng who brought her into the air.

At that moment, Erya’s mother looked at Chu Feng with different eyes and in her gaze she looked at Chu Feng with, it was filled with admiration.

As a commoner, she didn’t understand the world of martial cultivation, but in her eyes, cultivators that could fly in the air and burrow into the ground were absolutely existences that were like gods.

Suddenly, Erya's mother knelt in the air and kowtowed to Chu Feng with her hands together held in front of her, "Lord God, I beg you, please save my daughter, please save the people in my village!"

"Aunt, if you have anything to say, stand up first. Didn't I already say that I would help you? What happened? Can you tell me in detail?" Seeing that, Chu Feng hurriedly propped Erya's mother up.

Afterwards, Erya's mother told everything that happened in detail to Chu Feng.

Three hundred miles away from the village, there was a mountain range. On that mountain range, there was a group of cultivators who wanted to establish a school.

They needed to open up land at the mountain range for a huge building project. Because they lacked labourers, they went everywhere to find strong men.

The strong men in the village were all taken away and those who remained were either old people or children. Because Erya's elder sister had an outstanding appearance, she was also taken away by the group of people.

Within the group of people, there was even an old person who could stand on air and change the weather as he wished to. So, the citizens even thought that he was a divine being so they didn't dare

to defy him. They could only obediently allow them to take the people away and they didn't even dare to say a single word.

## Chapter 435: Yan Yangtian

---

After knowing the truth of the matter, Chu Feng didn't delay and after bringing Erya's mother back to the kitchen, Chu Feng returned to the room and told Zi Ling what happened.

After knowing, Zi Ling was even more furious than Chu Feng. She said something about also going to annihilate the cultivators who lacked kindness, thus, without even finishing eating, Zi Ling left with Chu Feng.

However, just as Chu Feng and Zi Ling rose into the air and headed towards the direction in which Erya's mother said to go, within some white clouds above the village, three silhouettes suddenly appeared.

They were three people. Two middle-aged men, one white-haired old man. They were standing on air, but there wasn't a single stand of aura coming from their bodies. It was as if they weren't even existing. No one could detect them.

And on their bodies, they were wearing golden-coloured long robes. That special clothing undoubtedly belonged to the people of the Jiang Dynasty.

“Report to the princess and say that Chu Feng and Zi Ling have already been discovered.” The white-haired old man said to one of the middle-aged men.

“Yes sir.” Hearing those words, that man hurriedly took out a

brush and paper, wrote a letter, then quickly after, took out a little delicate birdcage from his pocket. After entering special symbols, a Delivery Bird flew out from that little delicate bird cage.

“Contract the other clan members. They must catch those two alive before the princess arrives here.” Quickly after, the white-haired old person said to the other middle-aged man.

“Yes sir.” In response, that middle-aged man didn’t dally. He took out a special equipment and emitted an energy ripple that was invisible and undetectable.

After the two men did all that, the old man waved his big sleeve and a layer of energy emanated from it. As the burst of energy enveloped them, the figures of the three become illusory and finally, disappeared.

Three hundred miles away from Erya’s family, there was a mountain range that wasn’t too big. The mountain range was originally a masterless place because that area was at the border of the Yuan Province. There was a very small number of schools at that place, so the region it occupied was very small as well. There were only some small powers of small schools in the surroundings of the mountain range. The cultivators with the strongest strengths were only in the peak of the Profound realm.

In such a strong province such as the Yuan Province, without a Heaven realm expert overseeing everything, a power like that would be at most a third-rate power.

Even if there was a Heaven realm expert overseeing, the power would only be second-rate. Only powers with many Heaven realm experts and some that defied common sense were first-rate powers.

In reality, within the Yuan Province, there was only one true first-rate power, and that was the Hidden White Sect.

The Hidden White Sect was like the Lingyun School of the Azure Province. In order to keep its position of being the head of the dragon, it would suppress the development of other schools. Thus, in the Yuan Province, there was a monopoly-like situation.

However, because of the arrival of an old man several months earlier, the desolate region with extremely few cultivators suddenly changed.

The surrounding small powers were stomped over one by one. Those who did not comply were all killed, and only those who were willing to follow that old man were allowed to keep their small lives.

After several months of recruiting and with vicious methods, that old man became the overlord of that region. He recruited those who had strength to be his subordinates.

In fact, recently, he was finally going to establish his own sect, and the location he was going to establish his own sect was the masterless mountain range three hundred miles away from Erya's family.



rumble rumble rumble rumble rumble

ding dong ding dong ding dong...

On the masterless mountain, large-scaled buildings were currently being constructed. It was a huge process because it was not easy to build a sect.

Even if cultivators had abilities that allowed them to break common sense, as they could easily open mountains, shatter rocks, and destroy other objects, they weren't as impressive when building things.

At the end, to build detailed works like vast palaces still required masters within commoners. So, in order to build that sect, the mysterious old man did not invest a small amount of energy into it.

All of the strong labourers he could use within the circumference of several hundred miles were all brought over by him. Currently, they were at the masterless mountain range working for him. Almost every day, there would be people worked to death.

“Big bro Yan, congratulations! If this speed continues, your sect will be finished after a few more months.”

“Ah, what ‘Big bro Yan’? From now on, it’s ‘Sect Head Yan’!”

“Right right right, Sect Head Yan. Sect Head Yan. Hahaha....”

Within the mountain range, in a palace that was already complete, a group of cultivators were currently raising their cups and drinking madly. By their sides, there were also many young females who didn't have cultivation but had some gracefulness.

They were extremely afraid. Even their bodies were trembling, but they could not cry and they could not shout. They even had to force cheerfulness and smiles while pouring tea and wine for the people surrounding them. Within those people, the face of a young female, which was quite graceful, was rather similar to Erya's.

But the important part was that the old man sitting on the head seat, with the cultivation of the 1st level of the Heaven realm, was the strongest person within all of them. Looking at his face, it was quite familiar. It was the head of the Lingyun School, Yan Yangtian.

However, Yan Yangtian at present already changed his name after coming to the Yuan Province. Right now, he was called Yan Tianyang.

“Brothers, no need to hold yourselves back. On the day that my Sky Sun Sect is established, all of you will be my sect's chief elders and in the future, recorded in my Sky Sun Sect's records and respected by countless disciples and elders!” Yan Yangtian said.

“Haha, the reason we have today is all because of you, Sect Head Yan!”

“That’s right. Without Sect Head Yan, we would have very possibly died from muddling ourselves within third-rate powers. How could we have become chief elders of your Sky Sun Sect, and follow you as you create such a huge project?”

Yan Yangtian’s words caused the mood of the people there to rise greatly. The more the crowd chatted, the happier they got, and at this time, something that could not be lacked was the topic people of the continent of the Nine Provinces discussed the most. Chu Feng and the six big powers.

“Everyone, have you heard of it yet? I heard of news stating that Chu Feng has come to our Yuan Province!”

“That’s not possible right? That devil has come to the Yuan Province? Wouldn’t the Yuan Province be flipped upside-down by him?”

“It would be the best if that happens. It would be the best if Chu Feng destroyed the Hidden White Sect. With that, other powers would have chances and perhaps our Sky Sun Sect will even have a chance to become the number one power of this Yuan Province. Haha!”

“All of you! This is truly nonsense. That Chu Feng has disappeared for such a long time, and there is simply no news about him. How is it possible that he comes to the Yuan Province?”

“I also feel that it is impossible for Chu Feng to come to the Yuan Province. However, I do hope that he comes, and perhaps like what

Zhao Bro said, if Chu Feng could greatly wound the vitality of the Hidden White Sect, perhaps it would give our recently created Sky Sun Sect a chance. After all, heroes are born from a chaotic world.”

People were passionately discussing about Chu Feng’s matters. Chu Feng had disappeared for quite some time and many people were guessing where Chu Feng’s current traces were. There were rumours about Chu Feng going to all sorts of places.

That was also something that couldn’t be helped. Some people liked to do that, to spread rumours as a hobby. If the rumours they spread became widely known, they would be unable to sleep from happiness because those people were so immature like that.

## Chapter 436: The Killing God Arrives

---

“Pah!” Just at that time, a middle-aged man suddenly shattered the wine cup in his hand. He stood up and loudly yelled, “Chu Feng is only a young brat yet he has made all of you describe him in such an awesome way. He even so foolishly wants to turn the Hidden White Sect upside down? He is truly dreaming.”

“From what I see, all the rumours about Chu Feng are nonsense. Anyway, I don’t believe them.”

“A brat only sixteen-years-old and a girl only fifteen-years-old was able to turn the famous Fire God School upside down? And the Fire God School’s ancestral tombs were even dug? That’s purely nonsense born from nothing. All of it is nonsense.” That middle-aged man seemed to have drank too much, causing him to go drunk and crazy.

“That’s right. Erniu, you’re correct. That Chu Feng is a brat. How can he be as strong as our Erniu? Let’s drink let’s drink.”

Facing that situation, everyone also loudly laughed. The people there were originally a group of lowly scums so even if they had decent cultivation, they were still despicable people who did all sorts of evils.

They didn’t have any rules, and they only emphasized happiness. They would do whatever they wanted to be happy, so naturally, they wouldn’t argue because of Chu Feng. Rather, they agreed with Erniu and started to insult Chu Feng.

“That’s right. If Chu Feng ever dares to appear in front of me, see how I’ll take care of him! I’ll beat him so hard he won’t even recognize his own father.”

“God damn, even a brat wants to have strength that defies the heavens?” And seeing people agreeing with him, the man named Erniu got more confidence as he stood on the table and started to loudly brag.

“Has anyone here seen Chu Feng before?” Just at that time, Yan Yangtian, who sat on the head seat and hadn’t said anything for a long time, spoke.

“Ehh, not really.” The crowd shook their heads at the same time.

“Sect head Yan, you wouldn’t have seen him right?”

“Yeah! Sect Head Yan, I heard that you came from the Azure Province right? Is it possible that you’ve seen that Chu Feng?” They curiously asked.

“Of course I’ve seen him before. When I saw Chu Feng for the first time, he was still an Origin realm brat, but at that time, he was already able to easily kill people in the Profound realm.”

“So, I’ll say this to you. Never, ever look down on Chu Feng because he really does have the abilities to defy common sense like in the rumours.”

“Also, that brat is extremely ruthless. He dares to do anything, and those who anger him do not end up good. For example, the words that you’ve said just now. If he hears it, it would be sufficient for your puny lives to be ended.”

Yan Yangtian spoke solemnly. That tone. That gaze. It was as if he already saw the appearances of their miserable deaths.

Suddenly, someone gulped from fright and the others were also not lightly frightened. Even Erniu stood where he was and didn’t dare to move anymore.

It was because of all the people on scene, Yan Yangtian could be said to be the most prestigious, and Yan Yangtian was also from the Azure Province. So, to his words, the people there believed them quite a bit. If he said Chu Feng was that powerful, they would firmly believe that Chu Feng was truly that powerful.

“Haha, just kidding. How could I possibly have seen Chu Feng? Although the Azure Province isn’t really big, it isn’t small as well. When I was in the Azure Province, I was cultivating in seclusion all day and I was extremely low-profile. I haven’t met Chu Feng ever!” Seeing that the atmosphere was a bit cold, Yan Yangtian suddenly laughed loudly.

“Haha, the sect head is indeed the sect head. Your joke scared all of us!”

“Come, let’s drink, let’s drink! Brothers, today, we do not leave if

we are not drunk!” The crowd started to unrestrainedly laugh.

As they drank and as the excitement got into their heads, some people started to stop controlling themselves and their wolf-like nature exploded in the palace. Some people extended their evil hands towards the female commoners.

Although some females knew that those people were powerful, and were fully willing to follow them as they knew that perhaps it could allow them to pass the future days well and enjoy great wealth, there were some confused young females who didn't want to lose their bodies because of that. So, they did everything to resist, but how could they possibly defeat those people? So, within the palace, scenes of violence were enacted and wolfish natures blew up.

That Erniu was the most perverted. He didn't want the mature females, and he only played with the immature ones. He had actually forcefully played three young females to death, yet that was still unable to satisfy him. Finally, he cast his gaze towards the young female who looked quite similar to Erya.

“Haha, baby come! Let Master Erniu show you what a true man is.” Erniu pounced towards the young female who looked similar to Erya.

“No! I beg you, let me go, let me go!” The young female sorrowfully pleaded and her face was filled with tears.

“God damn. Not obedient? Don't be obedient then!” Erniu glared



with his furious gaze and waved his hand. With snapping sounds, he broke both of the young female's arms.

“Ahh~~~~~” The agony of her arms being snapped caused her to be unable to put it in words. Her face instantly turned deathly-white and she almost lost consciousness because of that.

“Haha, very nice. Come, my darling.” However, the painful cry of the young female only made Erniu even more excited as he started to wildly tear the young female's clothes.

Facing that situation, Yan Yangtian only sat there and ignored it. He did that because he knew what morals those person had. There was not a single person within them who was good. The reason why he established a sect at that place was because his target was to want to become a dictator of that area. To lawlessly enjoy wealth.

boom But suddenly, an explosion resonated out from above the palace and simultaneously, large amounts of broken rocks fell from the sky. The shock caused the palace to sway left and right, and to tremble up and down. The fright caused the commoners in the palace to cover their heads and they escaped as they kept on screaming.

“What happened?” The palace was just built, yet it suddenly broke. A huge hole was made on the ceiling, causing the so-called Sky Sun Sect chief elders to be greatly furious.

Just at that time, a male and female slowly descended down from

the big hole that was just broken open. They stood within the palace, and the two people were Chu Feng and Zi Ling.

After the people in their palace saw Chu Feng and Zi Ling, all of them were shocked.

They were indeed very shocked. So shocked that they widened their mouths, but it wasn't because of Chu Feng. Because Chu Feng changed his appearance, they couldn't even recognize Chu Feng.

The reason why they were so shocked was naturally because of Zi Ling. Zi Ling's beauty was really too stunning. Almost in that instant, all of the males on scene were mesmerized.

"My gods, there's such a beauty in the world! I'm not dreaming right?" After seeing Zi Ling, golden light instantly flashed in the eyes of Erniu who was ripping the young female's clothes. Large amounts of drool overflowed from his mouth. He stood up, and wanted to extend his hand of evil towards Zi Ling.

"Damn. We were almost too late."

At that instant, sharp-eyed Chu Feng instantly recognized that the young female under Erniu's body was Erya's elder sister. Her face was too similar to Erya's and he could absolutely not be mistaken.

At present, that young female's face was filled with tears and her clothes were almost all torn away. Even her arms were snapped

and she was painfully howling. But luckily, she kept her chastity and she wasn't defiled by Erniu.

But even so, Erniu's actions thoroughly ignited Chu Feng's fury.

whoosh

Without saying anymore, Chu Feng leaped, then rushed up to Erniu, and kicked. His foot then landed under Erniu's groin.

The power of his foot was powerful, and he immediately broke all three of Erniu's legs, breaking his body into four sections.

"Ahh~~~~~" The pain of his body fragmenting caused Erniu to make painful cries as he started to roll on the ground with shrieks. Blood-coloured blood was everywhere because of him, and it was sinister and terrifying.

## Chapter 437: Starting The Massacre

---

“Who are you? There is no enmity between my Sky Sun Sect and you. Why have you come to my Sky Sun Sect to make a mess, and even attack my people?” Just at that moment, Yan Yangtian spoke. As the head of the Sky Sun Sect, he had to stand out at this time.

Simultaneously, the others in the palace hurriedly surrounded Chu Feng and Zi Ling. Although Chu Feng’s attack just now was very strong, and as his cultivation was also in the 6th level of the Profound realm, no matter what, he shouldn’t be underestimated, after all, he was only a young man. Especially with Yan Yangtian who was in the 1st level of the Heaven realm stabilizing their position, they weren’t afraid of Chu Feng.

Rather, because their hearts were already moved by Zi Ling, the little beauty, they were already prepared to not allow Chu Feng and Zi Ling to leave this place. It was a must to force the little beauty Zi Ling to stay behind.

“This voice?” However, at the same time Yan Yangtian’s voice rang out, Chu Feng’s brows slightly raised. Quickly after, when he cast his gaze towards Yan Yangtian, his eyes instantly lit up and he was elated in his heart. Coincidentally, fury that was suppressed for a long time in his heart reemerged into his head.

It was because Chu Feng recognized Yan Yangtian at a glance. The head of the Lingyun School who stamped the Azure Dragon School flat and almost killed himself.

“Yan Yangtian, do you remember me?” Chu Feng suddenly shouted loudly.

“Wh...Who are you?” After hearing Chu Feng’s voice, Yan Yangtian’s expression couldn’t help but change and on his originally still calm face, incomparable shock immediately appeared.

He started to look at Chu Feng again because after hearing Chu Feng’s voice, he felt that it was quite familiar. It was extremely similar to a person he knew before, and that person was also the person who he feared the most today. The person who he didn’t want to meet the most.

“What? You don’t remember? Do you want me to remind you?” Chu Feng continued asking, and as he spoke, he gradually neared Yan Yangtian.

“It’s you! How is it possible?! You changed your appearance!!” Finally, Yan Yangtian confirmed the voice. He confirmed the tone. He confirmed that the young man in front of him was, without a doubt, Chu Feng.

Also at that instant, the fear in his heart became extremely dense. His legs had actually went limp and he almost fell onto the ground. But quickly after, he leaped, rose into the sky, and wanted to escape through the big hole Chu Feng and Zi Ling made.

“You think you can escape?” Seeing that, with a thought, Chu Feng’s aura instantly rose into the 8th level of the Profound realm,

then quickly after, a formless Spirit Formation appeared and sealed the entire palace.

boom Yan Yangtian did not detect the Spirit Formation Chu Feng laid. He was putting all his strength in escaping, so who would have thought that when he met the formless barrier, with a bang, his head collided into the Spirit Formation and instantly, he felt his brain buzz as he fell onto the ground while being heavily injured.

“Run! Everyone run!” After falling onto the ground, Yan Yangtian knew that today, a calamity approached. Chu Feng did indeed become extremely powerful like what the rumours said. So, he couldn’t help but wave his arms and yelled at the people in the palace.

“Sect Head Yan, what’s wrong?” Those who did not know everything had no idea why Yan Yangtian was that afraid.

“Sect Head Yan, there is no need to fear. They are only two brats. There is no need for you to do anything, and we can catch him alive for you.”

“That’s right. This boy brat is too arrogant. He dares to so heavily injure our Erniu and even destroy his genitals! We must make him wish he were dead.”

“As for that female brat, hehe... How could we be willing to kill such prettiness? We must keep her and we’ll slowly enjoy her. Right now, she’s still young, but if she develops in the future, she

will definitely be even more attracting!”

The group of animals still didn't know that their last days arrived. They were still thinking about beating Chu Feng up then playing around with Zi Ling.

“Run, you group of things that don't know life and death! Do you know who he is? He's Chu Feng!” Yan Yangtian loudly howled.

“What? Chu Feng?”

“Haha, Sect Head Yan, you can truly make jokes. How is his appearance anything like Chu Feng?”

“Yeah! Your joke is too cold, it's not funny at all.” The crowd loudly laughed. All of them thought that Yan Yangtian was joking, as they had all seen Chu Feng's wanted poster and knew what Chu Feng looked like.

“Yeah! Sect Head Yan, your joke is too funny. How can I possibly be Chu Feng? Everyone look, am I Chu Feng?” Chu Feng also madly laughed along with the crowd. He was very abnormally sinisterly laughing.

At the same time, his face also started to change. Very quickly, it returned to its original appearance. It was the exact same as the one on the wanted posters.

“Heavens! You, you, you...”

After seeing Chu Feng's current face, the group of people who were still wildly laughing instantly halted their smiles. Their faces turned white from black, turned purple from white, from that into green, and from green into azure. All of them had odd expressions. Clearly they were still unable to accept the truth of the young man in front of their eyes being Chu Feng.

whoosh Just at that time, Zi Ling attacked. Seeing Erya's elder sister's pitiful appearance, seeing the women who were defiled to death, seeing the young females crying nakedly, being also a woman, Zi Ling was truly unable to suppress the fury in her heart.

boom

Zi Ling had powerful strength, and she could even fight those in the 4th level of the Heaven realm. Killing this group of Profound realm mobs was even easier than squishing ants.

Profound power surged out, and almost in an instant, it crushed several people's bodies. Those people didn't even get to cry out before they became pools of blood.

whoosh At the same time, Chu Feng also attacked. He did not use pressure to kill, nor did he use martial skills to kill.

He just dashed up to Erniu, suddenly stepped, and with a puff, he shattered Erniu's brain.



swish Quickly afterwards, Chu Feng darted up to another man, extended both of his arms, and like sharp blades, stabbed into the man's chest. Then, he abruptly spread his arms and forcibly tore the man's body into two.

The man who was just killed by Chu Feng had the cultivation of the 8th level of the Profound realm, but in front of Chu Feng, he could not even take a single blow and he was easily split by Chu Feng.

“Crap, he really is Chu Feng! He must be Chu Feng or else he wouldn't have such terrifying battle power! Run or else we will all die here!” At that instant, they finally believed that the young man who appeared in front of their eyes was Chu Feng and the purple-clothed young woman was Zi Ling.

As long as they recalled all sorts of rumours about Chu Feng, his actions, and his miracles, the fear in their hearts started to spread and all of them completely lost it from fright and they could not even take care of themselves.

At that instant, the ones with slightly less courage were immediately terrified and their legs went soft from terror. They sat limply on the ground and lost the ability to move.

Those with slightly more courage started to run with all they had. They wanted to run out from the palace doors, but a formless Spirit Formation was already laid there by Chu Feng. With their cultivation, how could they possibly break open the Spirit Formation? How could they possibly break open the doors and exit?

Everyone was locked in there. What awaited them was only Zi Ling's and Chu Feng's merciless slaughtering. What surged in their hearts was fear that even caused their souls to tremble.

But at that very instant, the one with the most complex expression was none other than Yan Yangtian. He sat lifelessly on the ground. Fresh blood was still flowing on his head as he stared at Chu Feng who was killing the subordinates he recruited with cruel methods. There were tens of thousands of thoughts in his heart.

It was because the prediction he made back then became true. Chu Feng would indeed develop, and he would become extremely terrifying. So much that even he could not take care of him.

But he never would have thought that that day would come so early, that Chu Feng would develop so quickly, and also that Chu Feng would find him at such an early time and appear in front of him.

# Chapter 438: Difficult To Differentiate Good And Evil

---

“I’m begging you, don’t kill me, don’t kill me!”

“Noo! Ahh~~~~~”

Facing a situation where they had no place to escape to, many people in the palace started to kneel on the floor and with snot and tears, they banged their heads on the ground towards Chu Feng and Zi Ling, but what they got back was heartless slaughter.

Facing people like them, Chu Feng and Zi Ling didn’t have the slightest bit of pity because Chu Feng and Zi Ling knew their natures. Even if they were currently pettily begging, after leaving, they would undoubtedly continue committing crimes. People like them had to be killed.

Chu Feng and Zi Ling kept on massacring with lightning-like methods. With a blink, most of the evil people in the palace were killed.

However, Chu Feng left Yan Yangtian for the very last. After killing all of Yan Yangtian’s subordinates who were in the palace, only then did Chu Feng come up to Yan Yangtian and asked,

“At first, when you were fighting me, have you ever thought that a day like today would happen?”

“Hohahaha...” Yan Yangtian did not reply. Instead, he suddenly loudly laughed.

His laughter told Chu Feng that he wasn't afraid of death. He was also not afraid that Chu Feng would torture him. It was telling Chu Feng that he already thought of everything.

So, he put away all pettiness, and even the fear in his eyes retracted quite a bit. As much as he could, he maintained the grandeur of a king and said to Chu Feng,

“How glorious was I, Yan Yangtian, when I swept through the Azure Province for dozens of years? At the beginning, I have indeed not thought that there would be a day like today.”

“Even more so, I never would have thought that I would be defeated by the hands of a young man.”

“But the winner is the king, and the loser is the thief. I have no excuses.”

“You, Chu Feng, are stronger than me. You are more ruthless than me. I, Yan Yangtian, admit defeat.”

“But I don't feel that it's embarrassing. Even so many great characters and peak big powers that have been existing for many years in the continent of the Nine Provinces could do nothing to you. What can I possibly do?”

“If you were to ask me whether I regret doing the actions I did, I can tell you that I have regretted it. I regret it very much. I regret angering you...”

“If I can choose again, I would definitely pull you in with me. I would fawn over you.”

“But what has happened has already happened. What’s the use in regretting? I can only envy. Envy the unique eyes of the head of the Azure Dragon School. His eyes were better than mine, and he was also smarter than me because he saw what you had.”

“Right now, you are in front of me. Although my cultivation is still above yours, my strength is already far below yours.”

“No matter if you want to kill me or torture me, I have absolutely no words of grudges. Go ahead. Today, if I, Yan Yangtian, beg in any way, I shall be your son in my next life.”

Seeing Yan Yangtian who was like that, Chu Feng first closed his eyes. The former things that happened were in his mind, and afterwards, he suddenly smiled, as if he was enlightened. Then, he said to Yan Yangtian,

“You have seen everything quite clearly, but don’t worry. I won’t kill you, nor will I torment you. However, I will take away your strength so you cannot harm ordinary citizens anymore nor bully the weak.” Chu Feng calmly smiled, then stuck out his hand, and like a sharp blade, it penetrated into Yan Yangtian’s dantian.

“Ahh~~~~~” Along with blood that flowed out of his dantian, Yan Yangtian couldn’t help but cry out loud. Quickly after, he fell onto the floor with a deathly-white face while he twitched in bursts.

Chu Feng did not kill Yan Yangtian. It wasn’t because he was soft-hearted, nor was it because he wanted to give him a chance to start fresh. It was just that suddenly, he didn’t feel like killing him.

If Yan Yangtian’s strength was still above Chu Feng’s, or if he was still able to threaten Chu Feng greatly, Chu Feng would definitely, unhesitantly, kill him in order to remove future diseases.

But facing a person who wasn’t a threat at all, Chu Feng already felt that there wasn’t any meaning whether he killed him or not.

Besides, the head of the Lingyun School who chased after him everywhere and could kill him with a raise of a hand or feet had already been defeated by him. He could not threaten him anymore.

Perhaps his existence could remind Chu Feng and let him know that the difficulties he experienced weren’t for nothing.

Because he, who struggled within challenging trials, developed very quickly. He had already stepped over countless people who threatened his life before and made them unable to turn their unfavourable situations around in their lives.

After that, Chu Feng and Zi Ling didn't start a huge massacre. They drove all the cultivators away, then dispersed the labourers.

After questioning, the young woman who was almost defiled was truly Erya's elder sister.

So, with Spirit Formation techniques, Chu Feng and Zi Ling helped her recover her broken arms, and with medicinal pellets, helped her recover her injuries. They even healed her wounded soul, and made it so that she very quickly got rid of the shadow in her heart and returned her to healthiness.

After doing that, Chu Feng and Zi Ling brought Erya's elder sister back to Erya's family's village.

“Without cultivation, what meaning is there to continue living?”

However, after Chu Feng and the others left, Yan Yangtian who had his cultivation stripped away came at the summit of a mountain peak.

His face no longer had its former pride. His appearance no longer looked like it belonged to a grand character of a school head. He no longer looked like he was an overlord of an area. He no longer looked like he was a king. Rather, he seemed more like an old man who had had enough of the experiences of life.

swish Finally, his footsteps met air, and he fell from the cliff.

He, who had no cultivation, he, who had no Heaven power, his physical body was like a commoner's. Extremely feeble.

He crashed into the ground from the several hundred meter tall cliff. He was immediately crushed into meat paste. The head of the Lingyun School who had extreme might in the Azure Province had fallen at that place.

“Chu Feng, today, it can be said that we did a good thing right?”

“Of the matters in this world, there is nothing that is absolutely good, and there is nothing that is absolutely bad. As long as you feel that it is right, it is a good thing.”

Above the sky, within the white clouds, Chu Feng was steering the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens and travelling in the air, heading towards the place where they lived.

“Tch.” After hearing Chu Feng's words, Zi Ling curled her mouth, then after, lightly smiled and said, “Your words weren't with no sense. There are two sides for anything. In order to save people, we kill people. Even if the ones we kill are bad people, the people we save feel that we are good people.”

“But in reality, we are not good people because the family of bad people may not be bad people, but within the eyes bad people's family's, we killed their relatives therefore we are bad people.”

“My wife, how's your mood today? Happy?” Chu Feng smiled



and asked.

“I’m happy. Seeing Erya’s family able to happily live together, I am truly happy. Perhaps the simple life of ordinary people is the joy that is most difficult to get from people like us.” Zi Ling sweetly smiled and said.

“It’s great if you’re happy.” Chu Feng also calmly smiled.

It was absolutely not the first time Chu Feng did things like saving Erya’s elder sister. Chu Feng couldn’t bear seeing petty commoners being bullied by powerful people, so when meeting things like those, most of the time, he would fight for the unfairness.

But he was also the one getting bullied. At first, the Lingyun School bullied them, and currently, the six big powers were bullying him. Even the Jiang Dynasty sent out people and wanted to bully him.

Facing such bullying, Chu Feng resisted with all he had, but he who was the one getting bullied became the evil person in people’s eyes, and the huge monsters that were bullying him became the righteous side.

# Sword God Valley

## Chapter 439: Jiang Yini

---

When facing that situation, Chu Feng could only calmly smile. There were too many unfair things in the world. How many people understood the truth of matters? And the so-called characters of justice. They were the lies of certain people, yet how many people's eyes were blinded by them?

Thus, he no longer cared about the world's opinion because the people of the world were stupid. They were unable to determine the truths and the lies.

Thus, he only cared about the people he cared about. He, Chu Feng, did not live for the living of the world. He lived for himself and the ones close to him.

Thus, even if everyone in the world died, what did that have to do with him? He only did things he felt that were right. He only did things he liked to do.

If the people of the world felt that Chu Feng's actions were not right and viewed Chu Feng as the bad person yet Chu Feng was happy, he would just admit he was a bad person.

Hualalala~~~~

Suddenly, in the tranquil sky surrounding Chu Feng, lines of blue light suddenly appeared. Countless thick Spirit Formation chains emerged into the air and surrounded from all directions. With a mere blink, they locked Chu Feng and Zi Ling inside.

It was a huge formation. A very powerful Spirit Formation, one that required the combined power of many Blue-cloak World Spiritists in order to be completed.

After that Spirit Formation was laid, dozens of figures also appeared. They appeared within Chu Feng's and Zi Ling's line of sight.

Those people were all in the Heaven realm. There were even a few in the 4th level of the Heaven realm, and they were all wearing the clothing of the Jiang Dynasty.

"Crap." At that instant, Chu Feng hiddenly cursed because what they did happened too fast. Almost at the same time he reacted to everything that happened, his escape was already sealed.

Clearly, they had prepared early and their methods were extremely high-class. He did not even detect any trace of abnormality, let alone being able to defend.

"Chu Feng, Zi Ling. Do you two know why we need to apprehend you?" Just at that time, an old man stood out. His hair was white as snow, his eyes were like an eagle's, and his aura was the same as the heads of the several big powers, being at the 5th level of the Heaven realm.

One at the 5th level of the Heaven realm, several at the 4th level of the Heaven realm, and dozens of Heaven realm experts. The formation was truly too strong. Facing something like that, with

Chu Feng's current cultivation, he clearly felt a bit powerless.

“Leave, or else you will all die here.” However, in a situation like that, Zi Ling was not afraid in the slightest. Her purple-coloured pupils appeared and layers of purple-coloured gas surrounded her body. She released her Divine Body's power.

At that moment, when the power of the Divine Body appeared, Zi Ling's entire demeanor became completely different.

Although her cultivation was only in the 9th level of the Profound realm, when she stood there, she emanated an atmosphere that no one else had, as if she was the king of that area. In terms of outward bearing, she was superior to all of the Heaven realm dynasty experts.

“Quite strong methods. This power that is completely different from others... It seems like you have cultivated a Forbidden Mysterious Technique, and you even cultivated it very well.”

“Ahh, with such good talent, even if you had normally cultivated, you would have had a great future. But you had to walk on the askew path. Truly a shame.”

That white-haired old man smiled as he stared at Zi Ling. Although he felt a bit amazed from Zi Ling change, he did not panic. Rather, there was always the domineering light smile on the corners of his mouth, as if he was always planning and in control of the situation. At the same time, he also shook his head in pity.

“If you don’t move, you are looking to die.” However, the current Zi Ling also didn’t waste any words. With a thought, the purple-coloured gas was like a cruel and fierce beast. With bursts of cries, it flew towards the surrounding Spirit Formation chains and wanted to break open the formation.

“Merely the 9th level of the Profound realm. You truly overestimate yourself!”

However, facing Zi Ling’s attacks, the people from the Jiang Dynasty were not afraid in the slightest. They moved at the same time, and with special formations, the boundless Heaven power became an air-tight wall and surrounded Zi Ling and Chu Feng.

“Stop!” However, in the instant both sides were preparing to use powerful attacks to exchange blows, a female’s fierce yell suddenly rang out from the sky.

And after hearing that voice, the experts of the Jiang Dynasty hurriedly stopped their attacks and dissolved the Spirit Formation that was in mid-air.

Seeing that, Zi Ling’s brows slightly raised and her beautiful purple-coloured pupils returned to their original state. At the same time, the purple-coloured gas that surrounded her body also returned.

At that instant, Chu Feng shifted in the air and stopped in front of Zi Ling. He put the beauty with a violent temper behind him.

He did that because he knew that even if the white-haired old man wasn't much, the female who fiercely shouted just now was the character most difficult to take care of.

Indeed, shortly after that fierce yell rang out, a gap opened in the sealed Spirit Formation chains.

And from the gap, a golden-clothed female who was tall, had a protruding front and back, and also had a bit of purple, walked in.

The age of that female seemed to be just past twenty, and even though her appearance couldn't be said to be extremely beautiful, she was absolutely not bad.

However, in front of Zi Ling, the exceptional little beauty, she did seem a bit ordinary.

But her figure was very good. Also, her body gave off airs that was different from the crowd. Her unique charm caused people to be very comfortable when they looked at her.

“Princess!”

At that instant, within the formation, a thunder-like voice rang out from the dynasty experts.

When the Heaven realm experts faced the appearance of the young female, all of them couldn't avoid kneeling to greet her. Petty expressions emerged onto their faces, and even the white-

haired old man with cultivation in the 5th level of the Heaven realm was no exception.

At that moment, the female's identity was also confirmed. Clearly, she was the number one genius of the Jiang Dynasty, Jiang Yini.

The cultivation of the 6th level of the Heaven realm, comparable to the Fire God School's supreme elder. However, the Fire God School's supreme elder had been cultivating for dozens of years. His age was near one hundred while being in the 6th level of the Heaven realm.

But that woman. She was only in her twenties yet she already had her present achievements. It could be seen that her talent was truly outstanding. In front of her, Jie Qingming or Xu Zhongyu would not dare to call themselves a genius.

“Elders, step down. I have some things I want to chat with Brother Chu Feng on my own.” Jiang Yini waved her hand.

“As you wish!”

In response, not a single expert of the Jiang Dynasty went against her word. They hurriedly removed the Spirit Formation chains and they orderly stood at the horizon afar.

At that instant, Chu Feng slightly furrowed his brows. Although the overwhelmingly strong Spirit Formation chains were no longer



there and the dozens of Heaven realm experts all backed away, leaving a single young female in front of them, Chu Feng knew that the woman called Jiang Yini was likely even more dangerous and terrifying than the chain formation and the dozens of dynastical Heaven realm experts.

“Chu Feng, do you know how long I have been searching you for?” Jiang Yini indifferently asked.

“Everything was done by myself. If you want to kill or cut, do it on me. It is unrelated to Zi Ling.” Chu Feng spoke.

“Chu Feng, you..” After hearing those words, Zi Ling’s little face instantly changed and she could not suppress her anxiousness. She wanted to stand out to say something, but her hands were tightly grabbed by Chu Feng and she was pulled back by him again.

At that instant, for some reason, Zi Ling instinctively took back the words she wanted to say. As if no matter how much more powerful she was, when she was beside Chu Feng, she was only willing to be a little girl.

# Chapter 440: Pulse Searching Method

---

“Chu Feng oh Chu Feng, you don’t truly believe the reason why I’m looking for you is to punish you for your crimes right?” At that instant, Jiang Yini couldn’t help covering her mouth with her hand and laughed.

“Is it not?” Chu Feng lightly frowned and his eyes became fierce. Looking at her appearance, there did seem to be other goals.

“Of course not. Do you think that those few small powers are worth it for me to assemble so many people?”

“Actually, the reason why I’m looking for you this time is to thank you.” Jiang Yini said.

“Thank me?” Chu Feng was completely confused by her words. He was unrelated to the Jiang Dynasty, so why did they need to thank him? Besides, was there truly a need to assemble so many people to thank him?

“At first, in the Thousand Monster Mountain, you saved my younger brother Jiang Wushang. If it wasn’t for you, my Jiang Dynasty could have very possibly lost a genius with the densest bloodline in these thousand years.”

“My brother Jiang Wushang is the hope of my Jiang Dynasty. He is also my pride, so absolutely nothing can happen to him. The person who saved him is equivalent to the person I, Jiang Yini, am thankful towards.”

“I apologize for using this method to meet you, but there was no other way. Because of your disputes with the Jie clan the other powers, and also because the cooperation relationship that my Jiang Dynasty has with the Jie clan and other powers, I cannot announce to the world that you are my Jiang Dynasty’s benefactor, so I can only privately search for you.”

“But don’t worry. Even if my Jiang Dynasty promises the Jie clan and other powers to kill you, we will absolutely not do anything to you.”

“These are a bit of my appreciative feelings. Please accept them.” As she spoke, Jiang Yini threw out a Cosmos Sack and it landed into Chu Feng’s hands.

Quickly afterwards, Jiang Yini turned around and left. But after walking for a few meters, she stopped, turned her head around, smiled, and said to Chu Feng and Zi Ling, “Lady Zi Ling is indeed peerless in beauty. She is simply the number one beauty in the continent of the Nine Provinces and in the future, she will absolutely be incomparable by anyone.”

“Brother Chu Feng, remember to cherish such an excellent woman who is willing to stay by your side.”

“Wait. Your Jiang Dynasty is truly not going to investigate any further? After all, the powers are the subordinates of your Jiang Dynasty, so by killing their school’s disciples, it is equal to killing your people.” Suddenly, Chu Feng asked closely.

After hearing Chu Feng's words, Jiang Yini's smile became even more dazzling. She said, "That is only how you think. But in the eyes of my Jiang Dynasty, only the people of my clan are ours. Other people are forever outsiders."

After speaking those words, Jiang Yini leaped, and as her golden-coloured long skirt fluttered, she shot towards the distant horizon.

At that instant, Chu Feng could also see the Jiang Dynasty experts that were standing in the faraway horizon walking on air to chase after Jiang Yini. The people from the Jiang Dynasty truly left.

"They sent out so many people to find us, and it's actually only to thank you?" Zi Ling looked at Chu Feng. Even up until now, she still felt disbelief, but she had to admit that choosing to save Jiang Wushang back then was definitely the correct decision.

"If it was you who encountered danger, then someone came and saved you, I believe that you will also be like her and would think of ways to find that person to thank that person."

Chu Feng smiled, then opened the Cosmos Sack. After opening the Cosmos Sack, Chu Feng's eyes couldn't help but light up and he widened his mouth from astonishment. He said with a face filled with shock, "Could this be?"

Seeing Chu Feng's shocked expression, Zi Ling also hurriedly moved her gaze over, and when she saw Chu Feng take out a

round-shaped snow-white flower that didn't even have a diameter of one inch, even Zi Ling was instantly overjoyed as she excitedly said,

“It's Heaven medicine! High-quality Heaven medicine! This is an extremely precious and rare thing! From what I've heard, in the continent of the Nine Provinces, only the Jiang Dynasty is able to grow Heaven medicine like this. The power of a single high-quality Heaven medicine is comparable to a thousand Profound beads!”

“Truly? It also means that in order to thank me for saving her younger brother's life, Jiang Yini gifted me a million Profound beads?” After hearing Zi Ling's words, Chu Feng was also ecstatic because within the Cosmos Sack, there was a thousand high-quality Heaven medicine.

“From what it looks like, yes.” Although Zi Ling also felt that it was inconceivable, the truth right now was like so.

After that, Chu Feng and Zi Ling returned to the mountain cave they rested in before. After a period of time, the people from the Jiang Dynasty had indeed not appeared.

Chu Feng refined all of the Heaven medicine and he felt that his dantian was a lot fuller, but there was still a huge distance to breaking through.

Facing that result, Chu Feng truly had some desires to curse. Almost two million Profound beads had been consumed, but there was still a very large distance if he wanted to break into the 7th

level of the Profound realm. According to his estimations, he still needed at least three million Profound beads in order to increase his cultivation.

It was really too ridiculous. A total of five million Profound beads! That could be said to be the assets of the accumulation of a thousand years by a peak-level school that existed for a thousand years in the continent of the Nine Provinces!

How many generations of Heaven realm experts could that develop? Yet Chu Feng was still unable to break into the 7th level of the Profound realm. With some calculations, if Chu Feng wanted to step into the Heaven realm, it would simply be an idiot dreaming.

It was likely that even the Jiang Dynasty didn't have any cultivation resources that could help Chu Feng enter the Heaven realm, because that number would certainly be extremely terrifying. Chu Feng would even get a headache from thinking about it.

Seeing that Chu Feng was so annoyed, the usually aggressive Zi Ling instantly became amiable and gentle. She said to Chu Feng, "My grandfather said that for bloodlines, the more enormous amounts of cultivation resources required, the stronger they would be. In the future, their achievements would also be bigger. So, Chu Feng, you should be happy because this precisely means that the bloodline you inherited should be very high. Perhaps your future is even greater than mine!"

Facing Zi Ling's words, Chu Feng could only take them as

consoltation. After all, her grandfather saw those in some ancient books, and the things stated there could not be proven as real.

Besides, even if the things recorded in the books were true, if he were unable to collect such enormous amounts of cultivation resources, Chu Feng would still stop at a certain realm. What use was there even if he had greater potential?

In a time like that, Eggy who could feel the changes in Chu Feng's heart would always jump out at a time like this and say, "What the hell are you worried about? This world is so big, and there are cultivation resources everywhere! Besides, who are you? You're a World Spiritist!"

"Moreover, you're even a World Spiritist who made a contract with me! For World Spiritists, would cultivation resources be a problem? To a mighty World Spiritist, there is no end in finding cultivation resources. There is no end in using them."

"As long as you enter the 7th level of the Profound realm and become a Blue-cloak World Spiritist, I'll teach you the Pulse Searching Method, to search for the strange cultivation objects hidden in the world and guarantee that you will not be troubled because of cultivation resources."

"However, at that time, I would only be worried that you would be too dull and waste the good ability I pass down to you, because of your inability to reach a satisfied realm of cultivation."

# Chapter 441: Zi Ling's Hidden Troubles

---

It had to be said that Eggy's words, in Chu Feng's perspective, was a lot more reliable. Even if Eggy was a World Spirit, she was an outstanding World Spiritist and was once extremely powerful. Even if she lived in the Spirit World, she still had some understanding of this world's things and had abundant experience, grasping special methods that many people did not know about.

So, Chu Feng was no longer too anxious and grumpy. He started to calm down, and he didn't randomly visit places in the continent of the Nine Provinces, nor did he go everywhere to kill the disciples of the six big powers. He peacefully searched for the tomb of nameless experts to refine Source energy and to collect resources.

Time flew past, and with a blink, days like those past for several months. A layer of immaturity faded away from Chu Feng and Zi Ling's face.

Zi Ling was more like a woman, and she became even more beautiful. Chu Feng became more masculine, and more like a man. In that year, Chu Feng was seventeen years old, and Zi Ling was sixteen years old.

In that period of time, Chu Feng and Zi Ling did not always remain in the continent of the Nine Provinces. They went to other continents, and they truly discovered quite a few ancient remains of experts. Eggy and Zi Ling's World Spirit both gained great benefits.



Zi Ling's World Spirit successfully broke into the 3rd level of the Heaven realm, while Eggy had stepped into the 9th level of the Profound realm. That cultivation already flung Chu Feng three levels behind.

In fact, after the hard work of that period of time, Chu Feng got quite a few required cultivation resources, but to Chu Feng, the enormous amounts of resources in other people's eyes were so little that they couldn't even get stuck between his teeth. So, Chu Feng's cultivation still hadn't greatly increased, and he still remained in the 6th level of the Profound realm.

The two year limit in saving Su Rou and Su Mei was getting closer and closer. Currently, there was less than a year left, so Chu Feng was also getting more and more worried.

This time, Zi Ling who had failed to make breakthroughs countless number of times finally successfully entered the Heaven realm. When she made the breakthrough, an abnormal scene appeared. The originally clear and sunny sky was instantly enveloped by layers of purple-coloured light. Very faintly, one could even see a purple-coloured bell that could shatter everything in the air.

But luckily, that strange scene was only small-scaled. In addition to Chu Feng and Zi Ling hiding in a desolate and wild mountain, there were no unnecessary troubles.

After Zi Ling successfully broke through, she also told Chu Feng about the thought she didn't tell him before that was fermenting for a long time in her heart.

“Chu Feng, it won’t do if this continues. Let’s go back to the Fire God School. After entering the Heaven realm, my power has gotten a jump in quality. I believe that I am able to fairly fight a person in the 6th level of the Heaven realm.”

“I want to go to the Fire God School to plunder the cultivation resources that they accumulated for almost a thousand years. I’m sure that they will be able to help you break into the 7th level of the Profound realm.” Zi Ling sat by Chu Feng’s side and seriously said.

“No.” However, without even thinking, Chu Feng instantly rejected the idea.

It was because he knew that even if Zi Ling’s strength became stronger, even if she was a Divine Body and got the blessing of the heavens, when facing someone in the 6th level of the Heaven realm, she did not have absolute confidence. Rather, there were huge risks.

After being together for such a long time, Chu Feng already confirmed his feelings towards Zi Ling. He truly loved Zi Ling, the little lady. That love came from his heart, and he was willing to bet with his life. Even if he himself got injured, he was not willing for her to be injured...

It was because Zi Ling treated outsiders coldly, like ice and frost. For her interests, she would be willing to use any kinds of methods, and she could be cruel and ruthless.

But for Chu Feng, she could throw herself away and disregard everything. No matter if it was to struggle over benefits for Chu Feng, she could ignore her own safety to loot the resources.

Facing a lady like her, it was impossible for Chu Feng to not be moved. He genuinely loved Zi Ling, and wanted to live his remaining life with her.

“Chu Feng, believe me. I have a certain amount of assurance that I can come back with everything.” Zi Ling guaranteed with a face filled with confidence.

“Then fine. I’ll go with you.” Chu Feng said.

“No.” However, after hearing those words, Zi Ling immediately refused.

“See? You don’t have absolute confidence, or else why wouldn’t you let me go? You are afraid that you won’t be able to defeat the Fire God School’s supreme elder.”

“At that time, not only will you die, I will die with you.” Chu Feng counter-asked.

“I...” At that instant, Zi Ling wanted to argue, but she could really not argue. Ultimately, she silently lowered her head and no longer spoke.

“Zi Ling, since you love me this much, why can’t you sleep once with me?”

“I’ve said that you’re a Divine Body, and if you go to bed with me, perhaps it can activate the power in my body, and perhaps it can allow me to break into the 7th level of the Profound realm.” Chu Feng spoke again.

In these days, it wasn’t the first time he asked Zi Ling to do the thing between a man and a woman with him. At the start, he was only using a joking tone, but later on, he said that it was hard to hold himself back. For entire days, he was together with a beauty like Zi Ling, yet he wasn’t allowed to touch her. It was simply the world’s most painful torture.

At the end, Chu Feng spoke his real thoughts. As long as he did the thing between a man and a woman with Zi Ling, there was a chance that the Divine Lightning power in his body would be activated, and perhaps his cultivation could rise greatly, and perhaps he could grasp totally new power. Although he could not be sure, there was at least a chance.

But no matter what, he got Zi Ling’s heartless refusal. Although Zi Ling could sacrifice everything for Chu Feng, she was unbending on that single thing.

“Chu Feng, about your goal at first when you approached me, was it because you liked me, or was it because you wanted to gain power from my body?” Suddenly, the gaze Zi Ling looked at Chu Feng with became extremely solemn.

“I...” At that instant, Chu Feng hesitated a bit. If it was before, he would certainly say unhesitatingly, “Of course it’s because I like you!”.

But it was different now. He already loved Zi Ling. Loved her so much he could not pull himself out, and he would even be willing to sacrifice himself. So, facing the woman he loved, Chu Feng could really not bear to trick her.

So, Chu Feng bit down his teeth, and said to Zi Ling, “I admit. At first I...”

“Don’t speak.” However, before letting Chu Feng finish talking, Zi Ling used her pale hand to cover Chu Feng’s mouth, then afterwards, slowly let go, sweetly smiled, and said,

“The past is not important. I only care about the present. I know that I truly love you a lot, and I also hope that you can know that I am willing to give up my everything for you. I can give you anything, but only not this. I have my hidden troubles, so I hope you can understand me.”

As she spoke those words, Zi Ling still had her sweet smile on the corners of her mouth, but reflective and translucent tears had already appeared from her pair of clear eyes. Quickly after, they became two streams and flowed down along her cheek.

“Zi Ling, I’m sorry. It’s my fault. I didn’t know you had hidden troubles.”

“I won’t mention this thing ever again okay? I won’t put you in a difficult situation!” Seeing that, Chu Feng hurriedly wiped Zi Ling’s tears for her. It was the first time he saw Zi Ling cry. It was the first time he saw such a firm lady cry.

At that instant, Chu Feng who was usually calm had actually panicked. He was extremely, extremely panicky. He knew that this time, he truly put Zi Ling in a difficult situation. He knew that Zi Ling was truly heart-broken, and his own heart truly ached as well.

At that instant, if he could stop Zi Ling from crying, he would do anything. Even if Zi Ling wanted to stab his body a few times, Chu Feng would be willing to.

He swore to never mention sleeping with Zi Ling again. Even if Zi Ling did not give her consent in her entire life, he would not mention it again in his entire life because to him, right now, Zi Ling was even more important than gaining power.

## Chapter 442: Stirred Up Fury

---

“Wuu~~~” Suddenly, Zi Ling’s alluring body leaped, and she had actually leaped into Chu Feng’s embrace on her own. Her little hands tightly clasped over Chu Feng’s neck, unwilling to let go as she silently sobbed.

No matter who, they never would have thought that the fifteen-year-old young female who could carry out large-scale slaughters, who had a Divine Body which had the blessing of the heavens, would actually have such a weak side.

Chu Feng also opened his arms and tightly hugged the little beauty in his embrace. This time, Chu Feng didn’t restlessly touch everywhere. He lightly rubbed Zi Ling’s smooth hair to calm Zi Ling’s emotions.

“Chu Feng, let’s go back to the continent of the Nine Provinces and back to the Azure Province. I want to see the two sisters.” Suddenly, Zi Ling raised her little face and seriously said to Chu Feng.

“Mm.” Seeing that, Chu Feng also continuously nodded. After leaving for so long, he was also always thinking about Su Rou and Su Mei, as well as his family and relatives.

Thus, on that day, Chu Feng and Zi Ling sat on the Exquisite Chariot, and while compacting the air as they flew, they headed back to the continent of the Nine Provinces.

The road of return wasn't too far, but it was absolutely not short. First, they had to enter the continent of the Nine Provinces, then go over the Tang Province, then the Yuan Province, then only after that could they enter the Azure Province. That required them to use up at least half a month of time.

However, just as Chu Feng and Zi Ling entered the Tang Province, they heard two explosive news.

First, it was that the young head of the Sword God Valley, Murong Yu, was killed by Zhang Tianyi. The Sword God Valley's foundation treasure "Divine Wood Sword" was taken away by Zhang Tianyi.

That shocked the continent of the Nine Provinces, because in the few months when Chu Feng disappeared, the continent of the Nine Provinces was relatively peaceful, but Zhang Tianyi's actions doubtlessly caused huge responses. Especially when Zhang Tianyi was also from the Azure Province.

So, that really stirred up discussions from everyone and they couldn't help but sigh. The Azure province was really going to rise greatly in power, as two monster-level geniuses who weren't afraid of the heaven or the earth appeared.

But the second news caused Chu Feng to be extremely angry. He was even unable to accept it.

It was that the Sword God Valley was furious. Murong Yu's father personally came out and madly searched for Zhang Tianyi's



traces in the continent of the Nine Provinces.

Since he was unable to find Zhang Tianyi, he led the army of the Sword God Valley and came to the Azure Province. He came to the Azure Dragon School that had already been flattened and did something that was utterly heinous.

After the Sword God Valley was still unable to find Zhang Tianyi in the Azure Province, it had actually burnt down the entire Azure Dragon Mountain Range, and thoroughly killed all citizens within the circumference of several hundred miles of the Azure Dragon Mountain Range. The huge massacre was truly the most inhumane thing in the world.

After killing all the people that were originally unrelated to Zhang Tianyi and Chu Feng, the head of the Sword God Valley even said that those people died because of Zhang Tianyi and Chu Feng. It was Zhang Tianyi and Chu Feng who killed those people. If there had to be blame, blame that they shouldn't have lived within the borders of the Azure Dragon School and that they shouldn't have been related to Zhang Tianyi and Chu Feng.

After that happened, the entire continent of the Nine Provinces was shocked. Many people felt that the head of the Sword God Valley could not bear the sorrow of losing his son, could not bear his foundation treasure being taken away, and that he had already went insane and already became a devil.

After all, those citizens were not related to Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi. Only because they lived within the former scope of power of the Azure Dragon School, they were slaughtered. That was

indeed too crazy.

The thing that made people feel helpless was that to the Sword God Valley's evil actions, the Jiang Dynasty acted as if it didn't see it, and chose to ignore.

Also, as the overlord of the Azure Province, the Qilin Prince's Mansion, they just stared as they allowed that to happen and didn't come out to stop them. They were looked at with contempt by many people in the continent of the Nine Provinces, and many insulted the Qilin Prince's Mansion as trash. As the overlord of the Azure Province, they allowed the Sword God Valley to commit such crimes and evils on their own land, yet didn't even dare to say anything.

But to Chu Feng, all of that was still within his endurable boundaries. The thing that he could not endure the most was still the things the Sword God Valley did later on.

After the Sword God Valley executed a completely devilish massacre, they detailedly searched the Azure Dragon Mountain Range and found the tombs of the Azure Dragon School's seniors. Then, they dug up all the tombs of the Azure Dragon School's former ancestors.

Afterwards, they found out Chu Feng's old address and came to the Leaning Mountain Town. They dug up all of Chu family's remains that died and they even carved curses on their bones. Cursing the owners of the remains to become pigs and dogs for all their lives and never to return back.

At the end, the head of the Sword God Valley brought all the remains away. He brought them to the Sword God Valley, and even released a statement.

If Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi wanted to take back the remains, they should go the Sword God Valley. He would be waiting for Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi at the Sword God Valley. If the two of them didn't come within a month, he would throw the remains into a pit of crap, so that [they would be cursed for ten thousand years](#).

There's a second meaning for the last phrase. Instead of "curse", it's "stink for ten thousand years".

After knowing about that, Chu Feng was endlessly angry because it was something that Chu Feng could not endure no matter what. That truly touched his bottom line, and his flames of fury engulfed his entire body. He hidden swore to remove the Sword God Valley from the continent of the Nine Provinces, and would make the Sword God Valley pay an extremely painful price for their actions.

Because to Chu Feng, profaning his family was absolutely not allowed. Especially his foster father. How important was he to Chu Feng? But currently, even after death, he could not remain at peace. How could Chu Feng not be furious?

"Dragons have opposite scales that cannot be touched", and Chu Feng's "[opposite scale](#)" was his family. The ones close to him. The people he cared about a lot even though there were very few of them.

"Opposite scale" refers to something like a "sensitive area".

At first, when Chu Feng was weak and when someone dared to touch his “opposite scale”, he would go take revenge while ignoring the consequences.

At present, Chu Feng was a lot stronger. So, when there was also people who touched Chu Feng’s “opposite scale”, his revenge would absolutely be a lot crueler.

After half a month of hurrying, Chu Feng finally returned to the Azure Province. The place he went first was the Leaning Mountain Town.

“Sword God Valley, you truly have very big nerves! I will definitely make you pay the price. I guarantee that!!”

At that instant, Chu Feng and Zi Ling were suspended in the air. They were looking at the Leaning Mountain that was slightly in ashes as it was made into a complete mess by one strike, and the Leaning Mountain Town that was flattened, and the graves that were dug open.

Those graves were the graves which he buried his family in. Right now, there were all dug open and nothing remained. What was remained were only big words that were formed by special imprinting, “Chu Feng you trash! If you have the guts, come to the Sword God Valley!”

Looking at those few big words, Chu Feng was so angry his fists creaked from being clenched. Even his body was trembling and the

bloodlust in his body uncontrollably surged out.

Because it meant that the rumours were true. His Chu family's remains as well as the remains of the Azure Dragon School's seniors were truly all taken away by the Sword God Valley. The Sword God Valley was truly taking the dead to threaten Chu Feng.

rumble rumble rumble

But just at that time, bursts of rumbling sounded from the distant horizon, like the interweaving of thunder sounds. At the same time, the sky in which the sounds came from started to wiggle, and an extremely powerful aura was speedily approaching.

At that instant, Chu Feng and Zi Ling were both shocked, and they even thought that the people from the Sword God Valley hid for an ambush.

But focusing their gazes and looking, their expressions couldn't help but change because they discovered that it wasn't a person from the Sword God Valley. It was a handsome young man.

That young man did have quite a good appearance. Sword-like brows, star-like eyes, bright and spirited expression, both manly and dazzling, and he was a perfect, slightly beautiful, male. Just from his face, he could captivate a large number of females.

But that young man's cultivation strength was not weak. Although he was only in his twenties, and looking at his age, he

should be a bit younger than Jie Qingming and Xu Zhongyu, his cultivation was even higher than Zi Ling, being a cultivator in the 3rd level of the Heaven realm.

And at that very instant, the young man was darting towards Chu Feng and Zi Ling with lightning-like speed while bringing might that could shock the world.

## Chapter 443: Zhang Tianyi

---

The speed of the young man was extremely fast, and almost with a blink, he arrived above the Leaning Mountain Town and entered Chu Feng's and Zi ling's line of sight.

He stood in the air with his hands behind his back. He first expressionlessly looked at Chu Feng and Zi Ling, then said,

“Chu Feng, Zi Ling, I have been waiting a long time for you here.”

“Who are you?” Seeing that person, Chu Feng loudly yelled.

“I believe you should have heard of my name before. I am a disciple of the Azure Dragon School, Zhang Tianyi.” Zhang Tianyi said.

“You're Zhang Tianyi, Senior Zhang?!” After hearing those words, Chu Feng couldn't help but hiddenly rejoice because Zhang Tianyi was a disciple of the Azure Dragon School. His previous actions were all for the Azure Province's glory, so accordingly, he should be standing on the same line of battle as Chu Feng.

“Senior Zhang? You think you are worthy to call me that?” But who would have thought that after hearing Chu Feng's words, Zhang Tianyi's sword-like brows inverted and within his eyes, layers of killing intent emerged.

“Senior Zhang, could it be that I’ve offended you in someplace?” Chu Feng asked puzzledly. It was the first time he met Zhang Tianyi, so there shouldn’t be any conflicts.

“Hmph. You, Chu Feng, angered the Lingyun School, causing my Azure Dragon School to be flattened. The foundation of over a thousand years from my seniors all destroyed in an instant. Do you even feel shame by saying you are a disciple of the Azure Dragon School? Do you feel shame by calling me senior?”

“I, Zhang Tianyi, will clean house for the Azure Dragon School and remove an unfilial disciple such as you.”

As he spoke, the killing intent in Zhang Tianyi’s eyes became denser. His left hand grasped air and a bow formed, while his right hand pulled air and an arrow formed. Quickly after, his arms pulled and ten thousand lights explosively shot out, covering the sky and sun, and forced their way towards Chu Feng. What Zhang Tianyi used was the martial skill of the Azure Dragon School, the Bow of Hundred Transformations.

rumble rumble rumble

When the Bow of Hundred Transformations reached Chu Feng’s current level, it would definitely not be counted as a strong martial skill, but when Zhang Tianyi used it, it absolutely possessed might of destruction.

Ten thousand arrows flew in the air and their surrounding space wiggled. Black lines appeared from the places they passed, as if



even the sky was going to be pierced through. Its power did not allow for any underestimation.

“His strength is actually this strong?”

At that instant, the eyes of Chu Feng, who similarly almost perfected the Bow of Hundred Transformations from cultivating, couldn't help but light up and slightly furrowed his brows because he discovered that Zhang Tianyi's battle power was really terrifying. Even if it was a martial skill like the Bow of Hundred Transformations, in his hands, he could still display extremely terrifying power.

If it was said that the Hundred-faced Old Man with cultivation in the 3rd level of the Heaven realm could be counted as the king within those in the 3rd level of the Heaven realm, then Zhang Tianyi would be the king within kings. His battle power was many times stronger than the Hundred-faced Old Man.

“Clean house? You truly have quite some tone there. I would rather like to experience what abilities you have to dare to say such big words.”

Just at that time, Zi Ling made her move. As she willed, boundless blue-coloured Spirit Formation surged out like the tide and several Spirit Formation walls were condensed and they formed in the air, splitting the sky.

The Spirit Formation walls were half-transparent and blue-coloured. With the sunlight shining, they were as brilliant as

crystals and extremely beautiful. The most important part was that Zi Ling's blue-coloured Spirit Formations were not to be underestimated. They gave off feelings of indestructibility.

bang bang bang bang

However, as Zhang Tianyi's arrows from the Bow of Hundred Transformations came flying quickly, the originally indestructible blue-coloured Spirit Formations were shattered like a glass by the ten thousand lights. The pieces fell from the sky and disappeared quickly after.

“How is that possible? He can actually break my Spirit Formations?”

At that instant, not to mention Chu Feng, even Zi Ling's little face changed and her mouth slightly widened. Shock emerged into her pair of beautiful eyes.

Who was Zi Ling? She was a Divine Body! Especially after stepping into the Heaven realm, Zi Ling's power could not be comparable to when she was in the 9th level of the Profound realm.

According to her estimations, those in the 4th level of the Heaven realm would absolutely not be able to defeat her. If she used her full strength, those in the 5th level of the Heaven realm would also not be able to defeat her. She could even have a fight with those in the 6th level of the Heaven realm. That was the area she was strong in. Her overwhelming battle power was not the slightest bit

inferior to Chu Feng. It could even be superior.

But what was the situation in front of their eyes? Zhang Tianyi was clearly only in the 3rd level of the Heaven realm, but he had actually been able to easily break open Zi Ling's Spirit Formations. What did that mean? It meant that Zhang Tianyi's battle was very horrifying as well, and it at least far surpassed the 4th level of the Heaven realm, possibly even comparable to the 5th level of the Heaven realm.

“You do have quite some methods.” Facing such a powerful and intrepid Zhang Tianyi, Zi Ling had no choice but to seriously treat it. She flipped her palm, and the Exquisite Chariot with overbearing might appeared in her hand. Afterwards, she threw it into the air as it rapidly expanded and appeared in front of Chu Feng and Zi Ling.

dang dang dang dang It had to be said that Zhang Tianyi's attacks were truly very strong. Even with the Strange Armament, the Exquisite Chariot, blocking them, when the golden-coloured arrows collided into the Exquisite Chariot, they would still make sounds of steel banging into one another, and they even gradually pushed the Exquisite Chariot back.

“Go~~~~~”

Suddenly, Zi Ling explosively yelled and the Exquisite Chariot suddenly drew closer to Zhang Tianyi. With peerless might, as it went over the raptured space, it rushed towards him.

“What a good chariot Strange Armament. Coincidentally, I’m lacking a vehicle. I’ll take this!”

However, when facing the brutally strong Exquisite Chariot, Zhang Tianyi was laughing loudly. Quickly afterwards, he waved his big sleeve, his hand formed a shape of an eagle’s claw, and he abruptly extended it. A layer of boundless Heaven power came flying out, formed a huge hand that was dozens of meters big, and grabbed the Exquisite Chariot into his hand.

“Crap.”

At that instant, Zi Ling hiddenly cursed because she astonishedly discovered that Zhang Tianyi’s power was really too strong. His power far surpassed her expectations.

At that instant, Zhang Tianyi was fighting against the power of the Exquisite Chariot and wanted to forcibly subdue the Exquisite Chariot then take it for himself.

“World Spirit, go~~~~” In that situation, Zi Ling willed, and a Spirit Formation Gate appeared in the air. The Fairy Spirit World World Spirit also walked out of it.

After the absorption of Source energy in the past period of time as well as with its own cultivation, the World Spirit from the Spirit World’s cultivation rose greatly and had risen into the 3rd level of the Heaven realm.

In addition to the World Spirit's special power, it was far stronger than ordinary cultivators. Its battle power was even comparable to the 4th level of the Heaven realm. At that moment, the World Spirit flew out, and while holding a golden-coloured longsword as well as with its unique atmosphere, it unhesitantly attacked to kill Zhang Tianyi.

“This is a World Spirit? Indeed, an interesting being. Good timing. Allow me to experience how fearless and strong the legendary beings that come from the so-called Spirit World are.”

Facing the World Spirit that was attacking him head-on, Zhang Tianyi was still not afraid in the slightest. With one hand, he was still condensing Heaven power and tightly clasping the struggling Exquisite Chariot in mid-air, while the other hand suddenly clenched, and with the methods of the Bow of Hundred Transformations, he condensed out a golden-coloured longsword and was facing the Fairy Spirit World World Spirit for a battle with one hand.

# Chapter 444: Divine Body?

---

whoosh whoosh whoosh

The Fairy Spirit World World Spirit was indeed very powerful. Radiance swirled around her body and she seemed to be as holy as a saint. The golden-coloured glare of the sword endlessly danced in the air. Not only was it spectacular and eye-grabbing, the might of the attacks were exceptionally powerful as well.

But it was useless. Zhang Tianyi also had exceptional sword skills. While holding the Heaven power gold sword condensed by the Bow of Hundred Transformations, he had used only one hand to block the attacks of the Fairy Spirit World World Spirit.

Also, he was very quick. With the spin of his sword tip, he went from passive to aggressive and counterattacked the Fairy World Spirit. His sword techniques were unique and extremely overbearing. Very quickly, he continuously forced the Fairly Spirit World World Spirit back and dangers started to surround it.

“Eggy, lend your power to me.”

Seeing that, Chu Feng explosively yelled and Eggy also did not hesitate. She hurriedly lent her cultivation of the 9th level of the Profound realm to Chu Feng.

After receiving Eggy’s cultivation, in Chu Feng’s eyes, golden-coloured lightning flashed and his aura rapidly rose. It infinitely neared the Heaven realm.

Quickly afterwards, blue-coloured lightning appeared and after the blue-coloured lightning appeared, it quickly interweaved with the golden-coloured lightning and formed a strange pattern on Chu Feng's pupils. At the same time, Chu Feng's aura had broke into the Heaven realm.

According to logic, with Chu Feng's lightning power and while borrowing Eggy's cultivation of the 9th level of the Profound realm, he should have totally been able to break into the 2nd level of the Heaven realm, but for some reason, he could only enter the 1st level of the Heaven realm while two lightnings overlaid.

Facing that phenomenon, Chu Feng and Eggy, and also Zi Ling, all contemplated it for a very long time. At the end, they guessed that it was very possibly because the binding of the Heaven realm was too big, In addition, it was power that Chu Feng's borrowed to use and it wasn't his own cultivation, so it weakened the power of the lightnings.

If Chu Feng personally entered the 9th level of the Profound realm, perhaps that binding would be broken through and he could rely on the two lightnings to step into the 2nd level of the Heaven realm.

Although it was only a guess, no matter what was said, even if he was in the 1st level of the Heaven realm, Chu Feng's power was also not comparable to before. Especially when he grasped the Strange Armament, Chu Feng's battle power was already comparable to the 4th level of the Heaven realm.

whoosh

So, after Chu Feng raised his cultivation, he stepped on the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens, held the Asura Ghost Axe, and attacked Zhang Tianyi.

hmm He abruptly waved the axe and a black-coloured blade of light came flying over. But Zhang Tianyi was still holding the Exquisite Chariot with one hand and he used the other hand to stop Chu Feng's black-coloured blade of light.

bang However, Zhang Tianyi underestimated the power of Chu Feng's Asura Ghost Axe. In the instant the two collided together, the Heaven power gold sword in Zhang Tianyi's hand instantly cracked. It was unable to stop the might of the black-coloured blade of light and it shattered from stress.

But Zhang Tianyi was absolutely not an incapable ordinary person. Although he felt quite surprised, he did not panic too much. He leaped to the side and dodged Chu Feng's black-coloured blade of light.

“Haha, your Strange Armament is quite nice. I'll take it as well!” After dodging Chu Feng's attack, Zhang Tianyi loudly laughed and rushed towards Chu Feng.

boom boom boom boom When Zhang Tianyi came up to Chu Feng, there was an extra wooden sword that had floating light swirling around it in his hand. The power of the wooden sword was extremely strong and it was only a bit weaker than Chu Feng's



Asura Ghost Axe. It was the foundation treasure of the Sword God Valley, the Strange Armament Divine Wood Sword.

whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh

dang dang dang dang

Zhang Tianyi was already ridiculously powerful. With a casual condensation of a Heaven power gold sword, he could suppress a World Spirit from the Fairy Spirit World. Currently, while holding the Strange Armament, his strength greatly increased even more.

Symbols of light around the sword ceaselessly appeared. One wave overlaying another, they endlessly swept towards Chu Feng and even Chu Feng could only hold them back but without any power to counterattack. He was constantly forced back by Zhang Tianyi's suppression.

“Senior Zhang, you and I were originally from the same school. Right now, we should be combining our powers to fight against the outside. Why is there a need for infighting?” In reality, Chu Feng did not use his full power because he truly didn't want to fight Zhang Tianyi to the death.

“Chu Feng, a mountain cannot hold two tigers. Do you not understand such simple logic?”

“Right now, in the continent of the Nine Provinces, when I'm mentioned, you would be thought of. People always mention and

discuss you and me.”

“But let me tell you. There can only be one strongest genius in the continent of the Nine Provinces. It is me, Zhang Tianyi.”

“And the only way to let them know that I’m stronger than you. There is only one way, it is to kill you.” Zhang Tianyi was extremely ruthless. Every single strike was fatal. He was truly aiming to take Chu Feng’s life.

After hearing those words, a cold glare also flashed in Chu Feng’s eyes as he coldly said, “Since it is like so, Senior Zhang, you cannot blame me for ignoring the feelings of camaraderie.”

After speaking, faint green-coloured armor of radiance suddenly appeared on Chu Feng’s body. Coincidentally, white-coloured fog also surrounded him and appeared, instantly enveloping Zhang Tianyi within.

“This is? Illusion Formation!!”

However, the thing that caused Chu Feng to be speechless was that even though Zhang Tianyi wasn’t a World Spiritist, his reactions were very sharp and his will was extremely firm.

He had actually instantly saw what Chu Feng used was an Illusion Formation and wasn’t deceived by it. The Divine Wood Sword in his hand shot out light in all directions and layers of even fiercer attacks started exploding out and endlessly pressed towards

Chu Feng.

“Dammit! How is he able to break open my Illusion Formation?”

At that instant, Chu Feng tightly furrowed his brows. Facing Zhang Tianyi’s attacks that were getting fiercer and fiercer, the current him was indeed unable to hold them back. He hurriedly used the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens and wanted to evade them.

“Want to escape? Your Asura Ghost Axe is mine!!!”

But what Chu Feng did not expect was as he used the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens, two lines of blue-coloured flames rose from under Zhang Tianyi’s feet and his speed had actually immediately multiplied. Like a shadow, he came up to Chu Feng, and even his Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens was unable to get rid of him.

Seeing Zhang Tianyi’s attacks which dazzled eyes came at him head-on, even Chu Feng’s complexion couldn’t help but greatly changed because at that instant, he felt the threat of death.

Not only was Zhang Tianyi’s battle power extremely strong, the methods he grasped was no weaker than his. He was simply the most terrifying opponent Chu Feng had ever met in his life within the young generation.

“Chu Feng, back.”

In the moment of life and death, Zi Ling appeared in front of Chu Feng like a ghost. At that instant, a purple-coloured aura surrounded Zi Ling's body. Although she was still in the 1st level of the Heaven realm, she was many times stronger than before.

Especially her purple-coloured huge bell. It already appeared from Zi Ling's offerings and with Divine Power, she pressed towards Zhang Tianyi.

"You indeed grasp special methods, but you are still unable to block me."

Facing Zi Ling who used her full strength, Zhang Tianyi was still not afraid. As he madly laughed, a blue-coloured aura appeared around his entire body. The blue-coloured aura surrounded him, and like armor, protected him within.

Quickly afterwards, the blue-coloured aura had actually rapidly changed and became blue-coloured flames. Correct, flames.

The scorching feeling did indeed belong to flames, without a doubt. They were like flames that could burn everything, and they were surging around Zhang Tianyi's body.

The blue-coloured flames were unable to injure him because the blue-coloured flames were originally one with him. They came out from inside his body. The most important thing was that as the blue-coloured flames appeared, Zhang Tianyi's battle power had instantly rose again. The powerful feeling he gave off had already

surpassed Zi Ling.

“This terrifying special power. It is possible that he is also a Divine Body?” At that instant, Chu Feng and Zi Ling were both astonished because the special power of the blue-coloured flames was indeed extremely similar to Zi Ling’s unique purple-coloured aura.

They were similarly powerful, they were similarly terrifying, they similarly had overwhelming battle power, and they similarly grasped extremely combat techniques. It simply corresponded infinitely with a Divine Body.

# Chapter 445: Forbidden Mysterious Technique

---

“No, not a Divine Body. It’s a Forbidden Mysterious Technique.” Just at that time, Eggy spoke.

“Forbidden Mysterious Technique?” Chu Feng suddenly came to a realization.

“That’s right. It is definitely a Forbidden Mysterious Technique. Looking at him, he seems to have cultivated it for a very long time and has already proficiently grasped this Mysterious Technique. He is a lot more practiced in it than Yan Ruyu, and he can already nimbly grasp this special power.”

“But, no matter how much better he cultivates the Forbidden Mysterious Technique, there are differences in it and Divine Bodies in terms of essence. His power is very strong, but it’s only because he cultivated the Forbidden Mysterious Technique and not because he is a Divine Body.” Eggy explained.

“It seems like I’m right. You have indeed also cultivated a Forbidden Mysterious Technique, but sadly, your cultivation is too weak. If you were also the same as me, being in the 3rd level of the Heaven realm, I would definitely not be able to defeat you. However, regrettably, you are only in the 1st level of the Heaven realm. Thus, you will not be able to defeat me.” Zhang Tianyi said while being full of confidence.

“Hmph. Then let’s see who’s strong and who’s weak.” Zi Ling

coldly snorted then drove the purple-coloured huge bell with full strength. As it crushed the air, it pressed its way towards Zhang Tianyi.

A purple-coloured aura surrounded the huge purple-coloured bell. The might was simply incomparable. It was not something doable by martial skills. It was innate might. It was the power of a Divine Body.

“You overestimate yourself.” However, Zhang Tianyi coldly smiled, then with a thought, the blue-coloured flames in his body were like a volcano as they instantly exploded out.

ROAR

Finally, a furious roar resonated out and the blue-coloured flames formed a huge blue-coloured beast of flames in the air. Its large mouth opened and swallowed Zi Ling’s purple-coloured bell all at once.

“Ahh!” At that instant, Zi Ling’s little face instantly turned incomparably white as if she received a heavy injury. Her body swayed and she almost fell from the sky. Luckily, Chu Feng’s hands and eyes were quick and he caught Zi Ling.

And seeing Zi Ling’s painful appearance at that moment, Chu Feng was immediately enraged. Blue veins popped out as he roared at Zhang Tianyi, “I will kill you!”

“Junior Chu Feng, it’s just a joke. There is no need to go so far as to truly have thoughts of killing right?”

However, just as the great battle entered the moment of life and death, what Chu Feng did not expect at all was Zhang Tianyi suddenly changing his face and kindly smiling at Chu Feng.

At the same time Zhang Tianyi said those words, the blue-coloured beast of flames in the air opened its mouth and released Zi Ling’s purple-coloured bell. At that instant, the face of Zi Ling who was originally in pain immediately turned quite better.

And after releasing Zi Ling’s purple-coloured bell, the blue-coloured beast of flames also started to disperse and finally, all of them returned to Zhang Tianyi’s body and he had actually, truly, stopped his attacks.

After doing all that, Zhang Tianyi flicked the Divine Wood Sword in his hand two times. This time, he didn’t put the Divine Wood Sword in his Cosmos Sack. He put it on his back.

Seeing Zhang Tianyi suddenly retracting his attacks when he completely occupied the advantage, Chu Feng tightly furrowed his brows and alertly looked at Zhang Tianyi. He wanted to know what he was hiding for him to stop attacking.

Because, Chu Feng knew that Zhang Tianyi was very strong. If he was also in the 3rd level of the Heaven realm, perhaps he wouldn’t be afraid of Zhang Tianyi, but he could do nothing as his current cultivation was still too weak. No matter how much more furious



he was, he would absolutely not be able to defeat Zhang Tianyi. At this moment, he could only endure.

“Junior Chu Feng, just now, I was only testing your and Lady Zi Ling’s abilities. I must say that I am very pleased.”

“The two of you are the same as my expectations. Indeed, you both grasp special methods. Lady Zi Ling’s cultivation in the Forbidden Mysterious Technique is even more practiced than me, and she has simply neared the state of being one with it. I really admire her on that.”

“As for you, Junior Chu Feng, you can actually directly climb into the 1st level of the Heaven realm from the cultivation of the 6th level of the Profound realm. I have to say that your method simply invokes my admiration from its strength.”

“Right now, both of you are still very young. If, in the future, you reach my age, I believe that the two of you will definitely surpass the current me.” Zhang Tianyi first cupped his hands towards Chu Feng and Zi Ling with an apologetic face, then only after did he kindly speak.

At that very instant, the difference in Zhang Tianyi’s attitude was like the difference in heaven and earth. It could be said to be a 180 degree turn.

Before, he had fierce killing intent and his appearance was as if he was truly going to kill Chu Feng and Zi Ling. But now, his face was filled with kindness and the gaze he looked at Chu Feng and Zi

Ling was as affectionate as looking at relatives.

“So, Senior Zhang, you were only testing us. I wonder then what business you have by waiting for us two in this place?” Chu Feng asked, but he was still a bit cautious.

He discovered that he truly could not see through Zhang Tianyi. He was still unable to confirm whether he was an enemy or an ally. He had to seriously observe his words and actions in order to be able to roughly be sure what kind of person he was.

“The reason why I waited here for you is, of course, because I want to cooperate with you.” Zhang Tianyi lightly smiled, then quickly after, said, “At first, Murong Yu challenged me and he even said that if he lost, he would give his Divine Wood Sword to me.”

“But I could do nothing about the fact that after losing, not only did he not admit it, he even wanted to escape. In a moment of fury, I cut him down and took his Divine Wood Sword away.”

“But I never would have thought that it would even affect the Azure Dragon School, causing the Azure Dragon School’s seniors who have already died to receive humiliation that they shouldn’t receive because of the disaster I stirred up.”

“Right now, the Azure Dragon School is no longer existing, but I, Zhang Tianyi, still see myself as a person from the Azure Province as well as a disciple of the Azure Dragon School. I believe that you, Junior Chu Feng, are the same as me.”

“So, I want to invite you two to hurry together to the Sword God Valley with me and make the Sword God Valley pay the price for their actions, and also let the people of the entire continent to know that even if only two people remain in my Azure Dragon School, we can still make the glory of the Azure Dragon School a thousand years ago reappear and exterminate his Sword God Valley.” Zhang Tianyi said.

“Your strength is very strong. I believe that even those in the 6th level of the Heaven realm will not necessarily be able to defeat you and you should have no problem to invade the Sword God Valley yourself. Why do you need to go with us two?” Clearly, Zi Ling was even more distrustful towards Zhang Tianyi. Rather, currently, she was still filled with fury when facing Zhang Tianyi.

“Haha, Lady Zi Ling... Nonono, to be more precise, I should call you sister-in-law.”

“Sister-in-law, I know that you still feel resentment for my actions just now, but like I said, I just wanted to test your abilities. It was only a joke, so please forgive me if I offended you.”

Zhang Tianyi was very smart and he saw Zi Ling’s displeased emotion. He took the lead to apologize to her, then said afterwards to Zi Ling and Chu Feng,

“I am more familiar with the Sword God Valley than you two. Right now, there are at least fifteen Sword God Valley Heaven realm experts and innumerable people in the Profound realm.”

“Of course, in our eyes, those Profound realm guys are weak people who cannot even take a single blow from us. Even if there are a lot, they aren’t enough to cause fear.”

“The important ones are the fifteen Heaven realm experts. Within the fifteen Heaven realm experts, ten of them are in the 1st level of the Heaven realm, two are in the 2nd level of the Heaven realm, and one is in the 3rd level of the Heaven realm.”

“There are two more. One is Murong Yu’s father, the current head of the Sword God Valley. He has the cultivation of the 5th level of the Heaven realm.”

“The last one is the former head of the Sword God Valley, the current old ancestor of the Sword God Valley. He can be said to be the strongest person in the Sword God Valley, having the cultivation of the 6th level of the Heaven realm.” Zhang Tianyi said.

## Chapter 446: Everyone Meeting Everyone

---

“To be honest, if I fight him alone, I wouldn’t be afraid of him at all. But the Sword God Valley has a Sword God Formation. This formation, from what I’ve heard, was left behind by the first head of the Sword God Valley.”

“This Sword God Formation is very profound, and also very powerful. It harmonizes with the Sword God Valley’s unique Mysterious Technique. When the Sword God Formation starts up, everyone who has cultivated the Sword God Valley’s Mysterious Technique will have a great increase in strength.”

“Anyway, the power of this Sword God Formation has been rumoured to be god-like. As for how strong it is, I’m not too sure, but I’m sure it is definitely not weak.”

“To be honest, facing the Sword God Formation, I do not have confidence to fight the Sword God Valley alone. So, I want to cooperate with you two. After all, Junior Chu Feng also has that duty.”

“Hmph. On what basis do we trust you on? What if you are with that Sword God Valley?” Zi Ling still had an appearance of not forgiving Zhang Tianyi.

“Hoh. Sister-in-law oh sister-in-law. You’ve also seen my strength. No matter how strong your and Junior Chu Feng’s martial cultivations are or how powerful the methods you grasp are, after all, the time you have been cultivating is short.

Compared to the current I, the two of you are still a bit weaker. If I wanted to take care of you two, why do I need to go through such trouble? I can apprehend you two right now.” Zhang Tianyi smilingly said.

“Come! Try! If I get serious, you may not be able to defeat me.” Zi Ling’s little face reddened from anger.

“Junior Chu Feng, look. Control this sister-in-law a bit!” Seeing that, Zhang Tianyi didn’t really know what to do. Facing females who disregarded reason, he could do nothing.

“Zi Ling, don’t make any more messes. I’m sure that you also know Senior Zhang is not a bad person.” Chu Feng smiled and patted Zi Ling’s shoulders. Zi Ling was rather obedient, and she indeed stood behind Chu Feng. Like a little bird that relied on a human, she no longer spoke.

“Senior Zhang, actually, even if you didn’t come and find me, I would have really wanted to find you. My thoughts are the same as yours. We should join hands and go to the Sword God Valley together and let them know that we aren’t people who are fun to bully.”

Just now, Chu Feng kept on using his Spirit power to detailedly observe Zhang Tianyi’s fluctuations in emotions. It seemed like the words he said weren’t lies.

Besides, it was as Zhang Tianyi said. With his current strength, if he truly wanted to take care of Chu Feng and Zi Ling, there was no

need to go through such troubles. Just now, he could have put the two of them to death. So, Chu Feng chose to believe Zhang Tianyi.

“Haha, as expected of another disciple of the Azure Dragon School. We brothers truly think similarly. Since it is like so, why not depart right now? Looking at the days, it’s roughly the same as the date the Sword God Valley set as the limit.”

“I don’t want the remains of the Azure Dragon School’s seniors to be thrown into a pool of crap because of the problems I made.” As he spoke, Zhang Tianyi scratched his head and his face was filled with shame. But in his similarly fierce gaze, there was a hint of yearning.

“Senior Zhang, Zi Ling’s Exquisite Chariot has extremely fast speed. We can absolutely make it within the time limit the Sword God Valley set.”

“Before that though, why not accompany me and greet some people? I believe there are some people you want to meet as well.”

After confirming that Zhang Tianyi wasn’t an enemy, Chu Feng decided to also bring Zhang Tianyi into the Thousand Bone Graveyard. In that place, the Azure Dragon Founder was there as fortification. Even if Zhang Tianyi had malicious intentions, he was absolutely not afraid. Besides, Chu Feng felt that Zhang Tianyi wasn’t a person who had a malevolent heart.

“Who?” Indeed, after hearing those words, Zhang Tianyi’s face was filled with curiosity.

Quickly after, in order for Zhang Tianyi to not feel too ashamed, Chu Feng first narrated the events of what happened to Zhang Tianyi. For example, even though the Azure Dragon School was exterminated, in reality, it was still surviving because at present, the core power of the Azure Dragon School was in the Thousand Bone Graveyard. In that place, there were special cultivation resources that could help everyone quickly increase their cultivations.

Also, he even told Zhang Tianyi about the Azure Dragon Founder still surviving as a consciousness as well as the sisters Su Rou and Su Mei getting injured.

After all, the Azure Dragon Founder was the founder of the Azure Dragon School. A thousand years ago, he swept through the continent. He was an existence that no one didn't know about, so it was likely that anyone would be shocked if they knew he was still living.

As for Su Rou, she was the person who created the Wings Alliance along with Zhang Tianyi. So Zhang Tianyi would be quite familiar with her.

“Junior Chu Feng, what you've said is true? My Azure Dragon School's founder is still in this world right now?” Indeed, after knowing that the Azure Dragon Founder was still living, Zhang Tianyi's face instantly became brighter.

“It's true! Senior Zhang, if you are willing to, you can accompany



me and pay respects to the founder.” Chu Feng seriously nodded his head.

“Yes, of course I want to see him! At first, the reason why I joined the Azure Dragon School was because I admired the Azure Dragon Founder too much. Right now, since he is actually still in this world, how can I not see him?”

“Junior Chu Feng, quickly lead the way!!” Zhang Tianyi excitedly said. It could be seen that he was truly impatient and wanted to see the people Chu Feng talked about. Especially the Azure Dragon Founder who swept through the continent a thousand years ago.

Quickly afterwards, Chu Feng led Zi Ling and Zhang Tianyi to the Azure Dragon Mountain Range. At present, the vast Azure Dragon Mountain Range was also destroyed into chaos. The forests that filled the mountains were burnt into charcoal and they were completely unrecognizable.

But with Chu Feng’s memories, he still found the entrance to the Thousand Bone Graveyard. After the three entered the Thousand Bone Graveyard, the people inside were all greatly shocked.

“Chu Feng, Tianyi, you two? You two got together?” After the head of the Azure Dragon School, Li Zhangqing, and Zhuge Liuyun saw Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi, they were extremely excited.

It was because Zhang Tianyi and Chu Feng could be said to be the most excellent disciples they had seen before, and their cultivations similarly greatly astounded them.

At first, when Zhang Tianyi left, he was still in the Profound realm. Right now, he was already in the 3rd level of the Heaven realm. That cultivation, in the Azure Province, was absolutely like an existence of a god. No one could be compared to him in several hundred years.

As for Chu Feng, he left for just a bit over a year, but he had already stepped into the 6th level of the Profound realm from the Origin realm. His improvement could be said to be godly quick and it caused people to feel disbelief.

After seeing Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi, everyone was endlessly happy because the two of them were the legends of the Azure Dragon School. They were the disciples' targets of idolization. Existences that even elders admired.

"This lady is?" But at the same time, Zi Ling obviously attracted people's attention. Her peerless beauty was really too outstanding. No matter where, she attracted others nonetheless.

"She is my fiancée." Chu Feng introduced her to everyone from the Azure Dragon School as well as to his own family members.

And at the same time Chu Feng introduced her, Zi Ling sweetly smiled. Beautiful, cute, gentle, amiable, and extremely likeable.

"Haha, good good good! Boy, you found quite a good wife!" Knowing that Zi Ling was actually Chu Feng's fiancée, the head of the Azure Dragon School, Li Zhangqing, and Zhuge Liuyun, Chu

Guyu, Chu Yue, Chu Zhen, Chu Cheng, and the others were all elated.

It was because Zi Ling beautiful appearance was simply unrivalled in the world. Besides, throwing away Zi Ling's beauty and not discussing about it, her cultivation was the 1st level of the Heaven realm! It meant that Zi Ling was an exceptional genius.

A woman like that was simply perfect. Being able to be together with a female like her, how could others not be happy for Chu Feng?

At the same time they were happy for Chu Feng, there were even no small number of males who were also deeply jealous of Chu Feng.

After all, a beauty like Zi Ling could be said to be the goddess in many men's hearts. Which one of them wouldn't want to have her? But in their lives, they had no chance and they could only admire Chu Feng and hiddenly dream about it.

# Chapter 447: Forward To The Sword God Valley

---

“Where’s the ancestor?” As the crowd heartily surrounded them and after chatting for a while, only then did Chu Feng notice that the Azure Dragon Founder was not there.

“Oh. He’s strengthening the power of the Sealing Spirit Formation. Recently, the situation of Su Rou and Su Mei is getting more and more unstable.” As that matter was mentioned, a touch of worry and helplessness appeared onto Zhuge Liuyun’s face.

After knowing that, Chu Feng’s face instantly changed and he hurriedly brought Zi Ling towards the formation that sealed Su Rou and Su Mei. Seeing that, the others also hurriedly followed.

After arriving in front of the formation, Chu Feng discovered that the Azure Dragon Founder was indeed guarding at that place. He was currently channeling power at the formation, but perhaps because he was a consciousness, no matter how much stronger he was when he was alive, currently, his power didn’t really follow command of his heart.

“Senior, let me help you.” Seeing that, Zi Ling who was also a Blue-cloak World Spiritist went up without even thinking and used practiced Spirit Formation methods to help the Azure Dragon Founder strengthen the power of the formation.

“Mm?” After seeing Zi Ling, a hint of astonishment also passed through the Azure Dragon Founder’s eyes.

It was because Zi Ling was very young, yet she already became a Blue-cloak World Spiritist at that age. It was simply something that hadn't appeared before in the Azure Dragon Founder's era.

Besides, Zi Ling's cultivation was very overwhelming as well. She entered the 1st level of the Heaven realm at that age. It was something that similarly never happened before in his era.

So, that was why the Azure Dragon Founder was astonished because he felt like he saw an extremely outstanding genius. That genius would surpass his generation, and far surpass him.

"Ancestor, she is called Zi Ling. She is my fiancée." Just at that time, Chu Feng walked up. From his Cosmos Sack, he took out a large amount of Spirit Formation Rocks. Those things could make the Spirit Formation even stronger.

"Oh? Such an excellent girl is actually your fiancée? Boy, your luck is truly not shallow! Haha, much better than mine."

Only after seeing Chu Feng did the Azure Dragon Founder know who Zi Ling was. He first satisfiedly nodded his head, then quickly after, looked at Chu Feng. Immediately, a hint of amazement flashed into his eyes as he said with shock,

"With the time of one year, you stepped into the 6th level of the Profound realm? Your speed of breaking through simply exceeds my predictions!"

“Heh, luck.” Chu Feng smilingly scratched his head.

“Boy, you’re just being modest right? But I like it very much. This means that I wasn’t mistaken.” The Azure Dragon Founder satisfiedly smiled and after meaningfully looking at Chu Feng and Zi Ling who was next to him, a touch of yearning had actually emerged into his eyes, as if the day to his own revival was already not far.

Afterwards, the Azure Dragon Founder did not say anymore useless words. Like Zi Ling, he concentrated on strengthening the formation.

At that time, Chu Feng who was a Grey-cloak World Spiritist could really not help much. He could only look through the gaps of the chains formations inwards at Su Rou and Su Mei who were greatly suffering.

Right now, Su Rou and Su Mei’s situation got even worse than a year ago. One had skin that was like ice with layers of frost covering it, whereas the other had fiery red skin that gave off bursts of heat. Their faces and figures could no longer be seen, and they simply didn’t look like a human anymore. More or less, it was a bit scary

Seeing the current Su Rou and Su Mei, then recalling and connecting them with their former beautiful appearances, Chu Feng’s heart felt pain as if it was being stirred around with a knife. If it wasn’t to save himself, there was no need for the two of them

to be feeling the pain right now.

Finally, the formation strengthening was finished. The people from the Azure Dragon School, Chu Feng's family, as well as Su Rou and Su Mei's father and elder brother got closer to one another. They could truly be said to be happily gathered together and ecstatic.

After Zhang Tianyi saw the Azure Dragon Founder, he was extremely excited and ceaselessly expressed emotions of admiration at the Azure Dragon Founder.

And the Azure Dragon Founder also liked Zhang Tianyi a lot. He gave him a very high rating. It was that Zhang Tianyi's future achievements would definitely far surpass him in his own peak moments.

Of course, at the same time, he also gave ratings to Chu Feng and Zi Ling. Similarly, they were very high. In short, the continent would undoubtedly be unable to contain Chu Feng, Zi Ling, and Zhang Tianyi. The three of them would step onto the even vaster stage.

After hearing the Azure Dragon Founder's appraisals, almost everyone on scene widened their mouths from amazement because his appraisals were really high.

After that, Zhang Tianyi and the Azure Dragon Founder chatted alone for a while, then afterwards, got together with the crowd and started to talk about the stories that happened to the Azure

Province recently. He first talked about his own heroic deeds, then talked about what Chu Feng did.

For every single thing, the crowd kept on shouting out in surprise, and from excitement, their hairs uncontrollably stood up straight. Many people even strongly gulped.

More and more, they felt that Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi were too strong. They simply surpassed their imaginations and did things that they didn't even dare to dream of.

But as the crowd learnt about those things, the ones most proud and excited were none other than Chu Guyu, Chu Yue, Chu Cheng, Chu Zhen, and the other Chu family members.

Thinking back at first, how many of them looked down on Chu Feng and felt that he was too trash-like, that he lost their Chu family's face, and also lost their faces?

But now, they were proud because of Chu Feng. Not only was it because Chu Feng was so strong, even their strengths greatly increased because of Chu Feng. If it was before, they could simply not imagine that they would have their current cultivations.

In reality, in one year, everyone had very huge improvements. By cultivating in the Essence Pool for a year, their cultivations had extremely great advancements.

It could be said that everyone improved with rapid speeds. Even



the dull people before, in terms of martial cultivation, became a lot smarter now. It also meant that with the assistance of the Essence Pool, their martial cultivation talents had actually been raised.

But as they were indulged in joy, Chu Feng, from start to finish, was unable to raise his spirits because there was always one thing packed in his heart. Especially after seeing Su Rou and Su Mei's present appearances, the thing in his heart became incomparably heavy, even to the point of suffocation.

So, Chu Feng went up to the formation alone again. He guarded that place, and silently looked at Su Rou and Su Mei who were in the formation.

“Don't worry. Within one year, I will definitely save you. If I, Chu Feng, cannot save you, I will die with you.”

Seeing the beautiful sisters in the Spirit Formation, the eyes of the usually strong-minded Chu Feng was actually a bit moist. He couldn't help making that decision in his heart. If he could not save Su Rou and Su Mei, he, Chu Feng, would absolutely not force himself to continue living.

“I can tell they were very beautiful when they were healthy.” Suddenly, a voice as pleasant to listen to as a silver bell rang out behind Chu Feng. Turning his head around to look, Zi Ling already appeared behind Chu Feng.

After seeing Chu Feng, Zi Ling sweetly smiled, then quickly after, cutely sat next to Chu Feng, together with him.

“Not only were they beautiful, they treated me very well. They only became how they are right now because of me.” Chu Feng said.

“If it was me, I would do that as well, and if it was you, for us, you would do the same thing.” Zi Ling sweetly smilingly said.

Seeing such an understanding Zi Ling, Chu Feng really did not know what to say. So, he didn't say anything at all. He brought the outstanding little beauty into his embrace. Zi Ling, like a little bird relying on a person, leaned in Chu Feng's embrace.

Just like that, for a night, Chu Feng and Zi Ling guarded the outside of Su Rou and Su Mei's sealing formation.

Zhang Tianyi, on the other hand, chatted with laughter for a night with the disciples and elders of the Azure Dragon School as well as with Chu Feng's family.

In the second morning, after Chu Feng, Zi Ling, and Zhang Tianyi ate breakfast with his family members in the Thousand Bone Graveyard, they said their farewells to the crowd, sat on the Exquisite Chariot, and hurried towards the Sui Province.

Because, the Sui Province was where the Sword God Valley was located in.

## Chapter 448: Geniuses Arrive

---

The news of the Sword God Valley digging up the tombs of the Azure Dragon School's ancestors and using the remains of the Azure Dragon School's seniors and Chu family to threaten Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi was already known throughout the continent of the Nine Provinces.

After the news was known, the experts from the powers everywhere all wanted to know whether the two most famous characters of the young generation right now in the continent of the Nine Provinces, Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi, would appear in the Sword God Valley or not. If they appeared, there would definitely be a shocking huge battle.

So, people from all directions hurried to the Sword God Valley and wanted to witness the huge battle.

The Sword God Valley also widely opened its gates and welcomed the guests who came from everywhere, as if wanting to let everyone be able to witness how Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi were going to die by the hands of the Sword God Valley.

However, the distance to the date the Sword God Valley set got closer and closer, but Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi had yet to appear. That caused people to guess one after another.

Many people felt that Zhang Tianyi and Chu Feng were afraid of the Sword God Valley and wouldn't come to that place for the seniors of the Azure Dragon School and the Chu family's bones.

That they were cowards.

There were also people who felt that it was all within expectations. After all, no matter how much more powerful Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi were, they were still of the young generation. How were they able to defeat the Sword God Valley? If they dared to come, they would be coming to their deaths, and it would not be really worth it to die for the remains of those who were already dead.

But no matter how people guessed, from start to finish, no one was willing to leave the Sword God Valley. Rather, there were more and more people who came to the Sword God Valley and at the end, even the Sword God Valley could not contain all those powerful people.

So, the experts camped outside of the Sword God Valley and left the last hint of expectation on the bottom of the hearts. Expecting that Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi could, before the final time limit, come to this place for the battle so that they, who came over from quite far away, could have a feast for their eyes and see a wonderful huge battle.

Finally, the last day arrived. That day was the final day of the one month limit the Sword God Valley set.

The elders and disciples of the Sword God Valley entered an alert state and the experts from everywhere also entered the Sword God Valley.

“Ahh, I never would have thought that the Sword God Valley truly brought the remains of the Chu family and the Azure Dragon School’s seniors back here.”

“I wonder which one of those remains is the Azure Dragon Founder’s. After all, he was the number one person a thousand years ago who swept through the continent, the most famous senior expert in the continent of the Nine Provinces. I never expected that after death, he even has to receive such humiliation.” As they looked at the bones, which were covered by curse engravings, in the middle of the Sword God Valley being hung up high on frames, people discussed one after another.

Because, underneath those bones, there was a huge pool. That pool emitted an extremely strong stench, attracting a large number of flies and mosquitoes. It was a pool of crap.

The Sword God Valley was truly insane. The words they released before were all serious. If Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi didn’t come today, it was likely that they would throw the remains into the pool of crap so that the owners of the remains would stink for ten thousand years.

Time passed bit by bit and at the start, people still held their patience, but when the sun was up high and when the time reached noon, even the head of the Sword God Valley could not keep his patience.

He rose, stood in the air, then loudly cursed, “Zhang Tianyi, Chu Feng, you two bastards! You have the guts to kill my son, you have the guts to kill my disciples, but you don’t have the guts to come to

my Sword God Valley to openly fight?!”

“You two bastards only have this bit of ability? You can only do shady things in the dark behind people’s backs? Damn eight generations of your ancestors!”

The voice of the head of the Sword God Valley resonated through the horizon and it was even louder and clearer than the noise of thunder. People several hundred miles outside could hear his cursing.

And as the head of the Sword God Valley cursed, a white-a grey-haired fat old man with a shiny face sat on a tall stage near the pool of crap. He had one leg over the other, was drinking tea, and seemed very calm.

That person was the old ancestor of the Sword God Valley. He was an expert in the 6th level of the Heaven realm. He was also the father of the head of the Sword God Valley, Murong Yu’s grandfather, and the person who found the Divine Wood Sword.

At first, shortly after he got the Divine Wood Sword, the Sword God Valley released word saying that he already died, but in reality, he was taking the benefits he got from the cliff and cultivating in isolation.

Several months ago, when the Sword God Valley announced that he was still living, it indeed raised quite a commotion.

But looking at it now, the old ancestor of the Sword God Valley didn't even put the matter of feigning death in his heart, or else he wouldn't be as calm and at ease like he was now.

Following the flow of time, the sun in the sky also shifted to the west. Noon became afternoon, and the head of the Sword God Valley had already insulted for a good two hours. Even he was tired from yelling. With a stomach filled with anger and resentment, he landed in the Sword God Valley.

“Ahh, looking at this, Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi are truly not coming.”

“What a shame to be unable to see the glory of these two exceptional geniuses.”

“What exceptional geniuses? They are two cowards. They disregard even their own family's and school's seniors' remains. Can they even be counted as persons? No matter how much better talent these kinds of people have, it is impossible for cowards to have any achievements. They will only be disasters if they live. They should receive the contempt of the world.”

Seeing that time passed bit by bit, many powerful people who specially hurried over could not hold their patience as well. Many people felt that Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi weren't coming and couldn't avoid feeling pity. They didn't feel pity for wasting time to come over, but felt pity because they were unable to see the glory of two outstanding geniuses.

The ones with good temper sighed in a low voice, but the ones with bad temper just started cursing and felt that Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi were both despicable people. No matter how much more martial cultivating talent two cowards had, their futures were limited.

rumble rumble rumble rumble rumble

However, just at that time, bursts of rumbling suddenly sounded out from the distant horizon. The sound was very strange, as if it was sound made from the boundless horizon by an enormous thing.

“Wha...What’s that?”

“It’s a chariot. It’s actually a chariot!”

Looking over at the direction the rumbling came from, they discovered that a chariot, which had immense might, was crushing the air as it headed towards them.

“Chariot?”

“When Chu Feng and Zi Ling were creating chaos in the Fire God School, I heard they rode a chariot to escape. Is it possible that they are coming?”

Finally, someone recognized the chariot because at that instant, the chariot that appeared in the horizon was exactly the same as



the one Zi Ling and Chu Feng sat on before. It was the Exquisite Chariot.

“So indeed, they still came. It’s Chu Feng and Lady Zi Ling? What about Zhang Tianyi? Has he come?” After confirming that it was Chu Feng and Zi Ling, everyone’s depressed and low spirits immediately became incomparably excited.

It was because they knew that a good show was going to start. Before, they heard various rumours about Chu Feng and various miracles. But today, they were going to personally see Chu Feng’s strength. They knew that even if Chu Feng and Zi Ling weren’t able to defeat the many experts of the Sword God Valley, they would definitely serve a feast for the eyes with an entertaining great battle.

rumble

Finally, after the Exquisite Chariot arrived above the Sword God Valley, it halted in the air. When the doors to the chariot opened, three figures also appeared in everyone’s line of sight. It was Chu Feng, Zi Ling, and Zhang Tianyi.

“Look! It’s Chu Feng! That young man is Chu Feng!” They instantly recognized Chu Feng because his wanted posters were already posted throughout the continent of the Nine Provinces and almost everyone knew what Chu Feng’s appearance was like.

“Then the beautiful female standing next to Chu Feng is Lady Zi Ling? I heard Lady Zi Ling has beauty that can destroy cities and

countries and lower all the females in the world. Looking at her today, it is indeed like so. There is actually such a gorgeous female in the world!”

“Chu Feng and Zi Ling has come, so that man is definitely Zhang Tianyi?”

“It’s Zhang Tianyi, absolutely no mistake. Look! Isn’t that the foundation treasure of the Sword God Valley, the Divine Wood Sword, behind his back?”

If it was said that everyone was excited when they saw the Exquisite Chariot, then when they personally saw Chu Feng, Zi Ling, and Zhang Tianyi, their excitement definitely reached the peak.

# Chapter 449: The Great Battle Begins

---

“He...he...he actually came!”

After Chu Feng and the others appeared, although the outsiders were excited, the people from the Sword God Valley were clearly a bit nervous. Especially the disciples and elders with slightly weak strength. They were more or less afraid.

After all, in this period of time, Chu Feng's name was really too strong. There was an uncountable number of people who died by his hands and it left quite a few shadows in the disciples' and elders' hearts. Besides, today, Chu Feng and the others clearly had unkind intentions by coming.

“Chu Feng, Zhang Tianyi, you two have done many evils, committed many sins, and killed countless people. Do you know your crimes?”

Just at that time, a voice that wasn't too loud yet contained extremely powerful might suddenly rang out. It was the old ancestor of the Sword God Valley.

At that instant, the Sword God Valley disciples that were afraid before immediately calmed down because they felt that the strength of the old ancestor was definitely able to easily take care of the three people in the air.

As for the people who wanted to watch an entertaining great battle, they tightly furrowed their brows because at a time like

this, what they hoped for was both sides to have equal strengths, but clearly, with the old ancestor overseeing everything, Chu Feng and the others' chance had already become very distant.

“You should know in your heart why I, Chu Feng, aim my attacks at your Sword God Valley. You are clear who's wrong and who's right.”

“Today, I have not come here to fight with words. I advise that the disciples and elders of the Sword God Valley to leave because I, Chu Feng, will start a great massacre today. If there are any people who don't want to die, you can still make it if you leave right now. If not, don't blame me for being ruthless and heartless later.” Chu Feng said.

“Haha, quite big words you have there. No wonder you are rumoured to be arrogant. After seeing you today, it is indeed like so.”

“Don't worry. You won't have the chance to start a great massacre, but this place will definitely be your place of burial.” The old ancestor of the Sword God Valley confidently smiled, then quickly afterwards, he cast his gaze towards Zi Ling who was by Chu Feng's side and said,

“Lady Zi Ling, there is no enmity between my Sword God Valley and you. I don't want to injure you, so leave right now. Or else, don't blame my Sword God Valley for not restraining ourselves back.”

Although the old ancestor of the Sword God Valley was very strong, he also knew that Zi Ling's grandfather, Zi Xuanyuan, was not a character who was easy to deal with. So, more or less, he feared Zi Ling.

It was also why after Zi Ling and Chu Feng invaded the Fire God School together, the powers everywhere aimed the spearhead back at Chu Feng yet no one put Zi Ling on a wanted poster.

“I am Chu Feng's fiancée. His enemy is my enemy. Your Sword God Valley is treating Chu Feng like this, insulting his seniors, and bullying his family. How can you dare say that there is no enmity?”

“To be honest, there is only one goal why I, Zi Ling, have come here today. It is the same as Chu Feng's: to start a great massacre in your Sword God Valley.”

whoosh

As she spoke, within Zi Ling's beautiful eyes, a hint of fierceness suddenly appeared. With a thought, with the might of a Strange Armament, the Exquisite Chariot dropped down from the sky and with a boom, it landed on a crowd of many Sword God Valley disciples.

The descent of the chariot was too sudden so they were still unable to react to it, causing over a dozen of people to be crushed alive.

At the same time, layers of dazzling, golden, brutally powerful ripples ceaselessly came out of the Exquisite Chariot. It swept out and engulfed over a thousand disciples.

The people who were engulfed by the golden ripples kept on crying out in pain and the agony made them wish they were dead. With a blink, their bodies were shattered, being killed by the might of the Exquisite Chariot.

“It seems like Zi Xuanyuan has truly brought you up poorly by having a demon-like granddaughter like you.”

“Today, I’ll give a naughty girl like you a lesson in his place so you will not cause chaos for the world and kill the innocent.”

Seeing that over a thousand of his valley’s disciples and elders were slaughtered in an instant, the face of the former Sword God Valley head changed as he took the lead to rise into the air and started to attack Chu Feng, Zi Ling, and Zhang Tianyi.

The old ancestor of the Sword God Valley did not use any martial skills. He only emanated his aura of the 6th level of the Heaven realm, but even so, the places his aura passed still shocked the heaven and earth, and even the sky was unable to hold back the might of his aura and twisted from the pressure.

Seeing such horrifying might, people who did not belong to the Sword God Valley hurriedly left the Sword God Valley and escaped outwards because even after the old ancestor of the Sword God Valley attacked, Zi Ling still didn’t stop her Exquisite Chariot and

the chariot was still insanely slaughtering the elders and disciples from the Sword God Valley.

“You are merely in the 6th level of the Heaven realm, yet you dare to speak such mad words? You want to give this a lesson and give that a lesson? Today, I, Zhang Tianyi will give you a lesson.”

Just at that time, Zhang Tianyi coldly smiled, then quickly after, pulled out the Divine Wood Sword from his back and with a slice, ten thousand symbols formed a blade of light and forcibly cut the aura of the Sword God Valley’s old ancestor.

Quickly afterwards, Zhang Tianyi leaped, and while holding the Divine Wood Sword, with floating light surrounding his body as well as with the unique might of the Strange Armament, he directly flew towards the old ancestor of the Sword God Valley.

“Hmph. You, a young person in the 3rd level of the Heaven realm, truly think you’re invincible in this world? Today, the three of you will die here!” The old ancestor of the Sword God Valley coldly snorted. With a flash of light from his hand, a huge silver-coloured sword appeared in his hand.

The sword was two feet wide and three meters tall. It was a true huge sword. Although it wasn’t a Strange Armament, it was still made by special materials and it was a rarely found sharp weapon.

whoosh whoosh whoosh

The huge sword should originally be incomparably heavy but in the hands of the Sword God Valley's old ancestor, it was as light as feather. Very casually, he moved it and as he waved it, the tip of the sword very rapidly became tens of thousands of bright, beautiful sword blurs as he fought against Zhang Tianyi's Divine Wood Sword.

“Zhang Tianyi, you dared to kill my son. Hand your life over!!”

Suddenly, another burst of limitless might was plucked from the ground. The head of the Sword God Valley attacked. His hatred of Zhang Tianyi had already entered his bones because his own son was killed by Zhang Tianyi. Even when he dreamed, he wished to kill Zhang Tianyi.

Right now, Zhang Tianyi appeared in front of him. Naturally, he could not control his own fury. With terrifying bloodlust as well as the aura of the 5th level of the Heaven realm, he was aiming to dash into the circle of battle between Zhang Tianyi and his own father.

whoosh But before he neared Zhang Tianyi, a beautiful figure stopped in front of him. It was Zi Ling.

“They are facing each other. What are you disturbing them for?” Zi Ling was already covered by the purple-coloured aura and horrifying Divine Body power was emitted. Although she still had a sweet smile, within her purple-coloured pupils, killing intent was overflowing.



“Ahh~~~~~” And as he was hesitating, bursts of miserable cries rang out from the Sword God Valley.

It was Chu Feng. The current Chu Feng was running straight towards the core of the Sword God Valley because Chu Feng’s family’s as well as the Azure Dragon School’s seniors’ remains were all at the core of the Sword God Valley.

However, Chu Feng did not descend from the sky. He dashed to the bottom of the Sword God Valley, and as he ran, the people from the Sword God Valley were all mercilessly killed by him.

# Chapter 450: Sword God Formation

---

Although Chu Feng was only in the 6th level of the Profound realm now, Eggy was already in the 9th level of the Profound realm. So, when Chu Feng borrowed Eggy's power and overlaid the two lightning, his aura was of the 1st level of the Heaven realm.

His battle power was already overwhelming, now in addition to the Asura Ghost Axe, the Strange Armament that could recognize its master, his battle power was truly unstoppable. Even those in the 4th level of the Heaven realm weren't necessarily able to defeat him.

“Ahh~~~~~”

On the road, no matter if it was a disciple or elder, or even if someone in the Heaven realm attacked, they were still unable to hold Chu Feng back. He was like a killing god as a path of blood was made from the slaughtering done in the Sword God Valley.

At that instant, Chu Feng's anger truly burst straight into the sky. Especially when he saw his family's bones hung above the pool of crap, his anger was thoroughly ignited.

But Chu Feng still had a clear target. He didn't overly slaughter. He ran straight at the heart of the Sword God Valley. What he needed to do first was to take down the bones or else his heart would not be at ease.

“Dammit. This brat's speed is actually so quick.”

Seeing Chu Feng arrive at the core of the Sword God Valley in a blink, the expression of the head of the Sword God Valley who was still fighting against Zi Ling in the air changed. He quickly turned around and wanted to go down to stop Chu Feng.

After all, Chu Feng and the others had the Exquisite Chariot and its speed was extremely fast. If Chu Feng successfully took away the bones then they escape, their losses would not be worth it.

Besides, if he didn't attack Chu Feng, it was likely that in the Sword God Valley, there was truly no one who could defeat him.

"You are fighting against me yet dare to be distracted? You are truly looking to die."

However, just at that time, Zi Ling's purple-coloured aura was like a fierce wild beast as it surrounded the head of the Sword God Valley and started to attack him.

"How is this possible? This girl is only in the 1st level of the Heaven realm. How can she have such terrifying power?"

At that instant, the head of the Sword God Valley was instantly shocked. His pair of glittering eyes were filled with disbelief.

It was because he had actually felt a fatal threat within the purple-coloured aura. He could not resist against the purple-coloured aura for long. If that continued, he would definitely be

defeated by Zi Ling.

“Lord Father, save me!!”

The head of the Sword God Valley set off the strongest battle power in his body, used his strongest martial skills, and as he dealt with Zi Ling, he yelled loudly for help.

“What happening to that girl? What is that purple-coloured aura?”

Seeing that, the face of the Sword God Valley’s old ancestor also changed greatly. But before he went over to give his assistance, his originally shocked complexion became even more shocked.

When he turned his head around to look, he discovered that Zhang Tianyi’s body was already all covered by blue-coloured flames. Also, the aura of Zhang Tianyi, who was previously only able to tangle with him for a bit, was even more terrifying than his own.

“Old thing, if you don’t open your Sword God Formation, don’t blame me when I, Zhang Tianyi, kill you in this place!” Zhang Tianyi explosively shouted, and with a smile, he held the Divine Wood Sword and started extremely fierce attacks on the old ancestor of the Sword God Valley.

At that instant, it was as if Zhang Tianyi became another person. Before, when he exchanged blows with the old ancestor of the

Sword God Valley, he was, at most, fairly equal. But at this very instant, he had already occupied an absolute advantage.

“Dammit. You three brats, are you even humans? Is it possible that you are all monsters in human form?”

The old ancestor of the Sword God Valley tightly furrowed his brows but he no longer dared to have any trace of carelessness. Before, he only heard that Chu Feng was a monster who defied common sense, but he never would have thought that Zi Ling and Zhang Tianyi would also be similarly monster-like. Their battle power was simply unimaginable and surpassed logic.

“Look! The old ancestor of the Sword God Valley and the valley head have actually been suppressed by Zhang Tianyi and Zi Ling!”

“Heavens! I truly don’t dare to believe this! An expert of the 6th level of the Heaven realm is suppressed by a young man in the 3rd level of the Heaven realm!”

“An expert of the 5th level of the Heaven realm is suppressed by a young woman in the 1st level of the Heaven realm! How are Zhang Tianyi and Zi Ling so strong?”

“Impressive. If I didn’t see this personally, I would simply not believe it. Chu Feng, Zi Ling, and Zhang Tianyi. These three people are truly like monsters. No wonder they dared to fearlessly come to this place. So their strengths have really reached an overwhelming stage.”

Seeing that the shocking huge battle just starting in the air, and that Zhang Tianyi and Zi Ling had the advantage and suppressed two characters who were undefeatable, it truly widened people's horizons and at the same time, they yelled out loudly satisfiedly.

Because, they felt that they didn't waste the journey by coming here as they saw a battle that impossibly happened. No matter how fierce the rumours about Chu Feng were before, without personally seeing it, there was no way to experience that feeling.

Right now, they finally put themselves on scene and saw Chu Feng's overwhelming battle power. Also, not only Chu Feng, Zhang Tianyi and Zi Ling were also similarly overwhelming. It caused them to feel very excited and felt that it was truly a trip that was worth it.

boom boom boom boom boom

“Ahh~~~~~”

“Valley Head, Ancestor, help us!”

Just as everyone cast their attention at the two great battles in the air, the painful cries in the Sword God Valley became louder and louder. Some people even started to loudly yell for help.

At the same time, explosions and ripples started to endlessly come out from the center of the Sword God Valley. The center of the Sword God Valley was already a wasteland, and the area of the

wasteland was still constantly increasing.

Focusing their gazes and looking, they couldn't help but take a long gasp because the current Chu Feng already slaughtered his way to the centre of the Sword god Valley. He took the bones of the Azure Dragon School's seniors and his family all down from the high frames and put them in his Cosmos Sack.

At the same time, Chu Feng was starting to greatly massacre. When the head of the Sword God Valley and the old ancestor of the Sword God Valley were being suppressed, there was no one who could stop Chu Feng.

Even if there were over ten million Sword God Valley elders and disciples, Chu Feng's might was still unstoppable. Like a killing god, he dashed into crowds of people and every single move and style would kill several people. He caused large areas of building to break and collapse, and his attacks were extremely ruthless.

“I've heard Chu Feng is cruel and heartless person and is the reincarnation of a killing god. Today, seeing this, it is indeed true. This decisive killing and completely merciless enemy slaughtering is something that we are unable to do even if we cultivate for dozens of years.”

Seeing that Chu Feng was truly starting a huge massacre, the faces of some aged experts of the old generation changed and they were not lightly frightened. If such a bloody scene was done by an adult, it was understandable, but when a young man had such a strong killing nature, it was more or less a bit scary.

“Quick! Quickly open the Sword God Formation!!”

Finally, the old ancestor of the Sword God Valley spoke. In that situation, he had no choice but to open the Sword God Formation because if they didn't use their final trump card, their Sword God Valley was truly going to be exterminated by three young people in front of the powerful people who were witnessing it.

hmm

And just as the old ancestor of the Sword God Valley finished speaking, the entire Sword God Valley lit up with light and an extremely powerful aura was stirring up, as if a super-strong expert was awaking.

“This feeling... This isn't a Spirit Formation that increases strength. It seems to be releasing something.”

At that instant, Chu Feng who was located inside the Sword God Valley tightly frowned. Quickly after, he leaped, and had actually stopped killing. He dashed up to the sky and next to Zi Ling.

It was because as a World Spiritist, he felt an unfavourable aura. The Sword God Formation seemed to be different from their expectations.

It wasn't for increasing the strengths of the Sword God Valley's elders and disciples. It was to release a certain living thing.



Although there was no way to be sure what it was, Chu Feng could already feel that it was an extremely powerful existence.

# Chapter 451: Expert Revives

---

How big was the Sword God Valley? It was the residence of over ten million disciples and elders. There were countless buildings and groups of gardens.

In the gardens, there were high mountains, flowing water, and even small-scaled lakes. That place was like an incomparably huge vast city.

And right now, light that covered the entire Sword God Valley finished covering it. It had already finished rising into the sky, and it could be imagined how grand of an appearance it was.

“Zi Ling, Senior Zhang, quickly leave!” As Chu Feng quickly fly up into the air, he loudly yelled. He was aware that the Sword God Formation was not simple.

“This power is even more terrifying than the rumours?”

Such dazzling brilliance, simply even more dazzling than sunlight. Naturally, Zi Ling and Zhang Tianyi noticed that change.

At that instant, their complexions both changed and on their faces, more or less, fear and uneasiness appeared. They changed their moves and wanted to escape.

hmm

However, the speed of the light was really too fast and it didn't even give Chu Feng and the others a chance to escape. Instantly, they were enveloped by the light that charged into the sky.

“Dammit. So not only does this Sword God Formation increase the power of the people from the Sword God Valley, it's a power that suppresses us.” Zhang Tianyi tightly frowned. His strength was actually suppressed.

“No, it's not that simple.” Just at that time, Chu Feng already got rid of the head of the Sword God Valley with Zi Ling and went next to Zhang Tianyi.

“Chu Feng, as expected of a World Spiritist. It seems like you have already seen through what has happened.” Seeing the uneasy expressions on Chu Feng's and the others' faces, the old ancestor of the Sword God Valley smugly laughed loudly.

“Hmph. Don't bother hiding anything. At the end, it is only a formation. I, Zhang Tianyi, came here today to kill you. This Sword God Formation was already within my expectations. It is not enough to strike fear in me.” Zhang Tianyi explosively yelled. With blue-coloured flames on his body and while holding the Divine Wood Sword in his hand, he attacked the old ancestor of the Sword God Valley again.

“Haha, perhaps you could have killed me before, but now, do you still have this strength?” However, the old ancestor of the Sword God Valley only laughed. He who was even suppressed by Zhang Tianyi before could actually be on par with him right now.

“Chu Feng, Zi Ling, Bring your lives over here!” Just at that time, the head of the Sword God Valley also caught up and started fierce attacks against Chu Feng and Zi ling.

“You overestimate yourself. Even if my power is suppressed, I can still deal with you.” Zi Ling curled her little mouth, then her purple-coloured aura exploded out of her body as she fought the head of the Sword God Valley.

But it had to be said that with the envelopment of the Sword God Formation. Zi Ling’s Divine Body power was also restrained quite a bit. Originally, she had no problem suppressing the head of the Sword God Valley, but now, she was only equal to him when fighting.

“What a grand beam of light. Is this the Sword God Formation of the Sword God Valley?”

“Strong. Too strong. I heard that this was made by the creator of the Sword God Valley, the ancestor of the Murong family, Murong Feng.”

“I’ve heard of that as well. It’s said that Murong Feng was titled as the most powerful person in the continent of the Nine Provinces after the Azure Dragon founder. However, he was relatively low-profile and did very few shocking things so that’s why he wasn’t as famous as the Azure Dragon Founder.”

“Yeah. There are rumours that say when Murong Feng was at his

peak, he was not inferior to the Azure Dragon Founder. I even heard that back then, he felt that his years were up and in order to maintain the peace of his successors, he exhausted his entire body's power and created this Sword God Formation. This formation's might is peerless and incomparable.”

“Ahh, before, this Sword God Formation was so godly spoke of and it caused one to fear when its name was heard. Seeing it today, it is indeed true!”

“Yeah, even the archenemy family of the Sword God Valley back then could only attack the people from the Sword God Valley when they left the valley. There was never anyone who dared to attack the Sword God Valley itself. Even when the Sword God Valley was at its lowest times, there was still no one who dared to attack it.”

“That's right that's right. Thinking back at this old ancestor of the Sword God Valley, he only went out to visit an old friend, but he was chased around everywhere. How poor of a state was he in? How much face did he lose?”

“But didn't he fall down a cliff exactly because of this? He had a lucky meeting, got the Divine Wood Sword, as well as countless benefits. Or else, how could he, who was only in the 1st level of the Heaven realm at first, have his current cultivation?”

“Ahh, at first when he brought the Divine Wood Sword back, the Sword God Valley released word saying that the old ancestor has already passed away because his injuries were too severe. They even held a grand burial for him. Who would have known that he was still living in his world.”

“Think carefully. This Sword God Valley is quite a special thing in the continent of the Nine Provinces. When they’re low-profile, they almost cause people to forget that they’re a peak power, but when they’re high-profile, they are incomparably insane. They do some things that even powers like the Fire God School and Yuangang School don’t dare to do.”

“Actually, that really isn’t much. These are methods that peak powers usually use. For example, aren’t the Fire God School, Yuangang School, Free and Unrestrained Valley and Hidden White Sect the same? Although they didn’t announce news about their old ancestors passing away, when they don’t appear in many years, they will cause the outside world to guess that they have already died.”

“But when the school faces danger, don’t they all come out and show themselves? These powers are really too eye-catching. More or less, they have to keep some trump cards that others don’t know about, and powerful old ancestors are their most powerful trump cards.”

“A single thrown rock gives birth to a thousand droplets” After the Sword God Formation was opened, they had actually started to discuss things revolving around the Sword God Valley’s past.

“Look! The Sword God Formation’s power seems to have been weakened!” Suddenly, someone yelled out in surprise.

“It’s true! I can see Chu Feng and the others in the sky! What’s

happening? Is it possible that the Sword God Formation is only a thing used to scare people? Why has its power diminished so quickly?” At the same time, everyone cast their gazes to the horizon and felt incomparably astonished.

“Hmph. You old bastard, this Sword God Formation won’t do. It’s useless.”

Indeed, as the light from the Sword God Formation diminished, the power that restrained Zhang Tianyi and the others also diminished. At that instant, Zhang Tianyi endlessly laughed madly. He pointed the tip of his sword to the old ancestor of the Sword God Valley and said, “Old bastard, don’t you like feigning death? Today, I, Zhang Tianyi, will help you out and let you truly die once.”

“Hmph. What an arrogant brat. The disaster has already come, yet you still dare to speak such nonsense. In a while, you will be unable to laugh.” Although Zhang Tianyi’s power started to recover, the old ancestor of the Sword God Valley was still not afraid. Rather, the corners of his mouth raised to form a sinister and cold smile.

At the same time, Zi Ling’s power also started to recover. She started to madly attack the head of the Sword God Valley. The valley head who was able to fight on par to Zi Ling had to escape everywhere once again because he was chased around by Zi Ling.

However, as the great battle got more and more intense, Chu Feng did not interfere. He stood straight in the air and closed both of his eyes. He controlled his Spirit power and detailedly felt the

changes happening to the Sword God Formation.

Chu Feng discovered that the horrifying limitless light did not disperse. It was formlessly condensing, and very surely, there was a terrifying existence reviving.

“Zi Ling, Senior Zhang, don’t keep on fighting and quickly back away!”

“This Sword God Formation isn’t used to raise the cultivation of the people from the Sword God Valley, nor is it used to restrain our cultivation.”

“It’s used to revive their senior expert. That expert will revive immediately and we must leave right now!” Finally, Chu Feng saw through everything and loudly yelled.



# Chapter 452: Greatest Sword God

---

“What?” Chu Feng’s sudden yell caused Zhang Tianyi and Zi Ling to be a bit stupefied.

“Chu Feng, you are indeed impressive. You have actually seen through the obscurity of my Sword God Formation! But sadly, it is too late.” The old ancestor of the Sword God Valley laughed as he got his way.

“Those who dare to invade my Sword God Valley, die!!” Just at that time, an aged and powerful voice suddenly exploded in the air. The terrifying power caused the space to tremble.

At the same time, extremely frightening might descended from the sky. The might was really too strong. It was as if power that slept for several hundreds of years finally reawakened in this instant.

The most important thing was that the might was concentrated on Chu Feng’s, Zi Ling’s, and Zhang Tianyi’s bodies. With the terrifying might, the three of them were locked in the air and they couldn’t even move half a step.

hmm Finally, a line of light appeared in the middle of Chu Feng, Zi Ling, and Zhang Tianyi. The light was originally as big as a fist, but it became bigger and bigger. At the end, it became a human shape and very quickly, facial features appeared, fingers appeared, and it became a shape of a person.

It was an old man. He was 2.3 meters tall, and he was big and imposing.

Long hair scattered along his shoulder, moved even without wind, he seemed to be uncontrollable and unrestrained, and was extremely domineering.

The most important thing was that he held a longsword. The sword was very ordinary. No matter if it was aura, or outer appearance, it was ordinary.

However, that longsword was exactly the same as the sculpture erected in the Sword God Valley, and the sword that was made into a sculpture was the sword used by the founder of the Sword God Valley, Murong Feng.

“Yo...You’re Murong Feng?” After seeing that person, Zhang Tianyi’s face also greatly changed as he asked almost speechlessly.

“That’s right. I am Murong Feng.” The old man looked at Zhang Tianyi then indifferently said.

“What? He’s Murong Feng? The first head of the Sword God Valley, the Greatest Sword God, Murong Feng?”

“How is that possible? He’s a character who has died for almost a thousand years. How is it possible that he is still living?” After hearing those words, everyone was instantly astonished and all of their expression became extremely interesting.

“Murong Feng? My Sword God Valley’s first ancestor, Murong Feng? Lord Ancestor is still living?” Not to mention outsiders, even the people from the Sword God Valley were dumbstruck and not lightly frightened.

“No, that isn’t his original body. Murong Feng has died for almost a thousand years. It is impossible for him to be living. It’s a consciousness. That’s a consciousness.” Some person who was knowledgeable explained.

“Consciousness? The surviving time for a consciousness is limited right? What kind of consciousness can live as long as a thousand years?”

But some person also raised doubts. Indeed, experts with powerful strengths could indeed condense a consciousness after death. That consciousness would store their knowledge as well as a certain level of cultivation to surviving in the world.

But the cultivation the consciousness contained would also become weaker as time passed. Their body would start to fade, and finally, completely disappear. The amount of time a consciousness lived was limited, and that was related to their strength.

But Murong Feng in front of them was clearly different. Radiance overflowed from his body and his cultivation was very strong. Even if he wasn’t as outstanding as he was said in the legends back then, to the people right now, he was already extremely terrifying.

After almost a thousand years, how was it possible for a consciousness to be stored so perfectly? After all, no matter how much stronger Murong Feng was back then, he was only in the peak of the Heaven realm. His consciousness shouldn't be able to survive this long right?

“Ordinary consciousnesses can indeed not survive this long, but if they are sealed by a special formation, it's not impossible.”

“However, this Consciousness Sealing Formation can only be used once, which also means that this Sword God Formation can only be started up once. After the power of this formation disappears, Murong Feng's consciousness will also completely disappear and he will never appear again.” Someone explained.

“So it's like that. I never would have thought that there is still such a formation in the world. No wonder it's said that this Sword God Formation is a formation that used up all his power to create. It seems like that is true.” At that instant, many people who were confused finally understood the profoundness of the formation.

“No matter what you say, it is indeed a fortunate thing to be able to see the legendary character, the Greatest Sword God, Murong Feng, in my life.”

“Ahh, how outstanding is Murong Feng? He was an existence able to face shoulder-to-shoulder with the Azure Dragon Founder. Even if he isn't as strong as he was in his peak, he is absolutely not someone Chu Feng and the others can fight against. It seems like the three of them won't have much luck today.”

After confirming Murong Feng's identity, people also felt that no matter how much more overwhelmingly powerful Chu Feng and the others were, today, they were definitely going to be defeated. After all, Murong Feng was a character from the legends and his reputation was huge.

“Chu Feng, Zhang Tianyi, Murong Feng's consciousness cannot survive for too much longer and it will disappear very quickly. We just need to drag this out for a bit.”

“It's said that when Murong Feng was alive, he was a righteous figure. He never did anything that went against his heart, so tell him about the actions his successors did. Perhaps we can put him in a difficult situation, and with that, he'll disappear very quickly.”

Zi Ling said through mental messages. As a Blue-coloured World Spiritist, she had a lot of experience and she was very clear what weakness a formation that sealed a consciousness had.

“Murong Feng. Your successors are despicable and shameless. They want to take away my treasure, but because they couldn't take away my treasure, they set me up and joined hands with the other powers to kill me.”

“They couldn't kill me, so they actually went and flattened my school, dug the graves of my ancestors, and engraved curses on my ancestors' bones, and was even going to throw the bones into a pool of crap.”

“The words I said are all true. If you don’t believe me, you can ask the people on scene.” Chu Feng loudly said.

“Oh?” After hearing Chu Feng’s words, Murong Feng’s brows lightly furrowed. Quickly after, he swept his gaze below and discovered that there were indeed a lot of people who gathered outside of the Sword God Valley, and from the clothings of those people, they were not part of his Sword God Valley.

“Milord, do not listen to his nonsense. The three of them are killing devils. Not only was my grandson killed, they even took away the Strange Armament, the Divine Wood Sword, I found. I announced this matter to the world, so they harboured hatred in their hearts and wanted to exterminate my Sword God Valley.”

“If the Sword God Valley didn’t enter a dangerous situation, I absolutely wouldn’t have opened the Sword God Formation to call you out, milord. After all, this Sword God Formation can only be used once, and after using it, you will be lost forever. I...” Speaking to that point, Murong Yu’s grandfather had actually silently sobbed. His appearance was tragic, it was pitiful.

“Milord, my father’s words are extremely true. Even though these three brats are very young, they are people who are ruthless and heartless. If you don’t kill them, the almost ten million disciples of my Sword God Valley will die by their hands!!” The head of the Sword God Valley also spoke.

“I never would have thought that my Sword God Valley has developed to this extent. Almost ten million disciples... This is a lot, lot more than the time I founded the Sword God Valley!”

Murong Feng detailedly looked at the Sword God Valley underneath and pleasedly nodded his head. Afterwards, he cast his gaze towards Murong Yu's grandfather and said,

“When I first created this Sword God Formation, it was to protect the peace of my Sword God Valley, but if you want me to kill three children, I, Murong Feng, cannot do it.”

“I will transfer my power to you. As for how you deal with them, that'll be up to you.”

After speaking, Murong Feng's body changed and he transformed into a little dot of light from the huge body of 2.3 meters tall and directly flew into the forehead of the Sword God Valley's old ancestor.

“Ahh~~” At that instant, Murong Yu's grandfather, the Sword God Valley's current generation's old ancestor suddenly cried out in pain, but quickly after, a layer of faint radiance covered his body. His aura rose from the 6th level of the Heaven realm to the 7th level of the Heaven realm.

## Chapter 453: Torturing Zi Ling

---

“Crap, I didn’t think that Murong Yu’s consciousness could attach to another body! This will greatly extend the time he survives! This is bad!!”

Seeing Murong Feng attaching onto the body of the Sword God Valley’s old ancestor and his cultivation rose from the 7th level of the Heaven realm from the 6th level of the Heaven realm in an instant, Zi Ling’s face immediately changed and the fear glittering in her eyes couldn’t avoid becoming a bit stronger.

“Why is this happening? He is clearly only in the 7th level of the Heaven realm, but why is this pressure even stronger than Murong Feng’s?” Zhang Tianyi also tightly furrowed his brows.

Although Murong Feng’s consciousness disappeared, at that instant, the pressure the old ancestor of the Sword God Valley emanated out was even stronger than the pressure Murong Feng emanated before. That stated one thing. It was that the 7th level of the Heaven realm was an existence he couldn’t fight against at present.

Legends said that Martial Lords had the ability to destroy the skies and earth, to shift mountains and fill oceans. It was also the main reason why the Heaven realm was so much stronger than the Spirit realm, Origin realm, and Profound realm.

Also, the higher the level in the Heaven realm, the closer one was to being a Martial Lord. Because of that, it was harder to make



breakthroughs.

Similarly, the power one would gain from that realm was stronger, and also because of that, more terrifying and harder to overcome.

So, it was said that every level after the 6th level of the Heaven realm was a screen that was difficult to step over. The 7th level of the Heaven realm was very hard to reach, so many people were stuck in the 6th level of the Heaven realm for their entire lives and could not enter the 7th level of the Heaven realm.

As for the 8th level of the Heaven realm and the 9th level of the Heaven realm, it was even more difficult. That was also the main reason why, up until now, in the continent of the Nine Provinces, there was no one who stepped into the Martial Lord realm.

The several levels in the later parts of the Heaven realm were so difficult, let alone the Martial Lord realm.

But, nothing could be done to that. The journey of martial cultivation was like that. The further one got, the harder it was.

Only people with extremely strong talent could surpass that barrier, walk higher and higher, and ultimately, become a peak character that could call upon the wind and rain.

Today, Zhang Tianyi, Chu Feng, and Zi Ling experienced the power of those in the 7th level of the Heaven realm. It was indeed a

realm that the current they could not fight against.

“Hahaha! Chu Feng, Zi Ling, Zhang Tianyi, the three of you were wild enough just now! Didn’t you threaten to kill me? Didn’t you threaten to kill my son? Didn’t you threaten to exterminate my Murong family? Didn’t you threaten to exterminate my Sword God Valley?”

“How about now? Why aren’t you even moving? Where did all the airs you have just now go?” At that instant, the old ancestor of the Sword God Valley acted as if he was a little despicable person acquiring a bit of success as he insanely laughed loudly. The bloodlust in his eyes overflowed everywhere but at the same time, a sinister and cold smile was on his face.

“You old bastard. If you want to kill, then kill. If you want to cut, then cut. Speak less rubbish to me.”

“You are only relying on your ancestor’s power to restrict me. If you don’t have your ancestor’s power, where the hell would you be?”

“From what I see, it’s a waste for you to live so long. It’s a waste for cultivating for so many years. You even call yourself as the old ancestor of the Sword God Valley. Ha! You are actually an old pile of garbage.” Zhang Tianyi did not fear the heavens nor the earth as he threw insults at the old ancestor of the Sword God Valley.

“You damn brat. Just now, you were the one who talked the biggest. Right now, you even dare to force such words through?

Sure, I'll let you." The old ancestor of the Sword God Valley coldly smiled, then raised his palm. A three feet long blade of light appeared in his palm.

Quickly after, he suddenly waved it, and the blade of light pierced into Zhang Tianyi's chest. With a "puchi", it pierced through Zhang Tianyi's chest.

"Haha, you old bastard. This is all you've got? It's not exciting enough, it's not refreshing enough! Can't you torture people better?"

"I'll tell you this. You better kill me quicker, or else when your ancestor's power disappears, I will make you wish you were dead." When Zhang Tianyi's chest was pierced through, he had actually not cried out or yelled. Rather, he loudly laughed.

The old ancestor of the Sword God Valley could no longer hold his anger. He held the blade of light, pointed towards Zhang Tianyi's dantian, and said while scowling, "You brat, you want to keep talking like that? I'll destroy your cultivation right now. Then let's see what words you'll say to me."

"Sword God Valley you bastard." Just at that time, Chu Feng suddenly yelled loudly, then howled, "You shameless old thing. I see that you look like a bear and have the spirit of a monkey. With your ancestor's power, you've gotten conceited again?"

"Have you forgotten about the times when you were chased after and had to run everywhere while stumbling and rolling on the

ground? Have you forgotten jumping off a cliff when you were beaten up and had no more roads to escape that year?”

“In order to evade an archenemy family, you even feigned death. You truly have no shame!”

“What? Now you talking about abilities? Ha! After painstakingly cultivating for dozens of years in isolation, weren’t you still beaten up like a dog by my Senior Zhang?”

“Senior Zhang is correct. You are a pile of old trash. You’ve wasted so many years cultivating, and you are still inferior to the few years of cultivating we, a bunch of young people, have done. Have all your years been lived as a dog?”

Chu Feng kept on throwing insults as well as all sorts of mocking expressions. It caused the old ancestor of the Sword God Valley to be so angry that his face turned from blue to purple and from purple to blue. Even his hands were trembling as he pointed his sword of light at Chu Feng and said, “Chu Feng, I originally wanted to take care of you later on. You are truly impatient to die.”

“That’s right. My skin is itching and I can’t waiting anymore. If you can, come touch me and try it out! Let me see how you’ll kill me.” Chu Feng loudly laughed and his eyes were filled with disdain.

“Yo...yo...you think that I won’t dare?” Being looked down on by a person of the young generation, even the liver of the old ancestor of the Sword God Valley ached from anger.

“Father, don’t waste any words with them. Quickly, when the power of the ancestor is still here, kill them. Don’t be tricked by their delaying plan.” Just at that time, the head of the Sword God Valley advised.

“That’s right. Listen to your son and quickly kill us. Don’t get tricked by us, or else without the power of your ancestor, what the hell can you even do? My Senior Zhang can kill you even with his eyes closed.” Chu Feng coldly mocked.

The old ancestor of the Sword God Valley was truly enraged. He turned his hand back and with a bang, a huge slap landed on his son’s face. Then after that, he pointed at him and angrily said, “Shut up. Do I need you to teach me what to do?”

“I...” At that instant, the face of the grand head of the Sword God Valley was filled with grievance, but he didn’t dare to say anything. He could only back away to the side.

Finally, the old ancestor of the Sword God Valley cast his gaze to Chu Feng again. A sinister and dark smile formed from the corners of his mouth raising as he said,

“Chu Feng, don’t think that I don’t know your little tricks. Isn’t it just to anger me, then torture you bit by bit, and after the power of my ancestor disappears, counterattack?”

“Hmph. Do you think I wouldn’t see through your methods?”

“I know that your skin is thick and you are not afraid of torture. But what about the one next to you? Can this Lady Zi Ling bear my torture?”

As he spoke, the old ancestor of the Sword God Valley went up to Zi Ling, used his hand to raise Zi Ling’s sharp jaw, and lustfully said,

“Ayaya, this small appearance is truly quite beautiful. I’ve lived for so many years, but it’s the first time I’ve seen such a pretty lady. I wonder what she’ll look like if there are a few bloody cuts on this face.”

“You dare?!!” Seeing that, Chu Feng’s expression changed greatly. On his face that was not afraid of the heavens nor the earth before, violent fury instantly appeared and at the same time, there was extreme uneasy fear.

It was not afraid how the old ancestor of the Sword God Valley tortured him. No matter how, it would be fine. However, he could absolutely not tolerate him going to torture Zi Ling. He firmly did not tolerate it.

“Haha, I don’t dare?”

“I’ll show you if I dare or not!” The old ancestor of the Sword God Valley laughed loudly, then quickly after, suddenly waved his big hand. With a bang, his thick and powerful hand left a deep-red-coloured handprint on Zi Ling’s white face.

## Chapter 454: The Furious Chu Feng

---

“You’re looking to die!” Seeing that scene, Chu Feng was instantly as furious as thunder. Layers of killing intent emerged into his eyes. His scowling complexion was as sinister as a monster.

But it was useless as no matter how much more he struggled, he was still unable to get rid of the pressure that bound him. He could only watch as his own woman was slapped and could do nothing at all.

The black-coloured gas started to take over Chu Feng’s eyes bit by bit. It was killing intent. Extremely dense killing intent. Chu Feng never had such terrifying killing intent before.

But it was useless as the old ancestor of the Sword God Valley acted as if he didn’t feel Chu Feng’s killing intent at all. The smile on his face got wider and wider, and as he spoke, his arm shook, stabbing the blade of light in his hand towards Zi Ling’s face.

boom

But just at that time, a violent aura suddenly exploded outwards from Chu Feng’s body. The power was strong, and the old ancestor of the Sword God Valley as well as the head of the Sword God Valley were unable to hold it back as they cried out in pain and were blown several thousand meters away.

“What’s happening?”

“This...this...this brat, what’s with him?”

The strong force caused the old ancestor of the Sword God Valley to spin a few circle in the air, then when he cast his gaze back at Chu Feng, his face instantly changed greatly because he astonishedly discovered that right now, Chu Feng’s eyes became black.

Those black-coloured eyes were extremely terrifying. They were like a beast’s as they flickered with horrifying bloodlust. They weren’t even the eyes of a human. They seemed more like a demon’s.

And at the same time Chu Feng’s eyes changed, two types of lightning even coiled around Chu Feng.

They were the blue-coloured lightning and the golden-coloured lightning. The two lightning interweaved together and kept on making crackling sounds and endlessly created two different types of sparks. It seemed simple, but in reality, it emanated extremely terrifying aura.

It was as if the two lightning weren’t lightning but two terrifying huge ancient beasts that contained terrifying power which could destroy the world.

boom



Just at that time, an explosion suddenly rang out from above the sky and quickly afterwards, endless black-coloured clouds appeared.

The black clouds appeared in the air as they rolled over. Almost in a blink, they covered the entire Sword God Valley and they were even continuing to expand, enveloping the entire land at that place.

“Heavens! What’s this? What happened?”

The day was originally clear for ten thousand miles with the sun setting in the west, but black clouds suddenly appeared, causing that region to be enveloped by darkness. If one stretched their hands, they would not be able to see their fingers. They would not be able to see anything.

The only thing that could be seen were the two lightning endlessly interweaving in the sky which were roaring out, and with the illumination of the lightning, people were able to see that Chu Feng’s expression was extremely sinister.

He no longer seemed to have the appearance of human, nor of a monster. It was indescribable, but it was extremely horrifying. With a single glance, one would be scared out of their mind and break out in cold sweat.

“Why did you harm her, how could you dare to harm her?”

Finally, Chu Feng spoke. His voice seemed to be calm, but it contained infinite bloodlust. It was simply not the voice of a person, but more like of a terrifying demon.

His voice was horrifying. Those who heard it couldn't help trembling, let alone the old ancestor of the Sword God Valley who the voice was directed at.

“Wha...wha...what are you? What kind of monster are you?!” The old ancestor of the Sword God Valley loudly questioned. He was doing his best to keep calm. After all, he had the cultivation of the 7th level of the Heaven realm currently, so he didn't feel that Chu Feng, who was only in the 1st level of the Heaven realm, would be able to gain any advantages from his hands.

Even though right now, the sky was covered by black clouds and it enveloped that entire area, even though an extremely terrifying aura was being emanated from Chu Feng's body and was getting stronger and stronger, he was still unwilling to believe. He was unwilling to believe that he would lose to a brat like Chu Feng. So, he furiously roared, and unrestrainedly blasted out his aura of the 7th level of the Heaven realm. He revolved all the Heaven power in his body and used a rank 7 martial skill.

boom rumble rumble rumble rumble rumble

When the attack came out, even the air trembled. Everyone was able to see a huge sword of light condensed by Heaven power appearing in the air.

The huge sword was several hundred meters long. It was simply even larger than a small-scale plaza. The most important part was the power it contained. It was extremely horrifying. The might that the huge sword let out caused almost everyone on scene to feel fear and to turn pale.

“This is the unique skill of the Sword God Valley, the Heaven Battling Sword. Although it’s a rank 7 martial skill, it infinitely nears rank 8 martial skills. It was created by the Sword God, Murong Feng.”

“Right now, it is being used by the old ancestor of the Sword God Valley with the aura of the 7th level of the Heaven realm. This might really shakes the world. Powerful. This martial skill is really too powerful. Currently, it’s in the air, but if it falls onto the ground, I’m sure that all of us would be injured by it and this Sword God Valley could even be destroyed. An expert in the 7th level of the Heaven realm is truly too terrifying.”

Seeing the huge sword of light in the air, everyone couldn’t help but gasp longly. Some people even started to escape towards the distance as they were deeply afraid of being harmed by the force the huge sword of light gave off because they felt that the sword of light could even destroy the vast Sword God Valley.

boom Suddenly, there was another explosion. The sword of light moved, and with light-like speed as well as with invincible might, it flew towards Chu Feng.

At that instant, even Zi Ling’s and Zhang Tianyi’s faces changed because the power the sword of light contained was doubtlessly

able to cause them to disappear like smoke dispersing without even leaving anything behind.

bzzbzz However, when the sword of light was a thousand meters away from Chu Feng, one of the two lightning surrounding Chu Feng's body suddenly explosively shot out.

It was the golden lightning. It, which was originally blinding, became even more beautiful when it flew in the air like a swimming dragon. However, behind its beautiful back was terrifying might because cracks appeared in the areas it passed. Even the air wasn't able to hold its might back and was forcibly shattered.

bang Finally, the lightning and the sword of light met one another and in the instant they touched, the sword of light became fragments. It turned into a rain of light, fell down, and lit up the pitch-black sky.

“Ahh!” At the same time, the head of the Sword God Valley also cried out in pain. Quickly after, a mouthful of blood was sprayed out and it splattered on his clothes.

It was because the sword of light was the attack of his full strength. When he used that attack, he was fated to suffer heavy injuries. But he could do nothing about the fact that his strike didn't have the slightest effect and instead, harmed himself.

“How is this possible? Is it possible that he truly isn't a person?” After seeing his own father receive severe injuries, his aura started

to rapidly decrease and returned back to the 6th level of the Heaven realm in a blink, the head of the Sword God Valley was utterly terrified.

Because, he felt like he didn't have any more hope. Chu Feng was too scary. In his entire life, he had never seen such a terrifying existence. So terrifying that it made him feel despair, as if nothing could hold him back.

At that instant, from the bottom of almost everyone's hearts, they were thinking about one thing. It was that...was Chu Feng even a person?

# Chapter 455: Shocking Huge Explosion

---

“Mom, it’s going to rain, quickly bring the clothes back in!” In a certain location in the Sui Province, a girl, in a courtyard, yelled loudly.

“What are you randomly yelling about? You’re lying to Mom again. The sky is clear for ten thousand miles. Where does it look like it’s going to rain?” After a middle-aged woman walked out from a house, she raised her head, looked at the clear sky, then looked back at her child and angrily scolded.

“I didn’t! Mom, look, look! It’s really going to rain! There is definitely rain in such a big rain cloud!” The girl skipped and jumped as she pointed behind the woman with a face filled with grievance.

The woman turned her head around half-believing and half-doubting, but she discovered in the direction of the Sword God Valley, dark black clouds did indeed appear. At that instant, the woman’s face greatly changed because she found out that the black clouds were really strange. Terrifyingly strange.

The black clouds were extremely black, as pitch-black as ink. The area they took up was very big as well. It thoroughly covered the region in the distance and it didn’t move. It stayed at that place.

It was wiggling, like a huge monster: sinister and terrifying. When one took a single glance, their spine would feel chills and they would become extremely uneasy.

“Ahh~~~~~” Suddenly, from a nearby courtyard, the shriek of a female sounded out, screaming, “What is that? It’s so scary!”

“Wuu, Mom, Mom...” Quickly after, from another courtyard, the sobbing of a boy rang out as he cried for his mother with tears.

“Little Cloud, don’t look, quickly go back into the house.” Seeing that situation, the woman with no cultivation was also scared. She knew that the people around her were frightened by the black-coloured clouds.

So, she carried the little girl, entered the house, and without even bringing the clothes back, she closed the doors, windows, and even locked them.

In reality, everyone within the circumference of a thousand miles of the Sword God Valley saw the black clouds. The black clouds were too strange. Not to mention commoners who hadn’t cultivated before, even when some experts with high cultivation saw the black clouds, they tightly furrowed their brows and were very uneasy.

“How is this happening? This Chu Feng is actually so terrifying! This aura.... I cannot bear it any longer.”

Suddenly, someone’s legs went limp and they knelt on the ground. Chu Feng’s aura was getting stronger and stronger and it almost engulfed the entire region at that place. Even though he didn’t intentionally suppress anyone, people were still unable to

fight against the aura.

Quickly after, a large number of people started to kneel on the ground. Some people fainted away, and when those people fainted away, they even twitched on the ground.

“Chu Feng, what’s wrong? Are you okay?! Chu Feng, hurry up and answer me, don’t scare me!”

At that instant, even Zi Ling panicked. She was the closest to Chu Feng, and also the person who could feel how terrifying Chu Feng was right now the most.

If one were to ask how terrifying Chu Feng was at that moment, even as a Divine Body, she felt very anxious because her Divine Power was restlessly being agitated, as if it felt the disturbance of Chu Feng’s power. The most important thing was that it was the first time Zi Ling felt the agitation of her Divine Power.

But she was even more worried because she discovered that not only did Chu Feng’s eyes change, his entire person seemed to have changed. He did not seem to be the Chu Feng she knew, and in reality, ever since Chu Feng changed, he was only fiercely glaring at the distant old ancestor of the Sword God Valley and had indeed not even glanced at Zi Ling.

ta

Suddenly, Chu Feng moved. He started to move forward, walking



slowly towards the old ancestor of the Sword God Valley. As he walked, he spoke. Thunder-like voice resonated throughout that land.

“There will be, one day, when this sky shatters because of me, when this land collapses because of me, when the sun, moon, and stars change because of me.”

“If that day, the one I love is no longer here, then I will make this world’s people die with her!”

boom

As Chu Feng spoke, the lightning around his body started to surge everywhere and the black clouds in the sky started to extremely quickly spiral. Bursts of powerful wind forced people to be unable to open their eyes. The ones with slightly stronger cultivation were fine, but as for the ones with slightly weaker cultivation, they were unable to resist the power of the wind, and like scarecrows, they were blown away by the wind and moved wherever the wind brought them.

rumble rumble rumble rumble rumble

The wind power got stronger and stronger. Even the Sword God Valley’s palaces built by special materials started to collapse and shatter. The region of land in that place sank into chaos and countless screams rang out in that place.

“Chu Feng! Chu Feng!!”

At that instant, Zi Ling originally wanted to get closer to Chu Feng, but she could do nothing as the wind power blew because of Chu Feng. The closer she got, the more overwhelmingly strong it got. Even though she kept on emitting layers of purple aura and her Divine Power got stronger, she was still unable to near Chu Feng.

“Junior Chu Feng, are you okay? Dammit, dammit! This damn wind!”

At the same time, Zhang Tianyi was not aware that the wind came from Chu Feng and he even thought that Chu Feng was in danger. He also tried his best to approach Chu Feng, but even though it was him, he was unable to approach Chu Feng right now.

bzzbzzbzz

Suddenly, an extremely ear-piercing sound rang out. It wasn't simple thunder. It was more like the roar of a fierce beast, and looking more carefully, Zhang Tianyi's and Zi Ling's already fearful complexion instantly changed greatly.

It was because they astonishedly discovered that in the direction Chu Feng was at, the gold and blue interweaved lightning were rapidly expanding.

As they expanded, they faintly formed two shapes. They were the

shapes of two huge beasts. They had never seen such huge beasts like those before, but they were extremely terrifying.

And also at that instant, the two of them were engulfed by the two huge lightning beasts.

boom rumble rumble rumble rumble rumble

Quickly afterwards, a boom that shocked the world rang out. The entire continent of the Nine Provinces heard that sound. Some people in other continents also heard that explosion.

The most horrifying thing was that coincident with the explosion, the entire continent of the Nine Provinces trembled. Although it was only a light tremble, it still caused people to be endlessly fearful. After all, terrifying sound added onto the effect of the ground shaking always caused people to feel uneasy. Some people took quite mad guesses, but even the most trivial guesses felt that it was an earthquake.

“What happened? Something seemed to have happened just now?” That was the question mark in everyone’s hearts because after the explosion and the shaking passed by like a flash, they didn’t know what to do. They didn’t know whether what happened was real or just their imagination.

At the same time, in the Han Province in the continent of the Nine Provinces, within an imposing city that had dominating airs, there was a tall tower that connected with the sky and pierced through the white clouds.

The tall tower was dazzling in golden colours as it was erected there, like a sharp sword that inversely stabbed the sky.

At that very instant, on the tall tower, a white-and grey-haired, golden-clothed old man sat there. Currently, his aged but clear eyes had opened. They were staring at the Sui Province while glittering.

Suddenly, his snow-white and sword-like brows lightly furrowed as he muttered, “The Sui Province... What just happened?”

And as the continent of the Nine Provinces, even the people of the continent of the Nine Provinces, was shaken by the huge sound, in the core of the explosion, within the Sword God Valley, everything changed to the point nothing seemed to be the same anymore.

The Sword God Valley truly became a deep valley. An incomparably huge deep valley. The former Sword God Valley was no longer there, as it was covered by a super-huge semicircular deep valley.

The area of the deep valley was ten times the previous Sword God Valley, and outside of the deep valley, countless thick and deep cracks spread and extended.

At present, there were a few black-coloured clouds that were unwilling to leave still floating around in the sky. The sunlight from the sun descending in the east also illuminated the deep

valley with dense rolling smoke.

But in that place, there was not half a bit of life force. It was a lifeless atmosphere...

# Chapter 456: This Is A Natural Disaster

---

In the continent of the Nine Provinces, in the Sui Province, within the borders of the Sword God Valley, huge black clouds suddenly appeared. Shortly after the black clouds appeared, there was a frightening explosion.

That explosion shocked the entire continent of the Nine Provinces. Even the people outside of the continent heard it. The people from the Sui Province even personally saw it. Dazzling radiance formed by blue and gold interweaving, spreading from the direction of the Sword God Valley.

After the dazzling radiance, the Sword God Valley was flattened. To be more precise, the entire area covered by black clouds became a huge and vast deep valley. Within the range of the deep valley, no life or buildings remained.

That shocked the entire continent. The Jiang Dynasty even sent out peak experts forward to the Sui Province's Sword God Valley to discover the truth of the shocking explosion.

Finally, the Jiang Dynasty ended up with a conclusion. The horrifying explosion was a natural disaster. As for why a natural disaster suddenly appeared, even the people from the Jiang Dynasty didn't know why.

And facing that statement, those who personally saw the old Sword God Valley and went to see the vast valley all agreed that the Jiang Dynasty's conclusion was correct.

It was because a person could absolutely not create such terrifying destruction. At least, in the current continent of the Nine Provinces, there seemed to be no one who do such a thing.

Time passed, and like a blink, two months had already passed since the frightening huge explosion. After two months, people were still excitedly discussing the huge explosion. It was everyone's favourite topic of discussion at leisure times.

Within two months, extremely huge changes also happened to the huge deep valley. Because the deep valley was too deep, it caused underground water to resurface. It also changed some river routes with them converging into the deep valley.

So, after two months of time, there was a lot of accumulated water in the deep valley. It was almost going to become a vast lake, and regarding the lake, people even took a name for it. The Natural Disaster Lake.

Along with the continuous enlargement of the Natural Disaster Lake, the deep valley was endlessly being filled up. The Sword God Valley that had been existing for almost a thousand years also eternally disappeared from people's lines of sight.

In the Azure Province, within the Thousand Bone Graveyard, next to the Spirit Formation that sealed Su Rou and Su Mei, Chu Feng calmly laid on a bed and beside him, Zi Ling looked over him.

“Sister-in-law, how's Junior Chu Feng?” A voice rang out. Zhang

Tianyi slowly walked over.

“Ancestor Azure Dragon just came by and had a look. He said that Chu Feng’s body is fairly well now and he believes he will reawaken after a few more days.” Zi Ling lightly smiled and said, but her gaze was still frozen on Chu Feng’s body.

“That’s great. On that day, if it wasn’t for Junior Chu Feng, we would have likely died there.” Zhang Tianyi meaningfully looked at Chu Feng. As long as he thought back at the frightening scene two months ago in the Sword God Valley, he couldn’t avoid feeling a bit of fear towards Chu Feng.

Because, at that instant, even if it was he who cultivated a Forbidden Mysterious Technique, he still felt a fatal threat. Especially after the explosion finished when he personally saw the scene back then. That was truly soul-frightening.

Within the circumference of several thousand miles, dense smoke rolled about everywhere. He could not feel the slightest trace of life. It was really too terrifying because he who had always seen himself as exceptional had never thought that there would be a person who could create such terrifying damage with his own strength. It was truly power that could destroy the heavens and the earth.

“Senior Zhang, you haven’t told anyone about Chu Feng right?” Zi Ling lightly smiled and asked.

“I haven’t. I know how powerful information like this is. If it is



known, it can very possibly attract trouble for Junior Chu Feng so naturally I wouldn't tell anyone. Right now, only you and I know about this, as well as Junior Chu Feng. The people who were in the Sword God Valley that day are all dead anyway."

"Actually, thinking more carefully, it is truly a miracle for me to survive from such level of terrifying power." Zhang Tianyi smiled.

"I'm sure that Chu Feng at that time still had a stand of reason. If he didn't want to protect us, from that level of power, how could we possibly have lived?" Zi Ling smilingly said.

"Yeah." Zhang Tianyi nodded in agreement, then after deeply looking at Chu Feng, he left.

When the power in Chu Feng's body burst out, even Zi Ling and Zhang Tianyi were dumbfounded because they became aware that Chu Feng grasped extremely destructive power.

And that type of power could not be known to others. If a certain strong force of power knew about it, it would be unclear whether Chu Feng would have luck or a disaster.

Zi Ling heard her grandfather say before that in the Eastern Sea Region, there was such a terrifying power. They would usually use poisonous methods to take other people's power away and add it onto their own bodies.

Although those powers were twisted and evil, there were indeed

many of them and many already had a standing. They were rulers of an area, and there were no one who dared to easily anger them.

So, back then, Zi Ling and Zhang Tianyi instantly decided to not tell anyone about the secret on Chu Feng's body. Even if it was Chu Feng's family or the Azure Dragon Founder, they could not be told.

Actually, according to Zi Ling's nature, her first thought back then was to kill Zhang Tianyi. Only that was the safest, the most appropriate.

But she could do nothing as on one side, her strength was inferior to Zhang Tianyi's, and even if she truly killed Zhang Tianyi on her own discretion, she was afraid that Chu Feng would blame her. So, she didn't do such extreme things.

After that, the two of them brought the unconscious and extremely weak Chu Feng back here.

Up until now, he had already been healing for over two months, but Chu Feng had still not awakened.

After a few more days, Zi Ling was still, as usual, looking over Chu Feng by his side. Even though she knew that Chu Feng was fairly fine, as long as Chu Feng didn't awake, expressions of worry would still be on her face.

“Mm~~~~~” Finally, Chu Feng's eyes trembled a bit, and at the same time, a light hmph sounded from his mouth.

“Chu Feng, Chu Feng, wake up! Stop sleeping!” Seeing that, Zi Ling was instantly elated and she hurriedly called out to Chu Feng constantly, deeply afraid that he would go back to sleep.

Indeed, with Zi Ling’s sweet calls, Chu Feng’s eyes started to slowly open. After he saw Zi Ling, a shining and peaceful light smile rose from the corners of his mouth, but when he observed his surroundings, a hint of puzzledness flashed past his eyes as he asked Zi Ling,

“Zi Ling, ho...how did we return to the Thousand Bone Graveyard? Shouldn’t we be in the Sword God Valley?”

“Chu Feng, don’t you remember what happened?” Seeing Chu Feng’s confused appearance, Zi Ling’s brows slightly furrowed and a touch of worry emerged onto her face.

After all, after Chu Feng exploded his terrifying power out back then, his body was extremely weak. At that time, Zi Ling had cried many times, because Chu Feng’s body was really too weak back then.

So weak that he would possibly die at any time. So, even if the present Chu Feng already recovered, she was still very worried. Worried whether Chu Feng would receive any detrimental effects because of what happened.

# Chapter 457: Absolutely Do Not Harm Her

---

“I only remember the consciousness of the Sword God Valley’s ancestor, Murong Feng, being attached onto the body of the Sword God Valley’s old ancestor. I don’t remember too clearly about the things that came after.”

Chu Feng started to organize the memory fragments in his brain, but his memory, from start to finish, was locked on the scene in which the old ancestor of the Sword God Valley had a consciousness attached to him and his cultivation raising from the 6th level of the Heaven realm to the 7th level of the Heaven realm. He couldn’t remember what came after.

“Chu Feng, I feel that there is a must for you to know about this. Perhaps you can gain a deeper understanding of your own power.” Seeing that, Zi Ling didn’t hide anything, and she told everything that happened afterwards to Chu Feng in detail.

“That’s not possible right? You said that I, with my own power, destroyed the Sword God Valley?” After hearing the events that happened, even Chu Feng felt incomparably shocked.

“No, to be more precise, it’s you who destroyed everything within the circumference of a thousand miles of the Sword God Valley.” Zi Ling seriously said.

gulp At that instant, even Chu Feng himself couldn’t help gulping. The circumference of a thousand miles. How vast was that land? Even if he used the Dragon Travelling Through Nine

Heavens to quickly fly, he still had to fly for a while.

And according to what Zi Ling said, back then, it was only a single strike that destroyed the land within the circumference of a thousand miles. He could totally imagine how terrifying that power was.

But Chu Feng unhesitantly believed it. He believed everything Zi Ling said because the golden lightning and blue lightning were indeed things he grasped.

And the reason why he was so shocked was because even though he knew that the Divine Lightning in his body was very powerful, he never would have thought that it would be that powerful.

“That’s right Chu Feng. There are also these. I’m sure that after refining these, you should be able to break through right?” As Zi Ling spoke, she took her Cosmos Sack and handed it over to Chu Feng.

“Zi Ling, this is?!” After opening the Cosmos Sack, Chu Feng was shocked once again because the Cosmos Sack was filled with Profound beads. There were five million.

“On that day, you destroyed the Sword God Valley, but indirectly, you also caused the treasury the Sword God Valley hidden deep underground to burst out, and you also destroyed the locks.”

“Afterwards, I asked Senior Zhang to sell some unusable treasures and turned them all to cultivation resources that you can cultivate. The Profound beads here can be said to be the Sword God Valley’s everything.” Zi Ling explained.

“Then what about Senior Zhang? I can’t use so many Profound beads by myself!” Chu Feng said.

“Senior Zhang cultivated a Forbidden Mysterious Technique. He’s the same as me: he doesn’t have huge needs for cultivation resources. Besides, he has already felt that if it wasn’t for you, we would have died back then. So, he isn’t willing to take a single Profound bead. Cultivate at ease, quickly rise to the 7th level of the Profound realm, and only then can you save Su Rou and Su Mei.” Zi Ling said.

And seeing Su Rou and Su Mei who were sealed in the Spirit Formation next to him, Chu Feng also didn’t hesitate and put away the Cosmos Sack. With his estimations, there was absolutely no problem breaking into the 7th level of the Profound realm with so many Profound beads.

After putting away the Profound beads, Chu Feng didn’t hurry to cultivate them. He first went to see his family members and let them know that he was already well so they wouldn’t worry.

Indeed, after everyone saw Chu Feng up, all of them breathed a long sigh of relief and their tense hearts finally calmed down.

After that, in order to celebrate Chu Feng’s recovery, Zhang

Tianyi specially left the Thousand Bone Graveyard and went to seek for a big pile of deliciousness. After bringing it back, Chu Yue and the others cooked it and made an incomparable sumptuous feast. The group of people then happily ate together.

After the meal, sleepiness suddenly surged forth, so Zi Ling laid in Chu Feng's embrace and fell asleep.

Looking at Zi Ling in his embrace, Chu Feng's heart endlessly ached. For a full two months, in order to take care of him, Zi Ling had almost not slept. Even if she had a body of steel, she could still not bear that.

“Chu Feng, this time, you finally know how powerful the Divine Lightning in your body is. On that day, even I was scared by you. Power like that shouldn't have been bursted out with a cultivation like yours.”

Finally, Eggy who had been in silence for a long time spoke. At first, although Chu Feng was unconsciousness, Eggy was able to remain awake so she witnessed the scene that day clearly.

“Eggy, do you know how I bursted out the power of the Divine Lightning?”

“What way is there that can allow me to grasp the power of the Divine Lightning?” Chu Feng impatiently asked. He truly wanted grasp power that had great destruction potential.

“Accurately speaking, I also don’t know how to grasp it. Looking at the situation that time, the old bastard of the Sword God Valley touched your Zi Ling, causing your anger to stir up and killing intent to spread, and also at that time, the power of the Divine Lightning bursted out.”

“At that time, you even said some mysterious words, but I’m guessing that you have no recollection of them. So, according to my analysis, there are two possibilities.” Eggy said.

“What possibilities?” Chu Feng closely asked.

“The first possibility is that Lady Zi Ling is really too important to you right now. So important that you do not allow anyone to harm her. It was your impulse in wanting to protect her that activated the power of the Divine Lightning.”

“Another possibility is that the Divine Lightning controlled you. At least, the power of the Divine Lightning affected your emotions, or else you wouldn’t have said those words that were full of ambition.” Eggy said.

“Then what should I do?” Chu Feng asked.

“If it’s the second possibility, then you can only wait. Perhaps the Divine Lightning truly has intelligence, and like a Secret Skill, the time you thoroughly gain its power is when it thoroughly approves of you.”



“If it’s the first possibility, then it would be easier to deal with. Just let your Zi Ling be harmed a bit more and use that to stir up your anger. But from my guesses, since you love her so much right now, you would definitely not harm her for power right?” Eggy sweetly said while smiling, as if she already seen through Chu Feng.

“Of course I can’t. How can I go harm Zi Ling for power?” Chu Feng immediately refused. His expression was very unsightly, as if it was a taboo.

“Mm, not bad. Now that seems like the Chu Feng I know. Men can indeed not harm their woman for power. If you truly did that, I would rather look down on you.”

“Besides, they are only guesses. Rather than the first, I feel like the second is the most likely. It seems like it decides itself how much power from the Divine Lightning you can grasp.”

“Of course, you can go and understand it yourself, but your current comprehension power is only what it is. If you want to more deeply understand the power of the Divine Lightning, then it’s back to the old method: to require a burst of assistance.”

“Zi Ling’s Divine Body’s power is the best assistance. As long as you and Zi Ling do the thing between a man and a woman for once, perhaps it can allow you gain some new things from the Divine Lightning.”

“But whether it can succeed or not will only be a guess. It is all

unknown. At the end, if you want to become stronger, you still have to rely on yourself.” Eggy gigglingly said.

“I will become strong, but I will absolutely not make things difficult for Zi Ling, and even more so, I will not harm her.” Chu Feng firmly said.

# World Spirit Guild

# Chapter 458: Call Me Milady Queen

---

“Mm, very good. It’s good to understand it.”

“Just say it like this. The power of the Divine Lightning in your body is too strong. It’s not something you can grasp right now.”

“That is a rule. Even if you can become even more overwhelmingly strong, there is certainly a limit. Even if you can use a very strong power, it will cause huge harm to your body.”

“For example, with your Spirit power, you can already make a link to blue-coloured Spirit Formation power. However, the reason you cannot do this is the same. Your body cannot bear this power.”

“Right now, it’s best to quickly refine those Profound beads to raise your cultivation. Even if you are able to make a link to the blue-coloured Spirit Formation with your Spirit power right now because you were endlessly training your Spirit power before, if you want to successfully gain its power, it is still not an easy thing.” Eggy solemnly said.

“Mm. It’s time to make a breakthrough.” Chu Feng nodded his head.

After that, Chu Feng carried Zi Ling onto a bed. After covering her with a blanket, Chu Feng didn’t walk too far. He sat by Zi Ling’s side and started to refine the Profound beads.

Because there were too many Profound beads, even if it was Chu Feng who refined them, he still needed a very long time. In addition to creating a connection to the blue-coloured Spirit Formation power, it was not a simple thing. So, Chu Feng spent an entire month in order to finish.

After one month, not only did Chu Feng successfully break into the 7th level of the Profound realm, he also successfully gained the power of blue-coloured Spirit Formations. He even grasped many methods that only Blue-cloak World Spiritists had. For example, opening the World Spirit Gate. It was a method that Chu Feng just grasped.

hmm

At present, a World Spirit Gate appeared. Chu Feng stood in front of the World Spirit Gate, awaiting Eggy's appearance.

At the same time, Zi Ling, the Azure Dragon Founder, Zhuge Liuyun, Li Zhangqing, Chu Guyu, Chu Yue, and the others surrounded the World Spirit Gate and fixedly stared at it.

Everyone was very excited, some even nervous because the people there, other than Zi Ling and the Azure Dragon Founder, no one else saw what World Spirits were. The living from another world really made them yearn.

Especially Zhuge Liuyun who was also a World Spiritist and was even Chu Feng's teacher. He couldn't help prising, "So this is the power of Blue-cloak World Spiritists. To be able to release World

Spirits so they can battle along with oneself. It is really, very, impressive!”

“I never would have thought that I, Zhuge Liuyun, would be this lucky to take in such an outstanding disciple. To be able to become a Blue-cloak World Spiritist at this age...”

“Look, it’s coming!” Suddenly, someone shouted and everyone became even more excited.

It was because the World Spirit Gate undulated. Quickly after, an extremely beautiful young female walked out from the World Spirit Gate.

That young female was too beautiful. Glittering big eyes, firm little nose, pink little cherry-like lips, and little face of extreme beauty. It was simply so beautiful it was suffocating.

Especially her skin that was as white as snow, yet gave off red lustre. She wore the short skirt woven by black-coloured feathers. Revealing snow-white shoulders on top, and slender beautiful legs at bottom. When people looked, they could not turn their eyes away.

And that person was naturally Queen Eggy. Eggy was the same when Chu Feng first saw her. There was not the slightest bit of change. She was still a lovable young female who could not be any sweeter.

gulp At that instant, the people on scene could not speak because they were deeply attracted by Eggy's beauty.

In terms of appearance, Eggy was even a point higher than Zi Ling; in terms of demeanor, not only did Eggy have her pure and cute aura, she also had alluring attraction. She was simply absolutely perfect, and not a single flaw could be picked out.

Such a perfect appearance simply caused people to feel as though they were in a dream because how could such a perfect young woman appear in the mortal world? Yet currently, Eggy did just that, and truly appeared in front of everyone.

In reality, not to mention others, even Chu Feng, who met Eggy many times in his Spiritual World, was similarly stunned by Eggy's beauty. Eggy's beauty was indeed incomparable by humans.

However, Chu Feng knew that Eggy didn't belong to this world. Also, even though she treated him quite well, in reality, she was extremely proud in her heart. Her heart didn't seem to be moved by him, and it could be said that her heart wasn't moved by anyone. She was a girl who had a decent heart, yet was hard to see through.

“Ahh~~~~~So comfortable!”

After Eggy walked out, she first coquettishly stretched her waist. Only after did she put her hands behind her back, mischievously walked next to Chu Feng, and sweetly smiled at him. However, she didn't speak to him. She spoke to Zi Ling who was next to Chu

Feng, “Little Lady Zi Ling, do you still remember me?”

“Your...your aura. On that day, in the White Tiger Villa, you borrowed Chu Feng’s body to suppress me?” At that instant, Zi Ling’s pair of eyes flickered and on her pretty little face, a hint of shock flashed past.

Because, back then in the White Tiger Villa, the dark power Chu Feng emanated was too terrifying. Even up until now, there were remnant fear in her heart and she could not forget.

Although, later on, the lightning power Chu Feng showed could cause mass destruction, in Zi Ling’s heart, the memory that was the most deeply engraved was still the black-coloured power because the black-coloured power was so terrifying that even her Divine Power trembled.

And at that instant, she finally knew where Chu Feng’s dark power came from. So it wasn’t from Chu Feng himself, but from Chu Feng’s World Spirit.

“Heh, that’s right. It was indeed me. But at that time, I didn’t know that this guy Chu Feng would like you. So, my strikes were struck heavier. Little Lady Zi Ling, if you have to blame someone, blame Chu Feng. Don’t blame me!”

Eggy naughtily smilingly said. Her smile could doubtlessly bewitch countless people. In reality, at that very instant, many people were bewitched by her smile, and even females were no exception.



“I won’t blame you, and even more so, I won’t blame Chu Feng. No matter what he does, I won’t blame him.” Zi Ling kindly returned a smile, and similarly, she could captivate tens of thousands of people.

“Lady, I wonder which Spirit World you came from?” Just at that time, the Azure Dragon Founder spoke. He similarly felt extremely powerful terrifying aura that leaned slightly towards darkness from Eggy’s body.

“Insolence!”

“Who said you can call me ‘lady’? You must call me as ‘Milady Queen’!” However, after hearing the Azure Dragon Founder’s words, Eggy suddenly yelled furiously. Her voice was loud and clear. Even the sturdy Thousand Bone Graveyard trembled.

Simultaneously, in Eggy’s previous clear eyes, glint showing that profanity was not allowed surged. The glint was extremely terrifying. It did not come from her strength. It was a demeanor she had.

Eggy, who changed like that, scared everyone. Almost everyone’s expressions greatly changed and they couldn’t help moving a few steps back.

Currently, how was Eggy even the little beauty who caused people to drool? It was as if she transformed into a little demon who caused others to be afraid.

Even the complexion of the Azure Dragon Founder who had a lot of experience slightly changed. After thinking for a while, he had actually calmly smiled, “Although I haven’t seen it before, this unique dark atmosphere is exactly the same as the records. If I’m not mistaken, lady, you should have come from the legendary Asura Spirit World!”

# Chapter 459: Eggy's Thoughts

---

“She’s indeed a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World. No wonder her power is so dark.” After hearing the Azure Dragon Founder’s words, Zi Ling also lightly frowned. Within her clear eyes, some change happened. She had already guessed that Eggy possibly came from the Asura Spirit World.

“Asura Spirit World? The Asura Spirit World that’s like a legend, grasps infinite power of darkness, and is named as the strongest Spirit World within the Seven Spirit Worlds?”

At that instant, the one most shocked was none other than Zhuge Liuyun. Although his current World Spirit Techniques were far from Chu Feng’s and Zi Ling’s, after all, he had been a World Spiritist for so many years. His knowledge regarding World Spirit Techniques was rather broad.

So naturally, he had heard of which seven worlds the Seven Spirit Worlds were, and within them, which one was the noblest, which one was the proudest, and which one was the strongest.

The noblest was absolutely not the World Spirits from the Asura Spirit World, and the proudest were not the World Spirits from the Asura Spirit World either. But in terms of the strongest, most ruthless, most tyrannical, it was absolutely none other than the World Spirits from the Asura Spirit World.

The World Spirits from the Asura Spirit World were powerful, and were simply the dreams of all strong World Spiritists. World

Spiritist able to gain the approval of a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World were extremely powerful existences. At least, they had extremely excellent talent and would become a very mighty World Spiritist in the future.

At present, Chu Feng had actually gained the approval of a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World. What did that mean? It meant that Chu Feng's potential was simply unlimited. It meant that in the future, Chu Feng was fated to become an outstanding World Spiritist.

To the bystanders, perhaps they didn't understand what the Asura Spirit World represented, but Zhuge Liuyun knew the importance of the Asura Spirit World.

So, at that very instant, shock filled his aged face. When he looked back at Chu Feng, his gaze was extremely complicated, being flooded with unspeakable emotions because the potential that Chu Feng had already completely surpassed his imagination.

"Old thing, I told you to not call me lady! Are you unable to understand?" However, just at that time, Eggy was furious, her brows furrowed, her face changed, and she roared at the Azure Dragon Founder once again.

"Eggy, you cannot be disrespectful! He is my ancestor!" Seeing that, Chu Feng, hurriedly went up to dissuade her. But Eggy's character was originally uncontrollable. She even treated him like that, let alone others. He was truly afraid that Eggy would do any actions that went too far.

“Hmph.” At that instant, Eggy wanted to say something, but seeing Chu Feng speak, she curled her lips, then swallowed back her words. Afterwards, she shot a glance at Chu Feng then said, “Truly meaningless. A group of pitifully weak garbage even dares to be so disrespectful to me? Whatever, I’m going back.”

After speaking, Eggy leaped, and as her short black-coloured feather skirt slightly swayed, she became a blur of light and rushed back into the World Spirit Gate, and disappeared.

Seeing Eggy leave just like that, Chu Feng felt very speechless, yet he could do nothing about it. After all, Eggy was originally special and perhaps in her eyes, the Azure Dragon Founder was truly nothing. It could be said that he wasn’t even enough to enter her eyes, so he really didn’t feel good to say anything more to Eggy.

As for the others, they would not dare to say anything about Eggy even more so. Although seeing Eggy be disrespectful to the Azure Dragon Founder, many people from the Azure Dragon School felt a bit displeased, there was really no one who dared to speak up to say anything.

It was because as Eggy was angered, they all felt a burst of extremely terrifying aura. As if it was an aura that only demons from hell had. So, they were deeply aware that Eggy was absolutely not an existence that they could anger.

“Haha, the World Spirits from the Asura Spirit World are indeed domineering enough. Oh Chu Feng, you fought quite a bit for me

just now! I like that girl.” The Azure Dragon Founder suddenly laughed loudly. Not only was he not angry, he even seemed happy.

Seeing that, Chu Feng couldn't help breathing a long sigh of relief. No matter how Eggy looked down on the Azure Dragon Founder, after all, he was his ancestor. So, from the bottom of Chu Feng's heart, he still respected the Azure Dragon Founder a lot and hope that Eggy didn't anger him.

However, although he was worried that his own ancestor would be angry, Chu Feng was also worried that Eggy was angry. So, after everyone scattered, Chu Feng hurriedly asked secretly,

“Eggy, you wouldn't really be angry right? My ancestor doesn't know how powerful you were before, and he saw that your appearance was of a young female's so with his age, it's very normal to call you 'little lady'.”

“You want him to call you 'Milady Queen' in front of so many young people. Now that truly makes things difficult for him.”

At that instant, Eggy cutely laid in Chu Feng's Spiritual World. She curled her lips and said, “Chu Feng, you look down on me too much. How am I that narrow-minded? But from now on, I won't easily go out. Call me when there's someone bullying you!”

“You even say that you're not angry? Haven't you always wanted to get rid of my Spiritual World's bindings? You can now, yet you don't come out. Don't be in a bad mood. It's my fault, so is it okay?” Chu Feng earnestly urged. He truly minded Eggy's feelings.

“Idiot. I am doing this for the sake of you. Don’t waste your breath anymore and go accompany your fiancée.” Eggy curled her lips, then afterwards, childishly smiled, turned her body away, pretended to sleep, and no longer spoke. No matter what Chu Feng said, it was useless.

“Junior Chu Feng, Junior Chu Feng!” Suddenly, bursts of calls rang out as Zhang Tianyi ran over with a face filled with anxiousness.

“Senior Zhang, did something happen outside?” Seeing that, Chu Feng tightly furrowed his brows and hurriedly rose to inquire.

Several days ago, before Chu Feng made a breakthrough, he entrusted Zhang Tianyi to go to the Spirit Province to check out the current World Spirit Guild’s situation as preparation for Chu Feng’s journey to the World Spirit Guild a few days later.

But seeing Zhang Tianyi’s appearance, Chu Feng knew that something must have happened.

“This is bad. Right now, the continent of the Nine Provinces is in chaos. The Jie clan announced to the outside world that I, you, and Zi Ling have all been secretly protected by the World Spirit Guild so that’s why the Nine Provinces cannot find us.”

“Right now, with the reason of campaigning against us three, the Jie clan has joined hands with the Yuangang School, Hidden White Sect, Free and Unrestrained Valley, and the Fire God School. They

have gathered a grand elite army of one million to attack the World Spirit Guild!”

“At present, the war has already started. The flames of battle have engulfed the entire Spirit Province, and the World Spirit Guild is constantly backing away from being outnumbered, and right now, they are staying within their base and only the last layer of defense remains. If it gets broken through by the army, the World Spirit Guild will definitely be annihilated.”

“From what I know, on the surface, the Jie clan waves the banners of catching you, but in reality, they want to remove their archenemy of many years, the World Spirit Guild, and occupy the Asura Ghost Tower for themselves.” Zhang Tianyi solemnly said.

“The old ancestors of the Yuangang School, Hidden White Sect, Free and Unrestrained Valley, and Fire God School have all come out?” Chu Feng asked.

“Yeah, all Heaven realm experts have been sent out and they vowed to destroy the World Spirit Guild.” Zhang Tianyi said.

“They are betting everything all at once, and if they fail, then they just die thinking they did for a good cause.” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, what should we do now? It’s a small matter if the World Spirit Guild is destroyed, but if the Asura Ghost Tower gets occupied by the Jie clan, that will not be good.”



Just at that time, Zi Ling also walked over. She knew how Chu Feng needed to save Su Rou and Su Mei, so she knew the importance of the Asura Ghost Tower to Chu Feng.

At that instant, Chu Feng was not too worried. Rather, he calmly smiled and said, “The Jie clan wants to exterminate the World Spirit Guild with me as the reason. How can I not participate in this great battle?”

“Then when do we depart?” Zi Ling already understood Chu Feng’s intentions.

“Right now.” As Chu Feng spoke, he walked towards the exit of the Thousand Bone Graveyard, and Zi Ling closely followed.

“Junior Chu Feng, wait for me! How can I, Zhang Tianyi, not be part of this?” At the same time, Zhang Tianyi also caught up.

So, Chu Feng, Zi Ling, and Zhang Tianyi, the three geniuses who were hiding in the World Spirit Guild in the eyes of the people in the continent of the Nine Provinces, flew towards the Spirit Province, heading towards the vast battlefield where the flames of battle flew everywhere.

# Chapter 460: Within Danger

---

Other than the Han Province, the Spirit Province was the most prosperous province in the continent of the Nine Provinces.

Not to mention that there were a lot more powerful people here than in the other provinces, the citizens here passed their days a lot wealthier and a lot more free.

But right now, the Spirit Province that other provinces yearned for had already become a huge battlefield with unwatchable misery and traces of war flying everywhere.

The Jie clan joined up with the Yuangang School, Hidden White Sect, Free and Unrestrained Valley, and Fire God School, the four big powers, and attacked the World Spirit Guild together, causing the biggest-scaled war in a hundred years on the continent of the Nine Provinces to break out.

The war almost spread throughout all areas of the Spirit Province as conflicts endlessly happened with the World Spirit Guild against the Jie clan and the other powers.

At the same time they were determining victory and defeat, the ones who suffered the most were naturally the innocent commoners. The might of the experts' strikes were frightening, and intentional or not, they would always drag down the people with no cultivation.

Facing the war that could affect the structure of the powers in

the continent of the Nine Provinces, the overlord of the Nine Provinces, the Jiang Dynasty, didn't interfere.

It was as if that battle was unrelated to them. They only silently stayed in the Han Province, coldly observed from the side, and there was no indication that they would do anything.

At first, the battle was still equal. Although the Jie clan joined up with the four big powers, after all, the World Spirit Guild wasn't weak.

But it was useless. The old ancestor of the Jie clan, the exceptional genius who shocked the continent a hundred years ago, had actually come out, and his cultivation reached the 7th level of the Heaven realm.

With his unstoppable might of the 7th level of the Heaven realm, he led the elite army of one million and swept through the World Spirit Guild.

The current World Spirit Guild was already backing away one step at a time and forced back into their nest. They opened up their strongest Spirit Formation to hold the army of the Jie clan back.

But it could do nothing as the old ancestor of the Jie clan was not a simple character. With his Spirit Formation methods, no matter how much stronger the Spirit Formation of the World Spirit Guild was, it was only a matter of time before it broke open.

At such a crucial time of life and death, the old ancestor of the World Spirit Guild was still unable to come out, and that caused people from the World Spirit Guild to sink into uneasiness.

As they faced a dangerous situation where it was unknown whether one would live or die, they resolutely used special methods and sent out the most outstanding people of the World Spirit Guild's young generation away from the World Spirit Guild's base, and wanted to let them secretly leave.

At least if they survived, the World Spirit Guild would still have a chance to flip the situation. If even the young generation died, then the World Spirit Guild was truly going to be exterminated.

But it was useless. The World Spirit Guild still underestimated the Jie clan. The Jie clan already had former preparations. As they were concentrating on breaking open the Spirit Formation, they also sent people to guard in various areas outside of the World Spirit Guild's base.

So, shortly after the young generation of the World Spirit Guild left the World Spirit Guild's base, they met the army of the Fire God School, Hidden White Sect, Free and Unrestrained Valley, and Yuangang School. They forced the young generation of the World Spirit Guild into an impasse.

“Head of the Yuangang School, head of the Fire God School, head of the Hidden White Sect, and head of the Free and Unrestrained Valley. There is no enmity between my World Spirit Guild and you. Why must you be so pressing?” At that moment, the face of the vice-head of the World Spirit Guild was a bit pale. On his

ragged clothes, there were some traces of blood. He clearly experienced a hard battle.

And behind him was Xu Zhongyu, Gu Bo, and the other exceptional people in the World Spirit Guild's young generation. There were not many people, less than one hundred, but those people were the geniuses carefully picked by the World Spirit Guild so absolutely no accidents could happen to them.

But it was useless. Facing four heads, even if it was the vice-head of the World Spirit Guild, an outstanding Blue-cloak World Spiritist, he was unable to defeat them.

“Haha, Vice-head Gao, at this time, we no longer need to talk in circles with you.”

“The reason why we came here is not to catch Chu Feng. It's to exterminate your World Spirit Guild. You ask us the reason? The reason is because we don't like your World Spirit Guild. Coincidentally, with large sums of money, the Jie clan wants us to help them exterminate all of you. So, we came. Do you understand if I say it like that?” The head of the Fire God School loudly laughed and said.

At the same time, the three others also similarly laughed. Before, they were very afraid of the World Spirit Guild and many times, they were pulled by the nose, but didn't dare to say anything. Right now, they were finally able to not fear them and refreshingly fight the people from the World Spirit Guild. Naturally, it made them feel refreshed.

“School Heads, don’t waste your breath with them. Quickly decapitate them, take their heads, then report back. My chief will definitely reward you heavily.”

Just at that time, a young man within the crowd spoke. That man was none other than the future chief of the Jie clan, Jie Qingming.

“Jie Qingming, if you dare to, fight me one-on-one! What are you even capable of if you ask for help from outsiders?” Xu Zhongyu furiously bellowed.

“Hmph. Xu Zhongyu, don’t be naive anymore. You want to fight me one-on-one? Can you win?”

“We have fought for so many years and always, the outcome of the battle was never able to be decided. You and I are both clear that we cannot win against one another.”

“Also, this is the real battle. My Jie clan only wants the result of this victory, so there’s no need to think about the process in the middle. Right now, the four heads can easily kill all of you. I, Jie Qingming, have no need to fight you one-on-one.” Jie Qingming coldly smiled, then quickly after, looked at the four heads and said,

“Four heads, why aren’t you making your moves? It would be fine if it’s my chief, but if you don’t hurry and my old ancestor gets angered, even I will get punished.”

“This...”

After hearing the title of the Jie clan's old ancestor, the complexions of the four heads all changed. In these past few days, they had personally seen the scariness of the old ancestor.

Although their powers' old ancestors weren't weak as well, and were all experts in the 6th level of the Heaven realm, only one level of cultivation away from the old ancestor of the Jie clan's 7th level of the Heaven realm, that single level of distance was really too big. The 7th level of the Heaven realm was truly far from being comparable to those in the 6th level of the Heaven realm.

“Vice-head Gao, if you have to blame something, you can only blame your inability as a person. At first, you looked down on everyone, so right now, you cannot blame us for being heartless on you.” The four heads explosively shouted, then started their attacks at the World Spirit Guild's crowd.

“I'll kill you all!” Seeing that, Vice-head Gao furiously bellowed, then burst out his power of the 5th level of the Heaven realm and fought against the four heads.

And as the several heads were fighting, the other experts from the four big powers and the Jie clan, under Jie Qingming's command, headed straight for Xu Zhongyu, Gu Bo, and the other people in the young generation, and started their attacks.

In that situation, the only person who could participate in the

battle within the young generation was Xu Zhongyu himself. He held the Strange Armament fan, emanated the aura of the 2nd level of the Heaven realm, and he did indeed have the airs of an apical genius.

But it was useless since the one he faced was his archenemy, Jie Qingming, as well as the old generation experts from the four big powers and the Jie clan. So, very quickly, he was disadvantaged and entered danger.



## Chapter 461: Growth That Defies Reason

---

bang Suddenly, Jie Qingming threw out a palm and it fiercely landed on Xu Zhongyu's chest.

“Ahh!” The power of the palm was extremely strong, causing Xu Zhongyu to immediately spray out a mouthful of blood, then he powerlessly fell to the ground.

“Ah!” At the same time, Vice-head Gao was also unable to fight against the surrounding attacks of the four heads and similarly cried out in pain. One of his hand had actually been chopped off, blood blurred on his body, and there were many injuries as well.

“Vice-head Gao, Brother Xu Zhongyu!!” Seeing their two backbones so heavily wounded, Gu Bo and the others of the young generation shouted out loudly in panic. Especially the young females. They were unable to take blows like those to their hearts and were silently sobbing from fright.

“Hahaha! Cry, loudly cry! Today is your last day living!” Red light surrounded Jie Qingming's body and as he neared Gu Bo and the others with bloodlust permeating the air, he insanely laughed loudly.

“Today is indeed the last day, but not for them. For you!” But just at that time, a loud voice suddenly exploded in the air.

When that voice rang out, the people from the World Spirit Guild were abruptly shocked, then quickly afterwards, they hurriedly

cast their gaze towards the sky. And when they saw the origin of that familiar voice in the sky, for some reason, they rejoiced.

Because, at that instant, in the air, a beautiful chariot appeared. That chariot gave off boundless aura and had stopped in the sky.

From that chariot, three bodies descended. The person in the middle was Chu Feng, the one who they were extremely familiar with. As for the ones next to Chu Feng, naturally, they were Zi Ling and Zhang Tianyi.

whoosh whoosh whoosh

Chu Feng, Zhang Tianyi, and Zi Ling descended with lightning-like speeds from the sky and stopped in front of Gu Bo and the others in the young generation.

“Chu Feng? I never would have thought that you would even dare to appear in front of us.” When they saw Chu Feng, the expressions of the four heads all changed greatly as they grinded their teeth in anger. Especially the head of the Fire God School. His fists tightly clenched, and even his body was trembling, having an appearance of quickly losing control.

At first, when Chu Feng used schemes to lure him away from the Fire God School then took the chance to dig open the tombs of his Fire God School’s ancestors, almost causing his Fire God School to be exterminated, it resulted in him being fiercely beaten by the old ancestor of the Fire God School and he was forcefully closed off from the outside world.

Right now, he saw Chu Feng once again. Naturally, he was extremely furious and wished to skin Chu Feng, pull his tendons, and drink his blood.

But other than the head of the Fire God School, there was another person who surged with extremely strong bloodlust in his heart. That person was not one of the three other heads, but Jie Qingming.

Jie Qingming was already not in good terms with Chu Feng. At first, Chu Feng embarrassed him in front of a crowd in the Prestigious Villa and he had already embraced that hatred in his heart, but afterwards, when the one he loved, Zi Ling, loved Chu Feng instead, it caused his hatred to double.

In front of his eyes, the one he loved appeared in front of him with Chu Feng. How could he endure that? There was so much desire to kill Chu Feng that it could shoot straight into the sky, being only second to the head of the Fire God School.

But looking at the people who revealed vicious gazes and had overflowing bloodlusts towards him, Chu Feng was not afraid at all. Rather, he calmly smilingly said at ease, “The ones who chased after me back then in the Prestigious Villa are all here right?”

“Oh, wait wait, there’s one less. One less Vice-chief of the Jie clan. But it’s fine. The future chief of the Jie clan can replace the life of that old thing. How about it?” As he spoke, Chu Feng cast his gaze towards Jie Qingming. His gaze of disdain towards Jie

Qingming was as if he was looking at a person who was going to die.

“Chu Feng, you are damn arrogant! You only have the strength of the 7th level of the Profound realm, yet dare to so shamelessly say you are going to take my life? Do you truly think you are the strongest genius in the continent of the Nine Provinces?”

Jie Qingming attacked. Within the time of one year, he already made a breakthrough from the 1st level of the Heaven realm to the 2nd level of the Heaven realm. So, he was even more confidence in his own strength. When facing Chu Feng who was in the 7th level of the Profound realm, he had absolute belief that he could defeat Chu Feng.

It had to be said that Jie Qingming was indeed very strong. Especially the Armor of Thorns that he wore. The atmosphere he gave off was simply not something that could be compared to normal people in the 2nd level of the Heaven realm. The battle power he gave off currently was definitely comparable to those in the 3rd level of the Heaven realm.

But sadly, the person he was facing was not an ordinary person. It was Chu Feng, who was crowned with the title of breaking reason.

Facing Jie Qingming's approaching attack, many people were frightened and even Xu Zhongyu tightly furrowed his brows.

But Chu Feng only lightly smiled, and with a thought, his aura

instantly rose from the 7th level of the Profound realm to the 9th level of the Profound realm as lightning transformed.

Simultaneously, his right hand formed a fist, and after the huge Asura Ghost Axe appeared, Chu Feng's demeanor immediately became completely different.

“Kneel down.” Afterwards, Chu Feng waved his arm, then from up to down, the Asura Ghost Axe became a semi-circular black light and fiercely crashed down on the approaching Jie Qingming.

The strong power descended, instantly creating ripples, causing a deep pit to be made on the surface of the ground.

At that moment, Chu Feng stood in the middle of the deep pit, and Jie Qingming was kneeling in front of him. The radiance from the Armor of Thorns surrounded his body, but his back was being pressed by Chu Feng's Asura Ghost Axe.

“Dammit!” With the defense power of the Armor of Thorns, there was only blood on the corners of Jie Qingming's mouth and he did not receive a fatal injury. At that instant, both of his hands were pushing against the ground as he wanted to stand up with all he had.

“Your Armor of Thorns is quite a nice defense equipment, but sadly, if I want to break it, it will truly not hold on.”

Chu Feng coldly smiled, then afterwards, he raised the Asura

Ghost Axe in his hand again and abruptly slammed it down. With another bang, Jie Qingming who still hadn't climbed back up was forced back down by Chu Feng.

"Ahh!" This time, a mouthful of blood sprayed out from Jie Qingming and even the indestructible Armor of Thorns which was surrounded by red light had many cracks appear at its back and was almost going to shatter.

Seeing that scene, the people there, other than Zi Ling and Zhang Tianyi, were almost all stupefied.

Who was Jie Qingming? He was the future chief of the Jie clan! An expert in the 2nd level of the Heaven realm! A genius with a Strange Armament!

Such a character actually didn't even have a chance to return attacks in front of Chu Feng and could only kneel on the ground like a dog. People truly felt that it was unacceptable.

Although the rumours about Chu Feng's battle power that defied reason had already spread throughout the Nine Provinces and wasn't any rare thing, when the people who were already acquainted with Chu Feng truly saw Chu Feng defying reason, they would still feel disbelief.

What they were so astonished about wasn't only Chu Feng's overwhelmingly strong battle power, because they had already known about that, and were even very familiar.

What they were astonished about was Chu Feng overwhelmingly fast speed of growth. After all, one year ago, Chu Feng was still unable to fight against characters in the Heaven realm.

But one year later, those in the 2nd level of the Heaven realm were beaten like a dog by him. That was really too astonishing.

# Chapter 462: The Strongest Person In The Young Generation

---

Especially Xu Zhongyu. When he saw the current Jie Qingming, he could totally imagine how he would end up as if he fought against Chu Feng.

But one year ago, his strength was still clearly far above Chu Feng's. Yet one year later, he was flung so far behind by him. That fact really struck his confidence a bit.

However, even though that fact was very difficult to accept, the people from the World Spirit Guild still felt happy for Chu Feng. They felt happy because of this.

After all, at the end, Chu Feng was still part of their World Spirit Guild. Naturally, they were very willing for a genius like Chu Feng to appear in their World Spirit Guild.

So, at that instant, the ones most uneasy were still the four school heads. Their resentment with Chu Feng was very deep, and they already reached a state of "either your die or I die". So, Chu Feng's overwhelmingly powerful battle power and speed of growth was clearly not anything good for them.

"Mm, I still underestimated the durability of your Armor of Thorns. It seems like I still need to raise the power a bit." As Chu Feng spoke, he raised his hand again and slammed the axe down on Jie Qingming's body, causing him to spray out a mouthful of blood again.



“Chu Feng you brat, don’t even think about being so arrogant! You think Young Master Jie Qingming can be touched by the likes of you?”

Finally, the four school heads made their move. Naturally, they couldn’t allow Chu Feng kill Jie Qingming in front of them. After all, Jie Qingming came to that place with them. If anything happened to Jie Qingming, they would have to bear the consequences.

boom But just at that time, a wave of boundless aura suddenly surged from Chu Feng’s side. Lumps of blue-coloured flames burst out from Zhang Tianyi’s body.

At the same time, Zhang Tianyi leaped and came up to the four school heads. His powerful might shook the world and directly forced the four school heads to the ground, kneeling. Their bodies were quivering, they could not support themselves, and they were powerless to stand.

“When others are fighting, you better silently watch. All of you are still school heads. Don’t you even know a tiny bit of good behavior?”

Zhang Tianyi disdainfully looked at the four school heads under his feet. Normally, even the old ancestor of the Sword God Valley wasn’t able to defeat him, let alone those four school heads.

“Zhang Tianyi, yo...yo...you cultivated a Forbidden Mysterious

Technique?”

The four school heads were not inexperienced people, so with a glance, they knew that Zhang Tianyi's blue-coloured flames did not belong to an ordinary martial skill. It had to be some sort of forbidden method or else it would not be possible for there to be such horrifying might.

“Mysterious Forbidden Technique? Don't those things only exist in legends? Is it possible that there is really a technique like that in the world?” And after hearing those words of the four school heads, the young generation of the World Spirit Guild couldn't help but be shocked.

Chu Feng was already terrifying enough. They never would have thought that Zhang Tianyi was even more terrifying than Chu Feng, being able to suppress the four school heads to the ground while forcing them to kneel.

“Senior Zhang, don't waste your words with them. These people sent out wanted posters before and chased after Chu Feng everywhere. Today, it's time for them to pay the price for their actions.”

Just at that time, Zi Ling gradually walked over. Also, her purple-coloured pupils had appeared and her body was surrounded by a purple-coloured aura.

boom

With a flash of her purple pupils, the purple-coloured aura on her body became a fierce beast and swallowed the head of the Yuangang School all at once.

“Ahh~~~~~”

At that instant, from the purple-coloured aura, endless heart-breaking and lung-splitting cries rang out from the head of the Yuangang School. After the cries finished and when the purple-coloured aura was dispelled, what remained from the head of the Yuangang School was only a bloody skeleton. He lost all signs of life.

“You! You! You witch!!” Seeing that scene, the head of the Fire God School, the head of the Free and Unrestrained Valley, and the head of the Hidden White Sect panicked because from the head of the Yuangang School’s bloody skeleton, they saw their own ends.

“Sister-in-law, Junior Chu Feng’s enemy is my enemy. Leave these remaining people for me to handle.”

Just at that time, Zhang Tianyi lightly smiled, then quickly after, the blue-coloured flames that surrounded his body surged and in a mere blink, it drowned the three school heads as well as the experts from the four big powers and the Jie clan.

Flames rolled around, surged up and down, and within the bursts of miserable cries, the people who were arrogant and tyrannical were all refined by Zhang Tianyi’s blue-coloured flames and there wasn’t even anything remaining.

gulp At that moment, Jie Qingming who was still kneeling in front of Chu Feng's body with heavy injuries was also stupefied. He couldn't help gulping from fright. Droplets of sweat as big as beans filled his pale face. If even the four school heads were so easily killed, what about him?

Indeed, just at that time, Chu Feng finally raised the Asura Ghost Axe in his hand once again. Also, this time, layers of blood-coloured aura surrounded the black-coloured Asura Ghost Axe. The might it emanated was several times more powerful than before. Clearly, that was the real Asura Ghost Axe.

“Jie Qingming, it's time to finish this.”

whoosh

After speaking, the Asura Ghost Axe in Chu Feng's hand abruptly fell and with a poof, the axe had chopped Jie Qingming into half. Jie Qingming, named as the number one genius in the continent of the Nine Provinces, died just like that by Chu Feng's hands.

“Heavens, this...”

When they saw that scene, the young generation of the World Spirit Guild broke out in cold sweat one after the other. They felt their spines going cold because Chu Feng's, Zi Ling's, and Zhang Tianyi's methods were really ruthless. So ruthless that they could only sigh in shock because even though they were also of the young generation, their methods weren't something that they could do.

They finally saw what it truly meant to be the strongest in the young generation.

The real strongest people in the young generation wasn't for naming oneself as the overlord in the young generation. It was to indifferently face senior experts in the old generation for battle, and even heartlessly slaughter them.

Chu Feng, Zi Ling, and Zhang Tianyi were clearly the true strongest people in the young generation.

whoosh

After killing Jie Qingming in that blow, Chu Feng extended his hand, grabbed, and two objects flew from Jie Qingming's body. The first was a Cosmos Sack, and the other was a blood-coloured armor.

The armor was an armor for the inside. It wasn't really big, but it was very exquisite.

Although there was a huge hole torn open, it was currently mending itself automatically, and such a special treasure was naturally the Strange Armament, the Armor of Thorns.

Chu Feng unrestrainedly put away Jie Qingming's Cosmos Sack and Armor of Thorns. Only after doing that did Chu Feng ask Vice-head Gao, Xu Zhongyu, Gu Bo, and the others, "Vice-head Gao, what's the current battle situation? Why did all of you appear

here?”

“Ahh, truly, it can’t all be explained with one word.” Vice-head Gao’s face was filled with helplessness, then after that, he told Chu Feng what happened.

“So the old ancestor of the Jie clan has already come out. No wonder they could force your World Spirit Guild to this state.” After knowing what happened, even Chu Feng tightly frowned and felt that the present situation was indeed bad

boom Just at that time, an extremely huge explosion resounded. When the noise rang out, an extremely dazzling brilliance was given off from the direction of the World Spirit Guild. Even the ground slightly shook.

“This isn’t good. The old ancestor of the Jie clan is too powerful. If this continues, my World Spirit Guild’s Spirit Formation will definitely be broken open by him.” As he saw that scene, the Vice-head of the World Spirit Guild tightly locked his brows and his face was filled with worrying expressions.

At the same time, all the people from the World Spirit Guild were very nervous because those who were fighting there were their relatives, friends, and families!

whoosh Just at that time, Chu Feng waved his big axe and chopped off Jie Qingming’s head, then held it in his hand.

Afterwards, he said to Vice-head Gao and the others, “Lord Vice-head, bring them away from this place first. As for the guild’s side, I, Chu Feng, will do my best to protect it.”

swish

After speaking, Chu Feng flew into the air, and at the same time, Zi Ling and Zhang Tianyi quickly followed. After the three of them entered the Exquisite Chariot, they flew towards the World Spirit Guild.

Seeing Chu Feng’s departing back, Vice-head Gao’s eyes glittered and his face was filled with complications. He was thinking back then when Chu Feng was in a dangerous state, his World Spirit Guild did not do all it could to protect Chu Feng.

But right now, when his World Spirit Guild was in peril, Chu Feng came to protect his World Spirit Guild without regards of his own safety. Perhaps only the higher-ups of his World Spirit Guild could comprehend his guilty emotions.

# Chapter 463: Ancestor Save Me

---

The World Spirit Guild, the strong and prosperous superpower, currently opened its strongest Defense Spirit Formation. The upper part of the Spirit Formation sealed the sky, the lower part of it sealed the earth, isolating them from the outside world.

That Spirit Formation was the hard work of the World Spirit Guild's previous seniors, and at present, was also activated by countless World Spiritists. The defense power truly surpassed one's imagination.

However, at that instant, outside of the Spirit Formation, there was another formation that rose into the sky. It was a Destruction Spirit Formation. The Destruction Spirit Formation was an extremely grand sight. It rose into the air, and with the vast Spirit Formation, it became a huge Spirit Formation hammer. It was moving back and forth in the air, endlessly slamming against the indescribable Spirit Formation.

Every time the huge hammer slammed down, it would make a sound even more deafening than thunder. Even if it was the Defense Spirit Formation interweaved together by innumerable Spirit Formations, it violently trembled. Right now, several cracks had already appeared and they were still spreading very quickly.

If that continued, it would only be a matter of time before the Spirit Formation was destroyed by the huge Spirit Formation hammer.



Underneath the huge Spirit Formation hammer, an old man stood with a lively complexion. His black clothes fluttered without wind, his eyes were tightly shut, his expression grave, and he was currently channeling all his power into the Destruction Spirit Formation.

He was the exceptional genius who shocked the Nine Provinces a hundred years ago. Up until now, he had been training in isolation for almost a hundred years, but he came out once again. He was the old ancestor of the Jie clan who finally stepped into the 7th level of the Heaven realm, Jie Shi.

“This isn’t good. Lord Guild Head, if this goes on, before the formation even gets broken through, half of my World Spirit Guild would fall from injury or death.” Within the base of the World Spirit Guild, several manager elders surrounded a white-and grey-haired old man. That old man was precisely the head of the World Spirit Guild.

The head of the World Spirit Guild just came from the place where the old ancestor was cultivating in isolation. He saw that the formation was being destroyed by Jie Shi bit by bit, and the experts of the World Spirit Guild who were channeling power into the formation were also unable to fight against Jie Shi’s power. Many people had already vomited blood, lost battle power, and some even directly died.

“Everyone, continue persevering. The old ancestor will come out soon, just persevere for two more hours!” The head of the World Spirit Guild said.

“Two hours? If this continues, I’m afraid that we won’t even be able to continue for a single hour.” The elders were in a very difficult situation.

“Even if you cannot continue, continue. As long as everyone perseveres, my World Spirit Guild can be saved. If we cannot, the formation will be broken through and my World Spirit Guild will be annihilated!” The head of the guild was furious. He leaped, and also joined in the formation of supporting the formation.

The elders could not do anything about that situation. So, quickly afterwards, all of them joined in the formation of supporting the formation.

However, Jie Shi’s huge Spirit Formation hammer was too fierce. Currently, the direction the situation was heading towards was the formation breaking. Even though the head of the World Spirit Guild joined in channeling power into the formation, it was difficult to repair the situation.

“Hmph. World Spirit Guild. You have been an enemy to my Jie clan for far too long. Today is the day all of you pay the price.”

The present chief of the Jie clan, Jie Xingpeng, coldly smiled as he looked at the scene in front of his eyes. At the same time, the old ancestor of the Fire God School, the old ancestor of the Yuangang School, the old ancestor of the Hidden White Sect, and the old ancestor of the Free and Unrestrained Valley had smiles formed from the corners of their mouths.

They were not on good terms with the World Spirit Guild. Especially with the Jie clan enticing them, they had already been an enemy of the World Spirit Guild, like water and fire. So, as long as they could break open the Spirit Formation, their elite army of one million would enter, start slaughtering, and kill so much that nothing would remain from the World Spirit Guild.

boom boom boom boom boom

“Ahh~”

“Ahh~”

But just at that time, within the elite army of one million from the Jie clan and other powers, bursts of explosions resonated. At the same time, several cries of pain rang out along with the noises.

Turning their heads to look, the expressions of Jie Xingpeng and the old ancestors of the four other powers changed greatly because a chariot had already slaughtered into their army. Also, three figures were starting a massacre.

It was two men and one woman. They were no stranger to Chu Feng and Zi Ling, but there was also another young man who was holding the Divine Wood Sword. Without even thinking, they already knew that it was Zhang Tianyi.

“Member of the World Spirit Guild, Chu Feng, has come forth to protect the guild. Those who invade my World Spirit Guild will die

today!”

Chu Feng waved the Asura Ghost Axe and his moves were extremely vicious. Every single strike and style would definitely take a person’s life. As he slaughtered, he shouted and very quickly, he attracted everyone’s attention.

“This little animal even dares to appear in front of me? I will crush him alive to comfort my ancestors’ souls!”

After seeing Chu Feng, the head of the Fire God School was the first to explode in anger. Flames that rose into the sky surged out, and with the aura of the 6th level of the Heaven realm, he flew towards Chu Feng.

whoosh whoosh whoosh

At the same time, the three old ancestors of the Yuangang School, Hidden White Sect, and Free and Unrestrained Valley similarly speedily darted towards Chu Feng and started extremely powerful attacks.

“Those who dare to attack Junior Chu Feng is making an enemy of me, Zhang Tianyi!!”

However, before the four old ancestors neared Chu Feng, Zhang Tianyi who held the Divine Wood Sword and gave off blue-coloured flames stopped in front of the four old ancestors and started extremely fierce attacks.

“Dammit. This young one is only in the 3rd level of the Heaven realm. How is it possible he has the power to suppress us?”

At that instant, the faces of the four old ancestors who were overflowing with bloodlust previously changed greatly because when facing the current Zhang Tianyi, they were extremely powerless. They were all suppressed by Zhang Tianyi, and they even entered a perilous state.

“Four old things! Don’t even think of saying shameless words. Wanting to kill Junior Chu Feng is equal to committing a crime worthy of death.”

Zhang Tianyi’s attacks became more and more fierce. Blurs of sword flew up and down, flames surged everywhere, and the air kept on trembling from all the attacks. The four old ancestors were simply unable to fight against them.

“Zhang Tianyi. There are no past conflicts between us. I hope that you don’t interfere with today’s matters or else if you alert my clan’s old ancestor, even if there are a hundred you’s, you won’t die enough.” Just at that time, the current chief of the Jie clan, Jie Xingpeng, appeared.

Although he was also in the 6th level of the Heaven realm, his strength was even stronger than the four old ancestors. The reason it was so was naturally because he had another identity: a powerful Blue-cloak World Spiritist.

But facing Zhang Tianyi, he felt some fear because with his sharp Spirit power, he found out that Zhang Tianyi's power was even above his.

“I've already said that Junior Chu Feng's enemy is my enemy. I will kill those who dare to attack Junior Chu Feng. If you dare to, call your old ancestor out for help! I, Zhang Tianyi, also want to experience the person who shocked the continent a hundred years ago.” Zhang Tianyi coldly snorted, then suddenly stabbed down with this sword.

hmm Seeing that, Jie Xingpeng's expression changed and as he willed, he hurriedly laid ten Spirit Formations in front of him in succession to block Zhang Tianyi's attack.

bang bang bang bang bang

But the might of Zhang Tianyi's Divine Wood Sword was like breaking bamboo as with a single strike, he shattered all ten blue-coloured Spirit Formations and went straight for Jie Xingpeng's throat.

“How is this possible? His power is actually this strong?” With that, even Jie Xingpeng panicked because Zhang Tianyi's power was even stronger than what he had imagined. He alone was able to suppress him and the four old ancestors.

Right now, his Jie clan's vice-chief, Jie Yan, was also completely suppressed by Zi Ling. Currently, danger was right in front of him and he was calling him for help.

As for the elite army of one million that remained, although their cultivations were not weak, there was no one who was able to defeat Chu Feng. As he held the Asura Ghost Axe, he was starting a huge massacre.

If that continued, before they could break through the World Spirit Guild's Spirit Formation, the elite army that the five powers gathered would be destroyed by Chu Feng alone.

In that situation, Jie Xingpeng had no other choice. He grimaced, raised his head at the sky, and howled,

“Ancestor save me!!”

# Chapter 464: Ten Thousand Hand Immortal Capturing Formation

---

Jie Xingpeng's shout resonated throughout the sky like thunder. Even the people in the Spirit Formation was able hear some sound.

The call for help caused the old ancestor of the Jie clan, Jie Shi, to suddenly open his eyes, then he cast his gaze towards Jie Xingpeng.

At that instant, Zhang Tianyi's body instantly quivered because what he felt was not only Jie Shi's gaze. He also felt two formless sharp blades piercing through his body, and his everything was seen through. He also truly felt Jie Shi's terror.

"Chu Feng, sister-in-law, run!" In only a split moment, Zhang Tianyi broke out in cold sweat. He hurriedly yelled out loud, then flew towards Chu Feng.

Zi Ling also didn't dare to be slow. She urged the Exquisite Chariot, then arrived by Chu Feng's side. At that instant, as if they already preplanned it, with a swish, all of them immediately entered the Exquisite Chariot.

After entering the Exquisite Chariot, the three of them combined their power into the chariot. That caused the Exquisite Chariot's speed to rise by many times, but they didn't escape. They flew into the army of one million again, and with the might of the Strange Armament, the Exquisite Chariot, they starting slaughtering.



“Where did these three brats come from? You dare to oppose my Jie clan? Truly looking to die.”

Jie Shi slightly frowned then howled towards the sky. After that, he flew out of the boundless huge Spirit Formation hammer, and with might that shook the world, he flew towards the Exquisite Chariot.

“Old thing, you think you’re so good with the 7th level of the Heaven realm? If you can, come chase your master here! If you can, I’ll admit your impressiveness.” After Chu Feng’s insults which were filled with mocking came from the Exquisite Chariot, the chariot rushed out of the crowd and started to fly around the World Spirit Guild’s base.

“If I don’t kill you today, my name will not be Jie Shi.” What kind of person was Jie Shi? When he was insulted by a boy like Chu Feng, naturally, he overflowed with fury. He threw a fist through the air. When the fist was thrown, Heaven power surged, and it shot like a meteor shooting backwards. Even a huge hole formed in the sky.

But it was useless as not only was the speed of the Exquisite Chariot extremely fast, it was also extremely nimble. It beautifully did a sharp turn in the air and evaded the fist. Quickly afterwards, Chu Feng’s, Zhang Tianyi’s, and Zi Ling’s insults came from the Exquisite Chariot again.

So, the scene of an old man chasing after a chariot, while

constantly throwing attacks as they circled around the World Spirit Guild's base, appeared in the sky.

And after Jie Shi went to chase after Chu Feng and the others, the huge Spirit Formation hammer halted because there wasn't a peak expert there to activate it. That also meant that the World Spirit Guild's strongest formation temporarily evaded the danger of being broken through.

“What is happening? Why did that Jie Shi suddenly stop attacking?”

“Also, why does there seem to be insults coming from the outside?”

“This voice... It seems to be insulting Jie Shi. Who is so fearless to dare to insult him?”

The sudden change caused all the experts of the World Spirit Guild to be muddled and confused, however, they felt happy because of that. For no other reason but because at least temporarily, they shook away the danger. They, who had fought hardly for several days and nights, could finally breathe sighs of relief.

“Quickly go and see what is happening.” The face of the guild head also slightly changed. He ordered a few people to go forward to investigate because he didn't feel like the old fox Jie Shi would stop attacking for no reason at all.

And very quickly, several experts flew to the side of the formation to investigate. When they hurried back, their faces undoubtedly brought joy, yet their emotions were filled with complications.

One of the old persons respectfully reported to the guild head, “Lord Guild Head. It’s...It’s Chu Feng. It’s Chu Feng, Zi Ling, and Zhang Tianyi. They are steering a chariot and drawing Jie Shi away. Because of that, they made it so he can’t continue activating the formation to break our own formation.”

“Chu Feng, it’s actually him?” After hearing those words, the expression of the head of the World Spirit Guild couldn’t help but greatly change. Quickly after, indescribable complex expressions appeared on his face.

Only after a good while did he relievedly say, “I never would have thought that in the moment of my World Spirit Guild’s life and death, it would be this young man who comes to save us while risking his life. It seems like the help given to him before was all worth it. Rather, it’s far from being enough.”

boom, boom, boom

At that very instant, outside of the World Spirit Guild’s base, no matter if it was from the sky or the ground, endless explosions sounded out. Terrifying destruction kept on bursting out everywhere.

At the same time, Chu Feng’s and the others’ extremely

unpleasant insults rang out. In a blink, those insults, along with the explosion sounds, had been sounding out for over two hours.

In a situation like that, Jie Shi was more and more enraged because he was very bitter. Bitter that he was being toyed around by a few brats. So, he just simply ignored the World Spirit Guild and ran in circles after Chu Feng.

As for the elite army of one million, they were quite helpless. If even the exceptional expert in the 7th level of the Heaven realm couldn't do anything to Chu Feng and the others, what could they do? Right now, they didn't even have enough strength to activate the huge Spirit Formation hammer. So, they could only stand on the ground to watch the liveliness.

“Haha, old bastard, you're not much either! It seems like in these hundred years, other than eating, you slept right? I simply don't even see where your strength lies at!”

“That's right that's right. From what I see, his years were all lived like a dog. The genius who shocked the continent a hundred years ago? Ha! If I were to cultivate for a hundred years, I could put you to death with a random fart.”

Chu Feng's and Zhang Tianyi's insults were extremely vile and the more they insulted, the more excited they got because what they wanted was Jie Shi to be angry. They wanted to drag out the time. One more minute they gained was one more minute.

Although they didn't know when the old ancestor of the World

Spirit Guild would come out, by doing that, at least the tens of millions of World Spirit Guild members could fight for a larger chance in surviving.

“Three ignorant brats. Don’t think I don’t know your intentions. But you are still too young to fight against me.” Suddenly, Jie Shi stopped in the air. He overlaid his hands, then struck out a strange handprint.

Quickly afterwards, energy ripples spread outwards from his body. A vast Spirit Formation appeared, enveloping the entire World Spirit Guild’s base and at the same time, locking Chu Feng and the others inside.

“Crap. This old thing actually laid a vast Spirit Formation without us knowing. He has sealed our escape!” Seeing that scene, even Zhang Tianyi who wasn’t too knowledgeable in World Spiritists widened his mouth from astonishment and a hint of fear emerged onto her face.

It was because he knew that even if the three of them put their full power in the Exquisite Chariot, it would absolutely not be able to defeat Jie Shi. Jie Shi was a lot stronger than the old ancestor in the Sword God Valley before. He was in the real 7th level of the Heaven realm, and his battle power was a lot more powerful than the ordinary 7th level of the Heaven realm. After all, his title of genius did not come from nowhere.

“Don’t panic. It is only a Sealing Formation. We still have plenty of space to escape. With my Exquisite Chariot’s speed, he shouldn’t even think of catching up to us.” Zi Ling said while being full of

confidence.

bang bang bang bang But just at that time, the Spirit Formation undulated, then quickly after, explosively shot out countless huge hands that covered the sky.

The huge hands were formed by Spirit Formation power. They gave off a feeling of indestructibility, but the most important thing was that the huge hands which covered the sky were scattered almost everywhere. With that, Chu Feng and the others truly wished to advance yet could not, wished to retreat yet could not. What awaited them was only their fate of being caught.

At that instant, even the expression of Zi Ling, who was previously calm, changed greatly. Within her purple-coloured pupils, incomparable shock surged. She shouted out in surprise, “Is it possible that this is the legendary Ten Thousand Hand Immortal Capturing Formation?”

# Chapter 465: Gu Tianchen

---

“Ten Thousand Hand Immortal Capturing Formation?”

“This Ten Thousand Hand Immortal Capturing Formation is an extremely powerful Binding Formation. If one is caught by it, there is almost no one who can escape from it.”

“But this Ten Thousand Hand Immortal Capturing Formation has extremely high requirements in Spirit Formation techniques. From what I’ve heard, only those above Purple-cloak World Spiritists can lay it. If there’s a Blue-cloak World Spiritist who can lay it, it means that they have extremely high attainments in Spirit Formations, and have already infinitely neared being a Purple-cloak World Spiritist.” Zi Ling explained.

“That powerful? Doesn’t that mean right now, a great disaster is approaching?” At that instant, Chu Feng’s brows also slightly furrowed and layers of uneasiness appeared in his gaze.

After hearing Zi Ling’s explanation, he knew how powerful Jie Shi was. He was an existence that infinitely neared the rank of a Purple-cloak World Spiritist. A character like him, in addition to his cultivation of the 7th level of the Heaven realm, was truly not someone they could fight against.

boom

“Ah!”

Indeed, just as the Ten Thousand Hand Immortal Capturing Formation finished forming, countless huge hands that covered the sky came from all directions and caught the Exquisite Chariot that Chu Feng and the others were in.

The power of the huge Spirit Formation hands was extremely strong. Even with the three of them channeling their full power into it, it was unable to make the Exquisite Chariot escape from the hands. And just at that time, Jie Shi already flew over. He stretched out with his palm. Layers of Heaven power condensed into a huge Heaven power hand and held the Exquisite Chariot with it.

At that instant, Chu Feng and the others could feel that layers of Heaven power was endlessly compressing the Exquisite Chariot. Clearly, Jie Shi wanted to break open the Exquisite Chariot's Strange Armament might and pluck the three of them out from the chariot, then put them to their places.

In a situation like that, Chu Feng and the others no longer had any escape. They could only put all their power into the Exquisite Chariot to strengthen the Exquisite Chariot's Strange Armament might to fight against Jie Shi's power.

Because, as long as they hid within the Exquisite Chariot, they would still have a trace of survival chance. But if they left the Exquisite Chariot, it would be equal to dying.

“Three ignorant brats! Don't think I can't do anything to you by



hiding in the Strange Armament. Today, all of you will become dust along with this Strange Armament!”

Jie Shi kept on madly laughing, then afterwards, he suddenly waved his hand and the huge hand condensed by Heaven power moved along with his. It descended from the sky, then afterwards, with a boom, it fiercely slammed the Exquisite Chariot onto the ground.

Then, he continuously waved his huge hand and kept on slamming the Exquisite Chariot towards the World Spirit Guild’s strongest formation, wanting to break the Strange Armament with his absolute power.

When facing such an insane Jie Shi, when facing his powerful and peerless power, even Chu Feng and the others were unable to fight against such horrifying force as they kept on rolling in the Exquisite Chariot, enduring the huge pressure.

But after all, a Strange Armament was a Strange Armament. No matter how strong Jie Shi’s power was, it wasn’t something he could destroy as he wished to. Even if he wanted to break the Exquisite Chariot’s connection with Chu Feng and the others, he could not.

In that situation, Jie Shi was thoroughly angered. After some waving, he leaped and entered the huge Spirit Formation hammer that he laid, and also placed the Exquisite Chariot on the World Spirit Guild’s formation that the huge Spirit Formation hammer was facing. He wanted to activate the horrifying huge hammer to shatter the Exquisite Chariot.

“Crap, the power of his huge Spirit Formation hammer is too powerful! If we get struck by it, even my Exquisite Chariot won’t be able to take it, and it will be broken by it!” Zi Ling said with a face filled with terror.

“Really? But this is a Strange Armament! Would Strange Armaments be that weak?” Zhang Tianyi asked with disbelief.

“No matter how much stronger Strange Armaments are, they are armaments. When facing absolute power, naturally, it is impossible to resist. Jie Shi’s huge Spirit Formation hammer can even break open the World Spirit Guild’s strongest Spirit Formation created by generations of their seniors, let alone the Exquisite Chariot that the three of us are channeling power into.”

The usually calm Zi Ling, at that instant, also had a face filled with worry because she could feel how powerful the huge Spirit Formation hammer was.

If an expert like her grandfather was putting power into the Exquisite Chariot, he would absolutely not be destroyed by the huge Spirit Formation hammer, but if it was them, it was likely that they were truly going to meet a catastrophe.

“Three ignorant brats, die!” Jie Shi stood in the formation as his hair and clothes fluttered without wind. With an explosive shout, the huge hammer condensed by Spirit Formation power struck down on the Exquisite Chariot that Chu Feng and the others were in.

hmm

However, in that crucial split moment, the World Spirit Guild's strongest formation undulated, then the indestructible Spirit Formation was like a wave as it sucked the Exquisite Chariot into the Spirit Formation.

boom

Also at that time, the huge Spirit Formation hammer abruptly slammed down, shattering the World Spirit Guild's strongest Spirit Formation.

“Haha, it's finally broken open!” Seeing the Spirit Formation which protected the World Spirit Guild finally breaking open, the elite army of one million made up by the alliance of the Jie clan and the four big power was elated.

“This old guy has finally come out.” However, Jie Shi who was channeling power into the huge Spirit Formation hammer lightly furrowed his brows because he knew that it wasn't his hammer that broke the World Spirit Guild's strongest formation. It was that someone dissolved the formation.

boom Indeed, shortly after the formation disappeared, boundless aura exploded outwards from the World Spirit Guild.

The powerful aura covered the sky and the ground. Other than

Jie Shi, any person in the elite army of one million could not fight against that aura and were blown continuously back. Some people were even blown dozens of miles away.

Coincident with the appearance of the aura, an old man with white clothing appeared in the air.

That old man was none other than the person who fought equally against Jie Shi a hundred years ago and was also named as an exceptional genius. The old ancestor of the World Spirit Guild, Gu Tianchen.

The aura that the present Gu Tianchen emanated was not the slightest bit weaker than Jie Shi's. Clearly, he also stepped into the 7th level of the Heaven realm.

“Gu Tianchen, you are finally willing to show yourself? The war between you and me have been dragged out for so long. It's time to end it today.” Seeing Gu Tianchen, Jie Shi had actually rose straight into the sky and endlessly laughed madly. He seemed to not be too worried because of Gu Tianchen's appearance. Rather, he was very happy.

Gu Tianchen didn't pay attention to the words Jie Shi said. He turned around and cast his gaze behind him.

Behind him, the Exquisite Chariot was suspended in the air. Chu Feng, Zi Ling, and Zhang Tianyi walked out of the Exquisite Chariot.

Gu Tianchen first assessed Chu Feng and the others, then said with a face filled with gratitude, “My three friends, sorry for the trouble. My World Spirit Guild will firmly remember today’s favour and will definitely repay you.”

“But right now, please back away. I shall start killing.”

After speaking, Gu Tianchen suddenly turned around. His previous still kind eyes instantly turned into two blade-like glares. At the same time, some black clouds appeared above him. Lightning shot everywhere from the black clouds, and it was extremely terrifying.

But the most terrifying thing was underneath the rolling black clouds that were filled with lightning. Four huge World Spirit Gates appeared, and four World Spirits with sinister faces and huge bodies stepped out from the World Spirit Gate.

# Chapter 466: The Young Generation Has Died

---

Four World Spirits stood on the air. Every single one of them was over ten meters tall, and even though they were humanoid, they were not humans. Their appearances were sinister, and were as terrifying as a demon. They had strange weapons and gave off powerful auras. They were four World Spirits from the Ghost Spirit World.

After those four World Spirits appeared, not to mention the people from the Jie clan and the four big powers, even the expressions of the people from the World Spirit Guild changed greatly, being terrified by the four World Spirits in the sky.

They were terrified because the aura that the four World Spirits emanated was the aura of the 6th level of the Heaven realm. Very few people on scene could defeat strength like that. It was even comparable to the old ancestors from the four big powers as well as to the head of the World Spirit Guild, and the current chief of the Jie clan, Jie Xingpeng.

Also, those World Spirits came from the Spirit World. Clearly, they had special powers that human cultivators didn't have. In terms of aura, they were a lot more powerful than the four old ancestors of the Yuangang School, Free and Unrestrained Valley, Hidden White Sect, and Fire God School.

And Gu Tianchen was actually able to call out those four terrifying things in the 6th level of the Heaven realm when he willed. Naturally, that caused people to be shocked. Shocked at the

frightening strength of this genius World Spiritist.

“To ordinary Blue-cloak World Spiritists, making a contract with three World Spirits is already the limit. This Gu Tianchen is actually able to control four World Spirits. His strength is very strong as well. It’s likely that like Jie Shi, the distance to being a Purple-cloak World Spiritist is not far for him either.” Zi Ling said in a low voice when she saw the scene in front of their eyes.

“Four World Spirits, and every single one is in the 6th level of the Heaven realm. Isn’t that too strong? No wonder it’s said that World Spiritists are impressive occupations. Looking at it today, it is indeed true.”

Zhang Tianyi’s face was also filled with admiration. It was the first time he saw such powerful World Spirits, and also the first time he admired the unique power World Spiritists had.

“This isn’t even much. It’s rumoured that if a World Spiritist’s strength reaches a certain realm, that person can call out a World Spirit army on their own for their own use.”

“Although normally, such a powerful World Spiritist would only be alone when travelling, when battling, even schools and powers that exist for ten thousand years won’t be able to defeat such a World Spiritist.” Chu Feng spoke.

He heard that from Eggy. Although the number of World Spirits a World Spiritist could call was a standard measure to calculate a World Spiritist’s strength, as long as a World Spiritist reached a

certain realm of strength, they could indeed call out a World Spirit army on their own to attack the world and be invincible.

gulp Hearing Chu Feng say that, Zhang Tianyi couldn't help gulping. The admiration on his face instantly rose to the max.

One World Spiritist carrying a World Spirit army on him? How impressive of a thing was that? It really made him yearn for it, but he could do nothing as he didn't have Spirit power, and was fated to be unrelated to World Spiritists in his life. So, his immense yearning could only turn into immense admiration.

In reality, not only Zhang Tianyi, even the extremely beautiful little face of Zi Ling who was also a World Spiritist became complicated after hearing Chu Feng's words.

Because, she couldn't help but think of a scene. The scene of one World Spiritist rising into the air, commanding a World Spirit Army to attack the world for themselves.

People would feel their blood boil when they thought of that scene, but Zi Ling knew that even if it was a World Spirit army, there would be different levels of deterrence power.

In terms of World Spirit deterrence, which Spirit World's World Spirit could be comparable to the Asura Spirit World's World Spirit?

So, as long as she imagined in the future, what followed behind



Chu Feng was an Asura Spirit World's World Spirit army, even she felt a bit of admiration.

boom

Just as the three of them were staring blankly, the four World Spirits that Gu Tianchen called out started to attack. However, what they were fighting against were also not humans. They were similarly four World Spirits.

Those four World Spirits' appearances were a bit similar to Monstrous Beasts. They were World Spirits that came from the Beast Spirit World. The four Beast Spirit World World Spirits had strength not inferior to Gu Tianchen's four Ghost Spirit World World Spirits. They were called out by Jie Shi.

At that moment, Jie Shi already rose into the sky. He stood in the air, looked at Gu Tianchen with smiles, and said, "Gu Tianchen, back then, you started closed-door training at the same time as me, but you have come out several days later than me. This already means your talent is inferior to mine. Is it possible that today, you still want to defeat me?"

"Jie Shi, you still look down on everyone like back then. My World Spirit Guild and your Jie clan could actually have coexisted, but you persist in wanting to determine a win and loss, in wanting to determine life and death."

"Up until now, a hundred years has passed. You and I have already went from strong youths to old men with faces full of

wrinkles. From the young generation into a senior. Our ages are reaching the end, and the fun in living won't last for more than a few years."

"But you still remain stupid and ignorant, and actually attacked my World Spirit Guild when I haven't come out yet, wanting to eradicate my World Spirit Guild."

"You are indeed a plague. For my World Spirit Guild's peace, today, I will definitely remove you." Gu Tianchen loudly said.

"Hahaha, Gu Tianchen, you want to remove me? Do you have that strength? Before, you were unable to defeat me. Today, you will still be unable to defeat me. Even if there is a person who prevails, then the person who prevails will also definitely be me."

"Also, I can tell you without hiding anything. You have already come too late."

"When you were training in seclusion, your World Spirit Guild used the special Delivery Formation to hiddenly transport your World Spirit Guild's young generation away from the World Spirit Guild's base. They wanted them to escape this calamity."

"But they didn't know that I already expected they would have that hand. So, your World Spirit Guild current, most excellent young generation have all died!"

"Without your young generation, your World Spirit Guild is

fated to be weaker than my Jie clan for the next dozens of years. So, even if I don't exterminate your World Spirit Guild today, you have already lost." Jie Shi insanely laughed loudly.

And after hearing his words, the expressions of the current head of the World Spirit Guild and the manager elders changed greatly. All of their faces were like ashes. Some people's feet even went limp, felt that the world was spinning, and fainted away.

Even Gu Tianchen tightly furrowed his brows. His calm gaze started to flicker and become unstable.

Because, it was as Jie Shi said. A power's young generation did determine its future. If accidents truly happened to his World Spirit Guild's young generation, it would definitely affect his World Spirit Guild's future development. To them, it would definitely be a huge setback.

"Jie Shi, don't even think of speaking nonsense. My World Spirit Guild's Delivery Formation is the hard work of my previous generations' seniors. How can it be calculated by the likes of you?" One manager elder in the World Spirit Guild was not willing to believe Jie Shi's words and loudly retorted.

"I'm speaking nonsense? Open your dog eyes and look carefully. Why aren't the four heads of the Yuangang School, Hidden White Sect, Fire God School, and Free and Unrestrained Valley in my army? Where did they go? Can it be that you can't think of anything?"

“Gu Tianchen, tell your World Spirit Guild’s ignorant younger generation this. Tell them whether I, Jie Shi, have the ability to calculate where your World Spirit Guild’s Delivery Formation would send them or not!” Jie Shi’s laughter became louder and louder, as if he had already grasped the ticket to victory.

## Chapter 467: Morale Greatly Increases

---

At that instant, facing Jie Shi's questioning, Gu Tianchen stood in the air, tightly frowned, but didn't say anything because he knew with the Spirit Formation techniques Jie Shi grasped, he could indeed calculate where his World Spirit Guild's Delivery Formation would send the people to.

But currently, he could not admit that or else his World Spirit Guild's morale would receive a heavy blow, and they would not be suitable to face the great battle that was coming up.

"The old bastard Jie Shi is right. He did indeed know the direction where Vice-head Gao, Brother Xu, and the others escaped towards. Also, he sent out Jie Qingming and the heads of the four big powers as well as some experts to stop them." Just at that time, Chu Feng suddenly spoke.

"Chu Feng, are your words true?" After Chu Feng spoke, the people from the World Spirit Guild panicked. Especially the higher-ups of the World Spirit Guild, the guild head as well as the manager elders. All of their bodies started to tremble, as if their final day was here.

"I, Chu Feng, never say false words. However, just as they stopped Vice-head Gao and the others, before they could kill them, I, Zi Ling, and Senior Zhang met them."

"As a member of the World Spirit Guild, the World Spirit Guild's enemy is my enemy. Seeing someone dare to act maliciously

towards those of my World Spirit Guild, naturally, I, Chu Feng, could not merely observe on the side without doing anything. So, I killed Jie Qingming as well as the people from the four big powers.” Chu Feng continued saying.

“You lie!!”

After hearing those words, the faces of the people from the Jie clan as well as the four big powers changed greatly and all of them started to loudly curse towards Chu Feng.

Because, no matter if it was Jie Qingming or the four heads, to them, they were battle power that could not be omitted. If something truly happened to them, it would be a huge blow.

They also didn’t feel that Chu Feng’s words were true. They felt like Chu Feng was speaking false words to deceive the crowd and wanted to affect their morale.

“Hahaha, you don’t believe me?” Chu Feng laughed, then no longer wasted his words with them. He lightly streaked past his Cosmos Sack with his palm, and as radiance flashed, a human head appeared in his hand. After that, he raised the head high and loudly said, “Look! Who is this?!”

“Qingming!!”

After seeing the head in Chu Feng’s hand, the expression of the current chief of the Jie clan, Jie Xingpeng, changed greatly. His

mouth was roundly widened, overflowing anger emerged into his eyes, and he furiously howled at the sky.

It was because as a World Spiritist, he was able to determine that the head in Chu Feng's hand was absolutely not fake. It was undoubtedly Jie Qingming's. His Jie clan's future chief, his successor whom he developed for many years, was actually killed by Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, I will kill you!!”

At that instant, everyone from the Jie clan was furious. All of them had overflowing bloodlust because no matter how much more powerful Jie Shi was, he had reached the limit of his age. Although right now, he could control the general situation for the Jie clan and start massacres, everyone knew that Jie Shi, the old ancestor, could not live for many more years.

But Jie Qingming was different. Although the present Jie Qingming wasn't too strong, and his position in the clan couldn't be equally discussed with Jie Xingpeng and Jie Shi, his potential was huge. It could be said that the current Jie Qingming was not inferior in the slightest than Jie Shi's young times. He was his Jie clan's future hope.

But at present, that hope was destroyed by someone. How could the Jie clan endure that? All of them gnashed their teeth in anger, and wished they could shatter Chu Feng's corpse in ten thousand pieces.

“Chu Feng you brat, I will definitely make you pay the price for your actions.”

Not only the Jie clan, even the people from the Yuangang School, Hidden White Sect, Free and Unrestrained Valley, and the Fire God School were furious. All of them were flooded with bloodlust because if even Jie Qingming was killed, they knew that their four heads and many experts definitely didn't have much luck.

“That brat called Chu Feng. You are truly daring and looking to die!”

“I, Jie Shi, swear that I will make you wish you could live but cannot live, wish you could die but cannot die. If I don't torture you back and forth from death, I will have wasted these years of living!”

In reality, even Jie Shi was enraged. He had been out for several days and had quite an understanding of the current situation of the Jie clan. Also, he took a liking to Jie Qingming and was preparing to seriously develop him, but he didn't expect that he would get killed.

So, he too didn't waste words and led the elite army of one million towards the World Spirit Guild's base, which lost its strongest Spirit Formation, and started a full-scale attack. The frightening war had begun.

“Haha, Jie Shi, it seems like you're wrong. A hundred years from now, my World Spirit Guild's young generation will clearly be a lot



more excellent than your Jie clan's young generation.”

“The one fated to die out isn't my World Spirit Guild, but your Jie clan!” At that instant, Gu Tianchen who had a face filled with worry before had a face filled with ecstasy right now.

After he deeply looked at Chu Feng with a gaze filled with admiration, he laughed loudly, leaped, and flew towards the approaching Jie Shi.

boom boom boom

In a blink, the two experts in the 7th level of the Heaven realm fought together. The space they were in was filled with boundless ripples. No one dared to near it because they were truly too strong. Even if it was the remnants of their battle, it was not something that ordinary Heaven realm cultivators could endure.

“Friend Chu Feng, big favours are not thanked with words. From now on, my World Spirit Guild vows to live and die with you. As long as my World Spirit Guild exists, it will protect your safety. If someone wants to attack you, they can only do so if they destroy my World Spirit Guild.”

At that instant, the current head of the World Spirit Guild also hiddenly sent a mental message to Chu Feng. He was similarly incomparably elated. Even though right now, he was fighting against Jie Xingpeng, he didn't forget to express his gratitude to Chu Feng because not only did Chu Feng help his World Spirit Guild greatly, he also saved the people equivalent to his World

Spirit Guild's future hope.

In reality, at that very instant, many manager elders of the world Spirit Guild were very thankful towards Chu Feng. Some hiddenly sent mental messages, some just yelled loudly, but they were all expressing their thanks to Chu Feng.

It was because Chu Feng's actions caused the World Spirit Guild's members' morale to increase greatly. Even though they were facing the elite army of one million made up by the Jie clan and four big powers, they were not afraid. Rather, the more they fought, the more courageous they got.

At the same time, Zhang Tianyi also took the initiative to enter the circle of battle. He held the Divine Wood Sword, emitted blue flames, and with absolute strength, he suppressed the old ancestors from the four powers. At that moment, it was actually the World Spirit Guild that occupied the advantage in that war.

“Chu Feng, what do we do now? Do we help the World Spirit Guild win this battle, or directly head towards the Asura Ghost Tower?” Zi Ling didn't make any move. She stood next to Chu Feng and waited for Chu Feng's decision like a little bird relying on a person.

At that instant, Chu Feng scanned his surroundings, and seeing the battlefield that was already in chaos, he said, “The outcome of this war is undetermined. With our cultivation, neither of us can change the situation. Rather than fighting without direction, why not find other paths.”

“Zi Ling, come with me to the Asura Ghost Tower. As long as that Mysterious Monstrous Beast can be requested to come out, no matter how much stronger Jie Shi is, he will definitely die today.” As Chu Feng spoke, he became a blur of light as he flew towards the Asura Ghost Tower. Zi Ling also leaped with her beautiful body and quickly followed after him.

# Chapter 468: Seeing the Mysterious Monstrous Beast Again

---

The Asura Ghost Tower already had over ten thousand years of history. Legends said that there were great treasures hidden within, but up until now, there had been no one who saw what the treasures looked like.

Putting aside the treasures, to World Spiritists, the Asura Ghost Tower itself was definitely a rare treasure because it contained Spirit Pressure, which had the effect of raising one's Spirit power.

Back then, the reason why the World Spirit Guild was established at that place was because they wanted to occupy the Asura Ghost Tower for themselves. So, the Asura Ghost Tower could be said to be the World Spirit Guild's most important thing.

Even at present, in times of war, the World Spirit Guild still sent out many experts to guard that place. In spite of that though, when Chu Feng arrived there and requested to enter, the guardians did not deny entry.

After all, they already knew about Chu Feng saving their World Spirit Guild's young generation. To them, right now, Chu Feng was a person who helped the World Spirit Guild greatly. Why would they refuse such a tiny request from a person like him?

So, Chu Feng and Zi Ling both entered the Asura Ghost Tower. With Zi Ling's talent, naturally, it wasn't hard stepping onto the legendary sixth level. It could even be said to be extremely,

extremely easy.

However, after Chu Feng opened the entrance to the seventh level, Zi Ling bumped into an invisible barrier. No matter what, she could not step past it, but that barrier was undetectable by Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, this seventh level invisible barrier is very powerful. Unless I have special decryption methods, I cannot enter. Enter yourself, but you must be careful.”

Zi Ling stood on the sixth level while looking at Chu Feng on the seventh level. She was sweetly smiling, but within her pretty eyes, some worry emerged.

She had already heard Chu Feng say that there was a Monstrous Beast detained here. The Monstrous Beast was very powerful, and a hundred years ago, he easily defeated the two geniuses, Jie Shi and Gu Tianchen. It was very possibly a Purple-cloak World Spiritist, and a hundred years later, it was likely that it was even more powerful.

Moreover, the mysterious Monstrous Beast told Chu Feng that he could raise his Spirit power if he went to the Thousand Monster Mountain, but in reality, there were five big Monster Kings guarding there and also countless mechanisms. It caused Chu Feng to almost lose his life, so Zi Ling felt that the Monstrous Beast being detained here wasn't all that trustworthy.

“Don't worry, I have a plan.” Chu Feng lightly smiled, then

turned around and walked to where the Monstrous Beast was imprisoned.

Naturally, Chu Feng also didn't trust that mysterious Monstrous Beast, but the reason why he still righteously came to save the Monstrous Beast was obviously because he had made thorough preparations.

Passing through the corridor constructed by powerful Spirit Formations, Chu Feng finally reached the end. At that place, there was a Spirit Formation cage, and within the cage, a sharp-teethed, blood-red eyed, pointy-eared Monstrous Beast was imprisoned.

That Monstrous Beast looked a bit weak and it didn't emit a very powerful aura, giving people an extremely feeble feeling. However, Chu Feng knew that the Monstrous Beast was an extremely dangerous existence, and also an existence he needed to save.

“Haha, boy! You boy, you've finally come to find me!”

“Haha, impressive! It has been exactly two years, and you have actually become a Blue-cloak World Spiritist!”

“How did you get near that Asura Ghost Axe? Are my five little disciples good now? Are the little guys in the Thousand Monster Graveyard still well?” The Monstrous Beast was as lively as usual. After seeing Chu Feng, he was even incomparably joyful and asked this and that without end.

“Although there is some relation in me becoming a Blue-cloak World Spiritist because of you, in reality, I still relied on myself.”

“At first, you clearly told me I could find the tool to raise my Spirit power if I followed the map you gave me, but you never said that the Thousand Monster Graveyard was such a dangerous place. Do you know that I almost died because of carelessness?” Chu Feng’s face was icy cold as he interrogated with a face full of fury.

“Hehe, aren’t you living nice and well now? If I told you everything, there would be no meaning. Only the situation right now is meaningful! At least it means that I wasn’t mistaken.”

“Quick, quickly come over. I’ll teach you how to lay this Spirit Formation. As long as it corresponds from inside here to outside there, ten days later, I will be able to leave this place.” The Monstrous Beast grinned without the slightest trace of shame. Rather, it felt that its actions were very right.

“You want me to help you out? I can, but I cannot believe you right now. So, if you want me to help you out there, you must listen to me.” Chu Feng said.

“Oh? Boy, you want me to listen to you? Hehe, sure! As long as I can get out of here, anything will do. Say, how should I listen to you” The Monstrous Beast didn’t refuse. Instead, it chuckled and followed up and asked, as if as long it was let out, anything was truly fine.

hmm Chu Feng didn’t respond. He overlaid his hands, willed,

and after a World Spirit Gate appeared, Eggy walked out of the gate.

“This is...a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World!” After seeing Eggy, the Monstrous Beast’s pupils shrunk and a hint of shock emerged onto his face, then he said, “Waa, boy, you’re quite impressive! You were able to make a contract with a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World! No wonder you can so easily enter this place. Impressive. Impressive!”

“Oi, little monster, you want to leave this place right? If you want to leave, then do as I tell you. Lay a Delivery Formation.” As she spoke, Eggy lightly tapped with her finger, then some gas appeared in front, drawing the method of laying the Delivery Formation.

At the same time, Chu Feng started to lay the Delivery Formation.

“Hehe, little lady, you’re impressive as well. You are actually able to grasp such a powerful Delivery Formation. Indeed, if both the outside and the inside harmonizes, it can evade the Spirit Formation that is sealing me and deliver some things.”

“But the object that can be delivered is too small. From the outside, sure, you can send some things for me to eat, but if you want to send me outside, it is almost impossible.” The Monstrous Beast didn’t follow Eggy’s words and lay the Delivery Formation. Instead, it disdainfully smiled.



“Who said this Delivery Formation is for sending you out? It’s for sending this in, then you eating it.”

Eggy sweetly smiled as a round, black-coloured object appeared on her hand. The object was only as big as a fingernail, but it emitted layers of black gas. Looking at it carefully, the round object was a black-coloured skull.

“Little lady, you truly don’t have good intentions. You actually take such a poisonous object and want me to consume it?” The Monstrous Beast lightly frowned, but there was still an unconcerned smile on his face.

“Don’t worry. This thing won’t take your life. It is only for restricting your thoughts. If you face Chu Feng with malicious intents, it will torture you. But if you don’t have any evil thoughts when facing him, it will not affect you.” Eggy said.

“Hehe. Little lady, boy, the two of you don’t feel that I’m trustable. I understand that. I also understand why you two want to give me such a thing to eat.”

“But on what basis should I believe you on? You said that this isn’t something poisonous, but what if it is? Besides, I’m perfectly fine, so why do I have to eat something like that? What if it’s something that restricts my thoughts? What if it allows you to control me, and forces me to do things I don’t want to do?” The Monstrous Beast curled its mouth and said.

“You have no choice. Either you lay the Delivery Formation right

now and take it after it's sent over, or we will immediately leave. You can then wait in this Asura Ghost Tower and age to death." As Eggy spoke, she turned around, strode, and looked like she was going to leave. Chu Feng also stopped laying the Delivery Formation, turned around, seemingly also wishing to leave.

"Ah, wait! I give up! I'll eat it okay?" But just at that time, behind Chu Feng and Eggy suddenly came the Monstrous Beast's compromising voice.

Turning his head to look, Chu Feng's expression couldn't help but slightly change because he discovered that in front of the Monstrous Beast, a Delivery Formation had actually appeared. It was the Delivery Formation Eggy wanted it to lay.

The formation was very difficult to create, so that was why he didn't finish even after laying for so long. But a Delivery Formation so challenging to create was finished by that Monstrous Beast in an instant.

## Chapter 469: Chu Feng's Request

---

“Boy, quickly lay the Delivery Formation and send that poison in here. I will eat it.” The mysterious Monstrous Beast smilingly said, as if it wasn’t the slightest bit afraid that Eggy’s poison would kill it.

Seeing that, Chu Feng hurriedly continued laying the Delivery Formation. Although his hands were busy, his heart started to get excited because the Spirit Formation technique that the Monstrous Beast grasped was very powerful. It was absolutely not something that Blue-cloak World Spiritists could do.

So, Chu Feng was almost completely certain that the mysterious Monstrous Beast was as Eggy said, a Purple-cloak World Spiritist.

And a Purple-cloak World Spiritist could save Su Rou and Su Mei, and even help the Azure Dragon Founder in his revival. It meant that Chu Feng’s so much hard work wasn’t wasted, and everything was worth it.

After roughly an hour of time, Chu Feng finally finished laying the Delivery Formation, and after sending the poison that Eggy took out, the Monstrous Beast didn’t play any tricks and immediately swallowed it in front of them. The thing that Chu Feng could do nothing about was after swallowing such horrifying poison, the Monstrous Beast even yelled out “delicious” with a cheerful face.

“Okay boy, I’ve already complied with your demands and

swallowed this poisonous pill. Follow what I say next and lay an Opening Spirit Formation. Coordinate with me, and in at most ten days, I can break open this Spirit Formation cage and leave this place.” The Monstrous Beast said after consuming the poisonous pill.

“Senior, I still have a few requests.” Chu Feng spoke again.

“Boy, speak your mind. I’ll count helping me leave this place and restoring my freedom a favor I owe you. As long as I can do it, I will definitely help you as much as I can.” The Monstrous Beast was quite straightforward and didn’t waste any words. It patted its chest and immediately said, as if it would agree no matter what Chu Feng said.

Afterwards, Chu Feng truthfully said what he needed the mysterious Monstrous Beast to do. For example, helping the World Spirit Guild gain victory in this war, as well as helping Su Rou and Su Mei.

As for the matter about the Azure Dragon Founder, because he said he wanted him to help him, without the Azure Dragon Founder’s permission, naturally, Chu Feng would not ask for the assistance of the Monstrous Beast.

But the Monstrous Beast was still straightforward and unhesitatingly agreed to Chu Feng’s conditions. That caused Chu Feng to unconsciously gain some more favourable feelings towards the Monstrous Beast.

After that, Chu Feng followed the words of the powerful Monstrous Beast and started to coordinate to lay the Spirit Formation. The formation was very powerful, but it also required a very long time. It still needed a few days at the very least, but for the longest amount of time, it would not be over ten days.

Actually, compared to the Monstrous Beast's hundred year imprisonment here, ten days of time truly wasn't anything.

But currently, the World Spirit Guild was in a war with the Jie clan and the four big powers. Although the clash between experts could shock the world, sometimes, victory or defeat could possibly be determined in an instant.

Luckily however, this war wasn't a confrontation between two apical experts. It was a confrontation between two powers. No matter if it was Jie Shi or Gu Tianchen, they didn't throw their entire bodies and hearts into their own fights. They were endlessly looking over their own juniors.

Every time their junior could not defeat their opponent and entered danger, they would split up their concentration and go forth to help them. That caused the war to be very drawn out and the number of people who died was very few as well.

At the same time, people couldn't help respecting the strength of the two old ancestors, Jie Shi and Gu Tianchen. Not only did they have the strength to fight against their opponent, they could even protect the safety of the crowd on their own. Things like those weren't things that normal people could do.

In a situation like that, the war became an attrition war. Although there weren't many people from the World Spirit Guild who were injured or had died, quite a few buildings of the World Spirit Guild were destroyed. It could be said that other than the core zone, the enormous power had already been made into a mess from the war and was completely unrecognizable.

But that wasn't even much. After a few days of hard fighting, perhaps because he experienced the war just after exiting from closed-door training, the old ancestor of the World Spirit Guild, Gu Tianchen, had actually started to lose strength and gradually entered a disadvantage.

boom Suddenly, a horrifying energy ripple exploded in the night sky. Dazzling radiance enveloped the sky and the earth, lighting up that region of land, making it as bright as day.

But coincident with that, a body also explosively launched out from the ripples and fiercely shot into the surface of the land. Explosions resonated as well as a large area of smoke.

“Ancestor!!”

At that instant, the people from the World Spirit Guild panicked because they knew that the ripple was created by Jie Shi and Gu Tianchen, and the one who fell from the sky was their World Spirit Guild's old ancestor, Gu Tianchen.

“Don't worry, I'm fine.”

Just at that time, Gu Tianchen's voice suddenly erupted from below, and quickly after, he became a blur of light as he charged into the sky, then stopped in the air.

That person was Gu Tianchen. At that instant, his clothes were clean. Not a single speck of dust tainted it and his face was normal as well. He did not have the slightest appearance of injury.

Seeing Gu Tianchen in that state, the people from the World Spirit Guild couldn't help breathing a long sigh of relief. At present, that ancestor was their backbone! The reason why there were still so many people surviving after a few full days and nights of war was because of him. If something happened to Gu Tianchen at that moment, then everyone there would die.

But compared to the relief in the normal members' hearts, the head of the World Spirit Guild and the manager elders, the high ranking people, panicked even more in their hearts.

It was because they could feel the change in Gu Tianchen's aura. He was injured, and he was suffering from a very serious internal injury. He was intentionally pretending that nothing happened to him to avoid affecting everyone's morale. But if even they could see Gu Tianchen's change, how could Jie Shi not?

"Gu Tianchen, don't forcefully hang on. Tonight is your World Spirit Guild's last day. Even if it is you, you will not survive beyond this night." Indeed, Jie Shi started to insanely laugh loudly again, as if the World Spirit Guild had already lost.

“Jie Shi, don’t even think of being arrogant. As long as I, Gu Tianchen, am here, I will absolutely not allow you to do as you wish in my World Spirit Guild!”

Gu Tianchen coldly snorted, then layers of Heaven power came out from his body. The surrounding air started to twist, then quickly after, lines of cracks started to appear, and had finally started to collapse and shatter.

Then, with a leap, and a boom, he became a blur of fiery-red radiance. Like an inverted meteor, he flew towards Jie Shi.

“The might is not bad, but sadly, with the current you, even if you attack with your full strength, you are will not be able to defeat me.” However, facing Gu Tianchen’s terrifying attack, Jie Shi was not afraid in the slightest. Rather, on the corners of his mouth, there was even a hint of cold, disdainful smile.



# Chapter 470: The Person Who Wants to Kill You

---

At that instant, Jie Shi also used his full strength.

He was standing on air, standing where he originally was. His surrounding air also started to undulate and quickly afterwards, the space around him actually started to collapse and shatter. Then, formless Heaven power changed into energy objects that appeared in his surroundings.

At first, the Heaven power was like a vortex as it spiraled around him with bursts of violent wind. Afterwards, the Heaven power became a torrent-like long dragon and explosively shot out, smashing into the attacking Gu Tianchen.

boom rumble rumble

The two collided, immediately creating a frightening explosion. So strong that even Jie Shi was unable fight against the ripples. He was shook in the air and forced back a few steps. His face became pale-white, and there was even a trace of blood that flowed out from the corners of his mouth.

Looking back at Gu Tianchen though, there was a huge mouthful of blood that sprayed out. His white clothing that was untouched by dust became clothing with muddled blood. The aura of his entire person became weak to the extreme, and like a kite with a snapped string, he fell towards the ground. His body suffered from heavy injuries, and he lost his ability to fight.

“Ancestor!” Seeing that scene, the faces of the head of the World Spirit Guild and the manager elders changed greatly. One after another, they rushed into the sky, became blurs of light, and flew towards Gu Tianchen.

However, Jie Shi wiped the blood on the corners of his mouth, then waved his sleeve and a burst of boundless power burst out.

bang bang bang bang bang

“Ahh~~~~~”

Before the head of the World Spirit Guild as well as many manager elders neared Gu Tianchen, they were struck by the power Jie Shi burst out. All of them vomited blood, flown back, and at the end, ferociously crashed onto the ground. They all had miserably heavy wounds and if they weren’t dead, they were injured.

Quickly after, he flipped his hand, grabbed, then the boundless power became surging suction and sucked back Gu Tianchen who was still falling.

When Gu Tianchen approached, Jie Shi used a single hand and grabbed Gu Tianchen’s waist, then raised him highly, looked at the World Spirit Guild underneath, and loudly said to the crowd,

“Chu Feng!!”

“Where’s Chu Feng?!!”

“Chu Feng, get the hell out of here! If you don’t, I’ll kill Gu Tianchen!”

After speaking, Jie Shi abruptly extended his other hand and grabbed onto Gu Tianchen’s arm. Afterwards, with a “puchi” and as a large flow of blood splattered, Jie Shi had actually forcibly ripped off one of Gu Tianchen’s arm.

“No!!” At that instant, the World Spirit Guild crowd all panicked and all of them loudly shouted.

“Hahaha! Chu Feng you coward, you don’t dare to come out?”

“Then remember! Today, everyone here will die because of you!”

Jie Shi got more and more excited from the yelling of the World Spirit Guild’s crowd. Afterwards, as the crowd watched, he forcibly pulled off Gu Tianchen’s other arm.

Jie Shi was ruthless. After every call for Chu Feng, he would lay his poisonous hand on Gu Tianchen. At the end, he had actually forcefully pulled off all of Gu Tianchen’s four limbs.

“No! Please... please...please let him go!”

“Lord Jie Shi, we’re begging you! Please don’t treat our ancestor like this!”

At that instant, the World Spirit Guild’s crowd were near collapse. All of them sobbed and some even loudly yelled for forgiveness. Not to mention the females, even the old elders had faces full of tears.

It was because they could really not bear it. They couldn’t bear seeing their own ancestor be so maltreated. When his age was reaching the end, he still had to bear the pain of his body splitting, and even if he died, he could not have a complete corpse.

Yet they could do nothing as with their strength, they had no way of stopping Jie Shi. The ones who went forward to stop him were all heavily beaten by him.

Jie Shi still didn’t do the killing blow. It was intentional. He wanted to let everyone from the World Spirit Guild personally see it.

Let them personally see how Gu Tianchen would die by his hands. Let them personally see the agony Gu Tianchen felt before death.

Only with that could he vent the fury in his heart!

“Gu Tianchen oh Gu Tianchen, it’s not that I, Jie Shi, am heartless, it’s just that your World Spirit Guild’s young generation

is too useless.”

“If that Chu Feng dares to stand out right now, I would absolutely not kill you today. But sadly, he has already escaped and left you.”

“Since it is like so, you cannot blame me for disregarding former feelings to attack you. If you have to blame someone, blame that Chu Feng.” At that instant, Jie Shi actually grabbed Gu Tianchen’s head and wanted to twist Gu Tianchen’s head in front of the crowd as they watched.

“Jie Shi, if you want to kill me, go ahead. Don’t waste your breath.”

“Even if you kill me today and destroy my World Spirit Guild, as long as the young generation still remains, there will be a chance for my World Spirit Guild to rise from the eastern mountains again.”

Like how the sun rises from the east, it means something rising again after being inactive for a long time.

“I believe with an outstanding young person like Chu Feng as foundation, my World Spirit Guild, sooner or later, will rise greatly again.”

“He will surpass me, and he will surpass the former seniors from the World Spirit Guild. My World Spirit Guild will ascend onto an unprecedented peak because of him. He will personally exterminate your Jie clan. He will personally kill every person

from every power that have come to invade my World Spirit Guild in order to avenge us.”

“Your Jie clan being annihilated is something unstoppable, and you, Jie Shi, are powerless to stop it!”

Gu Tianchen, despite his body being in ruins, had never even frowned. Even when facing death, his expression was still unchanging. Right now, he was still clearly showing his demeanor of a grand character.

“Damn Gu Tianchen. You are already a person who will die, yet you still dare to say such shameless words and speak nonsense.”

“Don’t worry. No matter if it’s Chu Feng, or the young generation of your World Spirit Guild, they will all die by the hands of me, Jie Shi.”

“As long as I, Jie Shi, am still here, not a single one of them will escape. You can go meet up in the underworld.” After hearing Gu Tianchen’s words, Jie Shi’s face suddenly turned cold and as he spoke, bloodlust overflowed and he was going to break Gu Tianchen’s head.

boom

But just at that time, an explosion suddenly rang out deep within the World Spirit Guild’s base. At the same time, a burst of boundless aura also exploded outwards, and in a mere instant, it

engulfed that land. Engulfed everyone there.

At that instant, everyone's faces changed greatly because they astonishingly discovered that their bodies were actually bound by the horrifying power. No matter if they were in the Profound realm or the Heaven realm, they were all tightly imprisoned by the horrifying aura and could not move in the slightest.

In reality, even Jie Shi was bound. The immensely powerful him was currently also bound in the air and he could not control himself.

"I wonder which senior is passing by this place? If I have offended you in any way, I ask for forgiveness."

Jie Shi said those words with extreme difficulty because he knew that the person who did that was really too strong. So strong that he was far above him. Facing such an expert, even if it was him, he had to lower his attitude or else what awaited him was only death.

"The person who will kill you!!" But just at that time, a voice that was extremely loud and clear and also permeated with killing intent blew up from the direction of the World Spirit Guild.

After that voice rang out, not to mention Jie Shi and Gu Tianchen, the expressions of almost everyone on scene changed greatly as incomparable shock emerged onto their faces.

It was because they could hear that that person was none other

than the person Jie Shi kept on calling for: Chu Feng!



# Chapter 471: The Monstrous Monkey King Appears

---

rumble rumble rumble

The atmosphere of the region of land where the World Spirit Guild was located at had already changed. Within the blowing hurricane, within the stirring white clouds, three bodies came over from the core zone while walking on air. Finally, they appeared within everyone's line of sight.

Those three were none other than Chu Feng, Zi Ling, as well as the Monstrous Beast locked in the Asura Ghost Tower for a hundred years.

After seven full days of time, Chu Feng finally rescued the Monstrous Beast out from the Asura Ghost Tower, and within those seven days, Chu Feng spoke to the Monstrous Beast about many things related to himself as well as things about the Thousand Monster Mountain. He even told the Monstrous Beast about the Asura Ghost Axe recognizing him as its master.

After knowing all that, the Monstrous Beast was also very stunned, but it didn't say much. Rather, it told Chu Feng to cherish the Asura Ghost Axe well because the Asura Ghost Axe possibly had some relation with the Asura Ghost Tower.

But sadly, after the Monstrous Beast was free, no matter what, it didn't allow Chu Feng to venture deeper into the Asura Ghost Tower. It didn't even allow a single glance and told Chu Feng that

unless he had the cultivation of a Martial Lord, it was better to not enter the Asura Ghost Tower.

It was because the Spirit Formation cage that imprisoned it was only the first barrier of the Asura Ghost Tower. There were definitely more barriers after that, and they would definitely be more terrifying, and perhaps they wouldn't be as simple as imprisoning someone.

Chu Feng who was never unintelligent naturally knew the power within. So, he didn't go any deeper. Also, after seven days of being together, Chu Feng knew some things about the Monstrous Beast as well.

The Monstrous Beast had lived for over two hundred years. He was originally an ordinary monkey monster in the Thousand Monster Mountain, but with coincidences, he gained the treasure left behind by a Gold-cloak World Spiritist in the Thousand Monster Mountain.

From then on, its cultivation started to become powerful and with special methods, it caused change to happen to his body, gaining special bloodline power. He became the Monster King of the Thousand Monster Mountain, and people titled it as the Monstrous Monkey King.

Because the Monstrous Monkey King's heart wasn't evil, and it painstakingly cultivated from day to night and was extremely hardworking, he gained the mysterious Gold-cloak World Spiritist's liking. So, the mysterious Gold-cloak World Spiritist showed his consciousness to it and started to personally give

pointers to the Monstrous Monkey King when it cultivated. He even passed Spirit power to it and allowed it to become a World Spiritist.

After, with the Gold-cloak World Spiritist's consciousness's instructions, the Monstrous Monkey King found the Asura Ghost Axe, and even became a powerful World Spiritist. But sadly, it wasn't able to make the Asura Ghost Axe recognize it as its master.

Facing that, the mysterious Gold-cloak World Spiritist only said that the Monstrous Monkey King was not meant for the Asura Ghost Axe. After that, he didn't pass anything down to the Monstrous Monkey King again.

As for the current five Monster Kings in the Thousand Monster Mountain, in actuality, they were the five disciples that the Monstrous Monkey King accepted. They possessed special bloodline power and had their current strengths only also because they received the Monstrous Monkey King's pointers and inheritance.

There was one day that the Gold-cloak World Spiritist reappeared. He said that the consciousness he left behind within the Thousand Monster Mountain could possibly not exist for much longer, but before someone took the last opportunity he left in the Thousand Monster Mountain, he didn't want to disappear. So, he decided to hibernate.

The Monstrous Monkey King was very intelligent. It didn't ask much about the last opportunity the Gold-cloak World Spiritist left in the Thousand Monster Mountain. That made the Gold-cloak

World Spiritist very satisfied.

So, before hibernating, the Gold-cloak World Spiritist told the Monstrous Monkey King that there was treasure in the Asura Ghost Tower, but he reminded it: before becoming a Martial Lord, it could not intrude into the Asura Ghost Tower.

Back then, it only came to the Spirit Province because the Monstrous Monkey King didn't listen to the Gold-cloak World Spiritist's advice after all. With its powerful strength, it defeated Jie Shi and Gu Tianchen, but ultimately, it was still locked in here. If Chu Feng didn't appear, it would have definitely been imprisoned for even longer, and possibly even straight until it died from aging.

“Jie Shi, Gu Tianchen, you two brats! Do you still recognize me?!”

At present, the Monkey Monster King had already arrived within the crowd's line of sight along with Chu Feng and Zi Ling. It looked at the nearby Jie Shi and Gu Tianchen who were being bound by him and loudly laughed.

“It...It's you! Is it possible that you're Chu Feng's master?” Naturally, Jie Shi recognized the Monstrous Monkey King, so after seeing the Monster King, his expression instantly became extremely uneasy. Even within his pair of aged eyes, immense fear surged. The airs of a king he had earlier no longer existed right now.

Jie Xingpeng and the others kept on hypothesizing that there was very possibly a powerful master behind Chu Feng's back, and after Jie Shi knew about Chu Feng, naturally, he also felt that Chu Feng gained the inheritance of an expert in order to grasp such overpowering abilities.

Right now, he saw the Monstrous Monkey King, so obviously, he immediately associated it as Chu Feng's master. As long as he thought of the Monstrous Monkey King's methods, he felt that today, a calamity had already approached.

“Oh? Master? Hahaha...” The Monstrous Monkey King looked at Chu Feng and laughed loudly, then pointed at Jie Shi as well as the old ancestors from the four big powers and said, “You're wrong. Chu Feng's isn't my disciple. He's my brother.”

“I heard that in the days I wasn't here, you have bullied my brother quite a few times. Today, I have come for all of you to calculate some debt.”

The Monstrous Monkey King's voice was extremely deafening and dense killing intent was contained within it. As long as they heard his words, the people from the Jie clan as well as the four big powers felt their four limbs go limp as they broke out in cold sweat.

“Senior Jie Shi, who is this Monstrous Beast? Why are you so polite to it?” Just at that time, the old ancestor of the Fire God School spoke.

They were held in place, but they didn't know that Jie Shi was also bound. They even thought that Jie Shi currently had a free body. After all, Jie Shi had the cultivation of the 7th level of the Heaven realm. With that cultivation, in the continent of the Nine provinces, very few people could restrict him. Other than the people from the Jiang Dynasty, he could pretty much be said to be invincible within the Nine Provinces.

“Haha, you don't know who that is? I, Gu Tianchen, can tell all of you. That's the one who defeated both Jie Shi and me. A powerful Purple-cloak World Spiritist. An existence that was in the 7th level of the Heaven realm a hundred years ago.” Just at that time, Gu Tianchen had actually spoke.

Although his four limbs were already torn off, he, at that instant, had a face full of smiles because he also never expected that Chu Feng would have such a special relationship with the Monstrous Monkey King. He knew that today, his World Spirit Guild, even himself, was saved.

“What? It's an existence that defeated Jie Shi and Gu Tianchen a hundred years ago? An expert in the 7th level of the Heaven realm a hundred years ago? This... This mysterious extraordinary expert is truly a Monstrous Beast?”

“Heavens! A Purple-cloak World Spiritist is an existence that hasn't appeared yet in the continent of the Nine Provinces! It's a legend, and this legendary realm has actually been achieved by a Monstrous Beast?”

And after knowing the identity of the Monstrous Monkey King,

almost everyone trembled with faces like ashes.

There were even some disappointing young people who trembled underneath and wetted quite a bit because all of them knew that today, a disaster had already come up to them and their lives were going to rest.

## Chapter 472: Leave None

---

The Monstrous Monkey King appeared very smug when he saw the crowd's horrified expressions. It looked at Gu Tianchen and said, "Your memory is not bad, at least stronger than that Jie Shi, so it's not a waste for Brother Chu Feng telling me to save you."

As the Monstrous Monkey King spoke, it extended its hand, and with its finger as a brush, it drew in the air. With only a blink of an eye, a circular purple-coloured vast formation appeared in the sky.

The purple-coloured formation was very beautiful. There were countless symbols flashing with radiance. Especially as it was under the night sky, it was incomparably dazzling.

After the formation was laid, the Monstrous Monkey King willed, then Gu Tianchen flew up from Jie Shi's hand. Simultaneously, the four limbs Jie Shi tore off also flew into the high sky from the ground, and along with Gu Tianchen, entered the purple-coloured Spirit Formation.

To be more precise, he went through the Spirit Formation. When he entered, he was still crippled without four limbs, but when he came out, his four limbs were already undamaged. Gu Tianchen's arms and legs which were ripped off by Jie Shi were restored. There wasn't even a single scar left behind, and was as perfect as before.

"Waa~~~"



Seeing that scene, even if it was the World Spirit Guild experts, who mainly cultivated Spirit Formation techniques, they were all dumbfounded. Their expressions were quite vivid and all of them couldn't help but gasp longly.

It was because Gu Tianchen's hands and feet had actually been restored in an instant. Such powerful methods were things that they were far from having. It was the first time they saw the strength of a Purple-cloak World Spiritist.

"Senior, I thank you for saving my life." Currently, the Monstrous Monkey King had already dissolved the bindings around Gu Tianchen as well as all the people from the World Spirit Guild. So, he was already able to freely move around. He walked on air and came up to the Monstrous Monkey King. He had actually half-knelt on the ground and paid his respects to the Monstrous Monkey King.

"Ah, don't thank me. If it wasn't for my Brother Chu Feng's request, there's no way I would care about your life." But who would have thought that the Monstrous Monkey King didn't even look straight at Gu Tianchen. It just casually waved its hand and seemed quite impatient.

"This..." At that instant, Gu Tianchen was a bit speechless. He could only cast his helpless gazes towards Chu Feng who was behind the Monstrous Monkey King.

"Senior, please, quickly rise." Seeing that, Chu Feng hurriedly went forward to pull Gu Tianchen up. In reality, he felt very helpless as well because he never would have thought that despite

treating him and Zi Ling so casually, the Monstrous Monkey King would have such haughty airs when facing Gu Tianchen.

“Chu Feng, my World Spirit Guild being able to have a young person like you is truly the accumulated fortune of my seniors.”

Seeing Chu Feng in front of his eyes, Gu Tianchen's face was filled with joy and relief. Although he had just recently come out of closed-door training so he didn't have too clear of an understanding about the present World Spirit Guild's situation, he felt that Chu Feng was definitely his World Spirit Guild's hope. The young man was many times more impressive than his own young times.

Facing that situation, Chu Feng could only bring a light smile on his face and didn't know how to reply. It was because in Chu Feng's heart, he didn't count himself as part of the World Spirit Guild. Although the World Spirit Guild was kind to him, he still didn't truly see himself as a member of the World Spirit Guild.

So, in his heart, he was only a disciples of the Azure Dragon School. That was also why Chu Feng only called Gu Tianchen as “senior” and not “ancestor”.

“Jie clan. Yuangang School. Fire God School. Hidden White Sect. Free and Unrestrained Valley. You cocky things dare to take advantage of my lack of presence and unrestrainedly bully my brother, and even dare to give out wanted posters in all places in the continent of the Nine Provinces to list my brother as wanted.”

“Today is the day you will pay the price for your actions. Jie Shi! You piece of crap, you’re the absolute worst. Before, you were the one who liked calling out the most. You like splitting people’s body right? Then, I’ll let you have a feel of your body being eaten.”

Suddenly, with a thought, behind the Monstrous Monkey King, a huge World Spirit Gate opened. From inside the World Spirit Gate, a World Spirit from the Beast Spirit World walked out.

“Wuaa!”

After the World Spirit appeared, the four World Spirits that Jie Shi summoned actually started to suddenly make timid low howls. Strong expressions of fear even glittered within their huge and sinister eyes.

Although they were both World Spirits from the Beast Spirit World, the World Spirit that the Monstrous Monkey King called out, no matter if it was in terms of body, demeanor, or strength, was far above the four that Jie Shi called out.

It was a World Spirit with strength in the 7th level of the Heaven realm. Not only was its cultivation powerful, its battle power was very frightening as well.

“Not bad! This monkey monster does have some skill, actually being able to establish a contract with a World Spirit like that.” After that World Spirit appeared, Eggy in Chu Feng’s Spiritual World smiled rather unexpectedly.

“Eggy, what’s special about this World Spirit?” Chu Feng asked.

“This is a World Spirit with noble blood. It can be said to be nobility within the many World Spirits of the Beast Spirit World. So, its power is even stronger when compared to ordinary Beast Spirit World World Spirits. With this World Spirit’s power, even if Jie Shi and Gu Tianchen combined their powers, they wouldn’t be able to defeat it.” Eggy explained.

“It’s actually that powerful?” After hearing Eggy’s explanation, more and more, Chu Feng felt that the Monstrous Monkey King’s strength was indeed very strong.

“Wuaa~“ But just at that time, the World Spirit that the Monstrous Monkey King called out first howled towards the sky, then ran on air. After a few steps, it went up to Jie Shi, then widely opened its mouth, and bit down on half of Jie Shi’s body.

“Ahh~~~~~” At that instant, Jie Shi, who was soaked by blood, made a scream that was wolf-and ghost-like. It was a small matter that half his body was gone, but even his dantian was destroyed. The cultivation cultivated for over a hundred years flowed away just like that. It was really difficult to endure that.

“Ahh~~~~” But quickly afterwards, the World Spirit bit down again. It didn’t swallow Jie Shi, but bit off one of Jie Shi’s arms. After that, the more it bit, the smaller it bit, having the intention to tear Jie Shi into mush.

hmm In a situation like that, Jie Shi willed, then a strange

radiance explosively shot out from his body and rushed towards the sky. It was a consciousness. The consciousness that Jie Shi condensed out.

roar However, just as the consciousness flew out, the World Spirit's eyes flashed, then it howled and a burst of violent sound waves came spreading in the air. It had actually forcibly shocked Jie Shi's consciousness into fragments.

Then, it opened its mouth again and swallowed Jie Shi's remaining body, then smugly chewed.

“Who should the next one be?” At that instant, the Monstrous Monkey King's gaze was cast towards the four old ancestors of the Yuangang School, Hidden White Sect, Fire God School, and Free and Unrestrained Valley.

“Milord, have mercy, milord, have mercy! We only offended Chu Feng because we had eyes but no balls! Milord, we hope that you can forgive our lives.”

Eyeballs of course, meaning he sees but doesn't see

Seeing the Monstrous Monkey King cast its gaze towards himself, the legs of the Yuangang School's old ancestor immediately went limp. He started to cry and beg for forgiveness with a face filled with tears. In the moment of life and death, naturally, even he, who had a high position and powerful strength, showed a weak nature.

“Senior, have mercy, have mercy! I really didn’t know Chu Feng was your brother! If I knew, even if you gave me a hundred nerves I wouldn’t dare to attack Chu Feng!”

“The so-called ‘don’t blame those who don’t know’. Senior, I ask that as I didn’t know, give me a chance to start anew. In the future, if you want me to be a cow or horse, I will be willing to!”

The old ancestor of the Hidden White Sect also sorrowfully begged. At that instant, even his intestines greened from regret. If he knew Chu Feng had such powerful backing behind him, even if a hundred guts were lent to him, he wouldn’t dare to concentrate on Chu Feng like that. But in this world, there was no medicine for regret, and right now, it was truly too late for regrets.

At that instant, it seemed like the old ancestor of the Fire God School was a lot more unyielding. He coldly snorted, and said without any fear, “If you want to kill or cut, go ahead. Eighteen years later, I will still be a good man.”

Back then, the general belief was that they would reincarnate after death. So, what he’s saying is that he will reincarnate into a baby after death and still be a “good man”, and that dying will not matter.

“That’s right. It is but a mere Monstrous Beast. Does it think it is worthy for our begging?” The old ancestor of the Free and Unrestrained Valley also made his resolution to die, so he didn’t beg as well.

“Haha, you two are quite interesting.” The Monstrous Monkey King laughed, so loudly that even the sky trembled. Quickly after, his expression changed, then he had actually opened seven World Spirit Gates behind him. At the same time, seven powerful World Spirits also stepped out of the World Spirit Gates.

The seven World Spirits were all from the Beast Spirit World. Also, their strengths were all in the 7th level of the Heaven realm. Even their auras were not weaker than the one before, as they were all World Spirits with blood of nobility.

After calling out a total of eight World Spirits, the Monstrous Monkey King pointed downwards and loudly said, “For those being held in place by me, eat them all and leave none!”

# Chapter 473: Emperor

---

roar~~~~~

Immediately after the Monstrous Monkey King finished speaking, the eight powerful Beast Spirit World's World Spirits howled while facing the sky, then their four legs stepped on air and speedily ran. They opened their huge fang-filled mouths, flew towards experts of the Jie clan and four big powers, preparing to begin a massacre.

Facing that scene, everyone from the Jie clan and four big powers shut their eyes from terror, as they couldn't bear seeing the bloody scene.

On the other hand, the people from the World Spirit Guild had faces looking like they were venting resentment. Not only was there not the slightest trace of sympathy on their faces, rather, they secretly cheered for the eight World Spirits and hoped that they could quickly exterminate the grand enemy.

However, there was no one who dared to come out to help out because they were very afraid of the eight World Spirits as well. They were deeply afraid that if they entered the battlefield, they would be mistakenly injured by the eight World Spirits. If that happened, the gains would not be worth the losses.

“All of you, stop right now!!”

However, in that crucial moment, a voice suddenly burst out



from the distant sky. Simultaneously, boundless might descended.

aoo

After that voice rang out, the eight immensely powerful World Spirits had actually also growled quietly and then, one after the other, they retreated to the Monstrous Monkey King's back and cast their fearful gazes towards the southern horizon. At the same time, everyone's gazes were also cast over because the voice just now did come from exactly there.

rumble rumble rumble rumble rumble

Very quickly, bursts of rumbling noises came from the southern horizon. Several golden-coloured chariots appeared under the night sky and were coming over in the air, flying towards the World Spirit Guild.

The chariots were all pulled by an enormous Heaven realm Monstrous Beast. They were extremely overbearing, and in the darkness, the golden light flickered, and it was extremely dazzling.

Behind the golden-coloured chariots was an army of several tens of thousands of people.

Those people all wore golden-coloured armor and rode battle horses that could fly. Within the army, there were even a few war banners erected and on them, the two big words "Jiang Dynasty" were written.

“So, the Jiang Dynasty has finally made its move huh?” Chu Feng muttered to himself when he saw the army of the Jiang Dynasty.

“But they seem to be a bit late.” Zi Ling also said on the side.

“Nope. From what I see, they have come just in time.” The Monstrous Monkey King shot a chuckle at Chu Feng and Zi Ling, then cast his lightly squinting eyes towards the Jiang Dynasty’s army.

Finally, the Jiang Dynasty’s army, when being stared by countless gazes, stopped in mid-air. They didn’t stop above the World Spirit Guild, but outside of it.

“Jie clan chief, World Spirit Guild head, come out here!!”

Suddenly, from one of the huge chariots, another explosively yell came. When that voice rang out, a burst of extremely strong power also blew out from the chariot and engulfed the region of land over there. The Monstrous Monkey King’s bindings over the Jie clan and the four big powers were also dissolved by the strong burst of power.

“It’s the emperor! It’s the Jiang Dynasty’s emperor!” At that instant, the high ranking members of the World Spirit Guild tightly knitted their brows. From hearing, they could already tell who came. It was the emperor of the Jiang Dynasty.

“It’s the emperor, it’s the emperor! This is great, this is great! Hahaha...” But compared to the tightly frowning people from the World Spirit Guild, the people from the Jie clan and four big powers had smiles all over their faces, like they grabbed onto their only hope. As they wiped away the cold sweat on their foreheads, they could not stop smiling.

whoosh At the same time, Jie Xingpeng was also endlessly elated. He leaped and flew towards the chariot that the emperor was in.

The head of the World Spirit Guild didn’t hesitate either. Similarly, he flew up and in a blink, entered the chariot.

“Monkey Bro, what do we do now?” Just at that time, Chu Feng asked.

“No need to rush. It is but a brat waiting along with a group of garbage. I would quite like to see what tricks he can play.” The Monstrous Monster King stood in the air without panic, not putting the Jiang Dynasty in its eyes in the slightest.

A moment after, the closed chariot doors reopened and this time, a middle-aged man with overbearing might was wearing a golden-crown on his head and golden-robe on his body while walking out of the chariot, and behind him, Jie Xingpeng and the head of the World Spirit Guild came out as well.

That man was very strong. With Chu Feng’s current cultivation, he could not see through the man’s strength. Looking back at Jie Xingpeng and the head of the World Spirit Guild, they seemed to

have a very respectful appearance to the man.

Without even thinking, Chu Feng knew that he was definitely the true ruler of the entire Nine provinces. The master of the Jiang dynasty, the emperor of the Jiang Dynasty.

“I am the emperor of the Jiang Dynasty. I greet the Monstrous Monkey King and Gu Tianchen.” After the emperor walked into the space above the World Spirit Guild, he had actually brought a light smile on his face. Along with cupped hands and a bent waist, he paid his respects to the Monstrous Monkey King and Gu Tianchen.

“Oh? You little boy, you know my title?” As the Monstrous Monkey King lightly squinted its eyes, a hint of surprised emerged.

“Senior, a hundred years ago, you shocked the continent. At that time, my Jiang Dynasty had went everywhere to inquire your identity. So, a hundred years ago, my Jiang Dynasty has already know your grand name.”

“Seniors, it can be said that I grew up hearing about your achievements. I never would have thought that in my life I would be able to see you two. It is truly an honor.” The emperor didn’t have the tiniest bit of arrogance. Rather, he seemed quite humble.

“Milord, you’re too kind.” Gu Tianchen also returned a greeting to the emperor. Although in terms of seniority, he was indeed above the emperor, in terms of status and position as well as current strength, he was far from the emperor. When treating the

emperor, he didn't dare to be disrespectful.

“Little boy, you're quite interesting. You're quite clear when determining seniority, but as the ruler of the continent of the Nine Provinces, you ignore your subordinate powers' wicked actions. This is your neglect of duty. Do you know your wrongs?” The Monstrous Monkey King curled its mouth and actually reprimanded the emperor in front of the crowd.

“You monster, you even dare to be so arrogant in front of the emperor?! You are truly looking to die!” Seeing that, Jie Xingpeng behind the emperor pointed at the Monstrous Monkey King and furiously rebuked.

“Shut up!” But who would have thought that the emperor was furious instead, and fiercely glared at Jie Xingpeng.

“This one has erred!”

At that moment, it completely terrified Jie Xingpeng. His body couldn't help but violently quiver, then quickly after, he went one step back, lowered his head, and no longer dared to say anything.

“Senior, your words are very true. The reason why the continent of the Nine Provinces has turned into what it is right now is indeed my neglect.”

“But I really did have some matters to attend to and have left the continent of the Nine Provinces for two years. I've just returned to

the continent recently, and after knowing about this war that shouldn't even occur, I hurriedly came here to stop it. But I didn't expect that I still came one step late."

"Right now, what has happened has already happened. Senior Jie Shi has also been killed by you. No matter who was wrong or right, everyone paid the price that they should have paid."

"From what I see, why not turn a huge matter like today's into a smaller one, and a smaller one into nothing? Let today's things pass and don't go any deeper into anything. I wonder how everyone's opinions are?" The emperor swept his gaze over all the experts on scene.

"Milord, your words are extremely true. We are willing to follow them." At that instant, almost everyone there bent their waists to show their respect. Even Gu Tianchen didn't dare to refuse.

But who would have thought that the Monstrous Monkey King wasn't willing to buy that. It widely opened its eyes, curled its mouth, and howled, "No!!"

# Chapter 474: Asking For An Exorbitant Price

---

After the Monstrous Monkey King's words came out from its mouth, the faces of almost everyone on scene changed. Only Chu Feng's and Zi Ling's didn't as they smilingly looked at everything in front of their eyes, wanting to see what the Monstrous Monkey King was going to do next.

“Senior, it's said that grudges should be dissolved, not set. In terms of seniority, they are all juniors. No matter how excessive the things they did before were, after all, Chu Feng is still living well now.”

“But looking back at Jie Shi and the other powers, at present, they have suffered heavy losses. In reality, they have already paid the price for their actions. From what I see, this matter should just be let go. How about it?” The emperor was not angry yet. With a small smile, he urged with good words.

And seeing that scene, Jie Xingpeng, the head of the World Spirit Guild, and the others were endlessly shocked because from their understanding, the emperor had always been an existence who was extremely overbearing and decisively killed.

Yet today, he was so humble. That truly surprised them quite a bit as it destroyed the image of the emperor in their hearts.

But from this, it could also be seen that the Monstrous Monkey King was indeed very strong, or else the grand emperor, the ruler

of the continent of the Nine Provinces, wouldn't have such an unassuming appearance.

“Grudges should be dissolved, not set? That's right, there is indeed such a logic. But I also gift you with a sentence. It's that having mercy when killing gives birth to endless plagues.”

“I don't really care about these piles of trash because they shouldn't even think of threatening me in their life. But what about my sons and grandsons? My later generations?”

“If my later generation is inferior to these trashes' later generation, wouldn't there be a catastrophe in the future? Wouldn't my line go extinct? At that time, will you, who will have already entered a coffin, be able to uphold justice for me?” The Monstrous Monkey King fierce counter-asked.

After it spoke, it almost stunned everyone because it did make sense. Forces like the Jie clan as well as the four big powers would definitely remember today's grudges, and if there was a chance in the future, they would definitely take revenge.

But clearly, the emperor wasn't a simple character. Facing the Monstrous Monkey King's questioning, he only indifferently smiled, then said, “Senior, you don't need to worry about that.”

“My cultivation is limited, and indeed, I will definitely not live long in this world. But my Jiang Dynasty has been erected in the continent of the Nine Provinces for almost several thousand years. Absolutely, I believe it can continue existing.”



“Today, I can vow for them here. From today on, no matter if it’s them, or their offsprings, they cannot attack your, Chu Feng’s, or the World Spirit Guild’s later generation.”

“If they violent this vow, there is no need for others. My Jiang Dynasty will be the first to annihilate them.”

“Boy, your words are quite pleasant to listen to, but all of you are clearly on one side. When I enter the ground, even if your Jiang Dynasty helps them to oppose my later generation, I can do nothing. Wouldn’t I have huge losses then?” The Monstrous Monkey King was stubborn and unwilling to be moved by force or words. It curled its lips and distinctly showed his unwavering appearance.

“Senior, then you say. What is needed to be done in order for you to leave today’s matters and to spare their lives?” Facing the Monstrous Monkey King who was like that, the emperor could do nothing as well. He could only choose to make a compromise with it.

“Boy, I know that it isn’t easy for their powers to exist for so long. If I truly exterminated them, it would more or less have some effects on the continent of the Nine Provinces. But those who have erred must receive punishment. This is a rule of the world.”

“So, don’t say that I’m being unreasonable and not giving them a chance to start fresh.”

“As long as every single power takes out ten thousand Heaven beads to express their sincerity of regret, I will forgive them.” The Monstrous Monkey King said.

“What? Ten thousand Heaven beads?” After hearing those words, all of the faces from the Jie clan and four big powers greened.

What were Heaven beads? They were top-quality Heaven medicine! Priceless treasures! It was said that the medicinal power of a single Heaven bead was equivalent to ten thousand Profound beads, and in terms of price, ten thousand Heaven beads was equivalent to a hundred million Profound beads.

That number could absolutely cause people to vomit blood. Not to mention the powers unable to take out so many Heaven beads, they couldn’t even take out a single Heaven bead because in the continent of the Nine Provinces, only the Jiang Dynasty had the top-quality Heaven medicine “Heaven bead”.

But even within the Jiang Dynasty, Heaven beads were extremely valuable things. Only clan members who had meritorious achievements could get a few. So, the Monstrous Monkey King was definitely asking for an exorbitant price. Pressing a dead person to throw away his life.

“Senior, not to mention them, even my Jiang Dynasty can’t take out ten thousand Heaven beads.” The emperor helpless wiped his forehead. Even he broke out in cold sweat from being frightened by the Monstrous Monkey King.

“Then every single power take out ten million Profound beads. That should be fine right?” The Monstrous Monkey King curled its lips.

“This...” The emperor first looked at Jie Xingpeng and the old ancestors of the four powers, then spoke, “Senior, without hiding anything, they are truly unable to take out that amount. Even if they sold all that they have, they can’t.”

“It would be better to kill them than to want ten million Profound beads from each of them.” The emperor powerlessly shook his head.

“That’s fine. Since they can’t take it out, I’ll kill them.” Hearing those words, the Monstrous Monkey King’s blood-red eyes flashed with coldness, then a burst of boundless might emanated from his body.

The powerful pressure engulfed that land. It changed the stars and moon, clouds surged from the wind, and even if it was the Jiang Dynasty’s army that stood in the air, they could not fight against it. They were blown continuously back and completely collapsed.

“Senior stop!” Seeing that, the emperor’s face changed and he hurriedly shouted explosively. A burst of boundless pressure also emanated from his body and actually forcefully interweaved with the Monstrous Monkey King’s.

The pressures of the two were both very strong. It caused wind and clouds to surge, lightning to flash, and thunder to rumble in that area. The originally calm night sky instantly became a horrifying land with Heaven power overflowing everywhere.

Facing that pressure, many people were unable to fight against it and one after another, they vomited blood and fainted away. But luckily, that situation only lasted for an instant. However, in that mere instant, half of the people there were heavily injured. Some even died.

“Boy, you want to fight against me?” The Monstrous Monkey King’s blood eyes furiously glared as he angrily howled. The sky and earth trembled from his words and his powerful strength was undoubtedly clearly shown.

“I would never think of exchanging blows with you. I just implore some face, to give the Jie clan, Yuangang School, Free and Unrestrained Valley, Hidden White Sect, and Fire God School a chance to start new.”

“All of them will offer five million Profound beads to express their sincerity.” The emperor saluted in air and said from the bottom of his heart.

## Chapter 475: Young Hero Chu Feng

---

After the emperor spoke, the already ashen faces of the four big powers' old ancestors instantly became eggplant-coloured. Their dumbfounded appearances were simply as vivid as possible.

Five million Profound beads. Although it was half of ten million Profound beads and they could indeed take them out, it was the accumulation of almost a thousand years by their previous ancestors!

If they took that out, it would be equal to wasting almost a thousand years of their ancestors' hard work, and their four big powers that had been existing for almost a thousand years would become four empty mountains.

But since it was the emperor speaking, they didn't dare to have the slightest trace of going against his word. After all, rather than dying, why not scrape by and survive? Although their hearts were bleeding from taking out all their wealth, it was at least better than being exterminated.

And seeing the emperor having such sincerity, the Monstrous Monkey King, that knew the true amount of wealth the five powers possessed, put away its angry expression. It lightly smiled and said, "That's fine. Since even you have spoke, naturally, I have to give you this face."

"Yuangang School, Hidden White Sect, Free and Unrestrained Valley, Fire God School. All of you can just bring me five million

Profound beads. But the Jie clan must take out ten million Profound beads or else there will be no discussion.”

“What? Ten million Profound beads?! Why not kill me instead!”

After hearing those words, Jie Xingpeng had the urge to vomit blood. Although in terms of foundation power, his Jie clan could indeed take out ten million Profound beads, if he really took that out, his Jie clan would have no more foundation. There would be nothing remaining.

Without a large amount of wealth as foundation, how was his Jie clan’s later generation going to cultivate? How were they going to establish themselves? Without superior cultivation conditions over other powers, not to mention his Jie clan’s later generation fighting against the World Spirit Guild’s later generation, it was likely that in the future, they would not have the glory they had today, and would be reduced to an ordinary first-rate power.

“Jie Xingpeng. Do you want to protect these ten million Profound beads or protect your Jie clan?” The emperor fiercely glared at Jie Xingpeng.

“Milord, I want to protect the Jie clan.” Although he was a bit unwillingness in his heart, Jie Xingpeng could see how the situation was in front of his eyes.

The reason was very simply. Although he lost ten million Profound beads and it would affect his Jie clan’s future development, and might stay in a recession for several hundred

years, if his Jie clan was exterminated, then he would have nothing at all. Even his Jie clan's current wealth would be taken away. So, that choice was actually very simply to choose.

And with Jie Xingpeng's response, the Monstrous Monkey King raised another condition. It was that within ten days, it had to see thirty million Profound beads or else it was absolutely not going to leave that matter.

That put the Jie clan and the four powers in a horrible situation. Although they could take out thirty million Profound beads, they had to sell many treasures. They truly had to sell whatever they had in order to gather that amount. It required time.

In addition, they were located all over the place. So, for them to deliver that amount in front of the Monstrous Monkey King within ten days really made things too difficult for them.

In that situation, the emperor of the Jiang Dynasty stood out again and put out a good idea. It was that the burden of thirty million Profound beads would be carried by the Jiang Dynasty.

It also meant that the Jiang Dynasty would take out thirty million Profound beads to give to the Monstrous Monkey King first. But in the future, the Jie clan and the four powers had to return thirty thousand Profound beads to the Jiang Dynasty.

The Monstrous Monkey King was only concerned about the number of Profound beads, not the origin. As long as he got the correct amount, anything was fine. So, to the emperor's

suggestion, naturally, the Monstrous Monkey King agreed and had no objections.

So, the Monstrous Monkey King, Chu Feng, Zi Ling, as well as Zhang Tianyi and Gu Tianchen, were invited to the Jiang Dynasty as guests, and as they were there, also to take the thirty million Profound beads.

Although there were as many powerful people in the Jiang Dynasty as the clouds and it was a place that caused people to fear, with the Monstrous Monkey King, the powerful existence that disregarded any laws or rules, overseeing everything, Chu Feng and the others were not afraid as they knew they had someone to rely on. They went on the Jiang Dynasty's chariot with no worries at all, and went forth to the Jiang Dynasty, the huge, enormous power in the continent of the Nine Provinces.

After Chu Feng and the others left, the Jie clan, Yuangang School, Fire God School, Hidden White Sect, and Free and Unrestrained Valley, all of them who had to go bankrupt in order to avoid a calamity, started to lead their elite army back to their own powers.

They thought back to when their alliance of five powers attacked the World Spirit Guild. What level of glory it was! They wished they could let the people of the world know the magnificent actions they did.

But they never would have thought that because of Chu Feng's appearance, they would end up like this. Putting aside that they were defeated, they almost got annihilated. The four big powers



respectively lost their four heads, and the Jie clan even lost its old ancestor who trained in seclusion for a hundred years.

If that news was spread, their reputation would be completely lost and they would become the laughingstock in everyone's mouths. So, they were extremely low-profile and didn't want that news to be known.

But since there was someone sad, there was someone happy. As the five powers returned with low-profile and didn't want to let people know about them being defeated, the World Spirit Guild set out all Delivery Birds and started to unrestrainedly announce that news.

So, the news of the five powers being defeated by the World Spirit Guild, and the news about the extraordinary genius a hundred years ago, Jie Shi, as well as the heads of the four big powers dying very quickly became known in the continent of the Nine Provinces.

And in order to declare the power of the World Spirit Guild, they even unrestrainedly announced Chu Feng's and the Monstrous Monkey King's deeds.

They let everyone know that the Monstrous Monkey King was the mysterious expert that defeated Jie Shi and Gu Tianchen a hundred years ago, the true Monster King of the Thousand Monster Mountain. Also, he was Chu Feng's sworn elder brother.

Because of that complicated relationship, after people know

about everything, naturally, Chu Feng was said to be the one with the biggest achievements in the World Spirit Guild defeating the five powers.

Especially after the truth of the five powers listing Chu Feng as wanted was revealed, there was a 180 degree change that happened to the image of Chu Feng in people's hearts.

He was no longer the demon who thirsted for blood and killed without blinking. He became a young hero who was not afraid of the heavens or the earth, and dared to fight against evil powers. He had already become model character for teaching justice.

Thinking back at first, when any child was disobedient, the old ones would say, "If you keep on crying, Chu Feng will come and catch you!" Those children would be quite exaggerated as well and immediately cover their mouths from fright, not daring to cry anymore. It could be seen how terrifying Chu Feng's evil name was back then.

However, it was completely different now. If there was any child who was disobedient, the old ones would say, "Don't cry! Come, I'll tell you a story about young hero Chu Feng courageously battling evil powers."

And hearing them speak those words, the children would really stop crying immediately. They would sit down on the ground and wait to hear Chu Feng's story with their eyes roundly widened and unmoving. There was no need to mention how excited they were.

As for the people who already idolized Chu Feng, they got even more insane. There were even a large batch of young people who started pack up to head towards the Azure Province.

It was for no other reason but because someone spread rumours that said Chu Feng was preparing to rebuild the Azure Dragon School. So, after the people who idolized Chu Feng got hold of that news, naturally, they took the lead and wanted to enter Chu Feng's school.

Anyway, Chu Feng had already thoroughly changed from the negative character back then to a positive character. He had already left a deep stroke within the legends of the continent of the Nine Provinces.

# Chapter 476: Emperor Bloodline

---

The Jiang Dynasty was in the Han Province. Within the vast and flourishing power, other than prosperous scenes everywhere, there was even an ancient aura. After all, it was the longest existing power in the current continent of the Nine Provinces. It had been existing for several thousand years already.

Several days of time had already passed since Chu Feng, Zi Ling, Zhang Tianyi, the Monstrous Monkey King, Gu Tianchen, and the others came into the Jiang Dynasty.

Ever since coming in, the traces of the Monstrous Monkey King and Gu Tianchen disappeared. It was said that the emperor had things to discuss with the two of them.

At first, Chu Feng, Zi Ling, and Zhang Tianyi were still a bit worried. Worried whether anything bad happened to the Monstrous Monkey King. But the Jiang Dynasty didn't do anything to them three, and they were even treating them as important guests. Not only did was there good wine and good food during the entire day, they even gave them a certain amount of Heaven medicine to cultivate every day. That also caused Chu Feng and the others to lower their guards.

After all, if the Monstrous Monkey King were to meet with misfortune, with their strengths, they were simply like ants there. Many people in the Jiang Dynasty could kill the three of them.

But at present, not only were they fine, they even received such

good treatment. It meant that the monkey king was still well, and at least the Jiang Dynasty didn't plan to do anything bad to them.

“Big Brother Chu Feng, Lady Zi Ling, long time no see!”

On that day, Chu Feng and the others were chatting in a garden. Suddenly, an energetic voice rang out from the distant sky. Looking over towards the voice, they saw a handsome young man wearing a golden robe flying over from the sky. With a blink, he landed in front of Chu Feng and the others.

That person was none other than the Jiang Dynasty's prince, the one with the best talent within the current Jiang Dynasty according to Jiang Yini, Jiang Wushang.

“Brother Wushang, so it's you!” Seeing Jiang Wushang, Chu Feng was very happy as well.

Although he didn't interact with Jiang Wushang too much, because he saved Jiang Wushang's life back then in the Thousand Monster Mountain, he put that favour in his heart.

Only because of that, the Jiang Dynasty seemed to send out troops to catch Chu Feng on the surface, but in reality, after finding him, not only did Jiang Yini not apprehend him, she even thanked Chu Feng and gifted a large amount of Heaven medicine to him. Because of that, Jiang Wushang indirectly caused him to be able to raise his cultivation even quicker, which was equal to helping Chu Feng.

So, Chu Feng had quite a good image of Jiang Wushang. Currently, Jiang Wushang actually called him “Big Brother”, so naturally, he was willing to recognize that “Brother”.

After Jiang Wushang appeared, he called Chu Feng, Zi Ling, and Zhang Tianyi onto a tall tower in the clouds. On the tall tower, Jiang Wushang prepared a table of extremely sumptuous feast to welcome the three of them.

“Big Brother Chu Feng, Lady Zi Ling, Big Brother Tianyi, I am really sorry. I was doing some closed-door cultivation before so I wasn’t able to immediately welcome all of you. Please forgive me because of that.”

Jiang Wushang removed his former pride all at once. Not only was he polite to Chu Feng and Zi Ling, he was polite to even Zhang Tianyi. He called “Big Brother” here and there, and he called them in a very close way. He even poured wine for them and toasted, as if he himself wasn’t the noble prince of the Jiang Dynasty but truly the younger brother of Chu Feng and the others.

“Ahh, Brother Wushang, you’re really too polite.”

“However, within one short one year, Brother Wushang, you’ve made breakthroughs from the 9th level of the Profound realm into the 2nd level of the Heaven realm. This speed truly makes me sweat from embarrassment.” Seeing Jiang Wushang’s present cultivation of the 2nd level of the Heaven realm, Chu Feng helplessly smiled.

In the eyes of outsiders, he was a genius, but he was inferior to Zi Ling. Yet Jiang Wushang was clearly even more insane. Clearly, his cultivation was the same as Zi Ling's a year ago, but right now, he was even a level higher than Zi Ling. That caused Chu Feng to feel surprise. After all, Zi Ling was a legendary Divine Body!

“Hehe, honestly speaking Big Brother Chu Feng, the people of my Jiang Dynasty are all people who grasp an inherited bloodline. As long as there is sufficient resources, for us, making breakthroughs isn't any hard thing.”

“And I'll say this without modest, but my bloodline power can be said to be the most powerful in the current Jiang Dynasty. The old ancestor had personally spoken. My bloodline power has already infinitely neared an Emperor Bloodline.”

“If in the future, with coincidences, perhaps I make a breakthrough and gain the power of Emperor Bloodlines. At that time, my comprehension power and strength will far surpass me right now.” Jiang Wushang said with a face filled with pride. It could be seen that he liked and was proud of his special bloodline power.

“Emperor Bloodline? If you truly gain the power of an Emperor Bloodline in the future, when you make breakthroughs, you would also require more cultivation resources right?” Just at that time, Zi Ling asked with a face filled with curiosity.

“Of course. The Emperor Bloodline is a supreme inherited bloodline. At that time, even if my Jiang Dynasty pours all its resources into me, it won't be enough.”

“But that’s fine. If there is truly a day like that, then I can definitely break through the bindings of the Heaven realm and become a Martial Lord. At that time, I can completely rely on myself to gain cultivation resources.” Jiang Wushang patted his chest and said, seeming to yearn a lot for the arrival of that day.

“I never would have thought that your inherited bloodline would actually be this powerful.” Zhang Tianyi nodded his head with quite a bit of admiration, but as he spoke, he couldn’t help but look at Chu Feng and hiddenly sent a mental message,

“Junior Chu Feng, the special power you grasp wouldn’t also be an inherited bloodline right? If that’s true, then because of the enormous amount of resources you require and outstanding talent, would you have the Emperor Bloodline Jiang Wushang is talking about?”

At the same time, Zi Ling also cast her gaze towards Chu Feng. Although she already knew that there was special lighting in Chu Feng’s body, it was a bit different from the power of inherited bloodlines.

But Chu Feng’s cultivation method was indeed extremely similar to inherited bloodlines. So, she also felt that what Chu Feng grasped was very possibly the Emperor Bloodline Jiang Wushang dreamed to grasp.

Facing their gazes that begged for an explanation, Chu Feng was also unable answer them because he too didn’t know whether the



Divine Lighting he grasped was the so-called Emperor Bloodline. Thus, he could only helplessly shake his head.

“Brother Wushang, compared to Royal Bloodlines, do Emperor Bloodlines have special powers?” Seeing that, Zi Ling cast her gaze towards Jiang Wushang again. Her goal was very clear. She wanted to help Chu Feng unravel what his power was through Jiang Wushang.

“I’m also not clear on that. To be honest, within my Jiang Dynasty, there has never been a person with an Emperor Bloodline, nor has anyone ever seen a person with an Emperor Bloodline. From what I’ve heard, people with Emperor Bloodlines only exist within that legendary land.” Jiang Wushang smiled as he shook his head.

“Legendary land?” Hearing those words, a hint of shock flashed into Chu Feng’s and the others’ eyes because all of them knew where the legendary land was. It was definitely the heart of this world, the place where only true geniuses could enter. A land where the true experts of the world gathered.

“Brother Wushang, then is this Emperor Bloodline the strongest within inherited bloodlines?” Zi Ling continued asking.

“Lady Zi Ling, you seem to have great interest in inherited bloodlines eh?!” However, after Zi Ling spoke, Jiang Wushang’s eyes suddenly flickered and he became alert.

## Chapter 477: Four Seas Academy

---

“I do indeed feel very interested. After all, this inherited bloodline is a very special power. Normal people don’t have it, and as a person who cultivates, naturally, I am very curious.” Zi Ling blinked her big eyes lacking of any evil and replied calmly.

Seeing Zi Ling like that, Jiang Wushang put away his previous alertness, chuckled, and said, “The martial cultivation talent that people with Royal Bloodlines have already far surpass normal people, and can be counted as geniuses.”

“But Emperor Bloodlines are several times more terrifying than Royal Bloodlines. Those who have an Emperor Bloodline is a genius within geniuses. So, that’s why people with Emperor Bloodlines are existences in legends.”

“If there’s a bloodline even more powerful than Emperor Bloodlines, what talent would a person with it have? What power would they grasp? What kind of person would they be in order to grasp such a bloodline?”

“This...” Hearing Jiang Wushang speak those words like that, Chu Feng and the others sank into contemplation. Simultaneously, the three of them thought back at what happened in the Sword God Valley.

At that time, the power Chu Feng burst out was indeed very terrifying or else it wouldn’t be categorized as a natural disaster by the Jiang Dynasty. They didn’t even think that it was possible to

be caused by a person.

So, power like that was something they didn't understand currently. That was why they could not confirm what power Chu Feng grasped, and high-level bloodline power was one of the possibilities they guessed of.

Just as Chu Feng and the others were thinking deeply, Jiang Wushang suddenly spoke. He said with a face filled with admiration, "However, I heard my old ancestor say that there is indeed a bloodline above Emperor Bloodlines."

"Really?" At that instant, the expressions of Chu Feng, Zi Ling, and Zhang Tianyi all changed.

"My old ancestor did indeed say that, but even Emperor Bloodlines are legends. Wouldn't the bloodline above Emperor Bloodlines be the legend within legends? Whether that thing exists or not, who can prove it? Perhaps in the future, after arriving in that land, someone could give us that answer."

Jiang Wushang lightly smiled, then said to the three of them, "Big Brother Chu Feng, Big Brother Tianyi, Lady Zi Ling, I believe with your talents, you will not stay long in the continent of the Nine Provinces right?"

"How about, after some time, we go to the Four Seas Academy for cultivation?"

“Four Seas Academy?” After hearing the words “Four Seas Academy”, Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi had faces filled with question marks.

On the other hand, Zi Ling said with quite some understanding, “The Four Seas Academy is one of the strongest forces in the Eastern Sea Region.”

“This academy accepts everyone in the world. It doesn’t matter how old you are, it doesn’t matter where you’re from. It doesn’t even matter if you’re a Monstrous Beast or human. As long as you pass the examination, any can enter the academy.”

“And also because of this special disciple acceptance method, it’s called the Four Seas Academy.”

“However, although the Four Seas Academy’s restrictions are very small, the exam is very difficult. So, those who are able to enter the Four Seas Academy can all be said to be geniuses. Even the people from the Eastern Sea Region feel pride and proud to be a disciple of the Four Seas Academy, let alone people from other continents.”

“The cultivation method of this Four Seas Academy is very special as well. They would arrange special experiences for the disciples, provide special cultivation areas, and even large amounts of cultivation resources, but every disciple can only stay in the academy and cultivate for four years.”

“After four years, the Four Seas Academy hosts a graduation

ceremony. In the graduation ceremony, the disciples who should graduate participate in a special exam as a group, and according to the results of the exam, they get different level Academy Badges.”

“The people who get the badges are still counted as disciples of the Four Seas Academy even after leaving the academy. In the future, they can get different levels of assistance from the Four Seas Academy. Of course, if something were to happen to the Four Seas Academy, the disciples were also expected to return to help.”

“But generally speaking, the badge is an indication of status and position. In the future, it greatly assists the development of powers and individuals.” Zi Ling detailedly said.

And after hearing Zi Ling’s narration, Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi looked at each other with their four eyes. Clearly, the two of them felt very interested in the Four Seas Academy.

It was because in the continent of the Nine Provinces, they were peak geniuses, but they might not be so in other continents. They were even more unsure in the Eastern Sea Region.

Since the Four Seas Academy was a place of gathering for peak geniuses from countless continents, naturally, they wanted to check out what abilities geniuses from other continents had.

“That’s right. Lady Zi Ling is extremely correct. My elder sister Jiang Yini’s talent is actually not the best within the same generation.”

“However, because she sulkily left home because of some minor things, and because of some luck, she entered the Four Seas Academy, world-flipping change happened to her.”

“When my elder sister cultivated for four years in the Four Seas Academy and returned to the dynasty, in terms of cultivation and strength, she already far surpassed those in the same generation. That’s how she became the strongest person in my current Jiang Dynasty’s young generation.”

“Ever since then, my Jiang Dynasty have always sent out a batch of excellent people in the young generation every year to the Four Seas Academy to pursue excellence. In that sea region, peak people in the young generation from countless continents will gather, as well as many things that we haven’t seen before.”

“Anyway, in that place, not only will it help greatly in terms of cultivation, there will also be clear effects on sharpening one’s life skills.”

“So, I want to invite the three of you to join the Four Seas Academy with me. After all, that place is different from the continent of the Nine Provinces. I’ll say some unpleasant words: the backgrounds of many disciples there are far above mine.”

“In that place, there is no one to rely on and only I in my clan can go there for an exam. However, if the four of us are together, even if we reach the Four Seas Academy where powerful people gather, we can more or less look after one another.”

“Also, I believe that with our potential, we will definitely be like fishes in water at that place. There will be a day when we become the dragon within men and step onto that legendary land.”

At that very instant, Jiang Wushang seemed very excited. His young face clearly showed infinite yearning. So the place he looked forward to was the same as Chu Feng, Zi Ling, and Zhang Tianyi's. It wasn't the continent of the Nine Provinces, nor the Eastern Sea Region, but the legendary land.

“Sure. Since sooner or later, I, Zhang Tianyi, will head towards the Eastern Sea Region, rather than later, why not sooner? I'll go together with you, Brother Wushang, and join the Four Seas Academy.” Zhang Tianyi immediately agreed, and similarly, he was filled with yearning.

At that instant, Chu Feng cast his gaze towards Zi Ling. Only then did he discover that Zi Ling was also looking at himself. The two of them, from their special gazes, saw each other's answer. So, they nodded and said, “Okay, then it's decided.”

# Chapter 478: The Monkey King's Present

---

After Chu Feng, Zi Ling, Zhang Tianyi, and Jiang Wushang decided on a date to go to the Four Seas Academy together, they talked about everything, and the more they chatted, the more engaged they got.

Of the following few days, Jiang Wushang came to find Chu Feng and the others every single day and brought them around for sightseeing and to have fun. They exchanged their knowledge in martial cultivation and even brought Chu Feng and the others to visit the Jiang Dynasty's Martial Skill Building, letting them choose martial skills and Mysterious Techniques they liked.

But it was useless as Chu Feng, Zi Ling, and Zhang Tianyi all grasped powerful martial skills and Mysterious Techniques already. So, they only casually looked and no one truly chose any to cultivate. But no matter what, they still remembered that favour in their hearts.

And after staying in the Jiang Dynasty for one full month, the Monstrous Monkey King and Gu Tianchen finally appeared. Chu Feng also finally knew why they disappeared for so long and went to chat about what.

At that moment, the Monstrous Monkey King and Chu Feng were alone in a room. It then told everything they did in these days to Chu Feng.

“So the Jiang Dynasty wants to invite you and Senior Gu



Tianchen to go together to open the Azure Province's Emperor Tomb?" Chu Feng was a bit shocked, yet it was within expectations.

"You indeed know about the Emperor Tomb. The Secret Skills you grasp are also related to the Emperor Tomb right?" The Monstrous Monkey King looked at Chu Feng while chuckling, seeming to already know where Chu Feng's Secret Skill came from.

"To be honest, my Secret Skills are indeed from the Emperor Tomb, and from what I know, there are four entrances to the Emperor Tomb. Right now, there is still one Secret Skill that hasn't appeared yet." Chu Feng didn't hide anything and spoke the truth.

"There is indeed one Secret Skill that hasn't appeared yet, and that Secret Skill should be hidden within the Vermilion Bird Mountain Range." The Monstrous Monkey King said.

"Monkey Bro, how did you know everything already?" Chu Feng was a bit amazed. He didn't expect the Monstrous Monkey King to have so much information.

"Heh, boy, if even you know, why not think about it a bit more thoroughly? Is it possible that the Jiang Dynasty, the power that is named as the overlord of the Nine Provinces for several thousand years, won't know about Emperor Tombs? It is possible that they won't know more secrets about the Emperor Tomb than you?" The Monstrous Monkey King smilingly said.

“But if the Jiang Dynasty already knew about the Emperor Tomb, why haven’t they made their move yet and instead, let me gained benefits from the Emperor Tomb?” Chu Feng asked with a face filled with puzzledness.

“Hehe, naturally, the Jiang Dynasty has already went to the Emperor Tomb, but there just wasn’t the slightest bit of harvest, because these things are about chance. Even though they are able to break open the mechanisms of the Emperor Tomb, they may not gain the approval of the Secret Skill.”

“Besides, this Emperor Tomb cannot be underestimated. With the Jiang Dynasty’s strength, they are still unable to completely open the Emperor Tomb. Even if they use their full strength, they can only get a bit of the sweet end, and they still have to pay a price for that.”

“So, they also have worries, and that’s why they have always not cared about the Emperor Tomb. They are waiting. Waiting for a Martial Lord to appear within their clan before making their move on the Emperor Tomb. But they could do nothing as after waiting for so many years, there has still not been anyone who is able to enter the Martial Lord realm.”

“Right now, although they haven’t prepared well yet, a chance has come from waiting. You are that chance.” The Monstrous Monkey King said.

“Me?” Chu Feng’s pupils abruptly shrunk, feeling more and more shocked.

“That’s right. You have two Secret Skills on you, which means that you have went to at least two Emperor Tomb entrances. With your previously petty cultivation, you were able to enter the Emperor Tomb two times and return with everything intact. That doesn’t really make sense.”

“So, you’re the person who is fated for this Emperor Tomb. Borrowing you, perhaps they can gain some benefits in the Emperor Tomb.”

“Actually, back then, when the Jiang Dynasty’s emperor hurriedly went to the World Spirit Guild and wanted to dissolve the war, one reason was because he wanted to protect you and bring you back to the Jiang Dynasty.” The Monstrous Monkey King said.

“It’s actually to save me?” Chu Feng lightly frowned. He didn’t expect that the Jiang Dynasty would already have their eyes on himself. It was unknown whether it was a fortune or a disaster.

“Anyway, the Jiang Dynasty has already prepared its strongest force to open the Emperor Tomb, and the opening entrance is the Vermilion Bird Mountain Range’s entrance.”

“Gu Tianchen and I will also be participating in this Emperor Tomb opening, and you are also one of the characters who cannot be left out.” The Monstrous Monkey King said.

“Since the Emperor Tomb is so terrifying and even the Jiang

Dynasty doesn't dare to be rash, what can I do?" Chu Feng asked.

"You don't need to do anything. Just follow us. The people from the Jiang Dynasty will do their best to protect you."

"Moreover, you've also entered the Emperor Tomb so you should know that there are unlimited benefits inside. Accordingly, with your strength, you aren't qualified to have a share of the Emperor Tomb."

"However, only because your luck is good, and no matter what methods you used, you did indeed gain the approval of two Secret Skills in the Emperor Tomb, so you have obtained this chance."

"All in all, this is a good thing. Wait until the Jiang Dynasty prepares everything, then just follow us and go in together. If it truly will not work, I can escape with you. With me, a Purple-cloak World Spiritist, I guarantee that nothing will happen to you."

The Monstrous Monkey King very casually said, but within its blood-red eyes, there was some desire that surged. It could be seen that the Emperor Tomb's attraction was indeed irresistible by anyone.

Seeing that, Chu Feng could only nod his head. In a time like this, it was indeed not good for him to refuse. Besides, he had always wanted to gain some benefits in the Emperor Tomb, and since the Jiang Dynasty was going to open it with its full power, it had to be said that it was a good chance. So, naturally, Chu Feng was willing to follow them into the Emperor Tomb.

“That’s right. Chu Feng, you keep this.” Suddenly, the Monstrous Monkey King threw a Cosmos Sack to Chu Feng.

“This is?!” Chu Feng curiously examined it. The examination didn’t seem to be that important, but his expression changed greatly and his face was filled with shock.

“Monkey Bro, this is too precious. I can’t take it...” Inside the Cosmos Sack, there was actually thirty thousand high-quality Heaven medicine. That price was equivalent to thirty million Profound beads! The Monstrous Monkey King had actually gave all the wealth it demanded from the five powers to Chu Feng.

“Right now, I can no longer rely on cultivation resources to make breakthroughs or else in the future, my achievements will be restricted, making me unable to step into the Martial Lord realm in my life. If that happens, I would be extremely bitter. No matter how it’s said, I have gotten pointers from that senior expert. If I am unable to step into the Martial Lord realm, I would let him down too much.”

“Besides, I wanted these cultivation resources for you. Just take them. It’s also time for your Azure Dragon School to be rebuilt. These Heaven medicine will help you when rebuilding the Azure Dragon School.” The Monstrous Monkey King unconcernedly smiled and said.

“Monkey Bro, I...” Seeing the Monstrous Monkey King who was like that, there were unspeakable feelings in Chu Feng’s heart.

Thinking back at first when he didn't trust it and even specially forced it to consume a poisonous pill, then right now, seeing everything it was doing for himself. Chu Feng really felt endlessly ashamed.

## Chapter 479: The Guesses Of The Jiang Dynasty's Old Ancestor

---

At that instant, Chu Feng truly want to remove the poison pill in the Monstrous Monkey King's body, but he could do nothing as Eggy's poisonous pill was something she brought along with her from the Asura Spirit World.

Only the Asura Spirit World had the antidote, but Eggy was restricted by a special seal so she could not return to the Asura Spirit World. Thus, there was no way to get the antidote.

And as long as he thought about how good the Monstrous Monkey King was treating him right now, and recalled that he actually gave the Monstrous Monkey King a poisonous pill that had no antidote, the shame in Chu Feng's heart became even intenser.

“Ahh boy, don't be so weak. Do you think that I call you ‘brother’ as a joke? I truly took a liking to you, so that's why I recognize you as a brother.”

“It was normal for you to not believe me at first and to tell me to consume the poisonous pill. After all, I was the first to put you in danger, and despite that being only my test for you, in reality, it did indeed put you in danger and you almost lost your life.”

“Anyway, you put me in peril, I put you in peril. It's even, so from now on, we are good brothers. No need to weigh the things that happened before.”

“Let’s go. Opening the Emperor Tomb isn’t a small matter. The Jiang Dynasty still has many things to prepare and they still need to spend quite a bit of time.”

“Take this time and let us go to your Azure Dragon School. First save your two wives, then we’ll talk about the rest.” The Monstrous Monkey King saw Chu Feng’s heart of shame. So, its smile was very unconcerned, wanting to reduce his shame with that.

As it spoke, it opened the room door and went out first to call Zi Ling and Zhang Tianyi to make preparations to leave this place to go forward to the Azure Province.

Seeing the Monstrous Monkey King act like that, Chu Feng’s heart was extremely warm. He never would have thought that with chances and accidents, he would get to know such a good big brother. Even though that big brother wasn’t human, Chu Feng still liked it from the bottom of his heart.

After knowing that Chu Feng and the others were going to leave, the emperor of the Jiang Dynasty even specially set up a banquet at the most holy place in the Jiang Dynasty, on the Moon Watching Tower, to entertain them.

During the banquet, Chu Feng and the others were very happy. But no matter if it was Chu Feng or the Monstrous Monkey King, the two of them didn’t notice that within a certain ocean of clouds outside of the Moon Watching Tower, there was an invisible tall



tower, and in there stood an old man wearing a golden-cloak as well as having white and grey hair.

That old man was very powerful. His aura was thick, and was actually a lot stronger than the Monstrous Monkey King's. Also, the reason why the tall tower in the clouds wasn't detected by anyone was because there was a purple-coloured Spirit Formation covering it, and the purple-coloured Spirit Formation was coming from the old man's hands.

The old man's aged pair of eyes were full of life, and at that instant, he was carefully looking towards the top of the Moon Watching Tower, at the young man chatting and laughing with Jiang Wushang, Chu Feng.

"Jiang Hengyuan pays his respects." Suddenly, the Delivery Formation on the tall tower slightly undulated, then a body appeared on top of the tower. That person was none other than the Jiang Dynasty peak expert who watched over the Azure Province for many years, Jiang Hengyuan.

"Oh Hengyuan, seven years passed in a blink. You're finally willing to come back to see an old man like me." The old ancestor of the Jiang Dynasty smilingly looked at Jiang Hengyuan, but within his eyes, there was bit of pain.

"Ancestor. Back then, I accepted your orders and went forth to the Azure Province to search for the Divine Body. But it was useless as countless babies were carried back, yet none of them was a Divine Body. I felt shame in my heart, so before finding the Divine Body, naturally, I didn't dare to return to the imperial city." Jiang

Hengyuan's face was filled with shame as he replied.

“Then why have you returned today?!” The old ancestor of the Jiang Dynasty asked.

“I heard that you were preparing to open the Emperor Tomb, and I deeply knew that Emperor Tombs could not be underestimated. As a part of the dynasty, at a time like this, of course I have to come back to be a part of the dynasty's force.” Jiang Hengyuan replied.

“Haha, oh Hengyuan, I have indeed not been mistaken. Rise.” The old ancestor laughed, then went up and personally propped up Jiang Hengyuan who was half-kneeling on the ground. Only then did he ask, “You have been in the Azure Province for seven full years. Have you gotten any results?”

“I have been useless. After watching over the Azure Province for seven full years, I don't have any results to show. Ancestor, please grant a punishment.” Jiang Hengyuan was endlessly ashamed, and as he spoke, he was going to kneel again.

But this time, before he knelt, he was stopped by the Jiang clan's old ancestor. He said, “Oh Hengyuan, do not blame yourself. This matter cannot be blamed on you. The one who's wrong is me!”

“Ancestor, why so?” After hearing the words of the Jiang clan's old ancestor, Jiang Hengyuan's face was filled with confusion.

“Hengyuan, back then, the Nine-coloured Divine Lightning

appeared above the Nine Heavens' River of Stars. With my careful observation, it was the same as the ancient records. It was definitely an abnormality that only appears when an extraordinary expert descends into the world."

"However, so many years has passed, yet the Divine Body has not been found. So, I felt that something must have went wrong. I then looked through all the ancient books in the dynasty, and finally, discovered a possibility." The Jiang clan's old ancestor said.

"What possibility?" Jiang Hengyuan closely asked.

"The abnormality definitely represented the descent of an extraordinary expert, but it wasn't a Divine Body. It was a power even stronger than Divine Bodies." The Jiang clan's old ancestor said.

"What? Power even stronger than Divine Bodies?" Hearing those words, Jiang Hengyuan was ceaselessly shocked.

"The ancient books didn't record what the specifics were, but I believe that the person who triggered that abnormality is in my Jiang Dynasty right now." As he spoke, the old ancestor of the Jiang clan suddenly turned around, walked to the edge of the tall tower, and cast his gaze downwards at Chu Feng who was currently eating.

"That's... Chu Feng?!" Following the gaze of the Jiang clan's old ancestor, Jiang Hengyuan's already shocked expression greatly

changed instantly, as if he didn't dare to believe that fact. Quickly after, he said to the old ancestor, "Ancestor, I know this Chu Feng, and indeed, his talent is unordinary. However, he is already seventeen years old right now. It doesn't match the age of that extraordinary expert."

"Oh Hengyuan, it is exactly thinking like this that held you down, causing you to stay in the Azure Province for seven full years, but not having the slightest results to show."

"When the abnormality happens, it represents the descent of an extraordinary, powerful person, but it doesn't mean that the powerful person must be a newborn baby."

"According to the ancient records, the stronger the power, the stranger it is. Some great and powerful character may be ordinary when young, but when their power is awakened, the abnormality will trigger, and at the same time, they would gain power that can destroy the sky and the earth."

"Although Chu Feng, Zi Ling, and Zhang Tianyi don't admit they went to the Sword God Valley, from what I know, before the natural disaster appeared in the Sword God Valley, the three of them did indeed ride a chariot toward the Sword God Valley."

"And there is only one reason why they denied going there. It's that the terrifying natural disaster was related to the three of them. To be more precise, it should be related to Chu Feng." The Jiang clan's old ancestor said.

“Ancestor, is this true? The natural disaster that appeared in the Sword God Valley was caused by Chu Feng? A mortal can truly have such terrifying power?!”

Hearing those words, Jiang Hengyuan was immediately dumbstruck. His expression became extremely vivid because after knowing about the Sword God Valley, he did go there to investigate. After seeing the destroyed land, he firmly decided that it was definitely a natural disaster, impossible for it to be done by a person.

“Oh Hengyuan, this world is big, and there are all sorts of strange things. Right now, we are only looking at the sky while sitting on the bottom of a well. Many things that we feel are impossible are actually happening in a certain part of this world.”

“According to ancient records, on that holy land, a small-scaled lake would have an area bigger than our entire continent of the Nine Provinces; a single vast forest would be even vaster than countless continents of the Nine Provinces.”

“The ones surviving there are horrifying huge beasts even taller than mountains, huge birds with bodies having several miles of circumference. Even the most ordinary insect can possibly be as thick as water tanks and over ten meters long.”

“So, which one of the humans living in that place don’t have heavenly abilities? Or else, how will they live in a land like that?” There was a light smile on the face of the Jiang clan’s old ancestor. The gaze he looked at Chu Feng with became more and more bright.

It was because he felt that the power Chu Feng grasped very possibly belonged to the people of that land, as only they should possess it.

# Chapter 480: The Horrifying Ice And Fire Pearls

---

After the Jiang Dynasty's banquet, Chu Feng and the others hurried towards the Azure Dragon School.

But before leaving, the Monstrous Monkey King entrusted the Jiang Dynasty with two things. The first thing was that Chu Feng needed a large amount of manpower and resources in order to rebuild the Azure Dragon School.

The second thing was to use its name to find the five Monster Kings of the Thousand Monster Mountain by declaring it to the world, and telling the five Monster Kings to lead all the Monstrous Beasts in the Thousand Monster Mountain to hurry towards the Azure Dragon Mountain Range to join up with him.

Naturally, the Jiang Dynasty unhesitantly agreed to the two requests from the Monstrous Monkey King.

After a period of hastening, Chu Feng and the others finally returned to the Azure Dragon Mountain Range. But in order to prevent the Azure Dragon Founder from being displeased, Chu Feng didn't tell the Monstrous Monkey King about the Azure Dragon Founder still surviving the world.

So, Chu Feng first entered the Thousand Bone Graveyard and told the Azure Dragon Founder that he asked for a Purple-cloak World Spiritist, and that it could save Su Rou and Su Mei. He also asked whether the Azure Dragon Founder wanted the Purple-cloak

World Spiritist to help him recast his physical body or not.

“Oh Chu Feng, recasting a physical body is not a small matter. I don’t want to trouble outsiders.”

“Besides, I’ve waited for a thousand years, a few more won’t make much of a difference. So, I’ll still wait until you become a Purple-cloak World Spiritist before recasting my physical body for me.”

“As for the news of me still being in this world, unless there is no other choice, do not tell anyone.”

“Right now, I will relay a formation and take my physical body and the treasure pearl deeper into this Emperor Tomb.”

“However, after taking away the treasure pearl, the ice and fire pearls in Su Rou’s and Su Mei’s bodies will not be stable.”

“So, you must immediately call the Purple-cloak World Spiritist in. I’m sure with his methods, he should be able to protect Su Rou’s and Su Mei’s lives.”

Indeed, as he predicted, the Azure Dragon Founder refused the assistance of the Monstrous Monkey King, as he hoped that they wouldn’t know about his survival.

“I shall obey your order.” Chu Feng respectfully responded, then quickly after, helped the Azure Dragon Founder undo the current



formation. After taking out his physical body and the mystical pearl, he relaid a formation to seal Su Rou and Su Mei.

But without the power of the mystical pearl, it was very difficult to suppress the ice and fire pearls in Su Rou's and Su Mei's bodies purely with the power of the formation. In only an instant, the Sealing Formation was taken over by blue-coloured frost and scorching flames. They endlessly made howls like tigers and leopards, started to insanely charge towards the formation, and wanted to break out.

In a situation like that, Chu Feng had no choice but to quickly ask the Monstrous Monkey King to enter, to let the Purple-cloak World Spiritist control the situation.

The Azure Dragon Founder's speed was also very quick. Before the Monstrous Monkey King came down, he had already moved his own physical body and the mystical pearl deep into the Thousand Bone Graveyard. Only with that did he prevent the Monstrous Monkey King from discovering his physical body and the mystical pearl.

“These two pearls are very powerful. Chu Feng, where did these pearls come from” After the Monstrous Monkey King entered the Thousand Bone Graveyard and saw the power of the ice and fire, it was endlessly shocked.

“I found them deep in the Thousand Bone Graveyard. Monkey Bro, how is it? Can you save Su Rou and Su Mei?” Seeing the Monstrous Monkey King's shocked expression, Chu Feng lightly furrowed his brows, being a bit worried.

“I’m not sure. These two pearls are too powerful, much more powerful than Strange Armaments. And, they are living objects. Right now, they have already merged with your two wives’ bodies, so it’s impossible to want to take them out. I can only use special Sealing Formations to temporarily seal them. As for whether it will succeed or not, that’ll depend on your two wives’ physical state and willpower.”

“If it succeeds, then the two pearls’ power can be temporarily suppressed. If it fails, then the two pearls will thoroughly take over their physical bodies and be revived.”

“At that time, not only will they die, we will be dragged down with them as well. Even the entire continent of the Nine Provinces, possibly even the continents outside of this continent will enter danger.”

“It’s because these pearls are too powerful. I feel like their true power have been sealed. They are filled with evilness and their resentments are extremely deep. If they were to be unsealed, the living will definitely enter hell. That will be very terrifying. I simply don’t even dare to imagine it.”

“However, if I lay another Sealing Formation and seal your two wives along with the pearls, it can stop their revival. However, the price is that your two wives will also die.”

“Chu Feng, make a choice. To risk it, or to not risk it. Just say it, and I’ll do it.” The Monstrous Monkey King said with a face filled

with solemnness. It was the first time Chu Feng saw the Monstrous Monkey King show such an expression.

“Chu Feng, I’m begging you! Save my daughters, don’t let them die!”

“Chu Feng, I’m also begging you! Save my two sisters! They love you so deeply, so how can you bear letting them die?” Hearing those words, Su Rou and Su Mei’s father and elder brother had actually knelt onto the ground with a poof and started to beg.

“Chu Feng, this is not a small matter. I urge you to value the big picture.”

“Yeah, Chu Feng. This wager is too big. Do not make it! Because, if it is lost, not only us, even the entire continent will be affected!”

But after knowing how horrifying the two pearls were, there were also people who spoke to urge Chu Feng. Their intentions were to get Chu Feng to directly seal the two pearls, and simultaneously, sacrificing Su Rou’s and Su Mei’s lives.

“Chu Feng, as a man, don’t pay attention to the small matters in life. For all things, the big picture must be valued.” And seeing the more and more surging frost and flames in the Sealing Formation, there were even more people who were scared. They started to urge him otherwise, because if the sealing failed, obviously, they were going to be the first ones to be sacrificed.

“God damn, are you even people? Junior Chu Feng views you as close ones to him, but now you want him to watch the ones he love die?” Just at that time, Zhang Tianyi was enraged as he pointed at the crowd and furiously howled.

“The words cannot be spoken like that. Su Rou and Su Mei are close people to him, but we aren’t?” Some members of the Chu family retorted.

“Chu Cheng, Chu Zhen, Chu Mingsheng, all of you shut up.” Chu Guyu fiercely glared at the Chu family members, then said to Chu Feng, “Brother. Save Su Rou and Su Mei. They are in this state because of you, so you must save them.”

“Chu Feng, you have to save Su Rou and Su Mei. At worst, we’ll just die with them. Our lives were saved by you after all.” Chu Yue also spoke to advise.

“Chu Guyu, Chu Yue, the two of you cannot decide if we live or die, and even more so, you cannot choose the fate of the billions of lives on this continent.”

“Brother Chu Feng, you must think clearly. That senior has already said that if the two pearls are revived, the entire continent of the Nine Provinces, even beyond, will meet with disaster. At that time, you will become a person whose crimes are forever remembered.” Even more people started to urge Chu Feng to give Su Rou and Su Mei up.

“All of you, shut up! Does Chu Feng need your interruptions

when deciding?”

“I’ll kill whoever speaks more right now.” Just at that time, Zi Ling became furious. Her purple pupils flashed as she pointed at the crowd and fiercely yelled. At the same time, her purple-coloured aura also pounced out like a fierce beast.

When that aura was burst out, the people on scene, other than Chu Feng, Zhang Tianyi, and the Monstrous Monkey King, were all pushed continuously back from the charge. There were even some people who got heavily injured.

And at that instant, everyone on scene shut their mouths because they could feel how terrifying Zi Ling was at that moment. Her killing intent was unfelt by them before, so they knew if they dared to speak anymore, Zi Ling would definitely, unhesitantly, kill them.

Therefore, everyone chose to remain silent. No one dared to speak anymore as they cast their gazes towards Chu Feng, awaiting his decision.

## Chapter 481: Chu Feng's Decision

---

At that very instant, Chu Feng closed his eyes and shot his mind towards his own Spiritual World.

He stood within the World Spirit Space, faced Eggy, and asked, “Eggy, are these ice and fire pearls truly as powerful as how Monkey Bro said they are?”

“I am not a World Spiritist, so I don't have Spirit power. I have no way of checking how powerful the hidden power of the pearls are, but I having this feeling that these two pearls aren't simple.”

“That little monkey monster is a Purple-cloak World Spiritist. His Spirit power is already not weak, and since he has said that, I'm sure that those two pearls shouldn't be simple things. After all, the master of this Emperor Tomb is a not simple character already, so how can the things he leave behind be weak?” Eggy said.

“I understand.” As Chu Feng spoke and with a thought, he cast his mind back to his body. He opened his eyes and spoke, “Everyone here, please stay far away from this place and go outside first.”

“Because, no matter what, I, Chu Feng, must save Chu Feng and Su Mei. Even if there is only a single strand of hope, even if the price of failure means a calamity for the entire continent, I must save them.”

“This...”

Hearing Chu Feng's words, everyone on scene unnervingly looked at one another while being at a loss. Especially the people before who urged Chu Feng to give Su Rou and Su Mei up. Their expressions were very complicated, but ultimately, not a single person chose to leave. From the beginning to the end, they stood there and didn't even move half a step.

"Brother Chu Feng, I, Chu Wei, do indeed fear death, but I respect your decision. I also see you as a brother, so no matter if it will fail or not, I will be by your side and accompany you through life or death." Chu Wei said.

"That's right. Chu Wei is correct. Chu Feng, don't worry and go ahead. No matter what the result is, we will support you."

"Yeah! Junior Chu Feng, the reason why we can live up to today is all because we relied on you. At a time like this, how can we abandon you?"

"Junior Chu Feng, my strength is useless, so I am unable to be of any help for you. However, I will use my heart to support you. I won't leave this place."

But what surprised Chu Feng was when he truly made the decision, no matter if it was the people who urged him to save Su Rou and Su Mei, or the people who urged him to give them up, at that instant, they were actually all supporting his decision.

It had to be said that when facing the crowd's support which

disregarded whether they died or lived, Chu Feng's heart was very warm because it at least meant he didn't look at them as family for nothing and that what he did for them wasn't for nothing.

Even though some of them were cowardly, even though some of them had selfish hearts, they were people worthy of his trust, and were people who would stand out for him in the crucial moments.

boom

But just at that time, a huge explosion suddenly resonated out. The frost and flames within the Spirit Formation actually broke through the Spirit Formation and surged out. The blue-coloured forest and red-coloured flames interweaved, formed a wave of cold and hot air, and engulfed everything

“All of you, quickly leave! The farther you are, the better!”

Seeing that, the Monstrous Monkey King explosively shouted, and at the same time, his hands were continuously changing as he struck out strange hand seals. Coincident with that, vast purple-coloured Spirit Formation, also like a tide, surged out from its body and had actually sealed the frost and flames.

“Monkey Bro, I'll stay behind to help you.” Chu Feng said.

“I'll stay behind as well.” Zi Ling also said.

“No. With the Spirit Formation power that you two grasp, you



will be of no help. Staying behind will only add to the trouble. Quickly, leave. Everyone out! Or else, I will be unable to use my full strength and be controlled by these two pearls.” But at that instant, the Monstrous Monkey King’s face was actually filled with sweat. Within his blood-red eyes, a hint of fear actually appeared.

“This...” At that instant, everyone was taken aback. They didn’t know if they should leave or not, so almost everyone cast their gaze towards Chu Feng.

“Monkey Bro, can you protect their lives?” Chu Feng tightly knitted his brows. He had never seen the Monstrous Monkey King in that state. His image of the Monstrous Monkey King was an existence that didn’t fear the heavens nor the earth!

But he could understand the Monstrous Monkey King’s current state because he already felt how terrifying the power of the two pearls were. It was indeed as it said. The two pearls’ true power was sealed.

And they weren’t completely unsealed. If they were completely unsealed, not to mention the Monstrous Monkey King, it was likely that in the continent of the Nine Provinces, no one could do anything about the two pearls.

So, Chu Feng was very worried. He was worried that even with the Monstrous Monkey King’s methods, it would not be able to save the current Su Rou and Su Mei.

“Damn boy, don’t worry. Even if I, your Monkey Bro, put my life

on the line, I will do my best to protect your two wives. Quickly leave. You will only distract me by staying here and hold back my methods.” The Monstrous Monkey King turned its head and a reliable smile was formed from its mouth corners raising

“Then I’m counting on you.”

“We will all leave this place and wait outside of the Azure Dragon Mountain Range.” In response, Chu Feng didn’t hesitate as well. He turned around, shouted, then went first and ran towards the exit of the Thousand Bone Graveyard.

At the same time, the others also quickly followed him one after the other. They hurriedly escape to the outside because they were all able to feel the aura of the ice and fire pearls. The horrifying aura did indeed make them tremble from fear.

boom

wuaa

Just as Chu Feng and the others arrived at the entrance, from the deep part of the Thousand Monster Mountain abruptly came an explosion. At the same time, deafening cries also started to sound.

The noises were very terrifying. They seemed like the howl of beasts, yet like the cry of ghosts. All in all, they weren’t noises made by humans. The most important thing was that despite coming from a very far place, people could feel the strange aura of

cold and hot coexisting.

That aura almost permeated throughout the Thousand Bone Graveyard, causing the incomparable hard cave walls of the Thousand Bone Graveyard to start to sway, as if they were afraid, and to endlessly tremble.

“Chu Feng, what should we do? The two pearls wouldn’t have successfully escaped right?” At that instant, many people panicked. They didn’t know what move was the right one, so they all cast their gazes towards Chu Feng.

“Don’t worry, Monkey Bro should still be able to take care of it. Let’s go.” Chu Feng’s eyes surged with radiance, then after tightly starting deep at the Thousand Bone Graveyard for a good while, he still leaped, stepped into the exit, and led the crowd away from the Thousand Bone Graveyard.

Because, with his sharp Spirit power, Chu Feng was able to feel that the Monstrous Monkey King was still completely fine at present. Although the power of the ice and fire pearls was very strong, it was still within the Monstrous Monkey King’s grasp.

After Chu Feng and the others left the Thousand Bone Graveyard, they didn’t head far for escaping. With special methods, all of them rushed up to the clouds and closely watched the changes to the Thousand Bone Graveyard.

And shortly after Chu Feng and the others rushed up into the sky, from the Thousand Bone Graveyard in the Azure Dragon

Mountain Range, endless rumbling rang out.

The noises got louder and louder. They were like bells at first, then like thunder later on. At the end, even the boundless big mountains started to sway. Countless deep cracks spread on the mountains, causing several peaks to split and innumerable boulders to roll down.

Rolling dense smoke charged straight into the sky. As they looked, Chu Feng, Zi Ling, and Zhang Tianyi all broke out in cold sweat, let alone the people from the Azure Dragon School and the Chu family members.

Cold sweat kept on forming from fright and their bodies were trembling. Some people even lost the ability to stand because at the same time the explosions rang out, three waves of boundless, horrifying aura also came spreading over, enveloping that place.

However, that was still the result of Chu Feng and Zi Ling combining powers to lay a Spirit Formation. If that Spirit Formation wasn't there, just with those three auras, they could have forcibly crushed many people there to death.

## Chapter 482: The Outcome Is Set

---

“What level of power is this!” Seeing the vast mountains endlessly crumbling and collapsing, becoming rolling dense smoke, and even the outside of the mountain range was affected by the boundless aura, Chu Feng also felt shocked.

He hiddenly sighed in his heart. Luckily, the area beyond the Azure Dragon Mountain Range was already destroyed by the Sword God Valley, causing there to be no one living within the borders of the Azure Dragon Mountain Range. Or else, there would definitely be countless people dying today again.

“This is not even close when compared to your actions back then in the Sword God Valley.” But just at that time, a voice suddenly entered Chu Feng’s ears. Turning his eyes over, he saw Zhang Tianyi smilingly looking at himself.

At that instant, Chu Feng could only helplessly smile because on that day, when the power of the Divine Lightning was shown, Chu Feng already lost his awareness so even he himself didn’t know how terrifying the destruction on that day was.

In reality, up until now, he hadn’t went back to the Sword God Valley. He hadn’t seen the destruction he did himself, and had only heard them from Zi Ling’s, Zhang Tianyi’s, and Eggy’s mouths.

boom Suddenly, another deafening explosion resounded, and the entire Azure Dragon Mountain Range trembled. After the dense smoke dispersed, Chu Feng and the others astonishedly discovered

in the location of the Thousand Bone Graveyard, it had already collapsed. That area had already become a mini-valley.

At that instant, they tightly frowned. Although the Thousand Bone Graveyard was located underground, so no matter how much deeper the valley went, it wouldn't cause the Thousand Bone Graveyard to appear, the changes happening to the current Azure Dragon Mountain meant that the Monstrous Monkey King was undergoing a frightening huge battle against the two pearls, and the might of that huge battle was already so strong that it engulfed the entire Azure Dragon Mountain Range, and even the places beyond the Azure Dragon Mountain Range was affected.

The great battle lasted for one day and one night. Finally, at noon on the second day, it started to gradually calm down, and when the Azure Dragon Mountain Range that had trembled for one full day and one full night returned to its former tranquility, the mountain range no longer seemed similar to before.

Before, it had already experienced the ruin of the Sword God Valley, and now, it bore the aftermath of the battle between the Monstrous Monkey King and the ice and fire pearls. Although the current Azure Dragon Mountain Range was still a vast mountain range, it no longer had its previous steep atmosphere.

The number of strange peaks were few within few. Instead, many valleys appeared. Although that Azure Dragon Mountain Range seemed a bit weak, in reality, it was more suitable for humans to live. More suitable for school rebuilding because there were even more mountaintops that could be opened up for use.

But Chu Feng and the others did not have the mind to admire a bald mountain peak. They were worried about the safety of the Monstrous Monkey King, Su Rou, and Su Mei. They were thinking whether the ice and fire pearls were sealed or not.

However, no one dared to go down because they didn't know how it was in the Thousand Bone Graveyard. They didn't know if it was safe or dangerous inside.

“This won't work. I can't keep on sitting here doing nothing. I'm going down.” Finally, Chu Feng made his move. He leaped, became a blur of light, and from the clouds, he flew towards the Thousand Bone Graveyard.

“Chu Feng, wait for me.” Seeing that, Zi Ling also quickly followed and flew down.

“Senior Zhang, bring us down. We will follow Junior Chu Feng and live and die with him.” At the same time, the disciples of the Azure Dragon School and the others cast their gaze of asking for help towards Zhang Tianyi.

“School Head, this...” At that instant, Zhang Tianyi was in a bit of a difficult situation. At the end, he could only cast his gaze towards the head of the Azure Dragon School, Li Zhangqing.

“Oh Tianyi, go ahead. After all, the old ancestor is still there. We can't ignore his safety for our own right?” Li Zhangqing said.

“As you wish.” In response, Zhang Tianyi didn’t hesitate as well. He brought the Azure Dragon School’s and Chu family’s crowd down from the sky.

Although his current cultivation was far above Li Zhangqing’s and the two of them couldn’t even be compared, after all, Li Zhangqing was the head of a school. Back then, he had also helped Zhang Tianyi quite a bit. So, Zhang Tianyi was the same as Chu Feng. He respected Li Zhangqing a lot, and he also followed his orders.

While the crowd was descending, Chu Feng already opened the entrance to the Thousand Bone Graveyard. So, the crowd, with tense emotions, walked back into the Thousand Bone Graveyard.

“Heavens, isn’t this a bit too scary?”

At that very instant, after re-entering the Thousand Bone Graveyard, almost everyone’s expression couldn’t help but greatly change. Even Chu Feng, Zi Ling, and Zhang Tianyi, the three people who had many experiences of the world, tightly furrowed their brows and felt bursts of uneasiness in their hearts.

It was because the Thousand Bone Graveyard was the entrance to the Emperor Tomb. It was a place that the Azure Dragon Founder made changes to when he was in his peak times. In this place, the degree of hardness was extremely impressive. Even if it was Chu Feng, Zi Ling, or even Zhang Tianyi, they were unable to damage the walls in the slightest.



But at that very instant, there were thick cracks on the surrounding walls in the Thousand Bone Graveyard. Countless shattered rocks rolled around, covering the ground. The hall that originally had overbearing might was currently unrecognizable, being in complete chaos.

But Chu Feng, at that moment, didn't care about those things. He hurriedly walked deeper into the Thousand Bone Graveyard, and the deeper he went, the depressing situation became even more serious.

Finally, Chu Feng and the others arrived to where the Monstrous Monkey King and Su Rou and Su Mei were before.

The walls and ground there were destroyed beyond recognition. What occupied the surrounding space were marks of fire burning past, as well as a large area of frost.

And the Monstrous Monkey King was currently sitting cross-legged at the most catastrophic middle zone. Its special clothes were almost completely fragmented, and on its fur, there were traces of being burnt by fire, and there were also remnants of slush. Its face was as pale as paper, and there was even a trace of blood remaining on the corners of its mouth. Clearly, he was heavily injured.

But luckily, the Monstrous Monkey King was still living, and behind him, there was a very powerful purple-coloured Spirit Formation. Faintly, one could see two figures inside the Spirit Formation. It was Su Rou and Su Mei. Also, the two of them still had the auras of life.

“Monkey Bro, are you alright?” At that instant, Chu Feng quickly went up to the Monstrous Monkey King. His heart ached and was grateful.

It was because the scene in front of him already told Chu Feng everything. After an intense battle, it was still the Monstrous Monkey King that gained the advantage. He had already successfully sealed the ice and fire pearls in Su Rou’s and Su Mei’s bodies. Those two girls were temporarily safe.

But because of that, the Monstrous Monkey King still clearly paid an extremely heavy price. So, that was why Chu Feng was both grateful, but his heart also ached, feeling shame at the same time.

“Boy, don’t look at me with a face like a bitter melon. I won’t die any time soon.”

“However, this is luckily because the power of the two pearls were sealed. Or else, not to mention me, even those in the Martial Lord realm wouldn’t be able to defeat those two pearls.”

“Go check on your two wives. In a few days, they should reawaken. Perhaps they could even gain some benefits from those two pearls.” There was still the reliable smile on the Monstrous Monkey King’s face, but after speaking those words, it shut its eyes, its body fell, and it entered an unconscious state.

# Chapter 483: Rebuilding The Azure Dragon School

---

“Monkey Bro!” Seeing the Monstrous Monkey King lose consciousness, Chu Feng instantly panicked. He supported the Monstrous Monkey King, and at the same time, everyone came up and surrounded them. The gazes they looked at the Monstrous Monkey King with were filled with worry.

Even though other than Chu Feng, Zi Ling, and Zhang Tianyi, no one else there was really familiar with the Monstrous Monkey King, they all knew that the expert with a strange appearance did an extremely impressive thing. It was suppressing the horrifying ice and fire beads and saving Su Rou and Su Mei, who were deeply loved by Chu Feng.

Even the Azure Dragon Founder was unable to do that thing. So, they felt both grateful and respect towards the Monstrous Monkey King, and knew that it was a very outstanding expert.

And after a while of checking, Chu Feng, Zi Ling, and the others couldn't help calming down. Although the current Monstrous Monkey King was extremely weak and its injuries were not light as well, there was no threat to its life.

The reason why it was in that state was because it used too much Heaven power and Spirit power. In that situation, as long as it carefully took care of itself, it would be able to be healed.

Only after stabilizing the Monstrous Monkey King's situation did

Chu Feng come in front of the purple-coloured formation with Zi Ling to detailedly observe the situation within the formation.

The formation was very beautiful, and also very strong. There were over ten thousand types of symbols that converged together to form the purple-coloured Spirit Formation. Every single one was as if it was granted life, flickering with faint radiance. Like the stars, they spiraled around an already set orbit within the purple-coloured Spirit Formation.

Through the gaps of the Spirit Formation, Chu Feng was able to see the situation within the formation. Su Rou and Su Mei were tranquilly lying inside. They had actually recovered their former beautiful appearances. Frost faded away for one, flames faded away for the other. One became beautiful and cute, one became pure and amiable.

Even though their faces were very pale, even though their auras were still very weak, they truly returned to their former appearances. Special power was harmonizing with their bodies.

“Monkey Bro, this time, it is truly thanks to you.” At that instant, Chu Feng cast his gaze towards the Monstrous Monkey King sleeping behind him, and his face was filled with expressions of gratitude.

A few days after the ice and fire pearls were sealed in Su Rou’s and Su Mei’s bodies, the Monstrous Monkey King’s body had recovered, and also at that time, the army of the Jiang Dynasty actually descended from the sky and came to the currently desolate Azure Dragon Mountain Range that was a complete mess. Quickly

after, the Qilin Prince's Mansion also sent out a large group of men.

So, they were here to help Chu Feng rebuild the Azure Dragon School. The Jiang Dynasty asked for the best craftsmen in the continent of the Nine Provinces, and even sent out a grand army of ten thousand to help the construction.

The Qilin Prince's Mansion also similarly sent out a grand army of near ten thousand people. Also, they gathered the best craftsmen within the borders of the Azure Province to help Chu Feng rebuild the Azure Dragon School.

That news very quickly spread throughout the continent of the Nine Provinces. The Jiang Dynasty personally inviting first-class craftsmen and sent out ten thousand dynasty experts to help Chu Feng rebuild the Azure Dragon School. That inconceivable thing naturally shocked the continent of the Nine Provinces.

“Have you heard of it? Chu Feng is going to rebuild the Azure Dragon School.”

“I heard about it. I even heard that the Jiang Dynasty personally invited first-rate craftsmen experts from all areas of the Nine Provinces to help Chu Feng rebuild the Azure Dragon School.”

“Not only that! The Jiang Dynasty even sent out several tens of thousands of dynasty experts, and from what I've heard, they are all in the Profound realm! Several tens of thousands of Profound realm experts. Can you imagine that formation? Several tens of

thousands of Profound realm experts doing physical labour, constructing a school for someone. Have you ever heard of something like this before?”

“Heavens! Are the things you’re saying true or false? That’s a bit too much isn’t it? No matter how much more overpowering Chu Feng is, he shouldn’t be able to make the Jiang Dynasty send out so many people right?”

In the current continent of the Nine Provinces, all sorts of rumours rose everywhere. Some said the truth, some made up nonsense, very exaggeratedly spreading them.

And after knowing about that, many young people who idolized Chu Feng clearly didn’t confirm whether the rumours were true or false, yet they headed towards the Azure Province without stopping nonetheless. They prepared to join the Azure Dragon School to check out their idol.

Of course, there were also many people who didn’t believe that and actually didn’t care about hurrying for several tens of thousands of miles to come to the Azure Province in order to get to the bottom of it, wanting to destroy the rumours.

However, when the people who didn’t believe it came to the Azure Dragon Mountain Range, they were instantly stupefied.

It was because on the current Azure Dragon Mountain Range, not only were the army of the Jiang Dynasty and the Qilin Prince’s Mansion doing giant constructions, there were even many people

from the World Spirit Guild.

Not only did the World Spirit Guild send out a large batch of experts, it even sent out Blue-cloak World Spiritists to come forth to help Chu Feng rebuild the Azure Dragon School. Every single inch and millimeter for almost every single building had Spirit Formations added onto them, and they were even blue-coloured Spirit Formations.

That also meant that not only was the Azure Dragon School Chu Feng was rebuilding incomparably grand and beautiful, it was also very firm and indestructible.

“What? Even the people from the World Spirit Guild has come to help Chu Feng? This Chu Feng has too much face doesn’t he?”

“What do you even know? Chu Feng was originally a part of the World Spirit Guild. Besides, a few days ago, the one who saved the World Spirit Guild was Chu Feng. Right now, Chu Feng wants to rebuild the Azure Dragon School, so it is natural that the World Spirit Guild sends out some manpower.”

“The words cannot be said like so. Yes, Chu Feng saved the World Spirit Guild, but after all, he is in the young generation. Those Blue-cloak World Spiritist are very proud existences, I believe you should know that, yet Chu Feng is able to ask for them. We have to admit that this is too impressive.” Within a luxurious tavern, a group of martial cultivation experts discussed the news of Chu Feng rebuilding the Azure Dragon School.

“All of you are truly overreacting to small things. A few Blue-cloak World Spiritist are nothing. I heard that even Gu Tianchen has gone there, not to mention the World Spirit Guild’s elders.” A rather imposing big man with decent cultivation spoke.

After hearing the big man’s words, the people within the tavern were all dumbfounded and endlessly shocked.

“That doesn’t mean anything. Gu Tianchen’s life was saved by Chu Feng, so it’s normal for him to help Chu Feng. It would be strange if he didn’t.” Just at that time, on another table, a young man wearing white clothes disdainfully said.

“Oh? Brother, hearing your words, you seem to know even more explosive news huh?” Seeing that someone was actually interrupting when he spoke, the big man instantly revealed displeased expressions.

“That’s right. If even news like these aren’t much, then go ahead and say some even better ones.” At the same time, the big man’s pals were as if they had swords drawn and bows bent. They cast their unkind gazes towards the white clothed young man.

And facing the crowd’s attitude, the white clothed young man was not afraid in the slightest. He cast his gaze towards the white clothed old man next to him and said,

“My school’s head just came back from the Azure Province, incidentally passed the Azure Dragon Mountain Range, and saw a scene that none of you know about.”



“This one... Could it be that you’re the expert in the 1st level of the Heaven realm, the head of the White Mountain School, Senior White?” When the big men noticed the old man, all of them couldn’t help taking a few steps back and revealed expressions of fear.

“That’s right. I am Bai Xianqi.” The old man smugly smile, then afterwards, lightly flicked his sleeves. A burst of boundless Heaven power was instantly released, causing the tavern to shake. Other than himself and the white clothed young man, everyone in the tavern fell on the ground and were powerless to stand.

# Chapter 484: Glory Reappearing

---

“Senior White, have mercy! Senior White, have mercy!”

“We had eyes but didn’t recognize Mount Tai! Senior White, we ask that as a great character, you forgive our mistakes and give us a chance to start anew!” Feeling the old man’s powerful Heaven realm strength, everyone was endlessly terrified and kept on begging.

“A group of young ones aren’t worth it for me, Bai Xianqi, to start a massacre. All of you, rise.” The old man smugly smiled, then flicked his sleeve again, causing the Heaven power scattered about to return to this body. He raised the chopsticks on the table and continued eating.

At that instant, the people on the ground were finally able to stand back up. They looked at one another, and their expressions were of panic and terror, but no one chose to leave. They stood where there were, fearfully looking at the white clothed old man because they were really too curious. Curious what Bai Xianqi actually saw at the Azure Dragon Mountain Range.

The Azure Dragon School that already caused people to be endlessly shocked. What unknown things actually happened, and how shocking would those things be?

“Se-Se-Senior White, I wonder what you saw in the Azure Province? Can you tell us?” Finally, one big man couldn’t bear the curiosity in his heart, and asked stutteringly with a face filled with

fear.

Hearing someone ask about it, the white clothed old man was not angry as he put down the chopsticks in his hand and swept his gaze over the crowd. Seeing the crowd's intrigued gazes, the smug expression on the old man's face couldn't avoid becoming stronger. Only then did he speak, "Whatever. This will be known sooner or later, and since all of you want to know so much, there's no harm in telling you."

"Actually, in the current Azure Dragon Mountain Range, there is not only men from the Qilin Prince's Mansion, World Spirit Guild, and Jiang Dynasty helping Chu Feng rebuild the Azure Dragon School."

"Within the formation of people who are carrying out the enormous construction project, other than the human craftsmen with outstanding workmanship, cultivators with powerful cultivation, and World Spiritists who grasp Spirit Formation power, I even saw innumerable huge monsters."

"Their howls shook the land and their strengths were incomparable powerful. The smallest was still at least several meters tall, and the larger ones were over ten meters tall. And such powerful monsters were actually, on the Azure Dragon Mountain Range, doing labour work. Also, they didn't even mind it. They were happy doing that and weren't tired."

"Monsters over ten meters tall? That... Were they Monstrous Beasts? Where did the Monstrous Beasts come from to be so powerful? To have such enormous bodies?" At that instant, all of

them revealed shocked expressions.

“That’s right. They are indeed Monstrous Beasts. There was also an extremely large number of Monstrous Beast. At least from what I saw, they were counted by ten thousands.” The white clothed old man smugly said.

“Monstrous Beasts counted by ten thousands? Where in the world did so many Monstrous Beasts come from?” And hearing those words, they were even more shocked.

“I know! It must be the Monstrous Monkey King! The mysterious expert that defeated Gu Tianchen and Jie Shi a hundred years ago, the Monstrous Monkey King, the real Monster King of the Thousand Monster Mountain!”

“It is definitely it. It’s definitely the one that called the Monstrous Beasts from the Thousand Monster Mountain to help Chu Feng rebuild the Azure Dragon School. After all, there are rumours saying that the Monstrous Monkey King is Chu Feng’s big brother.” Finally, someone noticed it and guessed the origin of the Monstrous Beasts.

Seeing someone truly guessing the origin of the Monstrous Beasts, the white clothed old man lightly smiled, and as he stroked his own beard of several strands, he said, “That’s right. He’s correct. The strength of those Monstrous Beasts were very strong. Numbers like that, strength like that, indeed, only the Monstrous Beasts of the Thousand Monster Mountain have such characteristics.”

“But that’s not much. I even heard some news that I believe will definitely shock all of you. It’s that the Monstrous Monkey King announced it will be a guest elder for the Azure Dragon School.”

“And that the Monstrous Beasts of the Thousand Monster Mountain will also all move to the Azure Dragon Mountain Range to serve the Azure Dragon School. The peerlessly powerful Monstrous Beasts that disregard all laws will become the protectors of the Azure Dragon School, and live and die with it.”

“What? There’s actually something like this? The Monstrous Beasts of the Thousand Monster Mountain are very terrifying! From what I’ve heard, the five great Monster Kings are powerful existences in the 5th level of the Heaven realm, and at first, even the Prestigious Villa didn’t dare to start conflicts against the Monstrous Beasts of the Thousand Monster Mountain.”

“And right now, the Monstrous Monkey King that has come into this world again is even more unimaginably horrifying. With its own strength, it shifted the tides of the war regarding the five great powers and the World Spirit Guild.”

“Even Jie Shi was killed by it, and I’ve heard that even the emperor of the Jiang Dynasty fears it. A Thousand Monster Mountain like that can be said to be invincible, and right now, the horrifying Monstrous Beasts of the Thousand Monster Mountain are actually joining the Azure Dragon School! This... This is simply inconceivable.”

“Powerful. Really too powerful. The school hasn’t even been rebuilt yet there is already such a formation, such presence. When that Azure Dragon School finishes being constructed, wouldn’t it become the number one school of the Nine Provinces? In the continent of the Nine Provinces, other than the Jiang Dynasty, what could defeat it?”

Knowing that news, not a single person there didn’t greatly change their expressions. All of them were dumbfounded, and shock filled their eyes. Some people’s body even trembled from purely hearing that news, being thoroughly dumbstruck.

But in reality, the things that the white clothed old man said were the truths. News like that, with the Azure Province as the center, was currently spreading to all places of the continent of the Nine Provinces. At the end, when it finished spreading throughout the Nine Provinces, it then shocked the entire continent once again.

Although the current Azure Dragon School hadn’t been constructed yet, it had to be said that right now, it already became the number one school in many experts’ and powers’ eyes. The Monstrous Beasts of the Thousand Monster Mountain joined and it had the protection of the Jiang Dynasty. Who could defeat such a school?

Not to mention the Jie clan, Yuangang School, Fire God School, Free and Unrestrained Valley, and Hidden White Sect, the already fallen powers, even the Prestigious Villa and World Spirit Guild that were still in their peak times were far from being comparable to the current Azure Dragon School.

The Azure Province, the land that had been desolate for several hundred years, finally stepped back onto the peak stage of the Nine Provinces. The Azure Dragon School, the school that had been desolate for several hundred years, finally became the number one school of the Nine Provinces once again.

And all that was because of a young man. Chu Feng.

It had to be said that Chu Feng became the focus of discussion for people again. They started to think back to Chu Feng's actions, think back to the astounding achievements he did, and started to compare him to the historical great characters of the Nine Provinces.

Finally, they ended with a conclusion. Chu Feng was even more powerful than the historical great characters in the continent of the Nine provinces. Many of those characters, including the Azure Dragon Founder, didn't have too big achievements before the age of twenty, and they all got famous in their later periods.

But Chu Feng was different. He was only seventeen years old, yet he had already left many legends in the continent of the Nine Provinces and stood on the peak of fame. Even the Jiang Dynasty had to give him some face, and even the immeasurably strong Monstrous Monkey King was his big brother.

So, people felt that Chu Feng was the most horrifying person in the continent of the Nine Provinces. Chu Feng had potential that the historical great characters didn't have, and his future

achievements was even unimaginable, and incalculable.

And people felt very fortunate. Fortunate that they personally saw the birth of a great character. Although the road Chu Feng walked on wasn't even, he did indeed succeed.

From an unknown outer court disciple with a petty identity in the Azure Province, he grew step by step. He first became the number one disciple of the Azure Dragon School, then his name shocked the Azure Province, and ultimately, he became a legendary character that every family knew in the entire continent.

Chu Feng's speed of growth was indeed astonishing. Despite at present, he couldn't be said to be the number one person in the continent of the Nine Provinces, despite at present, his identity was still of a young generation, everyone knew that the potential Chu Feng had would allow him to step onto an unprecedented peak. No matter if it was the current powerful people, or the historical powerful people, they were all going to be surpassed by Chu Feng one by one, and no one then would be comparable to him.



# Void School

# Chapter 485: The Void School In Trouble

---

The current Azure Dragon School, under Chu Feng's lead, had its former glory reappear.

Although the school hadn't finished construction yet, young geniuses from all areas of the Nine Provinces had already come to the Azure Dragon Mountain Ranging, wanting to enter the Azure Dragon School.

Facing that situation, the Azure Dragon School could only push the examination forward. As the school hadn't been completely built, they started to recruit disciples. After all, it was a school for humans, so they couldn't only rely on the Monstrous Beast from the Thousand Monster Mountain for face. Recruiting disciples was an absolute necessity.

Besides, within those who wanted to join the Azure Dragon School, many were of extreme good quality. They were a lot more excellent than many of the disciples before in the Azure Dragon School. There were even many young ones who already had the cultivation of the Profound realm. That strength naturally made Li Zhangqing endlessly moved and couldn't bear missing out on that.

And as the Azure Dragon School was large-scale recruiting disciple, the Azure Dragon School's elders and disciples, who left when the Qilin Prince's Mansion was aiming to remove Chu Feng and the Azure Dragon School, carried hearts of hope when they came back to the Azure Dragon School. They shamelessly begged, wanting to re-enter the Azure Dragon School.

But what they got was merciless refusal. The Azure Dragon School didn't give those traitors any chance.

Other than the elders and disciples who were willing to live and die along with the Azure Dragon School, who entered the Thousand Bone Graveyard, no matter if it was disciples or elders, the Azure Dragon School chose completely new ones, and started to choose the excellent ones first.

For the development of the Azure Dragon School, Chu Feng even took out ten million Profound beads as the foundation of the Azure Dragon School's development. That number really took Li Zhangqing aback, feeling as if he entered a realm of dreams.

At first, he didn't even want to accept it, but as Chu Feng urged, he finally took them.

After taking the ten million Profound beads, Li Zhangqing then wanted to hand the position of school head over to Chu Feng because he knew that the many excellent young people who were willing to enter the Azure Dragon School didn't come for him, Li Zhangqing. They came for Chu Feng. He really didn't have the qualifications to be the head of the Azure Dragon School. Continuing to be the head would really make the disciples unconvinced.

But Chu Feng said that currently, the old ancestor was in this world, so sooner or later, he was going to revive. At that time, it would be fine to directly hand the Azure Dragon School over to him. He, Chu Feng, only wanted to be an ordinary disciple of the Azure Dragon School. So, the position of school head still had to be

temporarily held by Li Zhangqing.

Facing that situation, Li Zhangqing didn't feel that it was good to say much more, so he could only continue being the head of the Azure Dragon School. Although he didn't say much on the surface, in his heart, he was endlessly grateful towards Chu Feng because he didn't make a mistake. The young man that many people disliked at first currently did indeed change the fate of the Azure Dragon School.

As the Azure Dragon School, the number one school a thousand years ago in the Nine Provinces, had its former glory reappear, another powerful school a thousand years ago in the Azure Province was still unbearably desolate at present. It was the Void School stationed at the Void Mountain Range.

“Sigh~~~” Within the main hall of the Void School came a helpless sigh.

That sigh was made by the head of the Void School. He sat on the chief position in the main hall, swept his gaze towards the manager elders inside the hall, and said, “The Azure Dragon School has already restored its former prosperous might, but my Void School still remains unknown. Right now, we are even forced to a state where we need to move away from the Void Mountain Range because of the Lotus Flower School that has only been created for dozens of years. I truly have no face to face the founder!”

“Lord School Head, hasn't there already been rumours that say Chu Feng is Mr. Grey-cloak of that year? No matter what's said,

my Void School still has some relations with Mr. Grey-cloak. If Chu Feng is truly that Mr. Grey-cloak, we can ask for help from the Azure Dragon School.”

“If the Azure Dragon School is willing to help, how would the little Lotus Flower School dare to forcefully occupy the Void Mountain Range?” One manager elder said.

“Whatever. Putting aside that it is only a rumour, even if Chu Feng is truly Mr. Grey-cloak, back then, he has already gave all the benevolence and assistance he can. What reason do we have to ask him for help again?”

The head of the Void School smiled as he shook his head. How could he have not possibly thought of testing luck by asking Chu Feng for help?

Thinking back when the Azure Dragon School first faced danger, his Void School didn’t do anything. Right now, they had risen greatly. Even he himself felt that it wasn’t right to go find him to cling onto him, so naturally, he wouldn’t so shamelessly go do that.

“Lord School Head, but right now, what my Void School is facing is the loss of school territory! If the Lotus Flower School is willing to let us go when we leave the Void Mountain Range, then that’s fine.”

“But if they are not willing to, then it would be too difficult for us to turn the situation around. I’m afraid we would be reduced to a

third-rate school, and even possibly facing extermination.” The elders painstakingly advised.

“This is something that cannot be helped. Who told us to be so greedy to fight over land against that Lotus Flower School? If we didn’t have malicious exchanges against the Lotus Flower School, we would not have landed in our current state.” The head of the Void School had a face filled with regret.

So it turned out some time ago, within an area of land on the borders of the Void School, precious ore veins was discovered. The ore veins were very valuable, and if they were mined, they could be traded for large amounts of cultivation resources, which would cause the foundation of the Void School to become stronger.

But the neighbouring school of the Void School, the Lotus Flower School, also discovered those ore veins. Both sides said that the ore veins should belong to themselves, so for their own interests, an unavoidable battle happened between the two second-rate schools.

The Lotus Flower School had only been created for over a few dozens of years. Although their founder had some methods, he had already disappeared for dozens of years. Even if he didn’t disappear, he should have died from age.

As for the Lotus Flower School, their current head’s strength was far from being comparable to the head of the Void School’s, and their elders’ cultivation was also not as strong as the Void School’s elders’. Their school’s foundation was also far weaker than the Void School’s, so they could be said to be the most underdeveloped existence within second-rate schools.

So, with might that was like breaking bamboo, the Void School beat the Lotus Flower School so badly that they were rolling around in their own excrement and they looked like flowers withering and water flowing away. But who would have thought that in the crucial moment, just as the army of the Void School arrived within the Lotus Flower School, preparing to make them pay the price, the founder of the Lotus Flower School, the Lotus Flower Old Man, actually appeared.

Not only was the old man whose age already passed a hundred and should originally not be surviving nicely living, his cultivation even stepped into the 8th level of the Profound realm. So, it seemed that he already gained the inheritance of an expert dozens of years ago and consumed a special pill that lengthened his life. In the past years, he kept on staying in isolation, cultivating painstakingly.

And after the Lotus Flower Old Man showed himself, he didn't make things too difficult for the Void School. Not only did he not attack the people from the Void School, quite contrary, he let them back to the Void School.

Facing such a magnanimous Lotus Flower Old Man, the head of the Void School felt shame in his heart. At the same time, he also expressed admiration, preparing to give the ore veins to the Lotus Flower School after returning to the school and also to prepare heavy gifts to nicely thank the generosity of the senior. But who would have thought that it wasn't as simply as how he had imagined it.

The Lotus Flower Old Man had his eyes on the Void Mountain Range. After the army of the Void School returned to the Void School, he was actually forcing the Void School to move out of the Void Mountain Range within a month and give the Void Mountain Range to his Lotus Flower School, or else he was going to start a huge massacre and kill them so much that nothing remained behind.

And today was already the last day of the one month limit. What the Void School was facing was a situation in which they had to leave the Void Mountain Range.

“His Lotus Flower School is only a small school. Even saying that it’s a second-rate school is praising them. If that Lotus Flower Old Man didn’t get some dog crap luck and gain the inheritance of an expert, which not only extended his life greatly and even caused his cultivation to rise greatly, how would his Lotus Flower School be able to defeat our Void School?” Several manager elders said while venting their anger.

“Whatever, don’t hold grudges. That Lotus Flower Old Man has already performed what kindness he could by not directly exterminating the Void School and only chasing us out of the Void Mountain Range. If we have to blame anything, we can only blame that our abilities are inferior to theirs. How can we blame that he got the inheritance of an expert?”

“Pass an order down. All elders and disciples will move with me. We will move out of the Void Mountain Range. As long as my Void School has a united heart, we can rise again at the eastern mountains like the sun no matter where we go.” The head of the



Void School ordered.

And from then on, the several hundreds of thousands of disciples in the Void School, with the lead of the head of the Void School and the manager elders, grandly formed lines and groups, preparing to leave the Void Mountain Range.

But just as they arrived at the Void School's entrance, at that place, a group of people and horses appeared.

## Chapter 486: Just Like A God

---

The robes those people wore were imprinted with lotus flowers. Most of their strengths were inferior to the head of the Void School as well as the manager elders.

However, the old man at front, who didn't have many strands of hair on his head, had a face full of wrinkles, was as thin as a match, and looked like a dry corpse, actually had the cultivation of the 8th level of the Profound realm.

In other provinces, perhaps that cultivation wasn't much, but in the Azure Province, a person with that cultivation could already be called a peak expert. He was the founder of the Lotus Flower School, the Lotus Flower Old Man.

“Senior Lotus Flower, let us follow what we have said. I'll comply with your request and move out of the Void Mountain, so I hope that you can adhere to your promise and give my Void School path to live.” The head of the Void School went up and said when he saw the Lotus Flower Old Man. As he faced the old man in the 8th level of the Profound realm, he really was afraid of him.

“Kuku 1, don't worry, naturally, I'll keep my word. But on that topic, your Void School truly does have some good seedlings. Right now, you, a grand school head, are like a dog that lost its home. Can you really bear letting your disciples suffer hardships and receive contempt from others along with you?” The Lotus Flower Old Man strangely smiled and said.

“Senior Lotus Flower, what do you mean?” The head of the Void School tightly furrowed his brows and felt that the situation wasn’t heading towards a good direction.

“Haha, I don’t mean anything, but I just don’t hope you delay the development of so many good seedlings.” The corners of the Lotus Flower Old Man’s lips curled up, then quickly after, he actually cast his gaze towards the vast ocean of people behind the head of the Void School. Facing several hundred thousands of elders and disciples, he loudly said, “Everyone! From today on, this Void Mountain Range will be the Lotus Flower Mountain Range. This Void School will also be changed into the Lotus Flower School. I, the Lotus Flower Old Man, can see that all of you have extraordinary aptitude, so I cannot bear seeing you suffer with these useless young ones.”

“Thus, I am willing to open the gates to my Lotus Flower School for all of you. As long as you are willing to stay behind, anyone can join my Lotus flower School. Not hiding anything, my Lotus Flower School has already applied to the Qilin Prince’s Mansion to be a first-rate school. As long as you stay behind, in the future, you will be elders and disciples of a first-rate school.”

“Huu~~~~~”

After the Lotus Flower Old Man spoke, a heated discussion was instantly stirred up in the crowd. Many Void School elders and disciples looked at each other, revealing expressions of joy.

“Senior Lotus Flower, you’ve gone a bit too far by doing this.” At that instant, the face of the Void School’s head was ashen, but he

didn't dare to lash out. He himself could disregard his life, but he didn't want his own actions to affect the several hundred thousand lives of the Void School.

“Hey, I am only thinking about their future. Is that wrong? Besides, I am giving them a choice, and I haven't forced anything on them.”

“If you're talking about going too far, the one who's doing that is you right? Boy, you are useless yourself, yet you still want to lead so many people in the later generation who have rather good talent? Aren't you delaying their futures?” The Lotus Flower Old Man coldly smiled and said.

“You!” The head of the Void School gnashed his teeth in anger, but ultimately, he still forcibly endured it. Quickly after, he loudly howled towards the crowd behind him, “Those who are willing to follow me, step out of the Void School and follow me down the mountain!”

After the head of the Void School spoke, a large portion of the manager elders walked out and stood behind him. At the same time, there were also many elders and disciples who followed, walked out of the Void School, and prepared to follow him down.

However, no matter if it was elders or disciples, at that very instant, the ones willing to stand behind the head of the Void School, the ones willing to follow him were only several thousand people.

The remaining several hundred thousand elders and disciples all stood where they were. When there was a clash between the school's interest and their own interest, those people gave the head of the Void School an exact answer.

“You bastards! The school head treats all of you so warmly, yet you lack any loyalty and treat him so coldly. Have all of your consciences been eaten by dogs?” Seeing that scene, the manager elders of the Void School pointed at those elders and disciples and started to furiously condemn them.

Facing the manager elders' condemning, many disciples felt very ashamed and lowered their head in silence. However, some disciples and elders just loudly retorted, “Elders, ‘humans head towards highland, water flows towards lowland’ 2 Are we in the wrong?”

“That's right. The might of the Void School is already gone. If we follow you, we will only become weaker and weaker and receive the disdain of people.”

“Senior Lotus Flower's strength is powerful. He can definitely bring us onto the road of experts. We are willing to become disciples of the Lotus Flower School, and live and die along with it!”

“Lotus Flower School! Lotus Flower School! Lotus Flower School!”

“God damn, you despicable stuck-ups. I'll put all of you to death!”

At that instant, the manager elders were enraged, and as they spoke, they were going to attack.

“I would quite like to see who dares to touch the people from my Lotus Flower School!” But just at that time, the Lotus Flower Old Man suddenly coldly snorted. Simultaneously, boundless Profound power went wild, and like a formless fierce beast, it attacked the several manager elders who prepared to make their move.

“Ahh!”

The difference in strength was too big. With only a single strike from the Lotus Flower Old Man, he threw the several manager elders dozens of meters away. All of them vomited blood, and were already powerless to stand, being heavily injured.

“I’ll kill you!”

Seeing that their own elders were heavily beaten, many people who decided to follow the Void School were enraged. They wanted to fight to the death against the Lotus Flower Old Man.

“Stop!” Seeing that, the head of the Void School hurriedly shouted loudly. After stopping the crowd, he looked at the several hundred thousand disciples who chose to enter the Lotus Flower School and said, “Every person has their own goals. If you want to stay behind, I absolutely do not force you to come with me.”

After speaking those words, he walked first and prepared to leave

that place. At the same time, several thousand disciples and elders also moved and quickly followed.

At that instant, no matter if they were furious or felt that they were wronged, their backs gave people an extremely pitiful feeling.

But “the winner is the king and the loser is the thief”. No one would give them sympathy, and rather, what they gave were only mocking and cold smiles.

“That’s right. Leave, you homeless dogs! Let’s see where in the continent of the Nine Provinces you can find a home!”

“Daring to make my Lotus Flower School an enemy, this is how you end up as. Hahaha...”

The Lotus Flower Old Man started to coldly laugh loudly. The meaning behind his words was very clear. He wanted the Void School to have no place to make a standing for themselves, then ultimately disappear from people’s lines of sight and be thoroughly extinguished.

“Any place in the continent of the Nine Provinces is a place for the Void School to make a standing for themselves. On the other hand, what qualifications does your Lotus Flower School have to take over this Void Mountain Range?”

But just at that time, from the sky, a loud and clear voice that was like thunder suddenly rang out. The voice was really too loud, and

it actually caused the sky and ground to tremble. Not to mention the disciples, even the Lotus Flower Old Man couldn't stand stably and almost fell.

When the horrifying swaying settled, everyone cast their gazes towards the sky, and when they saw the current sky, not a single person's expression on the scene didn't change greatly, as they were endlessly shocked.

It was because at present, in the sky, several figures stood. Those people stood on air while looking down. Every person's body emanated immensely powerful aura.

They stood on air, like a god. It could be said that their powerful strength, to the people of the Void School and Lotus Flower School, was as if they were gods.

However, the reason why they were so shocked was because of the young man within the group of people. The young man's portrait had once been scattered throughout all places in the Nine Provinces. Everyone knew who he was. He was the horrifying existence whose name shocked the Nine Provinces, Chu Feng.



## Chapter 487: Alliance

---

“Chu... Chu Feng?!” Seeing Chu Feng in the sky, everyone was stunned.

The people from the Lotus Flower School tightly furrowed their brows because they didn't know why Chu Feng, whose name shocked the Nine Provinces and was a legend-like character, came to this place.

But they could see that Chu Feng did indeed have the rumoured strength, or else he wouldn't be able to stand on air. Also, the people who stood around Chu Feng all had extraordinary cultivation. Every person had strength that could kill them.

In addition, even if their strengths were disregarded and undiscussed, their identities and positions were terrifying. There were people from the World Spirit Guild, there was the lord of the Qilin Prince's Mansion, and there were even experts from the Jiang Dynasty.

“Milords, Zhao Lianhua 1 pays his respect!” Suddenly, the Lotus Flower Old Man knelt onto the ground. He put away his previous arrogance and respectfully kowtowed to Chu Feng and the others, being extremely petty.

“Milord, we pay our respects!” At the same time, everyone came to their senses. The several hundred thousand people on scene uniformly knelt on the ground. Their petty voices rang out at the same time. Like the ringing of bells, they resonated throughout

that land.

Chu Feng did not pay attention when he faced the crowd's kowtow. He leaped and flew down from the sky. He went up to the head of the Void School, personally propped him up, and said, "Senior. I, Chu Feng, have come late."

"Lo-Lo-Lord Chu Feng!" At that instant, there was no need to mention how excited the head of the Void School was. His eyes glittered, his body trembled, and with his disbelieving yet incomparably happy voice, he said, "Could it be that you're... you're truly Mr. Grey-cloak?!"

After the head of the Void School spoke those words, almost everyone's faces changed. Especially the Lotus Flower Old Man. He even started to feel uneasy. He trembled from fright because he was already able to feel that the head of the Void School didn't seem to have a simple relationship with Chu Feng.

As for the manager elders of the Void School and a group of core disciples, they were kneeling on the ground and also incomparably excited. They were awaiting Chu Feng's answer because his answer was going to change their fates.

"It's me. I am Mr. Grey-cloak who asked you for help back then and also stayed in your Void School for many days." Chu Feng lightly squinted his eyes and kindly smiled. Quickly after, he cast his gaze towards the manager elders and the many disciples, "The people from the Void School, no need to be so polite. Please, quickly rise."

“Thank you Lord Chu Feng!” After the simultaneous thanks that was both grateful and excited, the Void School’s crowd all rose.

At that very instant, the faces of the manager elders and core disciples were filled with ecstasy because they knew that today, their Void School was saved. With Chu Feng’s current strength and position, as long as he slightly supported their Void School, then their position in the Azure Province would rise, possibly even rapidly.

“Who told you to rise?! Kneel back down!” But just at that time, Chu Feng’s face suddenly changed greatly. He pointed at the several hundred thousand disciples, who were already standing within the Void School itself, and loudly yelled.

His explosive shout was truly like the clap of thunder. It was so loud that even the earth trembled, the trees swayed left and right, and the beasts and birds in the mountain forest respectively ran and flew away.

The several hundred thousand disciples trembled in fright and all of them hurriedly knelt back down to the ground. Their bodies kept on quivering and they didn’t even dare to raise their heads.

“Hmph. I told the people from the Void School to rise. Your Lotus Flower School better kneel well. If anyone dares to stand without permission, I’ll behead him right there.” Chu Feng coldly said.

After Chu Feng's words were spoken, everyone from the Lotus Flower School panicked because they were aware that the relationship between Chu Feng and the Void School was not ordinary. They had actually forced the Void School to such a state, so today, they were fated to have bad luck.

“Senior, actually, by coming here today, I have something I want to discuss with you.” Quickly after, Chu Feng cast his gaze back at the head of the Void School.

“Lord Chu Feng, speak whatever you want to say. As long as I am able to do it, I will definitely assist you with anything.” The head of the Void School hurriedly replied.

“I want to set up an alliance between your Void School and my Azure Dragon School. Senior, I wonder if you are willing or not?” Chu Feng lightly smiled and said.

“What? An alliance with the Azure Dragon School?” After Chu Feng spoke, it was like a clap of thunder in a clear sky. It shocked the people on scene so much that all of them felt inconceivability.

What power was the current Azure Dragon School? It was a power titled as the number one school in the Nine Provinces! It was rumoured that in the continent of the Nine Provinces, countless huge powers wanted to make an alliance with the Azure Dragon School, but they were all rejected.

Even the overlord of the Qin Province, the Prestigious Villa, wanted to set up an alliance yet was refused. There were only two

powers in an alliance with the Azure Dragon School. One was the World Spirit Guild, the other was the Qilin Prince's Mansion.

There was no need to talk about the World Spirit Guild. It was one of the strongest forces in the Nine Provinces. As for the Qilin Prince's Mansion, although it was far from being comparable to the World Spirit Guild, at least it was the overlord of the Azure Province.

But his Void School was only a tiny second-rate school. In a place like the Azure Province, it was a small power that anyone could stamp on. But currently, a chance to be an alliance with the Azure Dragon School came. That truly caused people to feel disbelief.

"I'm willing! O-Of course I'm willing to!" The head of the Void School quickly nodded. His head was as if it was continuously kowtowing, say nothing of how happy he was.

"That's great! Then this is done. I have already sent an application to the lord of the Qilin Prince's Mansion to raise the Void School to a first-rate school. Moreover, the lord of the Qilin Prince's Mansion has already agreed." As he spoke, Chu Feng cast his gaze towards the sky. He looked towards the current lord of the Qilin Prince's Mansion, Qi Fengyang.

Hearing those words, everyone from the Void School cast their gazes towards Qi Fengyang, their gazes filled with excited expressions.

Qi Fengyang lightly smiled, then said, "It is true. Although the

present Void School doesn't have the strength of a first-rate school, I believe that it will soon, and also surpass most schools in the Azure Province."

"Thank you Lord Chu Feng, thank you Mansion Lord!" At that instant, the people from the Void School knelt on the ground again. Their gratefulness came from their hearts, thankful for the help Chu Feng gave them.

"Ahh, no need to be so polite. Quickly rise." Chu Feng waved his big sleeve, then a gust of wind came and lifted up the people from the Void School who knelt down. Then he said, "Since we are an alliance, naturally, there must be some cooperation plans. Right now, my Azure Dragon School is doing widespread disciple recruiting. However, some disciples aren't suitable to cultivate in my Azure Dragon School, yet those disciples have pretty good talents, so my Azure Dragon School doesn't wish to waste such talents."

"So, from today on, for those who wish to enter my Azure Dragon School but cannot become a disciple of my Azure Dragon School, we will introduce them to the Void School. If they are willing to, they can come to the Void School to participate in the school entry examination. Senior, I wonder if you are willing or not?"

"I'm willing, I'm willing, of course I'm willing to!" The head of the Void School quickly nodded his head because he knew that it was a very rare chance.

At present, the disciples who aimed to enter the Azure Dragon

School were excellent geniuses from many different areas in the continent of the Nine Provinces. Even if those people, because of insufficient aptitude, weren't able to become a disciple of the Azure Dragon School, to the powers of the Azure Province, they were still rare geniuses.

If geniuses like those were able to enter his Void School, his school would very speedily strengthen with unstoppable might. Although it would not be able to stand shoulder-to-shoulder with the Azure Dragon School, at least within the borders of the Azure Province, they could quickly gain their own position in the province.

## Chapter 488: Gazes Of Admiration

---

“Senior, since you are willing to, I will represent my Azure Dragon and sign the alliance agreement with you right now. From now on, my Azure Dragon School will share both glory and shame and advance and retreat with your Void School.” As Chu Feng spoke, he took out a piece of paper.

It was an alliance agreement paper. On there, conditions for the alliance between the Azure Dragon School and the Void School were written in detail, and after seeing the agreement, the head of the Void School, who was incomparably excited, hurriedly wrote the two big words “Void School” without even looking at it. Then afterwards, he pressed his handprint on it.

At that instant, up and down the Void School, not a single person was not incomparably excited because they all knew that from today on, their Void School was going to rise greatly. With the Azure Dragon School looking over them, not to mention the little Azure Province, in the future, even in the continent of the Nine Province, no one would dare to anger his Void School.

But as some people were joyed, some people were sorrowful. As the people from the Void School rejoiced, the several hundred thousand disciples and elders who were just part of the Void School, but now chose to join the Lotus Flower School, were endlessly sorrowful with faces filled with regret.

At that very instant, truly, their intestines greened from regret and they even had the heart to die. They regretted that they shouldn't have been so cowardly and afraid of things, that they



shouldn't have betrayed the Void School, that they shouldn't have been greedy for the enticement the Lotus Flower Old Man gave.

It was because they didn't stand firm that they lost their chance to stand on the skies. With the mistake of a single thought, they missed a heavenly huge opportunity.

Everything existed in the world, but not medicine for regret. They had to pay the price for their decisions.

"You're the head of the Lotus Flower School right?" After signing the alliance agreement, Chu Feng turned around with a light smile, and cast his gaze towards the Lotus Flower Old Man.

"I am indeed the head of the Lotus Flower School, Zhao Lianhua." The Lotus Flower Old Man hurriedly replied. He was truly afraid. Extremely afraid.

"You, stand up to speak." Chu Feng's tone was very gentle.

Hearing those words, the Lotus Flower Old Man hiddenly rejoiced and couldn't help breathe a sigh of relief because he felt that Chu Feng didn't seem to be preparing to make things difficult for him. So, he quickly stood up and endlessly saluted Chu Feng, "Thank you Lord Chu Feng, thank you Lord Chu Feng!"

"Your nerves are quite big! You dare to take the land of the Void School, and even forcefully take the elders and disciples from the Void School!" But suddenly, Chu Feng's face turned cold. He

pointed at the Lotus Flower Old Man and furiously rebuked, then pointed his finger towards the several hundred thousand people who betrayed the Void School and said, “You like these stuck-ups who forget about favours and kindness, and betrays their own school to protect themselves right?”

“Fine! Today, you will bring them all away from here. Bring them back to your Lotus Flower School. From now on, they are a part of your Lotus Flower School, and for their entire lives, they will be stuck with the tags of your Lotus Flower School.”

“But you remember this. From today on, the people from your Lotus Flower School better stay in your tiny land. If they dare to take half a step out, I will kill with no discussion.”

“Milord, have mercy, milord, have mercy! I was ignorant, I should die, and I shouldn’t have been greedy!”

“But Lord Chu Feng, I still ask you to leave a road of life for my Lotus Flower School. After all, I didn’t know that the Void School was acquainted with you. If I did, I would have never dared to oppose the Void School!” At that instant, the Lotus Flower Old Man knelt onto the ground with a poof. He endlessly kowtowed while begging for mercy and asked for forgiveness from Chu Feng.

“I am already leaving a path of life by not killing all of you today. Scram! Don’t think of speaking rubbish with me. If you don’t scram, I’ll kill you right now!”

Chu Feng’s voice was like thunder, rumbling in bursts. At the

same time, what faintly appeared was boundless aura he emanated as well as eerie killing intent.

“As you wish, I’ll leave, I’ll leave right now!” With that, the Lotus Flower Old Man thoroughly panicked. He hurriedly stood back up and led the Lotus Flower School’s group, preparing to leave because he knew that if he left now, there was still a strand of survival, but if he didn’t, he would undoubtedly die.

“Halt.” But just as they walked for a few steps, Chu Feng explosively shouted again. He pointed at them and said, “Who told you to walk? I told you to scam, so roll right now. Roll down the mountain!” 1

“Chu Feng, don’t bully excessively. You are only a brat, yet you dare to speak to us like this?” Just at that time, a manager elder from the Lotus Flower School pointed at Chu Feng and furiously cursed.

bang However, immediately after he spoke, that person became a mist of blood. That scene happened really too fast. No one knew who attacked, but the people from the Lotus flower School were thoroughly terrified.

“Milord, spare us! We’ll roll right now, we’ll roll!” Finally, no one dared to hesitate. With the lead of the Lotus Flower Old Man, the people from the Lotus Flower School started to roll down the stairs which were for climbing the mountain.

“What are you staring at? Why aren’t you scamming?” After the

Lotus Flower Old Man rolled farther and farther away, Chu Feng pointed his finger again at the several hundred thousand people still kneeling within the Void School.

“School Head, have mercy, School Head, have mercy!”

“School Head, we know our wrongs! Give us a chance!”

“Lord School Head, you have watched as I grew up! You are like my father. Children will commit mistakes, so I’m begging you, please give me a chance to start anew!”

Those people looked at one another, but ultimately, no one moved half a step. Rather, they started to face the head of the Void School and beg, pleading for forgiveness.

It was because the words Chu Feng said before were very clear. Although he didn’t give a path of death to the Lotus Flower School, he didn’t give a path of life to them.

In the future, if the news of the Lotus flower School offending the Azure Dragon School became known, it was likely that even without the Azure Dragon School doing anything, many powers that wanted to set up a relationship with the Azure Dragon School would volunteer to go exterminate the Lotus Flower School.

If today, they truly followed the Lotus flower Old Man back to the Lotus Flower School, what awaited them was definitely a path of death.

“This...” Facing the sorrowful cries of the several hundred thousand elders and disciples, the head of the Void School’s face showed his predicament. His heart softened. It truly softened. After all, they were elders and disciples who followed him for many years.

So, he turned around, cast his gaze towards Chu Feng, and wanted to plead for those people.

boom boom boom boom boom

But before waiting for him to speak, Chu Feng waved his big sleeve, then several fists were thrown out. Within the ocean of people, bursts of explosions resounded. When any of those explosions rang out, it would make berserk energy ripples.

Those who got caught by the ripples would instantly become a mist of blood. Even those who didn’t get caught by the ripples would be affected by the remnants. If they didn’t die, they were injured. With merely a blink, several tens of thousands of people had fallen, died miserably by the hands of Chu Feng.

At that instant, the people from the Void School were both shocked and terrified because they finally saw Chu Feng’s strength. The strength that was rumoured to be able to kill those in the Heaven realm.

“Milord, have mercy! Milord, have mercy! We’ll roll right now, we’ll roll!”

As the rumbling finished, not a single person who were still living dared to beg. With faces filled with fear, they ran out, and as they went up to the stairs that went down the mountain, they hurriedly rolled down. They headed downwards by rolling.

So, on the Void Mountain Range, a peculiar sight appeared. It was several hundred thousand people rolling down from the mountains with unspeakable misery.

And only after the last disciple left the school's plaza and rolled towards the mountain climbing road did Chu Feng pat the Void School head's shoulder and said, "Senior, they can betray you today, so they can still betray you in the future. If you sympathize even with these kinds of people, then in this world where the strong eats and the weak is meat, how can you make your standing?"

Hearing Chu Feng's words, the head of the Void School's body couldn't help trembling. Within the gaze he looked at Chu Feng with, not only was there pure respect, there was also admiration that came from his heart.

Actually, he understood the logic that Chu Feng talked about, but the human heart grew along with the human body. The number of people who could clearly separate the good and evil, and kill decisively, was few within few. At least he currently could not do it.

But Chu Feng, the young man who was only seventeen years old,

was able to do that. How could he not respect him?!

## Chapter 489: A Worthy Trip

---

After driving away the people of the Lotus Flower School, the head of the Void School set up a banquet to welcome Chu Feng and the others.

Facing the Void School's warm welcome, Chu Feng and the others did not refuse it because other than repaying the Void School for the favor back then, there was one other thing he came here for. It was to return to the Void School's Void Tower.

At that moment, Chu Feng had already went into the Void Tower, and just as he entered, an extremely dark and faint consciousness appeared in front of Chu Feng.

That person was indeed the founder of the Void School, the super-expert who was able to oppose the Azure Dragon Founder a thousand years ago, Void Zhenren.

However, the current Void Zhenren had already been weakened to the extreme compared to the first time Chu Feng saw him back then. It was even possible that he could disappear at any time. His consciousness was already unable to hold on for a few more days.

“Senior Void Zhenren, this junior pays his respects.” Despite the might of the super-expert a thousand years ago had already vanished, Chu Feng was still extremely respectful towards him.

“Young one, you are not bad. Within the short time of two years, you are actually able to develop to this state. You're a lot stronger



than me and the old guy Azure Dragon back then.”

“The reason you’ve come here today should be for my Source energy right?” Void Zhenren floated in mid-air. With a light smile, he looked at Chu Feng. However, his voice was clearly very powerless. It could be seen that there was truly not many more days he could continue living for.

“Senior, I...” Facing Void Zhenren’s questioning, Chu Feng was very speechless because it was exactly as Void Zhenren said. The reason why he came here was for his Source energy.

After all, Void Zhenren was a super-expert. His cultivation should near the peak of the Heaven realm. Source energy like that would cause Eggy’s cultivation to rise greatly. Chu Feng didn’t want to miss that chance, and Eggy didn’t want to miss it even more.

“Hoh, no need to feel bad. This is very normal.” However, Void Zhenren unconcernedly smiled, then quickly after, said, “If it was before, I would definitely not allow anyone to absorb my Source energy because I felt that it would make me incomplete.”

“Even today I feel the same. Source energy is the root of people. If one doesn’t even have their Source energy, that person would be completely dead. The things he would have remaining in this world would only be a useless skeleton.”

“But now, I’ve thought it through. I am willing to let you absorb my Source energy. For no other reason but because you just saved

my Void School.”

“No matter if you did that because you felt you would owe me by wanting to absorb my Source energy, or if you did it remembering that the Void School helped you back then, I feel very relieved.”

“Follow me. There is already not much time left for me. I’ll leave these things for you. I hope you can help my Void School’s useless later generation a bit more so that my Void School won’t die out too soon.”

As he spoke, Void Zhenren floated and actually headed towards the peak of the Void Tower. Quickly after, he used his hand to touch the murals on the walls. So it seemed that the murals, which were not eye-grabbing, were actually mechanisms. They were so hidden that even the current Chu Feng was unable to detect them.

From top to bottom, Void Zhenren activated the mechanisms. When he came back to the bottom of the Void Tower, from the surface of the rocks, a tunnel actually appeared. After following Void Zhenren into the tunnel, Chu Feng discovered that there was a secret room there.

The secret room wasn’t too big. It was squarish, but it was very majestic. In the center of the secret room, there was a coffin built by stone. That stone coffin did not have a cover, and before approaching, Chu Feng was able to feel some chilliness from within.

“Go ahead. Those all belong to you. But after getting those,

remember to help out my Void School!” As he spoke, Void Zhenren smiled relievedly, his body started to undulate, and at the end, he became strands of gas. After swirling in the air for a good while, he dispersed like smoke.

“He broke up his consciousness on his own accord. Right now, he has already thoroughly died. Quickly let me out! I will personally refine this guy’s Source energy.” Eggy excitedly said.

Without delay, Chu Feng willed and opened the World Spirit Gate. Eggy’s beautiful figure also became a blur of black light, immediately dashing out, then stood on top of the stone coffin.

“Waa, Chu Feng, that old guy didn’t trick you. There are truly some treasures here. Look!”

At that very instant, Eggy’s little face of absolute beauty was filled with the expression of joy. Without saying anything more, she opened her little mouth, then boundless absorption power explosively surged out, and she started to absorb Void Zhenren’s Source energy.

At that instant, Chu Feng also discovered that after Void Zhenren’s consciousness was broken up, the radiance within the stone coffin actually became a bit brighter. The chilliness also increased quite a bit in power.

And when Chu Feng approached, he discovered that a dry corpse laid within the stone tomb. The body of the dry corpse was covered by a layer of shattered rocks. Those shattered rocks were blue-

coloured, and every single one emitted chilliness a lot colder than ice.

The most important thing was that within the blue-coloured shattered rocks, they actually contained Heaven power. The degree of Heaven power denseness was extremely horrifying, and other than the Heaven power, there were also some special berserk energy objects. In brief, those shattered rocks were obviously not ordinary objects. They were strange divine objects.

“It seems like these shattered rocks is key reason how Void Zhenren’s consciousness survived this long.” Chu Feng said.

“Not only that. Other than these shattered rocks, this Void Tower’s construct has been made with great attention. Because of the combination of the two, that’s the reason why his consciousness was able to live that long. But also, he could only stay within this tower. If he were to leave, the consciousness would have immediately dispersed.”

“Chu Feng, these shattered rocks aren’t simple. The power contained within is very berserk. Normal people have no way of refining them, but you should be able to. Quickly try it out. Perhaps it can let you break into the 8th level of the Profound realm.” Eggy excitedly said.

“Eggy, you... you’ve actually entered the 2nd level of the Heaven realm?” But seeing Eggy, Chu Feng was a bit shocked. Before, she was clearly still in the 9th level of the Profound realm, but after refining Void Zhenren’s Source energy, she actually stepped into the 2nd level of the Heaven realm.

After such a long time of understanding, Chu Feng had already discovered that Eggy's strength was very powerful. In terms of true battle power, she was even more powerful than Chu Feng with a Strange Armament.

But Eggy required a lot of Source energy in order to raise her cultivation, or at least compared to Zi Ling's World Spirit, the Source energy Eggy required was a lot more.

But right now, Eggy was actually able to continuously break through two levels, and also from the Profound realm to the Heaven realm. It meant that Void Zhenren's Source energy was indeed not simple. The old man's strength when he lived was definitely very strong.

"Hehe, this old guy had the peak cultivation of the 8th level of the Heaven realm, and because of the nourishment of these shattered rocks, not only was the slightest bit of Source energy not lost, it even gained a bit of strengthening." Eggy sweetly smiled. Since her cultivation rose greatly, she was very happy as well.

"It seems like this time, it has truly a worthy trip." At that instant, Chu Feng's face also brimmed with an excited smile. He cast his gaze back at the blue-coloured shattered rocks. He felt with the Heaven power that the shattered rocks contained, as long as they were refined by Chu Feng, it shouldn't be hard for him to break into the 8th level of the Profound realm.

# Chapter 490: Flames That Cover The Sky

---

Those blue-coloured shattered rocks were very special. Although there wasn't many, they were very challenging to refine.

Chu Feng determined that if it was a normal person, they would absolutely not have any way of refining the shattered rocks. However, the shattered rocks were not difficult to refine for him at all.

With only two hours of time, Chu Feng completely refined the blue-coloured shattered rocks. Moreover, the strangest thing was that no matter if it was the berserk power or the Heaven power, they were all cleanly absorbed by the Divine Lightning in his dantian.

The oddities that could simply not be refined, in a normal person's perspective, were cultivation oddities in front of Chu Feng. Once again, this showed the strong power of the Divine Lightning in his body.

But the most important thing was that after refining the blue-coloured shattered rocks, Chu Feng truly broke into the 8th level of the Profound realm. In addition, that was when Chu Feng still hadn't refined the Profound beads.

The Monstrous Monkey King gave Chu Feng thirty million Profound beads, but Chu Feng knew that the amount of cultivation resources he required was going to get more and more terrifying. The thirty million Profound beads would likely not even be close to

reaching half of the necessary resources, so even if he refined them all, he would not be able to make a breakthrough.

Thus, Chu Feng gave Li Zhangqing ten million beads for developing the Azure Dragon School's more excellent elders and disciples as well as for strengthening and developing the Azure Dragon School itself. After all, sooner or later, he was going to leave this place to head towards the Eastern Sea Region.

Chu Feng did not refine the remaining twenty million Profound beads. He left them on him in case he required them in the future.

As for the blue-coloured shattered rocks, they were actually able to directly raise Chu Feng to the 8th level of the Profound realm even when there was absolutely no power in his dantian. Moreover, after breaking through, some power was accumulated within his dantian, which meant even more that the blue-coloured shattered rocks were not simple.

“Senior, thank you.”

“As long as I, Chu Feng, am still breathing, I will definitely make the Void School more and more prosperous.”

After raising his cultivation, with Spirit Formation techniques, Chu Feng condensed a coffin cover out. On the coffin cover, he also made a spirit tablet and wrote Void Zhenren's grand name to express his respect and gratitude to him.

Only after doing all that did Chu Feng leave the secret room, and after he closed the secret room, he walked out of the Void Tower.

After Chu Feng left the Void Tower, the Void School just finished setting up the banquet, so Chu Feng and the others all took their seats.

Because of Chu Feng's current status, no one from the Void School dared to ask Chu Feng what he went to the Void Tower to do. On the other hand, Zi Ling who knew the reason for Chu Feng's trip put her little mouth close to Chu Feng's ear and gently asked, "How was it? Successful?"

"Check this out." Chu Feng lightly smiled and grabbed onto Zi Ling's pale little hand. Through special methods, he sent out a strand of aura into Zi Ling's hand.

"You broke through?" Feeling Chu Feng's aura of the 8th level of the Profound realm, Zi Ling's clear eyes instantly turned round and shocked expression appeared.

If Chu Feng broke into the 8th level of the Profound realm one year ago, she would absolutely not be this shocked, but she had experienced many things with Chu Feng. After knowing Chu Feng's method of cultivation, she had to be shocked.

Thinking back at first, in order to break into the 7th level of the Profound realm, Chu Feng had paid a huge price. So, Zi Ling understood very clearly that if Chu Feng wanted to make a breakthrough again, the price would be even huger, yet right now,



he actually broke through. It meant that Chu Feng must have gotten some special harvests on his trip.

“That Void Zhenren was still there. Although he wasn’t able to leave the Void Tower, he was able to see the things that happened in the Void School. He saw that I protected the Void School and felt gratitude in his heart, so he handed the oddities, which prevented his consciousness from being destroyed for a thousand years, to me.”

“If those things were given to normal people, perhaps they could not directly cultivate them and they would only have a supplementary effect, but incidentally, I was able to refine them.” Chu Feng didn’t hide anything. He went close to Zi Ling’s ear and detailedly narrated the details of what happened.

And after knowing everything, Zi Ling’s mood was great. Her little face of absolute beauty, from start to finish, was brimming with a sweet smile. She felt happy for Chu Feng from the bottom of her heart.

After all the dishes came up, the banquet officially started. It was definitely a banquet, and to thank Chu Feng and the others, it could be said that the second-rate school, the Void School, took all the delicious things and treasures out.

Those dishes were not simply sumptuous foods. There were also dishes made by special materials such as spiritual medicine, Origin medicine, and even Profound medicine. They had the effect of helping cultivation.

Although dishes like those didn't have the slightest effect on Chu Feng and the others, they at least felt the Void School's sincerity and warmth.

It was because many people there were great characters. Putting aside people such as Chu Feng, Zi Ling, Zhang Tianyi, Qi Fengyang, and the vice-head of the World Spirit Guild, even Jiang Hengyuan who stayed in the Valley of Hundred Bends for many years came.

At present, Chu Feng and the others knew that actually, he was a general from the Jiang Dynasty. He had the cultivation of the 7th level of the Heaven realm, and was the Jiang Dynasty's representative for helping Chu Feng rebuild the Azure Dragon School.

While facing the great characters who had extremely high statuses and strengths, the people from the Void School were very restrained. They were deeply afraid that they would say something wrong accidentally and offend those great characters. They would truly not even know how they died if something like that happened.

In a situation like that, Chu Feng became the bridge people connected with. The effect was really good. The more the crowd chatted, the more engaged they got and they actually chatted from daytime to nighttime.

But when it was deep in the night and when the sky was filled with stars, change appeared at the western night sky.

“Milords, quickly look! The sky over there is actually bright!” One of the Void School elders discovered that scene first, and said with shock as he pointed towards afar.

“This is?”

When Chu Feng and the others cast their gazes towards the horizon, their pupils shrunk while their eyes couldn’t avoid enlarging a lot.

Because they astonishedly discovered in the western night sky, there was indeed a section that became bright. However, it was obviously not just a strange scenery because the area of brightness was currently moving. Moreover, it was heading towards them.

Finally, the strange body of light neared. Chu Feng and the others could clearly see that it was a huge area of flames. It covered the sky and covered the moon as it arrived. It made the sky fiery red from burning, and strongly lit up the ground.

“Heavens, what is that?” At that instant, the faces of everyone on scene changed greatly. Especially the people from the Void School, they even started to scream in terror.

It was because the scene in the sky was really too scary. Although they were still unable to determine what it was, they were able to feel the horror of that thing.

“This is bad, it’s heading towards my Void School!” Suddenly, someone loudly howled, and other than the banquet place, the Void School was in chaos.

It was because currently, the flames which covered the the sky truly headed towards the Void School. Before it even neared, the Void Mountain Range was already brightly lit up as if it was day. People were able to feel the scorching hot temperature.

“Everyone, do not panic. Stay where you are!” At that instant, the one with the highest cultivation, Jiang Hengyuan, loudly shouted. His thunder-like voice resonated inside and outside the Void School. Only with that did the panicking elders and disciples settle down.

However, even though he calmed the crowd, he himself was tightly frowning. His gaze flashed with expressions of uneasiness because even if it was him, he felt endless fear when facing the huge area of flames in the sky.

# Chapter 491: What Exactly Is It?

---

rumble rumble rumble rumble

The flames came closer and closer as it endlessly made rumbling noises. Along with the nearing of the rumbling noises, the flames actually started to fall, and the direction they fell towards was the Void Mountain Range.

And along with the descent of the flames, boundless might also descended from the sky. That caused the entire mountain range to start to ceaselessly tremble. The frequency of trembling increased more and more, then at the end, it was like an earthquake as it swayed left and right.

“This is bad. Chu Feng, Zi Ling, Vice-head Gao, quickly follow me.” When the boundless flames streaked past above the Void School and rushed towards the mountain range behind, Jiang Hengyuan explosively shouted, then quickly after, flew up.

Seeing that, Chu Feng and the others didn’t delay as all of them quickly chased after him.

Only when he came to the edge of the Void School did Jiang Hengyuan stop and actually start to lay a Spirit Formation around the Void School.

At that instant, Chu Feng and the others understood. No matter what the flames were, after crashing into the ground, they would definitely create a huge ripple and the berserk ripple would engulf

the mountain range. At such a distance, the Void School would not avoid a calamity as well.

So, they had to quickly lay a Defense Spirit Formation in order to guard the Void School when the ripple came, or else the school that had existed for almost a thousand years would be destroyed because of that.

The Void School was very big. Even if they only protected one side, the Spirit Formation would waste quite a bit of time, and according to logic, it was a mission that could not be finished.

But many people on scene were Blue-coloured World Spiritists. As they combined their powers, a single boundless blue-coloured Spirit Formation instantly rose into the sky, guarding the edges of the Void School.

“Waa, such powerful methods! Are these the peak experts of the Nine Provinces?!”

Seeing the blue-coloured Spirit Formation open afar, everyone from the Void School endlessly sighed in admiration and yelled out in surprise. Especially the head of the Void School and the others. All of them had glittering gazes and felt never-ending shock.

What they sighed in admiration for wasn't the strength of the Jiang Dynasty or the World Spirit Guild because those powers and peak characters were like gods in their hearts, and that outlook was firmly rooted.

What they sighed in admiration for was Chu Feng. Two years ago, Chu Feng was only a Grey-cloak World Spiritist. To them at that time, Chu Feng was already extremely powerful.

But the current Chu Feng, with the short time of two years, actually became a Blue-cloak World Spiritist and was many times more powerful than two years ago. They could really not help but sigh in admiration.

boom~~~~~

But just at that time, a shocking huge explosion rang out and at the same time, the entire Void School intensely trembled. The violent charge caused many elders and disciples to be unable to stand stably and even many of the structures that were fortified with Spirit Formation were unable to bear that charge. Cracks started to appear, and some even split and collapsed.

The flames had fallen. They collided into the Void Mountain Range and the extremely terrifying energy ripple was spreading circularly.

The places that the ripple passed, no matter if they were trees or buildings, living things or dead things, were all instantly shattered and became dust.

“Quick! Concentrate fully on the formation or else this Void School will be heavily damaged.” Seeing the destructive horrifying ripple that was engulfing everything and coming over, Jiang Hengyuan loudly howled.

At that instant, Chu Feng and the others naturally did not dare to waste any time and strengthened the formation with their full strengths.

Finally, the brutally overwhelming might that the ripple brought along with countless fragments came surging over and fiercely collided into the Spirit Formation that the crowd combined powers to lay.

It had to be said that the ripple was really very powerful. Despite Chu Feng and the others joined hands, they still felt a huge pressure.

And that also indirectly showed the strength of the fallen object. The flames were too strong, so that was why such a horrifying ripple was made.

That was why when the ripples dispersed and the mountain range gradually settled, Chu Feng and the others who were standing in the air tightly knitted their brows. Shock and fear filled the gazes they looked towards the direction of the fallen flames with.

It was because in between several huge mountains, at that moment, it was no longer green. Rather, they became a continuous ocean of fire. Moreover, within the ocean of fire, extremely wild power seeped through and even the sky twisted by the heat.

“What exactly is that?” At that instant, Zhang Tianyi also flew



over and said with a face filled with shock.

“With such might, if it is not the descent of an extraordinary expert, then it is the descent of an extraordinary treasure. Everyone, are you willing to investigate to the end with me?” Jiang Hengyuan swept his gaze towards the crowd.

“Lord Jiang, the might of this ocean of fire is very strong. Before knowing what object it is, it doesn’t seem to be too appropriate to go over like this right?” Vice-head Gao was a bit worried.

“I am willing to go over.” But just at that time, Chu Feng nodded and gave his agreement.

“I also want to go over.” Zhang Tianyi was the same. Like Chu Feng, not only was he not afraid, instead, he seemed a bit excited.

“No matter what, if it is harmful to us, we will not be able to escape this calamity regardless. If it doesn’t wish to harm us, even if we go over on our own accord, we may not anger it. Besides, if it is truly a treasure, if we don’t take the chance and go and take it now and miss it, that would be quite a shame.”

Qi Fengyang also spoke. At the same time, all the experts on scene expressed their position one after the other. They wanted to go into the ocean of fire and investigate it. After all, opportunities coexisted with dangers. The ocean of fires descended from the sky and it had enormous might. No one wanted to miss that chance.

After reaching an agreement, they didn't dally and with Jiang Hengyuan as the leader, they became blurs of light and flew over, dashing towards the ocean of fire.

But they could do nothing as the flames were really too strange. The space above the ocean of fire was actually blocked by an alien energy. It wasn't a Spirit Formation, but it was impossible to pass through. If the crowd wanted to go to that place, they could only travel through the flames.

However, luckily, the strength of the people on scene were all not weak. Although the flames were powerful, with their current bodies, they could still, barely, resist it. But as they went deeper in, the flames became fiercer. At the end, Qi Fengyang and the others in the 1st level of the Heaven realm were actually unable to fight against it. They had no choice but to leave, so they backed away from the ocean of fire.

Finally, the ones who could still continue forward within the ocean of fire were only Chu Feng, Zi Ling, Jiang Hengyuan, Zhang Tianyi, and the vice-head of the World Spirit Guild.

But within the ocean of fire, even if it was Zi Ling and Zhang Tianyi, they had to respectively release the purple-coloured aura and blue-coloured flames to fight against the power of the flames.

As for Vice-head Gao, he used powerful Spirit Formation techniques to fight against it, but he still felt the huge pressure.

At that very instant, the only one who was able to not use special

methods and hold on with only his physical body was Jiang Hengyuan, the expert in the 7th level of the Heaven realm.

“Dammit. These flames are actually this horrifying. What exactly is in the heart of these flames?” At that instant, two lightning surged within Chu Feng’s eyes. His cultivation had already been risen to the 1st level of the Heaven realm, but it was useless as even with that, he had trouble enduring.

The flames were really too powerful. If he didn’t have the Black Tortoise Armor Technique protecting his body, it was likely he had no way of even bearing them.

# Chapter 492: Black-Clothed Old Man

---

“Dammit. Is it possible I must stop here?”

Chu Feng was very bitter because in the core of the ocean of fire, there were very possibly some opportunities. He didn't want to miss them.

hmm As Chu Feng was worried, a layer of purple-coloured aura suddenly came encircling. It orbited the horrifying flames that surrounded Chu Feng.

It was Zi Ling. She saw Chu Feng had troubling holding on, so she made a move without asking and helped Chu Feng hold off the flames.

And when the purple-coloured aura surrounded Chu Feng, the temperature of the scorching heat did indeed lower quite a bit, but looking at Zi Ling, her face was pale and her face was filled with sweat.

“Zi Ling, stop! In this place, you must protect yourself. You cannot split up your power to help me resist the flames.” Seeing that, Chu Feng hurried spoke to stop her.

“Lady Zi Ling, Chu Feng is correct. This ocean of fire is very deep and the remaining road is still long. If you want to continue forward, it's best to save your own power. If Chu Feng cannot hold on, he can only back out. After all, forcefully going onwards in a place like this is very dangerous.”

Jiang Hengyuan also spoke. Actually, with this strength, there would be no problem for him to split his power to help Chu Feng and the others fight against the flames.

But the reason why he didn't do that was because he knew that the flames were very strange. The deeper they went, the most overwhelming they would be. Even he himself could not guarantee he could walk to the deepest part, so naturally, he would not waste his power to protect others.

“Heh, Chu Feng, you’ve been looked down on! Quickly let me out. Watch me protect you to the deepest part.” Eggy smilingly said.

Chu Feng did not waste time and with a thought, he opened the World Spirit Gate. In the instant the gate opened, boundless black-coloured gas violently rushed out of the gate and instantly enveloped Chu Feng.

Not only did the black-coloured gas envelop Chu Feng, it even cut off the purple-coloured aura Zi Ling covered Chu Feng with. The most important part was that after the black-coloured gas appeared, Chu Feng was actually unable to feel, in the slightest, the scorching hot temperature of the flames.

“Hehe, excuse me, but as long as I am here, I guarantee that Chu Feng won’t lose to any of you.”

Just at that time, Eggy, who wore a black-coloured feathered

skirt, naughtily walked out. She first shot Jiang Hengyuan a glance, then skipped and jumped deeper into the flames. In the places she passed, the flames actually backed away on their own, as if they feared her.

“Asura World Spirit?” After seeing Eggy, Jiang Hengyuan’s eyes flashed and he felt greatly shocked. Only then did he meaningfully look towards Chu Feng and say, “Chu Feng, you are indeed impressive. You’ve actually made a contract with an Asura World Spirit!”

“Senior, you overpraise me.” Chu Feng calmly smiled, but also didn’t waste time speaking and continued forward.

Indeed, the flames were really too strange. The deeper they went, the fiercer they got. At the later stages, they were actually like wild beasts as they endlessly went into vicious states to attack people, and even made strange howls.

In a situation like that, Vice-head Gao was the first to be unable to continue and was forced back. Quickly after, Zi Ling was also unable to bear it. Before walking too much farther, even Zhang Tianyi couldn’t do it.

On the other hand, Chu Feng, who had Eggy’s protection, was like a person unrelated to everything that was happening, and was even more relaxed than Jiang Hengyuan.

That forced Jiang Hengyuan to look at Chu Feng in another light because he discovered that Eggy was very powerful. Although the

World Spirit only had the cultivation of the 2nd level of the Heaven realm, faintly, even he felt some feelings of danger from Eggy.

As for why he looked at Chu Feng in another light, it was not only because of Eggy. It was because Eggy was Chu Feng's World Spirit. In simpler terms, no matter how much stronger Eggy was, she had to listen to Chu Feng. So, it meant that Chu Feng was the one who was truly powerful.

“Ahh!”

cough cough cough cough

When Chu Feng and Jiang Hengyuan walked to the deepest part of the ocean of fire, Jiang Hengyuan actually spat out a mouthful of blood, then started to painfully cough.

“Senior, are you okay?” Turning his head back to look, Chu Feng couldn't help but be shocked. He astonishedly discovered that at present, Jiang Hengyuan's face was extremely strange. His entire body was scalding, and even his aura became unstable.

“Chu Feng! I can't go on. These flames are too strange, they actually entered my body without me knowing. I cannot continue forward, or else even if I don't get burned by these flames, I will explode from the inside and die.”

“Right now, the one who is able to continue searching and

continue in this ocean of fire is only you. But do not force yourself. If you have trouble resisting against the flames, you must immediately return.”

Jiang Hengyuan patted Chu Feng’s shoulder, then after he meaningfully looked at the nearby Eggy, without turning his head again, he went back on the path he came from.

“Tch, his cultivation is fine, but regretfully, his physique is too poor.” Looking at Jiang Hengyuan’s back, Eggy disdainfully curled her lips, then continued forward.

Looking at Eggy who was both naughty and “tsundere”, Chu Feng could only helplessly shake his head. Eggy was very powerful, so powerful that even Chu Feng could not estimate how powerful she was.

Although she only had the cultivation of the 2nd level of the Heaven realm currently, it was likely that even Jiang Hengyuan in the 7th level of the Heaven realm could not be compared to her battle power.

Eggy was that terrifying. At first, after Eggy borrowed Chu Feng’s body in the White Tiger Mountain Range to crush Zi Ling, Chu Feng already knew.

After that, Eggy led the way and Chu Feng quickly followed. Finally, they arrived at the deepest part of the ocean of fire.



At that instant, the flames all around them rose into the sky and endlessly rolled and howled. Not only would they materialize to attack Chu Feng and Eggy, they even cut off Chu Feng's Spirit power, preventing him from determining the directions.

At that instant, Chu Feng panicked. Surrounding him was an area filled with flames. Without Spirit power, he was equal to a blind person. If he messed up, he would possibly even be stuck there.

ta ta ta ta...

But just at that time, Chu Feng's ears jumped. Quickly after, he abruptly cast his fierce gaze towards one side of the ocean of fire because he had actually heard footsteps within the howling.

wuaoo

Indeed, shortly after Chu Feng heard those footsteps and after the flames furiously howled, both walls of flames avoided the origin of the noises and formed a road. And at the end of the road, a figure wearing a black-coloured robe was gradually approaching.

It was an old man. The long black hair on his head reached his waist and fluttered without wind. He was extremely overbearing.

The most special thing was his pair of aged eyes. Although the corners of his eyes were dried wrinkles, his eyes' expression was extremely terrifying, just like a death god's.

He only looked at Chu Feng once, but Chu Feng couldn't help taking a few steps back. The usually calm Chu Feng, at present, his heart was actually beating quicker, feeling an unprecedented feeling of danger.

It was killing intent. Extremely powerful killing intent. That killing intent was not innate, but killing intent that only people who truly killed countless living had.

If it was said that a person's killing intent strength could be measured by the number of people killed, then the number of people the old man killed would definitely have passed several tens of millions.

# Chapter 493: Terrifying Huge Bird

---

“Interesting. I didn’t expect that someone would have a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World in a desolate place like this. And it’s even a brat with only the cultivation of the 8th level of the Profound realm.” The black-robed old man swept his gaze over Eggy and Chu Feng, and unconcernedly said.

At that instant, Chu Feng couldn’t help but be shocked. He clearly used the power of the two lightning and raised his cultivation to the 1st level of the Heaven realm, but that old man actually saw through his fake cultivation, and knew that his real cultivation was the 8th level of the Profound realm.

In addition, Chu Feng felt a threatening feeling that he had never felt before from the old man as well as an unfathomably deep cultivation. He determined that the old man was an extraordinary expert, possibly even an expert in the Martial Lord realm.

“Let me see what’s so special about a brat like you.” Suddenly, the old man’s gaze changed and he actually headed towards Chu Feng.

“Old bastard, move, or else don’t blame me for not holding myself back.” Seeing that, Eggy’s face changed as she explosively yelled. Simultaneously, vast black-coloured gas burst out from her body. When the black-coloured gas appeared, cries similar to those of wolves and ghosts immediately sounded. It was extremely terrifying.

But even with such horrifying black-coloured gas, the black-clothed old man's face didn't change. Rather, he indifferently smiled and said, "Not bad. This level of battle power belongs to the noble bloodline of Asura World Spirits. It is really quite rare."

And as he spoke, a layer of golden radiance suddenly spread out from his body. Not only did it stop Eggy's black-coloured flames, it actually also rapidly pressed it back. Afterwards, the golden radiance became a huge net and in only an instant, it forced the black-coloured gas back into Eggy's body.

"Gold-coloured Spirit Formation power? You're a Gold-cloak World Spiritist?!" Chu Feng was endlessly shocked because he already recognized the golden radiance. It was gold-coloured Spirit Formation power that only Gold-cloak World Spiritists could use.

A Purple-cloak World Spiritist could already be called a legend in the continent of the Nine Provinces. A Gold-cloak World Spiritist would be a legend within legends. That person was actually a Gold-cloak World Spiritist, which meant that most likely, he wasn't a person from the continent of the Nine Provinces and was indeed, an extraordinary expert.

"Not bad, you have some observation skills." Suddenly, the old man's voice rang out behind Chu Feng's ears. In that instant, Chu Feng also astonishedly discovered that the black-clothed old man who was originally nearby disappeared.

"Ah!"

But when Chu Feng turned around, he saw a big hand already approaching him and had pressed onto his chest.

“Ahh~~~~”

The old man's speed was really too quick. When Chu Feng saw his hand, his palm had already tightly grabbed onto his own chest. At the same time, layers of strange power also entered his body and started to scurry everywhere inside Chu Feng's body, seemingly trying to search for something.

He was actually searching Chu Feng's body, looking for what was special about Chu Feng.

“Mm?” However, when the strange power prepared to enter Chu Feng's dantian, the black-clothed old man's face suddenly changed greatly. Quickly after, he hurriedly let go of the hand which was grabbing Chu Feng.

At that instant, the gaze he looked at Chu Feng with became very complicated. He mumbled to himself, “Unexpected, unexpected! In such a desolate place, such an unsimple brat actually appeared!”

“Whatever, whatever. It is really rare for a brat like you to appear in a place like this. Today, I shall spare your life.”

As he spoke, the black-clothed old man suddenly waved his big sleeve, then the surrounding flames started to rapidly extinguish. With only a blink, the vast ocean of fire that took over several

mountains completely disappeared. It became rolling dense smoke, and at the same time, the black-clothed old man also disappeared.

“So these are the methods of a Gold-cloak World Spiritist?” Chu Feng looked at the ground which was pitch-black and gave off bursts of heat. He felt endless shock in his heart.

“Chu Feng, quickly look at this!” But just at that time, Eggy cried out in surprise.

Turning his head to look, Chu Feng astonishedly discovered that an enormous huge thing appeared in the distance. It was a huge bird.

That bird was extremely huge. So huge that its body was as big as a small hill. Its entire body's feathers were golden. They were glittering and shining, and were very blinding.

However, although the bird had a very beautiful appearance, many places on its body were dangerous weapons. Within its huge mouth, there were pointed teeth. Even every single feather was an indestructible sharp blade.

But sadly, at that very instant, the terrifying huge bird did not have the aura of life, but on its enormous body, frightening flames still lingered around, scuttering everywhere.

The flames were the same flames from the ocean of fire before, which meant that the flames weren't made by the black-clothed

old man but by the terrifying huge bird.

“Haha, impressive! This is a Monstrous Beast that truly has special blood. It is a truly powerful Monstrous Beast, fated to become a king of Monstrous Beasts when it was born!”

“When something like the five big Monster Kings of the Thousand Monster Mountain, or even your big brother, that little monkey butt, is compared to this Monstrous Beast, they are so insanely weak.” At that instant, Eggy was unendingly excited. She madly ran towards the huge bird with skips and jumps.

Seeing that, Chu Feng also hurriedly went over, deeply afraid of the appearance of any change and that Eggy would meet danger.

But after Chu Feng neared the terrifying huge bird, even more so, he felt that he was endlessly minuscule. In front of it, Chu Feng was truly as minuscule as an ant. He felt like a Monstrous Beast wasn't in front of him, but a small hill.

“Dammit, dammit! Its Source energy has been absorbed. It was even absorbed so cleanly! Or else, with this Monstrous Beast's Source energy, it would have definitely made my cultivation rise greatly and I would have been able to continuously make breakthroughs for many levels. Dammit. Dammit!” Suddenly, Eggy started to yell as she was filled with resentment.

At that moment, Chu Feng also discovered that the terrifying huge bird's Source energy was indeed cleanly consumed and not even a trace remained.

Without much thinking, Chu Feng knew who did that. It was definitely the black-clothed old man just now.

He was a Gold-cloak World Spiritist, so he undoubtedly made many contracts with many powerful World Spirits. It was probable that the huge bird was killed by him, and the reason he killed the huge bird was very simple as well. To absorb its Source energy.

“Heavens! In this world, there is actually such a huge bird?!”

Just at that time, when Zhang Tianyi, Jiang Hengyuan, Qi Fengyang, Gao Qizhi, Zi Ling, and the others saw the ocean of fire extinguished, all of them returned and came up to the huge bird. Their faces were filled with shock as they observed in detail. Because, no matter who it was in their group, it was the first time they saw such an enormous Monstrous Beast.

“Chu Feng, what has happened here? Was the ocean of fire extinguished by you?” Jiang Hengyuan came to Chu Feng’s side and asked with a face filled with amazement.

Chu Feng thought for a while, but at the end, he didn’t plan to tell him the truth. He feigned being at a loss as he shook his head and said, “It wasn’t me. It extinguished itself. Perhaps because this huge bird was living before so the flames lived along with it, and since it has died now, the ocean of fire has also been extinguished.”



# Zi Family's Secret

## Chapter 494: A Secret

---

“Mm, that should be right.” After hearing Chu Feng’s reply, Jiang Hengyuan cast his gaze back at the terrifying huge bird. He discovered that the flames on the huge bird’s body was also currently returning back to its body. So, to Chu Feng’s words, he deeply believed them and did not doubt. He did not have the slightest trace of suspicion.

Afterwards, Jiang Hengyuan and the others started to check the huge bird in detail, seeing whether there were treasures on its body or not.

But at the end, they didn’t find any treasure on the huge bird. However, even so, Jiang Hengyuan still personally laid a vast Concealment Spirit Formation to hide the huge bird. Moreover, Jiang Hengyuan prepared to sleep next to the huge bird to act as guard there.

Although the huge bird didn’t bring any treasures, it itself was a treasure. Its feathers, teeth, and bones could be made into weapons. Extremely powerful weapons. Through a World Spiritist’s processing, they could all be made into treasure-level weapons that were only second to Strange Armaments.

Even its meat and organs, after eating, could help the health of one’s mind and body. They could also be concocted into medicine, and even made into cultivation resources.

However, that huge bird was very strong. Even though it was

already dead at present and its power had dissipated, its physical body was still very strong. Breaking it up was still a huge project so even if it was Jiang Hengyuan, he immediately sent news back to the Jiang Dynasty and asked dynasty experts to come there.

In less than a few days, the Monstrous Monkey King and the Jiang Dynasty experts, who stayed in the Azure Dragon School, came. So it turned out that the flames shocked almost the entire Azure Province. The experts came there because they were chasing after the flames.

But other than the Monstrous Monkey King and the others, another expert also came. It was Zi Xuanyuan. Zi Ling's grandfather actually came as well.

“This is a Raging Fire Divine Bird. It is a Monstrous Beast species that has special blood in the Eastern Sea Region. A powerful existence that has its own land in the Eastern Sea Region.”

“But this Raging Fire Divine Bird can be said to be an existence of the Bird King level. A Raging Fire Divine Bird would not die for no reason.”

Zi Xuanyuan came from the Eastern Sea Region so he immediately recognized the origin of the terrifying huge bird. In addition, within Zi Xuanyuan's eyes, one could see deep fear, even terror.

“There are indeed a few injuries on the body of this Raging Fire Divine Bird and when it was living, it should have fought against a

person. However, these are not fatal injuries. I believe that its fatal injury should have come from inside its body.” Just at that time, Jiang Hengyuan spoke. He had already carefully examined the terrifying huge bird.

“Senior Zi, from what you see, when this Raging Fire Divine Bird lived, what realm should its cultivation be in? Had it stepped into the level of Martial Lords?” Afterwards, Jiang Hengyuan looked at Zi Xuanyuan again.

Not only was Zi Xuanyuan older than him, his cultivation was also stronger than his. The only person who could equally fight against Zi Xuanyuan was likely only the Monstrous Monkey King. So, Jiang Hengyuan had to be respectful towards Zi Xuanyuan.

“Martial Lord? You are underestimating this Raging Fire Divine Bird too much. The Raging Fire Divine Bird is a Monstrous Beast that has a pure bloodline. It comes from the ancient times, and has already been thriving in this world for several tens of thousands of years.”

“Monstrous Beasts that are more like that will be more likely to not form a humanoid shape. They will keep their original Monstrous Beast shape to reproduce and survive.”

“So, the strength of the Raging Fire Divine Bird can be determined based on their body size. According to this Raging Fire Divine Bird’s body size, it should be of the Bird King level.”

“The number of Raging Fire Divine Birds in the Bird King level,

from the group of Raging Fire Divine Birds back then, does not exceed three. So, this Raging Fire Divine Bird was absolutely not only in the Martial Lord realm. It is an existence in the Martial King level.” Zi Xuanyuan said with a face full of solemnness.

“What? Martial King?!” Hearing those words, not a single person on scene wasn’t greatly shocked. In the continent of the Nine Provinces, not a single person could step into the Martial Lord realm, so how terrifying of an existence was a Martial King? And what kind of existence would the one who killed the Raging Fire Divine Bird be?

But compared to other people’s pure shock and wild guessing, Chu Feng lightly frowned. He felt uneasiness in his heart because he couldn’t help but think about the black-clothed old man.

If it was said that the Raging Fire Divine Bird was a Martial King level existence, and it was indeed killed by the black-clothed old man, it also meant that the black-clothed old man was at least an expert of the Martial King level.

At present, in the continent of the Nine Provinces, a Martial King expert actually came, yet incidentally right now, it was the time when the Jiang Dynasty prepared to open the Emperor Tomb.

If the news of the Emperor Tomb was known, it was likely that the black-clothed old man would poke his foot in. After all, with the enticement of an Emperor Tomb, even if it was a Gold-cloak World Spiritist, he would definitely feel very interested.

And if the black-clothed old man truly interfered, Chu Feng would truly not know whether it was fortune or a disaster because the killing intent of the black-clothed old man was too dense. Chu Feng did not dare to be sure whether he would kill the people from the Jiang Dynasty for the treasures.

So, Chu Feng was hesitating. Hesitating whether he should tell that to the Jiang Dynasty. However, the old man's strength was too powerful. Chu Feng didn't even truly know whether the old man left or not.

If the black-clothed old man didn't leave and Chu Feng told the others about him, he didn't dare to guarantee that the old man wouldn't be angered. At that time, it was possible that his tiny life couldn't not be kept.

It wouldn't matter if he died, but if the old man was going to completely kill everyone, and also kill Zi Ling as well as his family, that would be a huge problem.

At the end, Chu Feng did not speak. He decided to make a wager and hoped that the black-clothed old man left immediately. After all, in a place like this, there was no meaning in staying behind for such a powerful person like himself.

"Chu Feng, follow me over. I have something I want to tell you alone." Suddenly, Zi Xuanyuan patted Chu Feng's shoulder.

"Grandfather, what's the matter? Can I listen in as well?" Seeing that, Zi Ling hurriedly came over with smiles.

“You little girl, would I still harm Chu Feng?” Seeing his own granddaughter protect Chu Feng in such a way, Zi Xuanyuan felt very helpless.

“Zi Ling, don’t worry. I’ll quickly return after leaving with Senior Xuanyuan.” Chu Feng said as he smiled.

“Then okay.” Seeing Chu Feng speak, only then did Zi Ling obediently nod her head.

“Ahh, I’ve raised you for so many years, yet that is inferior to one year with Chu Feng. You little girl...”

Seeing his stubborn granddaughter being actually so obedient in front of Chu Feng, Zi Xuanyuan felt quite helpless, but there was still a smile of relief on his face.

Quickly after, Zi Xuanyuan rose into the air, and Chu Feng also closely followed. Only after the two of them flew out of the Void Mountain Range and entered a large area of white clouds did Zi Xuanyuan wave his big sleeve and laid a purple-coloured Soundproofing Spirit Formation.

At that instant, Chu Feng was shocked in his heart. He never would have thought that Zi Xuanyuan was also a World Spiritist, and he was even a Purple-cloak World Spiritist.

But thinking a bit more in detail, he calmed back down. After all,

that old man was already unfathomable from the start. If there were even Gold-cloak World Spiritists in the Eastern Sea Region, it would be much more acceptable for there to be Purple-cloak World Spiritists.

“Chu Feng. Today, I will tell you a secret that even Zi Ling doesn’t know.” Finally, Zi Xuanyuan spoke.



# Chapter 495: Astonishing Truth

---

“Senior, what secret?” Chu Feng curiously asked and made an appearance of attentive listening.

“I wonder if Zi Ling talked to you about her ancestry and why I brought her to this place?” Zi Xuanyuan smilingly asked.

“Senior, I already know everything. I will work hard to cultivate. I will become even stronger, and sooner or later, I will kill Zi Ling’s enemy for her.”

“That’s right. Senior, who’s the person that killed Zi Ling parents as well as all her and your relatives? Can you tell me?” Chu Feng impatiently asked.

“Sigh.” Seeing how Chu Feng was behaving, Zi Xuanyuan felt very relieved, but he helplessly sighed, then said, “Actually, Zi Ling’s parents have not died yet, and our Zi family still exists.”

“What? Zi Ling’s parents haven’t died yet?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s pupils abruptly shrunk and he couldn’t help being a bit shocked.

“I tricked Zi Ling and made up a lie so big, it could fill up the sky.” Zi Xuanyuan said.

“Senior, what exactly happened?” Chu Feng asked closely.

“This matter is a long story. It’s better that I tell you from the start.”

“In the Eastern Sea Region, although my Zi family isn’t some huge power, it can still be counted as a slightly famous family. In addition, we had always been low-profile and lived in harmony with nearby powers. Our lives were lived quite peacefully, and in the Eastern Sea Region, our family has been passed down for several hundred years.”

“However, everything changed because of Zi Ling’s birth. Zi Ling is a Divine Body, so when she was born, an abnormal scene appeared. It shocked the land that was the Eastern Sea Region.”

“Logically speaking, it was a good thing. After all, Divine Bodies are geniuses with the blessing of the heavens. When born, they’re fated to have outstanding achievements in the future.”

“The surrounding powers all came over to congratulate. Even the ones who had conflicts with my Zi family wanted to dissolve the grudges and gain some relations.”

“Even the enormous force of the Eastern Sea Region, the Immortal Execution Archipelago, came to my Zi family and wanted to set up a marriage between Zi Ling and the young master of the archipelago.”

“To my Zi family, that was a heavenly huge joyous event. It even surpassed Zi Ling’s birth and her identity of a Divine Body.”

“It’s because the Immortal Execution Archipelago is truly too strong. So strong that in the Eastern Sea Region, there aren’t many powers that can directly fight against it. For Zi Ling to be able to marry the young master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago meant that in the future, she would become the young lady of the Immortal Execution Archipelago.”

“They even made a promise, stating on the great marriage day between Zi Ling and the young master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, my Zi family could all enter the Immortal Execution Archipelago and become a member of it.”

“Moreover, in order for Zi Ling to have even better growth, an elder of the Immortal Execution Archipelago fed Zi Ling a special pellet. Quickly after, he set a date, stating that on the year Zi Ling became twenty years old, they would come to escort Zi Ling for the marriage.”

“Sigh~~~” Speaking to that point, the helplessness on Zi Xuanyuan’s face instantly became a bit stronger.

“What came after?” Chu Feng closely asked. He felt that something must have occurred, or else the scene today wouldn’t be happening.

“The things were not as simple as imagined. Because at that moment I was there, and as a World Spiritist, I have always liked to study ancient texts to learn things many people don’t know about, I noticed that the Immortal Execution Archipelago didn’t feed Zi Ling a good pellet that stabilized her strength and bettered her development. What they fed her was an already extinct

poison.” Zi Xuanyuan spoke.

“Poison?!” Chu Feng felt greatly shocked.

“That’s right. It was an extremely poisonous poison. Poison that only belonged to the ancient times, and were specifically given to Divine Bodies as well as people with special bloodlines. So, that poison had a name. The Heaven Gripping Pellet. Poison specifically used for strangling geniuses.”

“After taking the poison, it would more or less restrict the special power of the consumer. In reality, it was accumulating the consumer’s special power, and when they reached twenty years old, the accumulation of the special power would reach the highest state.”

“At the time that person is twenty years old, as long as they do the thing between a man and a woman, all of their power would be taken by the other person. After that, the one who consumed the poison would become ordinary, because they would lose their power completely. From then on, they would lose their special power, and even have no cultivation at all.”

“In contrast, before twenty years old, the consumer could not do the thing between a man and woman, or else the other person would die, and the consumer would also die because of power loss.” Zi Xuanyuan said.

“What poisonous methods! That Immortal Execution Archipelago truly ought to die.” At that instant, Chu Feng finally

understood why Zi Ling wasn't willing to do the thing between a man and woman no matter what. Even when Chu Feng kissed Zi Ling, sometimes, she would be very afraid. So she had taken such a poisonous thing.

As long as he recalled that the person he loved was actually forced to take such a poison shortly after birth to become a tool for raising cultivation, Chu Feng truly felt his fury burn in his heart and was endlessly angry.

“At first, I wasn't definitely sure that the pellet was the Heaven Gripping Pellet, but when the Immortal Execution Island set the marriage date to be when Zi Ling was twenty full years old, and instructed them to keep an eye on Zi Ling, and told them it was better for Zi Ling to keep a distance from the opposite gender, I pretty much confirmed that it was doubtlessly the Heaven Gripping Pellet.”

“So, I told this to Zi Ling's parents as well as to the master of the Zi family, and also some people who managed the home.”

“But it was useless as they simply didn't believe the words I said. They unendingly trusted the Immortal Execution Archipelago: the righteous, renowned family who removed demons and protected virtues.”

“For Zi Ling's safety, I had no choice but to secretly take Zi Ling away and even kill an old man and a baby to feign the appearance of an accident happening to Zi Ling and me.”

“Afterwards, I escaped and came to this desolate place, changed names, and also made up a heavenly huge lie to Zi Ling. I wanted to agitate her will to fight so she could become powerful earlier and return to the Eastern Sea Region in order to go to the Immortal Execution Archipelago for demanding the antidote.” Zi Xuanyuan said.

“Senior, then why have you told this matter to me? Has some change happened?” Chu Feng who knew the truth felt uneasy. He felt that Zi Xuanyuan would not tell him all this for no reason at all.

“Honestly speaking, the ruse I set up back then has been seen through. Moreover, for so many years, the Zi family have kept on searching for Zi Ling and me. Right now, the master of my Zi family and Zi Ling’s parents have already come to the continent of the Nine Provinces. Also, they have found me.” Zi Xuanyuan said.

“What? Zi Ling’s parents have come? What are they planning to do? Is it possible they want to bring Zi Ling back? To go marry the master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago?” Chu Feng’s face changed greatly because it was something he could absolutely not bear.

“Sigh. It’s my fault. I overestimated myself, and underestimated the Immortal Execution Archipelago.”

“After Zi Ling and I left, not only did the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago not make things difficult for the Zi family, they even maintained the marriage agreement and kept on providing cultivation resources and Mysterious Techniques and

martial skills to assist the Zi family.”

“This caused the Zi family, who originally believed the Immortal Execution Archipelago already, to deeply trust them even more and to not doubt them at all. They felt deeply grateful for their kindness, and made a resolution to find Zi Ling and me in order to complete the marriage agreement to repay the favours and kindness from the Immortal Execution Archipelago.”

“Right now, they have already found me and they have also come to the Azure Province. Zi Ling and I will follow them back to the Eastern Sea Region, or else not only will they kill you, they will kill everyone in the continent of the Nine Provinces.”

“They will do that for no other reason but because the continent of the Nine Provinces contained Zi Ling and me for sixteen full years.”

## Chapter 496: Refusal

---

“Senior, when have you prepared to take Zi Ling away?” After knowing everything and after a while of silence, Chu Feng spoke again to ask.

“I will bring Zi Ling away today.” Zi Xuanyuan replied.

“Then how will you tell Zi Ling about this?” Chu Feng asked.

“Actually, since everything has reached this state, I can only speak the truth. However, I’m only afraid that Zi Ling’s behavior will be too intense and that she will refuse to return with them, wanting to stay with you regardless of life or death. At that time, her actions would harm you and everyone in the continent of the Nine Provinces.”

“So, Chu Feng, it would be the best if you went and hide right now. It would be the best if you left right now, and the farther you leave, the better.” Zi Xuanyuan said.

“Ho...” But after hearing Zi Xuanyuan’s words, Chu Feng suddenly smiled. Then quickly after, he said, “Senior, I won’t stop Zi Ling if she has to leave, but even more so, I won’t cowardly hide. Let us return.”

“Ahh child, you are indeed as stubborn as Zi Ling.” Facing Chu Feng’s response, Zi Xuanyuan wasn’t too surprised. Rather, it was as if he already expected that. So, he didn’t force anything onto Chu Feng. He dissolved the purple-coloured Spirit Formation and



returned to the Void Mountain Range.

However, when they came back to where the Raging Fire Divine Bird was, Zi Ling wasn't there. In addition to that, everyone on scene were looking left and right with expressions of panic.

"Chu Feng, this is bad! Zi Ling has been taken away by someone!" Seeing Chu Feng, Zhang Tianyi hurriedly rose into the air and said with a face filled with nervousness.

"Who was it?" Chu Feng asked.

"It was an old man, as well as a man and a woman. They called themselves Zi Ling's parents, but Zi Ling didn't even recognize them."

"However, they were too strong. We had no way of fighting back and we could only watch as they took Zi Ling away." Zhang Tianyi explained.

"Then do you know where they went?" Chu Feng's brows were tightly locked. He already knew who took away Zi Ling.

"I don't know. They didn't say anything before leaving." Zhang Tianyi shook his head.

"Zi Yuanshan! Bring that Chu Feng to the Void School. We will wait for you two on the top of the Void Tower." But just at that time, an extremely loud voice of an old man suddenly came from

the direction of the Void School.

“It’s... It’s them! Is it possible that they haven’t left yet?” Hearing that voice, Zhang Tianyi and the others couldn’t help being greatly shocked, and more or less, expressions of fear emerged onto their faces.

“Senior?” At that moment, Chu Feng cast his gaze towards Zi Xuanyuan who was by his side.

“That’s right, it’s them. Zi Yuanshan is my real name. Chu Feng, follow me over. It seems like from the start, they had never planned to let me bring Zi Ling to see them myself.” Zi Xuanyuan said.

“Chu Feng, what is happening?” Seeing that, Zhang Tianyi hurried asked.

“This matter is a long story. I’ll tell all of you later. Right now, it would be the best for all of you to return to the Azure Dragon School. Wait until I finish handling the things here, then I’ll go find you.” Chu Feng was worried that the people on scene would get affected so he urged them to leave.

The people there were all intelligent people, so they all understood the meaning behind Chu Feng’s words. They also felt that the three who came had unkind intentions, so no one asked any more. However, the uneasiness on their faces became a bit stronger.

“Little boy, those three people are unsimple. They should all be Martial Lord experts. They are not people from the continent of the Nine Provinces, so do not be rash.”

At that instant, the Monstrous Monkey King also spoke. On the monstrous monkey's face that had never feared the heavens or the earth, a hint of fear had actually also appeared.

Looking back at Jiang Hengyuan and the others, they were the same. It could be seen that they were indeed terrified. Martial Lord experts were indeed not existences they could fight against.

“Everyone, don't worry. ‘If it's fortune, it's not a disaster. If it's a disaster, it's unavoidable 1.’” Chu Feng relievedly smiled, then looked at Zi Xuanyuan and said, “Senior, let's go over.”

“Mm.” Zi Xuanyuan nodded his head, then grabbed Chu Feng's shoulder and rose into the sky. With a gust of wind blowing past, they instantly passed over countless mountain heads and came above the Void School.

At that instant, Chu Feng stood in the high sky and was able to see that on the top of the Void Tower, there was a tea table. Zi Ling sat next to the tea table, and beside her, there was even a man and a woman, as well as an old man.

The man and woman had very handsome and beautiful appearances. Looking carefully, they truly did look a bit similar to Zi Ling. At that instant, they were dotingly looking at Zi Ling, chatting about something with her.

As for the old man, he was also full of smiles. Although he didn't say anything, he was smilingly looking at Zi Ling and unendingly examining her. He even endlessly nodded his head.

But compared to them, Zi Ling's current face was quite unsightly. She was sweeping her gaze along the horizon, seemingly trying to search for something.

When she saw Chu Feng and Zi Xuanyuan, she hurriedly stood up and flew over. She went up to Chu Feng and Zi Xuanyuan, then asked him, "Grandfather, was what they said all true? They are my parents? My Zi family is still living well, and you tricked me?"

"This..." Zi Xuanyuan didn't know how to reply and his face was filled with shame. But as things were, he had no way of concealing it. At the end, he could only silently nod his head.

"But grandfather, why did you need to trick me? Why did you need to take me away from my parents' side? Why did you need to take me away from my family, and even lied, saying that they were all killed and wanted me to avenge them?" Zi Ling kept on asking with a face filled with confusion. More or less, in her eyes, there was some blame.

"Zi Ling, you must believe Senior Zi. He has hidden troubles. Everything he has done is for the sake of you." Chu Feng explained.

After hearing Chu Feng's words, only then did Zi Ling instantly

calm down quite a bit.

“Zi Yuanshan, bring Yu’er and Chu Feng down. If you have things to say, sit down first.” Just at that time, the so-called master of the Zi family spoke.

“Yu’er?” Hearing that name, Chu Feng was first taken aback, but he reacted very quickly. It should be Zi Ling’s previous name.

“Chu Feng, Zi Ling, let’s go over there to speak.” Zi Xuanyuan went over first and landed on top of the tower.

Quickly after, Chu Feng and Zi Ling descended together. With the invitation of Zi Ling’s parents, they sat in front of the tea table on two empty chairs.

At first, Zi Ling’s parents first detailedly examined Chu Feng. The mother’s gaze was rather soft, and there was perhaps even some admiration, but the father’s gaze was filled with enmity. It could be seen that he really did not like Chu Feng.

As for the Zi family master who had unfathomably deep cultivation, although he also smilingly examined Chu Feng, he could feel that he very casually looked at himself. In addition to that, although he had a smile on his face, his gaze was not kind. It could be said that he had extremely deep thoughts.

After that, with the five of them on one table, they chatted for a long time. They told Zi Ling about the things that happened back

then in detail, and also mentioned the arranged marriage set between Zi Ling and the Immortal Execution Archipelago, as well as their goal by coming here to find Zi Ling: to bring her back.

After knowing everything, Zi Ling shut her eyes and stayed in silence for a long time. Only then did she gradually stand back up. She first looked at Chu Feng with a light smile, then looked at Zi Xuanyuan, and only at the end did she cast her gaze towards her own parents and the family master and said, “Thank you for your kind intentions, but I think I have already gotten used to my current life. Besides, I already have a person I love, so I will not follow you back.”

# Chapter 497: I'll Go Back With You

---

“Yu’er, what did you say?”

“The Immortal Execution Archipelago has cared so much for our Zi family. If you don’t go back with us, how can we face our family?” After hearing Zi Ling’s words, the face of Zi Ling’s father changed greatly. He abruptly stood up and actually pointed at Zi Ling and furiously reprimanded.

“Who’s Yu’er? I am not called Zi Yu’er. I am called Zi Ling.”

“Also, I don’t even know who the Immortal Execution Archipelago is. It is you who set the arranged marriage with them, not me. So, it is unrelated to me.” Zi Ling also stood up. She faced her own father and fiercely refuted.

“You!” Seeing Zi Ling speak to him like that, his face greened from fury, but at the end, his expression changed, his gaze turned, and he actually wanted to aim the spearhead towards Chu Feng instead.

It was because he knew that the person Zi Ling could not let go the most was Chu Feng. The person who was holding Zi Ling back was Chu Feng. Everything of everything was because of Chu Feng.

“Zi Qiang, what are you doing? Don’t scare Yu’er.” Seeing that, Zi Ling’s mother hurriedly pulled the corners of Zi Ling’s father’s clothes and forcefully pulled him back down onto the chair.

But Zi Ling's father still pointed his finger towards Chu Feng and said, "No matter where, is a brat like him worth it for you to do so much? A random breath from the young archipelago master can shatter his body from the wind."

"Shut up! I don't need you to tell me whether he is good or not. In my, Zi Ling's, eyes, he's the best. The most perfect person. I will not marry any person other than him." Zi Ling was also enraged and also furiously howled at her own father.

"Zi Yuanshan, look at what you have done! The reason why Yu'er has become what she is today is all because of you." But just at that time, the master of the Zi family's face also turned cold. He pointed at Zi Xuanyuan and reprimanded.

Facing the Zi family master's reprimand, Zi Xuanyuan lowered his head and said nothing. If it was before, perhaps he could oppose the family master, but in these years, with the assistance of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, the Zi family's cultivation increased greatly. At present, even Zi Ling's parents stepped into the Martial Lord realm, let alone the family master.

"Shut up! What are you? Do you think you are worthy to reprimand my grandfather?" However, Zi Ling was unable to endure her own grandfather being reprimanded, so she pointed at the master of the Zi family and loudly roared.

At that instant, the face of the Zi family master clearly became unsightly, but he did not show his anger. He forcibly endured the



fury and at the end, like a miracle, actually blossomed a kind smile on his aged face and said to Zi Ling, “Yu’er, one day, you will understand that we are the ones who care about you the most, think for you the most, and hope for your well-being the most.”

Afterwards, he cast his gaze towards Zi Ling’s parents and said, “Zi Qiang, Xinyue, this is your family’s problem, so you discuss it on your own. However, today, Zi Ling must leave with us.” After speaking those words, he flashed away and disappeared like a ghost.

After the master of the Zi family left, Zi Ling, as well as Zi Ling’s parents, went into silence. On the other hand, Zi Xuanyuan became uneasy because he knew the family master’s methods. If Zi Ling was not willing to leave no matter what, not only Chu Feng and he would be affected. Everyone related to Zi Ling would be.

Moreover, ultimately, it was very difficult for Zi Ling to escape her destiny of going with them because when forced without any other choice, even if it was kidnapping, they would definitely kidnap Zi Ling back.

So, his gaze turned, hiddenly sent a mental message, and spoke some words to Zi Ling.

After Zi Xuanyuan spoke those words, Zi Ling’s pupils flashed. Quickly after, her originally tightened up little face immediately relaxed. Her entire body was like a ball that had its air all released. She no longer had the energy she had before.

Chu Feng noticed Zi Ling's change, and was also aware that Zi Xuanyuan might have hiddenly sent a mental message to Zi Ling about something. So, he grabbed Zi Ling's hand, smiled to her, and said, "If you don't want to leave, stay behind. Don't have any worries."

Facing such a warm Chu Feng, Zi Ling forced out a hint of smile, then threw herself into Chu Feng's embrace. One hand tightly clamping over Chu Feng's neck, the other was placed on Chu Feng's chest.

"This..."

Seeing that scene, the expression of Zi Ling's father changed, and he planned to say something.

However, before he spoke, Zi Ling's mother placed her hand on his hand, then shook her head.

At the end, Zi Ling's father suppressed the fury in his heart. He stood up, walked to the edge of the tower, and looked down towards the courtyard, unwilling to see the intimate scene between Chu Feng and Zi Ling.

Like that, the two of them embraced each other for a long time. Only after a full two hours did Zi Ling unwillingly let her hand go.

At that moment, her eyes were already reddened but her face still brimmed with a sweet, light smile. She looked towards her own

mother and said, "I am willing to go back with you."

"Really? Yu'er, what you've said is true?" Hearing those words, Zi Ling's father quickly turned around. His previous displeased face was filled with elation.

As for Chu Feng, he stood where he was and did not say anything because just now, Zi Ling used her hand to write many words on his chest.

With words, Zi Ling expressed her love to Chu Feng as well as her determination for loving Chu Feng. Her last words declared she would be waiting for Chu Feng in the Eastern Sea Region and after four years, go to the Zi family to marry her.

If, at that time, Chu Feng was still unable to appear, and the ones appearing were the people of the Immortal Execution Archipelago instead, she would commit suicide. Even if she died, she was not going to marry any other person.

To Zi Ling's words, other than being moved, Chu Feng felt his heart ache. However, he had no other choice right now, and it could only be like so.

But he swore that four years later, he would definitely go to the Zi family to marry Zi Ling. Either he was going to completely shock everyone, or he was going to commit suicide, for love, along with Zi Ling. However, he was absolutely not going to allow Zi Ling to die alone.

“But I have several conditions.” Zi Ling said.

“What conditions? Yu’er, just say them. Your father, I, will meet your conditions. As long as you are willing to return with me, I agree to anything.” Zi Ling’s father unhesitantly responded.

“First. I am called Zi Ling, so do not call me Yu’er in the future because in this life, I am only called Zi Ling.”

“Second. After returning to the Zi family, I do not want to see anyone making things difficult for my grandfather.”

“Third. After leaving this place, I hope that no one in the continent of the Nine Provinces will be harmed. In the future, I will still return to this place. If I know that people suffer unneeded harm because of me, I’ll show you how I will suicide.”

“Last. I want ten million Heaven beads. Right now. I’ll leave whenever you can take them out.” Zi Ling said very clearly.

“What? Ten million Heaven beads? Yu’er... Nono, it’s Ling’er. You are making things too difficult for me.”

“I can agree to the first three conditions you said, but just this fourth one, it is really...”

“The fourth condition is unneeded.” Just at that time, Chu Feng spoke. He understood why Zi Ling wanted ten million Heaven beads. They were wanted for him. Zi Ling fought for the beads, for

him.

But he did not need them. He did not need the help of Zi Ling's family because he knew that Zi Ling's family looked down on him. They looked down on his cultivation, and even more so, looked down on his background.

## Chapter 498: Crippling Night Demon Sect

---

If Chu Feng's background was better than the so-called young master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago; if his cultivation was higher than the young master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, there would absolutely not be a scene like today. Rather, it would be directly opposite.

So, Chu Feng had already seen through Zi Ling's parents. He had seen through the Zi family. They were a group of stuck-ups.

For their own interests, they were willing to sacrifice Zi Ling's happiness. Then, might I ask, if Zi Ling's parents and Zi Ling's family truly loved Zi Ling, and truly thought for her, why would they force Zi Ling like this? Force her to abandon the person she loved? To marry a person she did not like?

Therefore, Chu Feng did not need their help. He would rely on his own power to grow, and one day, he would force Zi Ling's parents and everyone in the Zi family to look at him in another light and make them regret today's decision, and let them know that their choice today was the wrong one.

He, Chu Feng, was definitely suitable for Zi Ling. He was worth it for Zi Ling to love him so much. Moreover, other than him, there was no one else suitable for Zi Ling.

“Chu Feng, you...” Seeing that Chu Feng was actually pushing it away, Zi Ling's little face instantly changed slightly, seeming to want to say something.

bang But before she finished speaking, Chu Feng opened his arms and grabbed onto Zi Ling. He put the little beauty in his embrace, opened his thick lips, and stuck them onto Zi Ling's pink cherry-like lips, then started to madly suck.

It wasn't the first time Chu Feng kissed Zi Ling, but it was the only time Zi Ling didn't refuse. Rather, Zi Ling even tightly held onto Chu Feng's neck and was very engrossed in kissing. She wished she could give her everything to Chu Feng.

"You bastard!" Seeing that scene, Zi Ling's father was incomparably enraged. He raised his hand and wanted to attack Chu Feng.

After all, back then, the elder of the Immortal Execution Archipelago had once specially asked to prevent Zi Ling from any contract with the opposite gender. At present, Chu Feng's actions definitely broke the taboo. If the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago knew about it, they would definitely kill Chu Feng.

"Zi Qiang." However, Zi Ling's mother stopped Zi Ling's father once again. She said in a low voice, "Just let Yu'er stay a while more in her lover's embrace."

After hearing her words, the expression of Zi Ling's father changed for a while, but ultimately, he helplessly sighed, flicked his sleeves and no longer cared about the two of them.

Only after kissing for a good while did Chu Feng hold himself back. He bent over to Zi Ling's ears, and after saying "wait for me", he let go of his hand.

Seeing that, Zi Ling's mother hurriedly walked up, held Zi Ling's hand, grabbed onto Zi Ling, and rose into the sky. In a mere instant, they disappeared.

"Father, let's leave as well. Actually, we haven't blamed you. After all, you did it for the sake of Yu'er."

"However, when you return to the current Zi family, you will believe that you were wrong. The Immortal Execution Archipelago aren't the type of people you think they are. They are a truly righteous family, and they take care of my Zi family a lot as well." Zi Ling's father said.

Zi Xuanyuan did not pay attention to him. He walked up to Chu Feng, lightly patted his shoulder, then said, "What you do depends on you. I believe that one day, you will make a world that belongs to you."

After speaking those words, Zi Xuanyuan walked to Zi Ling's father's side, and without even looking at Chu Feng, he grabbed onto Zi Xuanyuan, rose into the air, and instantly disappeared. They didn't even leave the slightest trace of aura.

After Zi Ling's parents brought Zi Ling and Zi Xuanyuan to meet up with the master of the Zi family, they rode a Strange Armament chariot, preparing to return to the Eastern Sea Region.



The chariot was very quick because it was a Mastered Strange Armament. With three Martial Lords channeling their powers into it, its speed was like light. Even if the chariot passed by a Heaven realm expert, they weren't be able to detect it.

However, suddenly, the chariot trembled and had to stop in mid-air. It had to because in front of the chariot, a black-clothed old man appeared, stopping the path of the chariot.

"Who are you?" The sudden change shocked the master of the Zi family as well as Zi Ling's parents. They quickly leaped out of the chariot and questioned the black-clothed old man.

Quickly after, Zi Ling and Zi Xuanyuan also curiously followed out. They really wanted to know why the old man had to stop them.

"Kuku, you will regret." The black-clothed old man did not directly reply. He strangely smiled, revealing an expression that no one could see through.

"Regret what?" The master of the Zi family's brows tightly locked. He discovered that even with his strength, he was actually unable to see through the black-clothed old man. So, he felt that he was very possibly a troublesome existence.

"You will regret taking this lady away and missing out on a good ending." The black-clothed old man chuckled, then said to Zi Ling, "Oh lady, you should truly be more firm and refuse going back

with these several trash, because that dog butt Immortal Execution Archipelago is a group of despicable people who are greatly righteous and benevolent on the surface, but are hiddenly incomparably contemptible. These three trash want you to marry over to them. That is definitely hurting you.”

“Where did this old bastard come from who dares to say such shameless big words! I’ll rip your mouth apart!” Hearing those words, Zi Ling’s father was enraged. He waved his hand, causing the surrounding space to twist and change. An extremely horrifying power was being emanated from his body.

At that instant, the weather truly changed and thunder surged. When a Martial Lord expert attacked, it instantly created might that was like a lord descending upon the mortal world.

However, the black-clothed old man coldly smiled, then said, “Even a little pleb like you dares to attack me?”

Immediately after the black-clothed old man spoke, his gaze turned cold and emanated limitless killing intent. At that instant, the sky that was originally clear for ten thousand miles actually became an endless night.

Everything in the world changed. There was an ocean of corpses and bones on the ground and the flowing blood formed rivers. Flames of battle were everywhere in the sky, and the sun and moon became blood-red.

“Ahh!” As the world changed, Zi Ling’s father’s face also changed

greatly. A mouthful of blood was sprayed out, and he actually powerlessly fell.

“Zi Qiang!” Seeing that, Zi Ling’s mother hurriedly propped him up. Only then did Zi Ling’s father not fall down.

“Illusion methods?” At that instant, the master of the Zi family saw through it and knew that it was an illusion. So, both of his hands kept on transforming, and at the end, they overlaid, then he explosively shouted, “Break!”

“Hmph.” However, to the Zi family master’s destruction methods that he used, the black-clothed old man only disdainfully snorted coldly. The Zi family’s master then opened his mouth and similarly, a mouthful of aged blood was sprayed out.

“Family master?!” Zi Ling’s mother moved once again. Her left hand was holding onto Zi Ling’s father, while her right hand was holding onto the family master.

After a short while of confrontation, the Zi family master no longer had his previous might. He wiped the traces of blood on the corners of his mouth, then asked with a face full of fear, “Senior, who...who exactly are you?”

“You want to know who I am? I’ll let you know who I am!”

Suddenly, the black-clothed old man madly laughed, and simultaneously, the world was actually shaking, as if a natural

disaster as going to happen soon.

Finally, in the sky above, an incomparably huge crack appeared, and from the crack, four words came down.

Those words were blood-red, as if they were condensed and formed by the blood of ten thousand living things. And those four big words were...

Crippling Night Demon Sect!

# Chapter 499: The Current Chance

---

“Crippling Night Demon Sect?!”

Seeing the four bloody big words in the sky, the faces of the Zi family’s master, as well as Zi Ling’s parents and even Zi Ling’s grandfather, changed greatly. The fear in their eyes became extremely dense instantly.

It was because all of them knew what the Crippling Night Demon Sect represented. It represented the number one Demon Sect in the Eastern Sea Region many years ago. So strong that not a single power could defeat it. Even if it was the current Immortal Execution Archipelago, they weren’t able to defeat the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

The Crippling Night Demon Sect of that year was like the sun at noon. Not to mention the unimaginably powerful head of the Demon Sect, even if it was only Four Protectors of the Demon Sect, all of them had strengths which were akin to those of the heads of other powers.

The Eastern Sea Region of that time was indeed the world of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Not a single power dared to fight against it.

Until one day, the head of the Demon Sect suddenly passed away. For seizing the position of head, the Four Protectors killed one another, causing the Demon Sect to split in many pieces. The huge monster that was titled as the overlord of the Eastern Sea Region

for several thousands of years finally gave up its position in the Eastern Sea Region.

However, although the Crippling Night Demon Sect was already fragmented, everyone knew that the people of the Demon Sect were still people who the Eastern Sea Region feared the most.

In the Eastern Sea Region, no matter which power it was, no one was willing to easily offend the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect because those who did would certainly receive their insane revenge.

Even the current peak powers of the Eastern Sea Region weren't willing to anger the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect because the Four Protectors of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, who were still living healthily, were still extremely terrifying existences. Luckily they opposed one another, or else, if they joined hands, even if it was the Immortal Execution Archipelago that was becoming more and more powerful by the day, they were not necessarily able to defeat them.

And since the black-clothed old man in front of them actually had such terrifying strength, clearly, he was not an ordinary person within the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Before, they were even so disrespectful, so how could they not be afraid?

poof Suddenly, the master of the Zi family half-knelt in the air, kowtowed to the black-clothed old man with his hands together held in front of him, and endlessly admitted his faults, "It was me who had sockets but no eyes! Senior, I didn't know you were a part of the Crippling Night Demon Sect! I ask, as you are a great

character, please have great benevolence and forgive my family!”

“Senior, have mercy. Senior, have mercy!”

At the same time, Zi Ling’s parents also half-knelt in the sky and both asked for forgiveness from the black-clothed old man.

Facing such parents and the so-called family master, Zi Ling lightly frowned and a hint of disdain flashed into her eyes.

She never would have thought that as Martial Lords, they didn’t have any courage. In front of a weak person, they acted as if they were invincible and did everything decisively, but in front of a powerful person, they actually kowtowed. Even if people like them had strength, they were fated to have achievements that weren’t too great.

It had to be said that at that very instant, Zi Ling, who already had an extremely poor impression on the Zi family, had an even worse impression now.

“Hmph. Garbage is garbage. In your life, you will always be garbage.”

“Don’t worry, I won’t kill you. You aren’t even qualified to die by my hands.”

“But. Seeing several dogs like you who are blindly loyal to the Immortal Execution Archipelago, I can’t help but tell you this.

Don't think that the Immortal Execution Archipelago is truly invincible in this world since its might is shocking the eastern sea right now. There are plenty of people who can take care of it."

"Scram. Speaking to trash like you is simply a waste of my breath and lowering who I am."

The black-clothed old man coldly snorted, then the world changed. Very quickly, the ocean of blood disappeared, the corpses and bones could not be seen, and the endless night became the clear sky for a ten thousand miles again. Coincident with that, the black-clothed old man also disappeared.

"Family master, the old man just now...his strength is really too terrifying. Is it possible that the Raging Fire Divine Bird was killed by him? Is it possible that he is..." After Zi Ling's father rose, he asked with a face filled with fear.

And after the master of the Zi family stood back up, he did not reply. He first wiped away the cold sweat on his forehead, then said to Zi Ling's mother, "Quick. Quickly leave this place, quickly return to the Eastern Sea Region.

Chu Feng did not know about the scene that the Zi family just experienced. At that moment, he was standing on the top of the Void Tower, looking towards the direction that Zi Ling and the others disappeared at. His heart was extremely complicated.

He didn't understand too much about the Immortal Execution Archipelago, but as long as he recalled that it was the strongest



force in the Eastern Sea Region, and even the Zi family members, who had the cultivations of Martial Lords, had to be respectful towards it, Chu Feng could more or less understand the power of the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

The time of four years was too short. If he truly had to confront the enormous power four years later, his chances of victory could be said to be extremely distant. But no matter what, he would do his best to raise his strength. Even if there was just the tiniest bit of hope, he had to grab onto the little hope and not let go.

“Chu Feng, are you okay?” Suddenly, Zhang Tianyi’s voice rang out behind him.

Turning his head to look, he saw Zhang Tianyi, Qi Fengyang, Jiang Hengyuan, the Monstrous Monkey King and the others flying over. In a blink, they landed on the Void Tower and worriedly asked Chu Feng.

Facing their questioning, Chu Feng did not hide anything and said everything in detail.

They, who knew the truth, all started to comfort Chu Feng. They tried to make Chu Feng forget about Zi Ling because they felt that facing such enormity, Chu Feng had almost no hope. Rather than constantly thinking about Zi Ling, why not put away the thoughts? After all, short pain is better than long pain.

But to the crowd’s words, Chu Feng only lightly smiled and did not reply. He knew that those people were doing all that for him,

however, his decision was already set and it was absolutely not going to change.

It was because he knew that with Zi Ling's character, she would definitely do what she said. So, four years later, no matter what, he had to go over. Even if he at that time was still as weak as an ant, and going there was equal to sending himself to death, he had to go because he could not allow Zi Ling to die alone for him.

Besides, although the future was vague, at the bottom of Chu Feng's heart, there was indeed a trace of hope. It was for no other reason but because of the Divine Lightning in his body.

Although the Divine Lightning's appetite was very big, so big that it filled Chu Feng with suffering, as long as he had enough cultivation resources, the Divine Lightning could allow Chu Feng's cultivation to explosively rise within a short amount of time.

At present, the Emperor Tomb was one chance. If there were things like an Essence Pool and ice and fire pearls outside of the Emperor Tomb, then perhaps within it, there would be some treasures. Possibly even cultivation oddities that Chu Feng didn't know about.

After a few days of time, the emperor of the Jiang Dynasty finally came to the Azure Province and arrived at the Void School. However, accompanying the arrival of the emperor were many experts from the Jiang Dynasty.

They were the same as Jiang Hengyuan, having the cultivation of

the 7th level of the Heaven realm. They actually had no less than nine people with that cultivation. It was the same cultivation as the old ancestor of the World Spirit Guild, the genius whose name spread throughout the Nine Provinces a hundred years ago, Gu Tianchen.

From that, it could be seen that the Jiang Dynasty was indeed very powerful. At least in the continent of the Nine Provinces, they were invincible.

# Revisiting The Emperor Tomb

# Chapter 500: Returning To The Emperor Tomb

---

If Chu Feng saw the people from the Jiang Dynasty before, he would definitely be shocked at their strength.

But after seeing the strength of the Zi family, Chu Feng more and more deeply understood the words Zi Ling said.

In the continent of the Nine Provinces, the reason why they could make people look up to them wasn't because they were strong. It was just because the people here were too weak.

So, it was only right that they, who had outstanding talent, were admired by people. If they couldn't even do that, that itself wouldn't make sense.

And other than the nine experts who had the same strength as Jiang Hengyuan, there was also a short old man who was as thin as a match.

The old man's appearance was truly incomparably ugly. There were even more wrinkles on his face than ten steamed buns altogether! His head seemed bald when seen from afar, but there were still a few white strands when seen near. His mouth was full of stench, and the most important part was that he even lost his front teeth.

However, although the old man had an ugly appearance, his

cultivation was very strong. It was not lower than the Jiang Dynasty's emperor, and was clearly on the same level as the Monstrous Monkey King, having the cultivation of the 8th level of the Heaven realm.

And from the Jiang Dynasty crowd's respectful appearances towards the old man and from their words, Chu Feng also learned of the man's identity. He was the current emperor's uncle. Although his position in the clan was inferior to the dynasty's old ancestor, he was still the person who had lived for the longest in the Jiang Dynasty. From what he had heard, he was already 150 years old.

Normally speaking, a normal commoner's life would be at most a few dozen years. A cultivator's would not pass a hundred years, so it had to be said that it was a miracle for this old man to be able to live for 150 years.

But currently, the thing that attracted Chu Feng's attention the most was a white-haired old man who wore a gold robe and had a face full of benevolence. That old man's aura was actually a lot thicker than the Monstrous Monkey King's.

According to Chu Feng's guess, that old man should be the true ruler of the Jiang Dynasty: the former emperor of the Jiang Dynasty, but the current old ancestor of the dynasty. His cultivation should have already infinitely reached the Martial Lord realm, and was an expert in the 9th level of the Heaven realm.

Other than that, the old ancestor of the World Spirit Guild, Gu Tianchen, as well as the head of the World Spirit Guild, also

followed the people from the Jiang Dynasty and arrived here together.

They first checked the Raging Fire Divine Bird that had already died, but ultimately, they didn't discover anything. Also on that day, the dynasty's old ancestor announced another thing that made Chu Feng rejoice. It was that they already finished preparing, and was going to open the Emperor Tomb soon.

After a while of organizing, a group that gathered many Heaven realm experts finally came to the Vermilion Bird Mountain Range. Only after coming there did people learn that the old ancestor of the Jiang Dynasty was also a Purple-cloak World Spiritist.

With the methods of the dynasty's old ancestor and the Monstrous Monkey King, they easily locked onto the position of the entrance to the Emperor Tomb. With the crowd accompanying him, Chu Feng also, finally, stepped back into this entrance to the Emperor Tomb.

“Chu Feng, I've already heard of the matter between you and Zi Ling.”

“Believe me. They will regret. Regret missing out on you.”

“So, do not be discouraged. As long as you are willing to work hard, your achievements will be immeasurable.”

As the crowd walked forward together, Chu Feng suddenly

received a mental message. Slanting his gaze to look, he saw that the old ancestor of the dynasty next to him was smilingly looking at himself.

Facing the encouragement of the dynasty's old ancestor, Chu Feng returned a smile. After a short while of being together, Chu Feng also had a very good impression of him.

But for some reason, Chu Feng had a bad feeling.

The strongest old man in the Jiang Dynasty seemed to have a very favourable impression on himself. Entering the Emperor Tomb this time, he even let the Monstrous Monkey King lead the way, and as for himself, he kept on staying by Chu Feng's side to protect his safety.

No one in Chu Feng's group had weak cultivation. Other than Chu Feng, everyone's cultivation was at least in the 5th level of the Heaven realm.

So, their speed was very quick. In a blink, they passed through layers of Anti-Demon Symbols. Finally, the lake that stopped Chu Feng back then reappeared in front of him.

"It's only one Evil Spirit. Watch this." At that instant, a dynasty expert with cultivation in the 6th level of the Heaven realm rose into the air and flew over the lake.

hmm hmm hmm



Just as that person flew above the lake, the green-coloured dots of light that were floating above the lake's surface were like arrows as they flew quickly towards that person.

“Break.”

However, that person waved his big sleeve. Boundless Heaven power pressed downwards and shattered all of the green-coloured dots of light.

wuao Quickly after, a furious howl rang out from the lake. A huge spray rose into the air, and simultaneously, a pair of giant, dark-green eyes seeped through the spray. An enormous monster was hidden within the water sprays and made a surprise attack on the dynasty experts.

“Hmph.” However, even if it was the Evil Spirit that personally attacked, the dynasty expert was still not afraid in the slightest. He formed a fist with one of his hands, then layers of Heaven power condensed within the fist. Radiance shot in all directions with extraordinary might.

“Ha!” Quickly after, he explosively yelled, then threw a punch downwards.

boom An explosion resonated. Instantly, splashes sprayed everywhere and huge waves rolled.

wuaoo At the same time, a miserable cry also rang out, and the danger feeling in the lake thoroughly disappeared as well.

It died. In front of the dynasty expert, the Evil Spirit that was incomparable powerful, to Chu Feng of back then, was exploded to death by one punch.

That scene was within everyone's expectations because those who were able to come to this place were all World Spiritists. They could feel the strength of the Evil Spirit, and as it was an Evil Spirit only in the 1st level of the Heaven realm, no one put it in their eyes.

But to Chu Feng, he very emotionally sighed. To the present Chu Feng, an Evil Spirit in the 1st level of the Heaven realm was indeed not much, and he could easily kill it, but he would never forget how terrifying that Evil Spirit in front of him was back then. Just with the two dark-green eyes, they could completely terrify the Chu Feng of that time.

“Kukukuku, this is indeed an Emperor Tomb! I never would have thought in such a desolate place, there would actually be a tomb like this! This is truly a great surprise fallen from heaven. An unexpected harvest! Hahahaha...” But suddenly, an aged voice suddenly rang in Chu Feng's ears.

At that instant, Chu Feng was abruptly alarmed. He hurriedly swept his gaze towards his surroundings because he could already tell who the voice belonged to. It was precisely the extremely horrifying black-clothed old man whom he met within the ocean of fire back then.

“What’s wrong Chu Feng?” Seeing Chu Feng’s nervous expression, the old ancestor of the Jiang Dynasty lightly frowned and nervously asked.

“Chu Feng, did you discover something?” At the same time, everyone cast their gazes towards Chu Feng and nervously questioned.

In this Emperor Tomb exploration, Chu Feng was the root. They all felt that as he received the inheritance of two Secret Skills, there was some fate between him and the Emperor Tomb. With Chu Feng there, as they went deeper into the Emperor Tomb, perhaps they would have great harvests.

So, only when something was wrong with Chu Feng did everyone become nervous. They even thought Chu Feng found something.

“It’s nothing.” Seeing their reactions, Chu Feng shook his head with a small smile, but he hiddenly said in his heart, “Was it just my imagination?”

Because, Chu Feng clearly heard the black-clothed old man’s loud laugh, but clearly, the people here didn’t hear anything.

“Boy, go back. This Emperor Tomb isn’t something that you can enter. Forcefully pressing deeper only means you are sending yourself to death.”

“Go back and wait. After I enter the deep part of this Emperor Tomb, I will give you some benefits, as reward for bringing me to this Emperor Tomb.”

But suddenly, the voice of the black-clothed old man was projected into his ear. At that instant, Chu Feng knew that it wasn't his imagination. It was a mental message. A mental message that the black-clothed old man sent him.

# Chapter 501: Vermilion Bird Revival Technique

---

“Crap. Not only has that terrifying old man not left, he even came to this place!”

“With his strength, he can definitely gain huge benefits in this Emperor Tomb. If he takes away everything, wouldn’t our trip here be wasted?”

At that instant, Chu Feng hiddenly cursed. He didn’t believe that the black-clothed old man would give him any benefits even if he were to get any in the Emperor Tomb. Even if he truly did give him some of the so-called reward, it would certainly not be anything too precious.

After all, the two of them didn’t know one another and they met only by chance. He didn’t owe him anything, so he had no need to give him any benefits.

But right now, Chu Feng could also not say anything. He could only feign ignorance and continue going forward with the people from the Jiang Dynasty.

At first, it was still good. Everything was normal. They only met a few Evil Spirits on the way, but they were all killed by them. As they walked, they had unstoppable might.

“Wait.” However, suddenly, the Monstrous Monkey King who

was walking at the very front stopped its forwarding steps and spoke, “Something’s wrong.”

“What’s the matter?” Hearing those words, everyone became nervous and asked puzzledly.

“There should be both guardians and obstructions in this Emperor Tomb, yet on the road, we have only met guardians, but not any restrictions or obstructions.” The Monstrous Monkey King said.

“Senior, could it be that you mean someone has come to this place before us, and have already broke the obstructions in this place? The emperor asked.

“That’s right. That possibility is very high.” The Monstrous Monkey King said.

“That shouldn’t be possible right? If it is truly like so, some traces of destruction would at least be left behind, but on the way here, I haven’t seen any signs of things being broken.” The emperor doubtfully said.

“If that person has extremely powerful strength and also grasps extremely skilled Spirit Formation techniques, he could avoid the detection of the guardians and not leave any traces of obstruction destruction.”

“Think carefully. Many of the things guarding this place are Evil

Spirits. These things are innately vicious. They even consume and refine their own species and kill each other.”

“But on the way, the Evil Spirits we met had different strengths, both weak and strong. However, they were orderly guarding in a single area and did not kill one another.”

“This only states one thing. It’s that the barricades before separated them and only because of that did it force them to guard in one place with discipline. Right now, the barricades have been destroyed. However, they still do not know. Thus, they continue guarding in their own places with order.” The Monstrous Monkey King explained.

“This...”

At that instant, some people started to become uneasy because the words the Monstrous Monkey King said were indeed reasonable. With the Evil Spirits’ nature, if there wasn’t a special barricade separating them, it would not be possible for them to guard in their areas with control. They should definitely be flipping the heavens already.

“Senior, you must be thinking too much. The strength of this Emperor Tomb’s master is unfathomably deep. The methods he grasp may not be comprehensible by us.”

“Perhaps he already laid barriers which separates Evil Spirits, restricts only Evil Spirits, and are undetectable by us?”

After the emperor spoke, everyone nodded their heads again and felt that it made sense. After all, people were suspecting that the master of this tomb was the Divine Body ten thousand years ago. There were many opinions regarding the rumours of that person, but not a single one of them wasn't strange, mystical, and mysterious. Besides, the methods of a Martial Emperor was indeed not something they could understand.

"I hope it is like so." The Monstrous Monkey King didn't bother arguing with the crowd. It curled its lips and didn't say much more, continuing to lead the road forward.

"There is reason in the monkey king's words. 'If you are careful, you can steer a ten thousand year old ship.' Everyone, it is better to be a bit more careful." Just at that time, the dynasty's old ancestor spoke.

After he spoke, everyone couldn't help nodding their heads. After all, no matter if it was strength or position, that person was superior to them. Other than the Monstrous Monkey King, it was likely that no one dared to disobey his words.

At that instant, only Chu Feng understood in his heart that the Monstrous Monkey King was correct. If no accidents happened, the black-clothed old man should have already broke into the Emperor Tomb before them.

And there were two possibilities why the black-clothed old man only broke the obstructions but not kill the guardians.



First, he didn't want to let those people know he arrived at that place. It would also be why he sent a mental message to Chu Feng and didn't grandly show himself.

Second, he intentionally wanted to use the guardians to stop Chu Feng and the others, and wanted to make Chu Feng and the others know the danger and retreat.

But no matter which point it was, Chu Feng felt that he couldn't tell the crowd about the black-clothed old man because if he did, everyone would definitely retreat as they knew their limits.

However, Chu Feng still didn't want to give up because as long as he remembered the Zi family members' faces and remembered that Zi Ling was still waiting for him in the Zi family, he impatiently wanted to become stronger. So, he did not want to miss out the chance to go search the Emperor Tomb.

Thus, Chu Feng didn't say anything. As if he was unrelated to everything, he walked forward with the crowd, but other than the guardians which got stronger and stronger, there was no gain.

Only until they carefully walked a hundred full miles in the vast and seemingly edgeless Emperor Tomb did good change appear in front of them.

In front of Chu Feng and the others, a majestic structure appeared. The structure was a strange statue of a huge bird. Its appearance was like a peacock's, but it was more beautiful than a peacock. More overbearing.

And at the entrance of the strange and grand structure, “Secret Skill, the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique. Only awaiting for the fated.” was written there.

“Secret Skill! It is indeed a Secret Skill!” At that instant, everyone was surprised and joyed. After all, Secret Skills were like legends. They were priceless treasures, things that could only be met by chance and not searched for.

But even though everyone was extremely excited and endlessly drooled for Secret Skill, not a single person dared to step in without permission. They involuntarily cast their gazes towards Chu Feng, and the dynasty’s old ancestor who was next to him.

It was because everyone knew that if the Secret Skill was going to pick one of them, the one who had the greatest chance was Chu Feng. After all, he currently already gained the approval of two Secret Skills.

Besides, at the gate of the strange but special structure, it was already very clearly stated that it “awaited only for the fated”, and clearly, Chu Feng was that fated one.

“All of you, stay here. I will go in with Chu Feng.” The old ancestor of the dynasty spoke.

“No. I will accompany my brother.” However, the Monstrous Monkey King immediately refused.

“Monkey King, the two of us are the only Purple-cloak World Spiritists here. One must stay behind, and one will go in.”

“If something unexpected truly happens, at least there will be one person who can safely bring everyone back.”

“And in terms of cultivation, I’m still a bit stronger than you. If there is truly some danger inside, I believe that I will be able to handle it better than you. It’ll be another layer of protection.” The dynasty’s old ancestor seemed to know what the Monstrous Monkey King was worried about, so he spoke to explain.

# Chapter 502: A Strange Smile

---

“Hmph. You make it sound nice, but what if you scheme for the Secret Skill and secretly attack my brother?” The Monstrous Monkey King did not believe him.

“Hoh, if you truly have such thoughts, then I won’t argue with you. Since you have such distrust in me, it’s fine that you go in with Chu Feng. I can guard outside with the crowd.” The dynasty’s old ancestor shook his head while smiling.

“Monkey Bro, I believe Senior Jiang will not harm me. Don’t worry.”

Just at that time, Chu Feng spoke. He had to speak because of the cooperation relationship between him, the Monstrous Monkey King, and the Jiang Dynasty. If, at a time like this, some conflicts started to appear, it would definitely create detrimental effects and harm their cooperation in the future.

Seeing that, the Monstrous Monkey King didn’t feel it was too good to say much more. So, it nodded and said, “Okay then. Since my brother agrees, I won’t say any more.”

“Fifth Brother, I’ll go in with you two. If there are truly some dangers inside, we can look after each other if we join powers.” Just at that time, the supreme elder, who had the highest age in the Jiang Dynasty, spoke.

Although his position was inferior to the old ancestor, his

seniority was larger than him, being the elder brother of the old ancestor.

“Mm, that’s fine.” The old ancestor also agreed. His elder brother had been living for so many years. Tossing aside his strength and not talking about it, his battle experience could be said to be extremely abundant. With his elder brother accompanying him, if they met with any troubles, things would be quite a bit easier.

Quickly after, Chu Feng, accompanied by the dynasty’s old ancestor and the supreme elder, walked into the strange but special grand structure.

Not only was the special structure’s outer appearance strange, the internal decorations were very strange as well. After many lefts and rights, Chu Feng and the others finally walked to the important area. At that very instant, what appeared in front of their eyes was a vast circular palace.

On the surrounding walls of the vast palace, there were murals made by special materials, and for every mural, a unique bird was carved. Doubtlessly, the beautiful and overbearing bird was called the Vermilion Bird.

As for the content of the murals, they were about the Vermilion Bird battling different types of Monstrous Beasts, and with none of them ending up with defeat. To sum it up, every single mural was depicting the powerful strength of the Vermilion Bird.

In the core area of the palace, there was even a ten-foot tall

statue. It was also a Vermilion Bird, but the statue could absolutely be said to be the work of ghosts and gods, being vividly carved.

In addition, a special Spirit Formation was bestowed upon the statue. It was surrounded by layers of flame-like brilliance, and seemed extremely divine. As if it wasn't a statue but truly a Vermilion Bird.

“Chu Feng, I believe that the Secret Skill is sealed within this statue. After I destroy this seal, it'll be up to you.” The dynasty's old ancestor smilingly said to Chu Feng.

“Don't worry Senior Jiang, I will do my best.”

Before coming to this place, they had already drew up a complete plan. It was to first search for the Secret Skill at the entrance and let Chu Feng subdue it.

But before subduing it, Chu Feng was to first extract some information about the Emperor Tomb from the Secret Skill to allow them to more easily go deeper in.

“Mm.” Seeing that, the dynasty's old ancestor smiled and didn't hesitate as well. He walked up and started to lay an Opening Spirit Formation. After a moment of laying, a vast purple-coloured Spirit Formation was condensed out.

“Break!” After finishing the Spirit Formation, the dynasty's old ancestor explosively yelled. The vast purple-coloured formation

was like the eruption of a volcano. Layers of purple-coloured bodies of light were sprayed out, interweaving with the red-coloured aura surrounding the statue and was actually engulfing it.

“So powerful. The methods of a Purple-cloak World Spiritist are indeed impressive.” Seeing the special Spirit Formation being gradually broken through, Chu Feng sighed in admiration in his heart. The Spirit Formation was very strong. If he were to try and break it open, he would definitely not be able to.

But when the dynasty’s old ancestor came to break it, it was actually only a short moment of work to successfully break through. From that, it could be seen that there was a huge distance between a Blue-cloak World Spiritist and a Purple-cloak World Spiritist.

wuao

Finally, the Spirit Formation was thoroughly destroyed. Simultaneously, a wicked howl also rang out quickly after. Horrifying aura instantly permeated throughout the entire palace.

“This is bad.”

At that instant, the old ancestor hiddenly cursed because not only did he feel aura that was not inferior to him, he also felt a burst of killing intent which pounced at him.

boom Suddenly, an explosion resounded. The statue actually

blew up, and at the same time, a huge monster also appeared in the middle of the palace.

That monster had an extremely terrifying appearance. Sharp and pointed teeth, both eyes blood-red, a dark-green aura up and down its entire body. Moreover, it emanated the aura of the 9th level of the Heaven realm.

wuao In the first instant the monster appeared, it furiously howled then quickly after, a huge claw along with boundless power slammed down towards the old ancestor.

“Haa!” Seeing that, without delay, the old ancestor angrily shouted, then layers of Heaven power explosively surged out. At the same time, faint radiance emitted from his body and on his forehead, a dazzling golden “royal” character appeared.

At that instant, the might of the dynasty’s old ancestor multiplied. Looking purely at his outer appearance, he simply didn’t even seem like a mortal, but more like a deity.

And his strength even rose by several times and was actually not the slightest bit weaker than the dark-green monster in front of him. In a blink, the two horrifying existences, who had overwhelming strength, fought against one another.

“This isn’t right. This monster is not a Secret Skill. Clearly, it is a vicious Evil Spirit.”



Chu Feng tightly furrowed his brows. Not to mention its appearance, just from its aura, Chu Feng was able to determine that the thing sealed within the stone statue was not a Secret Skill, but an Evil Spirit.

“Chu Feng, run! Leave this place! There isn’t a Secret Skill here! It’s a trap!” Suddenly, dynasty’s old ancestor loudly yelled.

Seeing the old ancestor who fought against the Evil Spirit yet did not gain too big of an advantage, Chu Feng bit his teeth, then leaped and aimed to rush out of the palace, wanting to ask the Monstrous Monkey King and the others for help.

hmm However, just as Chu Feng was going to move, he discovered at the exit of the palace, a layer of blue-coloured Spirit Formation covered it. Furthermore, a weak figure appeared in front of the exit, obstructing the road of retreat.

It was the elder brother of the old ancestor, the supreme elder of the Jiang Dynasty. Not only was the existence of the 8th level of the Heaven realm not helping the old ancestor at that moment, he even sealed the exit of the palace.

“Senior, what are you doing?” From the supreme elder’s body, he felt the aura of danger. So, he did not go close and loudly questioned.

“Big Brother, what are you doing? Quickly let Chu Feng out!” And with Chu Feng’s shouts, the dynasty’s old ancestor also discovered the change over there and furiously interrogated.

However, the supreme elder did not speak any words. He only lightly squinted his eyes, and then the corners of his mouth rose to form a hint of a strange smile.

# Chapter 503: Brothers Killing Each Other

---

“Evil Spirit, how about you cooperate with me?” Suddenly, the supreme elder looked at the Evil Spirit and said.

“Cooperate? How so?” Hearing those words, an eerie voice also came from the Evil Spirit’s mouth.

“It will be very difficult to defeat him if you fight him one-on-one. I’ll help you kill him, but you guarantee my exit. How about it?” The supreme elder coldly smiled and said.

“Haha, of course that’s good! As long as you help me kill this guy, I will definitely release you. I believe in honesty the most. Gaga~” As the Evil Spirit insanely laughed loudly, it strengthened its attacks towards the dynasty’s old ancestor.

“Big Brother, what are you saying? Not only are you not helping me, you are actually cooperating with the Evil Spirit to kill me?” At that instant, the old ancestor was really abruptly shocked.

“Hmph. You still recognize me to be your big brother? I am dozens of years older than you, I have greater seniority than you, and my talent is also no weaker than yours, but Father concentrated on raising you. Not only did he raise your cultivation to a higher point than mine, he even made you the emperor.”

“Right now, you are also my dynasty’s old ancestor, and I, who has the greatest seniority, is only some dog butt supreme elder. Ha!”

“I hate you. I thoroughly hate you. I hate that you call me ‘Big Brother’ all day in such a fake manner, yet took away everything that belongs to me.”

“For this day, I have waited for a very long time. I will kill you now. I will personally kill you.” At that instant, it was as if the supreme elder went insane. His face was sinister, and he fully revealed his killing intent.

At the same time, on his forehead, he released a golden, dazzling “royal” character. Clearly, he also used the special Royal Bloodline unique to the Jiang Dynasty, causing his battle power to multiply.

Furthermore, a golden big blade appeared in his hand. It was a Strange Armament. A Mastered Strange Armament. At that instant, the supreme elder’s atmosphere was completely different, already infinitely nearing the 9th level of the Heaven realm.

boom Suddenly, an explosion resonated. But it had to be said that the dynasty’s old ancestor was truly very strong. Even though his own elder brother held a Strange Armament as well as joining hands with the horrifying Evil Spirit that aimed its attacks towards him, he was still not disadvantaged. Rather, fighting two as one, he became more and more courageous as he fought.

“It is useless. Even if you interfere, with only your cultivation of the 8th level of the Heaven realm, it is useless. You wish to kill me, but today, you will only be killed by me.” The old ancestor coldly snorted. His battle power actually got stronger and stronger, and

with his own power, he continuously pressed the Evil Spirit and the supreme elder back.

“So powerful. There is also a difference in strength for bloodline power, and this old ancestor’s bloodline is clearly above his elder brother’s. No wonder back then, their father chose him to be the emperor. If their bloodlines were discussed, the old ancestor is indeed superior.”

The current Chu Feng already arrived at the exit of the palace. As he tried to break the Blue-coloured Spirit Formation, he paid attention to the battle in the core of the palace. He could already tell that the old ancestor’s talent indeed surpassed his elder brother’s.

However, even though Chu Feng was also a Blue-cloak World Spiritist, the strength of the Spirit Formation laid by World Spiritists was related to their own cultivation. So, it was truly not easy for Chu Feng to want to break the Spirit Formation within a short amount of time.

In order to prevent any unanticipated changes, Chu Feng could only give up breaking the entire Spirit Formation and instead, concentrated on one point because as long as a tiny crack could appear, Chu Feng would have ways to send out news to call the Monkey King to save himself.

hmm

But just at that time, in the middle of the palace, dazzling

brilliance was suddenly emitted. Turning his head back to look, a lotus flower the size of a washbowl, which shot radiance in all directions, appeared in the hand of the supreme elder.

The lotus flower's aura was extremely horrifying, simply several times more horrifying than Strange Armaments. However, it was clearly not a Strange Armament. It seemed more like a Sovereign Treasure that could only be used once.

“The Golden Radiance Lotus Flower! You are actually using it to attack me?!”

Seeing the golden-coloured lotus flower, the old ancestor's face also changed greatly. He hurriedly stopped attacking and retreated. At the same time, radiance flashed in his palm, and a crimson longsword appeared in his palm as well. It was a Strange Armament, and similarly, a Mastered Strange Armament. Facing the Golden Radiance Lotus Flower, even he had to seriously face it.

“This Golden Radiance Lotus Flower is an Offensive Sovereign Treasure. There is only one in the entire Jiang Dynasty and it can kill any person under the Martial lord realm. In that year, Father felt that he owed me as he gave the position of emperor to you, so he bestowed this Golden Radiance Lotus Flower to me for protecting myself.”

“But no matter what, he never would have expected that today, I will use the Sovereign Treasure he granted me to kill the son he likes and admires the most!”

“Hahahahaha...”

Suddenly, the supreme elder loudly laughed, and the more he laughed, the more sinister it was. As he loudly laughed, a baneful glare emerged into the nearby Evil Spirit’s eyes as it hiddenly said, “Treacherous humans, killing one another. However, both of you will die by my hands. I will not let any one of you go.”

“Go die!” Finally, the supreme elder attacked. The Golden Radiance Lotus Flower in his hand was abruptly thrown. The complete lotus flower immediately fragmented, becoming countless golden arrows. With powerful might, they explosively shot towards the dynasty’s old ancestor.

whoosh whoosh whoosh

“Crimson Dragon Heaven Covering Shield!”

Seeing that, the longsword in the old ancestor’s hand waved and a huge dragon actually burst out. The huge dragon’s body occupied the space in front of him and formed a Crimson shield there, blocking several golden radiances.

The power of the golden radiance was very strong. It interweaved with the dragon shield and actually made cracks appear on it from the collision. But ultimately, it was still unable to break through the barrier of the dragon shield and were all stopped.

“Hmph. It’s useless. You underestimate me too much. Although this Golden Radiance Lotus Flower is very powerful, Father has already passed down the way to break it to me. This Crimson Dragon Sword is equipped with both attack and defense, and the Crimson Dragon Heaven Covering Shield, when used, can precisely stop your Golden Radiance Lotus Flower.” The dynasty’s old ancestor said, while his face was filled with complacent.

“Haha, of course I know that the Crimson Dragon Heaven Covering Shield Father passed down to you can break my Golden Radiance Lotus Flower. So that is why I haven’t made my move on you until today. However, despite being powerful, your Crimson Dragon Heaven Covering Shield has both advantages and detriments. It consumes too much power. It is a move that damages yourself.”

“Don’t forcefully hold on. Right now, your body is injured internally and your strength has been greatly diminished. You have already lost over half of your battle power.” The supreme elder coldly smiled and said.

“You!” Hearing those words, the old ancestor’s expression instantly changed greatly. His originally reddish face immediately turned deathly-white, bloodless. At the same time, he opened his mouth, and with a poof, a mouthful of old blood sprayed out, splattering all over his clothes. He powerlessly fell onto the ground, and his aura already became extremely weak.

“Evil Spirit, what are you waiting for? His Source energy is yours.” The supreme elder said to the Evil Spirit.



“Gagaga, my thanks.” The Evil Spirit madly laughed and made a light, sinister smile. He pounced towards the old ancestor, opened its large mouth, and actually wanted to swallow him in one go.

“Crimson Dragon Heaven Breaking Sword!”

But just as the Evil Spirit neared, the old ancestor’s face suddenly turned better. His feeble aura actually regained its peak state, and simultaneously, the Crimson Dragon Heaven Breaking Sword in his hand suddenly flew out, became golden radiance that was several feet long, and with bursts of dragon roars, it directly pierced through the Evil Spirit.

# Chapter 504: One's Own Selfishness

---

ao0~~~ The Crimson Dragon Sword entered from the Evil Spirit's large mouth, and exited from his buttocks. It pierced through its entire body, causing it to immediately howl in misery, being endlessly in pain.

“Ignorant Evil Spirit! You truly think that we two brothers would kill ourselves? We were only intentionally acting to make you lower your guard, and make the fatal strike afterwards.”

“The Golden Radiance Lotus Flower just now was a fake one. That one only had might, but no real offensive power, tricking everyone other than us two brothers.” The dynasty's old ancestor coldly smiled and said.

“Evil Spirits are Evil Spirits. You have strength, but not brains. Hahaha...” At the same time, the supreme elder also mockingly laughed loudly.

“Damned humans, you are extremely despicable! I'll kill you!” The Evil Spirit was thoroughly furious. It originally wanted to plot against the two of them, but it didn't expect to be already plotted against from the very start.

So, it used its heavily injured body to release all of its power, wanting to use its everything to die with the old ancestor.

“Is you right now able to fight against me?”

However, he did not give it any chance. The Crimson Dragon Sword in his hand waved again, causing a crimson dragon to be detached from the sword, colliding into the Evil Spirit. With that strike only, the Evil Spirit was shattered. Not to mention residue, there wasn't even any aura left behind.

“Big Brother, the Golden Radiance Lotus Flower you imitated is truly useful. It is simply the exact same as a real Golden Radiance Lotus Flower. When you used it just now, even I almost assumed it was real, so that's why I used the Crimson Dragon Heaven Covering Shield to block it.” After killing the Evil Spirit, the dynasty's old ancestor lightly smiled and said.

“Yeah. Father bestowed this Golden Radiance Lotus Flower to me and it has absolute offensive power. I have always been unwilling to use it.”

“However, I meticulously studied it. I created an imitation that has the same might as the Golden Radiance Lotus Flower. Although its true offensive strength is very weak, it can at least scare people.” As the supreme elder spoke, a Golden Radiance Lotus Flower appeared once again on his palm.

“But even though this is an imitation, it more or less has some offensive power. Why not use your Spirit Formation to feel what level of power this imitation has?” The supreme elder smilingly said.

“This...” At that instant, the old ancestor's face slightly changed

and originally wanted to say something.

“Go!” But at the same time, the supreme elder had already flicked his big sleeve. The Golden Radiance Lotus Flower in his hand left it, flew, became several golden arrows, and explosively shot towards the dynasty’s old ancestor.

Seeing that, the old ancestor did not panic, nor did he wave his sword to block. He said, “Big Brother’s Golden Radiance Lotus Flower is getting more and more realistic. Indeed, it can scare away quite a few experts. As for the power, let me analyze it for you.”

As he spoke, he waved his clothes. A layer of weak Spirit Formation appeared in front of him, as he wanted to use it to block the imitation Golden Radiance Lotus Flower.

bang bang bang bang bang

However, as the several golden arrows interweaved with the Spirit Formation, the Spirit Formation was actually shattered immediately. Simultaneously, the several golden arrows instantly accelerated, and with horrifying might, they shot straight towards the dynasty’s old ancestor.

“Crap.” In the moment the Spirit Formation was broken, the old ancestor’s originally calm face instantly changed greatly because he astonishedly discovered that the Golden Radiance Lotus Flower was not fake. It was real.

But when he discovered that, it was already too late. He would not make it if he were to dodge, so he could only forcibly defend against the attack.

Thus, as he willed, layers of purple-coloured Spirit Formation unendingly came out from his body to block the approaching golden arrows.

bang bang bang bang bang

Bursts of explosions endlessly went out in front of the dynasty's old ancestor, but the layers of purple-coloured Spirit Formation also endlessly shattered. At the end, several golden radiances all struck the body of the dynasty's old ancestor.

whoosh

But just as the golden arrows struck the old ancestor's body, his golden robe gave off dazzling golden brilliance and interweaved with the golden arrows.

“Strange Armament, Pure Dragon Robe. I already knew that Father must also have gave this Strange Armament to you.”

“However, do not underestimate my Golden Radiance Lotus Flower. Although it can only be used once, if I channel all my power into it, even the Pure Dragon Robe cannot block it.”

Suddenly, the supreme elder explosively shouted. The golden

arrows then abruptly detonated. Bursts of explosions endlessly rang out, and countless berserk ripples constantly swept and spread on the old ancestor's body,

“Dammit! This supreme elder is actually attacking his dynasty's old ancestor! What exactly is happening?”

At that instant, Chu Feng was endlessly shocked. He originally thought that the danger in front of his eyes was already dissolved, but he did not expect the supreme elder to suddenly change his face again. Moreover, the attacks right now clearly harmed the dynasty's old ancestor already because even though the old ancestor had a Strange Armament protecting him, such a terrifying attack would definitely cause heavy injuries on his body.

“Screw it!”

Although he was still unclear what was happening between the old ancestor and the supreme elder, Chu Feng felt that the situation in front of him was already not good. So, with his full power, he finally made a crack in the blue-coloured Spirit Formation.

Quickly after, Chu Feng overlaid his palms. A flash of radiance came from the middle of his hands, then he opened them once again. A fingernail-size blue-coloured crystal object had appeared on his palm.

Chu Feng patted his palm towards the crack. A slightly weak ripple spread, and when he retracted his palm, the crack in the

blue-coloured Spirit Formation already disappeared, but the blue-coloured crystal object pierced through the Spirit Formation, became a blur of light, and flew out of the palace.

“Ahh!” But at the same time, the horrifying ripples finally dissipated. The body of dynasty’s old ancestor appeared within Chu Feng’s line of sight once again.

The current old ancestor’s body, other than the areas covered by the golden long robe, was horribly mangled. There were even some places that revealed eerie white bones. Even his face was no exception. It was extremely horrifying.

Although he blocked the Golden Radiance Lotus Flower, his body did indeed receive heavy injuries. Currently, his aura was feeble. Not to mention continuing to fight, if he remained in that state, he would quickly die.

“Why? Why attack me? Let me at least die with some understanding.” The dynasty’s old ancestor said.

“Oh brother, don’t blame me. I don’t care about something like the position of emperor. I also don’t care about the love Father has given to you. Even more so, I don’t care about all the fame and wealth being taken by you.”

“What I do care about is whether I die or live, but I, I have already reached the year of death. But I don’t want to die!”

“In these years, I have always been searching for a method to prolong my life. I’ve tried various immortal grasses and divine medicines, but the effects were extremely minuscule. The ones with the best effect were only the Year Prolongation Immortal Grasses.”

“But you also know that those things are very precious. So precious that even you aren’t willing to buy some even as your life reaches the end. So, I shouldn’t even hope for you to buy me some.”

“Hence, when the Ji Dynasty, Zhao Dynasty, and Liu Dynasty joined hands to take out ten Year Prolongation Immortal Grasses in exchange for your life, I agreed.” The supreme elder lightly smiled and said.

“Big Brother, you are truly stupid.”

cough cough cough Hearing those words, the dynasty’s old ancestor was furious. He first violently coughed a few times, then said, “How many years has the Ji clan, Zhao clan, and Liu clan wanted to invade my Jiang Dynasty?”

“At present, in the Jiang Dynasty, the only one able to fight against them is me. You helping them right now is not only as simple as killing me. You are sending my entire Jiang Dynasty to the grave!”

“Hoh, if you truly feared them, you wouldn’t be taking a risk by coming here to open the Emperor Tomb.” The supreme elder



coldly smiled. Quickly after, he said, “Besides, what does the existence of the Emperor Tomb have to do with me? I only care how long my own life can last for.”

# Chapter 505: Spirit Formation Essence

---

“In the past years, in order to help you prolong your life, have I spent a small amount of resources on you?”

“I treat you like this, yet you repay me in such a way and actually don’t care about the survival of the dynasty. Are you still human? You are simply an animal!”

cough cough cough cough cough~~~ The dynasty’s old ancestor continuously coughed from anger. Mouthfuls and mouthfuls of blood kept on spraying out from his mouth. Both of his hands pushed against the floor, as from top to bottom, his entire body was intensely quivering.

The current ruler of the Jiang Dynasty’s life was presently flowing away rapidly. At present, he was already on the border of life and death.

“Oh brother, this is exactly the so-called ‘Without being ruthless, one cannot be a man’. For survival, I can do anything. Before long, the Jiang Dynasty will accompany your death. So, go die without worries.”

The supreme elder fully revealed his killing intent. Seeing his younger brother who was made completely unrecognizable and horribly mangled by himself, he actually didn’t show any traces of being sorry. Instead, he wanted to kill his own blood brother.

“Old beast, your life shall rest!”

But just at that time, Chu Feng used the power of lightning and raised his cultivation to the 1st level of the Heaven realm. He waved the Asura Ghost Axe, explosively shot a black-coloured blade of light, and it flew towards the supreme elder.

Although he wasn't too close with the dynasty's old ancestor, he was not willing to just watch a decent old man be killed by someone. So, he had to make a move. Even though he clearly knew he wouldn't be able to defeat his opponent, at least he could buy some time.

“Hmph. Even a little ant like you dares to attack me? You are truly looking to die.” Seeing that, the supreme elder coldly snorted, and without even moving his hand, a layer of Heaven power was spread out, immediately crushing and shattering the black-coloured blade of light. Furthermore, with horrifying pressure, the Heaven power was going to engulf Chu Feng.

“Dammit! A person in the 8th level of the Heaven realm is really too terrifying. In front of him, I do not have any ability to return the attacks.”

At that instant, Chu Feng tightly furrowed his brows and his face changed greatly because he astonishedly discovered in front of the Heaven power, his body was already bound and what awaited him was an unstoppable, terrifying attack that could not be dodged.

With the power that the Heaven power contained, it could definitely burst Chu Feng into a pool of blood.

boom

But in the moment when everything was hanging by a single thread, an explosion suddenly rang out behind Chu Feng. At the same time, a body appeared in front of him like a ghost. Its palm opened, then the horrifying Heaven power disappeared like smoke dissipating and cloud dispersing.

It was the Monstrous Monkey King. After the Monstrous Monkey King received Chu Feng's signal, it immediately came over.

“What is happening?” At that instant, the emperor of the Jiang dynasty as well as experts such as Jiang Hengyuan all ran inside. When they saw the scene in front of their eyes, all of them didn't know what to do.

“Monkey Bro, quickly protect the old ancestor. The supreme elder wants to kill him!” Chu Feng hurriedly said.

“I knew that this old thing wasn't a kind one. I'll put him to his place right now.” The Monstrous Monkey King did not waste any time with words as well. The red glare in his eyes flickered as he became a blur, rushing towards the supreme elder.

“Even if you don't die, within a short period of time, your body will not recover either.”

“The Jiang dynasty's later generation, quickly leave the

continent of the Nine Provinces and yield this piece of land, or else what awaits you is the eradication of the Jiang Dynasty! Hahaha!”

However, at that instant, the supreme elder did not exchange blows with the Monstrous Monkey King. Instead, he turned, and circled around the Monstrous Monkey King with a strange angle. With bursts of cold laughter, he escaped.

At that instant, the Monstrous Monkey King also did not chase as of the people there, the one it was most concerned about was only Chu Feng. If some change happened to Chu Feng after it left, the losses would not outweigh the gains.

“Father, Father, are you okay?”

“Ancestor! Heavens, what exactly is going on here? Chu Feng, what exactly happened here?”

After the supreme elder left, the Jiang Dynasty crowd hurriedly rushed towards their old ancestor. As they did their best to control the old ancestor’s injuries, they asked Chu Feng about the ins and outs of what happened.

And after knowing everything, the expressions of the people from the Jiang Dynasty rapidly changed and on their faces, unprecedented worry surged, as if their last days had arrived. After stabilizing the old ancestor’s injuries, with the lead of the emperor, they backed out of the Emperor Tomb.

As for Gu Tianchen and the others from the World Spirit Guild, they also feared the dangers of the Emperor Tomb, and chose to back out as well.

At that very instant, only Chu Feng and the Monstrous Monkey King remained. Chu Feng was not willing to leave just like that, and the Monstrous Monkey King was the same.

So, the two of them didn't care about the hidden risks within the Emperor Tomb and decided to continue deeper in. However, before walking for long, the Monstrous Monkey King's face changed and said, "My guess was indeed correct. There are indeed obstructions in his place. Moreover, extremely powerful Spirit Formation obstructions."

"Monkey Bro, why so?" Chu Feng confusedly asked.

"Chu Feng, look at this." Suddenly, the Monstrous Monkey King leaped, and when it appeared again, it was already a hundred meters away from Chu Feng.

Seeing that, Chu Feng hurriedly ran over. Only then did he discovered under the Monstrous Monkey King's feet, there was a pool of water.

To be more precise, it was not ordinary water because the water was extremely clear. In addition to that, there was even faint brilliance and from the little pool of water, Chu Feng felt extremely wild energy as well as extremely dense spiritual power, Origin power, Profound power, and Heaven power.

“Monkey Bro, what is this?” Chu Feng felt endlessly shocked because he felt that this thing, that gathered all the energy in the air, would have amazing effects in cultivation and was a precious cultivating treasure.

“This is Spirit Formation Essence.” The Monstrous Monkey King said.

“Spirit Formation Essence?” Chu Feng’s interest multiplied.

“Spirit Formations are very powerful. They can block the attacks that humans make, but it cannot block the World’s Energy flowing in the air.”

“The so-called World’s Energy also includes spiritual power, Origin power, Profound power, Heaven power, and even the more powerful Martial power, as well as other formless energies in the world. They are all World’s Energy.”

“However, when a type of Spirit Formation reaches a certain degree of strength, it can block the flow of the World’s Energy, and when this type of Spirit Formation has many years of existence, it will convert all the World’s Energy it stopped into physical form. This, is Spirit Formation Essence.”

“And since Spirit Formation Essence has appeared in this place, it means that there should originally be a Spirit Formation here, yet right now, there is nothing and only Spirit Formation Essence remains. This only indicates one thing. The Spirit Formation was

broken by someone. Broken without leaving any trace at all.” As the Monstrous Monkey King spoke, it carefully looked everywhere, seemingly wanting to find hints of the Spirit Formation.

“Then it means that this Spirit Formation Essence is truly a treasure!” But compared to the worry of the Monstrous Monkey King, Chu Feng was not interested in the Spirit Formation. What he felt interested in was only the Spirit Formation Essence.

As he spoke, Chu Feng took out a jade bottle that stored medicinal pellets from his Cosmos Sack and after pouring the pellets out, he started to gather the Spirit Formation Essence on the ground.

“Chu Feng, what are you doing?! This Spirit Formation Essence is extremely berserk, do not touch it!”

“It’s said that there was once a powerful World Spiritist who wanted to extract the World’s Energy from the Spirit Formation Essence. He laid a huge, special formation and took out all the frenzied energy from the Spirit Formation Essence, then consumed and refined the Spirit Formation Essence as if it was a Heaven medicine.”

“But at the end, because there was still a bit of wild energy remaining within the Spirit Formation Essence not taken away, it caused the World Spiritist to lose his life because of that. So, this Spirit Formation Essence has been determined as a dangerous object. Everyone who sees it only keeps a distance.” Seeing Chu Feng’s actions, the Monstrous Monkey King’s face changed greatly, hurriedly speaking to stop him.



# Chapter 506: Reviving The Ancestor

---

“Monkey Bro, don’t worry. It’s not like I’m preparing to refine it, but such a precious and strange thing is really rarely seen. I want collect it and make it a memento.”

Chu Feng lightly smiled, then immediately after, engraved a small-scale Spirit Formation on the bottle. Afterwards, he inverted it, then a bundle of light shot out from the mouth of the bottle.

The areas that the radiance covered made the Spirit Formation Essence flow reversely in, and were all absorbed into the jade bottle. Just like that, with a blink of work, Chu Feng finishing collecting all of the Spirit Formation Essence and stuffed it into the Cosmos Sack.

“Boy, do not think of refining this thing or else it’ll cost your little life. Don’t blame me for not reminding you then!” The Monstrous Monkey King shot Chu Feng a glance, seeming to know Chu Feng’s plans, but did not go too deep and continued to walk forward.

“Heh.” Chu Feng chuckled, scratched his head, and also followed.

ta But before walking for far, the Monstrous Monkey King suddenly stopped. Quickly after, it waved his big sleeve and curled Chu Feng up, then along with him, speedily flew towards the direction they came from originally.

“Monkey Bro, what’s wrong? Did you feel that something was

wrong?” To the Monstrous Monkey King’s sudden actions, Chu Feng guessed that it was definitely because he detected the aura of danger, or else with his nature, it would be impossible for him to escape so wildly.

“Just now, I felt two Evil Spirits in the 9th level of the Heaven realm. Luckily, they did not have Spirit power, so before they discovered you and me, I detected them first.”

“Or else, with my current cultivation, I might not have been able to escape from their hands. This Emperor Tomb is in chaos. Many barricades have been opened, and sooner or later, the Evil Spirits will discover that. When they run everywhere and kill each other, it will be even more dangerous. With our cultivation, we cannot enter the Emperor Tomb again from this place.” The Monstrous Monkey King explained.

Hearing those words, although Chu Feng was a bit unwilling to, he had no choice. Even the Monstrous Monkey King shrunk away, so with his tiny cultivation of the 1st level of the Heaven realm, what could he do?

Besides, on the road, they didn’t even see any treasures. Even the Secret Skill was made into a trap. Chu Feng felt that it was because of the black-clothed old man. With him opening up the road in front, even if Chu Feng continued taking risks and kept on going forward, he would not gain any benefits.

Benefits that were able to be seen would certainly be taken away by the black-clothed old man, so Chu Feng decided to just return to the Azure Dragon School.

After all, presently, the Jiang Dynasty had a disaster heading its way. It was likely that the entire continent of the Nine Provinces would sink into huge disarray.

At a time like this, he, and the Monstrous Monkey King, had to return to the Azure Dragon School to control the situation. Or else, with a mistake, the Azure Dragon School which hadn't finished being rebuilt would very possibly die out completely.

Within the Azure Dragon Mountain Range, the rebuilding of the Azure Dragon School was in progress very successfully. Many main buildings were already finished being set up. There was a grand atmosphere, and compared to the former Azure Dragon School, it was many times more spectacular. No matter if it was scale or quality, both were raised a lot, and a flourishing appearance was manifesting everywhere.

Furthermore, at present, there were already disciples and elders living in many buildings. It could be seen that some disciples were cultivating and some disciples were conversing. There were many new faces, but all had extraordinary aptitude.

There were expressions of joy on everyone's faces. However, they did not know that right now, the continent of the Nine Provinces was facing a calamity. At least the Jiang Dynasty, the huge power titled as the overlord of the Nine Provinces for many years, was very possibly going to be replaced by others, and that the continent was going to go into chaos.

After Chu Feng returned to the Azure Dragon School, he didn't go see Li Zhangqing. He directly came to the center of the Azure Dragon School, to the vastest palace.

In this place, there were a few elders with quite decent strength, and because it was a forbidden area, when they saw a figure descending from the sky, all of them raised their guards, as though they were facing a grand enemy.

But after they clearly saw that person's appearance, they hurriedly made way. Moreover, humble expressions filled their faces because they already recognized that the person who came was the one who did the meritorious deed of rebuilding the Azure Dragon School, Chu Feng.

After Chu Feng entered the palace, he walked into the underground palace. Within the underground palace, he laid a Spirit Formation, then very quickly, an entrance appeared. It was the entrance to the Thousand Bone Graveyard. However, above the current entrance, a grand structure covered it. So, this place also became a forbidden area.

After arriving at the Thousand Bone Graveyard, Chu Feng told the Azure Dragon Founder all about opening the Emperor Tomb, as well as the Jiang Dynasty facing a disaster.

“Chu Feng, we cannot do nothing and ignore this matter.” After knowing everything, the Azure Dragon Founder tightly knitted his brows and solemnly said.

“Ancestor, actually, I also want to help the Jiang Dynasty. After all, right now, the labour for rebuilding of the Azure Dragon School is from the Jiang Dynasty. Everyone in the continent of the Nine Provinces know that my Azure Dragon School’s relationship with the Jiang Dynasty is not simple.”

“So, if the three dynasties truly want to eradicate the Jiang Dynasty, my Azure Dragon School will most likely not avoid destruction. However, with our strengths, I’m afraid we cannot save the Jiang Dynasty.” Chu Feng shook his head.

“Chu Feng, is the Purple-cloak World Spiritist you told me about last time still here?” After thinking for a while, the Azure Dragon Founder asked.

“You’re talking about Monkey Bro? Yes, it’s said that the Monstrous Beasts of the Thousand Monster Mountain will live and die with the Azure Dragon School.” Chu Feng replied.

“Mm. I never would have thought that this Monstrous Beast would be filled with such strong camaraderie. Whatever. As things are right now, there is no other way. Tell it to come, I have something I need its help for.” The Azure Dragon Founder said.

“Ancestor, is it possible that you mean?” Chu Feng couldn’t help but rejoice, as he already heard the meaning behind his words.

“Little boy, you truly ask even though you already know the answer.” The Azure Dragon Founder shook his head with a bitter smile, then said, “Back then, the Jiang Dynasty has showed me

kindness as well, so I can't just watch them die out like this. Besides, when the other dynasties come to rule the continent of the Nine Provinces, they may not kindly treat the forces and citizens here."

"So, I want to allow that Monstrous Beast help me revive, to use my set of old bones to help the Jiang Dynasty, and to fight against the three dynasties."

"Mm, I understand ancestor. I'll go right now." Although he already expected it, when the Azure Dragon Founder personally spoke those words, Chu Feng was still unendingly excited.

After that, Chu Feng told the Monstrous Monkey King about the Azure Dragon Founder. After knowing that the Azure Dragon Founder was in this world currently, even it was shocked. After all, after one thousand years, no matter if it was man or consciousness, they should be destroyed.

However, being shocked was being shocked. The Monstrous Monkey King did not ask much and straightforwardly agreed to Chu Feng's request. Agreed to help the Azure Dragon Founder resurrect.

So, Chu Feng brought the Monstrous Monkey King and entered the Thousand Bone Graveyard to meet with the Azure Dragon Founder.

And seeing his strong consciousness and complete corpse, as well as the special pearl, the Monstrous Monkey King was endlessly

shocked.

However, facing a complete Source energy from an expert in the peak of the Heaven realm, as well as a mysterious treasure pearl with special power, the Monstrous Monkey King did not have any plundering actions.

Rather, it changed its usual untamed attitude and respectfully said to the Azure Dragon Founder, “Azure Dragon Founder. In terms of age, you are my senior; in terms of status, you are my brother’s ancestor. Tell me, what do I need to do in order to help you revive?!”

# Battle Of The Jiang Dynasty



# Chapter 507: Dynasty Summoning Order

---

The Monstrous Monkey King helping the Azure Dragon Founder revive was a very tedious and complicated matter. It required a very lengthy period of time, needing at least one month.

To such high difficulty matters, with the Spirit Formations techniques that Chu Feng currently grasp, he could really not help out much.

As the Monstrous Monkey King discussed the specific steps with the Azure Dragon Founder regarding his revival, Chu Feng arrived in front of the Spirit Formation sealing Su Rou and Su Mei.

“You two girls... Two years has passed with a single sleep. Do you know how much I miss your voices, your smiles?”

Chu Feng sat in front of the Spirit Formation. Through the gaps, he was looking at the two beauties in the Spirit Formation, and the corners of his mouth couldn't help raising to form a hint of a peaceful smile.

Quite some time had passed since the Monstrous Monkey King saved Su Rou and Su Mei by thoroughly merging the Ice and Fire Pearls into their bodies, but the two of them had yet to reawaken.

At first, Chu Feng was still very worried, but very quickly, his nervousness became nothing and replacing it was unexpected and surprising joy.

It was because as Su Rou and Su Mei deeply slept, not only did they gradually recover their former appearances, as the colour of their faces became redder and redder, currently, they had a special atmosphere they didn't have before. It was something that normal people did not have, so without a doubt, it was definitely affected by the pearls within their bodies.

But the thing that made Chu Feng most joyful was that as the two of them were in deep sleep, their auras started to rise. Currently, Su Rou already rose into the 6th level of the Profound realm, and even Su Mei's cultivation rose into the 5th level of the Profound realm.

Unknowingly, their cultivations were actually quickly going to catch up to Chu Feng's. To know that the reason why Chu Feng was able to have his current cultivation was because he experienced countless tribulations and cultivated a large amount of resources. It could be said that he paid an extremely huge price.

But the two girls found fortune in a disaster. They only slept deeply for roughly two years of time and their cultivation rose greatly. Moreover, it was clearly not their final realm. If it continued, when they were to wake up, perhaps they could even step into the Heaven realm.

Speaking honestly, facing that situation, even if it was Chu Feng, he felt a bit of admiration. However, even more so, he felt happy. After all, Su Rou and Su Mei were people he loved. If their cultivation became stronger, it was equal to having the power to protect themselves. It was exactly what Chu Feng hoped for.

“If the Jiang Dynasty can dissolve this danger, and both of you can also quickly awaken, follow me to the Eastern Sea Region to have a look. After all, you two, who have the two pearls, should also go check out that land.”

Chu Feng already made plans. If Su Rou and Su Mei could quickly awaken, he would bring them along to the Eastern Sea Region, and also let them join the Four Seas Academy together with Jiang Wushang and Zhang Tianyi.

With that, for the two of them, they would have greater developments. After all, joining the Four Seas Academy was equivalent to having a shelter, and relatively speaking, it would be safer.

As for Chu Feng himself, he temporarily already gave up the thought of joining the Four Seas Academy because he had to quickly raise his cultivation, and that required a large amount of cultivation resources.

But as cultivation resources were so precious, on the journey of retrieving them, it would be hard to avoid setting enmity with others. So, after Chu Feng entered the Eastern Sea Region, on the surface, he would act as if he didn't know Zhang Tianyi, Jiang Wushang and the others. He would only meet up with them in the dark, so that in the future, the enemies he offend wouldn't go and find Zhang Tianyi and the others for settling debts.

“Let me feel what kind of effects this thing has.”

Suddenly, Chu Feng took out the jade bottle containing the Spirit Formation Essence. Although he already knew how horrifying the Spirit Formation Essence was, being titled as a dangerous object that could not be refined, Chu Feng felt that it could be refined. The Divine Lightning in his body seemed to not fear any frenzied energy. As long as it was energy in between the heaven and the earth, they could all be absorbed by it.

So, Chu Feng opened the jade bottle and poured a drop of Spirit Formation Essence onto his hand. Just in case, he only licked it. Immediately, he felt a burst of wild gas exploding in his mouth.

“Mm!”

At that instant, Chu Feng hurriedly closed his mouth, and while grinding his teeth, he forcefully swallowed the gas.

Just as it entered his throat, the wild gas attacked Chu Feng's body. But just as it had indications of attacking, a burst of boundless suction power surged out of Chu Feng's dantian, forcibly taking the frenzied gas into the dantian.

At the same time, chewing sounds came from his dantian.

At that moment, Chu Feng was endlessly ecstatic because the wild Spirit Formation Essence was exactly how Chu Feng expected it to be. It was consumed by the Divine Lightning in Chu Feng's dantian without any negative effects at all. Moreover, with just a tiny bit, Chu Feng felt his aura strengthen a lot.

From then on, from little to more, Chu Feng swallowed the Spirit Formation Essence in the jade bottle bit by bit and after Chu Feng completely finished the bottle of Spirit Formation Essence, like a miracle, Chu Feng broke through. Broke into the 9th level of the Profound realm.

“This Spirit Formation Essence is indeed a good thing. With just this tiny bit, it made me break through one level of cultivation. If I get myself more of this, wouldn’t I have hope to step into the Heaven realm?” Chu Feng was very excited.

He was not only happy because the Spirit Formation Essence could be refined by him, but because the Divine Lightning could be fearless of such uncontrolled energy. Which means many things people could not refine and were viewed as dangerous, Chu Feng could take them as cultivation resources and refine them.

“Haha, Chu Feng, I had said it before. You don’t need to worry about cultivation resources because there are many types of cultivation resources in this world.”

“Right now, you believe me right? There are still many things like this Spirit Formation Essence in this world. To normal people, they are useless, and are even things that they keep a distance when seen, but to you, they have incomparable advantageous effects.”

“This continent of the Nine Provinces is only a tiny land. It is normal for this place to have few oddities, but I believe after you

step into the Eastern Sea Region, there will be more and more things able to be used by you. Four years later, you may not have no chance.” Just at that time, Eggy also spoke. Actually, when Chu Feng consumed the Spirit Formation Essence just now, she also broke out in cold sweat for Chu Feng. But, after seeing him succeed, from the bottom of her heart, she felt happy for Chu Feng.

“Mm, yeah. I look more and more forward to stepping on that land.” And after hearing Eggy’s words, Chu Feng was even more endlessly looking forward to the Eastern Sea Region.

After his cultivation broke through, Chu Feng didn’t go disturb the Monstrous Monkey King and the Azure Dragon Founder. He left the Thousand Bone Graveyard, but just as he returned to the vast palace, he discovered that Li Zhangqing was sitting inside with a face full of uneasiness.

After Li Zhangqing saw Chu Feng, he hurried ran up to him and said with somewhat panic, “Chu Feng, this isn’t good.”

“School Head, what happened?” Chu Feng puzzledly asked.

“Look at this.” Li Zhangqing handed a golden letter to Chu Feng.

The letter was sent by the Jiang Dynasty, and on the letter, three dazzling big words were written.

It was a——Dynasty Summoning Order!

# Chapter 508: Reinforcements

---

“I never would have thought that the Jiang Dynasty was forced to this kind of state.” After seeing the letter, Chu Feng sighed.

It was because the so-called Dynasty Summoning Order was for summoning all of the peak experts in all of the powers in the continent of the Nine Provinces, telling them to go forward to the Jiang Dynasty in order to fight against a great enemy together.

Thinking about how strong the Jiang Dynasty was, so strong that even after so many years, there were no other powers that dared to invade the continent of the Nine Provinces, yet as things were at present, the Jiang Dynasty was actually asking for assistance, from the powers of many places in the Nine Provinces. It could be seen that the current Jiang Dynasty was indeed facing a huge plight.

“Chu Feng, is it possible that you know what happened?” Seeing Chu Feng’s reaction, which was of having no surprise, and rather as if everything within expectations, Li Zhangqing became aware that Chu Feng possibly knew something.

“Yeah. School Head, right now, the Jiang Dynasty, and it can even be said that the entire continent of the Nine Provinces, are facing their biggest predicament. Right now, three dynasties that control three continents are joining hands and attacking the Jiang Dynasty.”

“Actually, if it was before, the Jiang Dynasty did not fear them, but right now, the old ancestor of the Jiang Dynasty has been

heavily injured and is powerless to battle. So, it can be said that the Jiang Dynasty is in imminent danger currently.”

“If the Jiang Dynasty is truly destroyed, I’m afraid that my Azure Dragon School will also be affected.” Chu Feng spoke the truth.

“This... I never would have thought that such a huge matter actually happened.” After knowing the truth, the uneasiness on Li Zhangqing’s face became a bit stronger.

“As things are right now, there is no other way. We can only fight with all our strengths, so hopefully the three dynasties come a bit later.” Chu Feng knew if the Azure Dragon Founder revived, with his strength, he would definitely help the Jiang Dynasty defeat the three other dynasties.

But the Azure Dragon Founder’s revival required at least one month of time, perhaps even several months of time. So, Chu Feng could only hope that the Azure Dragon Founder revive before the grand army of the three clans arrive at the gates of the Jiang Dynasty.

After that, within the current Azure Dragon School, Chu Feng gathered all the Heaven realm experts together and roughly said that at present, the Jiang Dynasty was going to face huge trouble, and that he was preparing to support them.

However, people would very possibly lose lives in that matter, so Chu Feng didn’t force anyone. Those who were willing to go, follow him; those who were unwilling to go could choose to stay.



Even if they feared the arrival of the three clan's army and were afraid of themselves, it would be fine even if they backed out of the Azure Dragon School.

But what Chu Feng did not expect was that other than several people who chose to leave the Azure Dragon School, everyone else decided to follow Chu Feng to help the Jiang Dynasty.

Especially the Monstrous Beasts of the Thousand Monster Mountain. They were filled with bloodthirst, and not a single one shrunk away.

Although it was possible that the Monstrous Monkey King said something for them to act such a way, it had to be said that the group of Monstrous Beasts indeed made Chu Feng look at them in different eyes.

So, with the entrustment of the Azure Dragon Founder, and with Zhang Tianyi, the five Monster Kings, as well as a group of Heaven realm experts, they went forth to support the Jiang Dynasty, to defend against the attack of the three clan's army.

Many days later...

The current Jiang Dynasty was very strictly on guard. Everyone knew that the three dynasties were going to attack, and all of them were preparing to face an enemy.

Outside of the vast city, a powerful Spirit Formation had already

been opened. All of the experts in the dynasty were on alert, finishing making preparations for defending against the three clan's army.

At present, the emperor of the Jiang Dynasty as well as experts such as Jiang Hengyuan stood on top of the city walls and looked at the distance from high up with complicated gazes. It was because they didn't know how much longer peace like that could be continued for.

swish

Suddenly, a dynasty elder flew from the heart of the dynasty itself, and landed on the city wall. He first respectfully saluted to the emperor as well as the many experts, then said with very slight agitation appearing, "Milord, reporting in. The army of the three clans has already entered the borders of the Nine Provinces, and is currently hurrying towards my Jiang Dynasty."

"What? So fast? How many have come? What are their cultivation?!" Hearing those words, the faces of many experts changed greatly, as surprise and panic emerged onto their faces.

"They are approaching on air. The specific number of people is very difficult to be sure of, but they are at least in the Heaven realm. Other than humans, there are also many powerful Monstrous Beasts." The elder replied.

"Then what about my Nine Provinces' powers? Count the date. They should have already received the Summoning Order we sent

out right? Why, up until now, there are no movements?” One expert asked.

“The Jie clan, Yuangang School, Fire God Valley, and other powers have yet to arrive within the borders of my Han Province.”

“And the scouts stationed at the various provinces report that they are organizing their troops right now, preparing to leave the continent of the Nine Provinces. I’m afraid that they won’t come to support us.” The elder replied.

“Truly damn it. It was a waste for the emperor to save their lives from the hands of the Monstrous Monkey King. Right now, they actually forget such kindness.” After knowing the news, all of the dynasty experts on scene were endlessly furious.

“Whatever, we should originally not rely on others for assistance on this matter. Besides, even if they came, so what? Can they stop the three dynasties’ three old ancestors in the 9th level of the Heaven realm?”

“As things are right now, we can only rely on the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation that the former old ancestor left behind.” Just at that time, the emperor spoke.

“In my Jiang Dynasty, a hope like Wushang finally appeared with great difficulty. If some accident truly appears, what would we do then?” Jiang Hengyuan said with a face filled with worry.

“Yeah, milord, Senior Jiang is extremely correct. Right now, my Jiang Dynasty should think of ways to protect Wushang, and should get him quickly out of the Nine Provinces. How can we, at this time, let him borrow the power of the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation to fight against the enemy? This is really too risky.” Many other experts went up and urged.

“If my dynasty doesn’t even exist, what use is hope? Besides, choosing to stay behind to borrow the power of the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation in order to fight against the three dynasties was Wushang’s own decision. I am very happy to be able to have a son like him.” At that instant, the corners of the emperor’s mouth rose to form proud light smile.

And after hearing his words, the group of experts also lowered their heads and said nothing. They really didn’t know how to advise him otherwise.

“Milord, this isn’t good.” But just at that time, another dynasty expert pierced through the air and came. Moreover, his face was filled with panic.

“What’s the matter?” Seeing that, the crowd’s expression all changed slightly and asked at the same time.

“There is a group of people entering my dynasty’s borders, and are currently approaching quickly towards my dynasty. Their cultivation is almost all in the Heaven realm.” The expert replied.

“Is it possible that they have come so quickly?” After knowing

that, everyone tightly furrowed their brows and cast their gazes towards the distance. Furthermore, an order was made. All troops of the Jiang Dynasty, prepare to face the enemy.

And as the Jiang Dynasty prepared to face a nasty battle and as everyone locked their nervous gazes towards the distant horizon, a group of figures finally appeared within their field of view. And when the people from the Jiang Dynasty saw that group of people, their originally solemn expressions instantly became joyful.

Because, they already recognized that the ones who were coming were not the armies of the three clans, but the people they were familiar with. It was Chu Feng. The group of powerful people Chu Feng led from the Azure Dragon School had come to support the Jiang Dynasty.

# Chapter 509: Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation

---

At that instant, no matter if it was the dynasty's emperor, or the dynasty's many experts, they rejoiced unexpectedly, and were endlessly excited.

Because, they never would have thought when the powers, which followed them for many years, all chose to leave, Chu Feng would bring so many experts to support them.

The proverbs said it well: "True feelings are seen when disaster strikes". Although the troops Chu Feng brought really had no way of fighting against the troops of the three great dynasties, it spoke his heart. Chu Feng's action was undoubtedly like sending coal during winter, giving the Jiang Dynasty a huge encouragement.

"I didn't expect that as my Jiang Dynasty stands on the border of life and death, this child would come help us while disregarding his life."

"No wonder Yini and Wushang, as well as Father, has such a good impressions on this child. It seems like he is truly a person who cares about feelings and camaraderie."

Seeing Chu Feng and the others, the emperor also had a face filled with relief. His already quite good impression on Chu Feng immediately became much better.

In the moment they discovered it was Chu Feng and the others who came as reinforcements, the Jiang Dynasty closed the Spirit Formation that reached the sky, opened the city gates, and welcomed Chu Feng and the others in.

“My friend Chu Feng, you indeed have camaraderie and righteousness. At a time like this, the one willing to support my Jiang Dynasty is only your Azure Dragon School.” Jiang Hengyuan looked at Chu Feng, and said while smiling.

“Ahh, Brother Hengyuan, it can’t be said like that. Haven’t I, Qi Fengyang, represented the Qilin Prince’s Mansion and come?” Just at that time, an old man walked out from the crowd. It was none other than Qi Fengyang.

“Haha, Brother Fengyang, I knew you would come.” Seeing Qi Fengyang, the smile on Jiang Hengyuan’s face became bit stronger. Although, no matter if it was cultivation or status, he and Qi Fengyang weren’t equal, the two of them got along extremely well, and their relationship was not different than brothers at all.

“That’s right. My second brother is correct. I believe that as they are the same as us, remembering that the Jiang Dynasty has not shown a small number of acts of kindness, at least the people from the World Spirit Guild will definitely come.” Chu Feng smilingly said.

The second brother he spoke of was Qi Fengyang. Back then, Chu Feng and Qi Fengyang became sworn brothers. So, Qi Fengyang became Chu Feng’s big brother. But after the Monstrous Monkey King appeared, the seniority between the three of them changed.

The Monstrous Monkey King was the big brother, Qi Fengyang became the second brother, and as Chu Feng had the smallest seniority, he was the third brother.

As they spoke, a dynasty expert speedily flew over, went up to the emperor, saluted, and reported, “Milord, reporting in. All of the Heaven realm experts from the World Spirit Guild, with Gu Tianchen leading, has already entered my dynasty’s borders. Right now, they are hurrying towards my Jiang Dynasty’s headquarters.”

“Haha, Chu Feng’s words are truly accurate. I knew that this World Spirit Guild would be different from the Jie clan. At the time of my Jiang Dynasty’s catastrophe, they would definitely come and help. My Jiang Dynasty cooperating with them for this many years has indeed not been in vain.”

After learning of that news, the people from the Jiang Dynasty were even endlessly elated. Putting aside that the arrival of reinforcements at a time like this would provide them with quite a bit of battle power, purely the intention caused their morale to multiply.

“Milord!” Suddenly, another shout rang out. This time, it was an old man. Similarly, a Heaven realm expert. As he shouted for the emperor, he flew over with extremely quick speed.

“Is it possible that another power has come to assist my Jiang Dynasty?” Seeing that person, the people on scene were full of smiles, and even thought there was more good news.



“Wait.” But when they saw the face of that elder, their hearts were frightened because the on the face of the old man, it was not of joy. It was a face filled with panic.

“What’s the matter? What happened?” The emperor of the Jiang Dynasty hurried went up to ask.

“Prince, he... he couldn’t endure the power of the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation and right now, he is unconscious! Milord, quickly go and see him!” The elder alarmedly said.

“What?!”

After hearing those words, the expressions of everyone on scene in the Jiang Dynasty changed greatly. Especially the emperor. His originally joyful face immediately became pale-white. He leaped, and flew towards the core zone of the dynasty.

At the same time, other experts from the Jiang Dynasty followed one after the other. Seeing that, after Chu Feng and the others looked at each other, they also followed.

And because presently, Chu Feng and the others had a reinforcement relationship with the Jiang Dynasty, there was no one who stopped them when they followed the emperor and the others.

On the road, they walked through layers of barriers, and finally,

they entered a luxurious underground palace. To be more precise, it was not an underground palace, but a huge underground formation.

It was because the entire palace was engraved full of symbols and patterns. Clearly, it was a completed formation.

At that moment, a large group of people were in a cluster surrounding an area. Within the group of people, Chu Feng saw a familiar figure. It was Jiang Yini. At present, Jiang Yini had a face full of nervousness as she looked towards the middle of the group.

“The emperor has come!” After someone shouted loudly, the crowd immediately scattered. Only at that time did Chu Feng discover the one in the middle of the crowd was actually Jiang Wushang.

The current Jiang Wushang was laid on the ground. His face was deathly-white, blood was flowing out of seven of his facial orifices, and he was in a coma. An elder with the cultivation in the 7th level of the Heaven realm was currently treating Jiang Wushang.

“Wushang!” Seeing his own son in that state, the emperor was even more anxious. With a flash, he went up to Jiang Wushang and personally diagnosed Jiang Wushang’s injuries.

And after finish checking Jiang Wushang’s injuries, the emperor’s tautly stretched face finally relaxed. After personally wiping clean the traces of blood on Jiang Wushang’s face, he stood up and said, “Carry him back to his room for resting.”

“Father, how’s my brother? He’s fine right?” Seeing that, Jiang Yini hurriedly asked closely.

“Don’t worry. It’s nothing major. He only received some light internal injuries.” The emperor replied.

“Ahh, this child Wushang is too stubborn. Before, just as he entered the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation, I felt that something was wrong with him and wanted him to back out, but he didn’t listen. Luckily, the elder laid a Delivery Formation on his body, and seeing he could not hold on, he sent him out. Or else... Sigh~~~” Mentioning that matter, Jiang Yini’s face was filled with helplessness and fear.

“Princess, just leave it as that. Don’t talk about him in such a way. He was also thinking for our Jiang Dynasty. After all, right now, the only thing that can save our dynasty is this Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation.” The elder in the 7th level of the Heaven realm said.

“Then what should we do now? If even Prince Wushang’s bloodline density can’t endure this Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation’s pressure, that also means that within the current Jiang Dynasty, there is no one who can gain the power of the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation. Doesn’t it mean we are only waiting to die?” A dynasty expert said.

“As things have come to this point, we cannot continue dragging this out. Milord, I implore you, send the princesses and princes out

of the dynasty right now and send experts to protect them as they leave the Nine Provinces. Or else, my Jiang Dynasty will truly be eradicated.” Suddenly, Jiang Hengyuan knelt on the ground and pleaded to the emperor.

“Emperor, we implore you!” Simultaneously, everyone from the Jiang Dynasty knelt down.

.”This...” Seeing that scene, the emperor didn’t know what to do and was in an endlessly difficult situation.

“Wait.” But just at that time, Chu Feng stood out, looked towards the crowd, and asked, “What’s with the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation you were just talking about?”

# Chapter 510: Entering The Formation

---

“Chu Feng, this Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation is a formation left behind by my Jiang Dynasty’s ancestors.”

“When their ages reach the end, the previous emperors would seal the power they cultivated in their entire lives into this formation to maintain the power this formation contains.”

“And as long as a person from the Jiang Dynasty enters this Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation, the power of the ancestors would attach onto their body, and within a short period of time, that person’s cultivation would rise greatly.”

“Originally, this Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation was our only hope to save my Jiang Dynasty currently, but it is useless as the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation is not complete. There is extremely great pressure within, and the people who do not have a strong bloodline have no way of enduring the pressure inside.”

“Wushang can be said to have the most powerful Royal Bloodline in my current Jiang Dynasty, but even though it was him, he could not endure the pressure in this Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation.” Speaking to that point, the emperor sighed with a face full of helplessness.

“Milord, since this Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation has such an effect, why not let me give it a try?” Chu Feng said.

“What? You want to try this Royal Bloodline Attachment

Formation?” Hearing those words, the expressions of the emperor as well as everyone from the Jiang Dynasty changed, and the gaze they looked at Chu Feng with couldn’t help becoming complicated.

“Chu Feng, you cannot do that. In order to prevent outsiders from using the power in this Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation, when my ancestors first laid this formation, they used special methods. Those who are not a part of my Jiang Dynasty will receive multiplied pressure after entering the formation.” Jiang Hengyuan reminded.

“Multiplied pressure... Then after enduring pressure like that, would it then be possible to gain the power of this formation?” Chu Feng smilingly asked, as if he didn’t put the so-called pressure of the formation in his eyes.

“This...” Hearing those words, Jiang Hengyuan became speechless because even if it was him, he didn’t know whether a person not a part of his clan could gain his ancestors’ powers after enduring the multiplied pressure.

“Chu Feng, accordingly, if you are able to endure the pressure, there is no problem for the ancestors’ powers to attach to you. However, because you aren’t a part of my dynasty, the power you gain will be greatly diminished, and moreover, it will also be very unstable.” Just at that time, the emperor explained.

“Milord, if it is truly like that, I, Chu Feng, am willing to give it a try.” Chu Feng begged.

“Chu Feng, I’ve taken your intention to heart, but it’s better if you don’t enter this Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation because you simply don’t know how terrifying the pressure of this Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation is.”

“Let’s say it like this. Normally, the pressure in this formation is already extremely horrifying. Before, Wushang entered, but if it was some other person, I’m afraid that in the instant that person entered, he would have been heavily injured. I am no exception.”

“And if power like this is multiplied several times, it would simply be the same as a land of certain death. In the moment one enters, that person would become a pool of blood. So, it’s best if you don’t try.” The emperor patiently advised him otherwise.

“Milord, I’ve heard the people from the dynasty say, that right now, the army of the three clans have already entered the borders of the Nine Provinces. With their speed, in less than several days, they will arrive at the Jiang Dynasty.”

“At that time, would you have any methods of defending?” Chu Feng asked while smiling.

“This...” After hearing Chu Feng’s words, the emperor sank into silence. Afterwards, he said with a small smile, “Indeed, right now, we are only waiting for death, and we have no methods to stop the three clan’s army.”

“But within the clan, we have the teachings of our ancestor. Even if we die, we must guard this land, the continent of the Nine

Provinces. The teachings of the ancestor cannot be disregarded. So, my Jiang Dynasty will not leave this place.”

“But Chu Feng, all of you aren’t a part of my dynasty. There is no need for you to stay behind with us as we wait for death. Right now, by coming to support my Jiang Dynasty, I am already very grateful. I have taken this kind intention to heart. All of you, please leave.”

“Ho... Milord. Since we have come today, we have no plans to leave and we have already made the preparations to live and die with the Jiang Dynasty.”

“Right now, since you don’t have any way of defending, this Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation can be said to be the only chance. Since death is to the left and also to the right, why not let me try it?”

“Although my cultivation isn’t strong, I still grasp some special methods, so perhaps I can endure the pressure of the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation. Even if I fail, then it would only be a death.” Chu Feng lightly smiled and said.

“Chu Feng, you...” Seeing Chu Feng persist in such a way for his Jiang Dynasty and actually not caring about his life or death, the emperor also didn’t know what he should do.

“Milord, since Chu Feng is insisting, why not let him try it?”



“Yeah, milord. After all, a Reverse Delivery Formation can be laid on his body. If he can truly not endure the pressure of the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation, he can be immediately sent out. At that time, he might not definitely die.” At that instant, many people from the dynasty started to urge him one after the other.

After all, they didn't want the Jiang Dynasty to be destroyed just like that, and since Chu Feng had such courage, it at least meant he had some confidence in himself. Besides, they also knew that Chu Feng had some special abilities. After all, he was the only person to gain two types of Secret Skills from the Emperor tomb.

So, at a time like this, they also wanted to find some chance when there was no chance. Even if there was only a one percent possibility of success, they did not want to miss out on it.

“Whatever. Since you insist on this, I wouldn't say more.”

“Overall, today, everyone in my Jiang Dynasty are grateful in our hearts, and we will never forget about your actions.”

Finally, the emperor also didn't say much, and personally laid a formation on Chu Feng's body. That formation, within a short distance, could send Chu Feng to his side.

The formation was called the Reverse Delivery Formation. Normally speaking, it didn't have great uses, but using it on the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation was exactly good.

“Chu Feng, go. That’s the entrance to the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation. If you feel that something is wrong, remember to loudly yell for help. I will immediately send you back here.” The emperor pointed at the center of the palace, at the round stone stage which was only half a meter tall, and said.

“Mm.” Chu Feng nodded his head with a light smile. Quickly after, lightning flashed in his eyes, and his aura rapidly rose, breaking into the 2nd level of the Heaven realm in a blink.

Quickly after, Chu Feng used the Black Tortoise Armor Technique as well, then started to walk. Step by step, he headed towards the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation.

At that instant, everyone there had their hearts pounding heavily and they were extremely nervous. Within the vast palace, it was dead silent. The only thing that could be heard was Chu Feng’s footsteps.

ta ta ta...

One step. Two steps. Three steps. Ten steps. Fifty steps. Finally, when Chu Feng walked for fifty steps, he successfully stepped onto the stage.

# Chapter 511: Troops Arriving At The City Gates

---

hmm

And also at that instant, in the silent palace, radiance shot everywhere immediately. All of the symbols started flickering, emitting dazzling brilliance.

As for the stone stage Chu Feng stepped on, a faint-blue pillar of light charged straight towards the sky. Within the pillar of light, symbols swirled, and strands of gas were scuttling everywhere randomly.

At that instant, almost everyone on scene held their breaths. Some people couldn't even bear continue looking and closed their eyes, deeply afraid that Chu Feng could not endure the pressure of the formation, and would forcibly be crushed into pieces.

“Look! Chu Feng is fine! He is actually hanging on!”

Suddenly, someone excitedly cried out, and only at that instant did they discover that Chu Feng already walked to the middle of stone stage at that moment. Moreover, his face was unchanging, as if he didn't receive any disturbances at all.

“Heavens! This Chu Feng actually held back the pressure of the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation?!”

At that instant, everyone's faces changed greatly and on all their faces, shock was filled.

Especially the people who personally witnessed how Jiang Wushang failed. At that moment, they were endlessly shocked.

It was because at present, when Chu Feng stood on the stage, the might there was clearly many times stronger compared to when Jiang Wushang stood on it. But with such horrifying pressure, it was as though Chu Feng was unrelated to it all. It was really impossible for them to be not shocked.

“Wait, look carefully. There's a layer of light on Chu Feng's body. That appearance... Could it be one of the Secret Skills Chu Feng grasp, the Black Tortoise Armor Technique?”

“Is it possible that the Black Tortoise Armor Technique has the effect of blocking my Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation's pressure?”

“Yeah! Right now, although he held back the pressure from the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation, he didn't gain the power of the formation. This likely means that the Secret Skill is interfering.”

Someone noticed the faint envelopment of light around Chu Feng's body, and from the special aura, actually determined that it was Chu Feng's Secret Skill, the Black Tortoise Armor Technique.

hmm However, just as everyone assumed it was the Black Tortoise Armor Technique helping Chu Feng block the pressure, Chu Feng willed, and dissolved his own Black Tortoise Armor Technique. He used his own body to stand in the center of the stone stage.

“Look! The cover of light has disappeared! Right now, Chu Feng is truly standing in the formation, but he has still not received any effects from the pressure!” Facing that change, their eyes were truly widened, their tongues were tied, and they were completely dumbfounded.

But the thing that made them most speechless was that currently, Chu Feng even turned around in the formation and lightly smiled towards the crowd. Then, he did a hand gesture, showing he was fine.

The formation that the people from the Jiang Dynasty simply could not endure was actually so easily and freely endured by Chu Feng. It really shocked everyone on scene.

“This Chu Feng is actually this powerful. No wonder he had such confidence. So he can truly hold off the pressure from the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation.” At that very instant, the people from the dynasty discussed with one another, as they were thoroughly stunned by Chu Feng.

“It seems like the old ancestor was correct. This Chu Feng is indeed not simple at all. Perhaps the abnormality seven years ago was truly caused by him. Within his body, there is indeed horrifying power, or else it would not be possible to endure the

pressure of the formation.” Jiang Hengyuan’s expression was complicated as he hiddenly said in his heart.

At the same time, Jiang Yini, the strongest person in the Jiang Dynasty’s young generation, the Jiang Dynasty’s princess, currently also roundly widened her big eyes. Her brows slightly trembled as she said in a low voice, “I never would have thought after such a long time of development in the Nine Provinces, the one to finally decide the fate of my Jiang Dynasty would be an outsider like him.”

Although Chu Feng stepping into the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation gave everyone a type of astonishment, it had to be said that it also gave everyone hope.

But, the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation was not as simple as they imagined. Although indeed, layers of power started to converge and enter Chu Feng’s body after a long time, the speed could be said to be extremely slow.

Only when the World Spirit Guild’s reinforcements arrive did the converging speed start to increase. However, even before a few days passed, the army of the three clans entered the Han Province. Also, very quickly, the troops arrived at the city gates.

The war that the Jiang Dynasty hoped to face the least finally arrived.

boom rumble rumble, boom rumble rumble

Within the dynasty's borders, endless explosions rang out. Everyone within the circumference of several thousand miles could hear the deafening sounds. It was even more terrifying than the sound of thunder.

And above the Jiang Dynasty's Spirit Formation, which touched the sky, the explosions were loud to the extreme. Simultaneously, layers of horrifying ripples endlessly burst out above the Spirit Formation.

In the sky, there were several figures, all wearing three different clothes. However, there were a golden and dazzling "royal" characters on their foreheads. The three troops were gathered together, and were throwing violent attacks towards the Jiang Dynasty's Spirit Formation that enveloped them.

They were the troops from the Zhao Dynasty, Ji Dynasty, and Liu Dynasty.

Also, as many Heaven realm experts, powerful World Spiritists, and many horrifying World Spirits from various Spirit Worlds called by the many World Spiritists, were breaking the formation with their full strengths, not too far away from the Spirit Formation, there was a golden chariot. The chariot was pulled by ten Heaven realm Monstrous Beasts. They were incomparably huge, and extremely overbearing. At that moment, they stood in the blue sky.

And on the chariot, there was even a huge table of dishes and wine. Three old men, and three middle-aged men, a total of six people, surrounded the table while drinking and chatting.

That sort of relaxed, free, chatting, and laughing appearance was as if the nearby overwhelming flames of war was a beautiful scene they were admiring.

They were the current emperors and old ancestors of the Zhao Dynasty, Liu Dynasty, and Ji Dynasty.

“It seems like the Jiang Dynasty’s old thing truly cannot fight. Or else, with his temper, he should have already come out to face us for the battle right?” As the Zhao clan’s old ancestor looked at the people from the Jiang Dynasty who had panicking expressions and were endlessly fearful, the corners of his mouth rose to form a hint of a cold smile.

“He’s pitiful enough to be schemed by his own elder brother, but his elder brother is even worse. He truly thought we would provide the priceless Year Prolongation Immoral Grasses to him!” The old ancestor of the Liu clan similarly smiled mockingly.

“A smart person gets impaired by his own smartness. He never would have expected that he, who was desperate to prolong his life, would die by our hands.” The Ji clan’s old ancestor shook his head while smiling.

“But on that topic, that Jiang Dynasty’s old thing has always been cunning, and his cultivation is also the strongest within the four of us. Is it possible he is feigning death, or pretending that he’s injured?” The Zhao clan’s elder said with a bit of worry.



“Don’t worry, this time, I have done plenty of preparation. Since we’ve come here, we must destroy his Jiang Dynasty to avenge our ancestors being killed back then.” The Ji clan’s old ancestor said while being full of confidence.

“Heh, what exactly is your secret weapon? You even made a Spirit Formation, so I can’t even check what it is.” As he spoke, the Liu clan’s old ancestor cast his gaze behind.

“Yeah, what actually is that? Don’t leave us in suspense.” At the same time, the other three people in the chariot cast their gazes over.

At that place, there was similarly a huge chariot. However, on the chariot, there was actually a small-scale palace. A Spirit Formation was laid outside of the palace, causing them to be unable to determine what exactly was inside.

# Chapter 512: Suffering From Misery

---

“This is a secret weapon, and unless there is no other choice, I will not use it. But if I use it, this Jiang Dynasty will definitely be destroyed.” The Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor smilingly said.

“Since it is like that, why not directly use this secret weapon? Why is there a need for us to use up so many resources?” The Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor puzzledly asked.

“Hoh. The reason is very simple. Although this secret weapon is powerful, it harms both them and us.”

“It’s almost time. Let us three attack together and break this dog butt formation. Let us make the Jiang Dynasty pay the price for their actions of many years ago!” Suddenly, the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor leaped, became a blur of light, and came up to the Spirit Formation.

boom The Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor was an expert in the 9th level of the Heaven realm. A character who infinitely neared the Martial Lord realm. He suddenly threw out a fist, and it could be said to shake the heaven and the earth. The Spirit Formation that touched the sky and enveloped the entire Jiang Dynasty also violently quivered.

“I will help you as well!” Quickly after, the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor and the Zhao Dynasty’s old ancestor, as well as the three emperors, attacked as well.

With the combination of three people in the 9th level of the Heaven realm and three people in the 8th level of the heaven realm, the barrier, which guarded the Jiang Dynasty, was in peril.

“This is bad. If this continues, my Jiang Dynasty’s Protection Formation will very quickly be destroyed!”

“Emperor, what should we do? The experts they’ve sent out this time is too many. Not to mention having the three old ancestors in the 9th level of the Heaven realm to fortify their position, even without the three of them, our Jiang Dynasty will still not be able to defeat them. If the Protection Formation gets destroyed, my Jiang Dynasty’s several tens of thousands of people will suffer from misery.” In a situation like that, everyone cast their gazes towards the emperor.

But the emperor was also tightly furrowing his brows, not knowing what the best course of action was. Suddenly, he leaped, and flew towards the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation.

After he neared the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation, he impatiently asked, “How is it? How is Chu Feng’s situation?”

“The power of this Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation is indeed going against Chu Feng. Its merging speed with Chu Feng is extremely slow, and right now, he is only in the 7th level of the Heaven realm. But looking at the situation right now, he can very quickly step into the 8th level of the Heaven realm.” Zhang Tianyi, who was guarding that place, said.

“The 8th level of the Heaven realm? This... It’ll be too late!” Hearing Zhang Tianyi’s words, and also personally checking Chu Feng’s aura, the face of the Jiang Dynasty’s emperor was instantly like ash. As if the last bit of light within the dark night was also disappearing.

Putting aside the fact that even if Chu Feng had the cultivation of the 8th level of the Heaven realm, he would simply not be able to defeat the three old monsters.

Furthermore, with his detection, he discovered that Chu Feng’s aura was very unstable. It could be said to be very empty. The formation that their ancestors laid was indeed opposing Chu Feng. Although more or less, Chu Feng gained a portion of its power, it was very unstable.

In a situation like that, even though Chu Feng’s aura could reach the 8th level of the Heaven realm, his true battle power was only equivalent to the 6th level of the Heaven realm. Not to mention fighting against the three old monsters, even the three emperors could easily kill Chu Feng.

“What’s wrong? Is it possible that the Jiang Dynasty’s Protection Formation won’t be able to hold out soon?” Seemingly seeing through the emperor’s worry, Zhang Tianyi asked.

“Ahh, no matter how much stronger the Protection Formation is, it can’t hold back the attacks from three people in the 9th level of the Heaven realm! I’m afraid it won’t last much longer. This is truly the heavens wanting my Jiang Dynasty to be destroyed!” The emperor longly sighed, then said to Zhang Tianyi, “You and Chu

Feng, stay here. Do not go out. I will seal this place later, and hopefully it will help you two evade this calamity.”

“Milord, what do you mean?” Hearing those words, Zhang Tianyi tightly frowned.

“My Jiang Dynasty has very deep enmity with the Ji Dynasty, Liu Dynasty, and Zhao Dynasty. If they fear this formation and slaughter their way into my dynasty, they will absolutely not leave anyone alive. It would even be kindness to let the people from my dynasty peacefully pass away.”

“Today, my Jiang Dynasty is fated to be destroyed. In addition, we will receive suffering.”

“But you and Chu Feng aren’t a part of my dynasty. You have done enough for my dynasty, so I don’t want to drag you two down with me anymore.” The emperor lightly smiled and said. So, when he said he was going to seal this place, he didn’t want the people from the three dynasties to find Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi. He wanted them to avoid this catastrophe.

boom rumble rumble rumble~~~~~”

But just at that time, a sudden frightening huge explosion rang out. Even the underground palace built deep underground violently swayed.

“Crap.” At that instant, the emperor’s expression changed

greatly. An unseen type of fear emerged into his eyes, and without saying anything more, he turned around and flew out.

After he left the underground palace, he sealed the entrance and also laid a Concealment Spirit Formation. Only after doing that did he fly out of the disguised underground palace.

And just as he flew out of the palace, he saw the Protection Formation that enveloped the Jiang Dynasty darken. In a certain area at the western horizon, a huge hole appeared.

Broken. The only barrier protecting his Jiang Dynasty was broken. At that very instant, the army of the three dynasties, like the tide, surged into his Jiang Dynasty's territory.

“Hahaha, the trash of the Jiang Dynasty! Today is your last day!” Suddenly, an explosive shout rang out in the sky. Quickly after, the army of the three clans started to insanely display all sorts of martial skills. From top to bottom, endlessly throwing them towards the crowd of people.

“Ahh~~~~~”

No matter how much stronger the Jiang Dynasty was, the number of Heaven realm experts was limited. Most of them were still in the Profound realm, Origin realm, and even the spiritual realm.

To them, the attacks of a Heaven realm expert was simply

unstoppable and unavoidable. So, when the attacks, which filled the sky, explosively shot towards the ground like a meteor shower, the things being destroyed were not only the luxurious palaces. Countless lives of the Jiang clan were also lost.

“I’ll kill you all!” In that situation, all of the experts in the Jiang Dynasty were furious. Many people in the Heaven realm flew up and started to attack the army of the three clans, fighting against them with their lives.

However, their strengths were too weak. In front of the three clan army that had their power fortified by the three old ancestors and the three emperors, even though they were Heaven realm experts, what awaited them was only heartless slaughter.

Immediately, in the vast Jiang Dynasty, sobs continued without end and miserable cries kept on sounding. Especially the children’s fearful cries. It really showed the powerlessness of the current Jiang Dynasty.

Despair. That was currently portrayed in all of the Jiang Dynasty’s adults. All of them knew that the Jiang Dynasty was finished. Everyone was finished. The Jiang Dynasty that had been thriving for countless generations was going to be destroyed today.

In a situation like that, the Jiang Dynasty’s emperor and its many experts still hadn’t rashly attacked. They gathered in the dynasty’s core zone, discussing something.

“Haha, the Jiang Dynasty’s emperor, your daughter has quite a

nice appearance. How about...I bring her back and make her my concubine?” Suddenly, an explosive shout resounded in the air. It was the emperor of the Zhao Dynasty. He led a group of Zhao Dynasty experts and rushed to the core zone. Not only did he discover the group of peak experts from the Jiang Dynasty, he even had his eyes on the emperor’s daughter, Jiang Yini.



# Chapter 513: The Might Of One Fist

---

“Hey... Emperor Zhao, this little lady is truly not bad. Not only does she have an appearance like flower and jade, her cultivation is really extraordinary. I also have my eyes on her, so what could we possibly do?” Another mad laugh rang out. The emperor of the Liu Dynasty also led a group of experts over.

“Is it not simple? The three of us will go at the same time, and this girl will belong to whoever gets his hands on her first! But I won’t do the same as you two. I won’t take her as my concubine. I only plan to destroy her cultivation, then reward her to my subordinates so she can accompany them as they ‘search for pleasure’!” Another figure flew over. It was the Ji Dynasty’s emperor.

“I will have the life of whoever dares to touch my daughter!” The face of the Jiang Dynasty’s emperor, who was guarding in front of Jiang Yini, greened from anger. He knew that the three were intentionally mocking him, mocking his Jiang Dynasty.

But as the Jiang Dynasty’s emperor, as Jiang Yini’s father, he was really unable to endure such humiliation. So, he leaped, explosively shot up, released his horrifying battle power of the 8th level of the Heaven realm, and fought against the three emperors.

“Father!!” At that instant, Jiang Yini’s expression flickered and her face was full of worry. As she spoke, she was going to rush into the sky to fight shoulder-to-shoulder with her father.

Because, no matter how much stronger her father was, when fighting alone against three other emperors who had the same cultivation, it was clearly very taxing. In a situation like that, what awaited her father was only death.

“Princess, do not go!” But just as Jiang Yini was going to make her move, Jiang Hengyuan grabbed her wrist and said, “Quickly follow me and leave. We have already prepared a path for escaping. Right now, we will protect you and all the other princesses and princes, and leave the dynasty.”

“No! I will be the same as my father, to live and die with the dynasty!” Jiang Yini stubbornly refused.

“Princess, this is the emperor’s command. If you don’t believe me, look.” As he spoke, Jiang Hengyuan took out a badge of command.

And after seeing the badge, Jiang Yini’s face immediately froze. Turning her head back and looking towards the sky, at her father who was having a life and death battle against the three emperors, her eyes instantly reddened, and very quickly, tears fell like rain.

There was only a single badge like that, and it was personally made by her father. She even remembered what he told her when he showed her the badge. In the future, no matter who took it to find her, and no matter what they wanted her to do, she had to oblige because that person would be definitely following his wishes.

Moreover, those words were not only spoken from the Jiang Dynasty's emperor to Jiang Yini herself. He spoke them to all his sons and daughters, and even to all of the outstanding people in the later generation of the Jiang Dynasty.

“Princess, quickly follow me. Right now, the emperor is fighting for you, for the final chance. Although, as the emperor, he has to follow the teachings of the ancestor and live and die with the Jiang Dynasty, as a father, he hopes that his sons and daughters can continue living. So, ultimately, he went against the ancestor's teachings, handed this badge to me, and told me to protect all of you as you leave this place.” Jiang Hengyuan was afraid Jiang Yini didn't understand so he explained.

“Ahh!”

boom

But just at that time, a cry of pain suddenly rang out from the sky. Quickly after, a body fell from above and fiercely shot into the ground's surface. The strong power kept on shattering a palace from the collision, and even left a huge pit in the ground.

“Father!” At that moment, Jiang Yini loudly howled, then leaped and rushed into the huge pit.

“Crap.” At the same time, many dynasty experts such as Jiang Hengyuan also flew over, because the one who fell from the sky was none other than his Jiang Dynasty's emperor.

“Yini, your father has been useless. Not only could I not protect the several tens of thousands of clan members, I can’t even protect you, my daughter.” At that instant, the face of the Jiang Dynasty’s emperor was of defeat. Seven of his facial orifices had blood flowing out, and his chest was even in a “凹” shape. His breastbone was shattered, his skin was cracked, and a large amount of blood was presently flowing out gradually.

“No! Father, in my heart, you are the most excellent father.” Jiang Yini’s face was filled with tears.

“Ha! He’s actually this weak, unable to even hold on for a few rounds.” Suddenly, a huge phlegm flew down from the sky, landing on the face of the Jiang Dynasty’s emperor.

It was from the Liu Dynasty’s emperor. Currently, he was standing in the sky, lightly squinting his eyes, and mockingly examining the Jiang Dynasty’s emperor who was heavily injured.

“Yeah! I heard his father had overwhelming battle power and was able to fight against our own fathers without being defeated, so I even thought his son also had quite impressive battle power. However, I didn’t expect him to be so useless.” The Zhao Dynasty’s emperor also ridiculed with cold words.

“That’s right. If I knew he was so useless, there was no need for the two of you to attack just now. I myself would have been enough to defeat him.” Not only did the Ji Dynasty’s emperor speak to mock, his face was filled with smug.

“All of you should be ashamed of being the masters of clans. Putting aside the fact that all of you joined hands to harm my father, you even so shamelessly speak to mock him. All of you are truly despicable people!” Seeing her own father being humiliated by them in such a way, Jiang Yini’s little face reddened from anger, and she was endlessly furious.

“The victor is the king and the loser is the thief. Back then, the humiliation your ancestor gave my ancestor was thousands of times worse than this!” The emperor of the Liu Dynasty coldly shouted.

“Ahh, Emperor Liu, where’s the need to waste your breath with them? Today, we want them to pay the price for their ancestor’s actions. Since this girl is so sharp with her mouth, let me play with her for a while.” The Zhao Dynasty’s emperor coldly laughed, then suddenly, dashed towards Jiang Yini.

“Protect the princess!” Seeing that, Jiang Hengyuan and the other dynasty experts hurriedly flew into the sky. They displayed protection methods by opening a Defense Spirit Formation.

“Even a pile of trash dares to block my road? Move!” However, the Zhao Dynasty’s emperor casually palmed, causing the Spirit Formation laid by the combined power of Jiang Hengyuan and the others to immediately disintegrate. At the same time, the crowd cried out in pain and fell to the side. Their faces were already deathly-white, as they were heavily injured.

“Haha little lady, you truly don’t have any manners. It’s best to let me properly teach you some.” The Zhao Dynasty’s emperor

kept on loudly laughing. When he spoke, he had already went up to Jiang Yini. He extended his hand, and was actually shamelessly aiming to grab Jiang Yini's protruding two peaks.

“You want to teach Princess Yini manners? That'll depend whether you have the ability or not!”

boom

But just at that time, an explosive shout suddenly came from the dynasty's core zone. Simultaneously, black dirt rolled on the surface, and two figures shot out from beneath the ground's surface.

One of them had extremely quick speed. Almost with a blink, he arrived in front of the Zhao Dynasty's emperor. He punched directly, throwing an attack towards the Zhao Dynasty.

“Where did this brat come from and dares to disturb this good occasion? Move to the side.” Only after turning his head to look did the Zhao Dynasty's emperor discover that the one who was approaching was a young man. So, he disdainfully snorted coldly, casually waved his hand, wanting to slap the young man to the side.

But who would have thought that the young man was actually so powerful? Just as his fist landed on the arm of the Zhao Dynasty's emperor, a snapping sound rang out, and the young man had actually snapped the emperor's arm.

After that, the power of his punch did not diminish, and rather became even stronger. With a bang, it collided into the face of the Zhao Dynasty's emperor. Blood splattered as his head was shattered and split into pieces, and he died immediately.

# Chapter 514: Reversing The Battle Situation

---

The sudden scene that came shocked all who noticed it. Especially the two emperors who were still in the air. Their faces suddenly changed, and they loudly questioned, “Who are you?”

“The person who will have your lives.” Chu Feng coldly smiled, then stuck out his hand and grabbed the air. A burst of boundless suction power explosively surged out.

“Ahh!” And with that burst of power, the two emperors who were both in the 8th level of the Heaven realm actually didn’t have any strength to escape. They both fell down and crashed in front of Chu Feng.

After the two crashed, Chu Feng suddenly extended his hand again and with two bangs, punched the area of their dantian.

“Ahh~~~~” The two punches caused the Liu Dynasty’s and Ji Dynasty’s emperor to immediately cry out. A large mouthful of blood was sprayed as they covered their dantian area with their hands and started to unendingly roll on the ground.

Although Chu Feng’s two punches didn’t destroy their cultivation, it heavily injured the two of them. At least temporarily, they were the same as two useless people, as they lost the battle power they had before.

“Chu Feng, you!” At that instant, not a single person’s face on scene didn’t change greatly because they were able to feel that



currently, Chu Feng's aura was only in the 8th level of the Heaven realm. Moreover, it was extremely unstable. But even so, Chu Feng was still able to easily kill the three emperors if he wished to.

To know for the later stages of the Heaven realm, the distance between every single level was extremely big, yet Chu Feng was relying on the unstable cultivation and killed a genuine person in the 8th level of the Heaven realm. It was truly difficult for them to be not shocked.

Chu Feng did not pay attention to their stunned gazes. He abruptly extended his two arms, formed two eagle's claws with his hands, grabbed the collars of the two emperor, and said to them, "Yell for help."

"What?!" The two emperors, who were receiving sharp pain, were both taken aback by the words coming from Chu Feng suddenly.

bam bam Seeing that, Chu Feng didn't waste any breath. He raised his arm and gave their faces two big slaps. Afterwards, he said, "I told you to yell for help. If you don't, I'll destroy the [root of your lives](#)."

"You..." Hearing those words, their faces instantly greened. Despite being unendingly furious, they didn't dare to retort. So, they loudly howled towards the sky, "Help!"

After those words were spoken, they were like claps of thunder, attracting the attention of everyone in the Jiang Dynasty.

Especially the people from the three clans. They dashed and flew over from the dynasty's core zone. Even the three old ancestors, who didn't attack yet and were just sitting, watching the liveliness, immediately came over.

And when the three old ancestors saw the scene on the ground, their originally calm faces couldn't help but change because they never would have thought that of their three sons, at present, one was dead and two were injured.

“Who killed my son?! I will have his life!” Seeing his son, who he meticulously raised for many years, killed by someone, the old ancestor of the Zhao Dynasty was incomparably enraged. He furiously howled, and ignoring all reason, he directly threw a punch to the ground.

That punch was extremely horrifying. Before he even descended, the ground already intensely trembled. Countless cracks spread, and a large area of land collapsed.

Not to mention the people in the Profound realm, even the people in the Heaven realm could not hold back such horrifying pressure. At that instant, they were forced to lay on the ground, and they could not stand up.

“Break!”

But just at that time, Chu Feng threw out a punch. With a boom, he actually dissolved the palm of the Zhao Dynasty's old ancestor with his own power.

“Senior Hengyuan, look after these two.” Chu Feng threw the two emperors to the front of Jiang Hengyuan. Quickly after, he loudly howled to the sky, “Your son was killed by me! If you can, come!” As he spoke, Chu Feng had already risen into the air and fought against the Zhao Dynasty’s old ancestor.

“This brat is truly looking to die!” Seeing that, the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor coldly snorted, then prepared to attack.

“Wait.” However, before he made his move, he was stopped by the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor on the side. After looking down at the two emperors who were under Jiang Hengyuan’s control, he sent a mental message to the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor, saying, “Look carefully. Your son and my son, right now, are in their hands. If we attack at this time, they will be in danger.”

“This...”

“Are we just going to watch as that old guy fights that brat alone? He doesn’t seem to be simple!” The Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor was a bit worried for the Zhao Dynasty’s old ancestor.

“Don’t worry. Although that brat’s battle power is strong, something’s off with his aura. If I’m not mistaken, he should have either used special Forbidden Medicine or used a special formation to borrow some power. It is impossible for him to be victorious.” The Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor said.

“That’s...true! Your observation is really quite detailed.” The Liu

Dynasty's old ancestor looked carefully, and discovered that indeed, it was as he said. Chu Feng's aura was very unstable, so only then did he calm down.

“Old ancestor of the Liu Dynasty, old ancestor of the Ji Dynasty! Tell your clan members to stop or else I'll kill your sons!” Jiang Hengyuan was an intelligent person, so in the instant Chu Feng threw the two emperors to him, he understood his intentions. Thus, without hesitation, he currently used Heaven power to howl loudly towards the sky.

After those words were spoken, all experts from the Liu Dynasty and Ji Dynasty cast their gazes towards the two old ancestors in the sky.

And though the two old ancestors didn't speak, they gestured with their hands. After seeing the hand gestures, the experts from the two clans came to the two old ancestors' side and no longer attacked the people from the Jiang Dynasty.

In a situation like that, only the people from the Zhao Dynasty were still attacking the Jiang Dynasty.

But as the emperor was already dead, and the old ancestor was being bound, the Zhao Dynasty itself was clearly unable to defeat the Jiang Dynasty.

With the assistance of many Monstrous Beasts and many World Spirit Guild experts, the Jiang Dynasty's situation quickly turned from bad to good, and actually started to slaughter the people from

the Zhao Dynasty.

“Liu clan, Ji clan, what are you doing? Why aren’t you attacking and helping me kill this brat?!” Noticing that his two allies were actually merely observing with their hands in their sleeves, the old ancestor of the Zhao Dynasty furiously howled.

“Sigh, your opponent is only a brat, and he only has the cultivation of the 8th level of the Heaven realm. If the three of us join hands to take care of a brat like him, and this gets known, we will not be able to avoid being the laughingstock in other people’s mouths. It’s better if you take care of him yourself.” The Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor said while smiling.

“Yeah, Brother Zhao, that brat only borrowed some special power and it isn’t his real cultivation. I’m sure with your abilities, it shouldn’t be hard to defeat him.” The Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor also smiled.

“You two old things are indeed not trustworthy!” Seeing his own clan members being reversely killed currently, the Zhao Dynasty’s old ancestor grinded his teeth from anger.

“Haha, old bastard! Your allies aren’t too reliable. They are already selling you out so quickly!” As Chu Feng fought against the Zhao Dynasty’s old ancestor, he sent a mental message to ridicule.

Referring to the area of their “willies”.

# Chapter 515: Panic And A Cold Smile

---

“Hmph. Brat, don’t even think of being arrogant. Even if they don’t help out, I can still easily kill you and avenge my son.”

The old ancestor of the Zhao Dynasty flipped his palm. A silver-coloured pike then appeared within his hand.

The pike was covered with symbols. As the symbols and radiance swirled, they emitted a unique powerful aura. It was a Mastered Strange Armament.

Quickly after, the Zhao Dynasty’s old ancestor waved both of his arms. The tip of the pike trembled, then tens of thousands of pike tips shot out. Like a pointed white-coloured storm, they densely flew towards Chu Feng.

The stronger one was, the greater they could show the might of the Strange Armament, and in the hands of the Zhao Dynasty’s old ancestor, the expert in the 9th level of the Heaven realm, the Strange Armament could be said to have shown its strongest power.

So, when the tens of thousands of pike tips appeared, the sky and earth trembled, the weather changed, and the might shown was extremely frightening.

At that instant, almost everyone in the Jiang Dynasty broke out in cold sweat for Chu Feng because the attacks of the Zhao Dynasty’s old ancestor were indeed very terrifying.

However, Chu Feng did not evade nor dodge. He clenched to form a fist, then the Asura Ghost Axe was grasped within his hand. Afterwards, he waved his arm, and countless black-coloured blades of light surged out from his axe.

When the black-coloured blades of light interweaved with the tens of thousands of pike tips, instantly, explosions burst out, ripples spread endlessly, and even the remnants themselves caused several people to die.

boom But suddenly, within the ripples, there were actually more pike tips shooting out and flying towards Chu Feng. The attacks that the Zhao Dynasty's old ancestor made actually broke through Chu Feng's black-coloured blade of light.

whoosh In a situation like that, Chu Feng also lightly furrowed his brows. He hurriedly used the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens and became a blur of light. He flew towards the distance and avoided the attacks.

“Indeed, although this brat's battle power is extremely powerful, after all, his aura is unstable and his cultivation is one level weaker. He will definitely not beat that old Zhao guy.” Seeing that scene, the corners of the Liu Dynasty's old ancestor's mouth rose to form a hint of a relieved smile.

Although he did not interfere, in reality, he was hoping that the Zhao Dynasty's old ancestor would win because right now, he, the Liu Dynasty, and the Ji Dynasty, were being threatened by the

Jiang Dynasty, so they were unable to attack them. The ones able to attack the Jiang Dynasty was only the Zhao Dynasty.

As long as the Zhao Dynasty's old ancestor could defeat Chu Feng, within the Jiang Dynasty, there would be no one who could hold the Zhao Dynasty back. Even if the two of them didn't do anything, the Zhao Dynasty itself could easily eradicate the Jiang Dynasty.

“Arrogant brat, let me see where you are escaping to!” Seeing his attacks were pressuring Chu Feng, the Zhao Dynasty's old ancestor even became conceited. The silver-coloured pike in his hand endlessly waved, madly stabbing towards Chu Feng.

But it was useless as he underestimated Chu Feng's speed. The speed of Chu Feng's Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens climbed by many times along with the great rise of his cultivation. In a situation like that, no matter how much stronger the Strange Armament of the Zhao Dynasty's old ancestor was, he was unable to harm Chu Feng in the slightest, and the attacks were all evaded by Chu Feng.

“Damned brat, are you the reincarnation of a monkey? Do you only know how to run everywhere?” After the old ancestor's attacks were dodged several times, his eyes could spit fire from being furious as he gnashed his teeth.

“Old bastard, your abilities are inferior so you start insulting people? You have truly wasted so many years of living and you lack any good qualities.”



“This young master here has quick speed, but what can you do about it? If you can do something about it, go ahead; if you can’t, then just accept it. Just from running, I can run you to death!” Chu Feng didn’t feel shame from escaping. Rather, he mocked the inferior speed of the Zhao Dynasty’s old ancestor.

“Ignorant brat, don’t even think of being arrogant! Do you truly think only you have bodily martial skills?” The Zhao Dynasty’s old ancestor coldly snorted, then stepped on air, and while holding the silver-coloured pike, he became a blur of light and rushed towards Chu Feng. His speed was actually a lot quicker than Chu Feng’s Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens.

“This is bad! After all, he is truly in the 9th level of the Heaven realm, a character who infinitely nears the Martial Lord realm.”

“With Chu Feng’s currently unstable cultivation of the 8th level of the Heaven realm, I’m afraid he will not be able to defeat the old ancestor.” Seeing the Zhao Dynasty’s old ancestor who was speedily chasing and approaching Chu Feng bit by bit, Jiang Yini and the others all tightly knitted their brows, breaking out in cold sweat for Chu Feng.

“All of you don’t understand my Junior Chu Feng.” But just at that time, Zhang Tianyi who had appeared along with Chu Feng smiled.

“Wha-what do you mean by that?” After hearing Zhang Tianyi’s words, they revealed puzzled expressions.

“Just look. Although this person has very powerful strength, when he is against my Junior Chu Feng, he will definitely be defeated.” On the corners of Zhang Tianyi’s mouth, he still wore the light smile that was filled with confidence.

And after hearing his words, although Jiang Yini and the others still had their doubts, it had to be said that their tense hearts did indeed calm down quite a bit. They didn’t say anything more and continued casting their gazes towards the sky.

Just at that moment, the Zhao Dynasty’s old ancestor was less than a hundred meters away from Chu Feng. Furthermore, the pike in his hand quivered once again, and like storms and pear blossoms falling from trees, they shot out.

“Crap.” Seeing that, Chu Feng’s face changed greatly as he revealed an unsettled expression. Because, at such a distance, he was already unable to dodge the attack of the Zhao Dynasty’s old ancestor.

“I’ll kill you!” In a situation like that, Chu Feng furiously howled and endlessly waved the Asura Ghost Axe in his hand. He actually rushed towards the old ancestor, akin to a fish doing whatever it took to break the net surrounding it, and appearing as if he wanted to die with the old ancestor by dragging him down with him.

“Ignorant brat. If you want to bet your life, you must also have the strength to do so.” However, seeing the many black-coloured blades of light flying from the Asura Ghost Axe, the smile on the

face of the Zhao Dynasty's old ancestor became wider and wider because there was simply no way of fighting against his pike tips by only relying on attacks such as the black-coloured blades of light. Chu Feng's current action was simply suicidal.

But he didn't notice that despite having a panicking expression on his face, the corners of Chu Feng's mouth formed a hint of an unperceivable cold smile.

Just as the pike tips were going to break through Chu Feng's black-coloured blades of light, he suddenly put away the Asura Ghost Axe that was in his hand, then, opened his palm, and suddenly pushed forward, towards the Zhao Dynasty's old ancestor.

“White Tiger Slaughtering Technique.”

wuaooooo~~~~~

The cry of a tiger resounded as white-coloured gas explosively shot out from Chu Feng's palm. The white-coloured gas kept on changing, and at the end, it transformed into a huge striped white tiger's claw. That move was precisely Chu Feng's offensive Secret Skill, the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique.

The White Tiger Slaughtering Technique was peerless in offensive power. Especially as Chu Feng's cultivation grew, its power rose accordingly as well. In front of it, the pike tips that the Strange Armament gave off was actually extremely feeble. Before it even neared, it was forcefully fragmented.

“Crap. This might... Is it possible that it’s a Secret Skill from the legends?!” At that instant, the face of the Zhao Dynasty’s old ancestor changed greatly. The calm expression he had before could no longer be seen, and he turned around with his feet and wanted to escape.

Because, within the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique, he was able to feel extremely horrifying power. So horrifying that even he didn’t dare to block it head-on.

But presently, it was too late. At that moment, the distance between him and Chu Feng was only dozens of meters. As the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique’s shape was already formed, it was impossible for him to dodge at such a distance.

boom

So, just as the Zhao Dynasty’s old ancestor turned around, the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique already flew over, and it ferociously collided into his back.

“Ahh!”

poof

At that instant, the Zhao Dynasty’s old ancestor immediately cried out in pain. He opened his mouth, and fresh-red blood shot out his mouth like a pillar.

At the same time, crackling sounds came from various places on his body. The bones and organs in his entire body at many places were forcibly shattered from the shock.

# Chapter 516: Looking In A New Light

---

“Eat another one of my attacks!”

\*roar~~~~~”

After the palm, Chu Feng quickly threw another. The White Tiger Slaughtering Technique this time was a lot stronger than before.

And the already heavily injured Zhao Dynasty’s old ancestor naturally could not defend against Chu Feng strike. So, he hurried yelled loudly, “Quickly help me!”

But it was too late. Just as his voice was going to sound yet didn’t, Chu Feng’s second White Tiger Slaughtering Technique already collided and fiercely crashed into his body.

\*bang\* This time, he couldn’t even cry out in pain. With a muffled explosion, he became a pool of blood, and splattered everywhere from the high sky.

Dead. The expert in the 9th level of the Heaven realm, the old ancestor of the Zhao Dynasty, was killed by Chu Feng just like that.

“Heavens! He actually did it! He actually, with the unstable cultivation of the 8th level of the Heaven realm, killed the Zhao Dynasty’s old ancestor who was in the 9th level of the Heaven realm.”

Personally seeing that scene, the Jiang Dynasty crowd all roundly widened their eyes, their mouths were very widely opened, and their faces were filled with shock.

It was because it was something that they felt was impossible, yet just now, Chu Feng finished such an impossible thing in front of their faces.

“Hmph. I told you that you underestimated my Junior Chu Feng too much. With his talent, even if his cultivation is unstable, with the 8th level of the Heaven realm challenging someone in the 9th level of the Heaven realm alone, there is absolutely no problem.”

“He only pretended to be weak because he wanted to quickly take care of the Zhao Dynasty’s old ancestor. When his guard was lowered, then he made an unexpected surprise attack.”

“It could be said that for this battle, the Zhao Dynasty’s old ancestor not only lost in terms of cultivation, he lost even more in terms of tactics. This is the suppression of intelligence, and the strength of intelligence is also a part of power.” Zhang Tianyi lightly smiled and said. Moreover, he wore a touch of smug on his face, as if the person who defeated the Zhao Dynasty’s old ancestor was him.

“It seems like we truly underestimated Chu Feng.” After hearing Zhang Tianyi’s words, everyone looked at Chu Feng in another light. They never would have thought that Chu Feng, who was only seventeen years old, actually had such abundance of fighting

experience, and actually used tactics to quickly kill an old ancestor who was over a hundred years old.

“Ancestor!”

“You killed my clan’s emperor, and you also killed my clan’s old ancestor! I’ll kill you!”

“I will butcher you!”

At that instant, the people from the Zhao Dynasty were incomparably enraged. After the emperor was killed, and even the old ancestor was killed, they really went insane.

So, within the dynasty, all of the Zhao Dynasty’s experts surrounded Chu Feng, and within furious howls as well as dense killing intent, they aimed to kill Chu Feng.

“Good timing.” However, facing the Zhao Dynasty’s members who were surrounding and attacking him, Chu Feng only returned a large smile, then formed a fist with one hand. The Strange Armament, the Asura Ghost Axe, appeared once again and as he waved it, blades of black light appeared.

The areas the black light passed caused the air to tremble and to crack. The people who touched it did not become pools of blood, but mists of blood, or were forcibly cut into pieces.

Even the emperor was killed by Chu Feng with one strike, and



even the old ancestor couldn't defeat Chu Feng, so there was no need to mention the experts of the Zhao Dynasty. So-called experts like them, to the current Chu Feng, were useless no matter how many came.

With only a blink, over half of the experts sent by the Zhao Dynasty were cut down, and people who had fear grow in their hearts and wanted to escape were also killed by the Jiang Dynasty's experts.

"This brat has very vicious methods. Not only is his strength overwhelming, his mentality far surpasses those in the same generation. In the future, he will definitely have great achievements."

"I never would have thought that such a character would appear in the Jiang Dynasty." Seeing Chu Feng who was greatly massacring yet didn't even frown a bit, the Ji Dynasty's old ancestor started to feel bursts of uneasiness because a character like him would be best to be befriended. If he were to be an enemy, there would be countless future problems, and looking at Chu Feng's relationship with them right now, it was clearly the latter.

"Brat, what is your name?" At the same time, the old ancestor of the Liu Dynasty was also shocked by Chu Feng's action, and actually spoke to inquire Chu Feng's name.

"Chu Feng!" Chu Feng loudly replied.

"Chu Feng, are you a part of the Jiang Dynasty?" The Liu

Dynasty's old ancestor asked with shock.

“I am indeed not a part of the Jiang Dynasty, but I am a part of the continent of the Nine Provinces.” Chu Feng replied with a light smile.

Hearing Chu Feng's response, the face of the Ji Dynasty's old ancestor turned to joy as he hurriedly said, “My friend Chu Feng, today, we are only ending a grudge from the past with the Jiang Dynasty. This matter is unrelated to you from the start.”

“How about this. As long as you don't interfere with today's matters, my Ji Dynasty and the Liu Dynasty will promise to give you two hundred thousand Heaven beads. How about it?”

“What? Two hundred thousand Heaven beads?” Hearing those words, the people from the Jiang Dynasty couldn't help but longly gasp. At the same time, expressions of worry also emerged onto their faces.

Two hundred thousand Heaven beads. It was a huge number. If one were to ask how much his Jiang Dynasty would have after selling all their wealth, they would only get one hundred thousand Heaven beads.

But right now, the two dynasties were actually taking out two hundred thousand Heaven beads. Even if they didn't want to worry, they couldn't.

After all, at present, Chu Feng was their only hope in saving the Jiang Dynasty. If Chu Feng accepted the enticement and agreed to not interfere with this matter, their Jiang Dynasty would certainly be destroyed.

“Two hundred thousand Heaven beads? You are truly quite generous, but you look down on me too much. Am I, Chu Feng, a person who forgets about camaraderie after seeing money?” However, what relieved the Jiang Dynasty crowd was that without even thinking, Chu Feng refused immediately.

It had to be said that the favourable impression on Chu Feng from the several tens of thousands of Jiang Dynasty members rose to the extreme, even to the state of adoration.

“My friend Chu Feng, do you mean that you will interfere with today’s matters no matter what?” At that instant, the sword-like brows of the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor inverted, and a hint of killing intent emerged into his eyes.

“Ahh, don’t say it like that. Actually, I, Chu Feng, only want to spar alone with the two of you. Old ancestor of the Ji Dynasty, can you give me some pointers?” Chu Feng cupped his hands towards the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor.

“Hahahaha~~~~~” After hearing those words, the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor suddenly faced the sky and loudly laughed. Only after laughing for a good while did he say to Chu Feng, “You brat, you’ve truly thought of a good plan.”

“Coercing us with our sons so we can’t attack, then in the name of sparing, fight against us one-on-one.”

“Are you preparing to also spar with him after killing me? Then after killing him, kill my son and his son as well as everyone from our two clans?”

Facing the words of the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor, Chu Feng did not reply. He smilingly looked at the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor and said, “Old ancestor of the Liu Dynasty. Don’t worry. As long as you don’t interfere when I spar with the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor, after the sparing finishes, I will definitely release your son.”

“This...” After hearing Chu Feng’s words, his expression changed, and only after a good while of hesitation did he say, “Are your words true?”

# Chapter 517: Ten Days And Ten Nights

---

“Do not get lured into his trap. Right now, you and I must join hands to handle him, or else if my Ji Dynasty gets destroyed, your Liu Dynasty will absolutely not be able to escape either.” Seeing that the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor was actually moved by Chu Feng’s words, the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor quickly, laboriously, urged him otherwise.

“But, I cannot ignore the life of my son!” Hearing that, the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor said to the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor with a face full of helplessness.

“You have so many sons, so can you not lose just this one?” The Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor howled.

“Of course I can’t! This is the son that I have carefully raised for many years, my most excellent son!” The Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor replied.

“You, you, you!” The Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor was not lightly angered. Only after continuously saying three you’s did he stabilize his emotions and said, “You are truly blind, too blind!”

“Is the life of a single son worth more than tens of thousands of your Liu Dynasty’s lives? Is it more important than the mission of vengeance for your ancestor?!”

“I...” At that instant, the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor went into silence once again.

“Do not hesitate anymore. If the emperor’s gone, you can continue developing. But if the dynasty is gone, everything is gone. Do you want to become the Liu Dynasty’s criminal, hated for eternity?”

“Right now, that old thing Zhao has died, and even the experts of the Zhao Dynasty have died. If you and I join powers and also destroy this Jiang Dynasty, coincidentally, the wealth and territory of the two clans can be evenly split between us two.”

“You only need to give up one son. Not only can you protect the Liu Dynasty, you can even become an unprecedented character who has done a great deed for the Liu Dynasty! Your future generations will see you a model, see you as a hero!” Seeing the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor being moved, the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor hurriedly continued urging.

“Father, go ahead! For my Liu clan, so what if I’m sacrificed?” Just at that time, the Liu Dynasty’s emperor who was being held hostage by Jiang Hengyuan actually loudly yelled as well.

“Old Ancestor Liu, listen to my father! That Chu Feng brat is cunning, and even if you stand on the side and do nothing but watch, he will absolutely not let you go.” At the same time, the Ji Dynasty’s emperor also loudly yelled.

“Fine. You and I will join hands to kill this brat.” Finally, the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor bit down on his teeth, and after making a decision, he went first and flew towards Chu Feng.

“Haha, that’s right!” Seeing that, the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor rejoiced and didn’t hesitate as well. Quickly after, he followed.

“Whatever. Today, I shall fight against two as one, and spar with you two.”

“But the people from the Ji Dynasty and Liu Dynasty, listen up. When I spar with your old ancestors, do not touch the Jiang Dynasty, or else your emperor’s head might not stay attached.” Chu Feng was not afraid, and after a loud yell, he held the Asura Ghost Axe and fought against the two old ancestors.

At first, seeing the two old ancestors make their move, Jiang Hengyuan prepared to immediately behead the two emperors.

But after hearing Chu Feng’s words, he hesitated for a bit, and when the experts from the two clans who were originally all ready to go, yet didn’t attack because of Chu Feng’s words, Jiang Hengyuan thoroughly dispelled the thought of killing the two emperors.

“Chu Feng is truly impressive. This sort of thinking... even I feel inferior.”

At that instant, Jiang Hengyuan endlessly admired Chu Feng because Chu Feng was really too sharp. Although threatening the two old ancestors with the two emperors failed, with a turn of words, he used the two emperors to hold the army of the two clans.

And if it wasn't for Chu Feng who suddenly spoke, and if Jiang Hengyuan killed the two emperors, as Chu Feng faced the two old ancestors for battle, the army of the two clans would definitely also fight against the Jiang Dynasty with their lives.

With the Jiang Dynasty's current situation, they would only have the advantage if they fought against a single clan, but if they fought against two clans on their own, they would definitely be disadvantaged. In addition, all of the people from the two clans were experts, whereas many in the Jiang Dynasty were weak, so if they fought, they would definitely have high casualties.

So, that was why he admired Chu Feng. It could be said that once again, Chu Feng saved the people from his Jiang Dynasty.

As for the two old ancestors, although they already made the preparations for sacrificing their sons, if they didn't need to sacrifice them, naturally, they didn't want the situation to be like a "dead fish broken net", of which either the fish dies, or the net breaks.

Instead, as long as they kill Chu Feng first then destroy the Jiang Dynasty, it would not be too late. So, they didn't order their clan members to attack, and only fought against Chu Feng with their full strengths.

But they could do nothing as they underestimated Chu Feng. Although their strength was extremely strong after joining hands, and after seeing Chu Feng's Secret Skill, they didn't dare to be



careless around Chu Feng, and they very seriously faced him, fully concentrating on the battle, they were still unable to gain the slightest bit of advantage.

“Haha, Chu Feng you little boy, you are truly not bad. I do admire you more and more. You are actually able to fight evenly against these two guys with such an unstable aura.” Eggy, who was in Chu Feng’s body, also sighed in admiration towards Chu Feng’s battle power because she could understand, the most, how empty Chu Feng’s current cultivation was. To be more precise, Chu Feng, at this moment, simply couldn’t be said to be really in the 8th level of the Heaven realm.

Moreover, the power gained from the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation was extremely unstable, and looking at certain angles, it seriously damaged Chu Feng’s battle power.

And that was Chu Feng. If it was a normal person, not to mention fighting in such a way, their life would possibly even be endangered because of the power.

So, that was why Eggy was so surprised. Because, it was Chu Feng who stabilized the unstable power to the extreme. Chu Feng’s power of control forced her to be so surprised.

“Senior Hengyuan, I can hold these two old things. Take this chance and quickly move the dynasty’s young generation away right now.” Suddenly, Jiang Hengyuan’s expression changed. He received Chu Feng’s mental message.

And after receiving the mental message, Jiang Hengyuan didn't delay. He hurriedly, and hiddenly, started arrangements. He wanted to move the outstanding young generation of the dynasty out without anyone knowing.

But at present, within the dynasty, the people from the Liu Dynasty and Ji Dynasty were already there. It wasn't impossible to want to secretly move the young generation away, but it required a very long time.

At first, Jiang Hengyuan was even worried that there was no time, but what everyone didn't expect was Chu Feng actually fought against the two old ancestors for ten full days and nights.

The astonishing battle of ten days and ten nights shocked everyone there because the attacks of the two old ancestors were extremely fierce, and that type of battle could be said to be very straining.

It had to be said that in the ten days, the strengths of the two old ancestors were exhausted quite a bit. But compared to them two, Chu Feng's face was pale-white, and his aura was getting weaker and weaker.

If it was a normal situation, not to mention only ten days and ten nights, even if it was ten more days and nights, Chu Feng would not be like that. He would definitely be more spirited than the two old ones.

But now, after all, Chu Feng was using borrowed power, and it

was even extremely unstable power. In a situation like that, being able to withstand ten days and ten nights could absolutely be said to be a miracle.

# Chapter 518: I Am The Azure Dragon Founder

---

boom rumble rumble

Suddenly, another explosion burst out in the sky. At the same time, a berserk energy ripple spread circularly, and in the areas it passed, the air twisted.

Within the ten days, explosions such as that could be said to have rang out countless times, but this time, it was especially eye-catching.

Because after this explosion, because of physical exhaustion, Chu Feng was finally unable to evade in time and was struck by the remnant ripple, causing him to fall from the sky.

“Chu Feng!” Seeing that, Jiang Hengyuan hurried leaped and caught Chu Feng into his embrace.

But in the instant he held Chu Feng, Jiang Hengyuan’s expression changed because he could feel how weak the current Chu Feng was. He was truly extremely weak.

Furthermore, the power he gained from the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation was disappearing rapidly. Very soon, Chu Feng’s aura turned from the 8th level of the Heaven realm to the 2nd level of the Heaven realm.

And after the lightning in his eyes disappeared, Chu Feng's aura continued to slide down. He returned to his real cultivation, the 9th level of the Profound realm.

“Chu Feng, are you okay?” After Chu Feng landed on the ground, everyone surrounded him. Within the gaze they looked at Chu Feng with, there was worry, there was pain, but even more, there was gratitude.

Although right now, they were still unable to avoid death, within the time of ten days, they already secretly moved Jiang Yini and the others, from the dynasty's young generation, away, and that chance was completely fought for by Chu Feng himself with his own strength.

“Don't worry, I'm fine.” Although he no longer had the power of the Royal Bloodline Attachment Formation, Chu Feng's face turned quite better, and that was exactly because Chu Feng didn't need to exhaust extremely large amounts of strength to stabilize the power.

“Hahaha, so it was a brat in the 9th level of the Profound realm. You truly do have quite some skill to be actually able to stabilize such powerful aura with a cultivation like that and forcefully fight against us two for ten days and ten nights.”

“But sadly, at the end, the young is ignorant! You didn't know that we were intentionally dragging the battle out, dragging it until the power that didn't belong to you disappeared! Hahaha...” Suddenly, the smug laughter of the Ji Dynasty's old ancestor rang out.

“Hoh? Really? You truly think that you will definitely win today?” Chu Feng suddenly coldly smiled.

“Brat, do you think you still have a chance to win?” The Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor asked mockingly.

“I naturally knew that you were intentionally stalling for time.”

“But you absolutely would not have thought that I too was also intentionally stalling for time.” Chu Feng coldly smiled and said.

“You were stalling for time as well? What’s the point of you stalling for time?”

“Oh, I know. So you were using that time to move some people of the Jiang Dynasty away.”

“Too naive. It is but a group of people in the young generation. Do you truly think they can successfully escape? If I want to eradicate them, they will absolutely not be able to escape this continent of the Nine Provinces.” After the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor scanned downwards at the ground, he saw some clues.

“Wrong. The reason why I stalled for time was not for that. It was to wait for reinforcements which can destroy all of you.” Chu Feng lightly smiled and said.

“Reinforcements?! Who are you scaring? Right now, in the continent of the Nine Provinces, is it possible that you can still find a person who can defeat us?” It had to be said that the word “reinforcement” caused the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor to panic a bit.

Because, after constant fighting for ten days and ten nights, he truly experienced the unsimpleness of Chu Feng. Although he and the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor did indeed drag the battle out, such actions was a method within no methods.

At first, the two of them originally wanted to quickly kill Chu Feng with their combined powers and solidify their state of victory, but they could do nothing as Chu Feng was really too strong. Not only was his battle power not weak, his reactions were extremely quick as well.

Not only were the two of them unable to suppress Chu Feng in terms of battle power, their tactics were seen through one after the other by Chu Feng. In the battle of ten days, they could truly be said to be “setting up camp at every step” as they very gradually advanced forward, and their minds were thoroughly exhausted.

So, when Chu Feng said he had reinforcements, he believed it. Not only did he believe it, he also panicked. In this continent of the Nine Provinces, if there was even a young man like Chu Feng, perhaps there was truly an even more powerful person.

“Do not believe this brat’s nonsense! If his Jiang Dynasty had reinforcements, they would have already appeared. How could they have let us destroy the formation?” The Ji Dynasty’s old

ancestor said.

“Hmph. It’s up to you whether you believe it or not. Right now, a catastrophe is already heading your way, and you won’t make it out in time even if you retreat right now.” Chu Feng did not explain as well, and only continued to coldly smile and speak, as if he had already seen the scene of the two clans being annihilated.

“A catastrophe is heading our way? From what I see, a catastrophe is heading your way, you brat. Without temporarily gained power from other places, what can you use to fight against me? Watch my casual move of a finger crush you to death.” The Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor waved his sleeve, stuck out his finger, and prepared to attack Chu Feng.

“I would quite like to see who dares to touch Chu Feng!” But just at that time, a thunder-like explosive shout suddenly burst out from the distant horizon, and at the same time, an enormous aura quickly followed.

“The 9th level of the Heaven realm?” At that instant, the faces of almost everyone on scene changed greatly. Especially the Ji Dynasty’s and the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestors. They had panicking expressions

It was because they could both clearly feel that the aura of the 9th level of the Heaven realm was speedily approaching.

“Heavens! Is it possible that what Chu Feng said was true, and he truly has reinforcements?”



At that instant, let alone the people from the Ji Dynasty and Liu Dynasty, even the crowd of the Jiang Dynasty were endlessly shocked.

Originally, they also thought that Chu Feng's words were for scaring the people from the two clans, but looking at the situation now, what Chu Feng said was true!

wuaoo Just at that time, a dragon's cry suddenly rang out. The formation enveloping the dynasty immediately dissipated, and quickly after, an azure light flew over from the clouds, and only stopped after arriving above Chu Feng and the others.

“Heavens! This is?!”

However, after seeing the original shape of the azure light, everyone couldn't help but gasp deeply because at that very instant, what appeared above them was an incomparably huge azure dragon.

Although the Azure Dragon was condensed and formed by azure-coloured gas, the dragon scales, the dragon claws, the overbearing state, it was simply vivid and lifelike, and not too far off from a real dragon.

On the head of the Azure Dragon, two figures stood there. Many people on scene who were from the continent of the Nine Provinces recognized one of them. The big brother of Chu Feng, the expert in the 8th level of the Heaven realm, the Monstrous

Monkey King.

And in front of the Monstrous Monkey King, there stood an old man who had white-and grey-hair. He held a fly whisk, wore a robe, and had an unsecular air around him.

“Who are you?” Seeing that person, the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor also tightly frowned. Although they were both in the 9th level of the Heaven realm, he felt a threatening feeling from the old man. His opponent’s cultivation was very strong, already infinitely nearing the Martial Lord realm, an existence that was going become a Martial Lord.

Facing his question, the azure-robed old man waved the whisk in his hand, then lightly smiled and said, “My name remains the same regardless of anything. I am the Azure Dragon Founder!”

# Chapter 519: Secret Weapon

---

“Azure Dragon Founder?”

Hearing that name, a large commotion was instantly created within the crowd. Everyone examined the azure-robed old man on the dragon head again.

Even the people from the Ji Dynasty and Liu Dynasty slightly frowned, and their eyes lit up.

It was because the name “Azure Dragon Founder” was really too famous. So famous that not only the continent of the Nine Provinces, even the several continents surrounding it heard of that name.

Especially some with higher positions, they knew that the Azure Dragon Founder was a legend in the continent of the Nine Provinces. The strongest person a thousand years ago in the Nine Provinces, an expert who almost stepped into the Martial Lord realm.

“You said you’re the Azure Dragon Founder?” The Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor tightly frowned, and with an extremely solemn gaze, he examined the Azure Dragon Founder.

“That’s right. I am the Azure Dragon Founder.” He lightly smiled. There were not many emotional changes on his face. Like the light wind and faint clouds, his expression was serene.

“What a joke. The Azure Dragon Founder is a character one thousand years ago. Although your cultivation is similar to his, you are only taking his name to scare us. If you are truly the Azure Dragon Founder, haven’t you lived for a thousand years?” The Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor spoke with a face of distrust. Completely, he felt that the Azure Dragon Founder was lying.

“Haha, the azure dragon that made my name is under my feet right now, yet you actually don’t believe I’m the Azure Dragon Founder?”

“Whatever, whatever. If you believe me, fine; if you don’t believe me, that’s fine as well. All of you are people who will die soon anyway.” Suddenly, the Azure Dragon Founder flung the fly whisk in his hand, causing the surrounding space to change. Then, a layer of boundless Heaven power shot out, and with powerful might, pressed towards the old ancestors of the Ji Dynasty and Liu Dynasty.

“Such strong power!”

At that instant, the two old ancestors were able to feel the power of the Azure Dragon Founder’s single strike. So, they didn’t dare to delay, and both revolved the Heaven power in their bodies and made extremely powerful counterattacks.

“Ji Clan Heaven Flipping Palm!”

“Liu Clan Heaven Ruling Fist!”

One fist and one palm were thrown out at the same time. Instantly, the entire world trembled, the weather changed, and quite some might was created. It was because those two martial skills were rank 7 martial skills.

Rank 7 martial skills were already extremely powerful martial skills, and when two experts in the 9th level of the Heaven realm used them, the might was naturally unstoppable.

boom Finally, the two rank 7 martial skills interweaved with the Heaven power that the Azure Dragon Founder sent out. But after an explosion, the attacks of the Ji Dynasty's old ancestor and the Liu Dynasty's old ancestor were shattered, but the might of the attack that the Azure Dragon Founder sent out did not diminish, continuing to press towards the two old ancestors.

“This!” Seeing that scene, the two old ancestors' expressions changed greatly. They hurriedly caused radiance to flash in their palms as they took out their Mastered Strange Armaments. Quickly after, human and weapon combined into one, they explosively yelled, and made extremely horrifying blades of light.

hmm

Two blades of light streaked through the air, making ear-piercing sounds. Even sparks were made by the friction through the air, and even the sky and earth could not hold back such vast might.

boom Another huge explosion, and the sky and earth trembled

once again. But this time, the two blades of light successfully canceled out the Heaven power sent by the Azure Dragon Founder.

But at that instant, looking back at the Azure Dragon Founder and the faces of the two old ancestors, they were completely different.

A light smile was still worn on the Azure Dragon Founder's face, like the gentleness of the wind and the faintness of the clouds, it was not diminished, nor should it have been. On the other hand, the two old ancestors had deathly-white faces, foreheads full of sweat, and within their aged eyes, fear and uneasiness glittered.

Even the people on scene widened their mouths from amazement because the attack that the Azure Dragon Founder sent out just now was clearly an extremely casual attack.

Yet such a casual attack had to be dissolved by the two old ancestors using their rank 7 martial skills once as well as the strongest slice from their Mastered Strange Armaments.

Although they were both in the 9th level of the Heaven realm, the difference in battle power was too big. Those who had eyes could tell who was the strong one and who was the weak within the three people.

“He's too strong. Strength like this simply infinitely approaches the Martial Lord realm! This is a true expert who nears the Martial lord realm, and it's likely with just a tiny bit more, he will become a Martial Lord!” Jiang Hengyuan and many other dynasty experts

said with faces full of shock.

“He’s the Azure Dragon Founder. He is, indeed, the Azure Dragon Founder who swept through the continent of the Nine Provinces a thousand years ago and even my Jiang Dynasty’s old ancestor was weaker than him.” Suddenly, the Jiang Dynasty’s emperor spoke. Although, back then, he was heavily injured, after ten days of healing, he already recovered quite a bit.

“What? Milord, you said he’s the Azure Dragon Founder? Truly, the Azure Dragon Founder? But hasn’t the Azure Dragon Founder died for a thousand years already?” Hearing the emperor’s words, the already shocked faces of the people from the Jiang Dynasty instantly became more shocked.

“There’s no mistake. Look carefully. What’s under his feet isn’t a martial skill, it’s a Secret Skill, and the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique is the unique skill that made him famous! So, he is definitely the Azure Dragon Founder.” The emperor explained.

“Everyone, don’t doubt anymore. He is indeed my Azure Dragon School’s founder, the Azure Dragon Founder. My school’s old ancestor has not died yet.” Just at that time, Chu Feng spoke.

“Heavens!” And after Chu Feng spoke, the expressions of everyone on scene changed greatly. Their shocked state were simply indescribable with words. As Chu Feng was a part of the Azure Dragon School, the words he spoke were absolutely trustable.

The strongest person a thousand years ago in the continent of the Nine Provinces was still alive. That news was really too astonishing. People could simply not accept that fact immediately, so everyone was dumbfounded.

“Quickly retreat!” Just at that time, the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor suddenly yelled loudly, then he turned around and speedily escaped afar.

“Dammit!” At the same time, although the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor was unwilling to, he hurriedly turned around and escaped towards the distance.

Seeing that even the two old ancestors escaped, naturally, the experts from the two clans didn’t dare to dally. All of them used their strongest bodily martial skills and quickly escaped, deeply afraid they would die by the hands of the terrifying Azure Dragon Founder if they ran slow.

“Hoh...”

Seeing the crowd of people who were left behind and escaping, the Azure Dragon Founder only lightly smiled. Although he didn’t chase after them, the killing intent in his eyes couldn’t help becoming a bit stronger.

The Azure Dragon Founder wouldn’t let them leave alive, but he was in no rush to chase after them. If he, who had the Secret Skill, the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, wanted to chase, not a single person from the two clans could escape his palm.



“Wait!” But suddenly, the Azure Dragon Founder’s expression changed because he discovered that of the troops of the two clans, no matter if it was the dynasty’s clan members or the World Spirits brought by them or the Monstrous Beasts, all of them already escaped.

But there was a chariot pulled by several Monstrous Beasts that stopped in the air. On that chariot, there was a small-scale palace. He used his Spirit power to examine it, but he discovered that there was a Spirit Formation laid outside of the palace, so the inside was undetectable.

Moreover, the several Monstrous Beasts who pulled the chariot had sinister faces and their bodies were twisted, but they could only stay where they were. On their bodies, purple-coloured symbols and brilliance endlessly flashed.

What it meant was that, it wasn’t that they didn’t want to escape, but that they were unable to escape because on their bodies, a Restriction Spirit Formation was added, binding them in the air.

“Senior Azure Dragon, something’s off with that chariot.” At the same time, the Monstrous Monkey King also discovered the inklings.

“Hahahaha...”

Just at that moment, a burst of mad laughter suddenly rang out from the distance. The sound was deafening, and simply like the

claps of thunder. It was the laughter of the Ji Dynasty's old ancestor. He laughed extremely strangely, extremely insanely.

Only after laughing for a good while did he say, "I never would have thought that the grand Azure Dragon Founder would still be living. This truly causes one to be astonished."

"But sadly, with my secret weapon here, even if you have overwhelming battle power, you are fated to not avoid death."

# Enraging Flames

# Chapter 520: Middle-Aged Man

---

“Senior Azure Dragon, that old thing is truly looking to die. Why not go give him a lesson right now?” Hearing the mad loud laughter coming from the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor afar, the Monstrous Monkey King was the first to be unable to accept it. He knew that if the Azure Dragon Founder wanted to kill the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor, it was only a matter of flicking his finger. So, that was why he asked the Azure Dragon Founder to make his move.

“Wait, that chariot is too strange.” However, the Azure Dragon Founder didn’t pay attention to the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor who was escaping, but locked his gaze dead on the chariot.

And after hearing his words, everyone noticed the chariot that stopped in mid-air, and couldn’t help locking their gazes onto the small-scale palace above the chariot as well.

creak~~~

Finally, the door to the small-scale palace opened. At that instant, everyone’s heartbeat couldn’t help racing a bit faster, and their gazes also became extremely serious.

However, what they didn’t expect was that after the palace door was opened, it was actually an old man who walked out.

That old man’s age was too high. If he wasn’t eighty, he was ninety, but his cultivation wasn’t too strong, being only in the 1st

level of the Heaven realm.

However, after the old man walked out, only then did everyone discover that he was pulling a person out with his hand. It was a middle-aged man.

The man wore gorgeous clothing and had a large stature. Black hair went straight to his heel, fluttered with the wind, and he was elegant and unordinary.

Moreover, his thick brows and big eyes looked very handsome and brave. However, a middle-aged man like him who had such an unordinary appearance didn't have the slightest bit of cultivation.

Not only did he not have cultivation, even his mental state didn't seem to be too clear. At that moment, despite already walking in front of the chariot, he didn't even look straight at the crowd.

With dull eyes and a face filled with an idiotic smile, he munched the two roasted chicken in his hands. He ate like a wolf swallowing and tiger gulping, and was in extreme joy, as if he hadn't eaten in a hundred years.

“This isn't it right? What kind of joke is this? Just an old man like him, and an idiot, is his so-called secret weapon?”

“Indeed, it was just for scaring people. The Ji Dynasty's old ancestor is truly funny. Hahaha...”

When they carefully examined the two people at the front of the chariot, their originally tense hearts all calmed. Moreover, they started to loudly laugh mockingly.

Because, from them, it could be said that they didn't feel the slightest bit of threat. The old man was only in the 1st level of the Heaven realm. Too many people on scene could easily kill him.

As for the middle-aged man, although he had an unordinary and handsome appearance, he was clearly an idiot. Furthermore, an idiot without cultivation, so most people didn't put the two of them in their eyes.

"That person looks very familiar." However, as the crowd relaxed, Chu Feng became even more uneasy.

Because, when the two of them appeared, Chu Feng concentration fully onto the middle-aged man. For some reason, he felt that the man was a bit familiar, yet he couldn't remember where he saw him.

At the same time, the Azure Dragon Founder also carefully examined the middle-aged man. Although he didn't discover any inklings, his gaze was also filled with alert, always feeling that the middle-aged man was not simple.

Suddenly, the old man made his move. He didn't attack the people from the Jiang Dynasty, but extended his hand towards the middle-aged man next to him, and used his hand to brush the long hair on his forehead to the side.

“This is bad! Ancestor, quickly stop that old man, do not let him touch his forehead!” At that instant, Chu Feng’s pupils shrunk, his face changed greatly, and he hurriedly loudly yelled.

Because, when the middle-aged man’s long hair above his forehead was pushed to the side, Chu Feng understood everything.

On the forehead of the man, he saw a scar. A scar that was vivid, lifelike, and like flames. Chu Feng had seen that scar before. He had seen it on the forehead of a beggar.

And back then, Chu Feng almost got killed because he touched the scar on the beggar’s forehead.

At that instant, Chu Feng finally knew why the man looked so familiar. It was because he was the beggar from back then. The man who carried Chu Feng to the Chu family, and instructed Chu Yuan, telling him that he must raise Chu Feng.

Chu Feng always wanted to see him again, because even though he knew that his mind was muddled, after all, he was his only hope in knowing where he came from.

But currently, seeing him again, Chu Feng did not feel any joy. What he had was only endless fear because he knew how terrifying that man was after being enraged. If he truly exploded, it was likely that the entire Jiang Dynasty would be flattened by him.

“Stop!” Although he didn’t know why Chu Feng was that nervous, the Azure Dragon Founder still felt that something was wrong so he explosively yelled, flicked his fly whisk, and instantly, berserk power engulfed outwards. With light-like speed, it pressed towards the old man and the middle-aged man.

The Azure Dragon Founder’s strike was not only for stopping the old man’s action. It was to completely destroy the old man and the middle-aged man, including the chariot.

boom

It had to be said that the Azure Dragon Founder’s strength was indeed very powerful. Almost in the moment the old man’s palm was going to touch the man’s forehead scar, his attack arrived.

After the deafening explosion, the area that the chariot was at instantly became chaos. Layers and layers of wild ripples kept on surging everywhere.

Not only did it cause more and more cracks to form in the air, even the continuous structures on the ground were shattered from the shock. The Azure Dragon Founder’s strike was too fierce, and even some people from the Jiang Dynasty were dragged in by that, dying within.

But that more greatly showed the Azure Dragon Founder’s nervousness. He did indeed feel danger from the middle-aged man, and was also aware that the old man’s action was dangerous.



So, that was why he didn't restrain himself on that strike and harmed some innocent people because in the instant just now, he only wanted to stop the old man's action and remove two uneasy, hidden troubles. He simply didn't consider the safety of the people underneath the chariot.

wuaoo~~~~~

But just as the layers of ripples were spreading, suddenly, a wild hurricane swept over. The hurricane was really too intense. It actually engulfed the horrifying ripple instantly.

And very quickly, the hurricane also disappeared. At that instant, the almost shattered sky returned to silence once again. Simultaneously, a figure also came into view, appearing in the crowd's line of sight.

At that instant, the middle-aged man stood on air. His long hair fluttered, and his eyes no longer had their lifelessness from before. Replacing them were two endlessly rising flames of fury.

The eyes that were filled with flames of fury were really too terrifying. So terrifying that with a single glance, from deep inside one's heart, strong fear spread outwards, engulfing their entire body.

“Crap. Although his strike successfully killed the old man, and even left nothing behind from killing the several Monstrous Beasts and the chariot, it also thoroughly stirred up this person's anger.” At that instant, Chu Feng tightly frowned because he had seen how

horrifying that person was in his mad times, and he had also heard, from Chu Yuan, how horrifying the strength that person grasped was.

That very instant was when his strength was fully shown. In his psychotic state, they were likely going to be facing a disaster.

# Chapter 521: King Of The World

---

“Ancestor, can you defeat this person?” Seeing that the middle-aged man already had overflowing fury and was very possibly going to start massacring soon, Chu Feng could only cast his gaze towards the Azure Dragon Founder above him. After all, in a moment like this, the Azure Dragon Founder was the only existence able to fight against the middle-aged man.

But the Azure Dragon Founder at that moment was staring at the middle-aged man with tightly knitted brows. At the end, he helplessly said, “The strength of this person is unfathomably deep. I am absolutely unable to defeat him.”

“What? Even the Azure Dragon Founder is unable to defeat him?”

“How is that possible? If he’s even stronger than the Azure Dragon Founder, what realm is he in?”

“Could it be? This person is a Martial Lord expert?” And after hearing the Azure Dragon Founder’s words, the people on scene had faces full of fear, and were endlessly afraid.

Even though they felt terrifying danger from the middle-aged man, he did not emanate any shocking might. So, in a situation where they were with the Azure Dragon Founder, even though they were afraid, they were not too worried.

But at that instant, when the Azure Dragon Founder said that

even he wasn't able to defeat the man, they became completely afraid. If even the Azure Dragon Founder wasn't able to defeat him, wouldn't a disaster truly head their way today?

huaaaaoooo~

Suddenly, an ear-piercing howl rang out in the sky. However, it wasn't a howl, but the sound of wind.

In the sky, with the middle-aged man as the core, layers of frenzied wind power became pale-white berserk gas. They crossed over one another, surrounded the man, and endlessly swirled.

When the wind power appeared, the sky sank into chaos. The air disintegrated, everything went pitch-dark, and what could be seen was only the crazy wind, and the man inside the crazy wind.

At that very instant, the man's robes swayed left and right, his hair fluttered everywhere, his eyes sprayed fire as he looked down at the ground.

Finally, he spoke. His voice was loud and clear, and every single word was like thunder as he fiercely shouted, "Those who follow me, I grant riches and power."

"Those who go against me, kill kill kill!"

"KILL~"

After the last word resounded, the world instantly shook, the sky collapsed, and the originally clear sky and bright day immediately became chaotic.

At that instant, the sky became blurry. The only thing that could be seen was the middle-aged man in the air, and the only thing that could be felt was endless killing intent.

“Heavens! How can there be such a terrifying person in this world? Is this even the power of a man?”

“This person is too horrifying. Who in the world is he?!”

Seeing everything that was happening in front of their eyes, everyone’s panic rose to the peak. With a raise of a hand, the sky was changed and the earth was swapped. When had they ever seen such power?

It simply surpassed their range of understanding, surpassed the limits of humanity. It was already not something humans could do, and he seemed more like a god.

Although the middle-aged man didn’t start massacring, everyone’s despair reached the extreme because they knew if that person wanted to kill them, they absolutely had no chance of escaping. Even the world could be destroyed by him, let alone them petty living organisms?

“The strength of this person does not belong in the Martial Lord realm. He should be a Martial King.”

“I never would have thought soon after I revived, I would meet such an exceptional expert. I have no regrets before dying.” At that instant, the Azure Dragon Founder’s tightly furrowed brows suddenly relaxed, and replacing it was a hint of relief.

He had felt the strong power of the middle-aged man. So powerful that even he was powerless to fight against him because in front of that man, even if it was him, he was as puny as an ant. Even a casual breath from him could turn him into dust.

The man stood on air, and was like a king who ruled the world, and their lives were also grasped within the hands of that king.

“This will not do. I can’t die just like this. I can’t die by his hands, and even more so, I can’t let these people die by his hands.”

At that instant, Chu Feng also felt the threat of death, but he was unwilling to die. So, he leaped, and actually flew towards the middle-aged man.

“Chu Feng, what are you doing? Quickly come back!”

Although the world was already muddled, many people on scene spread their Spirit power out, so they were able to feel Chu Feng currently flying towards the middle-aged man.

To Chu Feng's actions, everyone broke out in cold sweat for him because that man was really too horrifying. By flying over like that, wasn't Chu Feng looking to die?

But they thought back at the words the man said, and looking at the situation around them, they were at ease again. Since death was to both the left and right, why did they need to worry?

And just at that moment, Chu Feng already flew high into the air. He was less than a thousand meters away from him, but he had the wild wind as protection, so Chu Feng had no way of approaching.

So, Chu Feng yelled his throat out, and hysterically howled, "I am Chu Feng! You want to kill me?!"

Chu Feng was wagering his life because he knew that the man seemed to have the mission of protecting him, and associating it with the scene when he first met the man, Chu Feng firmly believed that he still had a trace of reason. So, perhaps his name, his appearance, could awaken that trace of reason.

"Chu Feng? Who's Chu Feng?"

"And who are you?" After hearing Chu Feng's words, the middle-aged man's expression actually went blank, then quickly after, he cast his gaze towards Chu Feng.

"What? You don't even recognize me? You've forgotten your duty? Could it be that you've forgotten your mission?" Seeing that

he was looking at himself, Chu Feng put on an act of being extremely domineering, like he could not be compared to anyone, and as if he was the master of that man.

“It’s... It’s you?!”

However, what made Chu Feng rejoice surprisingly was after he saw Chu Feng’s appearance, his eyes that originally spat fire actually became incomparable terrified immediately. His body, which was filled with killing intent, was actually trembling.

In merely an instant, the chaotic world started to change. It soon returned to its former bright day, and at that instant, everyone could clearly see everything in front of them.

“This... What is happening?”

Seeing the situation in the air, everyone couldn’t help but be shocked because they astonishedly discovered that Chu Feng was approaching the male one step at a time. The man who previously even had an unordinary atmosphere was actually half-kneeling in the air currently. He hugged his head with both of his hands and muttered to himself, as if he was very afraid of Chu Feng.

“No! Don’t kill me! No matter what you want me to do, I’ll agree! Don’t kill me!” The man was first hugging his head and muttering to himself, but after he discovered Chu Feng came near, he actually started to kowtow with his hands cupped and held forward in front of him.



At that instant, the already endlessly shocked people were thoroughly stupefied. What exactly was the damn situation? The expert, who was so strong he could change the heavens and earth, was actually begging for forgiveness from Chu Feng?

“Is it possible that this man knows Chu Feng?”

At that moment, the eyes of the Azure Dragon Founder, the Jiang Dynasty’s emperor, and the others, all lit up. They thought about the words Chu Feng said before, then looking back at the man’s current reaction, they could only think of one conclusion.

It was that the man, who was so god-like powerful, definitely knew Chu Feng!

# Chapter 522: Natural Disaster Creator

---

At that very instant, the several tens of thousands of Jiang Dynasty members observed with raised eyes, looking at the scene in the sky.

All of them were dumbstruck. Their eyes were widened, their tongues were tied, and on all their faces, all sorts of stunned expressions were clearly shown.

Chu Feng knew that horrifying man? What relationship did the two of them have? Looking at the man's appearance, he seemed to be afraid of Chu Feng. Did the man reach the extremities of insanity, or were there truly some things hidden from sight?

People kept on imagining all kinds of circumstances, but no matter what they guessed, they could not be sure of their relationship. So, they could only stare at the two people in the air because over there, perhaps they would obtain the answer they desired.

“Forgive me! I know my wrongs! I shouldn't have intruded into your territory, I shouldn't have disturbed your peace!”

“I'm begging you, give me one more chance, please let me live! No matter what you want me to do, I'll agree!”

The middle-aged man with horrifying strength half-knelt in the air and endlessly kowtowed to Chu Feng. Occasionally, he would secretly shoot Chu Feng a glance, but every time, after seeing Chu

Feng, his expression would become even more fearful, and even his body would start trembling.

Seeing that, Chu Feng was endlessly shocked. Since he wasn't an idiot, linking it to the things Chu Yuan told him regarding this man, and looking back at his current appearance, Chu Feng already guessed the gist of it.

That man shouldn't be a member of his family. He should have done something wrong, or offended some person.

And that person had the strength to kill the man and had the spirit to make him fear, but he didn't kill him. He should have gave him a chance to continue living, and that chance was a mission. To protect Chu Feng.

As for who that person was, in Chu Feng's current heart, naturally, he had an idea. If his guess held, then that person would definitely be his father.

Because, when that man saw Chu Feng's appearance and became so scared, it meant that it wasn't Chu Feng he feared, but a person who looked similar to Chu Feng. And the person who looked similar to Chu Feng could only be Chu Feng's biological father.

But at present, Chu Feng didn't have time to think that much. What he wanted to do the most was to grab onto the terrifying man's weakness. He had to control him.

“Do you remember the mission I gave you?” Suddenly, Chu Feng asked.

“Mission?” Hearing those words, the man was first taken aback, then quickly after, hurriedly nodded and said, “I remember. You wanted me to protect a child.”

“What is that child called?” Chu Feng closely asked.

“Called what? Called...called...” The man’s expression glittered and he flustered a bit, but after thinking for a while, his complexion was finally like “pushing away the clouds in the sky”, turned from panic to joy, and said, “Called Chu Feng. You said that this child must be called Chu Feng, and could not be called any other name.”

“Then, have you always protected this child?” Chu Feng continued asking closely.

“I, I...” Hearing those words, the man completely panicked. Incomparable fear emerged instantly on his face that just turned to joy. He quickly kowtowed to Chu Feng once again and begged, “Have mercy, have mercy!”

“Hmph. You actually dare to be so undutiful to the mission my father gave you. Are you not afraid that he will be angered and kill you?” Chu Feng coldly shouted. He was abnormally domineering, as if the horrifying man in front of his eyes was truly his own servant.

“Father? You, you are?” Hearing those words, the fear on the man’s face eased slightly, but the gaze he looked at Chu Feng with was still full of fright.

“I am Chu Feng, the person you should be protecting.”

“But you are really too irresponsible. Not only did you not follow your promise by staying by my side and protecting me, you even helped my enemy to attack me?!” Chu Feng fiercely shouted.

“Enemy? Where? I will kill him, kill him!” Hearing the word “enemy”, two lumps of flames instantly appeared again within the middle-aged man’s eyes. The horrifying killing intent from before reemerged but this time, it was clearly not directed at Chu Feng and the others.

“Carry me forward. I will bring you to slaughter them.” Chu Feng said with a commanding tone.

“As you wish!” And to Chu Feng’s words, not only did the terrifying man not disobey in the slightest, rather, he was incomparably revering.

As he spoke, he willed. A layer of dazzling golden radiance appeared on his forehead. Then, instantly, it enveloped Chu Feng, and after it enveloped Chu Feng, the golden radiance changed for a while, and actually became a golden chair.

The chair was extremely delicate. There were even pictures of

dragons and phoenixes engraved on it, and they were very beautiful. The most important thing was that the golden radiance emitted a feeling of indestructibility. It was a Spirit Formation.

“Gold-cloak World Spiritist?!” Chu Feng hiddenly sighed in surprise. He only knew that the man’s battle power was horrifying, but he didn’t expect that he was also a World Spiritist, and even a Gold-cloak World Spiritist.

To be able to casually condense such a delicate chair with Spirit Formation power, it could be seen how strong he grasped that ability.

Moreover, he even did that in a muddled state. If his mind was clear, Chu Feng truly didn’t dare to imagine how terrifying he would be at that time.

“Listen to my order, head south.” But sighing in surprise was sighing in surprise. Chu Feng still had to act out an appearance of being the master. He sat on the golden dazzling chair and pointed towards the direction where the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestors and the others left at.

“As you wish!” After Chu Feng gave the command, the man didn’t delay as well. As he spoke, he turned around, and like light, flew towards the southern horizon.

“So quick!” At that instant, Chu Feng only felt the scenery around him become a blur, as he was currently flying speedily past his surroundings. He had to focus on everything that blurred past

him in order to clearly see everything in front, in order to determine the direction.

At the same time, south of the Jiang Dynasty, the Ji Dynasty's old ancestor and the Liu Dynasty's old ancestor were leading the troops from the two clans and flying in the air.

After a while of flying, they had already passed several plains, several forests, and several mountain ranges.

"That's almost good." Analyzing the distance he flew, the Ji Dynasty's old ancestor suddenly stopped, then loudly said, "Stop!"

And with his order, the people from the two clans also stopped their movement in turn and stopped in mid-air.

"What is that secret weapon? Even we need to escape this far?" The Liu Dynasty's old ancestor asked puzzledly. He was really curious what exactly the secret weapon was.

"This weapon is not simple. You should have heard of the natural disaster that occurred a while ago in the Morning Han Continent right?" The Ji Dynasty's old ancestor smilingly asked.

"You're talking about the huge fire that came from the sky and covered many mountain ranges?" Mentioning that matter, the gaze of the Liu Dynasty's old ancestor instantly changed, and his expression became odd.

It was because he knew a lot about that matter. He knew that in the Morning Han Continent, which the Ji Dynasty ruled, there were three powerful sects stationed within its vastest mountain range.

However, recently, an abnormal huge fire suddenly appeared in that vast mountain range. Everyone from the three sects died.

The most important thing was that the huge fire didn't burn off of the trees in the forests. Because, to powerful cultivators, it was very difficult for normal flames to harm them.

Yet not only did the huge fire kill all life within the mountain range, it was even still burning currently. That area already became a forbidden area, and no one could step in because those who neared the flames, no matter how powerful their cultivation was, would get completely melted regardless.

So, that horrifying huge fire was seen as a natural disaster.

And seeing the Liu Dynasty old ancestor's strange expression, the Ji Dynasty's old ancestor smugly smiled, and said, "My secret weapon is that natural disaster's creator."



# Chapter 523: Human Realm Hell

---

“Natural disaster creator? What do you mean?!” Hearing those words, everyone was shocked.

“Hoh, it also means that the natural disaster was not a coincidence. Furthermore, the creator of the natural disaster will recreate it within the Jiang Dynasty right now.” The Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor said.

“Recreating a natural disaster?!”

“What is going on? Could it be that the natural disaster was manmade, and the person who made the natural disaster was inside the chariot?!” The Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor guessed the answer, but that answer really made one too stunned. So stunned that even he didn’t dare to believe it was true.

“That’s right. You’ve guessed correctly.” Facing the glittering gaze of the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor, the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor pleasedly smiled.

“How is this possible? If there is truly such a powerful existence, then he is definitely a character in the Martial Lord realm. How can a character like him listen to your orders?” The Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor expressed doubt.

“Haha, you don’t need to worry about that. You only need to know that he is invincible in this world, and moreover, he will be used by me. This Jiang Dynasty is only the first testing ground, but

it is absolutely not the last.”

“As long as he is here, my Ji Dynasty will be peerless in the world, and everything else will be obliterated.”

“Starting with the nearby few continents, then I’ll take over the tens of thousands of continents. At the end, I will finish at my ancestors’ dreams, killing my way back into the Eastern Sea Region.”

“At that time, not only will my Ji Dynasty be the ruler of the Morning Han Continent, it will also be the ruler of the Eastern Sea Region, the entire eastern section! Hahaha!” When the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor reached an exciting part, he actually faced the sky, and longly howled. He laughed loudly and insanely, and greed permeated throughout his smile.

It had to be said that his laughter, and his previous words, didn’t lightly frighten the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor. After thinking for a while, he cautiously asked, “Your next goal wouldn’t be my Liu Dynasty right?”

“Don’t worry. We are allies of many years. Not only you and me, my father’s generation, my grandfather’s generation, we were even allies then.”

“So, I won’t touch your Liu Dynasty. However, your Liu Dynasty must be loyal to me!” Seeing the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor who had an unstable expression, the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor sinisterly smiled.

And at that instant, the corners of the Liu Dynasty's old ancestor twitched. He understood his meaning. He was not going to touch the Liu Dynasty, but the precondition was that his Liu Dynasty had to serve his Ji Dynasty.

rumble rumble rumble rumble rumble

But just at that time, strange sounds suddenly came from the distant sky. That sound was like thunder, like the roar of tigers, like the surging tides, yet also like the howl of ten thousand beasts.

At that instant, everyone panicked because that sound got louder and louder. In only an instant, it filled with surroundings of the people from the two clans. The sky and the earth trembled, as if the world was going to collapse.

“Crap, what exactly is this thing?!”

As they panicked, their first thought was to escape. But it was useless since it was too late. As they wanted to make their move, they discovered that their bodies were as though they were frozen. Other being able to open their mouths to speak, they couldn't even tremble their fingers.

hmm

Suddenly, the radiance in front of the crowd flashed, and a violent gust of wind slammed into them head-on. It caused their

long hair to flutter, and their mouths to twist and change shape from the wind.

And when everything stopped, all of their faces couldn't help but change because in front of them, a huge figure appeared.

It was a middle-aged man. He had black-hair that went straight to his heels. He stood on air, and had might akin to that of a killing god.

But at that instant, what made the crowd most scared wasn't the man, but the huge golden light above the man, on his head.

Within the golden light, there was a golden chair. On the golden chair, there sat a young man. The young man currently stared at the crowd with a light smile on his face as his eyes were slightly squinting, and he was exactly Chu Feng.

“It's him? It's actually him?!”

But compared to the crowd, the Ji Dynasty's old ancestor trembled as he stared at the black-haired man because he knew that the current atmosphere, which even caused the world to collapse from the pressure, wasn't emanated by Chu Feng, but from the middle-aged man.

“What's the matter? Do you recognize him?” The Liu Dynasty's old ancestor also discovered that something was wrong and hurriedly asked.

“He, he, he’s the natural disaster’s creator!” The Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor said those words with his trembling tone.

“What? You said that he’s that secret weapon of yours?!” At that instant, the face of the Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor greened because he had once personally went to the Morning Han Continent. He personally saw the huge mountains that were covered by flames, and even with his cultivation, he was unable to approach it. So, he deeply knew of the terror of the flames.

Yet right now, the man in front of him was actually the creator of the flames. How could he not be afraid? Especially when he saw that above him, there was even Chu Feng. Was it possible that the horrifying man was related to Chu Feng?

And just as everyone endlessly guessed, all hoping that the man wasn’t related to Chu Feng at all, the horrifying man suddenly spoke, and asked with an extremely petty tone, “Young master, is your enemy them?”

“What? Young master? This Chu Feng is actually the young master of this horrifying man?”

“Does this mean that he’s Chu Feng’s servant?”

“Heavens! Where exactly did that Chu Feng come from? He actually has such a terrifying servant?!” Hearing those words, the crowd felt their brains buzz and felt thunder banging against their heads, because to them, absolutely, it was a frightening nightmare.

“Look at what you’ve done! You’ve actually brought such a terrifying guy here. Did you bring him here to kill us all?!” The Liu Dynasty’s old ancestor loudly cursed at the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor who was next to him.

“Wait. His mind is unclear and he originally had problems, so that’s why I was able to control him.”

“This Chu Feng has many cunning plans. He must have used some trick in order for the man to listen to him.”

“But do not fear. I have a method that can perhaps control him again.” The Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor first sent a mental message to explain, then said to the horrifying man, “Idiot! Don’t even think of listening to that brat’s lies. I’m your master. How can you help my enemy and attack me?!”

At that instant, the Ji Dynasty’s old ancestor was totally speaking lies with his eyes wide open. He simply did not know how to completely control the horrifying man, but he did not believe he would be related to Chu Feng.

And after hearing how the horrifying man called Chu Feng, he randomly assumed and thought Chu Feng disturbed the man’s awareness while his mind was muddled, tricking him, and causing him to think that his master was Chu Feng.

The reason why he said those words was because he wanted to be like a “blind cat killing a mouse”, to trick that man back and fight

for a chance of survival.

In fact, if there's one idiot, there's a group of idiots. After the Ji Dynasty's old ancestor said those words, the expressions of the people from the two clans turned to joy, and even thought he truly controlled the horrifying man, and that he would give them a strand of chance to survive.

However, in the next instant, they were thoroughly stupefied.

“These people, kill them all!” Chu Feng indifferently said.

“As you wish!”

Hearing Chu Feng's words, the horrifying man's face instantly turned cold as the flames in his eyes slightly flickered. With a boom, that land became occupied by rolling flames, like hell in the human realm.

# Chapter 524: The Great Enemy Has Been Eradicated

---

The raging, intense flames were like fierce beasts. They covered the sky and the ground at that area, and burned without restraint.

In only an instant, the people from the two clans were consumed by the flames. They melted, were burnt into ashes, and there wasn't even any residue left behind.

“So powerful. The horrifying oceans of fires were indeed left behind by him!” Looking at the endlessly changing intense flames rolling and surging around him, Chu Feng muttered to himself.

Although he was inside the golden Spirit Formation and could not be affected by the flames at all, just by looking at the atmosphere, he could see how horrifying the flames were, and flames like those made him think of the two oceans of fire in the Azure Province.

One was in the desolate desert, the other was at the Plum Flower School. The oceans of fire at both places were extremely terrifying. Cultivators were unable to approach them, and they were both viewed as forbidden areas.

At that time, Chu Feng had suspected if those horrifying oceans of fire were manmade, was it possible they were created by this terrifying man?



Back then, he only guessed, but today, he confirmed that fact.

“Ayaya, a waste. Simply too wasteful. So many Heaven realms! So many Heaven realm Source energy, and there are even two in the 9th level of the Heaven realm! Yet they died just like that. At least leave a complete corpse for me to refine all the Source energy!”

However, just at that time, Eggy skipped and jumped while loudly yelling with a face full of sorrow. Although currently, Source energy in the Heaven realm might not allow her to make more breakthroughs, to her, they were still extremely enticing.

Facing that situation, Chu Feng could only bitterly smile. Although the terrifying man listened to his words up until now, after all, his mind was confused. Chu Feng could not control many things, for example, the power of his attacks.

But at present, to Chu Feng, he wasn't too concerned about those small losses. He felt that as long as he could continue to control that man, he would be satisfied.

It was because the Azure Dragon Founder said that he possibly wasn't a Martial Lord, but a Martial King.

As long as he imagined having a Martial King expert as a henchmen next to him, it made Chu Feng have a feeling of safety that he never had before.

“These flames are too terrifying, and they will harm the innocent. Are you able to retract them?” Chu Feng asked the man.

“The Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven comes from my body. They are born as I desire, and extinguished as I desire. If I want them gone, naturally, they will be gone.”

The terrifying man’s gaze flashed, and the flames around him were like tide as they surged towards his body. With only a blink, the horrifying flames actually all disappeared.

But looking back at the ground, it was already made into a mess. The earth was pitch-black, giving out steaming heat, and even the air twisted.

After that, Chu Feng was not in a rush to bring the man back to the Jiang Dynasty. Since the imminent danger was dissolved anyway, and the Monstrous Monkey King and the Azure Dragon Founder were there to hold the fort, on the Jiang Dynasty’s side, no accidents should happen.

And because of the unstable factor of the man, Chu Feng needed to further control and understand him.

So, with special methods, Chu Feng started to question the man. He wanted to more deeply understand man in order to better know himself.

But for some unknown reason, the man’s awareness was very

muddled. It was as if his memory was being bound by someone, and actually didn't know what he himself was called, nor did he know where he came from, let alone know who Chu Feng's father was and where Chu Feng came from.

He only remembered some fragmented sections, and he roped those sections together, which formed a mission: he had to protect Chu Feng. If something bad were to happen to him, a disaster would come his own way.

When Chu Feng deeply questioned, the man acted as if he felt extreme horror and actually started to spur out nonsense. Moreover, he lost his current terrifying cultivation, and returned to his insane and stupid state, and simply did not recognize Chu Feng.

At first, Chu Feng was a bit worried, but he did not panic since he seemed to gradually grasp the method to make him recover his strength.

That method was to make a move on his forehead's scar. That place was his weak spot. As long as he touched that place, the man would recover his strength.

And the reality was indeed like so. When Chu Feng grasped what was appropriate and after touching the scar on the man's forehead, he actually recover his strength. Moreover, he was incomparably furious, and forgot who Chu Feng was again.

But luckily, Chu Feng grasped the man's current weak spot. Very

quickly, he made the man submissive to himself again, but the thing Chu Feng could do nothing about was every time he asked a question deeply regarding his own father, he would sink into extreme fear again, so Chu Feng just flat out stopped asking.

He knew that with the man's current state, he could absolutely not rush things through if he wanted to know about his identity. He should slowly advance and understand the man bit by bit. Only understanding a lot about him, could he awaken his memories.

And after feeling that he could thoroughly control the man, or at least prevent him from going on a rampage by killing innocents, Chu Feng brought him back to the Jiang Dynasty.

Currently, the people from the Jiang Dynasty were still submerged within fearful hearts and extreme uneasiness. It was because everything that happened before was simply like a dream.

It made them feel that everything was so unrealistic. Especially when they recalled that such a horrifying, powerful person appeared in the continent of the Nine Provinces, and that he also followed every word Chu Feng said, as if he was Chu Feng's servant.

As long as they recalled that, even up until now, they still felt disbelief, and it was exactly that disbelief that made them unable to be sure whether the danger was truly gone or not.

So, at that very instant, they were waiting for a person, and it was Chu Feng. It was because Chu Feng already became a crucial

character regarding their Jiang Dynasty's survival. Chu Feng was able to bring them the answer of whether the danger was dissolved or not.

“Look, Chu Feng has come back!”

“That's true! Chu Feng has returned! Milord, Chu Feng has returned!” Suddenly, someone pointed to the south and loudly yelled, being incomparably excited.

At that instant, those who were in the Heaven realm all rose into the sky and cast their gazes towards the south. After seeing Chu Feng really bring a blank-faced man back and was speedily returning, they couldn't help but rejoice.

“Chu Feng, how is it?”

“Chu Feng, where's the Ji Dynasty and Liu Dynasty? Have you caught up to them?” The Jiang Dynasty's emperor as well as a group of experts such as Jiang Hengyuan welcomed him first.

Seeing their nervous expressions, Chu Feng lightly smiled, then said, “The Ji Dynasty's old ancestor, the Liu Dynasty's old ancestor, as well as their people who entered the continent of the Nine Provinces, have eternally disappeared from this world. The great enemy of the Nine Provinces has been eradicated.”

“Chu Feng, are your words true?!” At that instant, the crowd of the Jiang Dynasty were all surprisedly joyed, but they also slightly

didn't dare to believe it.

“Absolutely true.” Chu Feng firmly nodded his head.

“This is great, this is great! This is really great!”

At that instant, a hint of relief, as well as indescribable excitement, emerged onto the face of the Jiang Dynasty's emperor. Moreover, he continuously said three “greats” because he could really not control himself from the excitement.

And other than him, almost everyone else on scene was the same.

# Chapter 525: Looting Wealth

---

“Woo~~~~~”

Suddenly, thunder-like cheers came from the Jiang Dynasty. Many young people in the Jiang Dynasty, and even some middle-aged people, excitedly cheered.

They were really too moved. When a person was in a realm of absolute death and thought they would undoubtedly die, yet discovered that they weren't dead, and also wouldn't die, that feeling was simply as if they were reborn. It was truly hard to not be moved by that, and there were even some people whose faces were full of tears from emotion as they loudly sobbed.

At the same time they cheered, many people didn't forget casting their gazes to the sky, looking at their emperor, many lords, as well as the smiling and chatting young man.

Although they didn't say it, in their hearts, they already deeply remembered that young man. It was he who saved their Jiang Dynasty.

“I never would have thought that the person who saved my Jiang Dynasty at the end would truly be him.” Jiang Yini looked at Chu Feng, who was chatting with her father, in the air. Her pair of beautiful eyes unendingly glittered, full of unspeakable emotions.

And other than Jiang Yini, many people in the Jiang Dynasty's young generation had very clear emotions. Not only were they

grateful to Chu Feng, they admired him.

Even for some young females, their beautiful eyes showed some of their hearts being moved. They already thoroughly admired Chu Feng because of his outstanding appearance.

But they could only hide those thoughts at the bottom of their hearts because they had personally seen Chu Feng's power. Even though they had unordinary births by having Royal Bloodlines, in front of such an excellent young man, it was hard to avoid feeling that they weren't sufficient themselves and felt that they weren't worthy of Chu Feng. So, they had to turn their hearts' feeling into pure admiration.

“Chu Feng, this time, it was truly all thanks to you. I express gratitude for everyone in my clan.” Suddenly, the emperor of the Jiang Dynasty bowed deeply to Chu Feng.

“Thank you, Chu Feng, for saving our Jiang Dynasty!”

At the same time, all of the experts behind the Jiang Dynasty's emperor directly half-knelt in the air and cupped their hands towards Chu Feng. Looking downwards, the several tens of thousands of Jiang clan members, no matter male, female, old, or young, actually all knelt down, and expressed their thanks to Chu Feng with faces full of sincerity.

If it was before, even if Chu Feng saved their Jiang Dynasty, with their pride, they would only thank Chu Feng, but would absolutely not kneel down to Chu Feng.



But it was different now. Because of the exchanges between Chu Feng and the horrifying man, who they had personally seen and personally heard, they already roughly knew some things.

Chu Feng's background was absolutely not as simple as it was on the surface. He should have an even stronger shield behind him. He had a powerful father, as for how powerful his father was?

So powerful that the horrifying man, who could destroy the heavens and the earth, feared him extremely. Facing Chu Feng who had such support, they didn't dare to be disrespectful.

"Ahh, milord, don't say it like that. Seniors, please quickly rise!" Seeing that, Chu Feng felt a bit embarrassed. So, he hurriedly went up to stop them and then said to the Jiang Dynasty's emperor, "I, Chu Feng, am a person from the continent of the Nine Provinces. Helping the Nine Provinces drive away enemies is originally a part of my duty."

"Besides, I have a good relationship with your son and daughter. Regardless, it's something that I should do."

Facing Chu Feng who was like that, the Jiang Dynasty's emperor no longer remained overly courteous and invited Chu Feng, the Azure Dragon Founder, and the others, into the Jiang Dynasty's still existing vast palaces for resting.

The danger to the Jiang Dynasty also dissolved just like that, and Chu Feng also became the hero who saved the Jiang Dynasty.

But things didn't end just like that. After dissolving the danger, the Jiang Dynasty's emperor hurriedly called all the experts to an area and started an emergency meeting.

Not only were the Jiang Dynasty's peak experts in that meeting, there was also the Azure Dragon Founder, the Monstrous Monkey King, as well as Chu Feng and even the mysterious man.

However, that mysterious man could no longer be described with "terrifying" right now. Because, currently he was sitting by Chu Feng's side and with large bites, he was munching pig feet and eating mutton. At that instant, he wasn't even close to being horrifying. Even if you hit his face, he wouldn't even pay attention to you. So, describing him as "mad" and "foodie" would fit more closely.

"Senior Azure Dragon, Chu Feng."

"The Liu clan, Ji clan, and Zhao clan can be said to have moved their strongest forces to attack my Jiang Dynasty."

"Right now, their battle power is already near destroyed, so it means that the three dynasties are like empty cities right now, and will break with a single attack!"

"Speaking honestly, I am not interested in the continents their three clans control, but their three clans have come to the east of this world at the same time as my Jiang clan. In these several thousand years, they should have accumulated quite a bit of

wealth.”

“If the three clan’s wealth all gets sold, it is not hard for it to be turned into three hundred thousand Heaven beads. I believe that everyone here is very interested in these three hundred thousand heaven beads.”

“So, we should take this chance, split up into three groups, attack the three dynasties, and take away the wealth in their clans.”

“And I’ll say this in advance. Since the reason why my Jiang Dynasty has been able to survive this time is all due to Chu Feng, my Jiang Dynasty will not have a single cent of the three clans’ wealth. All of it can split between Chu Feng and Senior Azure Dragon.” The emperor of the Jiang Dynasty lightly smiled and said.

“Milord, this isn’t too good right? After all, this time, your Jiang Dynasty has suffered greatly as well, so you need resources to reimburse your losses.” Although Chu Feng was very moved by the three hundred thousand Heaven beads, he really didn’t feel good benefiting from them alone.

“Chu Feng is correct. We have the resources from the three clans for taking anyway. I can represent the Azure Dragon School to go to the Zhao Dynasty, Chu Feng will go to the Ji Dynasty, and your Jiang Dynasty will go to the Liu Dynasty.”

“As for how much is obtained, that’ll depend on the heavens, but no matter how much is taken, it belongs to the collector.” The

Azure Dragon Founder lightly smiled and said.

“He is correct. I feel that we can follow his method.” Chu Feng also expressed approval.

“Since it is like so, my Jiang Dynasty is also willing to follow Senior Azure Dragon’s suggestion.” Hearing that, it wasn’t really good for the emperor of the Jiang Dynasty to push the suggestion away so he could only nod his head.

Quickly after, the Jiang Dynasty led a group of people forward to the Liu Dynasty.

The Azure Dragon Founder himself went forward to the Zhao Dynasty.

As for Chu Feng, he went with the mysterious man and headed towards the Ji Dynasty.

The goal of their journey was very simple. It wasn’t to completely kill the three clans, but to seize all of their wealth.

Without peak experts nor wealth and resources as support, it would be difficult for the three clans to rise in power. Without even needing Chu Feng and the others to attack, other enemies would “throw stones down the well” <sup>1</sup> and completely eradicate them.

And everything was exactly how the Jiang Dynasty’s emperor

predicted. The three clans sent out their peak experts for the attack, and the three clans were already like empty cities.

Although they had powerful Protection Formations, without the support of powerful experts, the formation was the same as void, and were easily destroyed by the troops from the three sides.

As for the three clans' wealth, as they could not even guard their dynasties, how could they guard their wealth? Naturally, they were all easily plundered.

It had to be said that despite the continent of the Nine Provinces losing quite a few powerful people, the wealth they looted from the three clans was enough to recompense for everything.

[1] AKA, to hit someone when they are down.

# Chapter 526: Eighteen Golden Dragon Phenomenon Formation

---

Of the three groups of people, Chu Feng was the quickest to return. After all, he, who had the mysterious man following him, no matter if it was speed or strength, could be said to be peerless.

And in less than a few days, the Azure Dragon Founder also returned. He, who had the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, although his cultivation was far inferior to the mysterious man's, his speed was still extremely fast.

The slowest were the people from the Jiang Dynasty. Although the emperor led a group of experts and personally went, regardless of strength, or speed, they were a huge chunk weaker than the mysterious man and the Azure Dragon Founder.

But generally speaking, all three groups had extremely great harvests, but sadly, although there was a lot of wealth, the scope of which they included was too broad.

Real cultivation resources only occupied a third of the wealth. A large portion of the remaining wealth were Strange Armaments, precious treasures, and things like those.

And as Chu Feng wanted to rush into the Heaven realm, he proposed a request. It was to take the Strange Armaments and treasures and things like those to exchange for the Azure Dragon Founder's and the Jiang Dynasty emperor's cultivation resources

To that proposal, the Azure Dragon Founder and the Jiang Dynasty's emperor agreed, but they didn't take Chu Feng's things. They only, without condition, gave all of their cultivation resources to Chu Feng.

Facing such actions by the Jiang Dynasty's emperor and the Azure Dragon Founder, Chu Feng didn't say much. He could only hold gratefulness in his heart and remember the kindness that the two of them showed him.

And as Chu Feng brought a large amount of cultivation resources and was going to close himself to the world, preparing to cultivate them, people in the same generation such as Zhang Tianyi, Jiang Wushang, and Jiang Yini gathered with Chu Feng for a short while.

“Brother Chu Feng, although I wasn't able to witness the scene of that day, but just by hearing my sister's narration, my passion boiled.”

“Before, I only knew that you were powerful, but I didn't think you would be stronger than me. Today, I now know that you are this much stronger than me.”

“In my life, I have never truly admired anyone, but now, I really admire you to death. No matter what, as a member of the dynasty, I still have to thank you for your kindness, saving the tens of thousands of my clan members' lives.”

Jiang Wushang's heavy injuries were starting to recover, and he seemed extremely spirited. However, his gaze was examining more at the mysterious man next to Chu Feng because he had also heard of his strong power.

"Brother Wushang, there is no need to be so polite with how we are." Chu Feng lightly smiled and said.

"Chu Feng, I've heard that you want to cultivate in seclusion in order to break into the Heaven realm. The Heaven realm isn't easy to break into, and at first, I had to attempt dozens of times in order to succeed." Jiang Yini warmly said.

"Yeah. Junior Chu Feng, the Heaven realm is indeed very difficult because this is a huge barrier. The former I only broke through after twenty attempts." Zhang Tianyi also spoke.

"Brother Tianyi, you actually needed only twenty attempts? I needed a good thirty times before succeeding." Hearing that Zhang Tianyi successfully broke through with only twenty times, Jiang Wushang was a bit shocked.

To their words, Chu Feng could only lightly smile. Back then, when Zi Ling was by Chu Feng's side, he had personally seen her charge into the Heaven realm.

It was indeed very difficult to break into the Heaven realm. First, one needed to do ample preparation. Not only body-wise, but also mentally-wise. Only after doing that could one attempt, and that one attempt would often be a very long time. If it was short,



several days; if it was long, over a dozen days, and even several months.

Furthermore, after failing once, one would lose a portion of the Profound power they accumulated before. Their body would also be injured a bit, and they would require a period of time before being able to continue making the breakthrough.

To sum it up, breaking into the Heaven realm was very difficult. Even with Zi Ling's talent of a Divine Body, she only succeeded after attempting over ten times back and forth, so Chu Feng also knew how huge the hurdle that he was going to face was.

He could not fail because the Profound power he accumulated could not be lost. The amount was really too huge.

If he let Jiang Wushang and Jiang Yini know that the price for breaking into the 1st level of the Heaven realm was a dynasty's wealth over several thousand years of accumulation, he had no clue how they would feel.

Chu Feng longly chatted with Jiang Yini, Jiang Wushang, and Zhang Tianyi while toasting.

Within the long chatting, perhaps more or less, he gained the experience of their breakthroughs. However, Chu Feng also didn't know whether their experiences would be useful to him or not. After all, he was completely different from them three.

Using several days of time to organize himself and after restoring his body to its peak state, Chu Feng handed the mysterious man to the Azure Dragon Founder and started to cultivate in isolation in the Jiang Dynasty's special historical area of seclusion.

There was a lot to that area of seclusion. It was a place only the emperors, princesses, princes, or people in the dynasty who had done meritorious deeds could do closed-door cultivation.

And that place had a very long history. Moreover, it had special effects, and that place was called the Eighteen Golden Dragon Phenomenon Formation.

After Chu Feng entered, the Azure Dragon Founder, Monstrous Monkey King, Jiang Dynasty's emperor, the dynasty's old ancestor who had awakened from his heavy injuries, dynasty experts such as Jiang Hengyuan, as well as Zhang Tianyi, Jiang Wushang, Jiang Yini, and the other people in the dynasty's young generation, gathered on the top of a tall tower.

Because, at that place, they could clearly see the Eighteen Golden Dragon Phenomenon Formation that Chu Feng was cultivating in seclusion in.

"I've heard that there's a lot to the Jiang Dynasty's Eighteen Golden Dragon Phenomenon Formation. However, I wonder what's special about it?" The Monstrous Monkey King could not see the specialness when looking at the flat-surfaced and circular stage, so it asked curiously.

“Senior Monkey King, my clan’s Eighteen Golden Dragon Phenomenon Formation was created based off of the dynasty’s peerless Secret Skill. It is connected to my Jiang Dynasty’s bloodline.”

“The area of cultivation is built underground, but after successfully making a breakthrough, undulations appear on the surface. Especially after someone breaks into the Heaven realm, there will be pillars of light charging into the sky from inside the circular stage.”

“And the more pillars of light there are, it means that the person has stronger potential and talent.” Speaking to that point, the Jiang Dynasty’s old ancestor couldn’t help but cast his gaze towards the Azure Dragon Founder on the side and said smilingly, “I’ve heard when Senior Azure Dragon broke into the Heaven realm, he was also in this Eighteen Golden Dragon Phenomenon Formation, and at that time, an unprecedented seven pillars of light were activated.”

“That powerful?!” Hearing those words, everyone couldn’t help but exclaim and the gaze they looked at the Azure Dragon Founder with became complicated. Because, of the people there, many broke into the Heaven realm in the Eighteen Golden Dragon Phenomenon Formation so they deeply knew what seven pillars of light represented.

“Hoh, there was indeed something like that.” Facing the crowd’s gazes of somewhat admiration, the Azure Dragon Founder stroked his beard and pleasedly nodded his head.

“Senior Azure Dragon is indeed impressive, but this record has been broken by my young brother. When he broke through, he activated eight pillars of light!” Just at that time, Jiang Yini spoke.

“Oh?” Hearing those words, the Azure Dragon Founder’s expression couldn’t help changing as he looked at Jiang Wushang, but very soon, his suspicion became confirmation.

He discovered that this brat was truly not simple. He was indeed a lot more powerful than his own younger times, and of the people in the young generation on scene, only Zhang Tianyi could be compared to him.

“Then, why is this place called the Eighteen Golden Dragon Phenomenon Formation?” Suddenly, Zhang Tianyi curiously asked.

“Ho... That’s because in the legends, it said that once someone can activate the eighteen pillars of light, the light becomes eighteen golden dragons. They would coil around in the air, showing a phenomenon.”

“At that time, the effects would not be just that. All of the inherited bloodlines of my Jiang Dynasty would also become stronger.”

“However, it is only a legend.” Speaking to that point, the Jiang Dynasty’s old ancestor first helplessly sighed, then looked at Jiang Wushang and said, “Because, up until now, the eight pillars of light Wushang activated is already the highest amount. From that, it

can be seen how hard it is to activate all eighteen pillars of light.”

# Chapter 527: Golden Dragon In The Sky

---

“I truly look forward to how many pillars of light Junior Chu Feng will activate.” Hearing the Jiang Dynasty emperor’s explanation on the Eighteen Golden Dragon Phenomenon Formation, Zhang Tianyi’s gaze seemed to yearn more and more.

“With Brother Chu Feng’s talent, I believe it will not be difficult for him to surpass my eight pillars of light.” Jiang Wushang lightly smiled and said.

“Of course. My brother’s talent is extremely powerful. I’m guessing if he wants to break through, it is completely reasonable for him to activate ten pillars of light.” The Monstrous Monkey King opened his mouth and had a face full of smug. It could be seen that as Chu Feng’s big brother, he was also very proud.

“Chu Feng’s talent is indeed extraordinary, and all of us do not doubt this point.”

“Forgive my direct words, but the Heaven realm isn’t that easy to break into. From what I know, this is the first time Chu Feng is attempting to break into the Heaven realm.”

“And the chance to successfully make a breakthrough the first time is almost zero. At least, I have never heard of anyone who succeeded breaking into the Heaven realm on their first try.” Just at that time, Jiang Hengyuan calmly spoke.

After hearing his words, many people who had a good

relationship with Chu Feng couldn't help slightly furrowing their brows and cast displeased gazes.

However, although Jiang Hengyuan's words was a bit inappropriate currently, it was indeed reasonable.

The Heaven realm was a very difficult barrier. Many people had to attempt countless times in order to succeed, and it could be said those able to succeed after dozens of times were already people with extremely good aptitude. After all, even Zi Ling, the Divine Body, needed over ten times in order to succeed. Succeeding with one attempt was indeed unheard of by anyone.

“Will we be unable to witness the instant Chu Feng breaks into the Heaven realm? To be honest, I truly want to see how many pillars of light he can activate when he breaks through.” A dynasty expert said with slight regret.

In reality, the ones feeling regret was not only him. Everyone felt regret, but even so, no one left that place, and without shifting their gazes, they stared at the Eighteen Golden Dragon Phenomenon Formation.

And that one wait was a good half a day. Chu Feng entered at noon, and at present, the sun had already descended in the west. The curved moon first appeared, and the night was engulfing the entire world bit by bit.

“It is already dark, so I urge everyone to have a meal first, then rest early. After all, even if Chu Feng makes a breakthrough, it is

impossible for it to be this quick.” Suddenly, the Jiang Dynasty’s emperor spoke to urge.

He already prepared a banquet to welcome the crowd, but he could do nothing as no one wanted to miss the moment Chu Feng makes a breakthrough. From start to finish, they kept on waiting. Up until now, none of them had eaten.

“Breaking into the Heaven realm is a very long process. Even if Chu Feng truly hopes to succeed during the first attempt, it will require at least a few days of time.”

“I will have people watching here. If Chu Feng truly breaks into the Heaven realm, I will immediately notify everyone.” The old ancestor of the Jiang Dynasty also urged with a light smile.

And hearing him say it like that, even though they were unwilling to, they did prepare to leave. After all, the Jiang Dynasty’s old ancestor and emperor were correct. Breaking into the Heaven realm was that hard, so how would it be possible for Chu Feng to make a breakthrough that quickly? Them waiting here would only be wasting time.

hmm

But just at that moment, a muffled sound suddenly rang out. Quickly following that was dazzling light that came behind the crowd.



Turning their heads to look, everyone was greatly shocked because they astonishedly discovered that at the edge of the formation, an incomparably bright golden pillar of light charged into the sky, straight through the clouds.

“He broke through?” At that instant, everyone’s faces changed greatly and they were endlessly shocked.

Because, a pillar of light like that already represented everything. It was that Chu Feng broke through. Not only did he break through during his first attempt, he even broke through in under a day of time.

hmm hmm hmm hmm hmm hmm...

Quickly after, pillar after pillar of thick light rose into the sky and straight into the clouds. With only a blink, there were ten pillars of light erected in front of everyone’s eyes.

At that instant, everyone was dumbstruck. Their faces were written full of the word “shock” because right now, the pillars of light still charging into the sky were continuing. The ten pillars of light was absolutely not the final number.

Eleven. Thirteen. Fifteen. Eighteen. As the crowd watched, a total of eighteen pillars rose into the clouds, erected under the night sky, in between the heaven and earth.

“Heavens! Eighteen! A total of eighteen pillars of light? Chu Feng

actually activated eighteen pillars of light?!” They were thoroughly dumbfounded. Especially the people from the Jiang Dynasty. As they looked at the eighteen dazzling golden pillars of light, it was simply like a dream.

It was because there was a legend in the Jiang Dynasty. As long as there was someone able to activate eighteen pillars of light, the bloodlines of everyone from their Jiang Dynasty would be strengthened.

And at present, the scene from the legends appeared just like that in front of them. That truly made them feel elated and didn't know what to do. They were actually unable to accept that immediately, and even didn't believe it was true.

wuaoo~~~~~

But just as everyone was submerged in shock, within the eighteen pillars of light, a deafening dragon's roar actually resounded.

And when they were awakened by that dragon roar, they discovered that the eighteen pillars of light were actually changing. They originally pierced through the sky, but currently, with the sky as the center, they were shrinking extremely quickly.

When the pillars of light shrunk to a certain degree, special curves actually appeared. It was a dragon. The eighteen pillars of light became eighteen golden dragons.

houao~~~~~

The eighteen golden dragons had devastating golden radiance and unordinary atmospheres. They were flying in the air, circling around the Jiang Dynasty in the sky.

At that moment, it was already dark. So, the radiance that the eighteen golden dragons gave off was especially dazzling, and actually lit up the entire Jiang Dynasty.

In that situation, all of the members of the Jiang Dynasty were stunned. As they looked at the eighteen golden dragons in the air, they were endlessly excited. Some people even knelt and kowtowed.

Because, they all thought of the legend spread in the Jiang Dynasty. When the phenomenon occurs with eighteen dragons coiling around in the air, it's their Jiang Dynasty's moment of transformation.

bang~~~~~

Just as everyone up and down the Jiang Dynasty were submerged in the dream-like joy, the eighteen golden dragons longly roared, then exploded, becoming golden specks. Like raindrops, within bursts of special sounds, they sprinkled down.

“Why is this happening?!” Seeing the golden specks that filled the sky, the people from the Jiang Dynasty were shocked, and

their originally incomparably excited faces were instantly replaced by a hint of panic. The eighteen golden dragons shattered. To them, it was not a good omen.

“Wait!” But after the golden specks floated downwards, they did not merge into the earth, but started to merge into the bodies of all the Jiang clan members.

At that instant, the faces of the people from the Jiang Dynasty greatly changed again. A type of indescribable excitement and joy surged onto their faces because they could clearly feel it.

At that moment, the blood in their bodies was boiling. It was burning. The bloodline power that they uniquely had was actually constantly strengthening!

The legend that circulated in the Jiang Dynasty was true!

# Chapter 528: Great Kindness And Benevolence

---

When the phenomenon of the eighteen golden dragons appeared, the Jiang Dynasty's bloodline, also truly like the legend, received an increase in strength.

That caused the Jiang Dynasty members to be ecstatic because that had extraordinary importance to them. Not only did it represent the strengthening in everyone's aptitude, it also meant that the entire Jiang Dynasty was going to rise greatly in power.

And as the people from the Jiang Dynasty were submerged in the joy of their bloodlines explosively increasing in strength, within the inner part of the Eighteen Golden Dragon Abnormality Formation, another phenomenon appeared.

bzzz~

Within the vast underground palace, three types of lighting, golden, blue, and purple, became innumerable tiny lightning snakes and filled all places in the large palace. They endlessly wandered around, and at the same time, emanated horrifying aura that could destroy the heaven and earth.

Suddenly, the lightings of three colours started to, within the buzzing, rush towards the middle of the underground palace. Moreover, they quickly merged into one.

And after the horrifying lightning completely disappeared, a figure also came into view in the underground palace's center. He had thick brows, big eyes, was handsome, brave, and extraordinary. He was exactly Chu Feng.

At that instant, within his eyes, there were three types of lightning interweaving, and when the three types of lightning coiled and shaped, Chu Feng's atmosphere was already completely different.

The 1st level of the Heaven realm. Chu Feng had already successfully stepped into the Heaven realm, but on his current face, it was not all joy. There was a hint of regret.

“A bit. It fell short just a bit.”

“I felt that just now, I seemed to be able to control the power of the lightning, and I also felt how horrifying they were. If they could truly be used by me, it's likely that with only the power of the lightning, there's no one in the Heaven realm that can fight against me.” Chu Feng tightly clenched both of his eyes, and very regretfully said.

“Just leave it Chu Feng. Some things do not come by forcefully taking them. If it's yours, it's yours. If it's not yours, you can't do anything about it.”

“But this Divine Lightning is clearly yours, so I believe in you. Sooner or later, its power will be obtained by you, and you will then be able to use it.”

“Do not be unhappy because of these things. Right now, you have already successfully broke into the Heaven realm, and you even succeeded with one attempt. Since your comprehension power is so high, you should be happy instead.” Eggy sweetly smiled and said.

“Mm. Eggy, you’re correct. The power of this lightning seems to be getting active as my cultivation gets stronger. Even if it doesn’t automatically submit to me, if I study it day and night, there will be a day that I force them out from my blood, and I will then control them.”

It had to be said that Eggy’s consultation had quite a bit of an effect, but obviously, Chu Feng still had huge confidence in himself.

Before, when the third lightning, the purple-coloured lightning, came out of his dantian and merged into his blood, it was as if the three lightning went out of control, and surged out of his body at the same time.

At that instant, Chu Feng was able to clearly feel horrifying power from the three types of lightning. As to how horrifying the power was, it was a lot more horrifying than an expert in the 9th level of the Heaven realm using their strongest attack from a Strange Armament.

So, only because of that could Chu Feng determine if the power of the lightning could be used by him, with the lightning power,

there shouldn't be anyone in the Heaven realm who could defeat him.

Moreover, even though the three lightnings still returned to Chu Feng's body at the end, he discovered that currently, he could sense the lightning clearer.

Eventually, one day, he would fully understand the obscurity of the lightning, and at that time, he believed he could use his unique power.

With Chu Feng current strength, he already had the ability to create martial skills, but he didn't do that because along his growth in cultivation, he discovered even more that the road of martial cultivation was vast and without end.

So, he knew that he was still too weak. Pitifully weak. So, he wasn't going to create some martial skills at a time when he was still so weak.

Because, if he were to create a martial skill, it would have to be a very strong martial skill. He had never thought of creating a martial skill that was very strong in a beginner's eyes, but like trash in an expert's eyes.

So, before that, he would only learn the martial skills of seniors and absorb their experiences. By doing that, one day, he would create a martial skill that belonged to him, and it would definitely not only be a single type.



Every single type would be able to shock the heavens and shift the earth. They would amaze the world's people, and one of them would definitely be related to the obscure meaning of his body's lightning.

rumble rumble rumble rumble rumble

Just as Chu Feng was immersed in many future fantasies, the entrance to the underground palace was suddenly opened. Focusing and looking over, he saw a large group of people densely surging in.

Those people, no matter male, female, old, or young, all wore a smile that was like a flower blossoming, and their smiles were shining. Furthermore, within their smiles, other than joy, there was also a special feeling.

Those people were exactly the Azure Dragon Founder, Monstrous Monkey King, Zhang Tianyi, and the people from the Jiang Dynasty.

“Chu Feng, I have indeed not been mistaken when I had my eyes on you. However, you have far surpassed my expectations. I must say that you've given me a huge surprise!” The Azure Dragon Founder was the first to walk over. With a face full of relief, he patted Chu Feng's shoulder. It could be seen that he was truly very happy.

“Haha, Chu Feng, you didn't disappoint me and given me face” Quickly after, the Monstrous Monkey King also walked over with a

face full of smiles, showing its teeth. Its smile was much exaggerated, and even a bit frightening, but that showed its current excitement even more.

And after those two people walked over, the Jiang Dynasty crowd, with the old ancestor leading, walked over orderly.

Suddenly, the Jiang Dynasty's old ancestor knelt onto the ground. Simultaneously, all of the Jiang Dynasty members knelt down in-sync, and kowtowed to Chu Feng.

An incomparably loud voice that came from their hearts resonated throughout the underground palace, "We Jiang clan members kowtow to Chu Feng as gratitude for his great kindness and benevolence. The help you gave my Jiang Dynasty will be engraved in all of my Jiang Dynasty's successors, eternally remembered."

"Senior Jiang, what are you doing?!"

"Everyone, quickly rise! What are you doing?!"

Chu Feng couldn't help but be taken aback by that scene. Not knowing what to do was written all over his face, then he hurriedly went up to first help the Jiang Dynasty's old ancestor up.

"Big Brother Chu Feng, this time, you've truly helped my Jiang Dynasty greatly!" Jiang Wushang walked over, and as he spoke, the area in between his brows changed, and a golden, dazzling

“royal” character appeared on his forehead. At the same time, layers of faint radiance covered his body.

“Brother Wushang, your bloodline power is many times stronger again! Congratulations!” Chu Feng was a Blue-cloak World Spiritist, so naturally, he felt Jiang Wushang’s bloodline power’s increase in strength. Although he didn’t know what was happening, he still felt happy for him.

“Big Brother Chu Feng, this is all because of you! You made my bloodline power stronger!” Jiang Wushang smiled and said.

# Re-Visiting The Emperor Tomb

# Chapter 529: Change In The Emperor Tomb

---

“What? You said me?” Chu Feng’s pupils shrunk and his eyes couldn’t help faintly enlarging. Within his slightly widened mouth, it clearly showed his current bewilderedness and shock.

“Heh, not only me, everyone in my Jiang Dynasty, including the future generation, has have their bloodline strengthened because of you.” Jiang Wushang continued to say smilingly.

“Chu Feng, Wushang is correct. This time you really have unintentionally helped my Jiang Dynasty greatly.” The old ancestor of the Jiang Dynasty also said with a face full of light smiles, and his gaze was full of gratitude.

“This... What exactly is happening? Can someone explain it to me?” Chu Feng was both shocked and curious. He swept his appealing gaze over the crowd. He truly wanted to know what actually happened.

“Chu Feng, it’s like this...” Seeing that, the Azure Dragon Founder first stroked his beard, lightly smiled, then detailedly narrated the process of what happened to Chu Feng.

And Chu Feng also finally learned why they were so happy, and why the people from the Jiang Dynasty were so grateful towards him.

So, it seemed like when he made his breakthrough, borrowing the power of the Eighteen Golden Dragon Abnormality Formation,

it strengthened the Jiang Dynasty members' bloodline.

After knowing the process, Chu Feng was also very happy. He was happy not only because the Jiang Dynasty became stronger, but the greater reason why he was happy was because he was able to activate eighteen pillars of light. That made him more confident, and he had more confidence in fighting against the so-called Immortal Execution Archipelago.

On that night, the Jiang Dynasty set up a huge banquet and celebrated with the entire clan. Everyone then knew that it was Chu Feng who made the Jiang Dynasty's legend appear, causing their bloodlines to strengthen.

With that, the people who were already grateful towards Chu Feng became even more grateful, and the people who idolized Chu Feng went even more insane, and as for the people who adored Chu Feng, their feelings were even clearer.

It had to be said that Chu Feng became a person who did great things for the Jiang Dynasty. A true benefactor. Not only did he save the Jiang Dynasty, he even sent the Jiang Dynasty onto a road of rising in power.

That event was personally written, by the Jiang Dynasty's old ancestor, into the Jiang clan's genealogy book. He wanted to let the future generation remember the great kindness and benevolence Chu Feng had shown the Jiang Dynasty.

After shortly resting in the Jiang Dynasty for a few days, Chu

Feng and the others returned to the Azure Dragon School.

And when the people from the Azure Dragon School learned that the founder of the Azure Dragon School, the Azure Dragon Founder, was still not dead, people up and down the Azure Dragon School were elated and the entire Azure Dragon School was brimming with excitement.

After all, the Azure Dragon Founder's name was really too well-known. He was simply a legend passed down in the continent of the Nine Provinces. The strongest person to sweep through the continent a thousand years ago. That was absolutely not a joke.

At present, the strongest person who swept through the continent a thousand years ago was actually still living. How could the disciples of the Azure Dragon School not be excited?

Not only was Chu Feng, the genius, there to fortify the school's position, currently, they even had the Azure Dragon Founder regain control over the school. The school was clearly going to become invincible in the continent of the Nine Provinces, and as disciples of the Azure Dragon School, they were extremely honored.

Very soon, the news of the Azure Dragon Founder still being alive as well as that he was going to regain control over the school spread throughout the entire continent of the Nine Provinces. It had to be said that the news shocked the Nine Provinces once again.

Almost everyone felt that the Azure Dragon School was going to rise in power, and was unable to be stopped. Perhaps it would even surpass the Jiang Dynasty. After all, the Azure Dragon Founder a thousand years ago was already that strong, let alone a thousand years later.

In reality, it was also indeed like that. After a thousand years of time, the Azure Dragon Founder already had a very deep understanding of the journey of martial cultivation, and more or less, felt an opportunity to become a Martial Lord.

So, the first thing he did after returning to the Azure Dragon School was announcing to the world that he, the Azure Dragon Founder, was still alive, and was going to regasp the position of school head.

The second thing was that he was going to do closed-door cultivation. He prepared to charge towards the Martial Lord realm. It wasn't his first attempt in his life, and even he himself forgot how many times he attempted.

However, this attempt was his most confident attempt.

It had to be said that the news of the Azure Dragon Founder still being in this world affected everyone in the continent of the Nine Provinces, and once again, caused characters of many places in the Nine Provinces to come forward and join the Azure Dragon School.

Even some martial cultivation seniors who hid from the world walked out from the mountains and forests they lived in and went



towards the Azure Dragon School, wanting to seek a position of guest elder in the Azure Dragon School.

And other than that news, there was another that also spread throughout the continent of the Nine Provinces very quickly. It was that the dynasties which ruled over three continents came to attack the Jiang Dynasty.

But they ended in defeat. With the assistance of the Azure Dragon School and the World Spirit Guild, the Jiang Dynasty protected their territory and also proved their strength to the world's people.

When that information was known, powers such as the Jie clan, Yuangang School and Fire God School were frightful and terrified.

After all, when the Jiang Dynasty needed help the most, it had sent out an appeal to them. However, at that time, they chose to refuse.

Currently, the Jiang Dynasty was completely safe, and moreover, was their enemy.

They themselves also knew what awaited them. So, they prepared to secretly slip away and leave the continent of the Nine Provinces.

However, before they left, the Jiang Dynasty's troops had arrived at those powers and gave them their deserved lesson.

The Jiang Dynasty did not completely eradicate them, but only killed some leaders, and thoroughly controlled those powers.

From then on, although the Jie clan, Yuangang School, Fire God School, Free and Unrestrained Valley, and Hidden White Sect still existed, in reality, they existed only in name as they became the Jiang Dynasty's political puppets.

On this day, quite a period of time had passed since the Jiang Dynasty was in danger, and Chu Feng suddenly mentioned a matter to the Monstrous Monkey King.

“What? You want to return to the Vermilion Bird Mountain Range and enter the Emperor Tomb again?!” A hint of shock emerged onto the Monstrous Monkey King's face.

“Change has happened in the Emperor Tomb. The entrances in the White Tiger Mountain Range and Black Tortoise Mountain Range has all been closed. Even in my Azure Dragon Mountain Range's Thousand Bone Graveyard, only the place that my ancestor built is left behind. The area of Anti-Demon Symbols is completely gone, as if they had never appeared.”

“Right now, only the Vermilion Bird Mountain Range's entrance is still open and if I want to enter the Emperor Tomb, I can only enter it from there.” Chu Feng said. Ever since coming back to the Azure Province, he brought the mysterious man to check the three other entrances.

He thought that since the Azure Dragon Founder was able to

meet the Ice and Fire Pearls at the Azure Dragon Mountain Range's entrance, it meant that other entrances also had unordinary treasures.

Although the black-clothed old man looted all the treasures at the Vermilion Bird Mountain Range's entrance, he shouldn't have known about the three other entrances so Chu Feng's first thought was to get some benefits from the three other entrances.

However, what he never would have thought of was that the other three entrances were actually closed, as if they never even appeared. There weren't any traces left behind, and only the entrance to the Vermilion Bird Mountain Range remained.

# Chapter 530: The Powerful, Mysterious Man

---

“It’s like that?!”

“Then someone definitely entered deep into the Emperor Tomb and touched something, causing the three other entrances to automatically close.”

“But who exactly is it? They actually have such powerful skills?” After hearing Chu Feng’s words, the Monstrous Monkey King contemplated.

After thinking deeply for a while, he was still unable to think of a result. However, the uneasiness on the monkey face became more distinct. So, he said to Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, you can absolutely not go.”

“Putting aside that the mysterious person who destroyed layers of barriers may still be there, even if that person is gone, the treasures within the Emperor Tomb has definitely been completely engulfed by him.”

“If you want to go there and obtain harvests, you can only step into places that he hadn’t stepped in yet. However, since the Emperor Tomb is that dangerous, with your cultivation entering alone, aren’t you just looking to die?”

“Monkey Bro, don’t worry. With him, I’m sure even if it’s the Emperor Tomb, it may not be able to stop me.” Chu Feng cast his gaze towards the mysterious man who was following behind him,

and as he was yawning, he was eating chicken feet.

Looking at that mysterious man, the Monstrous Monkey King's blood-red eyes slightly flickered and couldn't help but think of back then, at the man who was above the Jiang Dynasty, caused the sky and earth to change, and emanated the airs of a king

Although the man in front of his eyes and the man of back then were as if they were two different people and could not be compared together, the Monstrous Monkey King still deeply feared him.

Because, the scene back then was really too terrifying. Even if he thought back today, he would still feel uneasiness and panic. He also had a feeling that the mysterious man's strength was very possibly above the Martial Lord realm.

But seeing that Chu Feng seemed to have truly grasped the mysterious man, and recalling the matter between Chu Feng and Zi Ling, he thought of Chu Feng's urgent feelings of becoming stronger. So, he no longer urged, and said with slight helplessness, "Whatever, you brat. If you want to go, go. I can't hold you back."

"But beware, you must be careful. If you discover anything wrong, immediately turn around and don't forcefully continue. The Emperor Tomb is too powerful. It is absolutely not as simple as you imagine, and even with him protecting you, you might not be able to go wherever you wish to in the Emperor Tomb."

"As for the Azure Dragon School, I will help you look after it.

Before Senior Azure Dragon comes out of cultivation, I guarantee that it will be safe.”

“Thank you Monkey Bro. I will be careful, and I will quickly go and quickly return.” Seeing that the Monstrous Monkey King allowed it, Chu Feng was endlessly ecstatic. With the Monstrous Monkey King protecting the ones close to him, he could also go explore the Emperor Tomb without worries.

So, with the allure of an impatient heart, like back then, Chu Feng went forth to the Vermilion Bird Mountain Range, and entered the Emperor Tomb once again.

At that instant, Chu Feng already entered the Emperor Tomb, and returning to that place, there was a special feeling in his heart.

Back then, when he entered, although he also embraced the thought of wanting to obtain opportunities and treasures, when he faced the tomb left behind by a Martial Emperor, he was still very uneasy back then.

However, today, it was different. With the mysterious man, the exceptional expert, following him, Chu Feng was full of confidence. Even if he met the black-clothed old man, Chu Feng was not be afraid.

At that instant, like back then, with Chu Feng’s agitation, the mysterious man returned to his former manliness. The flames in his eyes surged, and the long hair behind him fluttered.

Chu Feng was covered by golden Spirit Formation, being above the mysterious man's head. Although he was at a safe place, he also had an unordinary atmosphere. 1

“Forward. Kill everything you see.” Chu Feng pointed forward and loudly commanded.

“As you wish!” The man was obedient and didn't dare to delay in the slightest. With a thought, he flew up, and like light, speedily went forward along the edgeless Emperor Tomb passageway.

The man's speed was really too quick. With only a blink, he rushed past the area Chu Feng and the others walked before, and passed the structure that originally sealed the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique.

“Die.”

Shortly after the mysterious man dashed past the place where Chu Feng and the Monstrous Monkey King hid before, he suddenly explosively yelled.

wuao

After the explosive yell, without even moving his hand, an Evil Spirit's cry of misery rang out from below. At the same time, dust rose down there and the dark surface collapsed. An enormous thing also came into view. It was an Evil Spirit.

However, the Evil Spirit's enormous body was currently becoming countless strands of light and rising into the sky quickly, dissipating with the wind. It no longer had the aura of life.

“So powerful. An Evil Spirit in the 9th level of the Heaven realm can actually be killed with only a thought.” Chu Feng felt shocked in his heart. Although after such a long time, he already knew that the mysterious man was terrifyingly strong, he never would have thought that he could kill those in the Heaven realm with merely a thought.

The Heaven realm that was akin to a god in the continent of the Nine Provinces was even weaker than an ant in front of him. It could be seen how big of a difference there was between the realms.

After Chu Feng gave the order of death, the mysterious man slaughtered. Any living beings that he felt would be mercilessly killed by him.

The Evil Spirits got stronger and stronger, and even at the later stages, what appeared was no longer an Evil Spirit, but organic huge beasts, and guardians condensed by Spirit Formations.

On the road, not only was Chu Feng amazed by the arrangements and the imprisonment of powerful existences, he was also amazed at the vastness of the Emperor Tomb. It was simply an inestimably huge underground world.

At the same time, Chu Feng also rejoiced hiddenly. Although he



didn't see any treasures on the road and only saw places that protected treasures, he saw a lot of Spirit Formation Essence. An extremely large amount. From a small puddle to a large puddle. Slowly, Spirit Formation Essence was everywhere, and it could definitely allow Chu Feng to break through again.

“Strange. Many of the barriers here have clearly been destroyed, so why are the Evil Spirits and guardians here not running everywhere and are orderly guarding?” On the forwarding road, Chu Feng felt confused when he saw that scene.

“Very simple. Deterrence.” Eggy's sweet voice suddenly rang out.

“Deterrence? What do you mean?” Chu Feng was puzzled.

“When a person reaches a certain degree in strength, in reality, there is no need to set up too many restrictions. With a single sentence, a single command, it can bind an exceptional expert for his entire life.”

“Putting aside others, let's say the person under you. He's so powerful, yet he listens to your orders. For what? Because of you?” Eggy said while smiling

“So it's like that.” At that instant, Chu Feng came to a realization.

The reason why the mysterious man listened to him was likely because of his father. It was Chu Feng's father who bound the mysterious man.

And the reason why the Evil Spirits and guardians in this place were so orderly and obedient was definitely because of the master of the Emperor Tomb. It was the master of the Emperor Tomb who made them afraid. It was the master of the Emperor Tomb who made them not dare to go against his orders, even if he already disappeared for almost ten thousand years.

After that, they continued forward. Powerful and horrifying guardians appeared in front of Chu Feng one after the other.

When every single one appeared, it would cause Chu Feng's heart to jump out of his chest because they were really too strong. So strong that Chu Feng had to be afraid because purely the atmosphere they gave off affected Chu Feng

But they could do nothing as even if they were more horrifying, more powerful, they were all heartlessly killed by the mysterious man. Not a single one of them was able to block a single of the man's strike, and not a single was able to take his so-called Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven.

[1] It means that he used his special power.

# Chapter 531: The Mystical Emperor Tomb

---

The mysterious man was like a killing god. On the path, he was unstoppable. It was as if everything was swept by the wind and nothing could block a single one of his strikes.

At that instant, Chu Feng was amazed by the man's horrifying strength once again because his strength already far surpassed his expectations.

But at the same time, he also thought of a question.

If the mysterious man was already so impressive, then how powerful would the person who restricted the mysterious man, Chu Feng's father, be?

At that instant, Chu Feng finally understood why his talent surpassed normal people. It was because he had such a powerful father. If he didn't surpass normal people, that would instead be illogical.

"Chu Feng, more and more, I feel like the Divine Lightning in your body is possibly also a type of inherited power." Suddenly, Eggy spoke. Clearly, she also thought of something because of the mysterious man's powerful strength.

"Eggy, why so?" Chu Feng asked.

"Heh, just intuition. This madman is definitely an expert in the

Martial King realm. Although he isn't in the peak of the Martial King realm, having this cultivation at this age is already quite strong."

"Your father is able to make him so afraid. Even after his mind becomes muddled and forgets everything about himself, the only thing he doesn't forget are the words your father said. Do you know why this is?"

"Why?"

"It's because he doesn't dare to forget. He doesn't dare to forget the words your father said, and how powerful would a person be if he can even make a Martial King expert act in this manner?"

"A character like him is absolutely not be a normal person. He definitely grasps special power." After sighing, Eggy curled her lips and said, "Boy, to be able to seal my power and imprison me in your Spiritual World, your background is truly not simple."

"I..."

Chu Feng understood Eggy's words. The meaning Eggy wanted to say was very clear. It was that if Chu Feng's father was extremely powerful, Chu Feng's background was extremely powerful.

But no matter what, it meant that behind Chu Feng's back, he likely had a powerful shield and he could have originally become the pride of the heavens.

But he could not understand why such a powerful shield would abandon him. Could it be that his father truly met an even stronger enemy?

Chu Feng already thought of that question countless times, but in a situation where he had so little clues, he could really not think of a conclusion.

“This Emperor Tomb is too big. With his speed, we have actually still not reached the end after such a long time.”

“The area of this Emperor Tomb far surpasses the Azure Province.” As the mysterious man went deeper in, Chu Feng was fully convinced by the Emperor Tomb’s powerful methods.

“This Emperor Tomb is deep underground and we are not heading forward on the same level. We are heading downwards, and this is indeed an underground world. It is inestimably large.”

“But don’t be too shocked. Although an Emperor Tomb is big, compared to an Ancestor Tomb, it is simply a child’s play.” Eggy naughtily smiled and said.

“Ancestral Tomb? What’s that?” Chu Feng was endlessly curious. If an Emperor Tomb was already so powerful, what would an Ancestral Tomb look like?

“Heh, I’m afraid saying those things would frighten you. You are

still too young, so there are some things that are better not told to you.” Eggy sweetly smiled, then no longer explained anything.

In a situation like that, Chu Feng also felt slightly helpless. He was already hooked on curiosity, but if Eggy wasn’t willing to say, he could indeed not do anything about it.

But simultaneously, he was also amazed. Exactly how powerful was Eggy? She actually knew so many things! What kind of strength did she have before she was sealed?

That question looped around Chu Feng’s heart for a long time. In reality, he did ask Eggy before, but she refused to respond. However, just by looking at Eggy’s experience, he knew she was not simple at all.

Moreover, he also knew one more thing. It was that Eggy had never made a contract with a human before, also meaning that Eggy had never come into this world.

Everything she knew should have been learned from other World Spirits, but no matter where Eggy came from, Chu Feng already confirmed that her strength before was likely very strong, at least more powerful than the mysterious man.

On the road, Chu Feng already got used to the many surprises brought by the Emperor Tomb. It had to be said that the journey in the Emperor Tomb opened up Chu Feng’s world and let him experienced a lot more things.

But after coming to this place, Chu Feng was really shocked once again because he saw a Monstrous Beast clan formed by countless huge Monstrous Beasts.

The huge adult Monstrous Beasts were dozens of meters tall, and several hundred meters long. Their enormous bodies were even larger than palaces, and were like small hills.

The weakest Monstrous Beast infants were all in the Profound realm, and the Monstrous Beasts just growing up were in the Heaven realm. As for the adult Monstrous Beasts, all of them passed the Heaven realm and were Monstrous Beasts in the Martial Lord realm.

However, the enormous and horrifying Monstrous Beast clan, currently, were already destroyed by someone. What remained were only huge dried-up corpses, their Source energy already being absorbed.

“Powerful. This Emperor Tomb is truly impressive. There is actually a terrifying Monstrous Beast clan reproducing and living in this place.” Chu Feng was endlessly shocked, and was thoroughly stunned.

It was because the Monstrous Beast clan was too powerful. Chu Feng was completely able to imagine how powerful of an existence the Monstrous Beast clan was when they still lived.

“Dammit, dammit! We were a bit too slow. So many Monstrous Beasts! So many powerful Monstrous Beasts with special bloodlines

all absorbed!”

“AHHHH! I’m so angry! It must have been that black-clothed old man. It must have been him! He truly picked up a heavenly huge advantage, and such a huge benefit was seized by he himself!”

“Chu Feng, if you see that old man, you must get this madman to kill him. I will cleanly refine his Source energy or else my heart’s hatred will not be dispelled!” As Chu Feng sighed in admiration towards the Emperor Tomb arrangements, Eggy grinded her teeth. Her heart ached since so much Source energy was all taken by the black-clothed old man himself.

“Don’t worry. If we meet that black-clothed old man, I will definitely get him to spit a portion out to me.” Chu Feng calmly smiled and said as a hint of fierceness emerged into his eyes

On the road, he saw many imposing and grand palaces and high stages dazzling in gold and jade. Those originally were places that stored treasures.

But sadly, the treasures stored there flew despite having no wings. Without even thinking, Chu Feng knew who took away the treasures. It was definitely the black-clothed old man.

Of so many treasures, there was likely also cultivation resources within them. Possibly even weapons more powerful than Strange Armaments. So, naturally, Chu Feng didn’t want to miss out on them. If there was a chance, he would definitely demand some from the black-clothed old man.



“Chu Feng, look over there!” Suddenly, Eggy spoke.

After hearing Eggy’s words, Chu Feng also cast his gaze towards the front. Though the glance seemed insignificant, Chu Feng’s face instantly changed, becoming dumbfounded.

Because, at that very instant, in front of Chu Feng, it was no longer a simple underground world. At that place, there were actually white clouds, a blue sky, tall mountains, flowing water, and it was so beautiful that it was like a dream.

# Chapter 532: Four Illusion Binding Formation

---

“What is this? Is it possible that I walked out of the Emperor Tomb?!”

Chu Feng’s first thought was that he possibly walked out of the Emperor Tomb because the distant scenery didn’t match the Emperor Tomb at all. It was simply like an otherworldly paradise.

“Wait!” But very soon, Chu Feng rejected that thought because he knew he hadn’t arrived at the deepest place of the Emperor Tomb, so how would it be possible that he came out?

In addition, on the road, the experience Chu Feng gained was very abundant. So, Chu Feng already determined that it was not a real scene, and was likely an illusion.

“Wait. Don’t enter that place.” Feeling that something was wrong, Chu Feng hurriedly said.

And after hearing Chu Feng’s words, the man was very obedient and speedily stopped in mid-air, no longer continuing to fly towards the area that was like a painting.

At that instant, Chu Feng started to detailedly observe the scene in front of him. However, with his strength, he was simply unable to be sure whether it was an Illusion Formation or not.

At that place, mountain peaks were steep, white clouds floated around, and there were both waterfalls that flowed down, as well as huge red-crowned cranes that formed rows. It was absolutely beautiful, and impossible to determine whether it was real or fake.

“Look carefully. Is the scene in front of your eyes an Illusion Formation?!” In that situation, Chu Feng could only ask the mysterious man.

“No matter what it is in front, I can kill all!” However, to Chu Feng’s question, the mysterious man did not respond directly. Instead, he coldly snorted, leaped, and flew into the scenery.

“Crap! His mind is muddled and he is simply unable to thoroughly understand the meaning in my words!” At that instant, Chu Feng’s face changed. He originally wanted the mysterious man to use his Spirit power to check it out. After all, he was a Gold-cloak World Spiritist, and with his strength, he should be able to determine whether it was an Illusion Formation or not, but he didn’t expect that the situation would be like this.

“Don’t worry. No matter if it’s an Illusion Formation or not, one must be in it in order to break it. With this madman’s methods, he should be able to destroy it.”

“Besides, the road in front is the only road. If you don’t break it, there is no way to continue forward.” Eggy reminded.

“Mm. As things are right now, it can only be done like so.” It wasn’t that Chu Feng didn’t understand the meaning behind it, but

as he learned of the Emperor Tomb's terror, he became more cautious. However, he could do nothing about the scene in front of his eyes, and could only rely on the madman attacking on his own.

“My Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven can burn all things in this world!”

Suddenly, the mysterious man howled longly, and instantly, the entire world at that place trembled, then quickly after, the flames in his eyes scuttled and the places he looked at were immediately overwhelmed by flames and became oceans of fire. No matter if it was the sky or ground, all of it started to be engulfed by the fierce, intense flames.

Not to mention the green mountains and grasses, the rivers and waterfalls, even the vast white clouds in the sky were unable to endure the scorching heat and if they weren't melted on scene, they were immediately evaporated.

“Who are you? You dare to come here to release such insolence?!”

But suddenly, a deafening and furious roar suddenly resounded. After that voice rang out, Chu Feng's face couldn't help but change because he felt that the voice was very familiar.

boom Just at that time, an explosion suddenly resounded and a horrifying oppressing feeling came from behind. Turning his head to look, Chu Feng astonishedly discovered that a huge white-coloured tiger's claw was approaching him. That appearance was

actually the exact same as his White Tiger Slaughtering Technique.

However, the tiger's claw was vivid and lifelike. Other than emitting faint radiance, it was simply no different from the real White Tiger.

“Hmph.” Facing the attack that came suddenly, the mysterious man coldly snorted, then quickly after, he leaped, and dodged the horrifying White Tiger huge claw.

“Heavens! This is?!” In the instant he dodged it, Chu Feng's pupils suddenly shrunk because he astonishedly discovered that in the distant sky, there was actually an enormous object.

It was the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique. However, the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique was several times more powerful than when Chu Feng saw it at first. The aura it emanated was also several times more horrifying, and it could be said to be not inferior to the mysterious man's.

“White Tiger, you are unable to defeat this person alone. It's better to let us help you out.”

Just at that time, another deafening roar rang out. Following that, the flames distant in the sky suddenly split, and were finally extinguished.

And after the flames were extinguished, another enormous thing appeared. It was a black-coloured huge turtle, but a sinister big

snake coiled on its body. Covering up and down it was a dazzling shield of light. It was the Black Tortoise Armor Technique, without a doubt.

“I, the Dragon King, have come as well!” Quickly after, a thick azure dragon appeared in the sky. Its body was surrounded by mist, giving off the overbearing airs of a king.

“You dare to intrude into the Four Illusion Binding Formation? You are truly looking to die.” Suddenly, an ear-piercing cry rang out. A red-coloured beautiful huge bird also appeared, flying over with the azure dragon.

Although Chu Feng did not truly see those two before, looking at their shapes, Chu Feng knew that they were definitely the two Secret Skills: the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique and the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique.

“Four Illusion Binding Formation?! This is indeed an Illusion Formation. They are not true and are all fake.” At that instant, Eggy reminded.

“It’s fake? Then what should I do?” Chu Feng lightly frowned. Although he clearly knew it was fake, the auras of the four huge beasts weren’t fake. So, he didn’t dare to be sure whether the mysterious man would be able to defeat the four huge beasts.

“I am the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven! I can burn all things in this world! Who can stop me?!”

However, just as Chu Feng worried, the mysterious man suddenly yelled explosively. At that instant, the scar of flames on his forehead actually started to wiggle. Quickly after, it started to enlarge and change, and actually like vines, crawled all over his body.

The most important thing was that the scars were actually not the colour of skin. They were fiery red, as if burnt red by a piece of iron.

So, when scars like those covered the man's entire body, he seemed very sinister and scary, but didn't lose any overbearingness.

wuaoo~~~~~

Seeming to have felt the mysterious man's change, the four huge beasts longly roared facing the sky, and with their unique Secret Skill might, from all sides, they surrounded and attacked the man.

“Those who dare to stop me, die!”

However, facing the horrifying might of the four huge beasts, not only was the man not afraid, he even furiously shouted.

And after his furious shout rang out, the world swayed, and at the same time, from his body, boundless raging flames also started to surge out.

The flames were not simple flames. There was a difference in essence than the flames he was using before because not only did the flames make sounds, they even had shape, and was simply like a huge beast of flames.

If it was said that the huge beasts transformed from the four Secret Skills were as big as small hills, then the enormous beast that was gradually being transformed into by intense flames would be a huge mountain peak that touched the sky. In terms of volume, it already suppressed the four huge beasts completely.

roar~~~~~

Moreover, in terms of power, the huge beast of flames was clearly stronger than the four Secret Skills. In only an instant, it engulfed the four of them, and even started to chew.

And at that time, Chu Feng was able to distinctly hear the four peerlessly powerful Secret Skills actually starting to make heart-tearing and lung-splitting cries of misery.



# Chapter 533: Emperor Might Appearing For An Instant

---

With the huge beast of flames chewing, the cries of the four Secret Skills also became fainter and fainter, and finally disappeared.

In a situation like that, Chu Feng could clearly see that world's scenery starting to change. Like a picture scroll, it started to twist and spin.

“So powerful.” Chu Feng slightly widened his mouth and his gaze glittered, because once again, he saw the strong strength of the mysterious man. With absolute power, he actually broke such a powerful Illusion Formation.

When the world around them returned to normal and when the huge beast of flames returned to the mysterious man's body again, Chu Feng was also able to clearly see everything around him.

At that instant, Chu Feng's gaze was attracted to the front at first. Even Chu Feng's gaze started to endlessly flicker, and the shock on his face became extremely strong.

Because, in front of him, deep in the Emperor Tomb, there was an incomparably huge door. That door had ten thousand feet of height, and had a thousand feet of width. It was truly incomparably huge, as if it was erected from the earth to the heaven.

That door was golden-coloured, and gave off radiance even more dazzling than gold. However, the material it was made out of was clearly not simply just gold because it even gave off a feeling of indestructibility, and even a holy uninvadable feeling.

Involuntarily, Chu Feng was deeply attracted by the huge door. Although he only saw the surface, it was as if Chu Feng saw everything inside.

It was a world. A completely different world from what Chu Feng saw, and it was a world that all living beings wanted to step into.

At that instant, a thought was born into Chu Feng's heart, and it was to open that door. He wanted to enter that world. He had to enter that world.

"Brat, don't look at that door!" But just at that time, an aged voice came from below Chu Feng, cutting off his thoughts.

Hearing that voice, Chu Feng's couldn't help but be taken aback and hurriedly cast his gaze downwards. Although it was a simple action, joy instantly appeared on Chu Feng's face.

Because, below Chu Feng, on the surface, there was a vast formation with radiance shooting in all directions. On the four sides of the vast formation, the picture of a huge beast was carved there.

And those four huge beasts were the original shapes of the four Secret Skill's bodies. In between the four Secret Skills, there were even layers of chains, forming the cage-like Sealing Formation.

The most important thing was that in the center of the vast formation, there was an old man. He wore black clothing, and had a torch-like gaze. He was exactly the mysterious black-clothed old man.

“Haha, so it's him! He's been locked up there, and this is the original form of the Four Illusion Binding Formation.”

“I now know why the madman was able to easily break the Four Illusion Binding Formation. It's because a large portion of its power was already used to imprison this black-clothed old man, that's why he was able to easily destroy it.” At that instant, before letting Chu Feng speak, Eggy lively cheered while being incomparably elated.

“Hoh, truly, ‘cannot be found when searched to the ends of the world, but obtained without any effort’.” And similarly, Chu Feng was also incomparably elated because on the old man's body, there were many treasures from the Emperor Tomb, and currently, he was also locked up at that place. It was simply the heavens helping Chu Feng.

But although he was joyful in his heart, Chu Feng did not immediately make his move on the black-clothed old man, and put on an appearance of confusion, then asked, “Senior, why can't I look at this door?”

“Ahh, in the end, for a brat who grows up in such a desolate place, no matter how much more extraordinary your talent is, you are still dull.”

“Whatever, let me give you some pointers. This place is an Emperor Tomb, and that door is an Emperor Door.”

“The Emperor Door was personally made by a Martial Emperor expert. Not only is it something that is indestructible, it also has a charm that bewitches one’s heart.”

“If you stare at the Emperor Door for a long period of time, you will be bewitched by the Emperor Door’s illusion, and will involuntarily go attack the Emperor Door, as you want to enter it.”

“But how can the Emperor Door be easy to open? By attacking the Emperor Door, you will only receive the rebound of the Emperor Might, and ultimately, you are looking for your own destruction.” The black-clothed old man reminded.

“Oh?” After hearing his words, Chu Feng lightly frowned, then asked Eggy, “Eggy, are the words he said true? Is the Emperor Door truly that powerful?”

“Honestly speaking, I’m not too clear on things like these. I only know that an Emperor Tomb is dangerous, but to the specific obstructions within, I don’t know much about it. After all, it is also the first time that I came to this world, so it can be said that it’s the first time I entered this so-called Emperor Tomb.” Eggy’s pouted,

and naughtily shook her head.

“It is better to believe it is than to not. As long as the treasures on this black-clothed old man can be obtained, this journey has already been plentiful and there is no need to go towards that Emperor Door.”

Chu Feng looked back at the Emperor Door dazzling in golden radiance. However, he didn't feel any danger coming from the inside of the Emperor Tomb. Rather, he still felt that behind the Emperor Tomb, there was an extreme beautiful world, making him to want to open it.

But the more it was like that, the more Chu Feng was alert in his heart. He increasingly felt that the black-clothed old man's words was correct, that the Emperor Door wasn't simple and would absorb one's mind, and confuse them.

“Don't look at that door, it's dangerous!” So, Chu Feng hurriedly reminded the mysterious man, deeply afraid he would be caught by the Emperor Door's enticement.

However, what Chu Feng did not think of was that to his reminder, it was as if the mysterious man couldn't hear it, and instead, leaped, quickly flying towards the Emperor Door.

“Crap, this is bad!” At that instant, Chu Feng was frightened because the man was clearly caught by the Emperor Door's allure, and currently, he was deaf to Chu Feng's urges.

“Stop! Quickly stop! It is dangerous in front of you, and if you go there like this, you will send your life to the grave!” Seeing the rapidly expanding Emperor Door, Chu Feng’s voice got louder and louder, but it was useless and it simply did not stop the mysterious man.

hmm However, just as Chu Feng and the mysterious man were a hundred thousand meters away from the Emperor Door, a burst of undulation suddenly came from inside.

The undulation was originally formless, but people were able to clearly feel it, as if it could overturn rivers and oceans and destroy everything. It had the ability to ruin the heaven and earth.

“Emperor Might? It is possible that this is Emperor Might?” At that instant, Chu Feng’s face changed greatly because he truly felt the threat of death. In front of the formless aura, no matter who, they could not resist against it.

hmm However, what Chu Feng did not expect was that the formless aura didn’t directly engulf them, but when it was ten thousand meters away from them, it stopped, didn’t continue forward, and also started to change.

The formless aura started to have form, and in the areas covered by the aura, a blue sky actually appeared. White clouds appeared. Rivers and the earth appeared. In only a blink, the vast underground world became a beautiful scene once again.

Not only that. The aura was actually still changing, and at the

end, within the scenery, golden radiance was actually extended outwards. The golden radiance rapidly enlarged, and at the end, became humanoid.

His head touched the blue sky, and his feet stepped on the earth. Although golden radiance shot everywhere from his body and his face was unable to be seen clearly, when a figure such as that appeared in front of one's face, no matter who, they would not dare to doubt how strong he was.

# Chapter 534: This Is An Emperor Armament

---

When a figure so large, it could touch the sky while standing on the ground, appeared in front of someone, no matter who it was, they would be unnerved by the powerful atmosphere.

Chu Feng was able to clearly feel, at that moment, that it wasn't a consciousness, but more like a body of energy. To be more precise, it was likely an Emperor Might.

And the so-called Emperor Might was just the might of a Martial Emperor.

But even though it was only might, the might that was left behind by a Martial Emperor was the most powerful existence Chu Feng had seen before. It was countless times more powerful than the mysterious man, and it could be said that the two could not even be discussed together.

“So this is the strength of a Martial Emperor? It is only might, yet it can transform, shape, never be extinguished, and deter all things?!” Chu Feng was both frightened and terrified, and endlessly shocked as well.

It was because he truly felt his own tininess. He was so miniscule that he was like a speck of dust. In front of the Emperor Might, he was so insignificant.

“No. Even consciousnesses will die out, let alone Emperor Might. The reason it can survive for ten thousand years is definitely



related to that Emperor Door. That Emperor Door is a treasure. A piece of true treasure, and if I'm not mistaken, that door is very possibly an Emperor Armament."

"Its Emperor Might is being attached to that Emperor Door, so that's why it isn't gone and has survived for such a long time. To be more precise, Emperor Armament and Emperor Might coexist. The reason why Emperor Armaments are powerful is not only because it is made by a Martial Emperor, but also because it contains power unique to Martial Emperors." Eggy explained.

Although it was also Eggy's first time seeing Emperor Might and the Emperor Door, her experience was a lot more abundant than Chu Feng's, so she knew a lot more than Chu Feng as well.

Even though she didn't have Spirit power, with her naked eye, she could find out some facts by analyzation.

"Emperor Armament?!" After hearing Eggy's words, Chu Feng's expression instantly changed greatly and shock emerged into his eyes.

Ever since getting the Mastered Strange Armament, the Asura Ghost Axe, Chu Feng had asked Eggy many times what weapons in the world were more powerful than Strange Armaments.

And with his many times of pestering, Eggy finally told Chu Feng some knowledge regarding armaments.

Normal armaments were created by iron. Ordinary people could create them.

Slightly better armaments were created with special materials, but regardless of what materials were to be used to create them, in front of a powerful cultivator, the armaments would not be able to even take a single attack.

So, when a cultivator's cultivation reaches a certain level, armaments created by special materials already become of not great use. Only armaments created by the concentration of a peak expert's unique power could display powerful might.

The armaments created by the power of Martial Lords are called Strange Armaments. The armaments created by the power of Martial Kings are called King Armaments. As for the armaments created by the power of Martial Emperors, they are called Emperor Armaments.

In the continent of the Nine Provinces, Strange Armaments were already treasures. There were simply no King Armaments, and as for Emperor Armaments, it was likely that even in the Eastern Sea Region, no one owned any.

But in front his eyes, an Emperor Armament actually appeared, and it was under the Azure Province's surface in the continent of the Nine Provinces. At that instant, it was in front of his eyes. Naturally, that made Chu Feng endlessly shocked, and he felt disbelief.

Even though he clearly knew it was dangerous, he couldn't help casting his gaze back at it, and examined it anew.

And when he looked back at the golden, bright Emperor Door, Chu Feng discovered that the feeling the door gave him was strange as usual, but it was indeed, inestimably powerful.

It had to be said that if the Emperor Door was truly an armament, it would definitely be an armament that had plenty of killing power, and could even kill all living matter.

So, Chu Feng believed it. He believed Eggy's analysis, and that the Emperor Tomb was very possibly not an ordinary formation and obstruction, but an Emperor Armament from the legends.

In front of the Emperor Armament, Chu Feng had great desires of wanting to grasp it within his hand, for it to be used by him.

But regretfully, even if it was him, he knew that the current him simply didn't have any qualifications to grasp the Emperor Armament.

“My Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven can burn all things! Those who block me, die!” Suddenly, the mysterious man suddenly explosively yelled.

Quickly after, the fiery-red scars on his body flashed once again, boundless flames burst out from his body, became a fierce huge beast of flames, and attacked the Emperor Armament that was

erected in between the heaven and earth.

“No!” Seeing that, Chu Feng hurriedly yelled loudly to stop, deeply afraid that the mysterious man would anger the Emperor Might.

But he could do nothing as the mysterious man was already thoroughly caught by the Emperor Door’s enticement. He simply didn’t hear Chu Feng’s words, and was urging the flames with his full force, attacking the Emperor Might.

However, just as the huge beast of flames neared the Emperor Might, the figure that touched the sky extended its big hand that surged with golden radiance, and abruptly grabbed, holding the huge beast of flames in its palm.

With a bang, the flames shot everywhere, but quickly after, completely disappeared. The mysterious man’s Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven, which could burn everything, was actually extinguished just like that.

“Ahh!”

When the huge beast of flames exploded from being crushed, the mysterious man’s face changed and a mouthful of blood was sprayed out, as he clearly received the rebound.

At the same time, Chu Feng astonishedly discovered that the golden Spirit Formation surrounding him started to become faint,

and in a blink, it completely disappeared.

“So strong.” At that instant, Chu Feng couldn’t help gasping deeply. He knew that the Emperor Might was strong, but he never would have thought that with only a single strike, the Emperor Might was able to cause the mysterious man to receive heavy injuries.

“I will kill you!” However, the mysterious man seemed to have not understood the situation in front of him clearly. Not only did he not retreat, he even attacked the Emperor Might again.

“Chu Feng, quickly retreat! Don’t get dragged down by this madman!” Seeing that, Eggy hurriedly reminded.

“Truly damn it.” And in that situation, Chu Feng could also do nothing. He could only turn around, and escape in the direction he came from.

The mysterious man already lost control completely, and the Emperor Might was also very powerful, so if the mysterious man thoroughly angered the Emperor Might, not only would the mysterious man die, Chu Feng would clearly be affected as well.

hmm

However, this time, the Emperor Might did not resist. It stood where it was, and emitted a formless ripple from its body.

boom

When the ripple intertwined with the mysterious man's attack, within the deafening explosion, it dissolved the mysterious man's attack.

“Your strength is too weak. Leave. Go back to where you came from. You want to take relics? You are not worthy!” Suddenly, a voice filled with Emperor Might came from inside the Emperor Door.

When that voice rang out, the heaven and earth did not tremble, but it was enough to shake one's heart, straight into their soul. Chu Feng could even feel the voice's ability to kill him, to destroy his consciousness, and to make him disappear like dust and smoke dissipating.

However, the voice only reminded, and did not have killing intent. Moreover, after that voice rang out, the beautiful scenery and the Emperor Might erected in between the heaven and the earth actually started to shrink, and ultimately, returned to the Emperor Door.

That area returned to its former tranquility as well.

# Chapter 535: Huangfu Haoyue

---

“Huu.”

“So close.”

Seeing that everything returned to its starting state, Chu Feng couldn't help but breathe a sigh of relief because the master of the Emperor Tomb didn't seem to be a bloodthirsty person. He didn't choose to kill Chu Feng and the others, and rather, decided to give them a path of living.

And as long as he recalled the horrifying scene just now, Chu Feng had that feeling of “surviving after a calamity”. If a single Emperor Might was already so powerful, how terrifying would a Martial Emperor be?

Chu Feng was truly unable to imagine how terrifying a Martial Emperor's true strength would be. Perhaps a part of the world would be destroyed by him.

At that instant, Chu Feng finally understood the danger of the Emperor Tomb. Even with the mysterious man opening the path he was unable to pass through, so there was no need to mention himself. It had to be said that the treasures within the Emperor Tomb were really not so easily gained.

“Ahh~~~~~”

However, just as Chu Feng felt that the danger was already gone, the mysterious man hugged his head with his hands, faced up, and roared. Also, as he roared, he loudly said, “Where am I from? Where am I from? Where am I from?!”

His voice was extremely loud. It was like ten thousand simultaneous claps of thunder, rumbling and exploding. At the same time, the red-coloured scars all over his body became extremely bright.

But his tone was filled with fear, and very clearly, he was frightened. He was frightened by the Emperor Might, and frightened to the point he could not control his own emotions.

“Ahh~~~~~”

“Where am I from? Where am I from?!”

The mysterious man’s howl became louder and louder, and it also became more and more fearful. He even started to hammer his own head, tear his own hair, and no matter how Chu Feng yelled, he did not pay attention.

“This is not good.”

The mysterious man’s change caused Chu Feng to feel uneasiness because he felt that the mysterious man really seemed to have went insane, as if he was possessed. If that continued, he would die.



“You are from the Eastern Sea Region, your name is Huangfu Haoyue, and you are the Burning Heaven Church’s forty-second Holy Son!”

But just as Chu Feng was out of methods and didn’t know what to do, the black-clothed old man imprisoned in the Four Illusion Binding Formation suddenly spoke.

And after hearing the black-clothed old man’s words, the mysterious man’s expression actually changed, then he muttered to himself, “Eastern Sea Region? Huangfu Haoyue? Burning Heaven Church? Forty-second Holy Son?”

At that very instant, not only did the mysterious man’s face change, in only an instant, over a hundred expressions appeared. No one knew what he was thinking about.

swish

Suddenly, the mysterious man leaped, and flew towards the direction that they came from. However, he did not stop in front of Chu Feng again.

His speed was really too fast. Chu Feng only felt a burst of strong wind brushing past him, and as he watched, the man disappeared in the distance.

“Dammit!” Seeing that, Chu Feng couldn’t help loudly cursing.

The mysterious man actually abandoned himself and ran off alone.

If he could find him in the future, then it was fine; but if he could not, that meant he lost a Martial King henchman! At present, he went back to being alone.

His dream of bringing a Martial King henchman into the Eastern Sea Region was clearly going to be shattered like that.

However, Chu Feng was not too dispirited because of that. Instead, a hint of hidden joy emerged into his eyes, then he moved, and flew up to the Four Illusion Binding Formation that the black-clothed old man was in.

Because, just now, since the old man knew the man's name and place of origin, clearly, he recognized the mysterious man.

And since the black-clothed old man knew the mysterious man, would he know his own father as well, and know his background? No matter if he knew or not, Chu Feng had to ask once.

At that instant, he originally wanted to descent, but he discovered that there was a layer of pressure around the Four Illusion Binding Formation, and with his strength, he was simply unable to lower himself to the deeper parts.

So, he could only stay in the air and ask the black-clothed old man, "Senior, you recognize that man?!"

“Of course I recognize him. The only Holy Son in the history of the Burning Heaven Church who surpassed the Pope before inheriting the position of Pope! Huangfu Haoyue! How can I not recognize him?”

“However, brat, how did you get yourself related to him? Looking at his appearance, his mind seems to be muddled, but before, he seemed to listen to your words quite closely. What exactly is your relationship?” The black-clothed old man smiled and asked.

But at the same time, his pair of old fox-like eyes were tightly staring at Chu Feng, seemingly trying to see through Chu Feng’s upcoming lie.

Chu Feng was not close to the old man, so naturally he wouldn’t tell him the relationship between him and the mysterious man. So, he feigned a bitter smile, “To be honest, before I met him, I truly didn’t know he was that powerful because he of that time didn’t have any martial cultivation aura, and was a normal person.”

“I noticed he was being beaten up by people on the street, and seeing that he was pitiful, I gave him some money and food. But who would have thought he chose to only eat the food and not take the money. Furthermore, he kept on following me.”

“I was afraid he would be bullied by others again, so I kept him next to me. That continued until one day, I met a strong enemy and almost lost my life, but in the moment where everything was hanging by a thread, he suddenly faced the sky and roared, instantly killing my enemy.”

“However, his cultivation was fully shown and it was as though they were two different people. He had overwhelming strength, something that I never seen before”

“Seeing that he was so strong, I wanted to borrow his power to open this Emperor Tomb, but I don’t understand his identity at all. Senior, I wonder if you can reveal a bit more to me?”

“Hehe, you brat, your luck is truly not bad, but sadly, you cannot pass that Emperor Door. As for the other treasures outside of the Emperor Door, they have all been taken into my pocket. This journey of yours? Hehe, it is truly the so-called ‘drawing water with a bamboo basket, gaining nothing’ and ‘losing on two levels’.” The black-clothed old man did not reply to Chu Feng’s question, and smugly smiled, seeming to be teasing Chu Feng.

“Senior, if you feel it is inconvenient, it doesn’t matter if you don’t say it. In the future, when I go to the Eastern Sea Region, I will naturally know everything.”

“As for truly earning nothing by coming to this place, that may not be so.” Seeing that, Chu Feng no longer asked deeper and cast his gaze towards the area in front of the Four Illusion Binding Formation.

At that place, there was a pond. The water in the pond glittered with a faint lustre, and was very strange and special.

After Chu Feng came above the pond, without saying anything,

he leaped, and rushed in. Quickly after, he opened his mouth and actually started to madly swallow the pond water.

“Brat, what are you doing? You don’t want your life?!”

“I only didn’t tell you things about that Huangfu Haoyue. You don’t need to take that so hard!”

“Stop drinking, quickly come up! I’ll tell you okay?”

Seeing Chu Feng’s action, the black-clothed old man’s face changed greatly and was not lightly frightened because it was not ordinary water within the pond, but Spirit Formation Essence that was viewed as a taboo material.

Spirit Formation Essence contained berserk power, and if one touched it, it would cause some damage to their body. But if it was directly consumed, that was simply suicidal.

# Chapter 536: History Of The Sea Region

---

However, Chu Feng did not pay attention to the black-clothed old man's words. He swallowed the Spirit Formation Essence in large mouthfuls and not only did he not have the slightest bit of a painful expression, instead, on his face, he even wore an expression of excitement.

As if the Spirit Formation Essence wasn't even any poison, but the most delicious food in the world.

The most important thing was as the pond was consumed by Chu Feng bit by bit, his aura actually started to climb, and when the pond was one third consumed by Chu Feng, he broke through. From the 1st level of the Heaven realm, he entered the 2nd level of the Heaven realm.

Although Chu Feng did not make any more breakthroughs after that, he alone devoured all of the large pond's Spirit Formation Essence, and did not leave even a single drop behind.

“Can it be that this brat is a monster?”

Personally seeing everything, the expression on the black-clothed old man's face was truly as wonderful as it could get.

Although he had checked out Chu Feng's body and discovered that there was special power surging within his blood, thus knowing his talent was extraordinary as he had a special body, and would definitely have quite some achievements in the future, he

never would have thought that Chu Feng would be so abnormal and actually madly consumed the Spirit Formation Essence.

Spirit Formation Essence was an extremely horrifying thing! Normal people, if they took just a single drop, would die. Even people with high cultivation would be heavily injured, and a root of diseases would possibly be left behind, affecting their future development.

But Chu Feng, he actually fully consumed an entire pond of Spirit Formation Essence! How could the black-clothed old man not be shocked?

If he didn't personally see it, he would have absolutely not believed that someone in the world could actually consume Spirit Formation Essence, and moreover, even cause cultivation to rise greatly because of that. It also meant that Chu Feng truly refined the Spirit Formation Essence, and did something that normal people could not do.

Recalling when he first saw Chu Feng, at his cultivation, then thinking he actually broke through in such a short period of time, he became aware of something inconceivable.

It was that Chu Feng's potential was simply a lot more terrifying than he expected.

"I'm almost there. After refining all of the Spirit Formation Essence I saw when I came here, I should be able to break into the 3rd level of the Heaven realm." Chu Feng wiped his mouth, and

after taking in all the Spirit Formation Essence on the edges of his mouth, he smiled rather satisfiedly.

“Brat, come over. Quickly come over, I have something I want to discuss with you.” Suddenly, the black-clothed old man yelled loudly. On his aged face, excitement was filled.

“Senior, what’s the matter? Are you going to tell me things about that man?” Chu Feng lightly smiled and walked over, but he could only stand outside of the Four Illusion Binding Formation.

“Hehe, it is merely things about Huangfu Haoyue. If you want to know, naturally, I can tell you.”

“But before that, I need to ask you a question. Which power do you think is the strongest in the Eastern Sea Region?” The black-clothed old man smiling asked.

“To be honest, although I haven’t went to the Eastern Sea Region, I have heard that the strongest power in the Eastern Sea Region is the Immortal Execution Archipelago.”

“Ha! The Immortal Execution Archipelago, worthy of being the strongest power in the Eastern Sea Region?” However, just as Chu Feng finished speaking, the black-clothed old man spat out a large piece of phlegm with a face full of disdain.

“Senior, could it be that the Immortal Execution Archipelago isn’t the strongest power in the Eastern Sea Region?” Chu Feng



curiously asked.

“Whatever, since it is destiny that brought us together, and I also know that sooner or later, you will go to the Eastern Sea Region, I’ll provide you with some knowledge about the Eastern Sea Region.”

“The strongest power in the Eastern Sea Region has never been any dog butt Immortal Execution Archipelago. Not before, not now. It’s my Crippling Night Demon Sect!” The black-clothed old man pleadedly said.

“Crippling Night Demon Sect?!” Chu Feng’s complexion changed. It was the first time he had heard of that name.

“That’s right. Under the command of my previous leaders, my Crippling Night Demon Sect has been titled as overlord of the Eastern Sea Region for countless years. Who could defeat us?!”

“However, because the most recent sect head died from Demonic Art cultivation failure, my Crippling Night Demon Sect split into pieces and endless internal conflicts arose.”

“But despite all of that happening, my Crippling Night Demon Sect is still the strongest power in the Eastern Sea Region. As long as my Crippling Night Demon Sect gathers together, it is still the overlord of the Eastern Sea Region.”

“And other than my Crippling Night Demon Sect, there’s also

another power, and that's the Burning Heaven Church Huangfu Haoyue belongs in."

"This Burning Heaven Church is relatively low-profile, but it also has the ambition to name themselves as the overlord of the world. However, their ambitions were no longer in the Eastern Sea Region, so very rarely did they fight for fame and benefits. Thus, they also hadn't have much conflicts with my Crippling Night Demon Sect."

"But the Burning Heaven Church's strength absolutely does not allow for any underestimation. Although they have very few members, they are the elites within elites."

"Their disciple selection process is extremely harsh, as they have a screening system of choosing one person within ten thousand, and those ten thousand people are even people with extremely good aptitude."

"From that, it can be seen how harsh the Burning Heaven Church chooses its members."

"However, that did indeed form the legend, which says that the Burning Heaven Church is made out of only geniuses. Especially the historical Holy Sons and Holy Daughters. They were the strongest people within the Eastern Sea Region's young generation."

"That brat Huangfu Haoyue particularly. He can be said to be a genius whose name shocked the Eastern Sea Region, and had

strength that surpassed the Pope before even inheriting the position of Pope.”

“Moreover, I heard a secret relating to Huangfu Haoyue.” Suddenly, the black-clothed old man’s tone became low and deep.

“What secret?” Chu Feng asked quickly.

“The Burning Heaven Church had high ambition, yet didn’t start conflicts against the world. The reason why I said it was inferior to my Crippling Night Demon Sect is because his Burning Heaven Church’s past Popes were indeed inferior to my sect’s head.”

“Even if the Burning Heaven Church’s Pope was stronger than my sect’s young head at their younger times, since my sect’s Demonic Arts needs time to mature, so when both of them succeed their grand positions, my sect’s heads were always superior, and they always got more and more powerful.”

“However, Huangfu Haoyue was an abnormality. I heard my sect’s head say one thing to me before. It was that Huangfu Haoyue looked for him for a spar.”

“My sect’s head was the publicly recognized number one expert in the Eastern Sea Region, and even though Huangfu Haoyue’s development was flourishing, after all, he was in the young generation, so naturally, my sect’s head did not put him in his eyes. He originally wanted to give him some lessons so he wouldn’t be so wild.”

“But he could do nothing as with one fight, my sect’s head fought against Huangfu Haoyue for three days and three nights. At the end, the two of them were actually unable to determine the outcome, and ended up with a tie.”

“At that time, the age of my sect’s head neared a hundred, and he was at the period where the Demonic Arts were at their strongest.”

“Yet, Huangfu Haoyue just passed thirty years. So, my sect’s head said to me, that in a few more years, Huangfu Haoyue would definitely be able to defeat him.” Speaking to that point, a hint of sorrow emerged onto the black-clothed old man’s face.

Listening to that point, Chu Feng’s expression changed and he hurriedly asked, “Senior, from what you’ve said, doesn’t that mean Huangfu Haoyue is one of the strongest people in the Eastern Sea Region, and no one can threaten him?”

# Chapter 537: Holy Land Of Martialism

---

“Accordingly, it should be like that. Even my sect’s head was unable to defeat him, so who could have threatened him?”

“On that topic, it was exactly because of Huangfu Haoyue’s challenge that caused my sect’s head to have a knot in his heart and impatiently wanted to become stronger. Because of that, he went astray and died.” The black-clothed old man sighed again. It could be seen that he felt very sorrowful to his sect head’s death.

Hearing that, Chu Feng felt a lot of suspicion. Since Huangfu Haoyue was already so strong, then where did he meet his own father?

Was it possible that his own father was an expert hidden from the world, and even the black-clothed old man didn’t know of his father’s existence?

“Senior, then do you know why this Huangfu Haoyue turned into his current state?!” Chu Feng closely asked while feigning confusion. He was “following the vines to obtain the melon”, and wanted to gain more clues regarding his father from that.

“Hoho, to be honest, I don’t know the reason why he turned into his current state. In reality, I feel very amazed to have seen him again.” The black-clothed old man smiled while shaking his head.

“Senior, why so?” Chu Feng asked with face of puzzledness.

“Because, seventeen years ago, the entire Burning Heaven Church moved, and left the Eastern Sea Region.” The black-clothed old man said.

Hearing that, Chu Feng rejoiced in his heart because he already roughly thought of some things. Quickly afterwards, he asked, “Senior, do you know where they went?”

“The Holy Land of Martialism.” The black-clothed old man said.

“Holy Land of Martialism! Where is that?” Chu Feng curiously asked, but in his heart, he more or less had an answer.

“The Holy Land of Martialism can be said to be the center of this world, but rather than saying it’s the center of this world, it’s better to say it’s a completely different world.”

“Because, at that place, no matter if it’s spiritual energy, Origin power, Profound realm, Heaven power, battle power, all of it is extremely strong, and is absolutely incomparable by this land here.”

“At that place, a group of extremely strong characters and things, beasts and monsters, have been raised. At the same time, it also contains countless treasures, as well as oddities of this world.”

“The Holy Land of Martialism can be said to be the dream of all martial cultivators. However, if they want to enter the Holy Land

of Martialism, they have to pass the heaven's test."

"And this test is called the Heavenly Road."

"Heavenly Road?!"

"That's right. The Heavenly Road. It's said that for those who enter the Holy Land of Martialism, their cultivation can reach the heavens in one step. So, the road to the Holy Land of Martialism is called the Heavenly Road."

"The Heavenly Road only appears once every year. Those who have ambition can enter, but for those who enter the Heavenly Road, their fates cannot be predicted."

"Some people say that the Heavenly Road is a checkpoint and those, whose aptitude qualify, can pass."

"There are also some people who say that the Heavenly Road is a reincarnation cycle. Entering the Heavenly Road is equal to rebirth. Their memories get washed away, and are reborn later in the Holy Land of Martialism."

"There are also some people who say that inside the Heavenly Road, there are countless dangers and only those with powerful strength can pass through. The weak ones will all die within."

"But no matter which saying is correct, presently, of those who stepped into the Heavenly Road, not a single has returned."

“Thus, two sayings have been passed down.”

“The first was that the so-called test of the Heavenly Road simply does not exist. Everyone who step in can enter the Holy Land of Martialism, but they cannot return.”

“The other saying is that the Holy Land of Martialism simply does not exist, and that the Heavenly Road is a tomb. Everyone who enter it do not return, and will all die.”

“Those two sayings encouraged some people, and also deterred some people. The Burning Heaven Church is a power that believes in the Holy Land of Martialism.”

“They firmly believed that as long as talent reached a certain degree, they would be able to enter the Holy Land of Martialism. So, their hearts embraced ambition, but not towards the Eastern Sea Region. Their ambition was directed at the Holy Land of Martialism. So, when they felt that the time was ripe, they brought the entire church and aimed to move into the Holy Land of Martialism, and entered the Heavenly Road.”

“And exactly because of the departure of the Burning Heaven Church and the fragmentation of my Crippling Night Demon Sect, the people in the Eastern Sea Region thought that the Immortal Execution Archipelago became the strongest power in the Eastern Sea Region.”

“However, right now, something unexpected seemed to have



happened.” Suddenly, the black-clothed old man smiled.

“Senior, you are talking about Huangfu Haoyue?!” Chu Feng asked.

“That’s right. Back then, when the Burning Heaven Church entered the Heavenly Road, I did go watch them and personally saw Huangfu Haoyue and the others enter, and also personally saw the Heavenly Road close.”

“At present, Huangfu Haoyue has actually reappeared in this land, which means that something must have happened. To be honest, I truly hope that his mind can be restored because as long as it is, the mystery of the Heavenly Road and the Holy Land of Martialism can be unraveled.”

“Whether the Holy Land of Martialism exists or not, and what does the inside of the Heavenly Road look like, I’m sure that they are something that everyone in the Eastern Sea Region want to know.” The black-clothed old man lightly smiled, then his gaze suddenly flashed, seeming to have thought of something, and said, “That’s right. If you want to know more about Huangfu Haoyue, you can look for a person.”

“Who?”

“Qiushui Fuyan!”

“Qiushui Fuyan?”

“That’s right. Qiushui Fuyan was the Holy Daughter of the Burning Heaven Church of back then. She was originally Huangfu Haoyue’s fiancée.”

“The two of them had a very close relationship, but in the past, when the Burning Heaven Church entered the Heavenly Road, I discover a small detail, and it was that I couldn’t see the Holy Daughter of the Burning Heaven Church, Qiushui Fuyan.”

“Later on, with my inquiry and searching, I finally learnt that Qiushui Fuyan went to a place called the Couple Terrace. However, because of her special status, I did not go find her.” The black-clothed old man said.

“Couple Terrance? Is that also in the Eastern Sea Region?” Chu Feng asked, because he was definitely going to go there.

After all, he knew that when Huangfu Haoyue first came to the continent of the Nine Provinces, he had a clear mind, or else he wouldn’t have entrusted him to Chu Yuan.

And no matter if he returned from the Heavenly Road or the Holy Land of Martialism, since his relationship with Qiushui Fuyan was that special, it was likely that he went to visit her.

If he did visit her, then he should have told her about some things. Although it was only a possibility, at least he had some hope.

In reality, hearing the black-clothed old man talk about those things, and associating it with the words of insanity Huangfu Haoyue talked about before, Chu Feng already roughly guessed some things.

It was that his family, or at least his father, was definitely not located in the Eastern Sea Region, and if he was not located on the Heavenly Road as well, he was definitely within the Holy Land of Martialism. However, Chu Feng felt that the possibility he was in the Holy Land of Martialism was greater.

After all, the Divine Lightning he grasped was very special. He could not be sure it was from a Divine Body, nor could he be sure it was from a bloodline. At least, it was something that people here didn't understand, but if he came from the Holy Land of Martialism, that would make much more sense.

Of course, after all, everything was speculation. The one who knew the true answer was only Huangfu Haoyue.

And other than Huangfu Haoyue, it was likely that only Qiushui Fuyan possibly knew some more things.

So, Chu Feng had to go find Qiushui Fuyan, because he did not want to miss the single strand of hope in knowing his ancestry.

## Chapter 538: I Can Help You

---

“Hehe brat, your name is Chu Feng right?” After talking about Huangfu Haoyue, the black-clothed old man suddenly smilingly asked.

“Senior, you know my name?” Chu Feng was a bit surprised at first, but quickly after, he relaxed. After all, the black-clothed old man even knew things about the Emperor Tomb, so he had definitely secretly heard Chu Feng and the others’ conversation. Knowing Chu Feng’s name was also very normal.

“Hehe, not only do I know that your name is Chu Feng, I even know you have a fiancée called Zi Ling.”

“Your fiancée is not simple at all. Not only does she look like flower and jade, superior to fairies, she is even a Divine Body. Accordingly, by having a fiancée like her, is it truly luck cultivated from your past life.”

“But sadly, your fiancée got a group of worthless elders. For their own benefit, her parents and family sold her off. Sold her off to the Immortal Execution Archipelago.”

“Four years later, your fiancée will marry that dog butt young master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago.” The black-clothed old man chuckled and said.

At that instant, Chu Feng slightly furrowed his brows, then bitterly laughed and said, “I didn’t expect you to even know these

things. Indeed, four years later, if I don't have the ability to save her, she will marry that person."

"Heh, don't worry brat. I can help you." The black-clothed old man suddenly said with a face of seriousness.

"Senior, you'll help me?" Hearing those words, Chu Feng's gaze flashed and cautiously examined the old man because he was aware that things were possibly not that simple.

"That's right. I am the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect's Four Protectors, and in the sect, I still have some rallying power. If I make my move, more or less, the Immortal Execution Archipelago will feel some fear."

"However, there is no free lunch in this world. You and I only met by chance, so naturally, I won't help you for nothing. So, I have a condition." The black-clothed old man chuckled and said.

"Senior, what condition?" Chu Feng asked. At present, the mysterious man had already left his grasp, and with himself, to want to fight against the entire Immortal Execution Archipelago four years later, that could truly be said to be difficult on top of difficult.

And the black-clothed old man did indeed have some strength. If he was truly willing to help him, then that would still be quite a good choice. However, the only thing Chu Feng could not be sure of currently was whether the old man was trustworthy or not. So, he was also very cautious.

“This condition is actually very simple. I have cultivated for many years, but I have yet to accept a disciple. Seeing that your talent is not bad, and that you have some potential, why not become my disciple? As long as you enter my sect, I can reasonably go call some sect members to help you out.” The black-clothed old man said.

Listening to that point, Chu Feng was a bit surprised. He never would have thought that the old man actually planned to take him as his disciple, but Chu Feng was clearly in a difficult situation. After all, he already had Zhuge Liuyun as his master. Although right now, his cultivation was far from his, after all, he was his master.

So, Chu Feng said, “Senior, thank you for your approval, but without hiding anything, I already have a master, and he treats me quite well. I don’t think I can become your disciple.”

“Ahh, you seem to be quite a smart person, but how can you also have such stupid moments? Who said you can’t take me as your master after taking another person as your master?”

“Who told you a person can only have master in his entire life, and that if you want to have someone else as your master, you must betray your former master?” The black-clothed old man bared his teeth and said while being a bit displeased.

“This...” At that instant, Chu Feng was a bit speechless. In the continent of the Nine Provinces, taking another master was indeed

not something that was glorious, but in the black-clothed old man's perspective, he didn't seem to mind things like those, and didn't have any intention to make Chu Feng betray his former master.

So, Chu Feng asked, "Senior, do you mean, that in a situation where I already have a master, I can take you a master as well? You are willing to share me, a disciple, with another person?"

"Rubbish. For an excellent young person, who doesn't strive to take him as a disciple?"

"He passes his abilities to you, I'll pass my abilities to you. They don't interfere with one another."

"Besides, brat, by taking me as a master, the benefits I can give you are not limited to only taking your bride back."

"I have gotten quite a few of the treasures in this Emperor Tomb! There are also uncountable number of cultivation resources, and I even got myself a Secret Skill. It's that Vermilion Bird Revival Technique." The black-clothed old man pointed at the Four Illusion Binding Formation, at the picture of the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique.

At that instant, Chu Feng's expression couldn't help but change as he hiddenly said, "That Vermilion Bird Revival Technique was indeed taken by him. The Evil Spirit trap must also have been set by him."

“I know that you’ve gotten good things before in this Emperor Tomb, and already have two Secret Skills. So, I only collected that Secret Skill and did not use it. As for why, I planned to make that into a present and gift it to you when taking you as a disciple.”

“But it’s my fault for being too greedy and underestimating this Emperor Tomb’s danger. I didn’t stop when appropriate, causing me to be stuck in this place. Right now, I am sealed inside this Four Illusion Binding Formation, so even if I want to give these things to you, it is be impossible.”

“However, as long as I am able to get out, I will satisfy you. I can see that your cultivation method is very special, as it seems that as long as you have cultivation resources, it can help your cultivation rise quickly.”

“And to be honest, if I told you about the cultivation resources I got from the Emperor Tomb, it will definitely scare you to death, but they will let your cultivation rise to a very powerful level.”

“As for me, reaching this realm, I no longer dare to rely on cultivation resources or else it will only make me stuck and prevent advancement. So, as long as you are willing to become my disciple, all of the cultivation resources I got here, I can give to you.” The black-clothed old man solemnly said. As he spoke, his face was actually filled with sincerity, as if he truly already planned to take Chu Feng as his disciple.

And after hearing the black-clothed old man’s words, Chu Feng was endlessly moved, but he was also a bit suspicious. So, he asked, “Senior, you are truly willing to accept me as a disciple? You are



truly willing to help me?!”

“But, why? I am but a poor boy with weak cultivation, yet you are actually willing to help me, ignoring the cost?”

“Haha, why? Why else? I only want to find an excellent successor for myself, and coincidentally, you qualify.”

“If you truly want a reason, I can give you one.”

“My age has already passed a hundred, and even if I continue living, it will not pass several hundred years. My talent isn’t that great either and becoming a Martial King is already luck. To want to continue making breakthroughs in order to prolong my life, it can be said to be very hard.”

“Right now, normal cultivation resources cannot help me, and on my own, it is difficult for me to comprehend the intricacies of each level. Only if a Martial Emperor is willing to use his special Emperor Battle Power to help me could I rise a level.”

# Chapter 539: Mission

---

“However, in the Eastern Sea Region, Martial Kings are already the strongest. Where would Martial Emperors come from? Even if there are Martial Emperors, those are supreme existences.”

“How could great characters like those be willing to exhaust their own power to help a petty old man like me to make breakthroughs in cultivation?”

“So, I have always been searching for a successor. A successor who has the potential to become a Martial Emperor. I would then, regardless of cost, raise him into a Martial Emperor.”

“Although I cannot confirm whether that person can become a Martial Emperor or not, and I cannot confirm whether he would still bother with an old man like me after becoming a Martial Emperor, this is the road I decided to walk on.”

“When clearly knowing that it is already impossible for me to have greater achievements, I will entrust everything to another person, and you, are the person who I want to entrust everything on.”

“Heh, brat, do you think this reason is acceptable?” The black-clothed old man suddenly laughed loudly, as if the words he said before was only him joking.

However, Chu Feng discovered that some helplessness permeated throughout the black-clothed old man’s laughter. His laugh was a

self-deprecating laugh.

“Senior, forgive my rudeness. After chatting for such a long time, I have yet to ask your name.” Suddenly, Chu Feng’s face was filled with solemnness and pettiness as he saluted the black-clothed old man and asked.

“Haha, in the Eastern Sea Region, when the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect’s Four Protectors is mentioned, everyone knows my name.”

“But that’s fine. In such a desolate place, you haven’t even heard of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, so how could you know who I am?”

“Chu Feng, remember. My name is Qiu Canfeng.” The black-clothed old man said his name one word at a time.

“Disciple Chu Feng greets his master!” And at that instant, Chu Feng hurriedly knelt onto the ground and paid his respects to Qiu Canfeng.

He did that because he didn’t want to miss that chance. In a situation where he was facing such a huge power like the Immortal Execution Archipelago, as well as the enticement of the Emperor Tomb’s treasures, Chu Feng decisively chose to have Qiu Canfeng as his master.

Of course, although Chu Feng only performed that action because

it was promoted by mutual benefit, he had deeply contemplated it.

In the conversation between him and Qiu Canfeng just now, Chu Feng had detailedly observed Qiu Canfeng's facial expression and his speaking tone.

So, Chu Feng determined that Qiu Canfeng's words were likely the truth, and that he truly wanted to take Chu Feng as his disciple. As for the reason, it was as he said just now.

On his journey of martial cultivation, when it was very difficult for him to have too great of an advancement, he chose to develop a person who could surpass his achievements.

If he succeeded, he could borrow the favour and get the person he developed to help himself. Although that was very risky, it did count as a method.

Though that was only Chu Feng's judgement, as he could also not confirm whether Qiu Canfeng only wanted to use him or not, at present, there was clearly no other choice.

“Haha, good good good! Quickly rise.”

“Oh Chu Feng, I am very happy to be able to accept a disciple like you.”

“I couldn't be sure of it before, but right now, I can. You are definitely able to surpass me. You are able to surpass everyone else

in the Eastern Sea Region. You will become a Martial Emperor.”

“In your journey on becoming a Martial Emperor, I will do my best to help you. But before that, you still need to help me do something.” Qiu Canfeng smilingly said.

“Master, if you have anything, please instruct me. I will do my utmost to complete it.” Chu Feng respectfully replied.

“Heh, actually, it’s not any big thing. I believe you can also imagine that I can’t help you with anything as I am stuck in here.”

“But this Four Illusion Binding Formation isn’t something you can break open. So, I want you to go ask for support.” Qiu Canfeng smiled and said.

“Support? Who?” Chu Feng asked.

“One of the Four Protectors of my Crippling Night Demon Sect, Fu Liansheng.”

“Although back then, there were some conflicts between the four of us because we were fighting for the position of sect head, later on, Fu Liansheng owed me a favour.”

“Moreover, although that person has vicious methods, he isn’t a person who doesn’t care what methods he uses to reach his goal. As a person, he still emphasizes camaraderie and honor. As long as you find him and tell him the situation, he will definitely come and

find me.”

“But beware, other than Fu Liansheng, do not tell any other person in the Crippling Night Demon Sect about my whereabouts, or else, it will be hard to prevent others hitting me while I’m down.” Qiu Canfeng said.

“Then master, where is that Senior Fu Liansheng right now? What characteristics does he have, and how can I make him believe that I’m your disciple?” Chu Feng asked.

“Your thoughts are quite meticulous, but I too don’t know where Fu Liansheng is right now. I only know he won’t leave the Eastern Sea Region, but regarding the specifics, you can only rely on yourself to find them.”

“As for making him believe you, that’s very simple. After seeing him, as long as you say to him that within the Black Mist Abyss, you once owed someone a favour and that person now needs your help, that’ll be fine.”

“Remember. Do not speak useless words to him or not only will he ignore you, he will even kill you.” Qiu Canfeng seriously reminded.

“Don’t worry master. I will find Senior Fu Liansheng soon and come to get you out.”

Those were words that came from Chu Feng’s heart because he

impatiently wanted to become stronger. He impatiently wanted to obtain an insurance against the Immortal Execution Archipelago. And the precondition of all that was to save Qiu Canfeng first.

“Mm. You are very sharp, but after arriving at the Eastern Sea Region, you still need to carefully handle matters. That place is not something that’s comparable to your little continent of the Nine Provinces. No matter if it is people or strength, or the methods of doing things.” Qiu Canfeng reminded again.

“I will be careful.” Chu Feng compliantly nodded his head, but after carefully examining the Four Illusion Binding Formation, he said once more, “But master, right now, you are imprisoned in this Four Illusion Binding Formation and you can’t even move. The road to the Eastern Sea Region is so far as well, and putting aside that I can find Senior Fu Liansheng after arriving at the Eastern Sea Region, even if I can find him, on the road back, that still requires quite a bit of time.”

“During such a long period of time, what will you eat? What will you drink?”

Chu Feng knew that no matter how much stronger cultivators got, they still had to eat and drink. Back then, because the Monstrous Monkey King prepared sufficient food, that was why he was able to stay so long in the Asura Ghost Tower. Qiu Canfeng wouldn’t have also prepared food right?

“Haha, don’t worry. Although this Four Illusion Binding Formation has locked me in here, it is constantly channeling special power into me. This is to preserve my lifeforce. It will not

let me starve to death, but only age to death.”

“So, no need to worry about me. It’ll be fine as long as you just quickly find Fu Liansheng. Even if it’s not for the old man me, for your little girlfriend, you need to hurry!”

“Although that Immortal Execution Archipelago isn’t enough to be afraid of, I still need to organize my fragmented Crippling Night Demon Sect members before being able to fight against the Immortal Execution Archipelago.”

“Or else, with only my own strength, that would be a bit risky, and combining the Crippling Night Demon Sect does require some time.” Qiu Canfeng lightly smiled and said.



## Chapter 540: Present

---

After that, Qiu Canfeng gave Chu Feng many instructions, and those instructions were only for one goal. It was to prevent Chu Feng having any accidents in the Eastern Sea Region.

And within those words, Chu Feng was also able to discover that not only did Qiu Canfeng want Chu Feng to help him obtain reinforcements, he was also, truly, caring about Chu Feng's safety.

It could be seen that Qiu Canfeng really seriously recognized Chu Feng, his disciple, and didn't seem like he was only using him to leave that place. At least, Chu Feng felt that it was like so.

If he was wrong and Qiu Canfeng had never planned to help Chu Feng, and only wanted to use Chu Feng to leave the Emperor Tomb, that could only mean that Qiu Canfeng's acting abilities were too high and that Chu Feng failed in knowing people. At that time, Chu Feng would not be angry at the heavens nor at anyone. If he were to blame anything, he could only blame his lousy eyes.

Quickly after, Chu Feng left the Emperor Tomb. Although he already knew that it was going to be a long journey, he still underestimated the Emperor Tomb's deepness.

Although, with the mysterious man leading the way, reaching the Emperor Door required only half a day of time, on the journey in which Chu Feng returned alone, he was hurrying during both day and night. He used over ten days in order to fly out of the Emperor Tomb. From that, it could be seen how vast the Emperor

Tomb was. It was simply even larger than the continent of the Nine Provinces. It was really frightening when one learnt of it.

But luckily, on the road, after Chu Feng refined all of the Spirit Formation Essence, he obtained quite a bit of harvest.

As expected, he successfully broke into the 3rd level of the Heaven realm. Moreover, within his body, he even accumulated a large amount of Heaven power. He was no longer far from the 4th level of the Heaven realm.

In addition to the power of the three lightnings, Chu Feng's real strength was likely in the 6th level of the Heaven realm. The 6th level of the Heaven realm. Although it wasn't considered really strong, when going forward to the Eastern Sea Region, it was enough. At least he had some ability to back him up.

After walking out of the Emperor Tomb, Chu Feng did not directly leave. He diligently laid a Spirit Formation, sealing and hiding the entrance to the Emperor Tomb in order to avoid any accidents from happening.

Only after he felt everything was ready did Chu Feng step back onto the road of return, and flew towards the Azure Dragon School.

When Chu Feng returned to the Azure Dragon School, he discovered that all of the main buildings in it were already complete. Vast buildings were erected on the Azure Dragon Mountain Range, and they were very grand-looking.

Compared to the former Azure Dragon School, it was a lot more magnificent. It would even be reasonable to say that other than the Jiang Dynasty, they were the vastest buildings in the continent of the Nine Provinces.

Moreover, within the current Azure Dragon School, it was extremely lively. It could even be described as extremely joyful.

There were not only disciples from the Azure Dragon School. There were even quite some people from the World Spirit Guild such as Gu Tianchen and the others, and also people from the Jiang Dynasty.

Without thinking, Chu Feng also knew what was happening. The Azure Dragon School was finally finished, and the so-called opening ceremony was going to start as well. Those people came up to give their congratulations.

“Chu Feng you brat, you’ve finally come back. How was it? Successful?”

“Eh, Chu Feng, your aura, you’ve actually broke through again? It seems like you’ve gotten quite a bit from this journey!”

“Wait, Chu Feng, how about the insane man that followed you? Where did he go?!”

After the Monstrous Monkey King and the crowd saw Chu Feng,

they discovered that his cultivation already rose from the 1st level of the Heaven realm to the 3rd level of the Heaven realm. To that, everyone felt happy for Chu Feng.

However, they also discovered that the insane man was gone, yet the Monstrous Monkey King had told them that Chu Feng clearly brought the insane man and left together. That made them lightly frown, feeling that something might have happened.

“This matter has a long story.” Chu Feng lightly smiled. Because the people on scene were trustworthy people, he didn’t hide much and told the process of what happened in detail to the crowd. However, he avoided the matter regarding taking Qiu Canfeng as his master.

“Ahh, no matter what, it’s great that you’re fine. It’s great that you’re fine!” After knowing what happened, people also felt some fear from Chu Feng’s experience. Although they didn’t personally see the Emperor Might, they were able to feel the strong power of it from Chu Feng’s description.

“That’s right. Chu Feng, since you’re back, let’s see the ancestor. He’s waiting for you.” Suddenly, Li Zhangqing spoke.

“Ancestor, he’s come out? What, has he broke through?” Chu Feng concernedly asked.

“Heh, right now, he is inside the Azure Dragon Hall. Won’t you know when you go over and see?” Li Zhangqing smiled in a very suspenseful way.

Seeing that, Chu Feng no longer asked anymore because looking at his joyful smile, Chu Feng could already guess that the Azure Dragon Founder broke into the Martial Lord realm.

And after Chu Feng came to the Azure Dragon Hall, he discovered that the Azure Dragon Founder was resting with his eyes closed while sitting in the middle of the hall. After feeling someone enter, he abruptly opened his eyes, and simultaneously, a burst of fierceness was given off and aimed to engulf Chu Feng.

That might was extremely frightening. It simply shocked one's soul, but after the Azure Dragon Founder saw that the person who came was Chu Feng, he hurriedly put away that gaze and said with a face full of smiles, "Chu Feng, you're back."

"Ancestor, congratulations on breaking into the Martial Lord realm, becoming a supreme Martial Lord!" Chu Feng quickly paid his respects because he discovered, as he expected, that the Azure Dragon Founder successfully broke through.

From then on, the Azure Dragon Founder had a long chat with Chu Feng. The first thing they talked about was the Azure Dragon School's opening ceremony.

So it turned out that the Azure Dragon School's construction had been completed for several days, and even the guests from many places arrived already. The reason why the opening ceremony hadn't started yet was because they were waiting for Chu Feng.

The reason why the Azure Dragon School was able to have today and was able to be reborn was all because of Chu Feng. Even the Azure Dragon Founder being able to revive, speaking from certain aspects, was because of Chu Feng.

So, everyone kept on waiting for Chu Feng. Waiting for him to return, and then the opening ceremony would immediately start. Thus, the Azure Dragon Founder decided that tomorrow, the opening ceremony would be held.

“Ah Chu Feng, I heard that you want to go to the Eastern Sea Region’s Four Seas Academy for cultivation with Jiang Wushang and Zhang Tianyi?” Suddenly, the Azure Dragon Founder asked.

Only after hearing his words did Chu Feng abruptly remember. The date they agreed on back then was already approaching, and they were going to head towards the Eastern Sea Region.

But to the Azure Dragon Founder’s question, Chu Feng shook his head and said, “I am indeed planning to go with them to the Eastern Sea Region, but I don’t plan to enter the Four Seas Academy.”

“Mm. No matter if you go to the Four Seas Academy for cultivation or not, going to the Eastern Sea Region to expand your horizons is still good. Especially since your talent is this good, that place is indeed more suitable for you. Staying in the continent of the Nine Provinces will instead disgrace your abilities.”

“But the Eastern Sea Region is a place where dragons and tigers

fight. In the east side of this world, there are countless continents like the Nine provinces, and on each continent, there will always be a few special geniuses born, and their goals would also be the Eastern Sea Region.”

“And since you are preparing to go to that place, before you depart, I’ll give you a present.” The Azure Dragon Founder lightly smiled and said.

# Battle Of Geniuses



# Chapter 541: School Opening Ceremony

---

“Present?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng couldn’t help but be taken aback.

However, the Azure Dragon Founder only lightly smiled, then sat cross-leggedly, overlaid his palms, and performed a special hand seal.

At that instant, Chu Feng could clearly feel layers and layers of odd waves endlessly flipping and surging within the Azure Dragon Founder’s body.

Moreover, his originally reddish complexion immediately turned as white as paper, and he started to grimace, showing a painful expression.

wuao

Suddenly, a dragon’s roar came from the Azure Dragon Founder’s body. At the same time, a Spirit Formation actually appeared on his forehead.

The Spirit Formation shot radiance in all directions, and under the envelopment of the radiance, a small azure dragon flew out, and at the end, landed on the Azure Dragon Founder’s palm.

Although that azure dragon was very small, its appearance was the exact same as the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique Chu Feng

saw within the Four Illusion Binding Formation. In addition to its special and powerful aura it emanated, without even thinking, Chu Feng knew that it was definitely the Secret Skill that made the Azure Dragon Founder's name, the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique.

But at that instant, looking back at the Azure Dragon Founder, he was already drenched in sweat and was gasping deeply. It was as though he received heavy injuries, and he was extremely feeble.

“Ancestor, what are you doing?” Seeing that scene, Chu Feng panicked a bit because just by looking, he could tell that the Azure Dragon Founder's action was making him pay quite some price.

“Back then, I promised I would pass this Azure Dragon Dashing Technique to you as long as you could revive me. Right now, I am only honoring my word.” The Azure Dragon Founder spoke and smiled, but his tone was very weak, for he no longer had his former vigorous power.

“No, ancestor, don't! This present is really too heavy. I cannot accept it.” Chu Feng hurriedly refused.

“Chu Feng, you don't need to feel burdened. This Secret Skill is an object with intelligence. Although it chose me back then, clearly, I am still unable to show its strength.”

“Besides, a Secret Skill's master is chosen by itself. Even though I made it detach from my body, you still have to see whether it is willing to choose you or not.”

“Hold on. I will completely unseal it. At that time, it will naturally have its own decision. If it feels that you are more suitable, it will, of course, choose you. If you are still not qualified, then it will return to my body.”

“So, no need to push this away. It is better to let us respect this Azure Dragon Dashing Technique and let it choose for itself.”

The Azure Dragon Founder lightly smiled, then raised his finger, and with a “ao”, the dragon’s roar rang out again, and the azure dragon coiled on the Azure Dragon Founder’s palm actually rose into the air, and immediately became a huge azure dragon with extraordinary might.

It was twisted in the air, there was mist surroundings its body, and it emanated powerful might. Even if it was the Azure Dragon Founder, he was very inferior.

But it did not speak. It only indifferently looked over the Azure Dragon Founder and Chu Feng, then its dragon body went forward quickly, became a strand of azure light, and entered Chu Feng’s brain.

“Ahh!” At that instant, Chu Feng felt his brain ache, and a large amount of information also appeared.

The Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, the supreme Secret Skill, unhesitantly chose Chu Feng. That result made one feel shocked, yet it was within expectations.

“Indeed. I knew that between you and me, it would definitely choose you. After all, back then when it chose me, it was something that could not be helped.” At that instant, the Azure Dragon Founder relievedly smiled, and on his pale-white face, a hint of a comforted expression emerged.

When a strong power attached itself to someone, it would always make them feel happy and excited.

But when they discover because of their limited strength, they restricted the strong power, it would make them feel huge pressure. It could be said that the strong power became a huge burden, and would suffocate them from the pressure.

And the Azure Dragon Founder was exactly like that. His talent was limited, and he simply could not fully show the supreme Secret Skill, the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique. To him, it was already a huge burden. At present, passing it down to Chu Feng instead became the best liberty.

“So powerful.” At that instant, Chu Feng was also endlessly shocked because in the instant the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique entered his body, he already grasped that Secret Skill.

So, he understood more than anyone else the strong power of the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique. Its speed was over several times quicker than the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens.

If he used the three Secret Skills at the same time, Chu Feng was

completely able to imagine how powerful he of that time would be. It would likely be a lot more powerful to the him who grasped a Strange Armament.

“This disciple thanks the ancestor.” Suddenly, Chu Feng greatly saluted to the Azure Dragon Founder to express his thanks, because that present was really too precious.

“This Secret Skill should have originally belonged to you. I only safeguarded it for a thousand years.” But the Azure Dragon Founder hurriedly helped Chu Feng up, and his face was full of expectant smiles.

His looked very forward to the kinds of storms Chu Feng, who was of mysterious origin, had extremely powerful talent, and grasped three Secret Skills, would stir up after entering the Eastern Sea Region.

The next day, the Azure Dragon School’s opening ceremony officially started.

Within the Azure Dragon Mountain Range, it could be said that all of the huge characters of the Nine Provinces were gathered there. Even the Jiang Dynasty’s old ancestor and emperor personally came and went to congratulate.

And other than the powers and experts invited, there were many experts and powers who didn’t receive the invitation yet wanted to witness the great occasion, and also came to the Azure Dragon School.

On that day of great joy, the Azure Dragon School put away its former proud attitude and opened its doors, welcoming guests who came from all directions. In and out the mountain range, there was great rapture everywhere.

“Look! Is that the old ancestor of the World Spirit Guild, Gu Tianchen, the genius who shocked the continent a hundred years ago?”

“Waa, I didn’t expect that today, not only have I seen the Jiang Dynasty’s emperor, I have even seen the Jiang Dynasty’s old ancestor!”

“Heavens! Is that the Azure Dragon Founder? It is! The strongest person to sweep through the continent of the Nine Provinces a thousand years ago is actually still living?”

When people saw Gu Tianchen, the Jiang Dynasty’s old ancestor, the Azure Dragon Founder, and other grand characters like them, they were all extremely excited because right now, many of the people who appeared in the Azure Dragon School were like legends to many in the Nine Provinces.

“Look, it’s Chu Feng! I never would have thought that he, right now, already entered the 3rd level of the Heaven realm. This speed of cultivation is really frightening.”

“Ahh, thinking back then when Chu Feng was wronged by several big powers and his wanted poster was spread all over the

continent of the Nine Provinces. At that time, how many people slandered him? How many people wanted to kill him?”

“But, with his own power, he forcefully killed the people who chased after him, and moreover, made the several big powers pay an extremely hefty price.”

“At present, he has already become the idol of countless people in the continent of the Nine Provinces. He has already created countless legends, and is fully worthy of being the number one person in the young generation.”

# Chapter 542: Who's The Strongest In The Young Generation?

---

“Chu Feng is indeed powerful, but to say he's the number one person in the continent of the Nine Provinces' young generation, there is no proof of that.”

“Look. Not to mention that there's also a Zhang Tianyi in the Azure Dragon School, even in the Jiang Dynasty, there are people able to be compared to Chu Feng.”

“Jiang Yini, the strongest in the Jiang Dynasty's young generation, already has the cultivation of the 6th level of the Heaven realm right now. Even the old generation fear her.”

“Jiang Wushang, the number one genius in the Jiang Dynasty. He is sixteen years old, yet he is already in the 3rd level of the Heaven realm. In terms of talent, he's stronger than Chu Feng right?” Although Chu Feng was powerful, that was indisputable, there were also some people who felt that Zhang Tianyi, Jiang Yini, Jiang Wushang, and the others, might not be weaker than Chu Feng.

“You don't understand. Not only is Chu Feng's talent outstanding, and his speed of improvement godly, his battle power is extremely horrifying as well. Although he is only in the 3rd level of the Heaven realm, even those in the 5th level of the Heaven realm may not be able to defeat him.”

“Chu Feng's battle power is strong, that's a fact, but Zhang



Tianyi is similarly terrifying. As for Jiang Yini and Jiang Wushang, they are from the Jiang Dynasty! They have noble bloodlines! Would it be possible that their battle power is inferior to Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi?”

“Ahh, if they can spar once, that would be great. We wouldn’t have to argue here then.”

“Yeah. I truly want to see a comparison of skills between them. With that, we would also know who exactly is the strongest in the Nine Provinces’ young generation.”

Looking at the four people, Chu Feng, Zhang Tianyi, Jiang Yini, and Jiang Wushang, with extraordinary might and superb complexions on the high stage, up and down the crowd of people, there were many people checking into who was strong and who was weak.

To those sounds, even if it was the people on the high stage, naturally, they heard them clearly. So, the Jiang Dynasty’s old ancestor looked at the Azure Dragon Founder who was sitting on the school head’s chair, and said, “Senior Azure Dragon, it seems like everyone wants to know who the number one person in the current continent of the Nine Provinces is.”

“It is rare to have a day of great joy like today, so why not let a few in the young generation spar? Take it as satisfying everyone’s desires.”

“Actually, I also had this intention.” The Azure Dragon Founder

lightly smiled, then looked at Chu Feng and the others and said, “But I just don’t know, are you four willing to spar for one round?”

After the Azure Dragon Founder spoke, everyone’s faces turned to joy. They cast their gazes towards Chu Feng and the others, looking forward to their response.

Because, not only did the experts who came from the other provinces wanted to know, even they, the people who were rather familiar with Chu Feng and the others, also wanted to know who was the strong and weak ones of them four.

And facing the crowd’s expecting gaze, Jiang Wushang bitterly laughed, and helplessly said, “Actually, I have already sparred against Brother Tianyi, but I could not defeat him.”

“As for Brother Chu Feng, even the abnormality of eighteen golden dragons was lit up by him. I do not feel it is possible for me to defeat him when we both have equal cultivation.”

“What? You’ve already fought and Wushang, you’re actually unable to defeat Zhang Tianyi?!”

After hearing Jiang Wushang’s words, the faces of the people from the Jiang Dynasty changed and on their originally expectant and excited faces, expressions of shock surged.

Because, after Chu Feng activated the Eighteen Golden Dragon Abnormality Formation, the bloodlines of everyone in the Jiang

Dynasty were strengthened. Their strengths were also strengthened.

Many people even directly broke through, and Jiang Wushang was one of them. So, his cultivation already entered the 3rd level of the Heaven realm, the same as Zhang Tianyi.

Their bloodlines were extremely strong already, and currently, they received a transformation. Yet Jiang Wushang, who was viewed as the Jiang Dynasty's hope by the Jiang Dynasty, was actually defeated by Zhang Tianyi's hands. That was naturally difficult to accept.

In reality, even the face of the Jiang Dynasty's emperor was a bit unsightly. As he could do nothing about it, he could only cast his gaze towards his daughter, Jiang Yini.

Although Jiang Yini's bloodline wasn't as dense as Jiang Wushang's, luckily, her cultivation was powerful, and was already in the 6th level of the Heaven realm at that moment. At least in terms of cultivation, she could pressure Zhang Tianyi and Chu Feng.

However, just as the people from the Jiang Dynasty all cast their gazes towards Jiang Yini, hoping she could fight for the Jiang Dynasty's glory, she sweetly smiled, and said, "Although I am in the 6th level of the Heaven realm, I am inferior to Wushang who is in the 3rd level of the Heaven realm. So, without sparring, I already know I will not be able to defeat Zhang Tianyi and Chu Feng."

“This...” At that instant, everyone from the Jiang Dynasty were stupefied. The spar hadn’t even started, yet their Jiang Dynasty’s young generation already lost. That made them feel helplessness.

“Haha!” Facing that situation, the Azure Dragon Founder laughed, then looked at Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi, and said, “It looks like right now, within the continent of the Nine Provinces’ young generation, only you two can fight. Are you willing to spar for a round?”

“Actually, I’ve always wanted to experience Junior Chu Feng’s abilities. Especially after Junior Chu Feng’s cultivation became the same as mine, my thought got more intense.” With a light smile on his face, within Zhang Tianyi’s fierce gaze, immense intention to fight was already emanated.

“Since it is like so, I ask Senior Zhang to grant me pointers.” Seeing that, Chu Feng did not refuse, and also leaped, rose into the air, and stood above the blue sky.

Actually, it was not only Zhang Tianyi who wanted to experience Chu Feng’s strength. Chu Feng had always wanted to experience Zhang Tianyi’s strength as well.

After all, back then, Chu Feng’s cultivation was too weak, and he simply couldn’t fight against Zhang Tianyi. But at present, his cultivation finally caught up. So, naturally, he also wanted to experience the power of Zhang Tianyi’s Forbidden Mysterious Technique.

Because, looking at it back then, Zhang Tianyi's Forbidden Mysterious Technique didn't seem to lose to Zi Ling's Divine Body. So, Chu Feng also wanted to know, when they both had the same cultivation, who was the stronger one and who was the weaker one between the two of them.

“Haha, Junior Chu Feng, although it is only sparring, I will not restrain myself. Do not be careless~” Seeing Chu Feng agree to the spar, Zhang Tianyi also loudly laughed excitedly, and quickly after, also rushed into the high sky.

And at that instant, within the Azure Dragon School, cheers continuously rang out, and everyone's blood started to boil.

They roundly widened their eyes, and without moving their gazes, they stared at the two people in the air, their faces full of yearning.

Because, on that day, their dreams finally became real. They were going to personally witness the glory of the two peak geniuses in the continent of the Nine Provinces.

# Chapter 543: Battle Of Geniuses

---

People formed mountains and oceans in the Azure Dragon School. It could be said that all characters who were well-known in the entire continent of the Nine Provinces gathered there.

The famous, the unknown, the old, the young, the ones belonging to schools, the ones belonging to parties, the leisure, the multitude of types, all sorts of characters that one could think of were there.

But at that instant, everyone's gaze was concentrated on an area above the Azure Dragon Mountain Range because they knew that at that place, an exciting battle was going to start.

Moreover, that was not only the confrontation between two peak experts. It was the great battle between two geniuses. The battle between the strongest geniuses in the current continent of the Nine Provinces.

“Junior Chu Feng, I'll make my move first then.” Suddenly, as Zhang Tianyi stood on air, he politely cupped his hands towards Chu Feng while he was a thousand meters away from him.

“Senior Zhang, please.” Chu Feng also lightly smiled, and similarly cupped his hands towards him.

“Haa!”

Seeing that, Zhang Tianyi also didn't hesitate. He explosively yelled and attacked first. He did not use any martial skills, and only punched in the air.

When that punch came out, Heaven power surged. A ripple visible by the naked eye streaked through the peaceful sky, and with horrifying might, pressed towards Chu Feng.

“Senior Zhang, I'm afraid an attack of this degree is useless to me.”

However, facing Zhang Tianyi's attack, Chu Feng only calmly smiled. He stood with his hands behind his back, and didn't even move. With a thought, a blue-coloured Spirit Formation appeared in front of him to block the blow.

With a huge explosion, Heaven power and Spirit Formation interweaved. But when the horrifying ripples dissipated, everyone astonishedly discovered that Zhang Tianyi's punch had actually been unable to move the Spirit Formation in the slightest. Zhang Tianyi's casual attack was easily blocked by Chu Feng.

“Heh, This Spirit Formation thing is truly not simple. However, if you only rely on the Spirit Formation, you will definitely be unable to block my following strikes.”

However, Zhang Tianyi strangely smiled, then the steps under his feet changed. Quickly after, his left hand grabbed the air and formed a bow, his right hand pulled the air and formed an arrow. As his arm expanded and contracted, golden and dazzling arrows,

like a storm, densely flew towards Chu Feng.

“Bow of Hundred Transformations?!” Seeing the arrows that filled the sky come towards him, Chu Feng couldn’t help but recall the scene back then.

When he met Zhang Tianyi the first time, he had used the Bow of Hundred Transformations. At that time, Zhang Tianyi’s Bow of Hundred Transformations could be said unstoppable. Not to say him, even Zi Ling was unable to block them.

And today, Zhang Tianyi used the Bow of Hundred Transformations once again, causing Chu Feng to be secretly joyful, and he was even a bit excited.

Because, he had always wanted to know whose Bow of Hundred Transformations would be superior when he, who was also skilled in that martial skill, was in the same cultivation level as Zhang Tianyi.

So, as the golden arrows that filled the sky densely flew towards him, not only did Chu Feng not dodge, he even dissolved the blue-coloured Spirit Formation in front of him.

Quickly after, Chu Feng entered a horse stance, waved both of his arms, and similarly, a huge golden bow appeared within his palm. As his right arm pulled, countless golden arrows explosively shot out.



whoosh whoosh whoosh

At that instant, the wind sounds in the sky sounded and golden radiance shot in all directions. Very quickly, the golden arrows from both sides interweaved and within the air, golden ripples kept on being created. It was extremely blinding.

“Heavens! Powerful, that is really too powerful! Is this the clash between the strongest in the young generation?”

And seeing the dazzling and horrifying might in the sky, the observing people endlessly sighed because even many people in the old generation could not create attacks like those.

Some people had even not seen a fight with such might before, so they were deeply attracted to the atmosphere the two of them created, and all of them were endlessly excited as they watched.

And it had to be said that the Chu Feng's and Zhang Tianyi's Bow of Hundred Transformations were used very skillfully. But no matter how much closer their strength was to one another, there was still a separation between the strong and the weak. After the countless arrows endlessly interweaved, change appeared.

The golden arrows Chu Feng shot out actually started to break through the center points of intersection, then continued on shooting towards Zhang Tianyi.

At first, Zhang Tianyi was still able to use some bodily methods

to evade them in the air, but gradually, the golden arrows Chu Feng shot out became more and more, and already surpassed the scope that Zhang Tianyi could endure.

“Haa!”

Finally, just as several arrows came and were going to meet their mark, Zhang Tianyi suddenly explosively yelled, then the Bow of Hundred Transformations in his hand immediately disappeared. Replacing it was a flickering red-coloured glow within both of his palms.

boom

Quickly afterwards, he waved his robe, and threw out both palms. A large area of flames sprayed out of his palms and forcefully melted all of the golden arrows in the sky. That was actually a rank 6 martial skill.

But Chu Feng was also not a simple character. Seeing the flames that filled the sky and was like a tide as they pressed close, he didn't even frown.

He sneered, and as he clenched a single fist, with a dragon's roar, a golden and dazzling longsword appeared within his hand.

After that golden longsword appeared, boundless pressure also descended from the sky, immediately extinguishing the flames that Zhang Tianyi sent out.

“This... Isn’t this Void Zhenren’s unique skill, the Blade of the Void Dragon’s Cry?!” Seeing the golden longsword Chu Feng held as well as the pressure covering the entire sky, the Azure Dragon Founder’s eyes lit up because he already recognized that it was the rank 7 martial skill which Void Zhenren created, the Blade of the Void Dragon’s Cry!

“What? The Blade of the Void Dragon’s Cry? Is it possible that my ancestor’s unique skill has been grasped by Chu Feng?!” And after hearing the Azure Dragon Founder’s words, the faces of some manager elders from the Void School changed greatly.

Because, to them, the Blade of the Void Dragon’s Cry could be said to be the unique skill which held the fort down. However, it was useless as no one was able to comprehend it, so that was why it was lost for many years.

Yet at present, Chu Feng actually grasped their Void School’s unique skill that had been lost for almost a thousand years. How could they not be shocked?

“Powerful. Truly too powerful. Chu Feng is indeed a godly genius. Of one thousand years in my Void School, so many people were unable to comprehend this Blade of the Void Dragon’s Cry.”

“I never would have thought that Chu Feng was actually able to do it. In my life, it is truly an honor to be able to see the martial skill my ancestor created!” Compared to the other elders’ shock, the head of the Void School had a face full of honor.

In reality, Chu Feng's Blade of the Void Dragon's Cry was indeed peerlessly powerful. After using the Blade of the Void Dragon's Cry, he was simply unstoppable.

Regardless of what martial skill Zhang Tianyi used, it was unable to defeat Chu Feng. Even similarly a rank 7 martial skill, it was unable to fight against Chu Feng's Blade of the Void Dragon's Cry.

As he could do nothing about it, Zhang Tianyi pulled out the Divine Wood Sword from his back and used the Strange Armament to fight against Chu Feng's Blade of the Void Dragon's Cry.

It had to be said that the might of the Strange Armament was indeed strong. After he grasped the Divine Wood Sword in his hand, Zhang Tianyi's entire atmosphere was several times stronger.

Symbols moved all around his body, as if human and sword were one. His styles were well-articulated, and his demeanor was oppressing. He actually forcefully pushed Chu Feng continuously back.

“Junior Chu Feng, make your move. Let I, Zhang Tianyi, feel the power of your Asura Ghost Axe. Let us see whether your Asura Ghost Axe is stronger, or my Divine Wood Sword is stronger.”

Suddenly, the two of them clashed once again. With the Divine Wood Sword's powerful might, Zhang Tianyi forced Chu Feng back several meters again. A hint of smug couldn't help appearing

onto his face, and he actually went ahead and asked Chu Feng to use his Strange Armament.

# Chapter 544: Going With Full Strength

---

“I will accept that proposal.”

To Zhang Tianyi’s request, Chu Feng did not refuse. He lightly smiled, then radiance flashed in his palm, and the huge and domineering Asura Ghost Axe appeared within his hand.

When the Asura Ghost Axe appeared, even the air couldn’t help trembling. When the powerful might engulfed everything, every single person could feel Chu Feng’s powerful strength.

“So strong. That’s the Asura Ghost Axe? I heard that the Jie clan and other powers framed Chu Feng back then because of this Asura Ghost Axe. Furthermore, they list Chu Feng as wanted, the reason being that they wanted to take the Asura Ghost Axe for themselves.”

“It is indeed worthy being a Mastered Strange Armament. This might is clearly a lot more powerful than Zhang Tianyi’s Divine Wood Sword. It seems like the outcome of today’s battle has already be set, and the strongest is indeed still Chu Feng.” After seeing the Asura Ghost Axe, the crowd endlessly sighed in admiration and were deeply stunned by the Asura Ghost Axe.

“Haha, that’s more like it.” And seeing Chu Feng finally also using the Strange Armament, Zhang Tianyi seemed extremely excited and actually leaped, waved his longsword, and started fierce attacks on Chu Feng again. Moreover, this time, it was several times more powerful than his might before.

“Ho.” Facing Zhang Tianyi’s attacks that so suddenly increased in power, the corners of Chu Feng’s mouth rose, and he stood where he was, not dodging nor evading. Only until Zhang Tianyi’s Divine Wood Sword, which swirled with glowing symbols and had bursts of pressure, neared did Chu Feng wave his hand and use his Asura Ghost Axe.

ao~~~~~

When the Asura Ghost Axe moved, it instantly made wind sounds akin to those of wolves crying and ghosts howling. Quickly after, it became a half-moon-shaped black-coloured blade of light, and interweaved with the Divine Wood Sword.

cang

The two weapons clashed into one another, causing an ear-piercing noise of steel collision to spread in the air. The strong force moved even Chu Feng back a few steps.

But looking back at Zhang Tianyi, he was actually forced to fly backwards for dozens of meters. Moreover, if one looked carefully, they would discover at that very instant, Zhang Tianyi’s arm that tightly held the Divine Wood Sword was actually lightly trembling, having clearly received huge pressure.

“Junior Chu Feng’s Asura Ghost Axe is indeed powerful. Purely in terms of power, he has already completely suppressed me. Is this the power of a Mastered Strange Armament? It is possible that

ordinary Strange Armaments can truly not be discussed on the same level as a Mastered Strange Armament?!” At that instant, Zhang Tianyi also tightly furrowed his brows. It was the first time he felt Chu Feng’s powerful strength.

“Senior Zhang, before victory and defeat is decided, do not be distracted and careless!” And just at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly explosively shouted, and when Zhang Tianyi reacted to it, he had already arrived in front of him. The huge Asura Ghost Axe, with sounds of piercing through the air, sliced down at him again.

Chu Feng’s speed was really too quickly. He simply did not give any time for Zhang Tianyi to dodge, and in that situation, he could only hold tightly the Divine Wood Sword in his hand and channel the power in his body into it.

When the symbols on the Divine Wood Sword lit up again, he suddenly waved it to block Chu Feng’s Asura Ghost Axe which was striking downwards towards his face.

With a “cang”, sparks went in all directions, and ripples were born from the collision.

However, Zhang Tianyi flew back several meters again. What was different was that the trembling of his right arm became more distinct, and a type of even intenser numbing feeling filled his entire arm.

“Wait. That is not only the Asura Ghost Axe’s power. It is Junior



Chu Feng's. His physical body has always been powerful, and only with the Asura Ghost Axe in his hand can the overbearing and direct power be sufficiently used by him.”

“No, I cannot clash against him head-on. I should pull apart the distance and start long-distance fights or else my Divine Wood Sword will simply be unable to fight against his Asura Ghost Axe.” When the second confrontation ended as Zhang Tianyi losing again, he became aware of the Asura Ghost Axe's offensive speciality.

So, he hurriedly changed his footsteps and used a unique bodily martial skill, wanting to increase the distance between him and Chu Feng, then use the Divine Wood Sword's long distance attacks to fight against Chu Feng.

whoosh

However, just as he used his bodily martial skill, before he was able to shift away, Chu Feng's attack arrived once again. Moreover, no matter if it was speed or attacking strength, it was a lot fiercer than before.

“Hoh. Fine.” And seeing the faint amused smile that Chu Feng wore on the corners of his mouth, Zhang Tianyi suddenly smiled.

He already knew everything. Not only was Chu Feng's battle power brutally strong, his battle tactics were even not inferior to him, possibly even more experienced than him.

From the start, Chu Feng clearly knew that his Asura Ghost Axe's advantage was close combat. So, he would not give Zhang Tianyi any chance to pull apart the distance.

His miscalculation and carelessness already caused him to sink into a dangerous situation. With circumstances like those, if he continued using the Strange Armament to fight against Chu Feng, what awaited him was only failure.

However, he did not want to lose the spar. He was originally a person who was unwilling to easily admit defeat and really enjoyed victory.

Even though he knew how terrifying the power Chu Feng stored in his body was, even though he knew that Chu Feng still hadn't used his trump card, he still wanted to fight with his full strength, and was absolutely not going to give up a single strand of chance.

That was not only for winning. It was also giving Chu Feng respect. Even though he knew that it was impossible for him to defeat Chu Feng, he still wanted to use his strongest side to fight against Chu Feng.

So, facing Chu Feng who came striking again, not only did he not use the Divine Wood Sword to block, he willed, and blue-coloured flames burst out from his body.

Zhang Tianyi's Forbidden Mysterious Technique had been activated. His entire person's aura rocketed, and currently, his battle power was already extremely horrifying. Even those in the

6th level of the Heaven realm weren't able to defeat him.

In a situation like that, Chu Feng's face also slightly changed. He hurriedly caused radiance to flash under his feet, and flew backwards, not daring to clash against him head-on.

However, when Chu Feng chose to retreat, Zhang Tianyi instead rushed forward. Holding the Divine Wood Sword, he pressed towards Chu Feng again. The most important part was after he explosively activated the power of his Forbidden Mysterious Technique, even his speed received an increase.

In only a blink, the battle turned around. From passive, Zhang Tianyi became aggressive and started to suppress Chu Feng instead.

“Heavens! They are actually blue-coloured flames! What exactly is that martial skill? What a strong feeling!”

“This Zhang Tianyi actually has this power! This horrifying battle power simply surpasses the 6th level of the Heaven realm. This does not make sense. How can he have such horrifying power? Is it possible that he's a Divine Body?”

“So powerful. It is really too powerful. He is actually able to suppress Chu Feng, who has a Mastered Strange Armament, to this state. Could it be that Zhang Tianyi is the strongest person in the young generation?”

Seeing Chu Feng who was being continuously pushed back in the air, everyone was stunned because they could feel Zhang Tianyi's current strong power. It could be said that Zhang Tianyi's made many people on scene convinced.

Even many people who leaned towards Chu Feng currently felt that Zhang Tianyi's strength was superior. After all, the battle power Zhang Tianyi showed at present was really too strong. It was something that many people hadn't seen before.

As for the people who originally leaned towards Zhang Tianyi, their faces were even fuller of smug, and felt that for this battle, Zhang Tianyi was undoubtedly going to win.

# Chapter 545: Gradual Strengthening Secret Skill

---

In the sky, Zhang Tianyi became stronger and stronger. The flames that originally surged everywhere actually became an endlessly burning blue-coloured armor that covered his body. Even the Divine Wood Sword in his hand was wrapped by the blue-coloured flames.

At that very instant, he was like a battle god formed by blue-coloured flames. He was both handsome and mighty, and extremely overbearing as well.

“This Zhang Tianyi is so powerful. He actually grasps such powerful methods.” In reality, not only the observing people, even the people from the Jiang Dynasty expressed admiration towards Zhang Tianyi’s strength.

“This type of strong power... Could it be that Zhang Tianyi is truly a Divine Body?” Some people even suspected what Zhang Tianyi had was a Divine Body.

“This is Forbidden Mysterious Technique.” Suddenly, the Jiang Dynasty’s old ancestor spoke.

“Father, what he cultivated truly is a Forbidden Mysterious Technique? Can such strong power truly be obtained by a Forbidden Mysterious Technique?” The Jiang Dynasty’s emperor asked with shock.

Actually, he had once suspected what Zhang Tianyi cultivated possibly was the Forbidden Mysterious Technique, and in reality, he had also seen some people who cultivated the Forbidden Mysterious Technique, yet not a single one could cultivate to such a perfect state like Zhang Tianyi.

And exactly also because of the perfection, it made him feel doubt. Doubt that the power Zhang Tianyi used wasn't from a Forbidden Mysterious Technique.

“It should be a Forbidden Mysterious Technique. However, the power of this Forbidden Mysterious Technique has been very thoroughly grasped by him.”

“He's not simple, not simple! This child is truly not simple. It is also the first time that I've seen a person able to so perfectly grasp the Forbidden Mysterious Technique. No wonder even Jiang Wushang could not defeat him.” The Jiang Dynasty's old ancestor firmly said. At the same time, on his face, he also wore an amazed expression.

Because, Forbidden Mysterious Techniques were not something that normal people could cultivate. After all, they were techniques that allowed one to gain power comparable to the powers from Divine Bodies.

If everyone could cultivate them, then there would be no weak people in the world. So, Forbidden Mysterious Techniques were extremely difficult to cultivate, and many people would die just as

they started.

Even if there were people who succeeded in cultivating it, they could not completely grasp the strong power of the Forbidden Mysterious Technique. So, it was very difficult to avoid receiving restrictions on the powers gained from Forbidden Mysterious Techniques.

Moreover, there was a difference in strength for Forbidden Mysterious Techniques, and the one Zhang Tianyi grasped was clearly a very powerful one. But the more powerful the Forbidden Mysterious Technique got, the harder it was to control.

Being able to grasp such a powerful Forbidden Mysterious Technique so perfectly also showed Zhang Tianyi's own strong strength. So, that was why despite Jiang Wushang lost to Zhang Tianyi, it caused the Jiang Dynasty's old ancestor to feel that it was reasonable, because Zhang Tianyi was truly very strong.

"I never would have thought that Zhang Tianyi would be this strong. I truly don't know how Chu Feng will handle this."

"Or does it mean that Zhang Tianyi is truly superior to Chu Feng?" After hearing the words of the Jiang Dynasty's old ancestor, everyone looked at Zhang Tianyi in another light, and felt that that child was truly not a simple character.

They even felt if Zhang Tianyi wasn't covered by Chu Feng's radiance, if Chu Feng didn't exist, perhaps he would be the most blinding existence in the continent of the Nine Provinces.

“Hmph. This brat Zhang Tianyi does indeed have some skill, but that’s already his strongest method, yet my brother has yet to use his full strength. If my brother uses everything he has, Zhang Tianyi will doubtlessly be defeated.” The Monstrous Monkey King fiercely glared at the crowd, as if ridiculing their ignorance.

As for the Azure Dragon Founder, with light smile on his face, he looked at the sky, did not speak, but his gaze locked onto Chu Feng’s body.

“Junior Chu Feng, don’t hold anything back. Use the lightning you grasp to finish this fight off.” Suddenly, Zhang Tianyi sent a mental message and said.

“Dammit. This brat is quite full of himself! Chu Feng, don’t give him any face! Use your lightning power, raise your cultivation to the 6th level of the Heaven realm, and press this brat into the ground with a single finger. Let’s see if he dares to be full of himself then.” Eggy’s little face reddened completely as she furious howled.

To Eggy’s words, Chu Feng only lightly smiled. If he used the lightning power in his body and raised his cultivation, naturally, he could easily defeat the current Zhang Tianyi. Even if he used a single golden lightning he could win.

However, he did not want to do that. He wanted to have a comparison of strength with his own methods when they were both in the same level of cultivation because he felt that only then



could the clash be fair.

“Senior Zhang, I will not use the lightning power to raise my cultivation, but similarly, I will not hold anything back. I will fight against you with my full strength.”

Chu Feng wore a smile on his face, but his gaze became serious. Suddenly, with a thought, a layer of faint-green gas burst out of his body. Moreover, it started to rapidly change, and at the end, became a circular faint-green screen of light.

And on top of the screen of light, a picture was engraved. It was a very strange monster, and the reason why that was said was because the monster was a huge tortoise, but on its body, there was even a large snake twisting around it. It was as though the two were one, and it was extremely horrifying.

The most important thing was that the picture was not only a picture. It even had two pairs of blood-red eyes as well, and furthermore, the two pairs of eyes were turning. They first looked at Zhang Tianyi, they actually looked at the crowd below. Furthermore, when its feet moved, it actually started to walk within the circular screen of light. Not only was the monster a picture, it was truly an entity that had a spiritual nature.

“Heavens, what is that? Not only does it have such a real spiritual nature, it is actually emitting such indestructible power?”

At that instant, everyone was dumbfounded. There were dumbfounded by Chu Feng’s Black Tortoise Armor Technique

because not only did they see the shield which was so strange it had a spiritual nature, they even felt indestructibility within the shield.

roar~~~~~

Quickly after, Chu Feng opened his arms, then a roar actually sounded out. But the thing that made people most shocked was that within Chu Feng's arms, white-coloured radiance actually extended outwards.

Finally, the white-coloured radiance charged out of the Black Tortoise Armor Technique and became two huge monster paws. Every single one was dozens of meters long, and even the claws were several meters long, as if they were huge sickles.

And those with sharp eyes could tell that they were not the claws of a monster, but two claws of a white tiger. Because of the white fur that gave off a gleam and the jet-black tiger strikes, it showed that it was undoubtedly a white tiger.

However, they didn't dare to be sure because not only were the two white tiger claws huge, they even emanated a horrifying aura that could rip through everything, as if nothing could stop their attacks.

“What martial skill is actually this powerful? In my life, I have never seen such a terrifying martial skill.” Everyone was stupefied by the Chu Feng's Black Tortoise Armor Technique and his White Tiger Slaughtering Technique because as the two of them gave off

an offensive and defensive aura, they were similarly matchlessly powerful.

# Chapter 546: The Winner and Loser Revealed

---

ao~~~~~

But just as people felt endlessly shocked towards Chu Feng's change, another ear-piercing sound rang out. It was actually a dragon's roar.

And after that dragon's roar resounded, almost everyone on scene had their eyes widened and their tongues tied, being dumbstruck. They were stunned by the scene in the sky.

Because, at that instant, under Chu Feng's feet, a huge azure dragon actually appeared. That huge dragon's eyes glowed with red light, and its dragon's tail swayed.

The dragon whiskers, the dragon horn, the dragon scale, the dragon claw, as well as the incomparably noble atmosphere. It made many people firmly believe it was a true dragon.

“Heavens! Exactly what martial skill is that? It can actually summon a real dragon?”

“Too terrifying. I never would have thought that Chu Feng actually grasps such powerful methods.”

“No wonder. No wonder he could flip several big powers upside

down back then. I never would have thought that he has already increased his strength to this state.”

Seeing the real dragon in the sky, everyone was stunned because for Chu Feng who already had a powerful atmosphere, after the azure dragon appeared under his feet, he was many times stronger. It could be said that in terms of aura, Chu Feng already suppressed Zhang Tianyi’s blue-coloured flames that covered the sky.

Indeed, when the current Chu Feng stood on the body of a huge dragon, with the black tortoise armor surrounding his body, and both of his hands forming white tiger claws, he was simply a battle god who had unstoppable might. As long as a person glanced at him, they would, involuntarily, feel respect and fear towards him.

And the reason why the Black Tortoise Armor Technique, Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, and White Tiger Slaughtering Technique, which Chu Feng currently grasped, had their current transformations was because along with Chu Feng entering the Heaven realm, the power of the Secret Skills also increased.

According to Chu Feng’s estimations, if one day, he truly reached a certain state in strength, he could even summon the four Secret Skills from his body and they would help Chu Feng fight with their own awarenesses. To be brief, Secret Skills were indeed extremely powerful because they transformed along with their master’s strength. That point was something martial skills could never be compared to.

“Senior Zhang, let me use this state to finish off this round.” Chu Feng lightly smiled and said to Zhang Tianyi.

“Hahaha, good good good! I didn’t expect that Junior Chu Feng’s Secret Skills have strengthened to this state, already not inferior to the Mysterious Technique I grasp.”

At that instant, Zhang Tianyi was also incomparably excited. He first loudly laughed excitedly, then quickly after, the Divine Wood Sword in his hand rapidly waved, creating several blue-coloured flames and blades of light, and they flew towards Chu Feng.

The blades of light that the Divine Wood Sword sent out were already powerful. At present, the power of the blue-coloured flames was added, so it was even more frightening. As the blades of light flew through the sky, even the air was cut open by them. It was extremely terrifying.

“Heh.” However, facing the blades of light Zhang Tianyi sent out, Chu Feng only lightly smiled, then with a thought, the huge azure dragon under his feet became mist, and quickly after, a violent gust suddenly rushed up, and Chu Feng had disappeared.

ao~~~

Suddenly, a dragon’s roar rang out, and Chu Feng had already appeared behind Zhang Tianyi. With the three Secret Skills’ might, he pressed towards Zhang Tianyi.

whoosh whoosh whoosh

Seeing that, Zhang Tianyi also did not panic, and did not dodge. He waved the Divine Wood Sword in his hand again, and several blades of light in half-moon shapes flew towards Chu Feng once again.

roar~~~

However, this time, Chu Feng did not choose to dodge. Rather, he waved both of his arms abruptly, and slammed the two huge white tiger claws together.

When the two white tiger claws were slammed together, a deafening tiger's roar instantly resounded. At the same time, layers of white-coloured symbol undulations were continuously sent out.

When the white-coloured symbols undulations interweaved with the blades of light which the Divine Wood Sword sent out, the blades of light actually shattered like a mirror piece, then became strands of blue-coloured gas, dispersing in the air.

The originally extremely terrifying blades of light were actually unable to fight against the symbol undulations. The White Tiger Slaughtering Technique was truly peerless in offensive strength.

And after dispersing the blades of light, not only did the attacking might of the symbol undulations not diminish, instead, they became stronger and stronger, and were heading towards Zhang Tianyi and slamming down.

“Such powerful methods! So this is a Secret Skill?!” Seeing that scene, Zhang Tianyi also tightly frowned as he became aware of the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique’s powerful strength.

“Haa!” But Zhang Tianyi did not give up because of that. Instead, he furiously howled towards the sky, then the blue-coloured flames covering his entire body burst out like an exploding volcano, and like a huge blue-coloured wave of flames, it counter-pressed towards Chu Feng’s White Tiger Slaughtering Technique.

boom rumble rumble rumble rumble

Finally, within the deafening rumbling, the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique collided into the blue-coloured flames.

Quickly after, the boundless blue-coloured flames and the white-coloured symbol undulations melded together, formed a circular shape, and like a shock wave, engulfed outwards.

“This is bad!”

Seeing that, the face of the Azure Dragon Founder, who was calm from start to finish, changed greatly because the ripple that the two created was really too terrifying. If it exploded downwards, it would definitely blow up the mountain range and cause countless people to lose their lives.

whoosh



So, he hurriedly stood up, waved his big sleeve, causing a boundless purple-coloured Spirit Formation to engulf outwards with him as the center.

The Spirit Formation's speed of creation was very fast. In almost an instant, it already shaped and covered the sky above the Azure Dragon School.

“Heavens! What is happening?!” Seeing the purple-coloured Spirit Formation covering the sky, many people were endlessly shocked and simply did not know what it was.

Only the Monstrous Monkey King and the Jiang Dynasty's old ancestor knew that it was a purple-coloured Spirit Formation. In reality, after the Azure Dragon Founder was resurrected, he already grasped the power of a Purple-cloak World Spiritist.

But at that instant, even if it was the Monstrous Monkey King and the Jiang Dynasty's old ancestor, great characters who were similarly also Purple-cloak World Spiritists, were stunned by the Azure Dragon Founder's methods.

In only a blink, he laid a Spirit Formation that covered the sky. That method was at least something they could not do. So, they couldn't help but sigh in admiration towards the strong power of a Martial Lord.

boom rumble rumble rumble rumble

And just at that time, the horrifying ripples formed by the blue-coloured flames and symbols interweaving already crashed down, and collided into the purple-coloured Spirit Formation.

Although the Spirit Formation blocked it, people were still able to clearly feel the earth under their feet intensely trembling once.

And outside of the Spirit Formation, the trembling was clearly more horrifying. Although a surging terrifying ripple could only be seen outside of the Spirit Formation, just by looking at the ripple, everyone was able to imagine what kind of destruction the sky over there was.

“So powerful. So this is the strongest in the young generation? This battle power can simply destroy a sect easily. It is too powerful. They are really too powerful.” People were dumbstruck by the scene in the sky.

Even if it was the Azure Dragon Founder, he couldn't help saying a low voice as well, “The battle power of these two is truly not simple. But, victory and defeat should be revealed right?”

# Chapter 547: Preparing To Depart

---

The rumbling in the sky persisted for a very long time. The ripples which were like huge waves and fierce beasts going wild started to gradually dissipate after a long time.

But the Azure Dragon Founder was very careful. He kept the purple-coloured Spirit Formation open and used it to defend against the wild ripples in the sky, deeply afraid that the ripples would come down and harm the people on scene.

Only until the horrifying ripples completely disappeared and became rolling white mist and dense smoke did he put away the Spirit Formation.

At that instant, everyone was tightly staring at the sky, their eyes filled with excitement and expectation.

And while being watched by the stares, which were full of expectation, finally, within the diluting mist, they finally found Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi.

“This... What is this situation?”

“They... Who won and who lost? Could it be that it’s a tie?!”

However, as their bodies completely appeared, everyone was flabbergasted by the scene in the sky. Quickly after, on the crowd’s faces, expressions of bewilderment and puzzledness emerged.

Because, in the sky, Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi already put away the Secret Skill and blue-coloured flames. The two of them returned to their normal appearances.

But similarly, their clothes were complete, and there was not the slightest bit of damage. So, that was why people were so bewildered because looking at their state, they had clearly stopped the spar, yet based off of their outer appearances, it was impossible to see who won and who lost.

“Junior Chu Feng, thank you for your kind intentions, but I lost, so I lost. Just now, if you didn’t hold back, right now, I would have been heavily injured.” Suddenly, Zhang Tianyi spoke. He wore a faint, light smile on his face. It was a smile of gratitude.

“Senior Zhang, you...” Seeing that, Chu Feng originally wanted to say some more, but after looking at Zhang Tianyi’s expression, Chu Feng also understood his intentions so he no longer urged.

Just now, the two of them used their powerful methods to undergo the final clash. However, ultimately, Zhang Tianyi still lost. His Forbidden Mysterious Technique, the blue-coloured flames that surrounded his body, lost to Chu Feng’s three Secret Skills.

But, in the moment when everything hung by a thread, Chu Feng held back. As for why Chu Feng held back, Zhang Tianyi understood clearly.

It was intentional. Chu Feng intentionally gave Zhang Tianyi space to stand on the stage. Chu Feng wanted to end the spar as a tie. Zhang Tianyi was very grateful for Chu Feng's actions because he knew that Chu Feng truly took him as a brother. Otherwise, with Chu Feng's nature, he would have definitely not done that.

But, the more it was like that, the more he had to give Chu Feng fairness. So, he swept his gaze to the crowd below, and with a light smile on his face, he loudly said, "For this spar, it is I, Zhang Tianyi, who have lost, and I have lost very convincingly. Junior Chu Feng is indeed superior to me. He is above me."

"What? It's Zhang Tianyi who has lost?"

Hearing those words, at first, many people still felt disbelief, but after seeing Zhang Tianyi's and Chu Feng's relieved expressions, they believed.

They could already tell that Zhang Tianyi's lost, and indeed, he lost very convincingly.

Facing that result, it was within some people's expectation, whereas others felt endlessly shocked. But no matter what, they had an entirely new understanding of Chu Feng's strength.

Along with the ending of Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi's spar, the Azure Dragon School's opening ceremony also officially started. However, in ceremony, what everyone had their deepest impressions on was the spar between Zhang Tianyi and Chu Feng.

That spar caused almost everyone there to feel shocked. Moreover, it made them strongly remember that Chu Feng was the strongest person in the continent of the Nine Provinces' young generation. No one dared to doubt that anymore.

After the opening ceremony, Chu Feng, Zhang Tianyi, and Jiang Wushang prepared to head towards the Eastern Sea Region.

Because, calculating the time, there was only three months to the day that the Four Seas Academy accepted disciples.

Although Chu Feng and the others were currently in the Heaven realm and their speeds were extremely quick, they still had to leave quickly or else if the date was missed, they had to wait for another year.

At present, everything was prepared. Within a plaza in the Azure Dragon School, people formed mountains and oceans. They came to send Chu Feng and the others off.

And in the center of the palace, a huge silver-white chariot was placed there. That chariot was extremely eye-grabbing, and almost became the current focus of everyone.

“Brother Wushang, your chariot is this big, so there’s definitely a decrease in speed right? Can a chariot like this arrive at the Four Seas Academy within three months? From what I see, it’s better to rely on our own strengths to hurry. It should be faster that way.” Seeing the chariot in front of his eyes, Zhang Tianyi murmured.

Because, the chariot in front of his eyes was very big, and very luxurious. Rather than saying it was a chariot, why not say it was a moving small-scale palace?

But if there were benefits, they were detriments. Although a chariot like that was indeed very comfortable when it was used to travel, it would be hard to avoid a decrease in speed. So, he was afraid that there wasn't enough time.

“Brother Tianyi, don't worry. My chariot here is the most precious Strange Armament in my Jiang Dynasty. There is no stronger one.”

“The reason why it is so precious is not because how much power it has, but because it has extremely quick speed.”

“Although its speed can perhaps not be discussed equally with the Secret Skill Brother Chu Feng grasp, the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, but with our strengths, if we taking turns channeling power into it, within three months, we will definitely arrive at the Eastern Sea Region.” Jiang Wushang said on the side.

“So it's like that.” Only after hearing those words did Zhang Tianyi relievedly nod. He also knew that there were different types of Strange Armaments, and there were indeed some Strange Armaments that had an extremely miniscule effect when used in battle, but had very strong support effects.

“That's right. Brother Tianyi, where's Brother Chu Feng? Why hasn't he come yet?” Jiang Wushang curiously asked because

everything was prepared right now. They lacked only Chu Feng, and when he came, they could head towards the Eastern Sea Region.

“He...still has some people he cannot let go of.” Zhang Tianyi helplessly sighed.

“Ahh~~~” At the same time, Chu Yue, Chu Guyu, Li Zhangqing, the Azure Dragon Founder, and the others close to Chu Feng couldn’t help sighing longly. More or less, a hint of helplessness emerged onto their faces because they knew that within the continent of the Nine Provinces, there were indeed two people who Chu Feng was worried about and couldn’t let go.

Although at present, the Emperor Tomb changed and the Emperor Tomb entrance at the Azure Dragon Mountain Range was already closed, because the Thousand Bone Graveyard was created by the Azure Dragon Founder, naturally, it still existed. It just didn’t connect to the Emperor Tomb.

And within the Thousand Bone Graveyard, the Spirit Formation sealing Su Rou and Su Mei was still flowing. The two of them peacefully laid within. Their faces were reddish, they were full of spirit, and even their auras reached the 9th level of the Profound realm. But sadly, from start to finish, they had been in deep sleep, and hadn’t been able to reawaken.

“Little Rou, Little Mei, while in deep sleep. I truly feel happy for you two when I can see your strengths becoming stronger as you receive the nourishment of the mysterious pearls.”



“I truly want to watch over you two like this every day, but I cannot.”

“Right now, I have a very important thing to do. This relates to Zi Ling’s life, and it also relates to my ancestry. So, I have no choice but to leave.” Chu Feng sat in front of the Spirit Formation, and as he looked at Su Rou and Su Mei inside, he faintly smiled, but his smile was filled with unwillingness.

# Chapter 548: Smile Of Happiness

---

“Little Rou, Little Mei, look. These are the presents I prepared for you two.”

Chu Feng took out two long skirts out from his Cosmos Sack. One was light-green and embroidered by willow leaves, the other was pink with peach blossoms.

They were not two simple skirts. Both of them were surrounded by faint green light and pink light respectively. Moreover, huge pressure was hidden within them, as they were both Strange Armaments.

Chu Feng obtained them from the Ji Dynasty. After returning from the Ji Dynasty, Chu Feng gave a lot of the treasures to Chu Yue and the other family members. However, as for the two beautiful skirts, he left them for Su Rou and Su Mei.

“These are specially prepared for you. I felt that the green-coloured one is more suitable for Little Rou, as it can emphasize your mature demeanor. The pink-coloured is more suitable for Little Mei, as it can emphasize your liveliness.”

“I believe if you two wear these two skirts, both of you will definitely be very beautiful because both of you have always been beautiful, no matter what you wear.”

“I... really want to personally see what you two look like after wearing them.”

Speaking to that point, Chu Feng's voice became a bit choked and even his eyes reddened.

It's said that the only reason why boys have tears but do not easily cry is because their hearts hadn't been wounded yet.

Facing his two lovers, who almost lost their lives because of himself, had currently slept for a full two years, and it was unknown how much longer they were going to sleep for, the guilt in Chu Feng's heart kept on torturing him. That kind of pain was very stabbing.

"Wait for me. I will return. At that time, if you reawaken, I will come to bring you away." Finally, Chu Feng said those words with a face full of unwillingness. He did not cry, because he didn't want to cry in front of his own lovers.

He had to be strong. Only by being strong could he endure even more, because he was fated to have many burdens.

So, after shooting another glance of deep emotions and reluctance at the two beauties Su Rou and Su Mei, only then did he stand up, turn around, and prepare to leave.

hmm~~~~~ But, just as Chu Feng walked for a short distance, blinding radiance suddenly came from behind.

Turning his head to look, Chu Feng's expression couldn't help

but change because he astonishedly discovered that within the originally stable and spiraling Spirit Formation, two layers of horrifying power actually surged currently.

One layer was a scorching flame, the other was fierce ice. The two interweaved together, formed an extremely frenzied body of energy, and was slamming into the purple-coloured Spirit Formation.

“What is happening?!” Seeing that scene, Chu Feng instantly panicked because his first thought was that the already stable Ice and Fire Pearls lost control again.

But those pearls were not something he could control. So, at that instant, the first thing Chu Feng did was turn around, leave, wanting to ask for help from the Azure Dragon Founder.

boom But just as Chu Feng turned around, a deafening explosion suddenly rang out from behind. Turning his head to look, his face even changed greatly because the power interwoven by the flames and ice already broke open the Spirit Formation, extended out, and filled the entire room.

“Crap.” Facing that situation, Chu Feng was already unable to leave because he felt that if the pearls thoroughly lost control, Su Rou and Su Mei were going face a disaster.

Not only would they become puppets, they would even be directly engulfed. So, he could not leave just like that. Even if he put his life on the line, he had to do something to fight for a strand

of hope for Su Rou and Su Mei.

hmm However, just as Chu Feng wanted to use a Spirit Formation to attempt to seal the flames and ice, the destructive flames and ice actually started to shrink back.

At the end, the two types of power, the flames and ice, not only did they split, they even became two figures, and those two figures were exactly Su Rou and Su Mei.

However, at that instant, within Su Rou's beauty, there was an extra tiny trace of coldness, and within Su Mei's sweetness, there was also an extra trace of fieriness.

The most important part was that their current auras were actually no longer in the Profound realm, but in the Heaven realm. The two of them already stepped into the 2nd level of the Heaven realm.

“Chu Feng!” After Su Rou and Su Mei saw Chu Feng, on their faces of exceptional beauty, they both revealed enchanting smiles.

After the call filled with joy and excitement, the two of them leaped, and went up to Chu Feng. At the same time, they jumped into Chu Feng's embrace and hugged Chu Feng on both the left and right, unwilling to let go. They used their little faces to tightly stick to Chu Feng's chest, to hear the long-awaited heartbeat and to feel the warmth.

“Little Rou, Little Mei, you two, you two are fine?” And seeing the two beauties in his embrace, Chu Feng was taken aback, and felt that it was extremely inconceivable.

The two lovers he had longed for day and night for two years but had yet to awaken actually woke up at that time. It caused Chu Feng to not know what to do, and it was even hard to believe.

“Chu Feng, let’s go. I want to go to the Eastern Sea Region with you. I want take back Zi Ling together with you. She belongs to you, and only to you.” Suddenly, Su Mei raised her sweet and youthful little face and said to Chu Feng while being full of seriousness.

“What, this, Little Mei, you...” However, Chu Feng, who already didn’t know what to do, after hearing Su Mei’s words, was even more stupefied. He thought in his heart, how did she know about the Eastern Sea Region? Could it be...

“Chu Feng, although I have been in deep slumber for such a long period of time, I was able to clearly hear everyone’s laughs and conversations.”

“So, I know everything that happened in this period of time, and I believe that Little Mei is the same as me right?” Just at that time, Su Rou’s pair of water-like big eyes lightly blinked, and she revealed an understanding smile. As she spoke, she looked at her own younger sister, Su Mei.

“Yeah. I am the same. Although I was always in deep sleep, I was

able to hear your conversations.”

“So, I already know what you did and who you met during the period of time we were in deep sleep.”

“Chu Feng, bring us to the Eastern Sea Region. Right now, we are no longer the girls who were nothing but hindrances.”

“I seemed to have already completely grasped the power of this Flaming Pearl. To be honest, even I’m a bit afraid of the power currently flowing in my body.”

“I, right now, will absolutely not become your burden. I am able to help you out. Bring me with you, I want to help you take back Zi Ling.” Su Mei pouted her little mouth, grabbed Chu Feng’s hand, and endlessly shook it as she asked like a pampered child.

“Little Mei, you, this...” At that instant, Chu Feng was truly a bit confused because the arrival of happiness came too suddenly.

Not only did Su Rou and Su Mei awake one after the other, they even grasped the strong power from the two pearls. Chu Feng was able to feel their current powerful strengths. Putting aside cultivation, purely in terms of battle power, it was likely that they weren’t inferior to himself.

Chu Feng paid so much hard work, experienced so many difficulties, and charged past so many life and death situations in order to gain his current cultivation and methods.

But Su Rou and Su Mei on the other hand, they only slept deeply for two years and gained the power they had. Although during that period, the two of them also received painful suffering, it had to be said that they truly gained good things from a disaster.

What was luck? Now this was truly luck. The so-called luck Chu Feng met before was simply fart when compared to them.

But what Chu Feng was the most happy about was not that. It was that Su Rou and Su Mei, in the two years, actually stayed awake from start to finish, and heard the words they said.

Not only did they know about Zi Ling's matters, they did not have the slightest bit of jealousy nor egoism. They had actually went up and asked to go with Chu Feng together to take Zi Ling back. That truly made Chu Feng feel incomparably happy.

“Chu Feng, Zi Ling is a good lady. Although we were unable to see her, Little Mei and I have heard the conversations between you two. She was concerned about us, and I'm sure that's because of you. We are concerned about her, and that's also because of you.”

“We sisters are the same as Lady Zi Ling. As long as you can be happy, we are willing to do anything for you.”

“Bring us as well to the Eastern Sea Region.” Just at that time, Su Rou also spoke. Moreover, on her beautiful face, she even wore an expression of firm decisiveness.



“Chu Feng, bring us there.” At the same time, Su Mei also requested with her sweet voice.

And facing the two beauties who were so close to him, Chu Feng really did not know how to show his feelings with words. So, he did not waste his breath, opened both his arms, tightly hugged the two beauties, and said with a light smile, “Sure!”